

The first Three
English books
on America.

Richard Eden.



BANCROFT
LIBRARY
◇
THE LIBRARY
OF
THE UNIVERSITY
OF CALIFORNIA

Gift of
Henry R. Wagner



*James Freeman Carter
Portland, Maine*



No. 1-3 *Who learns and learns but does not what he knows,*
3031. *Is one who plows and plows but never sows.*
Jan 7



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

<http://www.archive.org/details/firstthreeenglis00arberich>

The first Three English books on America.

[? 1511]-1555 A.D.

⁷¹ ARBER (Prof. E.), *Editor*. **The first Three English Books on America.** I Of the new landes [a Tract in English printed at Antwerp, about 1511]. II Munster (Seb.) A Treatyse of the newe India, translated by Richard EDEN [1553]. III Martyr (Peter) The Decades of the New Worlde, translated by Richard EDEN, 1555. Reprinted in full (No. III is 320 pages) with Introduction, Extracts from other Writers, and Notes, forming the volume "An English Cyclopædia of the Geographical Knowledge" of the Age, by Edward ARBER. LARGE PAPER (*one of one hundred so printed*). Impl. 4°, 1885
(L3 33)

The first
Three English books
on
America.

[? 1511] — 1555 A.D.

Being chiefly Translations, Compilations, &c., by

RICHARD EDEN,

From the Writings, Maps, &c., of

PIETRO MARTIRE, of Anghiera (1455-1526),
Apostolical Protonotary, and Councillor to the Emperor CHARLES V.;

SEBASTIAN MÜNSTER, the Cosmographer (1489-1552),
Professor of Hebrew, &c., at the University of Basle;

SEBASTIAN CABOT, of Bristol (1474-1557),
Grand Pilot of England:

With Extracts, &c., from the Works of other Spanish,
Italian, and German Writers of the Time.

EDITED BY

EDWARD ARBER, F.S.A.

Fellow of King's College, London; Hon. Member of the Virginia and Wisconsin Historical Societies;
Examiner in English Language and Literature, Victoria University, Manchester;
Professor of English Language and Literature,
Sir Josiah Mason's College, Birmingham.

Editor of *English Reprints, English Garner, English Scholar's Library,*
A Transcript of the Registers of the Company of Stationers of London, 1554-1640: &c.

BIRMINGHAM:
1 MONTAGUE ROAD.

22 June 1885.

(All rights reserved.)

E141
A72

TO THE READER.



Each of the three Texts in this Volume is of great rarity; the first two are extraordinarily scarce.

The present impression of them was begun so far back as 1870, and was nearly finished by 1872; when it came to a stand still through the great pressure of other work on all concerned, but more especially on myself.

For then, there came to me the overpowering vocation, for the sake of the Literature of our Golden Age, of attempting (single-handed though it might be, and when every one else forsook it and fled) the printing of *A Transcript of the Registers of the Company of Stationers of London, 1554-1646 A.D.* Through the toil and anxiety of the years 1873 to 1877, that great piece of work was religiously and accurately accomplished, in four Demy 4to volumes, containing in all some 2,800 pp.: and thus the Bibliography of Sidney, Spenser, Shakespeare, Bacon, Ben Jonson, and their contemporaries, was safely secured from destruction or oblivion, to the end of time.

Other circumstances then intervened; so that it was not till January 1885, on the occasion of my first visit to Edinburgh (where the book was in hand), that I was able to resume it. Once, however, the reproduction was again taken up, it was resolutely pushed through to its completion.

This Volume cannot fail to interest the cultivated reader. One is able therein to look out on the New World as its Discoverers and first Explorers looked upon it. Now-a-days, this Globe has but few geographical mysteries; and it is losing its romance as fast as it is losing its wild beasts. In the following Texts, however, the Wonderment of its Discovery in all its freshness, is preserved, as in amber, for all time: and they also contain notices of not a few barbaric civilizations which have long since passed away from off the face of the earth.

To the Reader.

But this book has also some very special points of interest :

It is in many respects, an English Cyclopædia of the geographical and scientific knowledge of its Age.

No one can read the portion of the *Decades* of Pietro Martire given herein, without wishing to know a great deal more about him and his writings.

A large portion of what little we do know about Sebastian Cabot, will be found in the notices of him scattered through this volume.

It may also be regarded as a fitting Literary Monument of one of the Private Secretaries of Lord Burleigh, and a very worthy Englishman, Richard Eden : of whom some account will be found at *pp.* xxxvii.-xlvi. ; and who was certainly one of the principal Authors of the reign of Mary Tudor.

It is also clear, that from the third Text in this book (Eden's translation of the *Decades* of Pietro Martire), which was published in 1555, Francis Drake must have obtained all the knowledge that English books could give him respecting the West Indies and the Spanish Main, before he first went out there, under Captain John Lovell, in 1565.

Lastly, William Shakespeare read this third Text also, and created the character of *Caliban* in the *Tempest* out of the description of the Patagonian giants given at *pp.* 251-2.

But for us Moderns, the chief interest in these three Works may be, that they are the very beginning of a mighty Literature. The future of Mankind lies with the Anglo-Saxon race : and of all English books relating to the American portion of that race, the three reprinted in this volume are the *very first*.

The large initial letters are in the style of the Spanish designs of the Biscayan, Juan de Yciar (b. 1523), as they are found in the two editions of his *Orthographia practica*, Saragossa, 1548 and 1550, 4to. Yciar, who evidently looked upon them as the gems of his Work, calls them *Letras de Compas para iluminadorcs*.

In conclusion I desire most gratefully to acknowledge and record the very kind and cordial help rendered to me in the reproduction of this volume at Edinburgh, by the late Mr William Burnefs and the late Mr John Stevenfon, with whom it was commenced : and also by Mr James Skinner, of the firm of Messrs Burnefs & Co., and Mr James Turnbull, of the firm of Messrs Turnbull & Spears, by whom it has been brought to a successful conclusion.

EDWARD ARBER.

Contents.

To the Reader	v.-vi.
Contents	vii.-x.
PREFACE	xi.-xxii.

The First English book on America.

This Text is the first English book containing the word America (Armenica).

¶ *Of the newe landes and of ye people founde by the messengers of the kynge of portyngale named Emanuel. Of the. x. dyuers nacyons crystened. Of pope Iohn and his landes and of the costely keyes and wonders molodyes that in that lande is.* } xxiii-xxxvi.
 [Antwerp, ? 1511,] 4to.

[<i>The voyage round Africa to India</i>	xxvii-xxix.]	The fourth nacyon [<i>The Jacobites</i> (? Abyssinians)]	xxx.
Of the blacke Moeres [of Guinea]	xxviii.	The fyfth nacyon [<i>The Nestorians</i>]	xxxi.
[Of the lande of Allago]	xxviii.	The syxte nacyon [<i>The Maronites</i>]	xxxi.
Arabia	xxviii.	The seuenth nacyon [<i>The Armenians</i>]	xxxi.
Of greate Indyen	xxviii.	The eyght nacyon [<i>The Georgians</i>]	xxxi.
Of Gutchin [<i>Cochin</i>] that Kyngedome	xxix.	The nynthe nacyon [<i>The Syrians and Samaritans</i>]	xxxi.
		The tenthe nacyon [<i>The Morabites</i>]	xxxi.
<i>Of the. x. dyverce cristened nacions</i>	xxx-xxxii.		
The fyrst nacion [<i>The Latins and Germans</i>]	xxx.	[<i>An abridgement of the mediæval Legend of Prester John</i>	xxxii-xxxvi.]
The seconde nacyon [<i>The Greeks</i>]	xxx.	Of the people named Pynnies	xxxiii.
The thyrde nacyon [<i>They of India under Pope John</i>].	xxx.		

The Life and Labours of Richard Eden xxxvii-xlvi.

Richard Eden's Contributions to our Literature, during the reigns of Edward VI. and Mary, 1553-1555, A.D.

The Second English book on America.

¶ *A treatyse of the newe India, with other new founde landes and Ilandes, aswell eastwarde as westwarde, as they are knowen and found in these oure dayes, after the descripcion of Sebastian Munster in his boke of vniversall Cosmographie: wherein the diligent reader may see the good successe and rewarde of noble and honeste enterpryses, by the which not only wordly ryches are obtayned, but also God is glorified, and the Christian fayth enlarged. Translated out of Latin into Englishe. By Rycharde Eden.* } 3-42
 [London, 1553.] 8vo.

(Richard) Eden. [Dedication] To . . . the Duke of Northumberlande, hys Grace	5-6
(Richard) Eden. To the Reader	7-11
THE TABLE	12

Of the newe India, as it is knowen and found in these our dayes 13-27

[The description of the Navigations from Spain to the new India, Eastward	13]	Of the maners of the Indians in Calicut	17-18
Of the Diamande stone, called in Latin <i>Adamas</i>	14	Of Pepper and other spices which growe in the region of Calicut	18
Of the kingdoms and cities of Narsinga and Canonor	14	Of byrdes and beastes which are found in the region of Calicut: and of the wyne of the merueylous tree	19
How the Elephantes in India are prepared to warre	15-16	Of the sundrye kindes of Spices, which are founde in Calicut, and from whence they are brought thither	20
Of the beaste called <i>Rhinoceros</i>	16	Of the Iland of <i>Zaylon</i> , and of <i>Cinömome</i> found there	20
Of <i>Calicut</i> , the most famous market towne of India	16-17		

Of the cytie of <i>Taruasseri</i> , and the maner of the cytezens there	20-21	Of the greate Empyre of <i>Cathay</i> , being vnder the dominion of the great Cham (whiche some call the great Can) Emperoure of <i>Tartaria</i> , in olde tyme called <i>Scythia</i>	24-25
Of the kingdoms and cities of Pego and Bangella	21	Of certaine Prouinces and regions subiect vnder the dominion of the greate Cham Emperour of <i>Cathay</i>	25-26
Of the greate and ryche Ilande of <i>Sumatra</i> , or <i>Samotra</i> , sometime called <i>Taprobana</i>	22	Of the Prouince of <i>Mangi</i> , and merueylous cyties conteyned in the same	26
Of the Ilande of Bornei	22	Of the region of <i>Tangut</i> , and of the great desertes, and voyces of deuylles heard in the same, and of the <i>Salamandra</i>	26-27
Of the Iland of <i>Giaua</i>	23		
Of the Iland of <i>Iaua</i>	23		
Of the Iland of <i>Madagascar</i>	23		
Of the Iland of <i>Zanzibar</i>	23		
Of the two Ilandes, in one of the which dwell onely men, and in the other onely women	24		
¶ Of the newe India, and Ilandes in the West Ocean Sea, how, when, and by whom they were found,	28-42		
[Of the new Islands and India found in the West Ocean sea, from Spain Westward and South-west	28-31, 33-39]	How the Spaniardes came to the Ilandes of <i>Molucca</i> , and of the people with great hanging eares	34-55
Of the two Ilandes <i>Iohanna</i> and <i>Hispana</i>	28	The thyrd nauigation of <i>Christophorus Columbus</i>	35-36
Of the people called <i>Canibales</i> or <i>Anthropophagi</i> , which are accustomed to eate mans fleshe	29	Howe <i>Petrus Alonsus</i> soughte newe Ilandes	36
Of the maners of the inhabitantes of the Iland of <i>Hispana</i> and of suche thynges as are found there	29	Howe <i>Pinzonus</i> , companion to the Admirall, sought newe Ilandes	36
How <i>Columbus</i> , after he had found new Ilandes, returned agayne to Spayne, where preparinge a newe nauie, he toke his viage to ye <i>Canibales</i>	29-30	Of the foure nauigacions of <i>Americus Vesputius</i> to the newe Ilandes	37
How the Admirall passed manye Ilandes, and what thynges chaunced to hym and his companie in that viage	30-31	The fyrste viage of <i>Americus Vesputius</i>	37-38
How the Spaniardes abused the submission and frendshippe of the inhabitantes of the Ilandes	31	The seconde viage of <i>Vesputius</i>	38
How the Portugals sought new Ilandes in the East partes, and how they came to <i>Calicut</i>	32-33	The thyrd viage of <i>Vesputius</i>	39
How <i>Magellanus</i> by a strayght or narrow arme of the sea, sayled by the west into the East to dyners Ilandes: where also he was slayne	33-34	The fourth viage of <i>Vesputius</i>	39
		How the king of Portugale subdued certayn places in India: and of the ryche Cytie of <i>Malacha</i>	40
		Of the Iland of <i>Medera</i> , and the fortunate Ilandes, otherwyse called the Ilandes of <i>Canaria</i>	40-41
		Whether vnder the <i>Æquinoctial</i> circle or burninge lyne (called <i>Torrida zona</i>) be habitable Regions	41-42
(Richard) Eden. To al aduenturers, and suche as take in hande greate enterpryses			42

The Third English book on America.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, conteynyng the nauigations and conquestes of the Spanyardes, with the particular description of the moste ryche and large landes and Ilandes lately founde in the west Ocean pertynyng to the inheritaunce of the kinges of Spayne. In the which the diligent reader may not only consyder what commoditie may hereby chaunce to the hole christian world in tyme to come, but also learne many secretes touchynge the lande, the sea, and the starres, very necessarie to be knowen to al such as shal attempte any nauigations, or otherwise haue delite to beholde the strange and woonderfull woorkes of God and nature. Wrytten in the Latine tounge by Peter Martyr of Angleria, and translated into Englysshe by Rycharde Eden.

43-39⁸

Londini, In ædibus Guilhelmi Powell. Anno. 1555.

THE TABLE OF THE CONTENTS OF THIS BOOKE (BESYDE THE <i>DECADES</i>)	45
(Richard) Eden. Latin Epistle to King Philip and Queen Mary	46-48
(Richard) Eden. To the Reader	49-60

[Section I. 61-204.]

(Pietro) Martire's Epistle to the Emperor Charles V., 30 September 1516	63-64
-------------------------------------------------------------------------	-------

The First Decade (or Ten Books)		65-105
Book I.	65-68	Book VI. 87-90
Book II.	68-72	Book VII. 90-93
Book III.	73-79	Book VIII. 94-96
Book IV.	79-82	Book IX. 96-102
Book V.	82-87	Book X. 103-105

The Second Decade		106-136
Book I.	106-111	Book VI. 122-125
Book II.	111-114	Book VII. 126-129
Book III.	114-118	Book VIII. 129-130
Book IV.	118-120	Book IX. 130-134
Book V.	120-122	Book X. 134-136

The Third Decade		137-185
Book I.	137-142	Book VI. 161-165
Book II.	142-145	Book VII. 165-169
Book III.	146-150	Book VIII. 170-174
Book IV.	150-156	Book IX. 175-178
Book V.	156-160	Book X. 178-185

Of the Landes and Ilandes lately founde		186-200
Pope Alexander VI. Bull dividing the New World between the Spaniards and the Portugese, 4 May 1593	In Latin and English.	201-204

[Section II. 205-242.]

(Richard) Eden. To the Reader	207
(Gonzalo) Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés. Epistle to the Emperor Charles V.	208-209
The [Natural] Hystorie of the weste Indies 210-242	
Of the ordinary nauyagation from Spayne to the Weste Indies	210
Of two notable thynges as touchyng the West Indies : And of the great rychesse brought from thense into Spayne	211
Of the mynes of golde, and the maner of woorkyng in theym	211-213
Of the maner of fyshyng for perles	213-215
Of the familiaritie which certeyne of the Indians haue with the deuyll, and howe they receaue answeere of hym of thynges to coome	215-216
Of the temperature of the regions vnder or neare to the burnt lyne cauled <i>Torrida zona</i> or the Equinoctiall : and of the dyuers seasons of the yeaere	217-218
Of dyuers particular thynges, as woormes, serpentes, beastes, foules, trees, etc.	219-225
Of trees, fruites, and plantes	225-227
Of Reedes or Canes	227-229
Of venemous apples wherwith they poyson theyr arrowes	229-230
Of fysshes and of the maner of fysshynge	230-233
Of the increase and decrease, (that is) rysynge and faullynge of our Ocean sea and Southe sea cauled the sea of <i>Sur</i>	233-234
Of the straight or narowe passage of the landelyng betweene the North and South sea, by the whiche spyces may much sooner and easlyer be brought from the Ilandes of <i>Molucca</i> into Spayne by the West Ocean then by that way wherby the Portugales sayle into East India	234-236
Of the maners and customes of the Indians of the firme lande, and of theyr women	237-238
Of the chiefe Ilandes <i>Hispaniola</i> and <i>Cuba</i>	239-241
Of the Ilande of Cuba and other	241
Of the lande of <i>Bacalcos</i> cauled <i>Terra Baccalearum</i> , situate on the North syde of the firme lande.	242

[Section III. 243-280.]

Of the Universal Carde and Newe Worlde	245
(Richard) Eden. A Discourse of the Vyage made by the Spanyardes rounde abowte the Worlde	246-247
Maximilian Transilvanianus. Epistle to the Emperor Charles V.	247-248
(Francisco) Lopez de Gómara. The Debate and Stryfe betweene the Spanyardes and Portugales for the diuision of the Indies and the trade of Spices [at the Conference at Badajos, in 1524]	271-274
(Amerigo) Vespucci. } (Andreas) de Corsali. } Of the Pole Antartike and the Starres about the same, &c.	277-280

[Section IV. 281-334.]

Of Moscouie and Cathay	283-294
(Galeazzo) Butrigarius	283
(Sebastian) Cabot	283
(Sebastian) Münster. (Jacopo) Gastaldo. A briefe description of Moscouia	291-293

(Jacobus) Zigelus.	Of the North Regions	295-306
Of the North Regions and of the moderate and continuall heate in coulede regions aswell in the nyght as in the day in the soommer season	295-298	Laponia 301-303 Norwegia or Norway 303-304 Suecia or Svethlande 305 Bothnia 305 Gothia or Gothlande 306 Finland and Eningia 306
Schondia	298-299	
Gronlande	299	
Islande	300	
(Girolamo) Cardano. Of the difference of Regions, and causes of great cities		307
(Paolo) Giovio, Bishop of Nocera. The Historie . . . of the Legation or Ambassade of the greate Basilius Prince of Moscouia to Pope Clement VII. of that name		308-317
(Sigismund) Liber. Other notable Things concerning Moscovia		318-321
The description of the regions, people, and ryuers, lying North and Easte from Moscouia	322-324	More directly from Mosconia to Cathay 325-326 Of the Tartars 327-330
Of the famous ryuer of Tanais	324-325	The nauigation by the frosen sea 330-332
Edward VI. The Copy of the Letters Missive . . . sent to the Kynges, Princes, and other potentates inhabytynge the Northeast partes of the worlde towarde the myghtye Empire of Cathaye. 1553 . . . In Latin and English.		333-334

[Section V. 335-352.]

(Francisco) Lopez de Gómara. } (Sebastian) Cabot. }	Other notable thynges as touchinge the Indies	337-350
Of the foreknowlege that the Poet Seneca had of the fyndynge of this new Worlde and other Regions not then known	337	Of the hygher East India cauled India Tercera or Terciera 344 Of the landes of Laborador and Baccalaos, lying west and northwest from Englande, and beinge parte of the firme lande of the West Indies 344-345 The discoverynge of the lande of Floryda 345-346 An opinion that Europa, Africa, and Asia, are Ilandes: and of certeyne nauigations about the same 346-347 That the Spanyardes hane sayled to the Antipodes (that is) suche as go fiete to fiete ageynst vs, and inhabite the inferiour hemispherie or halfe globe of the earthe, contrarie to th[e] oppinion of the owlde writers 347-348 Who fyrst founde the needle of the compasse, and the vse therof 348-349 The Situacion and byggenes of the earth 349 What degrees are 349-350
Of the great Ilande which Plato cauled Atlantica or Atlantide	337-338	
Of the colour of the Indians	338	
Why they were cauled Indians	339	
The fyrste discoverynge of the Weste Indies	339	
What maner of man Chrystopher Colon was: and howe he Came fyrst to the knowlege of the Indies	340	
What labour and tranayle Colon tooke in attemptyng his fyrst vyage to the Indies	340-342	
Of newe Spayne cauled Noua Hispania, or Mexico	342	
Of Peru	343	
Of the great ryuer cauled Rio de la Plata (that is) the ryuer of syluer	343-344	
(Richard) Eden. A demonstration of the roundnesse of the Earth		350
Diodorus, <i>Siculus</i> . What credit ought to bee gyuen to Wryters as touchynge the workes of nature		351

[Section VI. 353-369.]

(Richard) Eden. The preface to <i>The Booke of Metals</i>		355
(Vannuccio) Biringuccio. Of the generation of Metalles, and their mynes; with the maner of fyndinge the same		356-362
Of the myne of golde and the qualitie therof in particular	362-366	Of the myne of siluer and the qualitie therof 366-368
Diodorus, <i>Siculus</i> . The maner of workynge in golde mynes in Egipt in owld tyme		369

[Section VII. 371-390.]

(Richard) Eden. The Description of the two Viages made owt of England into Guinea		373
(Richard) Eden. A breefe Description of Affrike		374
The fyrst Vyage to Guinea		375-378
The Second Vyage to Guinea		379-388
Gemma Phrysius. The maner of fyndynge the Longitude of Regions by dyuers wayes		389-390
A BRYEFE REHERSAL OF THE CONTENTES OF THE <i>DECADES</i>		391-398
(Richard) Eden. Th[e] Interpretours excuse		398
INDEX		399-408

P R E F A C E.



TILL labouring in the diffusion of English Literature: we here, with heart-felt pleasure, present the reader with reprints of three exceedingly rare, curious, and costly Cosmographical Works; which are also the very earliest printed documents in our language, relating to South, Central, and North America.

It rarely falls to the lot of man to be able to put one's hand on the very earliest beginnings of a mighty literature. Yet it is not too much to say, that of all the vast multitude of English books that have been, or ever will be, produced, either in, or relating to, what we call our New World; the three Works reprinted in this Volume are the very first and earliest. However mighty and majestic, however subtle and eloquent, however deep and far-reaching, the American-English literature may become; here are its first fruits! Whatever period of mental florescence and splendour may yet be in store for the English-speaking races on that vast Continent; with these three Works begins the printed English Story of their Action, their Mind, and their Progress.

Almost all nations light their lamp with fire borrowed from their predecessors. They commence with translations; progress to imitations; and then, often by distinctly marked steps, the Literature mounts up to the height to which

the united wit and genius of the nation (through all the vicissitudes of earthly empire) can raise it. It rests not long at the summit; but first declines, and then decays. In its full ripeness, it oftentimes lights up the mind of younger and succeeding races; and so, at length, its life and vitality pass away. Thus has the now blazing, now dim, torch of human knowledge and mind-craft been handed down to us over the heads of the nations, through all the successive Ages of Time.

Human literature is also, like human nature, in many essentials evermore the same in all Ages. As is the life of a Man; so is the mind, that is, the higher life, which is the glory of a Nation. Both alike pass through Inception, Growth, Florescence, Decay, and Death: both alike but minister to the purposes of a Power greater than they, until the cycle of His plans shall be completed. Then cometh the end, when the World shall crack at the fiat of the Almighty Trinity.

Instances of this Law of successive Literary Cycles inter-ringing one with the other, readily suggest themselves. Such was the Literature of Greece in its earlier relations to Egypt and Phœnicia; and in its later to Rome. Such also that of the *Renaissance* in Italy, in respect to the Greek literature of Byzantium; and to its subsequent influence (which, either as to fulness or extent, has hardly yet been measured) on the rawer nations of Spain, Germany, France, and England.

Such was that of Spain (which now we consider so dead), with reference to the anterior civilisation and letters of the Moorish kingdom there. Such undoubtedly has been, and will be the literature of England; now, it may be, in the early afternoon of its glory. And such has been, and will be that of English-America; now in the morning of its strength and power. In the words of the great and wise Preacher, "To every thing there is a season, and a time to every purpose under heaven."

Under any circumstances, therefore, the present Texts would excite great interest; whatever might be the nature of their contents. It is pleasant, however, to find that each of them has for us modern readers, a distinct interest and a strong charm: while all three do afford us a most vivid picture of those early days of oceanic discovery; of the terrible real dangers, and the still more terrible imaginary ones, undergone and dared by the many noble-hearted Portuguese and Spaniards for themselves and for us; when they wan, in their little cockboats, for the succeeding Human Race, a truer knowledge of the Globe in which, by the Divine Providence, it has been placed.

But the first impression—the most salient and significant interest of this volume—is that it contains reprints of *The first Three English books on America*.

II.



Ur next consideration respects their *contemporary* standpoint; their relation to the story of the nation, for whom the three Texts were printed: and especially to supply Eden's omissions, as regards the very early oceanic voyages of the English, both East and West.

These publications are of great and perpetual interest, inasmuch as they photograph for all time, the fragmentary and imperfectly attained knowledge, and the vast and credulous wonderment, prevailing in England in respect to far-distant countries, during the reigns of Henry VIII. and his two immediate successors. The Texts of this volume embrace, in fact, all that the gentry and merchants of England could, down to the year 1555, A.D., read in the tongue in which they were born, of the wonderful discoveries, and still more marvellous conquests, of the Portuguese and Spaniards in the two Indies.

Neither was this amount of printed information much added to, in Eden's lifetime. His greatest literary feat—the Compilation of 1555—found no immediate imitators: so that it was left to himself (after twenty years more, of great vicissitude, had passed over his head) to undertake its repetition, in the form of a Second and much revised Edition of this labour of love; in the preparation of which he died. This revised Compilation finally appeared in 1577, “set in order, augmented, and finished” by Richard Willes, under the fresh title of *The History of Trauayle in the VWest and East Indies, and other countreys lying either way, &c.* It was five years later (1582), that R[ichard] H[akluyt] published his first Collection, under the title of *Diuers voyages, &c.*

An enquiry into the printed naval literature of Queen Elizabeth's reign, has also elicited the fact, that it was not until about that same year (1577), that our Oceanic Literature fairly began to constitute a distinct section of English books. It soon, however, greatly increased in bulk, variety, and interest; until now, it has no compeer in any other language.

Eden is therefore, in very deed, the Pioneer of British geographic research, the very First of our Naval Chroniclers, and the Herald and Forerunner of all our subsequent discoveries and victories at sea. So that in English literary history, Richard Eden stands in the same relation to Richard Hakluyt, that Richard Hakluyt does to Samuel Purchas; and Samuel Purchas, to our present Hakluyt and Royal Geographical Societies.

This multifarious volume should be studied in conjunction with the inland Chronicles of Halle, Grafton, Stow, and others; together with the more modern histories of the Reformation Age. These are chiefly, if not exclusively, occupied with home and continental affairs; and but rarely travel further abroad. In this direction, this Work will help, in a very important manner, to complete for us, the external history of England, during the period 1511–1555, A.D.

2. It will soon, however, be seen that it does this rather by way of narrating the deeds of other nations, and thereby teaching and guiding our forefathers to do the like; than by describing

the English navigations of its own time. Indeed, there are only two English voyages described in it with any detail, and those are rather late ones, viz., the voyages to Guinea in 1553 and 1554. Yet these accounts (the very earliest of their kind ever *printed* in our language) were not, as it is quite evident from page 388, included in the original conception and plan of the Work: but were added, just as the book was being completed, by way of a postscript; the extra expense of which, was borne by Master Toy, the London printer and publisher.

It is also to be especially noted, that this omission did not arise because there were no English Voyages to relate; but because the custom of narrating them in print had not yet arisen in our language. Sea-Histories had not, as yet, become an section of our Literature.

Inasmuch, therefore, as so large a portion of this Volume is occupied with the famous deeds of other nations, and particularly of those of the Spaniards; it may be well (as it is indeed but just to our own race) to place in the forefront of them all, a very slight account, by way of a rescue from oblivion, of the sea-doings and sea-daring of our forefathers in the reigns of Henry VIII., Edward VI., and Mary:—narrating the Oceanic voyages with fuller detail than those to the Continent and the Levant, as they were the more adventurous and difficult.

3. From the capture of Constantinople in 1454, till after the battle of Lepanto in 1572; there was an almost ceaseless fight between the Christians and the Turks along the eastern shores of the Mediterranean Sea. The Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, after they had been driven from Rhodes in 1522, finally settled at Malta in 1530; where by their heroic valour in the frightful siege in 1565, they materially contributed, with the great naval victory of Don John of Austria, to stem the flow of Turkish invasion, which else threatened to swallow up all Christian States.

Recollecting that the formidable, ruthless, and barbaric power of the Turkish empire was at this time ever surging onward and westward in those eastern seas; it will interest most of us to know that there was a regular organised and direct commerce by sea between England and the Levant so early as 1511, A.D.; and for many years afterwards. For our knowledge of this we are indebted to our great English Worthy and famous Cosmographer Richard Hakluyt, Preacher; sometime a Student of Christ Church in Oxford: who, in the second edition of his great work entitled *The Principal Navigations, Voyages, Traffiques, and Discoveries of the English Nation, &c. &c.*, London, 1599–1600 fol., has preserved for us the following important note on—

The antiquitie of the trade with English ships into the Leuant.

IN the yeeres of oure Lord, 1511, 1512, &c., till the yeere 1534. diuers tall ships of London, namely, *The Christopher Campion*, wherein was Factor one *Roger Whitcome*; the *Mary George*, wherein was Factor *William Gresham*; the great *Mary Grace*, the Owner whereof, was *William Gunson*; and the mafter one *John Hely*; the *Trinitie Fitz-williams*, whereof was master *Laurence Arkey*; the *Matthew* of London, whereof was master *William Capling*, with certaine other ships of *Southampton* and *Bristol*, had an ordinarie and vsuall trade to *Sicilia*, *Candia*, *Chio*, and somewhiles to *Cyprus*, as also to *Tripolis* and *Barutti* [*Beyroul*] in *Syria*. The com-

modities which they caried thither were fine Kerfies of diuers colours, courfe Kerfies, white Westerne dozens, Cottons, certaine clothes called Satutes, and others called Cardinal-whites, and Calueskins which were well fold in *Sicilie*, &c. The commodities which they returned backe were Silks, Chamlets, Rubarbe, Malmesies, Muskadels and other wines, sweete oyles, cotten wooll, Turkie carpets, Galles, Pepper, Cinamom, and some other spices, &c. Besides, the naturall inhabitants of the foresayd places, they had, euen in those dayes, traffique with Iewes, Turkes, and other forreiners. Neither did our merchants onely employ their owne English shipping before mentioned, but fundry strangers also: as namely, *Candiots*, *Raguseans*, *Sicilians*, *Genouczes*, *Venetian* galliaffes, *Spanish* and *Portugale* ships. All which particulars doe most euidently appeare out of certaine auncient Ligier booke [i.e. *Ledgers*] of the R[ight]. W[orshipful]. Sir *William Locke* Mercer of *London*, of Sir *William Bowyer* Alderman of *London*, of master *Iohn Grestham*, and of others; which I *Richard Hakluyt* haue diligently perused and copied out.—*Vol. II., Part I., p. 96, Ed. 1599.*

4. Next in the order of time comes the mythical voyage of 1517 of Sebastian Cabot and Sir Thomas Pert from England towards Cathay; the sole authority for which is Eden's statement at page 6 of this Volume: in which, so far as we have been able to inquire, we believe him to have been utterly mistaken, and that the voyage had no existence; and the more especially because Sebastian Cabot was at that date in Spain, where he remained until after the Conference of Badajos in 1524, which (as Gomara tells us at *p. 272*) he attended as an expert on behalf of the Emperor Charles V.

5. Important and authentic as is that early Levant traffic; it was a very different thing from a voyage across the then but half discovered Atlantic. As Pietro Martire vaunts, few or none but Spaniards were licensed to go from Spain to the New World. It is, therefore, very striking to find, ere Cortes had consolidated his marvellous conquest of Mexico, or Pizarro had finally set forth to imitate him in Peru; and while at home, the great Cardinal was in serene prosperity and unruffled power, our first printed New Testaments were being secretly read in the principal English towns, and our nation's Reformation was just beginning to bud forth: it is indeed surprising to trace one Englishman at least in the West Indies; to learn, of a certainty, that one, if not two English expeditions had reached the American coast; and, most startling of all, to know that one of these squadrons found in the harbour of St John's, Newfoundland, not another royal fleet of discovery, but a fleet of fourteen *fishing-boats* (and, if Spanish reports be correct, thirty or forty more in the neighbourhood), that had ventured (at a time when, to us, so little appears to have been known of the north-eastern seaboard of America; and so much to have been dreaded in a voyage thither) across the wide Atlantic, simply for the sake of codfish.

6. Hakluyt gives the following account of Thomas Tyson or Tison, the first Englishman known to have reached the West Indies:—

A briefe note concerning an ancient trade of the English Marchants to the Canarie-lands, gathered out of an olde ligier booke [ledger] of M. Nicolas Thorne the elder a worshopfull marchant of the city of Brisfoll.

T appeareth euidently out of a certaine note or letter of remembrance, in the custody of me *Richard Hakluyt*, written by M. *Nicolas Thorne* the elder a principall marchant of *Brisfoll*, to his friend and factour *Thomas Midnall* and his owne seruant *William Ballard* at that time resident in *S. Lucar* in *Andeluzia*; that in the yeere of our Lord 1526 (and by all circumstances

and probabilities long before) certaine English marchants, and among the rest himselfe with one *Thomas Spacheford* exercised vsuall and ordinary trade of marchandise vnto the *Canarie* Ilands. For by the sayd letter notice was giuen to *Thomas Midnall* and *William Ballard* aforesayd, that a certaine ship called *The Christopher of Cadiz* bound for the *West Indies* had taken in certaine fardels of cloth both courfe and fine, broad and narrow of diuers forts and colours, some *arouas* [*arobas*] of packthreed, fixe *cerons* or bagges of sope, with other goods of M. *Nicolas Thorne*, to be deliuered at *Santa Cruz*, the chiefe towne in *Tenerifa*, one of the feuen *Canary-lands*. All which commodities the sayd *Thomas* and *William* were authorized by the owner in the letter before mentioned to barter and sell away at *Santa Cruz*. And in lieu of such mony as should arise of the sale of those goods, they were appointed to returne backe into *England* good store of *Orchell* (which is a certaine kinde of mosse growing vpon high rocks, in those dayes much vsed to die withall), some quantity of sugar, and certaine hundreds of kid-skinnes. For the procuring of which and of other commodities, at the best and first hand, the sayd *Thomas* and *William* were to make their abode at *Santa Cruz*, and to remaine there as factours for the abouesaid M[after] *Nicolas Thorne*.

And here also I thought good to signifie, that in the sayd letters mention is made of one *Thomas Tison*, an English man, who before the foresayd yere 1526 had found the way to the *West Indies*, and was there resident, vnto whom the sayd M[after] *Nicolas Thorne* sent certaine armour and other commodities specified in the letter aforesayd.—*Principal Navigations, &c. &c. of the English Nation, Vol. II., Part II., p. 3, Ed. 1599.*

Hakluyt, referring again to this note, hazards the following surmise:—

This *Thomas Tison* (so farre as I can coniecture) may seeme to haue bene some secret factour for M. *Thorne* and other English marchants in those remote partes, whereby it is probable that some of our marchants had a kind of trade to the *West Indies*, euen in those ancient times and before also.—*Idem, Vol. III., p. 500, Ed. 1600.*

This conjecture is confirmed by the fact that *Nicolas Thorne*, at his death in 1527, owed this *Thomas Tyson* the sum of £12:5s. (probably on account of business).—See *Letters and Papers on the Reign of Henry VIII.*, Edited by the Rev. J. S. Brewer, M.A., *IV. (2), p. 1256.*

7. Imbedded in Halle's Chronicle is the following note, quite unconnected with anything going before or after, and to which also he makes no subsequent allusion whatever:—

This same moneth [May 1527, 19 Hen. VIII.] the kyng sent two fayre shippes, well manned and vitailed, hauing in theim diuers conning men, to seke strange regions; and so furth thei fet, out of the *Thamis*, the twentie day of May, if thei sped well you shall here at their retorne. *fol. 158, b.*

This note *Richard Grafton*, who had printed Halle's Chronicles in 1548, transferred (with but variations of spelling) to *p. 1149* of his own Chronicle, printed by *Henry Denham* in 1569.

Richard Hakluyt, in his *Principal Navigations, Voyages, and Discoveries*, thus records his researches as to this expedition:—

AND whereas master *Hall* and master *Grafton* say, that in those ships there were diuers conning men, I haue made great inquirie of such as, by their yeeres and delight in nauigation, might giue me any light to know who those conning men should be, which were the directors in the aforesayd voyage.

And it hath bene told mee by Sir *Martin Frobisher*, and master *Richard Allen* a Knight of the *Sepulchre*, that a Canon of *S. Paul* in *London*, which was a great Mathematician, and a man indued with wealth, did much aduance the action, and went therein himselfe in person, but what his name was, I can not learne of any. And further they told mee that one of the ships was called the *Dominus vobiscum*, which is a name likely to bee giuen by a religious man of those daies. and that failing very farre Northwestward, one of the ships was cast away as it entred into a dangerous gulphe, about the great opening, betwene the North partes of *New found land*, and the countrey lately called by her maiestie *Meta Incognita* [i.e. *Labrador*].

Whereupon the other ship shaping her course towards *Cape Britton*, and the coast of *Norumbega* [Hakluyt substitutes *Arambee* in his 1600 Edition], and oftentimes putting their men on land to search the state of those unknown regions, returned home about the beginning of October, of the yeere aforesaid. And thus much (by reason of the great negligence of the writers of those times, who should have used more care in preferring the memories of the worthy actes of our nation) is all that hitherto I can learne, or find out of this voyage.—p. 517, *Ed.* 1589; also, iii 129, *Ed.* 1600.

Of this enterprize, Purchas some thirty-five years later has preserved for us, at pp. 808-91 of the Third volume of his *Pilgrimes*, 1625, the following more authentic testimony:—

WEE will recreate you with a plaine Mariners Letter endorsed in homely phrase, To the Honourable Kings Grace of *England*, here (as I thinke) giuen you from the Originall. I have also another written to Cardinal *Wolfey* touching the same voyage in Latin, by *Albertus de Prato*; for the antiquitie rather than any remarkable raritie, worthy here to be mentioned.¹

² I mentioned before Master *Thornes* fathers finding out *New-found Land*, with Master *Eliot*. These animated King *Henrie* the eight to fet forth two ships for discouerie, one of which perished in the North parts of *New-found Land*. The Master of the other, *John Rut*, writ this Letter to King *Henrie*, in bad *English* and worfe Writing.ouer it was this superscription.³

Master *Grubes* two ships departed from *Plymouth* the 10. day of *June*, and arriued in the *New-found-Land* in a good Harbour, called *Cape de Bas*, the 21. day of *July*: and after we had left the fight of *Selle* [*Scilly*], we had neuer fight of any Land, till we had fight of *Cape de Bas*.

Rleasing your Honorable Grace to heare of your seruant *John Rut*, with all his Company here, in good health, thanks be to God, and your Graces ship, *The Mary of Guildford* with all her thanks be to God: And if it please your honorable Grace, we ranne in our course to the Northward, till we came into 53. degrees, and there we found many great Ilands of Ice and deepe water, we found no sounding, and then we durst not goe no further to the Northward for feare of more Ice, and then we cast about to the Southward, and within foure dayes after we had one hundred and sixtie fathom, and then we came into 52. degrees, and fell with the mayne Land, and within ten leagues of the mayne Land we met with a great Iland of Ice, and came hard by her, for it was standing in deepe water, and so went in with *Cape de Bas*, a good Harbor, and many small Ilands, and a great fresh Riuer going vp farre into the mayne Land, and the mayne Land all wilder nesse and mountaines and woods, and no naturall ground but all mosse, and no inhabitation nor no people in these parts: and in the woods we found footing of diuers great beasts, but we saw none not in ten leagues. And please your Grace, the *Samson* and wee kept company all the way till within two dayes before wee met with all the Ilands of Ice. That was the first day of *July* at night, and there rose a great and a maruailous great storme, and much foule weather; I trust in *Almightie Iesu* to heare good newes of her. And please your Grace, we were considering and a writing of all our order, how we would waite [watch] vs, and what course we would draw, and when God doe send foule weather, that with *Cape de Sper* she [i.e. each ship] should goe, and he that came first should tarry the space of sixe weeks one for another, and watered at *Cape de Bas* ten dayes, ordering of your Graces ship, and fishing, and so departed toward the Southward to seeke our fellow: the third day of *August* we entered into a good *Hauen*, called *Saint Iohn*, and there we found eleuen saile of *Normans*, and one *Brittaine*, and two *Portugall Barkes*, and all a fishing, and so we are readie to depart toward *Cape de Bas*,⁴ and that is twentie fiae leagues, as

¹ The very high antiquity of these letters—which are the earliest ever known to have been sent home by Englishmen from America—constitutes their great modern value.

² The next two sentences are a jumble of error. It is clear from the text that the expedition consisted of three ships: Master *Grube's* or *Grub's* two ships, one of which was called the *Sampson*, the name of the other does not transpire (if it could be ascertained to be the *Dominus Vobiscum*, the chain of testimony would be complete): together with the King's ship, the *Mary of Guildford*, commanded by *John Rut*.

³ Purchas evidently intends us to understand that the endorsement is contemporary with the letter.

⁴ This is evidently a mistake through the hurry in writing. It should be *Cape de Sper* [*Cabo de Spera*, "the Cape of the Spear"]. For the two ships, after having stayed

shortly as we haue fished, and so along the coast till we may meete with our fellow, and so with all diligence that lyes in me towards parts to that Ilands that we are commanded by the grace of God, as we were commanded at our departing. And thus *Iesu* saue and keepe your honorable Grace, and all your honourable Reuer., in the *Hauen of Saint Iohn*, the third day of *August*, written in haste. 1527.

By your seruant *John Rut*, to his vttermost of his power.

I haue by me also *Albert de Prato's*¹ originall Letter, in Latin stille, almost as harsh as the former *English*, and bearing the same date, and was indorfed, *Reuerend in Christo Patri Domino Domino Cardinali et Domino Legato Angliæ*: and began, *Reuerendissime in Christo Pater salutem. Reuerendissime Pater, placeat Reuerendissima paternitati vestre scire Deo fauente postquam exiimus à Plemul quæ fuit x. Iunij &c.* (The substance is the same with the former, and therefore omitted.) *Datum apud le Baya Saint Iohan in Terris Nouis, die x. Augusti 1527. Reuer. Patr. vest. humilis seruus, Albertus de Prato* (the name written in the lowest corner of the sheet).

We are fortunately able to trace this expedition still further. By "towards parts to that Ilands that we are commanded," *John Rut* meant the West Indies; and we have accounts by two Spanish historians of his arrival there, which will demand of us some further attention.

Gonzales Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés—b. at *Madrid* 1478, d. at *Valladolid* 1557, and who resided for many years in the West Indies—wrote, in addition to the *Natural hystoria de las Indias* printed at *Toledo* on 15th *February* 1526, from which *Eden* has translated large extracts at pp. 208-242 of this Volume; another and his most important work, entitled *La historia general de las Indias*, the printing of which was completed at *Seville* on 30th *September* 1535 (or about eight years after *Rut's* expedition); every copy of which is attested with *Oviedo's* written signature. It does not appear that *Eden* had met with this important work, or he would have assuredly have made the following extract from it.

On folio clxj. of this work, being the Thirteenth chapter of the Nineteenth book, is the following passage, for the literal translation of which we are much indebted to the courtesy and kindness of the celebrated Spanish scholar, *Don Pasqual de Gayangos*.

Before we come to the extract; an error as to its date (which misled *Hakluyt*, and may mislead others) must be noted for avoidance, in the Third Volume of *J. B. Ramusio's Navigazioni e Viaggi*. Each Volume of this celebrated Collection was printed in a different year by *L. A. Giunti* at *Venice*. Vol. I., of which a First Edition had been printed in 1550, appeared corrected and enlarged in *March* 1554. Of Vol. II., the Preface of which is dated 7th *July* 1554, the earliest known is that of 1559; while Vol. III., the Preface of which is dated 20th *June* 1553, appears to have been first printed in 1556; that is to say, in the year after *Eden's* Compilation was published in *London*.

Now, at p. 204 of this Third Volume, of 1556, occurs this important typographical error. *Oviedo* in 1535 begins *Elanno*

ten days, 21-31 *July* 1527, at *Cape de Bas*, sailing southward, had reached *St. John's* harbour on the 3d of *August*, and then purposed to go 75 miles more, evidently to the southward, to *Cape de Sper*, the appointed rendezvous, where they hoped to meet the *Sampson*. From the date of the priest's letter, however, it is evident that the two English ships stayed a week longer at *St. John's*. These letters were probably sent to *England* in one of the *Norman* or *Breton* fishing boats.

¹ I have quite failed to find any notice of this *Albertus de Prato*. Might that be a latinised form of *Albert Prat*? or was the bearer of the name a foreigner? I can trace no such name in *Le Neve's Fasti* or *Newcourt's Repertorium*. It would be interesting if he could be identified with *Hakluyt's* mathematical Canon of *St. Paul's*.

de M.d.xxvij. annos, &c.; which Ramusio in 1556 translates *Nel 1517* instead of *Nel 1527*. Hakluyt in 1589, not suspecting any falsification, thereupon adduces the following extract in support of fabulous English voyage of 1517, hereafter asserted by Eden at p. 6: but the date being wrong, his argument, of course, falls to pieces.

It would also seem that Oviedo was residing in the city of Santo Domingo, when he wrote this portion of his history.

CHAPTER 13. *Of certain foreign corsairs which passed to these parts and Indies, and what has been the cause and origin of their bad thoughts.*

IN the year Mdxvii. an English corsair, under colour or pretence that he was going to discover land, came with a large ship to the Brazil on the coast of Tierra Firme, and from thence crossed to this Island Hispanola, and arrived close to the mouth of the harbour of this city [Santo Domingo]. He sent his boat properly manned, and asked for permission to come into port, saying that he came with merchandise and to barter [with the inhabitants]. At the same moment the Governor, Francisco de Tapia, ordered a gun to be fired against the said [English] ship, which was coming straight into the harbour; which being observed by the English, they went away, after taking on board the said boat's crew. And, to tell the truth, the Governor [Tapia] was wrong in what he did, for had the English vessel entered the harbour, armed though she was, she could not have left without the consent of this city and castle.

So that the English, seeing the reception that was made to them, sailed in the direction of the Island of San Juan, and having entered the Bay of San German, spoke to the inhabitants of that town, and asked for provisions: uttering complaints against the people of this island [Hispaniola], and saying that they had not come to annoy the people, but to traffic with them, if they consented, for money or merchandise. Provisions were given to them, and they gave pewter vessels and other goods in return. After which the ship sailed for Enrope; but it is supposed that she never reached her destination, for nothing more was heard of her.

Considering that Oviedo *printed* the above less than eight years after the event, there can hardly be any mistake as to the year being 1527. Yet in a later Spanish historian we find these circumstances, in much fuller detail, narrated as occurring in 1519. So that of the three dates 1517, 1519, and 1527; the last is the true one.

Antonio de Herrera Tordesillas, [b. 1559 at Cuella de Segovia; d. 29th March 1625 at Madrid], was born two years after the death of Oviedo. The first four *Decades* of his *Historia General de los Hechos de los Castellanos en las Islas i tierra firme* were printed in 1601, the last four in 1615; both at Madrid. In the second *Decas*, which was published seventy-four years after Rut's voyage, we have an account of him and his doings, evidently derived from a written deposition; as Oviedo's had been either from hearsay or from personal observation. It consists of the narrative (for the translation of which I am indebted to my friend, the late H. Pyne, Esq., Assistant Tithe Commissioner) of Ginès Navarro, master of a Spanish caravel, who apparently piloted Rut's ship from Porto Rico by the island of Mona to Santo Domingo, and then back again to San Germano in the island of Porto Rico.

THE ARRIVAL OF AN ENGLISH SHIP IN THE INDIES, AND THE STATE OF AFFAIRS IN THE ISLANDS.

AFTER the departure of the ships which carried [? to Spain] the gold pearls and ordinary merchandise; a caravel of Santo Domingo being in the island of San Juan [de Porto Rico], loading with casava; there arrived [at Porto Rico] a ship of three masts, and of the burden of 150 tons. The

master of the caravel, [who] went out in his boat to this ship, supposing it to be a Spanish vessel, discovered [coming towards him] a pinnace containing twenty-five men armed with corslets and cross-bows, and having two pieces of artillery in its prow.

They said that they were Englishmen, and that their ship was from England; that, in company with another armed ship, they had sailed to seek the country of the Great Khan, but that the ships had been separated in a tempest: and that theirs, proceeding on its voyage, came to a frozen sea, where they found large islands of ice; that they had then altered their course, and came to a hot sea [? the Gulf Stream], which seethed like water in a caldron; and in order that the caulking of the ship might not be melted, they went in search of the Baccalaos,¹ where they found fifty² Spanish, French, and Portuguese ships, and that they wishing to land there in order to obtain an Indian interpreter, they [the Indians] killed the pilot, who was a Piedmontese. From thence, they had coasted as far as the *Rio de Chicora* [the River of Chicora, i.e. River in Carolina], and had crossed over from that river to the island of San Juan [de Porto Rico].

Upon being asked, What they were searching for in those islands? they said that they were desirous of seeing them, for the purpose of giving an account of them to the King of England, and to take a cargo from Brazil.

They invited the master of the caravel, who was called Ginès Navarro, to come on board their ship, and to show them the course to Saint Domingo. He saw in the ship a quantity of wine, flour, and other provisions; as well as much cloth, linen, and other articles of merchandise. They carried much artillery and a forge, and carpenters for ship-building, and an oven for baking bread; and there were [in the ship] threescore men.

Ginès Navarro further stated that, if he could have read them, the captain of the ship wished to show him the instructions which he brought from the King of England; that they had sent a company ashore at the Island of Mona,³ and that they had bartered some pewter in the Island of San Juan.

This ship went to the port of Santo Domingo, and sent the bark ashore, saying That they were desirous of trading; and [it] tarried there two days, The governor of the Castle, upon the arrival of the ship, sent to inform the Magistrates [? the Royal Audience], for the purpose of their giving him orders what to do; and as they returned no answer, he discharged a gun at the ship, in consequence of which, she forthwith recalled the bark, and by and by set sail.

The ship then returned to the back of the island of San Juan, and carried a short time there, trading with the inhabitants of the town of Saint Germans; and did not appear again.

The magistrates [of Saint Domingo] arrested the governor, saying that he ought to have waited for their answer; and sent information of this affair to the King [of Spain], as well as of the bad condition of the fortress, so that orders might be given for the fortification of it, and [that] there should be directions [given] for the providing it with men, artillery, and military stores.—*Decades*, ii., *Book v.*, *Chapter 3.*, *Ed.* 1601.

Thus from four perfectly distinct and independent sources, comes to us the certainty of this English voyage across the Atlantic in 1527; for a further discussion of which see that masterpiece in its way, and rare book (in the Eastern hemisphere at least), Mr. J. G. Kohl's *History of the Discovery of Maine*, published by the Maine Historical Society at Portland, in 1869; and Mr. Biddle's *Memoir of Sebastian Cabot*, London 1832. Both these writers think that the Piedmontese pilot was the celebrated Verazzano.

It is interesting to know that John Rut got back safely to England. For in Sept.-Dec. 1528, while still in the command

¹ The Indian word for codfish, applied by S. Cabot to the land he first discovered, and afterwards loosely and vaguely applied to the American coast from Labrador far to the southward. Here it evidently includes Newfoundland, Nova Scotia, and the northern seaboard States of the United States.

² This number may be an exaggeration. If it be correct, the English squadron must have met thirty or forty other fishing-boats on the Newfoundland 'banks,' beside the fourteen they saw in St. John's harbour.

³ Mona is a small island in the track from Port Rico to Santo Domingo.

of the *Mary of Guildford*, he was employed in freighting home, on the King's behalf, wine from Bourdeaux. See *Royal M.S. 14. B. xxix.*, in the British Museum.

8. We have seen by the above that the King's ships left the Thames on 20th May 1527. Whatever else may be doubtful, that is certain: and therefore it is equally certain that the 'Book' which Robert Thorne, the Bristol merchant, wrote at Seville in that year, and sent to Doctor Leigh, the King's almoner, and the English ambassador in Spain, had nothing to do with the fitting out of that London expedition.

This far-seeing discourse, with its preliminary exhortation to the King, was first printed by R[ichard] H[akluyt] in his *Diuers Voyages, &c.* in 1582. Its only date is 1527, which occurs twice; each time after the author's signature—'Robert Thorne. 1527.' As Hakluyt reproduced Thorne's curious 'Carde' or map, it is quite evident that he had before him, in 1582, the original and autographic book penned by the author; and therefore the date 1527 must be accepted by us without a doubt.

Now it was the English custom at that time, to reckon the year from the 25th March, the Feast of the Annunciation of the Virgin. The 'Book' was therefore written at the earliest after the 25th March 1527.

The two following passages in it, taken together, would seem to show that it was not *written* till the summer was far advanced, probably while Rut's expedition was skirting the American coast.

In a flote of three shippes and a carauell that went from this cite, armed by the merchautes of it, which departed in Aprill last past, I and my partner haue 1400. Ducates that we employed in the fayd fleete, principally for that two Englishmen friends of mine [*see p. xiii.*] whiche are somewhat learned in Cosmographie, shoulde go in the same shippes, to bring mee certaine relation of the situation of the cuntry, and to bee experte in the Navigation of those seas, and there to haue informations of many other things, and aduise that I desire to know especially. Seeing in these quarters are ships, and mariners of that cuntry, and cardes [*charts*] by which they sayle, though much vnlike ours, that they should procure to haue the said cards, and learne howe they vnderstande them, and especially to know what Navigation they haue for these Ilandes Northwardes and Northeastwardes. *B. 4.*

But if it please God that into Englande I may come with your Lordship, I will shewe some coniectures of reason though against the generall opinion of Cosmographers, by which shall appeare this that I say not to lacke some foundation. And tyll that time I beseeche your Lordship let it bee put to filence: and in the meane season, it may please God to fende our two Englishmen, that are gone to the spicerie, which may also bring more plaine declaration of yat which in this case might be required. . . . *D. 3.*

It would seem that Thorne by 'April last paste' means April 1527; for if he had intended April 1526, and wrote this 'Book' in the seven days of 25-31 March, then by English custom reckoned as the first days of 1527, he would assuredly have said 'April last year.' It is also evident from the allusion that a considerable time had elapsed since the two Englishmen had left for the West Indies; and that, at the time of writing, Thorne was looking forward to their return. The earliest approximate date that can therefore be assigned to its composition is the summer of 1527. Dr. Leigh did not return to England till January 1530.

We must therefore assign the occasion and preparation of this English voyage of Oceanic discovery of 1527 to other

persons than Robert Thorne. Such an important effort, as this expedition most certainly was, could not have been suddenly determined upon, and probably originated in the previous year.

Thorne's 'Book' is also interesting for another reference to a very early English voyage across the Atlantic.

So that as afore is sayde, if betweene our Newe founde landes or *Norway*, or Ilande the Seas towarde the north be Nauigable, wee shoulde goe to these Ilandes a shorter way by more then 2000. leagues. And though wee went not in the faide Ilandes, for that they are the Emperours or Kinges of Portingale, wee shoulde by the way, and comming once to the line Equinoctiall, finde landes no lesse riche in Golde and spicerie, as all other landes are vnder the faide line Equinoctiall: and also shoulde, if wee may passe vnder the North, enioye the Nauigation of all Tartarie.

Which shoulde bee no lesse profitable to our commodities of clothe, then these spiceries to the Emperour, and King of Portogale.

But it is a generall opinion of all Cosmographers that passing the seventh clyme, the sea is all ice, the colde so much that none can suffer it. And hitherto they had all the like opinion that vnder the line Equinoctiall for muche heate the lande was inhabitable.

Yet since by experience is proved no lande so much habitable nor more temperate. And to conclude, I thinke the same shoulde bee founde vnder the North, if it were experimented. For as all iudge, *Nihil fit vacuum in rerum nature*, so I iudge there is no lande inhabitable [*i.e. uninhabitable*], nor Sea innaigable. If I should write the reason that prefereth this vnto me, I shoulde be too prolix, and it seemeth not requisite for this present matter. God knoweth that though by it I shoulde haue no great interest, yet I haue had and still haue no little minde of this businesse: So that if I had facultie to my will, it shoulde bee ye first thing that I woulde vnderstande, euen to attempt, if our Seas Northwardes be nauigable to the Pole or no. I reason, that as some sickenesses are hereditarious, and come from the father to the sonne, so this inclination or desire of this discouerie I inherited of my father, which with another merchant of Britfowe named Hugh Eliot were the discouersers of newe found lands, of the which there is no doubt, as now plainly appeareth, if the mariners would then haue been ruled and folowed their pilots mind, the lands of the West Indies, from whence all the gold commeth, had bene ours. For all is one coaste, as by the carde appeareth, and [as] is aforefaide. . . . *D. 2.*

A most excellent account of the merchant family of the Thornes of Bristol will be found in *English Merchants*, 1869, written by my fellow-student at King's College, Mr. H. R. Fox Bourne.

9. The next English Voyage on our record introduces us to a very famous name. It is thus preserved to us by Hakluyt.

A VOYAGE TO BRASILL, MADE BY THE WORSHIPIFULL M[ASTER] WILLIAM HAWKINS OF PLIMMOUTH, FATHER TO SIR IOHIN HAWKINS, KNIGHT, NOW LIVING,¹ IN THE YEERE 1530.



Lde *M. William Hawkins of Plimmouth*, a man for his wifdome, valure, experience, and skill in sea causes, much esteemed and beloued of King *Henry* the eight, and being one of the principall Sea Captaines in the West partes in his time, not contented with the short voyages commonly then made onely to the knowen coastes of *Europe*, armed out a tall and goodly ship of his owne of the burthen of 250 tunnes, called the Pole [*Paul*, *Ed. 1600*] of *Plimmouth*, wherewith hee made three long and famous voyages vnto the coast of *Brasill*, a thing in those dayes very rare, especially to our Nation. In the courfe of which voyages he touched at the Riuer of *Seftos* vpon the coast of *Guinea*, where hee trafiqued with the *Negroes*, and tooke of them Oliphants [*Elephants*, *Ed. 1600*] teeth, and other commodities which that

¹ As this was printed in 1589, old William Hawkins lived to see the overthrow of the Spanish Armada, and so is very properly introduced by the Rev. Canon Kingsley, with his usual truthfulness in details, in his celebrated Elizabethan romance of *Westward Ho!* as a very old man, present at Plymouth with the Captains who were waiting the arrival of the great Spanish Fleet.

place yeeldeth: and so arriuing on the coast of *Brazil*, vsed there such discretion, and behaued himself so wisely with those sauage people, that he grew into great familiaritie and friendship with them. Infomuch that in his 2. voyage, one of the sauage kings of the countrey of *Brazil*, was contented to take shippe with him, and to bee transported hither into England, whereunto M[after] *Haukins* agreed, leauing behinde in the Countrey as a pledge for his safetie and returne againe, one *Martin Cockeram* of *Plimmouth*. This *Brazilian* king being arriued [i.e. in 1531], was brought vp to London, and presented to King *Henry* the 8. lying as then at *Whitehall*: at the sight of whome, the King and all the Nobilitie did not a little marueile, and not without cause: for in his cheekes were holes made according to their sauage maner, and therein small bones were planted, standing an inche out from the said holes, which in his owne Countrey was reputed for a great brauerie. He had also another hole in his neather lippe, wherein was fet a precious stone about the bignesse of a peafe. All his apparell, behaiour, and gesture were very strange to the beholders.

Hauing remained here the space almost of a whole yere, and the king with his sight fully satisfied, M[after] *Haukins* according to his promise and appointment, purposed to conuey him againe into his Countrey: but it fell out in the way that, by change of ayre and alteration of diet, the said sauage king died at Sea, which was feared would turne to the losse of the life of *Martin Cockeram* his pledge. Neuerthelesse, the Sauages being fully perwaded of the honest dealing of our men with their Prince, restored againe the saide pledge, without any harme to him, or any man of the companie: which pledge of theirs they brought home againe into England, with their shippe freighted and furnished with the commodities of the Countrey. Which *Martine Cockeram*, by the witnessse of Sir *John Haukins*, being an officer in the towne of *Plimmouth*, was liuing within these fewe yeares.—p. 520, *Ed.* 1589.

10. Let us now look eastward. In 1592, (three years after the appearance of the First edition of his *Voyages*, &c.), Hakluyt became acquainted with a very old man, a Londoner named *John Williamson*, then apparently the sole survivor of our first traffic in the Levant; which dying out, had been revived in 1580.

These early Levant voyages were very important; inasmuch as they were the school in which some of the principal Agents and Captains of the Moscovy Company, like *Richard Gray* and *Richard Chancellor*, received their chief training.

A voyage made with the Shippes called the Holy Crosse, and the Matthew Gonson, to the Isles of Candia and Chio, about the yere 1534, according to a relation made to Master Richard Hackluyt by John Williamson, Cooper and citizen of London, who liued in the yere 1592, and went as cooper in the Matthew Gonson the next voyage after.

The shippes, called the *Holy Crosse* and the *Matthew Gonson*, made a voyage to the Ilandes of *Candia* and *Chio* in *Turkie*, about the yere 1534. And in the *Matthew* went as Captaine M[after] *Richard Gonson*, sonne of old Master *William Gonson*, paymaster of the kings Nauie. In this first voyage [i.e. of the two described by *Williamson*] went *William Holstoeke* (who afterwards was Controuler of her Maiesties [i.e. Queen Elizabeth's] Nauie, lately deceased) as page to M[after] *Richard Gonson* aforesaid, which M[after] *Gonson* died in *Chio* in this his first voyage. The ship called the *Holy Crosse* was a short shippe, and of burden 160 tunnes. And hauing bene a full yere at the sea in performance of this voyage, with great danger the returned home, where, vpon her arriuall at *Blackwall*, in the riuer of *Thames*, her wine and oyle caske was found so weake that they were not able to hoyse them out of the ship, but were constrained to draw them as they lay, and put their wine and oyle into new vessels, and so to vnlade the shippe. Their chiefe freight was very excellent Muscatels and red Malmesie, the like whereof were feeldome seene before in *England*. They brought home also good quantitie of sweete oyles, cotton woodles, *Turkie* Carpets, Galles, Cynamon, and some other spices. The saide shippe called the *Holy Crosse* was so shaken in this voyage, and so weakened, that she was layd vp in the docke, and neuer made voyage after.—*Vol. II., Part I., p. 98, Ed.* 1599.

EDEN.

Another voyage to the Isles of Candia and Chio made by the shippe, the Matthew Gonson, about the yere 1535, according to the relation of John Williamson, then Cooper in the same ship, made to M[after] Richard Hackluyt, in the yere 1592.



The good shippe called the *Matthew Gonson*, of burthen 300 tunnes, whereof was owner old M[after] *William Gonson*, pay-master of the Kings Nauie, made her voyage in the yere 1535. In this ship went as Captaine, *Richard Gray*, who long after died in *Russia*. Master *William Holstoeke*, afterward Controuler of the Queenes Nauie, went then as purser in the same voyage. The Master was one *John Pichet*, seruant to old M[after] *William Gonson*. *James Runtie* was Masters mate. The master cooper was *John Williamson*, citizen of *London*, liuing in the yere 1592, and dwelling in *Sa[er]nt Dunstons* parish, in the East. The M[after] Gunner was *John Godfrey* of *Bristol*. In this ship were 6 gunners and 4 trumpeters, all which foure trumpeters at our returne homewards went on land at *Messina* in the Iland of *Sicilia*, as our ship road there at anker, and gat them into the Gallies that lay neere vnto vs, and in them went to *Rome*. The whole number of our companie in this ship were about 100. men, we were also furnished with a great bote, which was able to carry 10 tunnes of water, which at our returne homewards we towed all the way from *Chio* vntil we came through the straight of *Gib[r]altar* into the maine Ocean. We had also a great long boat and a skiff. We were out vpon this voyage eleuen months, yet in all this time there died of sicknesse but one man, whose name was *George Forrest*, being seruant to our Carpenter called *Thomas Plummer*.—*Idem*.

The Island of *Scio*, the extreme point of the above two voyages, had long been the property of a Genoese family, the *Justiana*, under the sovereignty of the Senate of that city. How the Turks first put it to tribute, and finally took possession of it in 1568, is thus narrated in two letters, written on the 14th of February 1569 by an Englishman, *Gaspar Campion*, who had "traded in this countrey [i.e. the island and its vicinity] about this 30. yeres [i.e. 1539-1569], and haue bene married in the towne of *Chio* full 24. yeres [i.e. 1544-1569]."



If, you shall vnderstand that the Island of *Chio* in time past hath bene a *Signiorie* or lordship of it selfe, and did belong to the *Genoaias*. There were 24. of them that governed the island which were called *Maunses*. But in continuance of time the Turke waxed so strong and mightie, that they, considering they were not able to keepe it, unlesse they should become his tributaries, because the Island had no come, nor any kind of vitailles to sustaine themselues, but onely that which must of necessitie come out of the Turkes dominions, and the sayd island being inclosed with the Turkes round about, and but 12. miles from the Turkes Continent, therefore the said *Genoaias* did compound and agree to be the Turkes tributaries, and to pay him 14000. thousand ducates yeerely, Alwayes prouided that they should keepe their lawes both spirital and temporall, as they did when the Iland was in their owne hands. Thus he granted them their priuiledge, which they inoyed for many yeeres, so that all strangers and also many English men did trade thither of long continuance, and went and came in safety. In this meane time, the prince *Petro Doria* (being a *Genouois*) became a captaine to serue the Emperour with 30. or 40. gallies against the Turke. And since that time diuers other captaines belonging to *Genoa* haue bene in the seruice of king *Philip* against the Turke. Moreouer, whensoever the Turke made out any army, he perceiued that no nation did him more hurt then those *Genouois*, who were his tributaries. Likewise at the Turkes siege of *Malta*, before which place he lay a great while, with losse of his men, and also of his gallies, he found none so troublesome vnto his force as one *Iuanette Doria*, a *Genouois*, and diuers others of the Iland of *Chio*, who were his tributaries. At which fight, he tooke such displeasure against them of *Chio*, that he sent certaine of his gallies to the Iland, for to seise vpon all the goods of the 24. *Maunses*, and to turne them with their wiues and children out of the Iland; but they would let none other depart, because the Iland should not be vnpeopled. So that now the Turke hath sent one of his chiefe men to rule there.—*Hakluyt, Vol. II., Part I., p. 114, Ed.* 1599.

Another letter of Campion's, begins thus :

TH may please your worship to vnderstand, that as concerning the voyage to *Chio*, what great profit would be gotten, both for merchants and also for owners of shippes (as it was well known in those dayes when the *Matthew Gonson*, the *Trinitie Fitzwilliams*, and the *Saujour of Bristow*, with diuers other ships, which traded thither yerely, and made their voyage in ten or twelue moneths, and the longest in a yeere), M[after] *Francis Lambert*, M[after] *John Brooke*, and M[after] *Drauer* can truly inform you hereof at large. And by reason that wee haue not traded into those parts these many yeeres [*i.e.* previous to 1569], and the Turke is growen mighty, whereby our ships doe not trade as they were wont . . . —*Hakluyt, Voyages, Vol. II., Part I., p. 116, Ed. 1599.*

Finally we may take leave on this occasion of the interesting subject of the early English trade in the Mediterranean, with the following note of Hakluyt's.

THIS trade into the Leuant. . . was very vsuall and much frequented from the yeere of our Lord 1511 till the yeere 1534, and afterwards also, though not so commonly, vntill the yeere 1550, when the barke *Aucher* under the conduct of M[after] *Roger Bodenham* made a prosperous voyage into *Sicilia*, *Candia*, *Sio*, and other places within the Leuant. Since which time the foresaid trade (notwithstanding the grand *Signiors* ample priuilege granted to M[after] *Anthony Ienkenjon* 1553, and the strong and weighty reasons of *Gaspar Campion* for that purpose) was vtterly discontinued, and in maner quite forgotten, as if it had neuer bene, for the space of 20. yeeres or more [*i.e.* from the date of Jenkinson's priuilege of 1553 until 1575; when the preliminary steps which resulted in the formation of the Turkey Company, were taken]. *Voyages, Vol. II., Part I., p. 136, Ed. 1599.*

11. We now come to the tragical English voyage to Newfoundland, in 1536; as narrated by Master Oliver Daubeny, a London merchant, to Hakluyt's cousin and namesake, Richard Hakluyt of the Inner Temple; and by Master Thomas Butts of Norfolk, to himself. It will ever be thought one of the worthiest acts of our younger Hakluyt's worthy life, that, for the simple assurance, with further details, of this voyage, he travelled 200 miles on horseback, probably into Norfolk and back.

The voyage of master Hore and diuers other Gentlemen, to Newfoundland and Cape Breton, in the yeere 1536. and in the 28. yeere of King Henry the eight.

NE master Hore of London, a man of goodly stature and of great courage, and giuen to the studie of Cosmographie, in the 28. yeere of King Henry the 8. and in the yeere of our Lord 1536. encouraged diuers gentlemen and others, being assisted by the kings fauour and good countenance, to accompany him in a voyage of discovery vpon the Northwest partes of America: wherein his perswasions tooke such effect, that within short space many gentlemen of the innes of court, and of Chauncerie, and diuers other of good worship desirous to see the strange things of the world, very willingly entered into the action with him, some of whose names were as followeth: M[after] *Wickes*, a gentleman of the West cuntry of five hundred markes [*equivalent to an income of £2500 of the present day*] by the yeere liuing. Master *Tucke*, a gentleman of Kent. Master *Tuckfield*. M[after] *Thomas Butts*, the sonne of Sir *William Butts*, Knight of Norfolk, which is yet aline, and from whose mouth I wrote most of this relation. Master *Hardie*, Master *Biron*, Master *Carter*, Master *Wright*, Master *Raftall* Sarient *Raftals* brother, Master *Ridley*, and diuers other, which all were in the admirall called the *Trinitie*, a ship of fenen score tunnes, wherein M[after]. *Hore* himselfe was imbarked. In the other shippe, whose name was the *Minion*, went a very learned and vertuous gentlemen, one master *Armigil*, *Wade*, father to the worshipfull master *William Wade*, now clerke of the priue counsell, Master *Oliuer Daubeney* merchant of London, M[after] *Ioy* afterward gentleman of the kings chappell, with diuers other of good account. The whole number that went in the two tall ships aforesayd, to wit, the

Trinitie and the *Minion*, were about six score persons, whereof 30. were gentlemen, which all were mustered in warlike maner at *Grauefend*, and after the receiuing of the sacrament, they embarked themselues at the end of April, 1536.

From the time of their setting out from *Grauefende*, they were very long at sea, to witte, aboue two moneths, and neuer touched any lande vntill they came to part of the West *Indies* about *Cape Breton*, shaping their course thence Northeastwards, vntill they came to the Island of *Penguin*, which is very full of rockes and stones, whereon they went and founde it full of great foules white and gray, as bigge as geefe, and they sawe infinite numbers of their egges. They draue a great number of the foules into their boates vpon their failles, and tooke vp many of their egges, the foule they slead and their skinnes were like hony combes full of holes being slead off: they dressed and ate them, and found them to be very good and nourishing meate. They sawe also flore of beares both blacke and white, of whome they killed some, and tooke them for no badde foode.

M[after] *Oliuer Daubeney*, which (as it is before mentioned) was in this voyage, and in the *Minion*, tolde M[after] *Richard Hakluyt* of the middle Temple these things following: to wit, That after their arriual in *Newfound land*, and hauing bene there certaine dayes at ancre, and not hauing yet seene any of the naturall people of the Cuntry, the same *Daubeney* walking one day on the hatches spied a boate with Sauages of those partes, rowing downe the bay towards them, to gafe vpon the shippe and our people, and taking viewe of their comming aloofe, hee called to such as were vnder hatches, and willed them to come vp if they would see the naturall people of the Cuntry, that they had so long and so much desired to see: Whereupon they came vp and tooke viewe of the Sauages rowing toward them and their shippe, and vpon the viewe they manned out a shipboote to meete them and to take them. But they spying our shipboote making towards them, returned with maine force, and fled into an Island that laye vp in the bay or riuier there, and our men pursued them into the Island, and the Sauages fledde and escaped: but our men founde a fire, and the side of a beare on a wodden spit left at the same by the Sauages that were fledde.

There in the same place they founde a boot of leather garnished on the vtter side of the calfe in certain braue trailes, as it were of rawe filke, and also founde a certaine great warme mitten: And these carried with them, they returned to their shippe, not finding the Sauages, nor seeing any thing else besides the foyle, and the things growing in the same, which chiefly were flore of fire and pine trees.

And further, the said *M. Daubeney* told him, that lying there they grewe into great want of victuals, and that there they found small reliefe, more then that they had from the nest of an *Osprey*, that brought hourly to her yong great plentie of diuers forts of fishes. But such was the famine that increased amongst them from day to day, that they were forced to seeke to relieue themselues of rawe herbes and rootes that they fought on the maine: but the famine increasing and the reliefe of herbes being to little purpose to satisfie their insatiable hunger, in the fieldes and desertes here and there, the fellowe killed his mate while hee stouped to take vp a roote for his reliefe, and cutting out pieces of his body whome hee had murdered, broyled the same on the coles, and greedily deuoured them.

By this meane the company decreased, and the officers knewe not what was become of them; and it fortuneth that one of the company driuen with hunger to seeke abroad for reliefe, founde out in the fieldes the fauour of broyled flesh, and fell out with one that hee would suffer him and his fellowes to sterue, enioying plentie as he thought: And this matter growing to cruel speeches, he that had the broyled meate, burst out into these wordes, If thou wouldest needs knowe, the broyled meate that I had, was a piece of such a mans buttocke. The report of this brought to the ship, the Capitaine found what became of those that were missing, and was perswaded that some of them were neither deuoured with wilde beastes, nor yet destroyed with the Sauages: And hereupon he stood vp and made a notable Oration, containing, How much these dealings offended the Almighty, and vouched the Scriptures from first to last what God had in cafes of distresse done for them that called vpon him, and told them that the power of the Almighty was then no lesse, then in al former time it had bene. And added, that if it had not pleased God to haue holpen them in that distresse, that yet it had been better to be punished in body, and to haue liued euerlastingly, then to haue relieued for a poore time their mortal bodics, and to bee condemned euerlastingly both body and foule to the vnquenchable fire of hel.

And thus hauing ended to that effect, he began to exhort to repentance, and befought all the company to pray, that it might please God to looke vpon their miserable present state, and for his owne mercie to relieue the same. And such was the mercie of God, that the same night there arriued a French shippe in that port, well furnished with vitaille, and such was the policie of the English, that they become masters of the same; and changing ships and vitayling them, they set faile to come into England.

In their iourney they were so farre Northwards, that they sawe mightie Islands of yce in the summer season, on which were haukes and other foules to rest themselues, being wearie of flying ouer farre from the maine. They sawe also certaine great white foules with redde bills and redde legs, somewhat bigger then Herons, which they supposed to be storkes. They arriued at *S[aint]. Iues* in Cornewall about the ende of October. From thence they departed to a certaine Castle belonging to sir *John Luttrell*, where *M[after] Thomas Buts* and *M[after] Raftall* and other gentlemen of the voyage were very friendly intertained: after that they came to the Earle of *Bathe* at *Bathe*, and thence to *Bristol*, and so to London. *M[after] Buts* was so changed in the voyage with hunger and miserie, that sir *William* his father and my Lady his mother knewe him not to be their sonne, vntill they found a certaine secret marke which was a wart vpon one of his knees, as he tolde me *Riehard Hakluyt of Oxforde* himselfe, to whome I rode 200. miles onely to learne the whole trueth of this voyage from his owne mouth, as being the onely man now aliue [*i.e.* in or about 1589] that was in this discouerie.

Certaine moneths after, those Frenchmen came into England, and made complaint to king *Henry* the 8: the King causing the matter to be examined, and finding the great distresse of his subiects, and the causes of the dealing fo with the French, was so moued with pitie, that hee punished not his subiects, but of his owne purse made full and royal recompense vnto the French.

In this distresse of famine, the English somewhat relieue their vitall spirits by drinking at the springs the fresh water out of certaine wooden cups, out of which they had drunke their *Aqua composita* before.—*Hakluyt, Voyages, pp. 517-519, Ed. 1589.*

12. These are all the oceanic voyages performed by the English in the reign of *Henry VIII.* which we have been able to trace. It was under *Edward*, that our sailors first began to creep down the African coast. The special significance of these voyages lay in the then accredited proprietorship (through the Papal Bull, reprinted at *pp. 201-204*) of the Portugese to the entire continent of Africa; and in the intentional and studied ignorance of its coast line, in which the World was kept by that nation. Every English voyage to its west coast was therefore at once an act of revolt against the Papacy, and a challenge to the pretensions of Portugal.

The Levant trade was open to all who would dare to run the gauntlet of the Turks. The Spaniards recognised the claim of the English discovery, by the Cabots, of *Baccalaos*; and had not yet worked up northward to it. But the African sea coast, so honourably and so patiently discovered, was (by all laws, human and divine, hitherto accepted) the possession of its brave discoverers. It was therefore a new impulse, that made our English ships, passing the familiar Straits of Gibraltar on their left hand, to go forward southward, first to *Barbary*, and then to *Guinea*; cost what it might.

Discoveries are made by successive steps, one after another; and the passage of English ships around the world and to the Eastern seas was but the succession and development of these first attempts to *Marocco*. All that we know of these *Barbary* voyages is preserved to us by *Hakluyt*, who collected his information forty to fifty years after the event, and has thus transmitted it to us.

THE FIRST VOYAGE TO BARBARY IN 1551, DESCRIBED BY JAMES ALDAY, SERVANT TO SEBASTIAN CABOT.

The originall of the first voyage for traffique into the kingdom of *Marocco* in *Barbarie*, begun in the yeere 1551, with a tall ship called the *Lion of London*, whereof went as captaine Master *Thomas Windham*, as appeareth by this extract of a letter of *James Aldaie*, to the worshipfull master *Michael Locke*, which *Aldaie* profeffeth himselfe to haue bene the first inuenter of this trade.



Orshipfull Sir, hauing lately bene acquainted with your intent to profecute the olde intermitted discouerie for *Catai*, if therein with my knowledge, trauell or industrie I may doe you seruice, I am readie to doe it, and therein to aduventure my life to the vttermost point. Trueth it is, that I haue bene by some men (not my friends) euill spoken of at London, saying that although I be a man of knowledge in the Arte of Nauigation and Cosmographie, and that I haue bene the inuenter of some voyages that be now grown to great effect; yet say they maliciously and without iust cause, that I haue not bene willing at any season to proceed in those voyages that I haue taken in hand, taking example especially of two voyages. The one was when I was master in the great Barke *Aucher* [which left *Gravesend* on 13th November 1550] for the *Leuant*, in which voyage I went not, but the causes they did not know of my let from the fame, nor of the other. But first the very trueth is, that I was from the same voyage letted by the Princes letters, which my Master *Sebastian Gabota* had obatined for that purpose, to my great griefe.

And as touching the second voyage which I inuenter for the trade of *Barbarie*, the liuing God knoweth that I say most true, that when the great sweate was [The sweating sickness began in London on 9th July 1551, and continued till the following September] (whereon the chiefe of those with whom I ioyned in that voyage died, that is to say, Sir *John Luttrell*, *John Fletcher*, *Henry Ostrich* and others), I my selfe was also taken with the same sweate in London, and after it, whe:her with euill diet in keeping, or how I know not, I was cast into such an extreme feuer, as I was neither able to ride nor goe; and the shippe being at *Portsmouth*, *Thomas Windham* had her away from thence before I was able to stand vpon my legges, by whom I lost at that instant fourefcore pound [= £800 of the present day]. Besides I was appointed by them that died (if they had liued) to haue had the whole government both of shippe and goods, because I was to them the sole inuenter of that trade.

In the first voyage to *Barbary* there were two *Moore*s, being noble men, whereof one was of the Kings blood, conueyed by the said Master *Thomas Windham* into their country out of *England*.

Yours humble at your commandement, JAMES ALDAY.

THE SECOND VOYAGE TO BARBARY IN 1552, DESCRIBED BY MASTER JAMES THOMAS.

The second voyage to *Barbary* in the yeere 1552. Set forth by the right worshipfull Sir *John Yorke*, Sir *William Cer[r]ard*, Sir *Thomas Wroth*, Master *Fraunces Lambert*, Master *Cole*, and others. Written by the relation of Master *James Thomas*, then Page to Master *Thomas Windham*, chiefe Captaine of this voyage.



He shippes that went on this voyage were three, whereof two were of the Riuer of *Thames*, That is to say, the *Lyon of London*, whereof Master *Thomas Windham* was Captaine and part owner, of about an hundred and fiftie tunnes: The other was the *Buttolfe* [*Botolph*] about fourefcore tunnes, and a *Portugall Carauel*, bought of certaine Portugals in *Newport* in *Wales*, and fraighted for this voyage, of summe sixtie tunnes. The number of men in the Fleete were an hundred and twentie. The Master of the *Lyon* was one *John Kerry* of *Mynhe[er]* in *Somerfetshire*, his Mate was *David Landman*. The chiefe Captaine of this small Fleete was Master *Thomas Windham* a *Norfolke* gentleman borne, but dwelling at *Marshfield-parke* in *Somerfetshire*.

This Fleete departed out of *King[s]-rode* nere *Bristol* about the beginning of May 1552. being on a Monday in the morning [The 2d and 9th of

May 1552, were Mondays], and the Monday fortnight next ensuing in the evening came to an ancker at their first part in the roade *Zafia* or *Asafi* on the coast of *Barbarie*, standing in 32. degrees of latitude, and there put on land part of our marchandise to be conueid by land to the citie of *Marocco*: which being done, and haue refreshed our selues with victuals and water, we went to the second port called *Santa Cruz*, where we discharged the rest of our goods, being good quantitie of linnen and woollen cloth, corall, amber, Iet, and diuers other things well accepted of the *Moores*. In which road we found a French ship, which not knowing whether it were warre or peace between *England* and *France*, drewe her selfe as neere vnder the towne wals as she could possible, crauing aide of the towne for her defence, if need were, which in deed seeing vs drawe neere, shot at us a piece from the wals, which came oer the *Lion* our Admirall, between the maine maste and foremast. Whereupon we comming to an anker, presently came a pinnes aboard vs to know what we were, who vnderstanding that we had bene there the yere before [This confirms Alday's statement], and came with good leaue of their king in merchant wise, were fully satisfied, and gaue vs good leaue to bring our goods peaceably on shore, where the Viceroy, whose name was *Sibill Manache*, within short time after came to visite vs, and vfed vs with all curtesie. By diuers occasions we spent here very neere three moneths before we could get in our lading, which was Sugar, Dates, Almonds, and Malaffos or fugar Syrope. And for all our being here in the heate of the Sommer, yet none of our company perished by sickneffe.

Our ships being laden, wee drew into the Sea for a Westerne wind for *England*. But being at sea, a great leake fell vpon the *Lion*, so that we were driuen to *Lancerota* and *Forteuentura*, where, betweene the two Ilands, we came to a road, whence we put on land out of our sayd ship 70. chestes of Sugar vpon *Lancerota* with some dozen or sixteene of our company, where the inhabitants supposing we had made a wrongfull prize of our caranell, suddenly came with force vpon our people, among whom I my selfe was one, tooke vs prisoners, and spoiled the fugars: which thing being perceived from our ships, they manned out three boates, thinking to rescue vs, and draue the Spaniards to flight, whereof they slewe eighteene, and took their gouernour of the Iland prisoner, who was a very aged gentle-

man about 70. yeeres of age. But chafing the enemie so farre for our recouerie, as powder and arrowes wanted, the Spaniards perceiuing this, returned, and in our mens retire [*retreat*] they slewe six of them. Then a Parle[y] grew, in the which it was agreed, that we the prisoners should be by them restored, and they receiue their old gouernour, giuing vs a testimonie vnder his and their hands what damages wee had there received; the which damages were there restored, and made good by the King of Spaine his marchantes on our returne into *England*.

After we had searched and mended our eake, being returned aboard, we came vnder faile, and as wee were going to the fea on the one side of the Iland, the *Cacafuego* and other ships of the King of *Portugals* Armada entered at the other, and came to anker in the road from whence we were but newly departed, and shot off their great ordinance in our hearing. And here by the way it is to bee vnderstood that the *Portugals* were much offended with this our new trade into *Barbarie*, and both in our voiage the yeere before, as also in this they gaue out in *England* by their marchants, that if they tooke vs in those partes, they would vse vs as their mortall enemies, with great threats and menaces. But by God and good prouidence wee escaped their handes.

From this Iland shaping our course for *England*, we were seuen or eight weekes before we could reach the coast of *England*. The first port wee entered into was the haue of *Plimmouth*, from whence within short time wee came into the Thames, and landed our marchandise at *London*, about the ende of the moneth of October 1552. — *Hakluyt, Voyages, Vol. II., Part II., pp. 7-9, Ed. 1599.*

13. All these English Voyages, therefore, had been planned and carried out before either of the two following Works, translated &c. by Eden, had come from the press. As he has given no account of them; it has been all the more necessary to say thus much here, in order to shew that in these very early days of oceanic discovery, our forefathers were not altogether idle.

III.



Unique, imperfect, copy of *A new interlude and a mery of the nature of the .iiij. elementes, &c.*, written in the reign of Henry VIII., and probably printed [? by John Rastel] about 1519, is in the Garrick Collection of Plays, in the British Museum (Press mark, C. 39, b. 17).

This interlude contains [at C. i.] the following reference to the New World, in a dialogue between *Expyerence* and *Studious desire*:—

Ex. ¶ Syr this ys ynglande lyenge here
And this is skotlande yat Ioyneth him nere
Compassyd a boute euery where
With the occian see rownde
¶ And next from them westwardly
Here by hym selfe alone doth ly.
Irelande that holsome grounde
¶ Here than is the narowe seey
To Calyce and Boleyne the next wey
And flaunders in this parte
Here lyeth fraunce next hym ioynynge
And spayn southwarde from thens standynge
And portyngale in this quart
This contrey is called Italye
Beholde where Rome in ye myddes doth ly
And Naples here be yonde
And this lytel See that here is

xx

Is callyd the Gulfe of Venys
And here venys doth stande
¶ As for almayne lyeth this way
Here lyeth denmarke and norway
And northwarde on this syde
There lyeth Iselonde when men do fyshe
But be yonde that so colde it is
No man may there abyde
¶ This See is called the great Occyan
So great it is that never man
Coude tell it sith the worlde began
Tyll nowe within this. xx. yere
Westwarde be founde new landes
That we neuer harde tell of before this
By wrytynge nor other meanys
Yet many nowe haue ben there
¶ And that contrey is so large of rome
Muche lenger than all cristendome
Without fable or gyle
For dyuers maryners haue it tryed
And sayled streyght by the coste syde
Aboue. v. thousand myle
¶ But what commodytes be within
No man can tell nor well Imagin
But yet not longe a go
Some men of this contrey went
By the kynges noble consent
It for to serche to that entent
And coude not be brought therto
¶ But they that were the ventere[r]s

Haue cause to curse their maryners
 Fals of promys and dissemblers
 That falsly them betrayed
 Which wold take no paine to saile farther
 Than their owne lyst and pleasure
 Wherefore that vyage and dyuers other
 Suche kaytyffes haue destroyed
 ¶ O what thyng a had be than
 Yf that they that be englyshe men
 Myght haue ben the furst of all
 That there shulde haue take possessyon
 And made furst buyldynge and habytacion
 A memory perpetuall
 And also what an honorable thyng
 Bothe to the realme and to the kyng
 To haue had his domynyon extendynge
 There into so farre a grounde
 Whiche the noble kyng of late memory
 The most wyse prynce the. vij. He[n]ry
 Causyd furst for to be founde
 ¶ And what a great meritoryouse dede
 It were to haue the people instructed
 To lyue more vertuously
 And to lerne to knowe of men the maner
 And also to knowe god theyr maker
 Whiche as yet lyue all be[af]stly
 For they nother knowe god nor the deuell
 Nor neuer harde tell of heuyn nor hell
 Wrytynge nor other scripture
 But yet in the stede of god almyght
 The[y] honour the sone for his great lygg[h]t
 For that doth them great pleasure
 ¶ Buyldynge nor house they haue non[e] at all
 But wodes / cotes / and causy small
 No merueyle though it be so
 For they vse no maner of yron
 Nother in to[o]le nor other wepon
 That shulde helpe them therto
 ¶ Copper they haue which is founde
 In dyuers places aboue the grounde
 Yet they dyg not therfore
 For as I sayd they haue non[e] yryn
 Wherby they shuld in the yerth myne
 To serche for any wore
 ¶ Great haboundaunce of wodes ther be
 Moste parte vyr and pyne aple tre
 Great ryches myght come therby
 Both py[t]che and tarre and sope asshys
 As they make in the eest landes
 By brynnynge therof only
 ¶ Fyshe they haue so great plente
 That in haunys take and slayne they be
 With stauys withouten fayle
 Nowe frenchemen and other haue founden the trade
 That yerely of fyshe there they lade
 A bone an. C. [hundred] sayle
 ¶ But in the south parte of that contrey
 The people there go nakyd alway
 The lande is of so great hete
 And in the north parte all the clothes
 That they were / is but be[af]stes skynnes
 They haue no nother fete [feat]
 But howe the people furst began
 In that contrey or whens they cam
 For clerkes it is a questyon[.]
 Other thynges mo I haue in store
 That I coude tel therof but now no more
 Tyll a nother season

Stu. ¶ Than at your pleasure shew some other thinge
 Yt lyketh me so wel your commyninge
 Ye can not talke a mys

Ex. ¶ Than wyl I torne a gayne to my matter
 Of Cosmogryfy where I was err [ere]
 Beholde take hede to this
 ¶ Loo estwarde beyonde ye great occyan
 Here entereth the see callyd mediterran
 Of. ii. M. [two thousand] myle of lengthe
 The Sondans contrey lyeth here by
 The great Turke on ye north syde doth ly
 A man of merueylous strengthe
 ¶ This sayde north parte is callyd europa
 And this south parte callyd affrica
 This eest parte is callyd ynde
 But this newe landes founde lately
 Ben callyd america by cause only
 Americns dyd furst them fynde
 ¶ Loo Iherusalem lyeth in this contrey
 And this be yonde is the red see
 That moyses maketh of mencyon
 This quarter is India minor
 And this quarter India maior
 The lande of prester Iohn
 ¶ But northwarde this way as ye see.
 Many other straunge regions ther be
 And people that we not knowe
 But estwarde on the see syde
 A prynce there is that ruleth wyde
 Called the Cane of catowe ¹
 ¶ And this is called the great eest see
 Which goth all a longe this wey
 Towardes the new landis agayne
 But whether that see go thither dyrectly
 Or if any wyldernes bytwene them do ly
 No man knoweth for certeyne
 But these newe landes by all cosmograsye
 Frome the cane of catous lande can not lye
 Lytell paste a thousand myle
 But from those new landes men may sayle playne
 Estwarde and cum to englande againe
 Where we began ere whyle
 ¶ Lo all this parte of the yerth which I
 Haue here discryuyd openly
 The north parte we do it call
 But the south parte on the other syde
 Ys as large as this full and as wyde
 Whiche we knowe nothyng at all
 ¶ Nor whether ye most parte be lande or see
 Nor whether the people that there be
 Be be[af]stlyall or connyng
 Nor whether they knowe good or no
 Nor howe they belene nor what they do
 Of this we knowe nothyng

The Voyage referred to, clearly took place in Henry VIII.'s reign. It was probably the Bristol expedition sent out by N. Thorne's father and Hugh Eliot, which discovered Newfoundland; of which Thorne tells us, at *p.* xvi, "There is no doubt, as now plainly appeareth, if the marriners would then haue been ruled and folowed their pilots mind, the lands of the West Indies, from whence all the gold commeth, had bene ours."

¹ *Khan of Cathay.*

IV.



THE special purpose of this Preface has now been carried out. It has been to shew what our forefathers actually accomplished, ere Eden set about the following Translations, or during the time he was actually engaged upon them: and so to supplement the other accounts of Oceanic Discovery

contained in the volume.

We have, in conclusion, only space briefly to touch upon one other point, and that is but a simple act of justice.

Most notable is Eden's position as a Man of Science in the Tudor Age. He had the true modest scientific spirit; as when he wrote in 1562, to Sir W. Cecil, "Syth only the respecte of suche vertues as it hathe pleased you to thinke commendable in me, hath moved your Honour not only in maner to seeme carefull for me howe I maye hereafter with quietnesse spende my tyme in studie (as is my most desire)," *p.* xlili.; and likewise when, in 1574, he thus dwelt at large upon what he did *not* know, a list of disqualifications that must not be pressed too literally, "For yf there be any thing in me, wherein I maye by good reason please my selfe, it is cheefely this, that I haue euer loued and honoured men of

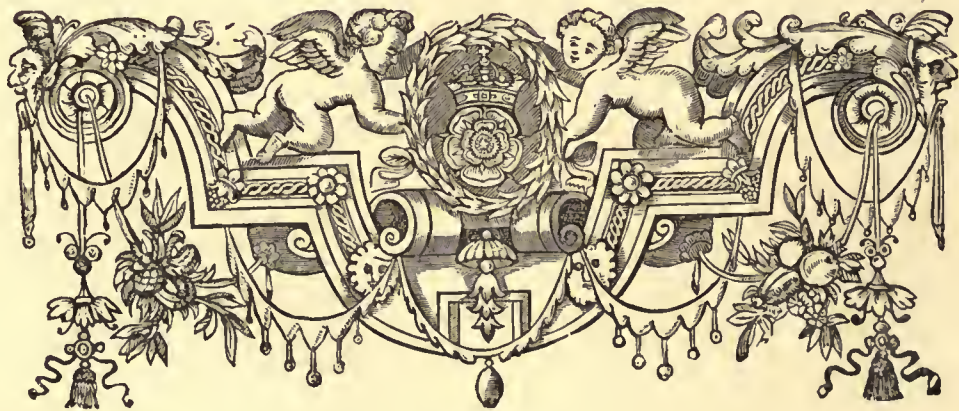
singular vertue or qualitie, in what so euer laudable Art or Science, euen of those whereof mee selfe have litle knowledge, as are Geometrie, Astronomie, Architecture, Musicke, Payntyng, feates of Armes, inuentions of Ingens, and suche lyke," *p.* xlvi.

But whatever may have been his knowledge or his ignorance, actual or relative; Eden had already grasped the Inductive Method. His life overlapped that of Lord Bacon. May he not be regarded as a near Herald and Forerunner of the Father of Scientific Enquiry, when he uses such language as this; of which his whole life was but the fuller expression?

"Experience, the teacher and mestres of all sciences, for lacke of whose ayde (experience I meane) lyke as many greate wittes haue fallen into great errours, so by her ayde, many base and common wittes haue attained to the knowledge and practise of such wonderfull effectes, as could hardely be comprehended by the discourse of reason. . . .

"Nought els to say, but that experience to be most certayn which is ioyned with reason or speculacion, and that reason to be most sure which is confirmed with experience." *p.* 9.

And thus, from henceforth will the reputation of Richard Eden continue to increase, both as a Scholar and a Scientist.



[The First English book on America.

¶ Of the newe landes and of ye people
founde by the messengers of the kyn
ge of portyngale named Emanuel.

Of the. x. dyuers nacjons crystened.

Of pope Holm and his landes and of
the costely keyes and wonders mola
dyes that in that lande is.]

[A Note on Jan van Doesborch, a printer at Antwerp, between 1508-1530 A.D.]



Nothing that concerns the printer of the first English Work relating to America, must henceforth be of increasing interest.

There does not appear to be in existence, any typographical history of Antwerp for the period during which the first Text in this volume was produced.

The learned and most courteous

Librarian of the Royal Library at the Hague, Dr M. F. A. G. Campbell, the author of the well-known *Annales de la Typographie néerlandaise au XV^e siècle*, La Haye, 1874-8, 8vo, thus writes, on the 21st April 1885.

How glad should I have been if I had been able to give you full information about Jan van Doesborch, the Antwerp printer in the first half of the sixteenth century. But, alas, the History of Printing in that century has been, without any sound reason, neglected to that point that even sixteenth-century books are now-a-days more rare than their predecessors of the fifteenth. If Jan van Doesborch had had only one foot in the fifteenth century, I should have been able to give you matter enough to compose his history: because I, and my predecessor as Librarian of this Library (Mr Holtrop), have devoted the better part of our lives to the study of the typography and typographers before the year 1500. Now John of Doesborch did not print till after 1508, because in that year, he entered the Guild of St Lucas at Antwerp, as *verlichtere*, "miniature painter."

When such an authority as Dr Campbell writes thus, the present Editor may be excused of his ignorance on this subject. Nevertheless the following is offered as a mere beginning of this study.

2. Doesburg is a Dutch town, about ten miles to the east of Arnheim.

Jan van Doesborch, Doesborcke, Doesburgh, or as he styles himself in (*f*) the *xv. tokens*, Iohan fro doesborch, may have succeeded to the printing business of Roeland van der Dorpe, at Antwerp. He was contemporary with our Wynkyn de Worde and Richard Pynson: and occupies a similar position in Antwerp typography, to that filled by those two English printers at Westminster and London.

He seems to have printed in three different houses. His earliest books were printed at the sign of *Aen dijsere wage*, "the Iron balance." Those produced about 1518, are printed "besides the *Camer porte*." His latest books, finished about 1530, are at *die Lombaerde veste*, "the Lombard fortress."

It is very remarkable that Doesborch should, at such an early date, have printed the English books that he did;

especially such an important work as Arnold's *Chronicle*. He was probably employed in this work by some of the merchants of the English House at Antwerp. He stands in the same relation to our Literature at this time, that Hans Luft of Marburg did fifteen or twenty years later. No books are so scarce as the early English books printed by foreign printers on the Continent; of which the following Text is one of the earliest.

3. The first book attributed to this printer, by P. C. van der Meersch, in his *Recherches sur la vie et les travaux des imprimeurs Belges et Néerlandais établis à l'étranger*, i. 131, Gand 1856, is—

(a) *Die destructie van Troyen*, "the destruction of Troy." Antwerp, folio, no date.

The late eminent bookseller of Amsterdam, Mr Frederick Muller, issued, in 1872, a *Catalogue of Books, Maps, Plates on America; and of a remarkable Collection of Early Voyages*, offered by him for sale. At p. 6, he states that he acquired, in 1871, at the sale of an insignificant library at Antwerp, a volume containing four pieces, "all printed there in the first ten years of the 16th century."

One of these was—

(b) *Van der nieuwer werelt oft landschap nieuwelier ghenoden vaden doortuch tighen conn. van Portugael door den alderbeste pyloet ofte seekende d'werelt*, "Of the new world or landscape, newly found for the illustrious King of Portugal by the best pilot or mariner in the world." This is a translation from the Italian (through the Latin) into Dutch, of the Third Letter of Amerigo Vespucci. The colophon runs, *Gheprent Thantwerpen aen Dyseren waghe. Bi Jan van Doesborch, "Printed at Antwerp, at the iron balance, by Jan van Doesborch."*

It consists of eight unnumbered leaves, [with] 6 woodcuts. The verso of the last leaf is filled up by a wood engraving. On the recto of the first leaf [is the identical cornerwise engraving that is described hereafter at p. xxix., col. 2]; on the verso of leaf 1, Jonas thrown into the mouth of the whale; recto of leaf 3, four female aborigines [see p. xxviii.]; verso of leaf 4, fighting Indians [see p. xxix.]; verso of leaf 6, repeated from the recto of leaf 1; and verso of the last leaf, repeated from the recto of leaf 3.

Mr Muller states—

The book bears no date, but it is out of question, that it has been printed in the period 1506-9, the time when all the separate editions of Vespuccius were published. It is one of the first productions of the famous printer, Jan van Doesborch, at Antwerp; whose publications (principally romances of chivalry with woodcuts, curious popular books, &c.) rank among the rarest of the Antwerp printers. Just the kind of publications that makes it easy to understand that they have disappeared, as it were, under the hands of the reading public.

Another text in this precious volume is thus described, at p. 277, by Mr Muller—

(c) *Van de wonderlichedē en costelichen van Pape Ians landendes*, "Of the wonders and precious things of Pope John's lands."

The remainder of the first page filled with four curious woodcuts, representing 1°, a wild man with a beast's head bearing a fish [see p. xxxv.]; 2°, an elephant [see p. xxxii.]; 3°, a griffon with a man in his paws [see p. xxxiv.]; and 4°, three men fighting against three birds [see p. xxxiii.]

Recto of the last leaf, *Gheprint Thantwerpen. Aen dijserē wage by my Jan. van Doesborch.* "Printed at Antwerp at the iron balance by me, Jan van Doesborch."

Eleven different woodcuts in the text, four of them repeated from the recto of leaf 1. On the 5th leaf, a woodcut of the bird Phoenix in flames [see p. xxxiv.] The verso of the last leaf filled with two wood engravings, one representing the Virgin with the Child, the other the printer's mark of Roeland van der Dorpe, used in 1497, &c. [a herald with his attributes, holding a trumpet].

It is therefore perfectly clear that the First English book on America is mainly a translated compilation from these two early Dutch tracts; and that most of the woodcuts of the English text had already appeared in its Dutch originals.

We therefore place next—

(d) *Of the new landes, &c.*

Clearly, the latest date that can be assigned to this tract is 1511. Had it been written later, the information contained in it would not have been so crude. See the progress of knowledge as shewn in the English Interlude of 1519, quoted at p. xx. It would seem to have been translated by a priest in the Low Countries, who had but an imperfect acquaintance with English; for he uses *hemls* for heavens; *drycantlyche*, for three-cornered, *ferswynnygnes*, *ketters*, &c.

The *Catalogue of the Grenville Collection*, in describing the unique copy here reprinted (Press mark, G. 7106), states—

"From mentioning Emanuel, King of Portugal, and exclaiming against Luther, the present tract may be about 1521 or 1522, when King Emmanuel died, and Luther was burned in effigy."

There is not a word about Luther in the tract; and it is typographically evident from the above, that the tract can hardly be later than 1511.

4. It is quite impossible, at present, to give a chronological list of books produced by Jan van Doesborch. A few only can be cited.

(e) [The compilation by R. Arnold, known as *Arnold's Chronicle*.] In this booke is conteyned the names of ye bayliffs of the cite of London from the tyme of king richard the first, and also th[e] artycles of the Chartur and libarties of the same Cyte, &c. No date or place of printing. British Museum (Press mark, 21, a. 10).

This is attributed to Doesborch's press, and was a very large work to be undertaken by him, in what was probably a foreign language to him. It contains the original text of the poem of *The Nut-brown Maid*.

In the British Museum (Press mark, C. 25, e. 29) there is an imperfect copy of a tract on the Fifteen tokens of the Day of Doom. It wants the title page. The colophon is as follows:—

(f) "A lytill treatyse that whiche is called the xv. tokens which beene translated out of frenshe in to Englishe.

Emprinted by me Iohan fro doesborch dwellinge at Anwerpe by the Iron ballaunce, &c.

These six texts are probably among the earliest productions of Doesborch's press.

5. We now come to the middle period of his life's work.

In the British Museum (Press mark, 1073, b. 32) there is a Dutch life of the fabulous necromancer of the Middle Ages, Virgilius.

(g) *Virgilius* [Van zijn leuen doot | ende vanten, &c. No date or place of printing.

This tract is probably the original of the rare English *Virgilius* among the Douce books at the Bodleian, which has been reprinted by Mr Utterson, and also by Mr Thoms, in his *Early English Prose Romances, Vol. 2, Ed. 1858*.

(h) The title runs thus:

The lyfe of Virgilius and of his deth and many marvayles that he dyd in his lyfe tyme by whychcrafte and nygramancye thorowgh the helpe of the devyls of hell.

The colophon is

Thus endethe the lyfe of Virgilius with many dyuers con- saytes that he dyd. Emprynted in the cytie of Anwarpe By me Iohn Doesborcke dwellynge at the camer porte.

Mr W. C. Hazlitt, in his *Handbook of Popular Literature, &c.*, p. 381, Ed. 1867, quotes the following title of a Work apparently at present in an English private library.

(i) Here begyneth a lytell story that was of a trewthē done in the land of Gelders, of a mayde that was named Mary of Nemegeu that was the dyuils paramoure by the space of vij yere longe.

Imprinted at Anwarpe by me Iohn Duisbrowghe dwellynge besyde the camer porte.

Dr Campbell states that in the Royal Library at the Hague, is a copy of the following Work, printed by Doesborch.

(j) *Den oostpronck onser Solicheyt.* Printed at Antwerp on 31 May 1517. With woodcuts and printer's mark.

Also, a Work, sometimes erroneously attributed to Jan van Naeldwyck, (k) *Die aller excellentste Cronyke va Brabant 1518.* With woodcuts and printer's mark.

Of this work, there is a copy of an earlier edition printed in October 1512 in the British Museum (Press mark, G. 405, f.) This may also have been printed by Doesborch.

The next Work that we can quote is, for the time it was produced, a wonderful book. It is a pictorial representation of all the birds, beasts, and fishes, real and imaginary, of the time. It is in three Parts.

(l) *Der dieren palleys en die vgaeringe vanden beesten.* The colophon is *Gheprint bi my Jan van doesborch Thantwerpen Int iaer ons heeren m.cccccc. ende. xx. den vijftē dach in Meye. [5 May 1520.]*

Copies are in the British Museum, the Royal Library at the Hague, and elsewhere.

Mr Hazlitt, *Handbook, &c.*, p. 8, gives the following account of Lawrence Andrew's translation of this work.

(m) The noble lyfe and natures of man, of beestes, serpentys, fowles, and fysshes, that be made known.

Andwarpe by John of Doesborowe, n.d. fol.

In the prologue, Andrew, the translator, says, "In the name of oure Saviour criste Iesu maker and redemour of al mankynd, I Laurens andrew of the towne of Calis haue translated for Iohnes doesborowe booke prenter in the cite of Audwarpe this present volume deuyded in thre partes which was neuer before in no maternall langage prentyd till now."

6. One other Work will complete our present provisional list of this printer's productions.

(n) *Van Brabant die excellentē Cronike.* Of which the colophon runs, *Gheprint tot Antwerpen op die Lombaerde veste, bi mi Jan van Doesborch, int iaer ons heren m.cccccc. xxx. in Iuino.*

Copies of this work are in the British Museum, the Royal Library at the Hague, and elsewhere.

7. This is all we have been able to learn, so far, of the printer of the First English book on America. Much more, no doubt, remains to reward the researches of the bibliographer.]

**¶ Of the newe landes and of ye people
founde by the messengers of the kyn
ge of portyngale named Emanuel.**

¶ Of the. x. dyuers nacjons crystened.

**¶ Of pope Rohn and his landes and of
the costely keyes and wonders molo
dyes that in that lande is.**



Ere aforetymes in the yere of our Lorde god. M.CCCC.xcvi. [1496] and so be/ we with shyppes of Luffeboene fayled oute of Portyngale thorough the commaundement of the Kynge Emanuel So haue we had our vyage/ For by fortune ylandes ouer the great see with great charge and daunger so haue we at the laste founde oon lordshyp where we fayled well. ix. C. [900] mylee[s] by the cooste of Selandes there we at ye laste went a lande but that lande is not nowe knowne for there haue no masters wryten therof nor it knowethe and it is named Armenica/ there we sawe meny wonders of beestes and fowles yat we haue neuer seen before/ the people of this lande haue no kynge nor lorde nor theyr god But all thinges is comune/ this people goeth all naked But the men and women haue on theyr heed/ necke/ Armes/ Knees/ and fete all with feders bounden for there bewtynes and fayrenes. These folke lyuen lyke bestes without any resonablenes and the wymen be also as comon. And the men hath conuerfacyon with the wymen/ who that they ben or who they fyrst mete/ is she his fyster/ his mother/ his daughter/ or any other kyndred. And the wymen be very hoothe and dyposed to lecherdnes. And they ete also on[e] a nother The man etethe his wyfe his chylderne/ as we also haue seen and they hange also the bodyes or persons fleshe in the smoke/ as men do with vs swynes fleshe. And that lande is ryght full of folke/ for they lyue commonly. iii. C. [300] yere and more as with fykenesse they dye nat/ they take much fyfsh for they can goen vnder the water and fe[t]che so the fyfshes out of the water. and they werre also on[e] vpon a nother/ for the olde men brynge the yonge men therto/ that they gather a great company therto of towe partyes/ and come the on[e] ayene the other to the felde or bateyll/ and flee on[e] the other with great hepes. And nowe holdeth the fylde/ they take the other prysoners And they brynge them to deth and ete them/ and as the deed is eten then sle they the rest And they been than eten also/ or otherwyse lyue they longer tymes and many yeres more than other people for they haue costely spyces and rotes/ where they them selfe recouer with/ and hele them as they be feke.

[(Here follows a woodcut of the Natives of) GENNEA]

Of the blacke Moeres.



Th[e] fyrste cam we in the lande of Canarien/ whyche is. C. and. l. [150] myles from Lyffebone. And ther betwyn been. ij. ylandes. In yat one is well made people and men make there moche cheefe of great wyld gootes. also is ther fiffhe and suykere good cheep. That other yland is not enhabite ther be lytell people therin/ and they be all a frayde and wyld/ also ther ayen lyeth the lande of Barbera/ and is from them in to ye Gennea. CC.l. [250] myles. and that is the blackes mores land. and ayen ye begynnyng of this lande is oon aforemontayen and hooth caput viride/ and thereby is ye towne Bitfagitfch. v. C. [500] myles from Luffebonen there by be many w[h]alefyffhes and flynge fyffhes on the on fyde of Bifagitfche. ij. C. and. l. [250] myles sayle men vnder yat sone so ferre/ that men the northe sayle sterre or pollumarticum/ or the waghen called/ no more may be feen/ but pollum ante articum or yat fowth layd sterre fawe we fourth with[.] the forsayde Morelande is M. iiij. C. [1400] myles great/ there ye people goeth all naked with golden rynges on handes and fete.

[(Here comes a woodcut of Natives) IN · ALLAGO]



Th[at] lande of Allago is. v. C. [500] myles greater And gothe ayenste the begynnyng of Arabien and there is that kyngdom Safale[.] in this lande Allago is the people clothed as aboue is marked/ the[y] were and bere for there clothes skynnes of wyld bestes. The men bere clokes made of barkes of trees and ledder to kyuer theyr members with. And the women kyuer theym with skynnes of bestes. and take vpon there heddes for kerchers skynnes of oxen or other bestes[.] also py[t]che the[y] theyr mennes forhed lyke as men pytche the shyppes/ and there dwellynge is vnder the erthe. There is many cowes. oxen/ great shepe and other fayre bestes. This is on fayre and lusty lande of good water and fwete herbes. This people hath a fwyfte hasty speche. There is no money but of you [? iron] and that euery body take it for there ware they bere whyte flaues there wepyns is lange pykes and stons ther they caste myghtly with. That Lande is so full of fande yat they muste goo vpon brode trenchers that they falle not and fynke. After that cometh men into the lande of arabyen.

[(Here is another woodcut representing Natives) IN: ARABIA]

Arabia.



Omyng in Arabia fawe we ye people clothed lyke as here is figured stande. and out [of] this kyngdome hath be oon of the three holy kyngys. Item ther bynde they ther oxen with Arabie gold about ther hornes/ and erys. And also goldyn rynges aboute th[e]yr legges. And for gold take they of marchaudes fylkyng kerchers and lynen clothe. Item ther after fe we now. v. ylandes. the fyrst yland named Momfabith. sixty myles from Safalen. is leeid ye towne Quiola that was founde of the kynges folke of portyngal And they flewe there moche people and robbed the towne. And there without had there kyng edfyed on castell that is named feynt Iacobis castell there in lyeth a. C. [100] bolde and hardy men that lyeth and kepeth it.

[Here is a striking woodcut representing, with great life and action, a spirited attack on the gate of some European town; which has evidently been borrowed by John of Desborough from some other printed book, chronicle, or other work, printed by himself or other printer.]



He[n] feunte myles from Quiola lyeth the towne Bombassa that they also byrned and robbed that also there they gatte moche goodes. From thens nowe. xxiiij. myle[s] lyeth the great towne Meli[n]da and they be frendes/ and there be many floueynes and fell people out of Geneen From Melinda it is. iiij. score and. x. myles to on Persia there gowe they ouer the see. For by the towne Megha into the ylande. Auxendia There is also one that hath be of ye three holy kynges of the eest. C. [100] myles into the Kyngdome of Canenor and there begyn the spyces to growe and from thens fare they forthe in to the great lande of great Indyen.

¶ *Of great Indyen.*

[(Here follows a woodcut of the Inhabitants of) MAIOR: INDIA]



Hey gowe from Cananor into great Indyen there the people goo all naked but yat the[y] kyuer there members with lynen cloth and they be brounde blacke/ with longe here and of the women is not wryten but on kaute the see fawe men manye merueloufe people of manereren the women bere there chylidren and theyr houfeholde stufte. Here fynde men gynger/ peper/ comeyn/ and all manere of spyces/ and

cottely stoncs for lytell moneye. There be also many maner of frute fygges of good fauyour. vij. ynches longe and. iij. ynches brode. There be bulfeldes and coyces but the coyces slepe they not/ there groweth good wyne/ muche honeye/ ryfe/ costely corne whyte as wete mele/ Ther by standeth the towne of Banderana and it is. vij myles into Callienten from thens is. xl. myles there men goo for all maner of spyces that men were wonte to caray and conuey ouer the redde see thorowgh Alexander but nowe is there one newe way founden ouer the the see[.] in Calacuten is many folke out of feynt thomas lande yat also be crystened/ and folke of other landes and nacyons they goo ouer into that kyngdome Kyngryche Gutfchyn as hereafter flandes wryten.

¶ *Of Gutfchin that Kyngēdome.*

[Here is a woodcut representing two Natives fighting, see p. xxv.]



And than cam we in the kyngdome of Gutfchyn and ther hath the kyng of portyngale do make. ij. Casteyles from here was the thre holy kynges. there groeth much peper and the propereft flapell therof. That kyngdom Colen is. xxiiij. myles from there/ and there been many krytlened men/ we fynde also great Olyfantes and many dyuers maner and wonders bestes and other thynges that men cannot wryghte all. gardeynes frutes is there muche gretter than in our landes of Europa. That ylande Melaqua is from thens. viij. C. [800] myles/ There also is moche costely spyces. There is nowe. ij. ylandes the on is Bandan and therin groweth the cloues. That other Tanagora or Narnaria and there groeth not no other wodde than whyte and red sandelen wodde/ This is fortunēd that for a bell of a glasse men may haue one handfull of peerles. In Gutfchin bere some tymes there kyngē but that do the people of his courte and holde obedyance vnder theym one with a nother They doo all there thynges all sleightly For as as they be affembled in one gatherynge/ than cryeth the capitayne I will fowe/ and as the subiectes here theyr capitayne crye fowe than take they parte of/ the fede and no man sayth the contrary and letteth the other iye and that takethe the lorde with out any body contrary faynge/ and so do they in all merchaundyse. Forthe by that kyngdome Gutfhyn/ Colum/ Bandan/ and Nagaria. xxx. [thirty] myles[.] in Arfinia there hath the kyngē. xij. kynges vnder hym/ and there lyeth buryed feynt Thomas apottell.

[Here is a woodcut of a tree apparently intended to represent a fig-tree. It might do equally well for many other kinds of trees.]



In some of these aforfayde wrytten landes ben great and fayre frutes and they be greater than in these our landes of Europa In Isla mandra be great hygh trees for the people of yat contrey hewe great steppes aboute to clyme vp in to the tree to gather the frutes that groweth there on for whan they be a thruft to take there of. In Arfinia is great brode fygge Trees with great fygges well. vij. ynches longe and. iij. ynches brode and the Fygge tre is so brode of braunche and leues that. xl. [forty] men may be hydde vnder the foresayd braunches and leues for the hete of the sonne/ and there for to reste all to gather at theyr one pleafure.

[Here are two woodcuts cornerwise, one representing two Indians, the other two men and a woman of Europe, see p. xxv.]



We haue in this vyage fayled aboute the forth parte of the worlde for to reken from Luffsyngboren whiche is ferre equinoccyall scher linien. xxxix. [thirty-nine] grades and on halfe so haue we fayled ouer ye linie equinocciall. l. [fifty] grades that maketh xc. [ninety] grades therfore they of Luffbone is vnder yat forfayde linie. xxxix. grade and one halfe in the hygh hed of the hemels is the breyde of westes/ so is them of Luffbone to these folke to sene the. l. [fifty] grades is ouer the felse lyne soth cornerwyse. v. grades in perpendiculer linia whiche linie as we flande ryght of yat poynt the hemls hange vpon our hed and these folke in theyr fydes or rybbes and woort fet in the maner of on tryangel or on drycantlyche cornard. therfore it must nedes be yat the fowth landes be tempered with swete erthe for the northe wyndes can nat there blowe.

[Here, across the middle leaf of the tract, is an excellent representation of the King of Cochin seated on a kind of tressel, carried by four men, surrounded with armed attendants: and with an umbrella borne by one man, and not a canopy borne by four men, as stated below in the text. The woodcut extends across about two-thirds of the folio, in the margin of which occurs the following note.]



After this maner of fourme is the Kyngē of Gutfchym borne with the nobleste of his lande/ And before hym is borne many instrumentes of musyke as trompettes and other and. iij. of the nobleste bereth the canapie ouer his hed lest that the soon shuld burne hym/ and this kyngē is beloued of all his estates and common people.

[This fresh tract is headed by a woodcut representing angels bearing the pyx.]

OF THE. X. DYVERCE CRISTENED NACIONS.



The fyrste nacion.

[Two woodcuts, evidently taken from some Martyrology, come in here. One represents an angel standing by the cross, the other a female saint with a sword sticking in her breast.]



The fyrste nacion is the Latynes and they haue to theyr lorde the Emperour of Almayne and many Kynges/ as the kyng of castly an of Aragon/ of portyngale/ of nauaryen/ and these kynges is for spaynes nacion. In yat nacion of the frenche lande is one kyng of Fraunce and many dukes and Erles. In

the nacion of Italian is the kyng of Cicylian/ the kyng of Naples and many dukes and Erles and there is also many lordshyppes as Veneyse Florence feuen Ienuen [? *Sienna*, *Genoa*].



The nacion of Germanien is now many kynges with out the emperoure/ as the Kyng of Englande/ of Scotlande/ of Vngerien/ of Bohemen/ of Polen/ of Denmarke/ of sweden/ of Northwegen/ of Dalmacyen/ and there is many Dukes and Erles &c. In that ylande of Syper [? *Cyprus*] is the kyng of Syper/

All these a fore wryten is vnder the obeyifaunce or [? of] the chyrche of Rome.

xxx

The seconde nacion.



The Grekes haue spyrytuallly the Patriarcke of Constantynnoplen/ and many Archebysshops/ bysshops/ and abbottes. And in ye temperalte haue they one Emperour and many dukes and erles/ and there is but fewe of them that be crystened/ For the Agarenen and Turkes hath nowe the moost parte of Grekes/ and is not obedient to the chyrch of Rome. And they haue a great erre for they faye that the holy ghost cam not of the fone but alone of the fader. And they fay also that there is no purgatory/ that is all a yenste our belefe.

The thyrde nacion.

[Here follows a woodcut representing St. Thomas kneeling to our Saviour.]



Hey of Indyen hath one prynce and that is pope Iohn whose myghtynes and rychedome amounteth aboue all prynces of the world for he hath vnder hym. lxxij. [seuenty-two] kynges and as pope Iohn dayely rydeth he bere a fore hym one croffe of wode for to thynke on at all tymes and remember vpon the passion of I[es]hu and to the batayle doth he bere. xij. crosses of golde made and fet with precyouse stones for his baners/ in this lande is the body of feynt Thomas.

The fourth nacion.



Acobyten named also of on ketter Iacob and was be one dyssyple of the Patryarche of Alexandryne/ and this helde the one great land in Orynten and Afyen and is named that lande of Mambrone and it is by Egypten and gothe to Ethyopen and into Indien to/ and hath vnder hym well. xl. [forty] kynges rychedom/ these be kytte and chrystened with a byrnynge yren for they branne the token of the holy croffe in theyr forehed/ vpon the breste/ vpon the arme/ they confesse them to God alone and none prestes/ and they fay that in christo is alone the godhed without the manhod/ and some of them speke Caldesche some Arabier/ some other spe[e]ches after theyr language of the lande/ and these been condemned of the holy chyrche in that counfayll of Ceden.

¶ *The fyth nacion.*



Here be also Nestorijnen named of the ketter Nestorinus that was one bysshope of the bysshops of Constantynenoplen and they fett ij. perfonen in christo that is the Godhed and ye perfonen/ and they forsake that maria is the moder of god/ but they beleue well of I[es]hu. and they wrytynge is in

caldenssher speche and they make the sacrament in broune brede and there be great multytude of theym and they dwell in Tartarien and in great Indyen/ and theyr lande is as great as a thousande of Italy/ and these ketters be condemned in that thyrd councfayll of Ephesyn and is departed of the holy Romes chyrche and abyde in theyr opynion.

¶ *The syxte nacion.*



Y the ketter Moren they be named Moroniten they say alone in christo is one vnderstande and one wyll and those dwell by Lybien in the lande of Phenicen and there be great multitude and they be bolde and hardy men. and great warryars with the bowe/

And they haue theyr bysshops clothed as the Latynes with the bissshops myter on his hed/ and with the crosfers staffe and rynges/ These hath ben some tyme vnder the obeyssaunce of the chyrche of Rome whan Innocentius was pope/ but afterwarde came they ayen in theyr opynion and there abyde in theyr opynion.

¶ *The seuenth nacion.*



Armenyten is also named for that they dwell in the lande of Armeneten nere vnto Anthiochyen and there is whrythyn seruyce of the masses. and theyr other tydes is all in theyr one comon speche so that they all mey vnderstande it what they synge or rede/ and they haue theyr hed or fader to whome they

do reuerence as we do the pope. And they faste the lenton with greater deuocyon than we doo/ for they ete in the lenton no fyssh/ nor they drynke no wyne/ but they ete flesshe vpon frydays.

[Here is a woodcut representing a squadron of English knights, with St. George's flag, armed *cap à pie*, and galloping in battle. It has nothing whatever to do with the text.]

¶ *The eyght nacion.*



His nacion is named Georgidni of feynt George for they haue hym in theyr batelles for theyr patrone/ and they dwell in the lande of Oryenten/ and they be fayer/ lusty/ and stronge pepyll/ and they be fore a drad of the Medon perssen Assiryen there they aboute dwelle And they haue theyr seryp-

ture in ye Greekes speche and they haue theyr sacramentes as the Grekes/ and the clarkes haue rounde crownes/ and they feke the holy graue to Iherusalem with open or spred baners. And they gyue the sarafons no trybute for the sarafons fereth those folke very fore/ there women bere harneyse lyke the men and they haue also beardes as ye men and they bere vpon theyr heddes and vpon hye cubettes hye hattes and as the[y] wryte to the Sodan than gyueh he them that they dysfyre.

¶ *The Nynthe nacion.*



He Surianen is named after theyr towne Surie that is the grettest in all Suryen or Assiryen theyr serypure and seruyce of god in ye Grekes speche but they speke sarafons speche and they holde the manere of ye grekes/ and haue byshoppes that in all thynges be obeydyent and they make theym

sacrament of browne brede and they haue the opynion of the Grekes ayen the Latynes there be some crystened that in the holy lande is namyd Samerytanes that were conuerted in the tyme that the apostels preched but they vnderstande them not well in the crysten beleue.

¶ *The tenth nacion.*



Ororaben so called after the laten for they holde and vse the maner of the crysten of Ar[a]bien/ and of these were wonte to be manye people in Afrijken and in Spaengnien but nowe is there lytell in the tellyng/ -They haue in theyr seruyce of god lateyne as we do/ And they be vnder the obeyssaunce of the chyrche

of Rome. And the latynes prelates but in many thynges ben they dyuerse departed for also the day hath xxiiij. houres/ Also many tymes hymnes and psalmes and other orafouns haue they and very longe/ And that that ye Latyns rede in the begynnyng of theyr seruyce that rede they in the mydle or in the laste ende. And that sacrament of the anter breketh some of them in. vij. partes and some in. x. partyes/ and these people be very deuoute and they mareye but ones in theyr lyfe and as the women hath losse theyr fyrst husbond so dothe they meddle no more with no man/ but abyde fro thenffourth in chastyte.



Or. ij. causes cometh the departynge of ye crysten nacyns. The fyrste cause is that men in olde tyme myght the crysten haue only haue generall consilium/ Therefore as the ketters flode vp ayen the crysten belefe so was there no body turned nor faught counfayll there ayen. The other

cause was the serfwynmyngnes of ye opprest pope of ye schole of Rome that no messengere nor lerned schulde to the krysten thow that were come in seche lodyng/ for had they do that they schulde haue be conuerted to the ryght belefe. Thorowth whiche ryght belefe brynge vs to the hyghest glorie the fader the sone the holy ghoste thre perfonen and one god. Amen.

[AN ABRIDGMENT OF THE MEDIÆVAL LEGEND OF PRESTER JOHN].

[This third Tract has a very large initial letter I, containing what appears to be a representation of Prester John, and of a Roman Catholic monk or pilgrim kneeling beneath him.]



Pope Iohn by ye grace of god the mooste myghtyeste kyng a boue all kyngys of ye worlde gyue saluete the Emperour of Rome. and also the kyng of France.

Oure wel belouyd frynde We late you vnderstande and knowe of our lande And the maner of oure lyuinge and of our people beestes and fowles.

¶ And you saye that we beleue not in god and praye not to hym as you do. So late we you vnderstande that we beleue in god the father. in god the sonne. and in god the holy gooste. The whyche be vnpartyble and one very god. and is all thyng myghty.

And also certefye yow with oure lettres sealed and doo you knowlege of oure folke or people and of our lande. And yf there be ony thyng yat we kan doo for you. fende vs worde and we shall it doo with good herte and wyll. And yf it please ony of you to come in oure lande we shall gyue them gold and syluer to th[e]yr necessitie/ and make them great lordis. and gyue to them also lande and good[s] to lyue on. and do to [t]hem worship and honor. For the goodnes that we haue herde say of you. And we do you knowledge that we haue the richeste crowne of the worlde as of golde and syluer and of precyous stones in great multitude And we haue also vnder vs mighty. xliij. kingdomes and al good cristen people. and we kepe also the poure people with our almes alle that cometh be it strenger or of oure owne people thorough the loue of almyghty god oure lorde Ihesu Criste.

¶ Item Oure lande is parted in. iiij. For the landes of Indien/ there be two. and in that grettest Indien is the body of feynt Thomas. And this same Indien is partiner of ye coste

of orient for it lyeth besyde a toure ye which is caalled babel/ and it id [?is] not ferre fro Babilonyen. And also that other parte of Indien is aboute Septentryon. and there is great plenty of wyne/ bredde and all maner of vytayle.

¶ Item also in our lande be gryffons/ and it is a great byrde and a myghty. for he wyll well cary in his neste an oxe/ or an horse for his yonge byrdes to ete. Also in Saxen is a towne which is called Grounzyk ther is one of the clawes yat which is well as great as an horn of an oxe.

[Here comes, in the original, at the side of the page, a woodcut of an elephant with a castle on its back.]

¶ In our lande be olyphantes/ dromedaries/ wylde oxes the whyche haue. vij. hornes. also Beeres and Lyons of dyuers colours/ as ye redd/ grene/ blacke/ and whitte

¶ Item and also be wylde asses the whych haue longe eeres/ and haue two fmale hornes. &c.



In our lande be also fowles ye whyche that haue the maystery of all birdes of the worlde/ and haue a colour lyke ye syer/ and his wingis kyt [?cut] lyke a rasour. and this byrdes ben called Ilerion. and in alle the worlde is no more than two. and they lyuen. iij. skore yere and thenne they laye eggis and fyte vpon them. xl. dayes and as sone as they haue yonges they flee awaye/ fader and moder to the zee and ther they drowne them self. and alle tho byrdes yat come ayenst them do them company to the zee. and as sone as the[y] be drowned all the other byrdes tourne ayen to the neste there they yonge byrdes ben leste/ and gyue them mete and drinke to the tyme that the[y] can flee and nurter them selfe. &c.

¶ Yet ben there other byrdes the whyche ben called Tygris/ and they be so stronge that they wyll bere or cary in their neste a man sytting vpon an horse all armyd fro the hede to ye fote.

[Here, at the side of the page, is the representation of a naked man with one eye in his forehead, and bearing a club.]

¶ Item In our lande is also a grete deferte or forest therein dwelth people bothe men and wymmen the whyche haue nomore than one eye afore. and behinde they haue. iij. or. iiij. eyen

¶ Yet is in oure lande an other maner of people the whiche ete none other than rawe fleshe. and they care not yf it were of man or woman or of beestis and also the[y] care not of ther owne deth. and as sone as there one of them dyeth the[y] etc them all rawe/ both there one [? own] fader or moeder. And they faye yat mans fleyshe is good and natur[a]ly to ete rawe/ for they faye that they doe it for parte of penaunce for there fynnes. And they be also cursed of god/ and they be called Gog and Magog And of them be no more than one maner of people of this worlde and they shall be dystrubuted or parted thorough all the world whan Antechryst shall come. and these fame were the people or folke the whych they hadde put in pryfone or in holde the great kynge Alexander of Macedonien. But for all that he wente his way And of this people shalbe no iugement at the dredefull day of dome lyke the prophete fayeth. ¶ *Nescio quis. &c.*

But neuertheles thonder and lytenynge shall come fro heuen and bourne them all in po[w]der And whan that we haue any enemyes thanne gyue we them lycence to put them downe and ete them that be ayenffe vs and then make we them to tourne ageyne into there owne lande. For if they sholde abyde longe with vs they shuld vndo vs all and ete vs lyke as they do there owne propre folke.

[Here, also at the side, is the pictorial representation of the creature described in the next paragraph.]

¶ And yet is there another manere of people/ the whyche hath rownde fete lyke an horfe/ and also they haue. iiij. sharpe claws behynde/ at there Heles. Wherewith they strongly fyght that there is no manere thyng can stonde ayenste them/ nether harmayfe/ yrone/ nor stele they passe all thorowth/ and this people gyue vnto vs great trybute. and they be also without dowte great labourers.

¶ Yet is there a nother smale lande in a parte of that fame forest aforefayde/ and it is. xliij. [forty-two] dayes Iourneyes longe. And it is called Feminie the great. And in that fame lande there be thre Quenes without all other landes/ thowe that holden there been of these quenes foresayde And whan these quenes shall goo to felde/ then eche of them hath. iij. hondered. M. [300,000] wymen and all in harneyfe/ with out all the other women the whych that caray vytayle with carte horfe and also with olyfauntes. And these women be very manly in fytynge and hardy. ¶ And in this fame lande may come

no men but. ix. dayes in the yere and no lenger/ and than they haue conuerfacion and felyshyp with the men and nomore of the hole yere. For if the men there wolde abyde the women shulde them flee all.

¶ And this fame lande is clofed all aboute with a water called Cyphon comynge out of paradyse And in this fame lande may come no man without a great shyp or a great barke.

¶ Of the people named Pygmies.

[Here is a woodcut representing the battle of the Pigmies and the storks.]



¶ And yet is there a nother smale lande and also another Ryuer called Pyconye that is. x. dayes iourneye longe/ and. vij. brode and this people of this forfayde lande be not great/ but they be lyke chylde[n] of. vij. yere of age and they haue horseys as great as a great dogge and they be good crystened folke and they haue no warre ayenste noman/ But they haue warre ayenste the fowles euery yere/ whan they shall haue in there frute and corne And than the kynge putteth on his harneyfe. and than they fyght ayenste the byrdes. And than there be slayn on bothe partyes many on/ and also they be great labourers/ and whan the fylde is don than the byrdes flee a waye fro them.

[Here, at the side, is a circular woodcut of Sagittarius, evidently one of the signs of the Zodiac taken from some illustrated almanac.]

¶ Also in our lande been ye Sagittary. the whyche ben fro the myddel vpward lyke men/ and fro ye myddell donward ben they lyke the halfe neder parte of an horfe. and they bere bowes and arowes. And the[y] flute stronger than any other nacyon of people.

¶ And in our lande be also vnicornes and they been of the manere with blacke and grene/ and these vnicornes flee many Lyons. and the Lyon sleeth the vnicorne with subtylnes. Whan the Vnicorne hath put hym to rest at a tree/ and than cometh the Lyon and ronnyth aboute the tree and after hym than ronnyth the vnycorne and wolde fayne sley hym/ and than he ronnyth hym selfe into the tree with his horne so harde that he cannot pull it out a geyne. than commeth the Lyon and hath the mastery vpon the vnicorne.

¶ Item there is a nother parte of a forest therein dwelleth another maner of folke and this people ben. xx. Cubettes of heythe. But they were in tyme paste to be of the heyth of. xl. Cubettes. And they haue nat the pore to come out of that deferte or foreste and all is thorowe the myghte of almyghty god. For if they sholde come out by there strenght and hardyneffe the[y] wolde conquere all the worlde.

[Here, at the side, is a curious cut representing the Phoenix burning.]

¶ Here begynnith of ye birde the whyche is called Fenix.

¶ In oure lande is also a byrde ye whyche is called Phenix and is ye fayrest byrde of all ye world and there is nomore than one in all ye cours of nature. and he lyueth C. [100] yere. and thenne flyeth he fo hyghe that the sonne fett the fyre in his wynges/ and thenne cometh he don ayen to his nest and there he burneth to p[0]udre and of the asshes comyth a worme/ and within. C [100] dayes after growyth there out another byrde as fayre as euer that other was.

¶ Item Also in our lande is plenty of wyne bredde/ fleshe. All that is necessary for mannys body

¶ Item In our lande maye come none venyn beeste on that one fyde

¶ Item Betwene oure lande and the Turkes lande is a ryuer ronnyng and is called Sydon it commeth out of paradyfe of the erthe/ and is full of precyous stones.

¶ And also in oure lande ben ronnyng many fmale riuers the whyche that come out of this forfayde riuer. and they also ben fulle of precyous stones. As Yfmaraddus Iaspis Saphyrus Scobaffus Dyamant Topafius/ Carbonkel. Rubin. and yet more other they whyche I not all can reherce.

¶ Also in oure lande groweth on herbe and is called Parmanabel/ and that fame herbe is fo myghty euer soo who that fame herbe beryth a boutte hym he may coniuere the deuyll of helle and do hym fayre what fo euer he wyl axe of hym and therefore the deuyll dare not come in to our lande.

Item also in our lande growith pepper in forestis full of snakes and other venym beestes. and whan it is ripe than fende we for our folke and they put that fyre ther in/ and than they venym beestys flee awaye. than we gadder it and caryed to oure houfes and waffhed in two or. iij. waters/ and than we drey it ayen/ and also it waxed black and good

¶ Item aboute this passage is a fonteyne or a conduyte/ fo who of this watere drinke. iij. tymes he shall waxe yonge/ and also yf a man haue had a fykenes. xxx. yere and drynked of thys fame water he shall therof be hole and fonde. And also as a man therof drinke hym femeth that he had occupied the beste mete and drinke of the worlde. and this fame fonteyne is full of the grace of the holy goost. and who fo we in this fame water waffhed his body he shall become yonge of. xxx. yere.

And ye shall knowe that I am haloweth in my moder wombe/ and I am old. v. C. lxiij. [562] yere. and I haue me wesshed. vi. tymes in that fame water.

[Here, at the side, is a woodcut of a flying griffon carrying a man.]

¶ Item In our lande is also a zee very peruulyous/ and there can we haue noo passage with noo maner of shyping and than do we vs cary there ouer with our gryffons.

¶ Item at that one fyde of this zee ronnyth a fmale ryuer and therin be many precyous stones. and also ther growyth a certen herbe that is good to all maner of medycyne.

¶ Also ye shall vnderstande that betwene vs and the Iewes ronnyth a great ryuer that is full of precyous stones and it is fo stronge in here ronnyng yat noman ther ouer can passe/ excepte ye faterdaye/ and than parted shehere and toke with here all that she fyndeth in here waye. And this fame lande mozte we strongely kepe for oure ennemyes. an[d] vp these costes haue we. xlij. [42] stronge castels none stronger in ye world. and ben well kepte of people. To vndestande. x. M. [10,000] knyghtes on horsbacke. vi. M. [6000] Crosse bowes. xv. M. [15,000] longe bowes. and. xl. M. [40,000] othere men on horsbacke well armed. ye whyche these Castels haue in kyping by cause that the great kyng of Iffrahel shall not therpasse with his people. For he is twyes as stronge as I am. And his lande is twyes as grete as all Crystente and turkey. For he hath in his keypyng the seconde parte of the worlde. And the great kyng of Iffrahel hath vnder hym iij. C. [300] kynges. iij. M. [4000] princes. duces. erles. barons knyghtes/ squyers without nombre. and all these be subgette to the great kyng of Iffrahel. But yf he myght passe ouer this forfayde ryuer with his people they sholde flee both crysten and turkes. And ye shall knowe that we all faterdaye late passe. viij. C. or. M. [800 or a 1000] men for beye fuche manere good[s] or marchaundyfe as they wyl haue. but we late them not come with in ye wallis of thys castels. for they bye it without ye walles of thys fortresses. and they paye ther marchaundyfes with platis of syluer or of gold for they haue none other money. and whan they haue don ther befynes they tourne home ayen in theyr owne lande. and these forfayde castels be fete to gyder within a bowe shotte. And ye shall vnderstande that within a myle of these castels is a great Cite and a fayre and it is the strongest of all the worlde. the whyche cite is in our keypyng of one of our kyngis. and he receyueth tribute of the great kyng of Iffrahel. And also gyueth vs euery yere. ij. C. [200] horses laden with golde/ fyluer/ and precyous stones. Except alle charges and costes that men doth in the cyte and in thys forefayde castels. And whan that we haue warre ayenst them/ than flee we them alle and late noman alyue. and therefore they wyl kepe no warre ayenst vs. and the wymmen of the Iewes be very fayre none fayrer in erth nowe a dayes lynyng. And by this forfayde ryuer is a zee ther noman may passe/ but

whan the wynde blowythe fro benethe strongely than parted the here/ and thanne the[y] passe with great hast. and than they take with hym all maner of precious stones. but they may felle none therof [be]for[e] that wee haue taken therof our chofe.

¶ In a parte of our lande is an hylle there noman may dwelle for hete of the sonne/ and there bee wormes many on without fyre can not lyue. And by this fame hylle we kepe. xl. M. [40,000] people that no thyngcells but make fyre/ and whan this wormes feele the fyre than thei come oute of the erthe and goo in too that fyre. and there they spynne lyke the wormes yat the fylke spynneth And of that fame spynnyng we make our clot[h]yng that we were on feste dayes. and whan they be soule/ than they be cast in to ye fyer and they becom as fayre as euer they were afore

And ye shall vnderstande that faint Thomas doeth more myracles/ than any feynt in heuen For he comyth bod[i]ly euery yere in his chirche and doth a fermon/ and also in a palays there ye here after of hym shall here.

[Here, at the side, is the representation of the creature described in the next paragraph.]

¶ And ye shall also knowe that there be dyuers of people of fafon in our lande/ also there be people that haue the body of a man and the hede lyke a dogge and they be good takers of fyfsh. and they be good to vnderstande of theyre speeche. and they wyll goo in to the zee a hole daye longe to the tyme that they haue taken fuche as they wolde haue/ and than ye [they] come ayen charged with fyfsh. and bere them in to ye houses for they haue there dwellinge places vnder erthe. and thenne take we part of there fyfshes that vs beste lyketh. and they do great harme among our bee thow yat be wyld. and they fyghte also ayenste our archers. &c.

¶ In oure londe is also one manere of byrdes and laye ther eggis in the zee. xxi. and ther out growen yonge byrdes. and than the[y] flee away and we take somtyme of theym for they be good for to ete whan they be yonge For yf they were any man that hathe loſt his nature and ete of this fame byrde he sholl it gete ayen and becom as stronge as euer he was afore.

[Here is a woodcut of a tree dropping oil, guarded by a dragon, as described in the next paragraph.]

¶ Also in our lande is that fame tree/ ther yat holy creftendom or olye [?oye] out ronnith. and this tree is dreye/ and ther is a great serpent which yat tree hath in keypyng all the hole yere nyght and daye but alone vp[on] feynt Iohns daye and night and than slepyth the serpent or dragon. and than goo we to the tree and take yat crisma. and of this fame is nomore than iij. po[u]nd. and than tourne we ayen secretely

with great drede and fere yat he vs not fee/ for ells he wyll flee vs. and this fame tree is a dayes iourney fro ye paradys of ye erthe. but whan this serpent is a waked than maked he great mone and forow. and this dragon hath. ix. hedes and. ij. wynges. and is as great as twoo horses. But for all yat it followeth vs styll tyl we ben come to the zee ayen. and than tourned it ayen. and thenne bere we that crisma. to ye patriarch of feynt thomas and he haloweth it/ and ther with they make vs al crysten. and ye remenaunt fende we to ye patriarche of Iherusalem. and he fende it forth to the Pope of rome. and he puth therto olye tof lyfe [?oye of lyfe] and than halowyth it/ and then he fendeth all crystente through

¶ Also ye shall vnderstande whan we shall goo to warre than doo we afore vs bere with. xiiij. [14] kynges. xiiij. [14] cofers with golde and fyluer really wrought with precious stones. and the other kynges come after vs with grete stremers and baners of fylke and fyndale very rychely wrought. Ye shall knowe also that afore vs gone. xl. M. [40,000] clerkis and also many knyghtis. and men afote there be ij. C. M. [200,000] without cariers and cariers that go with the olyphantes and cary our harneys and vitales.

¶ Ye shall vnderstande also as we goo to fylde than put we oure lande in the keypyng of the Patriarche of feynt thomas. And whan we pecefably ryde than do we here afore vs a crosse of wodde in worshyp of oure lorde Ihesu Cryste. Also in the incomynge of euery cyte stande. iij. crosses made of wodde/ for to remembre ye passion of oure lord Ihesu cryste. And whan we ryde pecefably than do we also bere afore vs a bafyn full of erthe to remembre yat we be come of erthe and that we shall waxe erth ayen. and we do also bere for vs another bafyn full of fyne gold to a token that we be the nobleste and myghtyest kyngis of all the worlde.

¶ There is also in our lande noman so hardy that dare breke his wedloke. but yf he dyde he sholde be incontynent be burnyd. For our lorde hym felse hath ordeyned wedlok therfore it shold be kept by reafon yf that we louyd oure lorde Ihesu Cryste. For it is one of the sacramentes of the holy chyrche.

¶ Also there dare noman make a lye in oure lande. for of he dyde he sholde incontynent bee fleyn and we be feythful in oure faying and doying.

¶ Also ye shall vnderstand that we euery yere goo vyfite the holy body of the prophete danyel in oure forest/ and we take with vs. x. M. [10,000] clerkis and as many knyghtys. and. CC. [200] castels. made vpon Olyphantes fore to kepe vs from ye dragons ye whyche haue. vij. hedes. the whych that haue theyr dwellynge in that forest.

¶ And there bee also in that fame place dates ye winter and fomer hange on the trees fayr and grene. And ye foreste is great a. C. and xxx. [130] dayes journey. and ye. ij.

patriarches ben before vs at table for they haue the myght of the pope of rome. And we haue twyes as many abbotes in oure lande as there be dayes in the yere. [and] xv. more And euerich one of them cometh ones in ye yere and faythe masse vpon faint Thomas auter. And I my self feye also masse in the grete festis of ye yere. and ther for I am called pope Iohn. For I [am] prieste after the outshewing of sacreficie of the auters. and kinge after outshewing of Iustice. ¶ And I pope Iohn was halowid afore I was borne. for oure lorde fende his angell to my fader and fayde to hym make a pallays the whyche shall be of the grace of god and a chamber of that paradyse for your sonne comynge For hi shall be the grettest kyng of the worlde. and he shalle a longe tyme lyue. So who that in this pallays comyth he shall haue no hongre or thyrste. and he shall not deye and as sone as my fader was a wakyd he was very mery/ and incontynent he began to make thys pallays lyke ye shall here. At fyrst of ye incomynge of thys pallays is made of cristall and the couerynge of it is of precious stones and with in realy wrought with sterres lyke yf it were ye heuen. and that pauing is also of cristall and within this fame pallays be none wyndowes. and within this fame pallays be. xxiiij. [24] pyllers of fyne gold and of precyous stones of all maner fortes. and ther am I at great feste dayes of the yere and feynt Thomas prechyth in middell of this pallays to the

people. And whithin this fame pallays is a conduyte or a fonteyne is lyke wyne in drynkyng/ fo who thereof drincketh he defyred none other mete nor drinke and noman can telle fro whens it cometh or whyther it gothe. Also ther is another great merueyll in this fame pallays whan we shall goo to our dynner/ fo is there no maner of mete made redy for vs/ nor there is no manner of instrumentes to make mete redy with all. but there comith before vs all maner of delycious mete that comyth there thoroughe the holy goost. And it is not wel possyble to wrytte all maner of goodnes they [haue] whiche yat be in oure lande. And ye shall vnderstande that we wrytte nothyng to you but trewe is. For if we sholde wrytte lyes to you/ god and feynt thomas sholde punyssh vs/ for we sholde lese all our dignyte and oure worshyp.

And we praye you that ye wyl wrytte vs ayen with the berer of this lettre. and fende to vs ayen a good knyght of ye generacyon of fraunce.

And we praye the kyng of Fraunce that he wyl vs recommaunde to the myghty kyng of Englande. and also to all other kynges the whyche yat dwelle be yonde the zee thow that ben crystened and we praye god that he you wyl gyue the grace of the holy goost Amen.

Written in oure holy pallays in the byrth of my selfe. v. [five] hondred. and feuen.

Emprenteth by me Iohn of Doesborowe:



The
Life and Labours
of
Richard Eden,
Scholar, and Man of Science.

[? 1521]—1576.

* Probable or approximate dates.

The best Life of our Author hitherto, is in Cooper's *Athene Cantabrigienses*, ii., 2, Ed. 1861.

1509. Apr. 22. Henry VIII. comes to the throne.

- 1521.* The year of our Author's birth has not yet been ascertained, but it cannot be much later than 1521. He would therefore be of nearly the same age as Sir William Cecil, Lord Burleigh, who was born on 13th September 1520. He stated in 1573 (*see under that year*) that 'he was of a respectable family in Hertfordshire; where he, in that year, had a sister still living.'
- 1526*—1534.* He is well educated as a boy. 'When I was a yonge scoler, I haue read in the Poet *Hesiodus*,'—*p. xli. col. 2.*
1526. Pietro Martire of Anghiera dies.
1526. Feb. The printing of the *Sumario de la natural y general istoria de las Indias*, written by Gonçalo Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés, is finished at Toledo.
1530. Jan. 25. Sir Thomas Smith [*b.* 28th March 1514 at Saffron Walden], being then B.A., is elected Fellow of Queen's College, Cambridge.
1533. Aug. 31. The printing of the Third edition of Pietro Martire's Latin *Decades* is finished at Basle. It is undoubtedly the text from which Eden translated *pp.* 63-200 of this present work.
- 1533-1539. Sir T. Smith is resident at Cambridge.
1540. Vaunuccio Biringuccio's *Pyrotechnia* is first printed; at Venice.
- 1535-1544. Eden studies at Cambridge for ten years (*see under 1573*). What he states there, he confirms elsewhere, *see p. l. col. 1*, 'that the ryght worshipfull and of singular

learnynge in all sciences, Syr Thomas Smyth, in my tyme the floure of the Vniuerstie of Cambridge, and sometyme my tutor.' He does not, however, seem to have taken any degree, while up at the University.

1539-1541.

Sir T. Smith is travelling abroad.

1542.

A folio edition of Chaucer's works is published, remarkable for being an early instance of joint enterprise among English printers, 'each having his own name alone as printer, in the colophon of so many copies as were his proper share.'—Herbert's *Typographical Antiquities*, *p.* 557, *Ed.* 1785-90. The joint partners in this edition were W. Bonham, F. Petit, R. Kele, and R. Toy.

1842-1547.

Sir T. Smith is again resident at Cambridge. It was probably during this period, that he taught Eden: who had, for his fellow pupils under Sir T. Smith, Edward Vere, afterwards the Earl of Oxford and a most exquisite poet; and John Ponet, afterwards Bishop of Winchester.

1544-1546.

Eden comes to Court, and holds a position in the Treasury, for about two years; which is his first appointment in the Civil Service.

1545. Oct.

The First edition of Thomas Geminus' important 'Epitome of *The Fabric of the Human Body*, by A. Vesalius,' is published in Latin in London, in folio size; illustrated with remarkable engravings, 'all drawn out, and graven in brasse, and so imprinted by my own labour.' The dedication to Henry VIII. is dated London, 4 Kal. Oct. [28th September] 1545.

Geminus, in his next edition of 1553, states that King Henry very much wished that this anatomical work should be widely published abroad: and that he himself had subsequently heard that it had been 'notably well

accepted, and hath doen muche good in Italye, Fraunce, Spaine, and Germaine, and other foren parties.'

1547. Eden is destined to the office of the Distillery; when the King dies: see *p.* xlv.

1547. Jan. 28. Edward VI. succeeds to the Crown.

1547. The Lord Protector, however, gives the Distillery to one, who held it down to, at least, so late as 1573.

1547.* Eden marries; and has by his wife twelve children in the next fourteen years: who all apparently grow up to manhood; else the argument and appeal then used by him in 1573, would seem to be faulty.

1548. Sept. Master William Cecil, æt. 28, is appointed Secretary to the Lord Protector Somerset.

1549. Oct. 10. In the political revolution, occasioned by the advent to power of the Earl of Warwick, afterwards the Duke of Northumberland—to whom Eden, in 1553, dedicated his *Treatyse of the newe India*—Master W. Cecil is confined to his house (Oct. 10); and in November is sent to the Tower; from whence he is set free on the 25th

Nov.

1550. Jan. 25. January following.

The First edition of Girolamo Cardano's work, *De Subtilitate*, is printed at Nuremberg in folio. It was written in eight months; but under constant correction for three years before it appeared. Eden thought very highly of it.

1550. May. The First edition, of the First Volume only, of *Navigazioni e Viaggi* [collected by J. B. Ramusio] is printed at Venice. It was probably this First impression; and not the Second edition of the same Volume printed in March 1554, that Eden made use of in his Compilation.

Sept. 5. Master W. Cecil is appointed one of the Secretaries of State and a Privy Councillor.

1551. July 3. The sweating sickness, which had begun on 15th April at Shrewsbury, begins in London; where 500 persons die in the first week. At this time, the first

English ship that ever went to Barbary, leaves Portsmouth; under the command of T. Windham (see *p.* xix).

Oct. 11. Sir W. Cecil is knighted.

1552. Spring. Eden writes thus, at *p.* 355, about the middle of 1555, 'And whereas as concernynge the knowlege of metals, I was once mynded to haue translated into Englyshe the hoole worke of Pyrotechnia, wherof I fynnyshed. xxii. chapiturs now more then three yeares sence, and lefte the copie therof in the handes of one of whome I coulde neuer get it ageyne (omyttinge to speake of other ingratitude) I was therby discouraged to procede any further in that worke.' From this, it is evident that, by this time, Eden was a good Italian scholar. His translation of the first three chapters will be found at *p.* 356-368.

1552. About this date, Eden was, I believe, acting as private secretary to Sir W. Cecil. I have, however, lost the reference to the authority for this.

1552. April 22. Sir W. Cecil is made Chancellor of the Order of the Garter.

May 2 or 9. The second English voyage sets out for Barbary, *p.* xix.

June 3. Girolamo Cardano, on his way from Italy, reaches London; and after a rest of three days, travels in twenty-three days to Edinburgh: where he somewhat successfully prescribes for Cardinal Beaton. After a stay of seventy-five days there; he leaves Edinburgh on

Sept. 12. 12th September, on his return towards Italy.

See further respecting this famous Italian magician or physician—this considerable genius—this prolific author (he wrote in all 222 treatises, large and small)—this most impudent liar and profligate liver, in Professor Morley's *Life of Jerome Cardan*, 1856. It is quite possible that Eden saw Cardano—whose works, he quotes as of the highest authority—while he was staying in London.

1552. July 20. Geminus, in the Dedication prefixed to the Second edition of his "Epitome of Vesalius' *Anatomy &c.*"

(with the explanations to the plates, greatly augmented and in *English*), which is dated "At Windfore, the. xx. July 1552," (the engraved title is, however, dated 1553) goes on to state, after what we have already quoted above, under 1545, as follows:—'And now of late by the information of sundrye frendes and also of diuerse surgeons, I haue ben borne in hande, that the same worke beeyng fet forth in the English tounge might greatly auaille to ye knowledge of the vnlatined Surgeons, and by meane of them, should bee muche more beneficiall, then in latin it is to an infinite nombre of people in thys your Maiesties Royalle of Englande. Wherefore myndyng to rendre vnto this Countrey, in which by your graces protection and bounteous liberalitie I liue, as muche fruite as my poore industrie and continuall trauaile may possibly bee hable to yelde, I haue earnestly applied my selfe to make common and familiar to all Englishe people that which hath ben found profitable among fo many foren nacions. Whereunto forasmuch as I am not my selfe fo perfect and experte in the Englishe tonge that I dare warraunt or trust myne owne dooynges, I haue vfed the studious peines of Nicholas Vdall [the author of *Roister Doister*, our earliest known English comedy] and certain other learned men whose exercife in translacons and pennyng in this tounge hath ben (as I vnderstande) not without some fruite to the common weale.' Eden edited the next edition in 1559.

1552. Dec. 2. The printing of the first edition of Francisco Lopez de Gomara's *Istoria de las Indias y conquista de Mexico*, is finished at Saragossa.

1553. May 9. The date of the Ordinances &c. for the English fleet going for the discovery of Cathay by the North-East; given by Selastian Cabot, as 'Gouernour of the mysterie and companie of the Marchants aduenturers for the discouerie of Regions, Dominions, Ilands, and places vnknown; who were not, however, incorporated by royal charter, until 6th February 1555 (1 and 2 Philip and Mary). For these Ordinances, see Hakluyt's *Voyages, &c.*, *p.* 259, *ed.* 1589.

1553. May 20. The first English fleet, consisting of the *Bona Esperansa*, 120 tons, Captain Sir Hugh Willoughby, General of the whole fleet; the *Edward Bonaventure*, 160 tons, Captain Richard Chancellor, Pilot Major, with Stephen Burrough (or as Eden calls him at *p.* xli. *col.* 2, Steuen a Burrough), for Master; and the *Bona Confidentia*, 90 tons, Cornelius Deerforth, Master: leave Ratcliff on their voyage, and get as far as Deptford.

May 21. About 2 P.M. they leave Deptford. Then occurred the scene thus vividly described to us by Clement Adams: of which it is almost certain that Eden was an eye-witness.

'The greater shippes were towed downe with boates, and oares, and the mariners being all apparelled in watchet or skie coloured clothe, rowed a maine, and made way with diligence. And being come neere to Greenwich (where the Court then laye) presently vpon the newes thereof the Courtiers came running out, and the common people flockt together, standing very thicke vpon the shoare: the priue Counsell, they lookt out at the windowes of the Court, and the rest ranne vp to the toppes of the towers: the shippes hereupon discharge the Ordinance, and floote off their pieces after the maner of warre, and of the sea, infomuch that the tops of the hilles sounded therewith, the valleys, and the waters gaue an Echo, and the mariners they shouted in such sort, that the skie rang againe with the noyse thereof. One stoode in the poepe of the shippe, and by this gesture biddes farewell to his friends in the best manner he coulde. Another walkes vpon the hatches, another climbs the shrow[d]es, another standes vpon the maine yarde, and another in the toppe of the shippe. To bee short, it was a very triumphe (after a fort) in all respects to the beholders. But (alas) the good King Edwarde (in respect of whome principally all this was prepared) hee only by reason of his sicknesse was absent from this shewe, and not long after the departure of these shippes, the lamentable and most forowfull accident of his death followed.'—Hakluyt, *Voyages*, *p.* 282, *Ed.* 1589.

May This voyage seems to have aroused a general interest in cosmography. People began to think of the great unknown world outside and beyond England. Some one printed a tract or single sheet, entitled *Of the new found lands*, which Eden derides at *p.* 5. This publication stirred him up to a rapid translation of a part of the Fifth book of Munster's colossal *Cosmography*.

June.* Thus appeared Richard Eden's first literary work, (see title at *p.* 3), printed by Edward Sutton. He dedicates it to John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland, the then all-powerful Protector. The Dedication is important in relation to the controverted life of Sebastian Cabot. It is to be noticed that in it Eden *boasts* of having already read the *Decades*. To this month and year is therefore also to be assigned the composition of his address 'To the Reader' at *pp.* 7-11; in which he so manfully strives to uproot the general ignorance and timidity of his time.

1553. July 6. *Marj's reign commences.*

1553. Aug. 12. The first English voyage to Guinea leaves Portsmouth, see *p.* 375.

Aug. 20. The printing of the second edition of Lopez de Gómara's *Historia* is finished at Medina del Campo.

Aug. 22. John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland (to whom, Eden had dedicated, within less than three months before, his first work), is beheaded at the Tower; with Sir T. Gates, and Sir T. Palmer.

1554. Summer.* Richard Chancellor's ship, the *Edward Bonaventure*, returns to England; but is robbed on the way home, by some Flemings. The crews of the other two ships, under Sir Hugh Willoughby, to the number of seventy

persons, are frozen to death; while wintering at Arzina fiord, for 'want of experience to have made caues or stoues.' It appears from a will found in one of the ships, that Sir Hugh Willoughby and most of his company, were alive in January 1554.

1554. July 25. Queen Mary is married to Philip, Prince of Spain, at Winchester. 'Shortly after King *Philip* and Queene *Mary* remooued from Winchester to Basing, [and] from

Aug. 5. thence to Windsor, where, on the fifth of August, the King was staled in the noble order of the garter, where he kept a great feast, and at that time the Earle of Sussex was made knight of the garter.'—*Stow, p.* 1057, *Ed.* 1600.

Aug. 17. 'The King and Queene remooued to Richmond, from thence by water to Southwarke, accompanied with the noble men and ladies, the King in one barge, the Queen in another, and landed at the Bishop of Winchester's staires neere to S. Maries Oueries church, and so passed through that place and park into Suffolke place, where they rested that night.'—*Stow, idem.*

Aug. 18. 'And the next day, being the 18 of August, they rode through Southwarke ouer the bridge, and so through London, where they were with great prouision received of the citizens, pageants in places accustomed, the crosse in Cheape new gilt, &c., and passing through *Paules* churchyard, a man came sliding, as it were slyng upon a rope, from *Paules* steeple down to the deans wall.'—*Stow, idem.*

As Eden tells us, at *p.* 46, intoxicated by the shows, the triumphs, and universal acclamations that greeted the gorgeous royal procession through the City, he was led first to debate within himself as to whether he could by any original publication perpetuate to future Ages, not so much the glorious reception, as its worthiness and significance: but thinking of nothing sufficiently worthy, he was led to consider the marvellous discoveries, conquests, and empire of the Spaniards; all of which bade fair to become (should the royal pair have issue) the joint heritage of England. Hence his great Compilation is distinctly the result of the Marriage Procession of this day.

Within the following twelve months (working incessantly, and for nothing), Eden translated or wrote all that is *reprinted* in this volume, between *pp.* 43 and 398. Inasmuch as the work was one of great bulk (though, at the time, of national importance), several printers combined together for its risk of its publication: while the printing of it was wholly intrusted to William Powell. There are copies extant with the colophons of Robert Toy, Richard Jugge, Edward Sutton, and also, as Herbert states at *p.* 738, William Seres, and perhaps others. These are the "parteners" to whom Eden refers at *p.* 330.—See 1542 above.

Leonhardus Gorecius, a Polish knight, writes a congratulatory Latin Oration to the people and nobles of England on the royal marriage, which was printed by William Powell, who was also, at the same time, busily engaged on Eden's Compilation. Eden refers to this Oration at *p.* 47.

1554. Oct. 2. 'There came to the Tower in twenty carts made for the show, accompanied with certain Spaniards of the King's Guard, ninety-seven little chests, of a yard long and four inches broad, of silver, which will make by estimation fifty thousand pounde' [equivalent to £750,000 of the present day]: *Harl. MS.* 194 [which is a 'Pocket Diary of a resident in the Tower between July 1553 and October 1554'] reprinted by the Camden Society under the title of *The Chronicle of Queen Jane*, 1850. John Foxe, in his *Actes and Monumentes, &c.*, *Ed.* 1563, states that the silver was 'matted about with mats, and mayled in little handles, about two feet long and almost half a foot thick, and in euery cart fixe of those bundles.' I presume this is what Eden refers to at *p.* 56, as the 18,000 pounds 'weyght of syluer which was coyned to the Kynges vse in the towre of London where neuer fo much hath byn seene at once as fuche as haue byn owlde officers in the mynte doo affirme.' It was brought there from Peru and Rio de la Plata, by the celebrated Spanish historian Augustin de Zarate; whose *Historia del descubrimiento y conquista del Peru* was published at Antwerp in the next year.

It was probably after the formation of this acquaintanceship with Zarate, and while his great Collection, here reprinted, (itself an honour to the Spanish nation) was in the press; that by the favour of certain Spanish nobles, Eden obtained a place in the English Treasury of the Prince of Spain.

1554. Oct. 11. The second expedition to Guinea leaves the River Thames, see *p.* 379.

Oct. 12. The third edition of Gómara's *Historia* is finished at Saragossa.

1554. Nov. 28. The Council of State announce by letter, at Dr. Chedsey's sermon at Paul's Cross, that the Queen is *encinte*.

1554. Nov. 11. } Parliament sits at Westminster.

1555. Jan. 16. } Among other Acts passed by it, was the following short one, now known as 1 & 2 Philip and Mary, c. 6—entitled *An Acte for renueng of three Estatutes made for the punishment of Heresies*:—"For th[e]xchuing and avoiding of Errors and Heresies which of late haue ryfen growen and much encreased within this Realme, for that th[e]ordinaries haue wanted auctoritee to procede agaynste thos that were infected therwith: BE IT therefore ordeined and enacted by th[e]auctorite of this prefente Parliament, That the Statute made in the fifthe yere of the Reigne of King Richarde the Seconde, concerning th[e]arresting and apprehencion of erroneous and hereticall Preachers, And one other Statute made in the seconde yere of the Reigne of King Henrye the Fourthe concerning the repressing of Heresies and punishment of Heretikes, And also one other Estatute made in the seconde yere of the Reigne of King Henrye the Fisfthe, concerning the suppression of Heresie and Lollardye, and euery Article, Branche and Sentence contained in the same three feuerall Actes and every of them, shall from the xxth day of Ianuarye next coming [1555] be revived and be in full force strengthe and effecte to all Intentes construccions and purposes for euer."—*Statutes of the Realm*, iv. 244, *ed.* 1819.

1555. Jan. 1. The date of John Elder's letter describing the marriage of the King and Queen in the previous July; which letter was immediately printed.

Jan. 20. The burning of Protestants becomes lawful on and after this day, by the above Act of Parliament.

Feb. 4. John Rogers, the first of the Marian martyrs, is burnt at Smithfield.

Feb. 6. The Moscovy Company is incorporated by Royal Charter: having for its Executive; Sebastian Cabot, Governor; four Consuls; and twenty-four Assistants.

Eden must have watched the proceedings of this Company with the deepest interest. Indeed, it is probable that the entire section, *Of Moscovie and Cathay* (which has nothing whatever to do with the title-page or original plan of his Compilation; at which he must have been working hard, all through this winter) was suggested by the return of Richard Chancellor and the subsequent Incorporation of this Company; and put forth by him, as a goodwill offering towards their success and information.

1555. Feb. 8. Laurence Saunders is burnt at Coventry; and so the legalized religious massacre goes on.

- May 21. Is the latest actual date in Eden's Compilation, and therefore in the three Works here reprinted. It will be found towards the bottom of p. 382. On this day the English ships, returning on their way home from Guinea, were in 39° 30' N. At their rate of progress they could hardly have reached England before the end of July.
- July.*
Aug.* Therefore Section VII. of Eden's Compilation was written and printed in August; and, at the earliest, his newly printed Compilation and the printing of the entire book could hardly have been finished before September.
- Sept.* Immediately after which; Thomas Watson, Bishop of Lincoln,—the fellow-student of Roger Ascham; by whom his Latin play of *Absalom* [if the MS. is now at Wilton House] is exceedingly praised in his *Schoolmaster*, 1570—accuses Eden before Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, for heresy; of which his newly printed Compilation would afford ample evidence.
- Oct. 24. Bishop Gardiner, however, dies; and Eden somehow escapes punishment, with simply the loss of his office: and then seems, for the next three years to be living in retirement; his family steadily increasing all the while.
1556. Jan. 10. The printing of Martin Cortes' *Breve compendio de la sphaera y de la arte de nauegar* is finished at Seville.
- Nov. 7. Richard Chancellor, in the wreck of his ship the *Philipp and Mary* in Pettislego Bay, Scotland, is drowned—while endeavouring in a boat to save the Russian Ambassador's life; in accomplishing which, he loses his own.
1557. Feb. 27–28. Eden probably witnessed the splendid reception by the Moscovy Company, of Osep Gregorevitch Napea, the first Russian Ambassador, on his arrival in London, for the *procès verbal* of which, see Hakluyt, *Voyages, &c.*, p. 321, *Ed.* 1589. From the omission in this notarial document of all allusion to Sebastian Cabot; it is evident that he was but recently dead. For Eden's account of his death—the only one extant—see p. xlvi., col. 2. It probably occurred about this date: for when Eden, about the Summer of 1555, wrote the heading at p. 283, 'that woorthy owlde man Sebastian Cabote, yet liuyng in Englande,' was still 'Gouernour of the coompany of the marchantes of Cathay.'
1558. Nov. 17. Elizabeth succeeds to the throne.
- We now come to the two earliest printed notices of Eden. His reputation had travelled over the Continent to the English Protestant exiles in Switzerland; and two of them thus vaguely and incorrectly refer to his literary labours, but give him the wrong Christian name.
1558. Lawrence Humphrey (who died Dean of Winchester, on 1 Feb. 1590), in his three books of *Interpretatio linguarum*, the Dedication of which is dated, Basilæ, Feb. 3, 1559, thus refers to our Editor-Authour, at p. 520. 'Petrum quoque Martyrem Angliensem Joannes Eden, Cosmographus et Alchumista uertit *De insulis nuper inuentis*.'
1558. Bp. Bale, at p. 110 of his Supplement (written in 1558), to his *Scriptorium illustrium, &c.* the printing of which was finished in Feb. 1559, is a little more explicit; but still follows Humphrey closely. "Johannes Eden, Cosmographus et alchumista ut à quibusdam [i.e. L. Humphrey] uarratur, ingeniosus ac peritissimus, inter alia scripsit *De nauigationibus Portugalensium*, Lib. 1. [This is evidently Eden's first publication, *Of the newe India.*] Transtulit Petrum Martyrem Angliensem. *De insulis nuper inuentis*. Lib. 1. [or rather the *Decades*]. Aliaque fecit multa. Clariut anno Domini. 1556."
1559. Sept. The printing of the Third edition of Geminus' *Anatomy, &c.*, 'enlarged, amplified, and so corrected and diligently perused, that it maye seeme a newe worke, and rather an other than it was before,' is finished. Richard Eden is, this time, the English reviser; and the fresh Dedication to the new Queen is evidently written by him for Geminus, as its smooth connected style abundantly demonstrates.
1561. Eden's next literary work seems to have been the translation (and probably also, in part, the devising of the numerous, and, for that time, difficult woodcuts of

this work of Martin Cortes' *Arte de Naviagar*, at the expense of certain members of the Moscovy Company: towards which, Eden appears, at this time, to have stood in the same relation as Hakluyt did, fifty years later, to our East India Company. This work is remarkable not only for the number of the wood engravings (some of them moveable) of different mathematical instruments; but also for a small outline map of *The Newe Worlde*, or more properly of the North Atlantic basin. This is probably the earliest printed map of America ever produced in England: and is evidently copied from the original in Cortes' *Compendio*.

To this translation, Eden prefixed the following excellent Preface: in respect to which, it is significant to notice that Sebastian Cabot's name is omitted from the inscription.

To the ryght worshipfull syr VVyllyam Garrerd Knyght, and Maister Thomas Lodge, Aldermen of the Citie of London, and Gouernours of the honorable felowshyp or societie, aswell of certeine of the Nobilitie, as of Marchauntes aduenturers, for the discovery of Landes, Territories, Ilandes, and Seignories vnknownen, and not before their first aduenture or enterpryse by Seas or Nauigations commonly frequented:

And to the right worshipfull the Consulles, Assistentes, and communitie of the same societie, Richarde Eden wyffsteth health and prosperitie.



That foener he was (ryght honorable and worshipfull) that fyrste belened that the frame and coaptacion of the bodye of man, with the functions, offices, and duties of the partes and members of the fame, knytte together in a certen vnitie to a common ministration, dyd represent a lyuely Image and similitude of a perfecte common wealth: I thinke that he was a man of no vulgare indgement or abiecte mynde, but rather of singuler wysdome and prudence in the contemplacion of Diuine and humane thynges. For he sawe, that as in the small natie feede of all growyng or luyng thynges, is conteyned the fourme that bryngeth them to theyr perfection: so in certeyne small and obscure members of the common wealth, consisteth no small increafe to the perfection of the whole. He sawe lykewyse that herein, as in the bodye of man representyng the partes and members of the worlde (as I haue sayde) are dyuers partes of dyuers and fundrye actions and motions, greatly dyfferyng in fourme, number, and quantitie, yet all the fame to be so knytte together, and so to consent in one vniformitie to the common profyte of the whole, that a greater concorde and harmonye can not be imagined, then is proportioned by the frendly vnitie of dyuers and contrarye. He sawe lykewyse in the fame, such a mutuall compassion of parte to parte, and member to member, by one common sence existent in them all, that no one part or member can feele eyther ioye or payne, but that in maner all the other are parttakers therof more or lesse, yf they be lyuely members, and not wythered or otherwyse vnsefate by reason of dead fleshe, which onely by cuttyng and burning ought to be deuyded from the founde and whole. But as in man (whom Plato calleth the lesse world) the vigour and agilitie of the immortall soule and mynde, neuer ceaffeth from continuall mouyng, but is euer exercysed in excogitacions and inuentions of great thynges (herein refemblyng God, whose caracte it beareth) by prouidence foreseeing, and by intelligence vnderstandyng and denyfnyng what is to be done, and what to be eschewed, doth immediatly moue and rayse vp the faculties, powres, and members of the body to execute the fame: Euen so in the greater worlde, the prouidence of God, and vniuersall counfayle and consent of men, hath elected and appoynted certen principall men, to beare lyke rule and auctoritie in the bodye of the common wealth, as hath the intellectuie soule in the members of our bodye to moue and commaunde the fame. To Princes therefore counfaylours, rulers, gouernours and magistrates, as to the most intellectuie and sensitiue partes of the societie of men, hath God and nature genen preeminence and gouernance of the common wealth, that by theyr prouidence, wysdome, and ayde, it may vniuersally florysh, not onely by iuste administration of good lawes, with due correction of malefactours, but also by lyberall rewardyng of suche as haue well deserued: and especially by maintenaunce of suche artes and sciences, as the common wealth can not well be without. And to draw nearer to the applyinge of my similitude: I saye, that whatfoener vertue, whatfoener arte, or the ingenious industry of men hath to this day inuented, all the fame is to be imputed to the beneuolence and liberalitie

of fuche as haue honourablye maintayned and freelye rewarded the tranayles, paynes, and charges of them that haue spent their lyues, goodes, and wyttes (as many haue done) in the inuentions of necessarye and profytable artes and sciences. For euen as holosome and temperate ayre with feasonable wether and favorable influence of the heauens and planettes, caufeth fruitefulness on the earth, and contrarywyfe, barrenesse by the contrarye: Euen fo the fauour of Princes and Magistrates norysheth, angmenteth, and amplyfyeth all artes and sciences by liberalitie, and extynguysheth the same by miserable couetousnes and parcimonie. And although in some men of rare and noble nature, the desyre of honour and fame onely for vertues sake, and study toward their cuntrye and common wealth, hath moued them in maner to their owne vndoing through their greate losse and hynderaunce, to sette forth and inuent diuers thynges for the commoditie of the common wealth and other, rather then for their owne: yet vndoubtedly, who so wel considereth and indifferently wayeth that I haue sayde, shal synde and see by daylye experience, that in maner onely munificence, liberalitie, and rewarde, or the hope thereof, geueth spurres to them that attempte great and vertuous enterpryses, as I coulde more largely proue by fo many testimonies of Hystories, both holy and prophane, that the rehearfall therof shoulde be but tedious and not greatlye necessarye for my purpose, especially wrytyng vnto your honoures and worshypes, of whose munificence and liberalitie, I haue had great experience, bothe in my selfe and others, who by your ayde and mainteynaunce haue attempted and performed many goodly inuentions, viages, nauigations and discoeries of landes and Seas heretofore vnknown. Wherein, what great charges you haue susteyned, and howe lyberall and constant you haue ben in furtheryng the fame, doth well declare that hyther to you are rather losers than gayners therby. The whiche thyng doubtelesse is the more to your commendation, in that it maye hereby appeare that you haue attempted the same rather for knowledge and vertues sake, then for couetousnes of gaynes: as is furthermore well known by your fyrste viages of discoerye attempted to Cathaye by the Northeast seas, vpon certen losse and detriment, for vncerteyne hope eyther of gaynes, or of any such way to be founde, otherwyse then by certen lykely coniectures: not much vnlyke to the shynyng flowres of Marchasites, which outwardly apperyng in minerall mountaynes, are signes and token wherby is coniectured what metal is conteyned therein, and whether the fame is to be folowed or not. And although it sometyme fo chaunce that such signes are fayleable, shewyng more in appearaunce then they conteyne in substance: yet are not such signes tokens, or shewes to be contemned, but rather earnestly to be folowed, forasmuch as it hath ben often proued and founde by experience, that by folowyng the fame, haue ben founde great and riche mynes of metalles: as *Georgius Agricola* in his booke *De rebus metallicis*, doth largely declare and proue by manye examples. But to wryte at large what greates thynges haue proceeded of small and obscure begynnings, and in maner mere coniectures: it woulde fo farre exceede the measure of an Epistle or Preface, that it woulde rather increafe to the inst quantitie of a booke. For in maner all the late discoeries both of the Spanyardes and Portugales, had their begynnyng of such small coniectures, with vncerteyne hope (as it were *preter spem sub spe*) vntyll God and good bappe, by the constant trauallye and valiaunt mynde of such as fyrst attempted the fame, gaue them to enioye that they hoped for. But whatfoeuer they haue obeyned and do enioy, this may I boldly say in your behalf (right honorable and worshipfull) that there hath not lacked in you eyther the lyke or greater promptnesse of mynde, forwardnes in attemptyng, magnificence in expences, and liberrall in rewardes. For besyde the great charges and losses that you haue ben at otherwyse, what should I speake of the great gyftes that you haue sente to the Emperour of Russia? What of your last chargeable vyage of discoerye among the innumerable Rockes, Ilandes, and moueable mountaynes of Ice in the frozen sea, by innumerable landes and Ilandes vnknown to the Antiques, euen vnder and farre within and beyonde the circle Artike, where they thought that no lyuyng creature coulde drawe breath or liue for extreme colde: wheras neuerthelesse the fame hath ben by you discovered euen vnto the myghty ryuer of Ob, that falleth into the Scithian Ocean, or *Oceanus Hyperboreus*, not farr from the mountaynes called *Hyperborei*, so named because they are situate almost vnder the North pole, and thought therefore to be inaccessible. A vyage doubtelesse of such difficultie and in maner impossibilitie, that confyderyng the infinite daungions therof (as I haue learned by th[e] information of Stenen a Burrough, that was then the chiefe

Pilote of the fame vyage) it may seme impossible that they shoulde euer haue escaped, excepte the myghty hande of God, by the experte skylfulness of fo excellent a Pilot, had delyuered them from those daungers. And although in dede (as religion byndeth vs) it is conuenient in all thynges to geue all honour, glorye and thankes to God, yet are we not thereby refrayned to be thankfull to such men, as by their arte, ingenioufnes, trauallye, and diligence, haue deserued both iuste commendation and large rewarde. And therefore referring the rewarde to you (ryght honorable and worshipfull, to whom it apperteyneth) yf I shoulde not here geue hym at the leaste fuche commendation, as in my iudgement he hath well deserued, I myght seme both to defraude hym of his worthye desertes, and also to forgette the frendshyp and good wyll I beare hym, onely for his vertues and excellencie in his profession. For certeynly when I consider how indigent and destitute this Realm is of excellent and expert Pilottes, I can do no lesse of conscience, then in respect of your owne commoditie, yea rather for the commoditie of the Queenes Maiestie and the whole Realme, to exhort you and put you in remembraunce (although I may herein seme to put the spurres to a runnyng horse, as saith the Prouerbe) fo to regard hym and esteeme hym and his faythfull, true, and painefull seruice toward you, that he maye thereby be further encouraged, and not discouraged, eyther for lacke of maintenaunce, or other wyse by the iniurious assaultes of such his enemies, as onely his vertues and excellencie haue moued to beare hym displeasure, as enuye doth euer folowe vertue, as saith the Latine Prouerbe, *Virtuti comes inuidia*. And howe true a sentence this is, is well verified by the saying of a certayne Philosopher (whose name I do not remember) who hearynge one vaynely reioyce that he had no enemies, aunswered that that was a token he hadde done lyttle good: Meanyng thereby (as dayly experience proueth) that yf he had excelled in any vertue, he coulde not haue lacked some enemies. And hauyng here touched to speake of enuye, I remember that when I was a yonge scooler, I haue read in the Poet *Hesiodus* of two kyndes of enuye, whereof the one is called *Inuidia*, and the other *Aemulatio*, which is more tollerable then the fyrste, for that it is ioyned with some vertue, and enuyeth that anye shoulde excell hym in any excellent qualitie that he professeth. But forasmuch as this enuy of emulation procedeth of some singuler vertue of them that are fo maliced, they maye herein reioyce, that they shall euer haue a hundreth frendes for oneemie: yea and although they hadde none, yet is vertue a rewarde to it selfe, and to be embraced for it selfe onely, as the Philosophers affirme. What then shall we say to such, as forgettyng this rewarde of vertue, do not onely [not] fauour, but rather hynder the preferment and mayntenaunce of such experte men, more esteemyng certayne Fysher men that go a trawlyng for fyshe in Catches or mongers, and dradgies for Oysters about the sandes, betwene the South furlande and Wynterton nesse, and the sandes about Temmes mouth, then they do fuche excellent Pylotes as are able without any Rutter or Carde of Nauigation, not only to attempte longe and farre viages, but also to discouer vnknown landes and Ilandes, as haue doone of late yeares many excellent men, to the great honour and enrychyng of their Prynce and cuntrye. But as touching Stenen a Burrough, the chiefe Pylote of your viages of discoerye, it may hereby well appeare yat he is neyther malicious nor enuious of his arte and science, in that he desireth ye fame for the common profite to be commen to al men: And for the same intent was the fyrst that moued certen worshipfull of your company, as Syr William Garrer, Maister William Mericke, Maister Blafe Sanders, and Maister Edwarde Castlen, to haue this worke translated into the English tongue. Who of their own good nature fauouryng al vertuous studies and the professours of the fame, did sone incline to his honest request herein: and therewith not only desired me, but also with liberrall rewarde entertained me, to take in hande the translation. Whiche being nowe finished as well as my poore learyng may perourme, I desyre your honours and worshypes, to accepte in as good parte as I haue ment herein to gratifie you, and doe fuche seruice as my abillitie may suffice. Nowe therefore this worke of the art of Nauigation, beyng publyshed in our vulgar tongue, you may be assured to haue more store of skylful Pilottes. Pilottes (I saie) not Pirottes, Rulers, not Rouers, but fuche as by their honest behaouour and conditions ioyned with arte and experience, may doe you honest and true seruice: whiche is not to be looked for of fuche as beyng destitute as well of the feare of God as of all moral vertues, superbounde in all notorious vyces, accomptyng desperatnesse for boldnesse, rashnesse for hardinesse, impudencie for stoutnesse, and crueltie for manhod. What other

thyng (I faye) is to bee looked for of fuche, then of fuche trees fuch fruites, *Et mali corui malum ouum*. But for as muche as thefe haue no place appointed them in the bodie of our common wealth, whiche we haue here before compared to the members of the bodie of man: therefore are they no otherwyfe to be eftemed then as excrementes of the bodye, to whom nature hath appointed no place in the fame, but laboureth continuallye to caft them forth dyuers wayes, leaſte by their filthynesse they ſhould infecte the other members, euen as the pompe of the hyppye if it be not auoyded, is noyous to the ſhippe and all that are therein. But the wyfe and honeſt Pylot, fyrſt haunyng before his eyes the feare of God, and puttyng his chief truſt in hym, ſhall ſecondarely truſt to his arte and ſcience, without any fuche vayne obſeruatiōs as the ſuperſtitious Horoſcopers (Aſtrologiers I meane, and not Aſtronomers) are accuſtomed to vſe in the elections of houres, tymes, and dayes, by conſtellations and aſpectes of the Starres and Planetes, as many fonde menne haue doone, thynkyng thereby to haue eſcaped fuche daungers, as they haue thereby the rather fallen into, through the contempte of arte and ſcience by ſolyſhe confidence in ſuperſtitious Aſtologie: which for the vanitie and vncertaintie thereof, the ryght worſhyppfull and of ſingular learnyng in all ſciences, Syr Thomas Smyth, in my tyme the floure of the vniuerſitie of Cambridge, and ſometyme my Tutor, was accuſtomed to call *Ingenioſiſſimam artem mentiendi*. (That is) the moſte ingenious arte of lyinge. Omitting therefore the ſuperſtitious and phantaſticall obſeruatiōs of the iudicials of Aſtologie, it ſhalbe better and more neceſſary for all Pylotes that deſyre to excelle in their profeſſion, to learne and obſerue the principles of thys booke, whereby they may haue fuche knowledge of the Sphere, as may inſtructe them the makyng and vſe of dyuers goodly Aſtronomicall instrumentes perteynyng to the arte of Nauigation, by knowledge of the mouynges of the Sunne and Moone in their Spheres, and the other Planetes and fixe Starres: thereby to attayne to the true knowledge of houres, tymes and tydes, with the variation of the Compaſſe, and many other goodly naturall obſeruatiōs of weathers, tempeſtes, and calmes, by certain infaileable ſyngnes and tokens of the ſame, very neceſſary to be obſerued. And this by the true principles of Aſtronomie and not of Aſtologie. And this is the true Aſtronomie wherof the Diuine Philoſopher Plato hathe wrytten ſo diuine a ſentence, that I haue thoughte the ſame here worthy to be alleaged, that by the authoritie of ſo famous an author, we maye knowe what is true Aſtronomie, with the vſe and commoditie therof. Therefore in his booke intituled *Timeus vel De Natura*, theſe are his wordes. *Rerum autem optimarum cognitionem, nobis oculi attulerunt. Nam hæc quæ de mundo diſputantur, nunquam inuenta fuiſſent, ſi neque ſydera, neque Sol, neque Cælum ſuſcipi potuiſſet. Cognitione vero diei ac noctis, ab oculis orta, ſecit ut diſpenſione quadam, menſum annorumque ambitus mēdiremur, tempus cognosceremus, ac vniuerſe naturæ ordinem ſcrutaremur. Quibus ex rebus, philoſophiam adepti ſumus.* That is to faye. Our eyes haue brought vnto vs the knowledge of moſte excellent thynges. For what ſo euer is diſputed of the worlde, had neuer bene inuented, yf neither the Starres, neither the Sunne, neither heauen, coulde haue bene ſeene. For the knowledge of the daye and nyght, takyng beginning at ye eyes, cauſed vs as it were by certain limites and boundes to meafure the circuite of monethes and yeares, whereby we came to the knowledge of tymes and the order of vniuerſall nature. And hereby alſo we obteyned the knowledge of Philoſophie, &c. And thus by the authoritie of Diuine Plato (whome for hys excellencie Cicero called *Deum Philoſophorum* (that is) the God of Philoſophers) we maye vnderſtande that the true Aſtronomie, is the perfecte knowledge of the miraculous mouynges of ye Planetes, Starres, and heauens (and eſpecially of the Sunne and Moone) whereby is cauſed the varietie of times and dyuerſitie of all naturall thynges, by naturall cauſes: as by the qualities of Elementes, as hoate, colde, moyſte and drye, whyche are augmented or dymyniſhed by the more or leſſe influence of theſe twoo Luminaries, as they comme nearer vnto vs at ſome tymes, or depart further from vs at other tymes, with diuers motions in diuers climates whiche cauſeth not onely varietie of tymes in ſundry climates, but alſo the varietie of diuers complexions, formes, and diſpoſitiōs of all creatures vnder the face of heauen, none other accidental contyngent, voluntarie or violent cauſe to the contrarie notwithſtandinge. And this is it that Plato meaneth by thoſe wordes. *Ut tempus cognosceremus ac vniuerſe naturæ ordinem, &c.* That is, to knowe the tymes and vniuerſall order of nature. And doubtleſſe, who ſo well conſidereth the marueylous effectes that are cauſed, eſpecially by the variable mouyng of the Sunne

in the Zodiac, muſt needes acknowledge it to be the chiefe instrument and meane that God vſeth in the generation, perſeruatiō, and alteration of all creatures that are conteyned in the worlde of generation and corruption. And for this conſideration, certain of the auncient Philoſophers called it the ſoule of the worlde: Other the eye, and other alſo the heart of the worlde. Plato alſo affirmeth that the ſoule of the worlde is in the Sunne: And that all other liuyng thynges, receyue lyfe from hence. And hereof commeth the ſayinge of the Philoſopher, *Sol et homo generant hominem*: (that is) the Sunne and man, begette man. And therefore (as wryteth *Marcilius Ficinus*) of all Idolaters they are moſt tollerable that honour the Sunne for God. The whiche although it bee not, yet vndoubtedlye are his effectes ſo greate and wonderful in this inferiour worlde, that it may ſeme in maner to be Gods Viceregent, Lieſtenant and Viceroy in all the workes of nature, excepte where and when it pleaſeth hym in any thyng myraculouſlye, otherwyfe then by the common order and courſe of nature, to commaunde the contrarie.

And yf it may not be tedious vnto you (ryght honorable and worſhyppfull) it ſhalbe a pleaſure vnto me, for the better declaracion hereof, to make a brieſe diſcourſe of the marueylous and ſtraunge effectes that are cauſed by the Sunne: whiche perhappes fewe haue done, otherwyfe then diſperſedlye here and there, as occaſion hath ſerued. Fyrſt therefore let vs conſider what it hath done ouer the Equinoctiall line, and vnder both the poles at one inſtant, yet diuerſely and contrarilye the one to the other. For ſo hath the infinite wyſedome of the greate God of nature, the ſupreme Architecture of the vniuerſall worlde, diſpoſed all thynges in ſuch perfecte order, that to them that are vnder the Equinoctiall, and haue their Horizon paſſyng by the two Poles, the daye is of xii. houres and the nyght as much, and their yeare alſo is deuyded into xii. monethes: But they that dwell iuſt and perpendicularlye vnder our pole, and that haue their Horizon paſſyng ouer the ſayde line, haue the daye of fixye monethes. That is to faye: begynnyng from the tenth daye of Marche, when the Sunne commeth ouer the ſayde Horizon, whyle it returne to paſſe vnder the ſame at the tenth of September. And contrarywyfe one nyght of fixye monethes haue th[e] inhabitants vnder the Pole Antartyke: whoſe yeare (that is to faye, all the courſe that the Sunne maketh by the. xii. ſignes of the Zodiac) is accompliſhed in one daye and one nyght. A thyng doubtleſſe moſte wonderful and marueylous. Lykewyfe, when we haue Sommer, they that are vnder our Pole haue the daye of fixye monethes, and they of the oppoſite or contrary Pole, haue their nyght of the ſame length. Agayne, when it is wynter with vs, then vnder our Pole is the nyght of the ſayde fixye monethes: and vnder the oppoſite Pole, is the day of the ſame length. So that as it were courſe by courſe, when we haue the night, they haue the day: And contrarywyfe, when we haue the day, they haue the night. The which although it be ſo longe and of ſo great ſpace of tyme, yet is it not continuallye obſcured with darkeneſſe. For the Sunne maketh his courſe in ſuch order, that th[e] inhabitants of that parte, lyue not duryng that tyme altogether in darkeneſſes, as Moles lyue vnder the grounde, but as other creatures that lyue vpon the globe and face of the earth, they haue fuche lyght as maye ſuffice to ſuſtayne and mayntayne their lyfe. For the bodye of the Sunne declineth no more eyther beneath the Equinoctiall line, eyther aboue the ſame line (which is the Horizon to both the Poles) than. 23. degrees: That is to faye, no lower or hygher then the Tropikes, whiche are no more then 23. degrees or there about from the ſayde Equinoctiall that is their Horizon, as is aforeſayde. And yet in theſe 23. degrees he maketh not his courſe by the oppoſite Diameter, but goeth continuallye rounde about in circuite: ſo that his beames reuerberatyng heauen, repreſente fuche a maner of lyght, as we haue in Sommer two houres before the Sunne ryſe. And this example which we haue taken of the diuerſitie of the Horizons of the Equinoctiall and vnder the two Poles, is to demonſtrate the marueylous effectes that the Sunne maketh departyng ffrom the. xii. houres of the Equinoctiall (that is to fay, from Aries to Libra) and commyng by llytle and llytle, illuminatyng the globe of the earth, and ſo reducyng the yere of. xii. monethes, into one onely day and one nyght, as is ſayde before. Vnder the infinite varietie of the which courſe, ſometyme with long dayes and ſometyme with ſhorte, all the inhabitants of the worlde are fourmed and diſpoſed of fuche complexion and ſtrength of body, that euery of them are proportionate to the Climate aſſigned vnto them, be it hotte or colde: And may dwel and abyde there, as in their naturall place and temperament, not lamentyng or deſyryng to dwell elſewhere, ſo grete a loue reſteth in

them to their natue situation. But not to depart from the vyage whiche the Sunne maketh in one whole yeare, as sometye approchyng neare vnto vs, and sometye departyng from vs. I saye that at one felse same tyme in dyuers partes vpon the rounde globe of the earth, it causeth the Spryng, Sommer, Autumne, and Wynter. And neuerthelesse at the same instant and punct of time it maketh day and high noone in one place, and nyght and mydayght on the opposite part. The which varietie although it appeare incomprehensible to the slenderesse of our wyttes, yet beholdinge the same with the eyes of vnderstandyng, and therwith consideringe the vnestimable mouyng that the Sunne maketh continually, we shall fynde it to be true, hauyng respecte to the dyuers situations of the earth, as it is continuallye illuminate more or lesse by the Sunne. And this varietie is made with such a Harmonye and consonance, and such a lawe perpetuall and immutable, that yf any poynt or pricke therof shoulde fayle, it is to be doubted least the elementes should be confounded together, and returne to their fyrst Chaos.

And to haue sayde thus muche of the wonderfull effectes of the course of the Sunne, it maye suffice for an example to proue howe necessary a thyng it is, not onely for all Pilottes and Sea men to haue the knowledge hereof, but also for all other such as shall attempt great and farre viages in vnkownen landes and straunge countryes, as dyd of late master Jenkynton a worthy gentleman, sette forth by you and mainteyned at your charges, more lyke an Ambassatoure sente from anye Prince or Emperour, then from a companye of marchaunt men. Wherein, what commendation you haue deserued, to the encrease of your perpetuall fame and honour, I referre it to that I haue sayde before. And as touching master Ienkynson, what traunayles, paynes, and daungers he hath susteyned, and hardely escaped, and what diligence and arte he hath vsed in the searching of straunge countryes, and in the description of those his viages, it were but in vayne for me to wryte much vnto you, vnto whom the fame is better knowne then to me. And therefore to conclude, with rendring iust commendations both vnto you and him, I can say no more, but as Plato wryteth in his booke *De Legibus*. *Decens est eos cuius laudibus ornare, qui corporis vel animi viribus, res arduas preclarasque gesserunt, et legibus libenter paruerunt.* That is to say: It is decient to commend those Citifens that by their industry of bodye or mynde, haue done greate affayres, and haue willingly obeyed good lawes.

And thus estones desyryng your Honours and Worshyppes to accept in good parte whatsoever I haue faide of good wyll and affection towards you and your procedynges, and with your shielde of Iustice and auctoritie, to defende me agaynst the assaultes of such as are enemies to vertue, and captious of other mens doinges: I reffe at your commaundement to the vtermost of my powre, to do you what seruice I maye.

1562. March 1. John Taisnier, Doctor of Laws [b. at Ath, in Brabant], a writer in astrology and chiromancy, publishes at Cologne a tract, *De natura magnetis et ejus effectibus*. Graesse, in his *Trisor*, states that it is a gross plagiary from Pellegrine de Maricourt's *De Magnete*, printed in August 1558.

1562. The Civil Wars in France begin by the unpremeditated massacre of Huguenots at Vassy by the Duke of Guise.

1562. Eden's wife is apparently dead, and he himself residing in the house of a friend; when the following letter was written. It is manifestly addressed to Sir W. Cecil, who was brother-in-law to Sir John Cheke. Both

the writer and the Secretary of State were now about forty-two years of age. Apparently Eden was to receive £20 [= £150 now] as an earnest penny for a translation of Pliny into English.



HE only searcher of mens hartes the eternall god I take to wytnesse (right Honorable) that neuer the greefes of aduerse fortune (wherof I haue had my parte), dyd so muche prostrate my mynde and pearce my harte with sorowes, as the vnderstanding of your honours fauour and goodnesse toward me in your lately earnest trauaile in my behalfe (as I was informed by the Master of Savie) hath reioiced me and revived my Discouraged spirites, heretofore no lesse languysshed for lacke of suche a Patrone, then nowe encouraged by the fauoure of suche a *Mecenas*, as I haue iust cause to name your honoure, syth only the respecte of suche vertues as it hath pleased you to thinke commendable in me, hath moved your Honour not only in maner to seeme carefull for

me howe I maye hereafter with quietnesse spende my tyme in studie (as is my most desire) but also to be more earnest in folowing the same, then I might without presumption demaunde, and muche lesse without desertes dequire. As touching the which matter (right Honorable) as it was no parte of my diuise, but suche as the Master of Savoy had then in hande as I suppose no lesse to pleasure hym selfe and his frende then for xxli therof to be lotted to me for an earnest peny to begynne the booke (as he saith), Even so am I right forie that for so smaule a matter, and not so favorable a fute as I wolde haue wysshed, not only your Honour hath taken suche paynes, but that also suche contention is ryfen therof betwene the Master of Savoy and Master Baptyst of the prerie chamber, that by reason therof the pardon being steyed by your Honour, the younge gentleman his kynfman (as he hath informed me) is in Daungour of his lyfe. But vnder your honours fauour to speake playnely as I thinke, I suppose that here *Aliquid latet quod non apparet.* for as this fute for dyuers conyderations at the first dyd not greatly like me, yet perceauyng his earnestnesse therein for the safe-garde of his kinsmans life and gratifying his frendes, I no lesse willing therein to do hym pleasure also, was well contented to assent to his request, and to stande to his appoyntment, not suspecting his frendshippe, but rather commending his wysdome, so to doo for his frende as therewith not to forget hym selfe, *quia nihil sapit qui sibi non sapit.* But if at that tyme, I might so boldely haue presumed vpon your honours fauour, as by your earnestnesse in my behalfe I nowe perceaued I might haue doonne, I wolde haue moued your Honour of an honeste fute (for a lease to be had at the queenes handes) wherof I made hym priuie, and was longe sence so mynded to haue doonne, but that he Deterred me from the same, alleaging certain commissionars to haue the Doinges therof, and that therefore no suche thing might be had at her Maiesties handes: Albeit, I haue sythens hard of Dyvers that haue obteyned the like. Notwithstanding (as in my former letters I wrotte to your Honour) my meaning is, so to move your Honour hereof, as neyther to be an importunate fute; or otherwyse to thinke the same to be folowed, then shall seeme good vnto your Honour, vnto whos[e] will I submitte my selfe in all thynges: Only putting your Honour in remembrance of the commodious place and tyme that I nowe enioye for that purpose: for the contynuaunce wherof, I was a fute vnto your Honour for your letters vnto the gentleman my frende in whose house I yet remayne, Who also being one that fauoureth learninge, and my greate frende, and no lesse gladd to further so good a purpose, is well willing the rather to my vse, to departe frome a piece of his commoditie, in suche sorte as appeareth by the byll herein inclosed. Wherof, further to aduertise your Honour if you shall so thinke it convenient, he will hym selfe repayre vnto your Honour to giue you perfecte informacon of all thynges as touching the same.

And wheras the Master of Savoye tolde me that your Honour somewhat Doubted that the booke could not be translated into the Englysshe toonge, I assure you Honour that this I Dare saye without arrogancie, that to translate the variablc historie of Plinie into our toonge, I wolde be ashamed to borowe so muche of the Latine as he Dothe of the Greke, although the Latine toonge be accompted ryche, and the Englysshe indigent and barbarous, as it hath byn in tyme past, muche more then it nowe is, before it was enriched and amplyfyed by sundry bookes in manner of all artes translated out of Latine and other toonges into Englysshe. And it is not vnkownen vnto your Honour that the Latins receaving bothe the science of philosophie and phisike of the Grekes, Do fill for the most parte in all ther translacions vse the Greke names, in so muche that for the better vnderstondyng of them, one *Otto Brunfelsius*, a learned man, hath writen a large booke Intituled *Onomasticon medicinae*, where he hath these woordes. *Res ipsas, atque artium vocabula, scite, apposite, designateque efferre, atque ad Polycleti regulam (quod aiunt) exprimere, res est non minus difficilis quam gloriosa. Quo, nullum studii genus, maiori constat molestia. Id quod in causa esse reor, quod hodie tam pauci in ea palaestra sese exerceant etc.* Agen, it is not vnkownen vnto your Honour that ons all toonges were barbarous and needie, before the knowledge of thynges brought in plentie of woordes and names. Wherby it maye well appeare that men in the first age of the worlde, had a shorte language, consistinge of fewe woordes: which euer after increased by the knowlege and inuention of thynges. Exercise also maketh suche woordes familier, which at the first were Difficulte to be vnderstode. for children at the first (as saith Aristotle) caule all men fathers. But shortly after by exercise, caule them by there names. And I haue learned by experience, that the maryners vse manye

Englyſhe woordes which were as vnknown vnto me as the Chaldean toonge before I was conuerſant with them. It maye therefore ſuffice that the woordes and termes of artes and ſciences be knowne to the profeſſours therof, as partly by experience, and partly by the helpe of dictionaries deſcribing them. *Per proprium, genus, et differentiam*, as the logicians teache, and as *Georgius Agricola* vſeth to do in the Germanye toonge: which as well in that parte of philoſophie as in all other, was barbarous and indigent before it was by longe experience brought to perfection. But not to trouble your Honour any longer with this matter, one thing remaineth wherof I wolde gladlye haue certified your Honour at my laſt being at the courte at Greenwich, if I might haue had conuenient acceſſe vnto you. And this is. That perceauinge your Honour to take pleaſure in the wonderful woorkes of arte and nature (wherin doubtleſſe ſhyneth the ſparke of the diuine Spirite that god hathe gyuen you) I was then mynded to haue] delyuered vnto your Honour this philoſophicall booke, wher[in is deſcribed (as appeareth in folio. ii.) ſo excellent and precious an experiment, wrought by arte to the ſimilitude of the vniuerſall frame of the worlde made by the omnipotent and greate God of nature, that I beleue the like was neuer doonne ſynſe the creacion of the worlde. And maye therefore in my iudgement, more woorthely be cauled *Microcosmos*, then eyther man or any other creature that euer was made of corporall ſubſtance. *Angelus Politianus* in his epiſtells, deſcribeth an instrument cauled *Automaton* made in his tyme in the cite of Florence, oſberuing the exacte mouing of *Primum Mobile* and *Octaua Sphæra*, with alſo the mouinges of the 7 planetes in there ſpheres, in all poyntes agreeable to there mouing in the heauen. Of the like instrument alſo, our Roger Bacon wrotte longe before in his booke *De Mirabili poteſtate artis et natura*, where he writeth in this maner. *Maius omnium figurarionum et rerum figuratarum eſt vt Cæleſtia deſcriberentur ſecundum ſuas longitudines et latitudines in figura corporali, qua mouentur corporaliter motu diurno. Et hæc valeret Regnum homini ſapienti etc.* The which instrumente doubtleſſe, although it be of a diuine inuention: yet dothe this *Microcosmos* ſo far furmount it, as nature paſſeth arte, and as *Motus animalis* paſſeth *Motus violentus*, for as the other is moued only by waight or wynde incloſed (as is ſeene in clockes and organs) ſo is this moued by the ſame Spirite of life wherby not only the heauen, but alſo all nature is moued: whoſe mover is god hym ſelfe as ſaith S. Paule: *Ipfus eſt in quo vivimus, mouemur, et ſumus.* As alſo Aristotle, Plato, and Philo, in there bookes *De Mundo*, do affirme. And eſpecially *Marcus Manilius in Aſtronomiis ad Auguſtum Cæſarem*, writing thus:

*Hoc opus immenſi conſtructum corpore Mundi,
Membraque naturæ diuerſa condita forma,
Æris atque ignis, Terræ, pelagique iacentis,
Vis animæ diuina regit: Sacroque meatu
Conſpirat Deus, et tacita ratione gubernat, etc.
Ære libratum vacuo, qui ſuſtinet orbem,* *Item Lucanus*
Totius pars magnus Iouis.

And wheras the autoure that deſcribeth this *Microcosmos* affirmeth that the Chaos therof, is *Materia Lapidis Philoſophorum* (which is alſo *Chaos, vel Ouum, vel prima Materia Mundi maioris*) it ſeemeth to agre with that *Cornelius Agrippa* hathe written in his ſeconde booke *De Occulta philoſophia, in Scala Vnitatis*, where he wryteth thus: *Lapis philoſophorum eſt vnum ſubiectum et instrumentum omnium virtutum naturalium et transf-naturalium etc.* And that this greate and diuine ſecreate of this *Microcosmos* maye not ſeeme incredible vnto your Honour, I aſſure you that I that am *Minimus Philoſophorum*, dyd long ſenſe (as I haue to wytnefſe Mr Thomas Whalley, th[e]lder ſonne of Mr Richard Whalley) woorked a ſecreate practiſe ſumwhat like vnto this, in maner as foloweth. I diſſolued two ſubſtances in two waters. Then I put the waters together in a glaſſe, ſuffering them ſo to remayne for a tyme. Then I filled off[ſ] the water frome the maſſe or *Chaos* leſte of them bothe. And put it on ageyn. And ſo dyd dyners tymes. In fine, the maſſe being diſſolued in the water, I let it reſt all night in a coulede place. In the morning, I founde fwyimming on the water and in the myddeſt therof, a little rounde Iland as brode as [a] riall or ſumwhat more, with at the leaſt a hundreth fyluer trees abowt an ynche high, ſo perfectly formed with trunks, ſtalkes, and leaues, all of moſt pure and glyſtering fyluer, that I ſuppoſe no lymne[r] or paynter is able to contereſte the like. Then ſhaking the glaſſe, all fell in peeces into the water, and fille[d] it with glyſtering ſparkes, as the firmament ſhyneth w[ith] ſtarres in a cleare wynter nyght. Then putting the glaſſe to a foſte

fyre vppon warme aſſhes, all turned agen into cleare water, which agen being put in a colde place all night, made an Iland with the like t.ees as before. What this wolde haue byn in fine, god knoweth, and not I. But of this I am ſure, that if the floure of learning of our tyme and ſumtyme Tutor and brother in lawe vnto your Honour Mr [*i.e.*, *Sir John*] Cheeke had ſeene any of theſe two ſecreates, he wolde greatly haue reioyced: As I knowe the diuine ſparke of knowledge that is in your Honour partly receaved of hym, will move you to doo the like, fythe to a philoſophicall and vertuous man, there is nothing ſo delectable as to beholde the infinite poure and wyſdome of God in his creatures, in the which, his deitie is not only viſible, but in maner palpable, as ſum philoſophers haue written. And as touching theſe matters, I haue red a maruelous ſentence in an olde written booke where theſe woordes are written: *Qui poteſt facere Mediam naturam, poteſt creare Mundos novos.* But to diſcourſe of this oracle, or to interpret the ſame, it were to muche to moleſt your Honour therewith: and an argument muche meeter for a ſeconde Socrates then for me. And of theſe ſecreates, writeth Roger Bacon in his booke before alleaged, where he hathe theſe woordes: *Multa ſunt archana admiranda in operibus artis et natura: Quæ licet nullam vtilitatem non habeant (habent vero maxim[am] vt ſapientibus cognitum eſt) tamen ſpectaculum ineffabile ſapientiæ præbent et poſſunt applicari ad probationem omnium occultorum quibus vulgus inexpertum contradicit, et indicat fieri per opera Dæmoniorum, etc.*

And thus moſt humbly deſyring your Honour to pardon my boldneſſe in writing vnto you, and according vnto your accuſtomed clemencie to accept in good parte this my preſumptuous attempte which only the loue I beare to your vertues hath moued me vnto, my truſt is that theſe things ſhall not be all togyther vnpleaſant vnto your Honour otherwyſe occupied in greate affayres bothe in the courte and common wealthe, as was Plato with King *Dyonifius*, Aristotle with greate Alexander, and Cicero Senator and Conſul of Rome. The eternall God and immortal mover of the greate worlde and the leſſe, preferue your Honour in healthe and proſperitie. Frome the ſholde byfde Barnet. The firſt of Auguſt. 1562.

Moſt bownde to your Honour.

RICHARDE EDEN.

Tuæ Dominationi addictus, alios non quero penates.

Sententia Hippocratis.—*In ſecretis et occultis, ſecretus et occultus eſto.*

ENDORSED—Primo Auguſti. 1562. Richard Eden.

Lands. MS. 101, art. 5.

The advancement which Eden ſought, came almoſt immediately after he wrote this letter: but it is ſad to know, that it ultimately ruined him both in health and fortune, and brought him to a premature grave.

We muſt now introduce a celebrated historical perſonage, with whoſe wanderings and trials Eden's life was for the next ten years indiffolubly identified; and in the narration of which, we ſhall be telling the ſtory of our Author's life during the period he was on the Continent. In doing which, we thankfully acknowledge our obligations to the *Vie de Jean de Ferrières, Vidame de Chartres, Seigneur de Maligny*, by a Member [Count L. de Baſtard] of the Historical and Natural Science Society of the Yonne. 170 copies only of which, were printed at Auxerre in 1858.

A *Vidame* was originally the principal lay officer of a biſhop. In France, however, only five biſhops had ſuch an officer, viz., thoſe of Rheims, Amiens, Mans, Laon, and Chartres; together with certain Abbeys. In proceſs of time, however, it became a mere hereditary title; dependent for its renown on the perſon who held it and the wealth wherof he was poſſeſſed.

JEAN DE FERRIÈRES, diſinherited by his father, François de Ferrières, in 1540; became Seigneur de Maligny in 1544; went to Rome in the embaffy of M. de Urſe in 1549; accompanied the then Vidame, François de Vendome, to the relief of the Siege of Metz in 1553; and went to Piedmont in 1557. François de Vendome having died on 22d December 1560: the Seigneur of Maligny then became Vidame of Chartres; and thereby immenſely rich, if he could have enjoyed his own in peace. But not daring to adminiſter to his vaſt eſtate in perſon, for fear of attracting the attention of his enemies to it: his ſiſter Beraude, by ſecret agreement with him, preſented herſelf as the ſole heir to François de Vendome.

On the breaking out of the Civil Wars, Condé ſent the new Vidame (whoſe riches gave him great influence among the Proteſtant party) over to England, with the Seigneur de Saint Aubin, to induce Elizabeth to join

in so holy and just a quarrel. Being joined by La Haye, they finally arrived in England about 15th August 1562; and after many secret conferences, the Treaty of Hampton Court was signed by them, on 20th September following. *Coll. MS. Cal. E. v. f. 113*, is a copy of this Treaty bearing the signature of the Vidame.

At this moment, Eden, who was an excellent linguist, entered the service of the Vidame. Time pressed. 3000 men under Sir Adrian Poynings, and with them the Vidame and Eden, left Portsmouth on 2d October, and were in Havre on the 4th: the majority of them to be killed, or die of the plague by the 29th of July following, when Havre was surrendered to the French. Such as survived brought with them to England, the plague which they had there caught.

In the meantime, the Civil Wars had been stopped by the Edict of the Pacification of Ambois on 19th March 1563.

All the goods of the Vidame were pronounced confiscated, under pretence that he had brought the English into Havre. The French Court, while in progress after the Pacification, reached Troyes on the 23d March 1564; when the Vidame [and Eden] joined on the 8th April the Prince de Condé there, and received a simulated welcome from Charles IX. and Catherine de Medecis. Leaving the Court at Vitry on 27th April, he rejoined Condé, at Paris; where he appears to have chiefly resided for the next two or three years.

Eden states below, and at *p. xlvii.*, that he had been in Germany, and, among other places, at Strasburg. He probably accompanied the Vidame there.

A fresh rising of the Protestants occurred on 27th September 1567, when they nearly captured by a *coup de main* the entire French Court. Then came the Battle of St. Denis on 10th November, and the Pacification of Longjumeau on the 23d March 1568.

The Vidame and his newly married wife (Francoise Joubert, widow of Ch. Chabot) and suite [including, it is presumed, Eden] arrived on the Cornish coast, on 28th April 1569; and after some delay, were allowed to come to London. The Vidame was received by the Queen, on 18th July, at Greenwich. On the 23d September 1569, he was burnt in effigy, for the second time within a year, on the *Place de Grève*, at Paris, by an arrêt of the French Parliament.

In consequence of the Peace of St. Germain; the Vidame, after about a year's stay in England, returned in October 1570, by Dieppe, to Paris: where some of his servants being attacked in the street, he retires to Boubige, in Poitou. In February 1572, he was at La Ferté, on private affairs.

Soon afterwards he returned to Paris; where he found all the chiefs of the Huguenot party lulled into a belief of perfect safety, through their trust in the King's word. He, however, did not trust the Court, and would not reside in the city, but in the Faubourg of St. Germain. When questioned for the reason of this; he replied 'that the air of the Faubourgs was better than that of the City, and that of the fields better than that of the Faubourgs.'

Maurevert, the assassin of the Count de Mouy, attempted the assassination of Admiral Coligny; but fails to kill him. Charles IX. had hardly left the wounded Huguenot chief; when the Vidame called on him, and let loose his indignation at the dastard cowardice of the act.

On the next day, Saturday, 23d August, at a meeting of the Protestant chiefs at Coligny's house, the Vidame urged that the Admiral should be conveyed out of Paris; and that the Protestants should quit the city: but he was overruled.

That night, occurred the MASSACRE OF ST. BARTHOLOMEW, commencing on the right bank of the Seine. The Vidame, his brother-in-law Jean de la Fin, and ten others [including probably Eden], who were living on the left bank of the river—warned by the firing—escaped for their lives, riding first to La Ferté. Hearing, however, that the Duke de Guise had sent the Sieur de St. Leger to take them; they hurriedly left the Chateau, and—after some wandering up and down the country—managed to reach the coast; where they found a ship, which carried them safely to England. The Vidame arrived in London on 7th September 1573.

1573. Sept. The Vidame, in a very flowery letter, solicits of the Queen, that Richard Eden, who had given him good and faithful companionship for the space of ten years, may be admitted one of the poor knights of Windsor. He also refers to his erudition, and the experience he had acquired in the secrets of Nature. He further encloses the three following *autographic* memoranda; by the side of which, we have put an English translation:—

I.

Si placeat suæ Maiestati concedere Richardo Eden proximam vocationem Militum illorum, qui Winsori Milites Oratorij vocantur, à Rege Henrico 8º fundati.

If it may please Her Majesty to grant to Richard Eden the next vacant place among the Knights, who are called the Knights of the Oratory of Windsor, founded by King Henry VIII.

II.

Richardus Eden natione Anglus, ex honesta familia natus in agro Herfordensi, ubi adhuc sororem habet viventem, suæ Maiestati bene cognitam, nempe uxorem equestris ordinis viri Iohannis Butleri de Lamer: A pueritia educatus in bonis literis, studuit in Achademia Cantabrigiensi decem annis sub tutore doctissimo viro, domino Thoma Smyth, nunc Secretario suæ Maiestati, qui de eius eruditione et morum integritate satis testari potest.

Richard Eden, an Englishman, born of a respectable family in Herefordshire,—where he still has a sister living, well known to Her Majesty, being the wife of a knight, John Butler of Lamer,—was well educated as a boy, studied at Cambridge for ten years under that most learned man, Sir Thomas Smyth, now Her Majesty's Secretary [of State], who can testify to his erudition and blameless character.

Deinde a serenissimo Rege Henrico Octavo ab achademia vocatus, ipsius Regis mandato, in Ærario officium obtinuit, ubi usque ad mortem Regis, hoc est duobus annis, permansit; qui etiam moriens illius non immemor assignavit illi domus distillatorii officium. Quod tamen Rege mortuo Sumerseti Dux illi concessit qui nunc fruitur.

Afterwards, being summoned from the University by the most serene King Henry VIII., he held, by his order, an office in the Treasury, where he remained for two years until the King's death; who, when dying, did not forget him, but assigned to him the office of the distillery. After the King's death, the Duke of Somerset granted the office to the present holder.

Postea uxorem duxit, ex qua in xiiij. annis xij. infantes generavit, ut vel hac ratione videatur de patria bene meritus.

Afterwards he married, and in fourteen years begot twelve children, so that for this reason also he seems to deserve well of his country.

Qui etiam tempore aliquot Republicæ utiles libros ex sermone Latino Italico Hispanico traduxit, qui typis impressi extant, ut Decades de Novo Orbe, liber iusti voluminis, vizt. 600 foliorum; ac deinde librum de Arte Navigandi a Martino Cortesio in lingua Hispanica ad Carolum V. scriptum; insuper ex Pyrotechnia Italica multa de rebus metallicis, quæ antea in nostra lingua extiterat.

At this time he translated from the Latin, Italian, and Spanish several books useful to the State, which are still in print, as *Decades de Novo Orbe*, a book of good size, viz. six hundred folios; and a book *De Arte Navigandi*, written by Martin Cortes to Charles V. in Spanish; and in addition many portions of *Pyrotechnia Italica* concerning metals; which did not exist before in our language.

Tempore vero Mariæ Reginæ Hispanorum quorundam nobilium fauore, denuo in Regis Philippi Ærarium electus: hereseos apud Wintoniense Episcopum accusatus a Watsone Lincolnensi Episcopo, officio privatus est.

In the time of Queen Mary, he was again placed in the Treasury of King Phillip, through the favour of certain Spanish nobles: but being accused of heresy before [Gardiner] the Bishop of Winchester by Watson, Bishop of Lincoln; he was deprived of his office.

Mortua vero uxore, illius fama ad illustrissimi Domini Vidami aures pervenit. Cum quo, quomodo his x. annis et amplius in Germania et Gallia vixerit in utraque fortuna, nec mercenarius nec desertor, et semper illi charissimus, ipsemet Domini Vidami pro sua humanitate, veritate testimonium feret. A quo etiam multis amplissimis muneribus donatus, si tamen non ditatus nulla profecto illustrissimi Domini incuria vel

After the death of his wife, his repute came to the ears of the most illustrious Lord the Vidame. How he lived [with him] for ten years and more in Germany and France, with varying fortune, neither a mercenary nor a deserter, and always most dear to him; the Lord Vidame himself will kindly bear witness. From whom also he received many large gifts. And assuredly it is not through carelessness or oblivion on

oblivio in causa fuit, sed sola volubilis et noueræ fortuna culpa.

Nunc vero, scnio affectus, et corporis infirmitate, cogitur peregrinandi finem facere; nihil magis habens in votis quam ut suæ Maiestatis gratia et favore, possit tandem in patria honestis studiis et Reipublicæ utilibus vitam finire. Nulla vero magnarum divitiarum, aut honoris ambitione flagrans solam vitam tranquillam et studiis commodam exoptat.

Deus optimus maximus suam Celsitudinem semper seruet incolumen.

Quandoquidem maxima pars hominum non est semper melior pars, sed reperiuntur quamplures Ardeliones quibus nihil est magis gratum quam ex quavis leuissima occasione bonos viros calumniari. Ideoque ut agni a luporum faucibus in tuto vivant, necessum erit ut leonis animalium regis, hoc est, Regia autoritate tueantur.

Quis enim nunc in Anglia potest Paracelsi admiranda medicamenta ex metallis et mineralibus componere (quæ cum Alchimia aliquo modo symbolizantur) nisi statim ab ignaris et calumniatoribus Alchimie legibus prohibita infamiam et periculum incurrat. Cui malo obuiando Principis diplomata opus erit. Nec dubito quin quum Brocardo multisque aliis peregrinis libere permittitur exercere. Idem mihi æquiori iudicio Principis autoritate concedatur.

There were thirteen poor knights of Windsor, whose annual allowance was paid by the Dean of Windsor. It consisted of £18:5s. in money; a gown or coat of red cloth; and a blue or purple cloth mantle with the badge of St. George embroidered on the left sleeve. Eden's application does not appear to have been successful.—See Tighe and Davis, *Annals of Windsor*, i. 223. *Ed.* 1858.

1573. Sir W. Winter is knighted this year.—See Sylvanus

Morgan's *Sphere of Gentry*, Book 3, p. 14, *Ed.* 1661.

1574. Wintertide. Eden writes the following dedication to Sir W. Winter of his translation of John Taisner's book *De natura magnetis, &c.*, which he designed as a complement to a new edition of his previous translation of Martin Cortes' *Arte de Naviar*. Though written at this time, it did not appear in print for four or five years afterwards, in consequence of the successive deaths of Eden, Richard Jugge the printer, and his son John Jugge.

The most important allusion in it is the account of Sebastian Cabot's death, the only one on record.

A very necessarie and profitable Booke concerninge Nauigation, compiled in Latin by *Ioannes Taijnierus*, a publike professor in Rome, Ferrara, and other Vniuersities in Italie of the Mathematicales, named a treatise *Of continuall motions*. Translated into Englishe, by Richarde Eden.

Imprinted at London by Richarde Jugge.

the part of his illustrious Lord, but only in consequence of changeful and aduerser fortune; that he was not enriched.

Now affected by age and bodily infirmity, he is obliged to make an end of wandering; desiring nothing more than, by Her Majesty's favour, to end his life in his own country, in honourable studies, and useful to the State. He has no ambition for great riches or honour; but only desires a quiet life, suitable for study.

May God ever preserve Her Majesty.

III.

Since, indeed, the greater part of mankind is not always the better part, but many husybodies are found who have no greater pleasure than in calumniating good men on the most trifling occasions; therefore that lambs may live safe from the jaws of wolves, they must be protected by the lion, the king of beasts—that is, protected by royal authority.

Who can at this present time, in England, compound the admirable medicaments of Paracelsus from metals and minerals (which are symbolized by an alchymical method), without immediately incurring from ignorant calumniators the infamy and peril of practising alchmy, which is prohibited by the laws. To obviate this evil, a royal license is needed. Neither do I doubt that since it is permitted to Brocardus and many other foreigners freely to practise [the art]; that the same will, with more justice, be granted to me by the royal authority.—*State Papers, Dom. Eliz., Vol. 92, No. 32.*

To the ryght woorshipfull Syr Wylliam Wynter, Knyght, Maister of the Ordinaunce of the Queenes Maiesties Shippes, and Surveyor of the sayd Shippes, Richarde Eden wysheth health and prosperitie.



IT is nowe about twelue yeeres paffe (gentle Maister Wynter) since the curtesie and fauour which long before I founde at your hande, moued me no lesse for the good wyll that I haue euer borne you and your vertues, to excogitate or deuise somethyng, within the compasse of my poore abilitie, that myght be a witnesse, and as it were a feale, to testifie both that I haue not forgotten your gentleness, and also how desyrous I am to pay the debtes of frendshyp which then I promeuted, and also attempted to performe: But beyng at that tyme preuented, by means of my fodayne departing out of Englande, with my good Lorde the *Vidame*, with whom I remayned for the space of ten yeeres, vntyll the calamities of that miserable cuntry, with losse of goods, and danger of lyfe, hath dryuen me home agayne into my natiue cuntry: Where syndyng my selfe at some leysure, and desyrous to paffe soorth parte of my tyme in some honest exercise, which myght be profytable to many, domagable to none, and a meanes to geat me newe freendes, the olde in my so long absence, in maner vtterly wafted: I chaunced in the meane tyme, to meete with my olde acquaintance and freend, Richard Iugge, Printer to the Queenes Maiestie, who had many yeeres before, printed the Booke of *Marten Curtes*, of the Art of Nauigation, by me translated out of Spanyshe tongue. Whereof, haunyng with him some conference, he declared that he woulde prynt that booke agayne, yf I woulde take the paynes to deuise some addition touchyng the same matter, that myght be ioyned thereto. At whiche tyme, haunyng with me in the Latine tongue, these booke here solowyng printed, whiche I brought with me out of Fraunce, I soone agreed to his honest request, to translate them into Englyshe: Whiche beyng accomplyshed, this onely remayned, accordyng to the common custome, to consecrate and dedicate the same to some worthie personage, whose fame, aucthoritie, and dignitie, myght defende them from the euyll tongues of such as are more redie rather to reprooue other mens dooynges, then to doo any good them selues. And therefore (gentle Maister Wynter) knowing your auctoritie and fame in well deseruyng, and honorable seruice vnto your Prince and Countrey, to be fuche as all men thynke so well of, and so greatlye esteeme, to whom (rather then to you) may I dedicate this booke of Nauigation? In consyderation whereof, and the hope that I haue in your approued curtesie, fauourably to accept this dedication, as procecd[ing] from one that desyreth nothyng more then to doo you seruice, and remayne in your grace, I shall thynke my trauayle wel bestowed, and sufficiently recompenced, yf it shall please you to accept the fame as thankfully, as I wyllingly offer it vnto you.

For yf there be any thyng in me, wherein I maye by good reason please my selfe, it is chiefly this, that I haue euer loued and honoured men of singular vertue or qualitie, in what so euer laudable Art or Science, euen of those whereof I mee selfe haue litle knowledge, as are Geometrie, Astronomie, Architecture, Musicke, Payntyng, feates of Armes, inuentions of Ingens, and fuche lyke: Of the whiche, this our age maye seeme not onely to contende with the Auncientes, but also in many goodly inuentions of Art and wyt, farre to exceede them. For (not to speake agaynst all the marueylous inuentions of our tyme) what of theirs is to be compared to the Artes of Printyng, makyng of Gunnes, Fyre woorkes, of sundry kyndes of artificiall Fyres, of fuche marueylous force, that mountaynes of moste harde rockes and stones, are not able to resyst their violence, but are by them broken in peeces, and throwen into the ayre with fuche violence, that neyther the spirite of *Demogorgon*, or the thunderboltes of infernal *Pluto* can doo the lyke. What shoulde I here speake of the wonderfull inuentions of *Fartallo*, in his booke *De Arte maiori*? or of many other, whereof *Vannucius Beringocius* wryteth in his booke, entituled, *Pyrotechnia*. As touchyng which terrible inuentions, and the lyke, although some men be of opinion that they were inuented by the infigation of the denyll, for the destruction of mankynde: yet other weyghyng the matter more indifferently thynke that the inuention of Gunnes hath ben the sauuyng of many mens lyues, because before the vse of them, men were not wont so long tyme to lye batterryng in the besieging of Townes or Fortrefes, but in short space to come to hande frokes, and to foughten feeldes, to the great slaughter of great multitudes. And seeyng that nowe our enimies the Turkes, and

other Infidels, haue the vse of these deuilyhe inuentions (as they name them) it may be thought requisite for vs, agaynst fuche deuylles to vse also the lyke deuilyhe inuentions, lest refusing the fame, and genyng place to euyl, we shoulde wyllingly suffer the kyngdome of the deuyll to triumph ouer vs, not otherwyse able to resyst, and much lesse to ouercome so puissant and horrible enymies (except besyde al hope) myght aryse in our defence some newe Moyfes, or Elias, or the Priestes of Iericho, whiche onely with the noyfe and founde of Hornes or Trumpettes ouerthrewe the walles of the towne. Neyther wyl the example of Dauid and Goliath, or of Samson and the Philistines, serue our turne at this tyme, although I beleue that the arme of the Lorde is not weakened, yf there lacked not a Moyfes with his rodde, and woorthie Assistentes, which myght helpe to holde vp his weery arme.

But to returne to speake of ingens, and ingenious inuentions, whiche inuented and vsed to the glorie of God, and defence of his people, against the furie and tyrannie of Infidelles, they may as woorthly be called the gyftes of God, as were the inuentions and Art of them that buylded eyther the Temple of Hierusalem, or the Arke of God: And

Exod. xxxv. yet is it there wrytten of those Artificers, that God gaue Bezaleel and them the spirite of knowledge and cunning in fuche Artes. Ahaliab.

And therefore I thinke it may also be fayde without offence, that the knowledge of *Archimedes*, and other men in fuche commendable inuentions, are the gyftes of God, for as muche as the gyftes of God are free, and not bounde to any nation or person.

And yf it may be graunted that the spirites of men, or the spirite of God in men, may be diuided (as was the spirite of Moyfes to twelue other) or otherwyse that the spirites of dead men may reuiue in other (after the opinion and tranfanimation of *Pythagoras*) we may thinke that the foule of *Archimedes* was reuiued in *Besson*, that excellent Geometer of our tyme, whom I knewe in Fraunce the Maister of the engins to the Freche kyng, Charles the ninth, vnder whom that lamentable slaughter at Paris was committed, in the whiche were slayne so many noble men. Whiche crueltie the fayde *Besson* abhorryng, fled hyther into England, and here dyed, in the yeere. 1573. and left in witness of his excellencie in that Art, a booke in prynt, conteynyng the fourmes or portraictes of fyxtie engins of marueylous strange and profytable deuiice, for diuers commodious and necessary vses. Of the whiche, for as muche as three of them, that is to meane, the 54. 57. and 60. be engines cheefely parteynyng vnto Shyppes, it shall not be from my purpose here to make a breefe rehearal of them.

The 54. therefore (as he wryteth) is an engin not vnylke vnto that whiche in ancient tyme *Archimedes* inuented for the *Syracusians*, wherewith a man with the strength of onely one hande, by helpe of the instrument called *Trispastron* (which in our tongue some cal an endlesse Scruer), brought a Shyp of marueylous greatnesse from the lande into the sea, in the syght of kynge *Hieron*, and an infinite multitude, whiche with all their force coule not doo the same. &c. Of the which also, our cuntry man, Roger Bacon, a great Philosopher (and no Nicromancer, as that ignorant age slaunders him) seemed to haue had some knowledge: For in his booke of the marueylous power of Art and Nature, he maketh

mention of an Instrument (as farre as I remember) no bygger then a mans hande, wherewith one man myght drawe to hym the strength of three hundred men. And I well remember, that at my beyng in Fraunce, I hearde credible reporte, that the Earle of *Rocumdoise*, an Almaine, made an engin, wherewith the fayde kyng Charles when he was but. xvi. yeeres of age, lysted from the grounde a weyght, whiche the strongest man in the courte was not able to remouee. Almoste the lyke deuiice we vse in the bendyng of a Crossebowe. Also at my beyng in Germanie in the cite of Strofburge, a woorthy and learned Gentleman, *Monfieur de Saleno*, tolde me that in that cite one had inuented an engin of iron, no bygger then a mans hande, wherewith to fastenyng a rope, with a hooke of iron, and castyng the hooke vpon a wal, tree, or other place, where it myght take holde, he coulde with that engin lyst hym selfe vp to the wal, or other place. But to returne to the other two engines of *Besson*, parteynyng to our purpose. Therefore the 60. figure (as he there wryteth) is the inuention of an engin, scarcely credible, wherewith by ballance and easie motion, beyond the order of nature, a Shyp may be so framed and gouerned, that in the calme fea it shall moue forward, and in litle wynde hasten the course, and in too much

wynde temper and moderate the same: A thyng woorth the knowledge to a kyng, as he fayeth. Of the thyrd engin, which is the 57. figure of his booke, he wryteth thus. An Artifice not yet diuulgate or fet forth, whiche placed in the pompe of a Shyp, whyther the water hath recourse, and mooued by the motion of the Shyp, with wheeles and weyghtes, dooth exactly shewe what space the Shyp hath gone. &c. By whiche description, some doo vnderstand that the knowledge of the longitude myght so be founde, a thyng doubtlesse greatly to be desyred, and hitherto not certaynly knownen, although *Sebastian Cabot* on his death bed told me that he had the knowledge thereof by diuine reuelation, yet so, that he myght not teach any man. But I thinke that the good olde man, in that extreme age, somewhat doted, and had not yet euen in the article of death, vtterly shaken of all worldlye wayne glorie.

As touchyng whiche knowledge of the longitude, to rehearse the faying of that excellent learned man, *Iohannes Fernulius*, in his incomparable booke *De abditis rerum causis*, where in the Preface to King Henrie of Fraunce, he writeth in this manner. We haue put our helpyng hande to the Arte of Nauigation and Geographie: forby obseruation of the houres of the Equinoctialles, we haue inuented howe, in what so euer region or place of the worlde a man shalbe, he may knowe in what longitude it is: which certaynly we haue not taken of the fountaynes of the ancientes, but fyrste, of all other (as I thinke) haue drawn it of our ryuers, as our owne inuention. &c. So that (saith he) whiche way so euer you turne your eyes, you may se that the posteritie hath not ryotously wasted the inheritance of Artes and sciences, left them by their predecessors, but haue greatly encreased the fame, and inuented other: For certaynly, the multitude of thinges incomprehensible, is infinite, and so therefore inuentions must needs also be infinite, and without ende. And therefore, as touchyng this thing (saith he) to speake freely what I thinke, they seeme to me to offende as muche, whiche contende that the ancientes haue inuented and comprehended all thynges, as doo they whiche attribute not vnto them the fyrst inuentions, so depriuyng them of theyr right possession. For whereasowe by the benefite of almighty God (who hath geuen vs his Christe, and with hym all good thynges) the lyght of trouth shyneth in our vnderstanding by godly inspiration, there is no iust cause why we shoulde in fuche thynges thinke vs inferior to the auncientes. Of which Argument, who lysteth may reade more in the fayde Epistle of *Fernulius*.

And for as much as I haue made mention of such inuentions, it shal not be from the purpose, to describe the goodly instrument wherof *Angelus Policianus* in the fourth booke of Epistles to *Fran-* An instrument in motion agreeing with the motion of the heauen. Anno Domo. 1584.
cisus Casa, wryteth in this manner, I haue receuyed your Epistle, wherein you signifie vnto me, that you haue heard of the strange engine or instrument *Automaton* inuented, and made of late by one Laurence a Florentine: in the which is expressed the course and motions of the Planettes, conformable and agreeyng with the motions of heauen: And that (for as muche as the reporte thereof is hardly beleueed) you greatly desyre that I should wryte vnto you, what certayne knowledge I haue of that thing, wherein I am redie to obey your request. And although nowe it be long since I sawe it, yet as farre as I beare in memorie, I wyll breiefely declare the fourme, reason, and vse thereof. And yf the description of it shal seeme vnto you somewhat obscure, you shall not ascribe it altogether to my declaration, but partly to the subtiltie and noultie of the thyng. It is in fourme of a square pyller, sharpe towards the top, in maner of a *Pryamis*, of the height of almost three cubites: ouer and aboue it, in maner of a couer, is a flat or playne rounde plate of gylted copper, garmyshed with fundry colours, on whose other part is expressed the whole course of the Planettes, and whose dimation or measure is somewhat shorter then a cubite, and is within turned or moued with certayne litle denticle wheeles, an immouable circle comprehending the hyghest border or margent, and diuided with the spaces of xxxiii. houres within it, in the hyghest turnyng rundel, the twelue signes are discerned by three degrees. Further, within are seene eyght rundels, in maner all of one greatnesse. Of these, two obteyne the myddle poynt, the one fastened in the other, so that the lowest beyng somewhat bygger, representeth the Sunne, and the hygher the Moone. From the Sunne a beame commyng to the circle, stuweth in it the houres: and in the Zodiacke, the monethes, dayes and number of degrees, and also the true and halfe motion of the Sunne. From the Moone also procedeth a pyne, or wyre, whiche beneathe or downward in the border or margent of the

greatest rundell, sheweth the houres: and passing by the center of the Epicycle of the Moone, and extendyng to the Zodiacke, sheweth the halfe motion of his Planet. Another also ryfing from thence, and cutting the border of the center of the Moone (that is of the Epicycle) sheweth her true place, whereby are seene the slownesse, swyftnesse, al motions and courtes, coniunctions also, and ful Moones. About these are fyxe other rundels: of the whiche, one, whom they calle the head and tayle of the Dragon, sheweth the Eclipses both of the Sunne and Moone. The other are attributed to the Planets: from euery of whiche, proceede two poyntes, assignyng the motions (as we haue sayd) of the Moone: but they also goe backward, whiche chaunceth not in the Moone, whose Eclypse is moued contrarywyse. And thus the reason of coniunctions, departynges, and latitudes, is manifest in all. There is also an other border lyke vnto a Zodiacke, cutting or diuidyng vpwarde or aboue, those fyxe litle rundels (whereof we haue spoken) being the rundels of the Planettes: whereby appeareth the degrees of the East signes, and the spaces of the dayes (that is to say) at what houre the Sunne riseth, by the whiche, euery of the Planettes are carried in their rundels or circles by course, in the day tyme to the East, and in the nyght to the West. Agayne contrarywyse, the greatest rundel of al, draweth with it al the Planettes, in the nyght to the East, and in the day to the West, in the space of 24. houres. Az which, to agree with the motions of heauen, both reason and experience doo conserme. And therefore ought ye not to marueyle, yf these thynges seeme incredible to many. For (as sayth the wyse Pronerbe) sayth is slowlye geuen to great thynges, for euen we scarcely beleue our owne eyes, when we see suche thynges. And therefore, whereas in tyme past I read, that suche a lyke instrument was made by *Archimedes*, my faith yet sayled me to geue credite to so great an Aucthour, which thyng neuerthelesse this our Florentine hath performed. The worke doubtlesse beyng of such excellence, that all prayfe is inferior to it, and can not therefore for the woorthynesse thereof be otherwyse praised, then to say that it passeth all prayfe. The Artificer him selfe also being a man of such integritie of maners, that the funne is nothing inferior to the excellence of his wyt: in so much that he may seeme a man sent from heauen, where he learned the makynge of this heauen, by the example of the other. Hytherto *Policianus*. Of the lyke instrument, Roger Bacon also maketh mention in his fayde booke, of the maruellous power of Art and Nature, affyrmyng the same to be woorth a kyngdome to a wyfe man.

But for as muche as the subiect whiche I haue nowe in hande, is chiefly touchyng inuentions parteinyng to Shyppes, and the Art of Navigation, I thinke good to speake somewhat of the inuention of a certayne Italian wryter, named *Leonardo Fiorauanti*, who in his booke, entitled *Specchio de scientia vniuersale*, doeth greatly glory in the inuention of Shyppes, whiche can not peryshe eyther on the sea, or the lande, affyrmyng that the lyke was neuer inuented since the creation of the worlde. But I feare me, lest vayne glorie of discourfyng in the Italian tongue, hath caused him more then needes, to commend his owne inuention, as for the moste parte is the maner of the Italian wryters. Therefore committing the iudgement hereof to men of greater experience and knowledge in these thynges, I wyl onely translate his wordes, whereby in the booke before named, he describeth the fayde Shyppe in this maner. Take beames of Fyre, or Pyne tree, which of their owne nature can neuer goe downe, or syncke, or abyde vnder the water, and with these beames forme an engine (*Machina*, yf I may so call it) of the length of three score foote, and of the breadth of twentie foote, and of the heygth of fyxe foote, laying the fyrste ranke in length, and the other trauerse, or onerthwarte, and the thyrde againe in length, fashionyng the fore parte lyke vnto other Shyppes, and in lyke manner, bryngyng the poupe or hynder parte to good forme: then with such irons as apparteyne, bynde it, and strengthen it in suche maner that it can not breake. And vpon this frame or fundation buylde your Shyppe, of suche fashion as you thinke best. &c. It were here too long to rehearse with what proude wordes and ostentation he magnifieth this inuention. But whether this frame or engine shoulde be bylden vpon the keele or bottome of the Shyp, or otherwyse, I commit it to them of better iudgement, as I haue fayde.

But whereas it may for this tyme suffice to haue wrytten thus muche of these thynges, I wyl make an ende with onely a breefe rehearse of the inuention and encrease of the Art of Navigation. After that the Art of Navigation was founde, euery man began to chalenge vnto hym the

dominion of the sea, and there to dwell and kepe warre euen as on the land. *Minos* (as wryteth *Strabo*) was the fyrst that ruled on the sea, whiche neuerthelesse, other ascribe to *Neptunus*, who fyrst founde the Art of Navigation, and was therefore (as wryteth *Diodorus*) appoynted by *Saturnus* to be Admiral of the fyrste Nauie: and thereby the posteritic afterwarde ascribed to him the gouernance of the sea, and named him the God thereof. After whom the *Cretenses* euer were esteemed most expert in the Art of Navigation. But (as wryteth *Plinie*) boates were fyrst inuented, and with them was the fyrste faylyng in the Ilandes of the redde sea, vnder kyng *Erythra*, as also witnesseth *Quintilian*, sayyng, If none had proceeded further then the inuentions of our predeceffors, we had had nothyng in the Poets about *Andronicus*, and nothing in histories about the *Annales* or Cronicles of *Bysshoppes*, and had yet haue fayled in trounges or in boates. Other haue ascribed this inuention to diuers other nations and persons, as to the Troians and Myfians in *Hellefpondo*, and also that the ancient Britanes made boates of leather or hydes, and fayled with them in the Ocean sea. *Plinie* wryteth, that *Danaus* was the fyrst that brought a Shyppe out of Grece into Egypt. Some also geue the fame to *Minerua*. But most ryghtfully, the inuention both of the Shyp, and Art of Navigation, is ascribed to Noe, who (as wryteth *Eusebius*) was longe before *Neptune* or *Danaus*. For doubtlesse (sayth he) the Arke of Noe was none other then a Shyp, and the fyrste and onely exemplar of the buyldyng of all other Shyppes or vesselles of faylyng. Also the moste ancient wryter *Berosus* the Chaldean (as wryteth *Iosephus*) calleth the Arke of Noe, a Shyp. The same *Iosephus* also sayth, that the Nephues of Noe, departyng to inhabit diuers partes of the worlde, vsed many Shyppes. &c. Long after Noe, the *Tyrians* were counted most expert in the Arte of Navigation: and after them, diuers other nations. For whereas no Art is so perfect, but may receaue encrease, hereof doth it folowe, that this Art also hath been greatly augmented, and brought to further perfection by witty inuentions of the posteritic, euen vnto our age: whereof, who so lysteth to know further more particularly who inuented all other partes and instrumentes parteinyng to al fortes of Shyppes, and Art of Navigation, may read ye thyrde booke of *Polidor Virgil*, *Cap. xv. De Inuentorib. Rer. and Bayfus, de re nauali*.

Thus gentle Maister Wynter, beseechyng your woorthyp to take in good part this testimonie of my thankfull hart (suche as it is) I beseeche the immortal God to prosper all your dooings to his honor, and the benefite of your Countrey.

1576. The last work which it was permitted to Eden to undertake, was an English translation from a Latin version of Ludovico Bartheima's *Travels in the East* in 1503, which was posthumously printed by R. Willes, the next year. He was also endeavouring to collect the Reports of the Agents of the Moscovy Company, which form so important a part of Hakluyt's Collection; when death exchanged his earthly life of troubles and labours, for, we can but think, the blessed peace of heavenly rest.

I am indebted to my friend the late Mr. C. Bridger, Hon. Mem. of the Soc. of Ant. of Newcastle, for the following note:

1576. July 20. Letters of Administration were granted, in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, to the estate of Richard Eden, of the parish of St Dunstan's in the East, (the same parish in which Sir John Hawkins lived), in favour of Alban Eden, his son.

1577. Summer. R. Willis published a second and altered edition of the Third Work here reprinted, under the title of *The History of Trauayle in the West and East Indies, &c.*

1586. April. It would appear from T. A. D'Aubigné's *Histoire Universelle*, iii. book i. c. 3, p. 15, Ed. 1620, that the Vidame, after many wanderings, was captured by one Captain Carles: who (not crediting that a member of so good a family was unable to pay his ransom) suffered this distinguished Nobleman, whom the King of Navarre had called his Uncle, and who was now about sixty-six years; to die like a dog, while bound to the magazine at the bottom of the hold of his galley. A prisoner so placed would be situated immediately below the planking of the passage which extended between the two rows of galley slaves from the prow to the stern of the galley: and therefore, when the galley was in motion, would ceaselessly suffer from all the noise of the sixty or eighty rowers; from whom he would be separated, only by the thickness of the planking above his head.

Richard Eden's

Contributions to our Literature,

during the reigns of

Edward VI. and Mary.


1553-1555 A. D.

[The Second English book on America.]

A treatyse of the newe *India*,
with other new founde landes
and Ilandes, aswell eastwarde as
westwarde, as they are knowen
and found in these oure dayes,
after the descripcion of Sebas-
tian Munster in his booke of vni-
uersall Cosmographie: wherein the
diligent reader may see the good
successe and rewarde of noble
and honeste enterpryses,

by the which not only world-
ly ryches are obtayned,
but also God is glor=
ified, and the Chri=
stian fayth en=
larged.

Translated out of Latin into Englishke. By
Rycharde Eden.

 *Præter spem sub spe.*

¶ TO THE RIGHT HYGHE AND MIGHTY PRINCE,
THE DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLANDE,
HYS GRACE.



Reade in auncient writers (most noble prince) how that mightie kyng and conquerour of the world, Alexander the great, at such tyme as he beheld ye tombe of fearse Achilles, and therewith called to his remembraunce howe excellently the Poet Homere had set forth his heroical factes, which notwithstanding he thoughte to be muche inferiour vnto his, he fighed and sayde: Oh the most fortunate, which haste founde fuche a trompe to magnifi thi doinges, meaning hereby, that the fame of Achilles was no lesse notable to hys posteritie by homers writing, then it was in hys lyfe tyme by hys owne marciall affayres. Wherby we maye perceue such magnanimitie to haue ben in our prediceffours, men of

noble and stout courage, yat they thought it not sufficiente in their life time to deserue prayse and honour, except the fame might also redounde to theyr posteritie, yat they mighte therby bee encouraged to do the like. Whyche thing truely hath ben ye cause, yat in al ages noble enterprifes haue ben commended, and such as haue attempted ye same, haue bene honoured. Wherefore if honest commendacions be a iust reward dew to noble enterprifes, so much do they robbe and spoyle from ye dignitie therof, which in any poynt diminishe the same: no lesse confoundinge the order of thinges, than he whiche cloteth an ape in purple, and a king in sackcloth. This I speake ye rather, beecause there chaunfed of late to come to my handes, a shiete of printed paper, (more worthy so to bee called then a boke) entytuled of the newe founde landes. The whyche tittle when I readde, as one not vtterlye ignoraunt hereof, hauynge before in my tyme readde *Decades*, and also the nauigations *de nouo orbe*, there seemed too me no lesse inequalitye betwene the tittle and the booke, then if a man woulde professe to wryte of Englande, and entreated onelye of Trumpington a vyllage wythin a myle of Cambrydge. Wherefore partelye moued [by] the good affeccion, whyche I haue euer borne to the science of Cosmographie, whyche entreately of the descricion of the worlde, whereof the newe founde landes are no smal part, and much more by ye good wyll, whych of duetie I beare to my natyue countrey and countreyemen, which haue of late to their great praise (whatfoeuer succede) attempted with new viages to ferche ye seas and newe found landes, I thought it worthy my trauayle, to their better comfort, (as one not otherwise able to further theyr enterprise) to translate this boke oute of latin into Englishe. The which, albeit it do not so largely or particulerlye entreate of euery part, region or commoditie of ye sayd new found landes, as the worthines of the thing might requyre: yet fure I am that aswel they which set forth or take vpon them this viage, as also they which shal hereafter attempt ye lyke, may in this smal boke as in a little glasse, see some cleare light, not only how to learne by the example, dammage, good successe,

and adventures of other, how to behaue them felues and direct theyr viage to their most commoditie, but also if dew successe herein shoulde not chaunce according vnto theyr hope and expectation (as oftentimes chanceth in great affaires,) yet not for one foyle or fal, so to be difmayd as with shame and dishonor to leaue wyth losse, but rather to the death to persist in a godly, honeste, and lawful purpose, knowing that whereas one death is dewe to nature, the same is more honourably spent in such attemptes as may be to the glorye of God and commoditie of our cuntry, then in soft beddes at home, among the teares and weping of women. Which manlye courage (like vnto that which hath ben seen and proued in your grace, aswell in forene realmes, as also in this oure cuntry) yf it had not been wanting in other in these our dayes, at suche time as our souereigne Lord of noble memorie Kinge Henry the. viij. about the same yere of his raygne, furnished and sent forth certen shippes vnder the gouernaunce of Sebastian Cabot yet liuing, and one fyr Thomas Perte, whose faynt heart was the cause that that viage toke none effect, yf (I say) such manlye courage whereof we haue spoken, had not at that tyme bene wanting, it myghte happelye haue comen to passe, that that riche treasurye called *Perularia*, (which is now in Spayne in the cite of Ciuile, and so named, for that in it is kepte the infinite ryches brought thither from the newe found land of *Peru*.) myght longe since haue bene in the towre of London, to the kinges great honoure and welth of this his realme. What riches the Emperoure hath gotten oute of all the newe founde landes, it may wel appeare, wheras onlye in the Ilandes of *Hispana* or *Hispaniola* and *Cuba* and other Ilandes there aboute, were gathered in two monethes twelue thousand poundes weyght of gold as youre grace maye reade in this boke, in the description of the Ilandes. Yet speake I here nothyng of perles, precious stones, and spices. Neyther yet of the greate aboundaunce of golde, whiche is engendred almost in al regions neare vnto the *Equinoctial* line. And whereas I am aduertised yat youre grace haue bene a greate fortherer of thys viage, (as you haue bene euer studious for the commoditie of your cuntry,) I thought my trauayl herein coulde no wayes be more worthely bestowed, then to dedicate the same vnto your grace: Most humbly desiringe youre honoure so to accepte mine intente herein, as one whose good will hath not wanted to gratifie your grace with a better thing if mine abilitie were greater. Thus Almighty God preferue your grace in health and honour long to continue.

¶ Your graces poore orator Rychard Eden.

RYCHARDE EDEN TO THE READER.



Hereas in this Booke (welbeloued Reader) thou mayest reade many straunge things, and in maner incredible, except the same were proued most certayn by dayly experience, and approued auctoritie, (as shall hereafter appeare) I thought it good for thy better instruction to make this Preface, wherby thou mightest more playnly and sensibly comprehend the reasons and causes, yf not of al, yet of some of the chiefest things, which are conteyned in the same. Therefore wheras thou shalt reade of the great abundaunce of gold, precious stones and spices, which the Spaniardes and Portugales haue brought from the South partes of the worlde, as from the newe founde landes and Ilandes, the fodeyn straungenes or greatnes of the thing shal not so much amafe thy wittes, and gender in thee incrudelitie, yf thou consider the saying of wyse Salomon, who affyrmeth yat there is no new thing vnder the Sunne, and that the thing that hath been, cometh to passe again: which saying doeth greatly confyrm the trueth, of such things as are spoken

of in this Boke, wheras the same perhappes to some men might otherwyse seme in maner incredible, yf the lyke had not been sene in tyme paste, and approued by auctoritie of moste holy scripture, which declaring the great wyfdom, ryches, and noble viages of King Salomon, sayth that God gaue him wyfdom and vnderstanding exceding muche, and a large heart, and that he prepared a nauie of shippes, in the porte of *Azion Gaber*, by the brinke of the redde sea, which sayled to *Ophir*, and brought from thence. xxi. score hundreth (which is. xlii.M. [forty-two thousand]) weyght of golde. Agayne, that the weyghte of golde which was broughte to Salomon in one yere, was. vi. hundreth, thre score and. vi. talentes of gold, wheras the Hebrue talente, called *Talente Hæbraicum sanctuarij*, was of our sterling money 500. pounce, and *Talente Hæbraicum uulgare*, was halfe so much Lykewyfe yat siluer was nothing worth in the dayes of Salomon, and yat he made siluer and gold in Hierusalem as plentious as stonnes Agayn, that he ouerlayd the houe of the Lord with precious stones beautifully, and the gold wherwith he couered it, was golde of *Paruaim*. Also that the kinges nauie of shippes went once in thre yere to *Tharsis*, and brought Gold, Siluer, Apes, Peacockes, and Elephantes teeth. Which wordes surely seme so to confirme such things as are spoken of in the nauigacions wherof this boke entreateth, that nothinge can make more for the truth of the same: and briefly to speake of the places whether Salomons shippes sayled for Gold, as *Tharsis* and *Ophir*. This ought to be confydered for a general rule, that nearest vnto the fouth partes of the world betwene the two Tropikes vnder ye *Equinoctial* or burning lyne, where the sunne is of greatest forse, is the chiefest place where gold is engendred, although it be sometymes founde in colde regions as in Scotland, in Crayford more, likewyse in Hungary, yet nether pure of it self, nor in great quantitie: the reason whereof is largely declared in the Bookes of George Agric, and Albertus Magnus. And wheras it is written in ye Boke of Kinges in the Actes of Salomon that he prepared his shippes in *Azion Gaber*, beyng by the brinke of the readde sea, and sayled from thence to *Ophir* for Golde, it is apparaunt, that (howfoeuer the names of thinges haue altered and perished in tyme) he sayled from thence fouthwarde towarde the Equinoctial lyne, for asmuche as there is none other passage oute of the narrowesse of the readde sea, but onely into the mayne South sea, by the which the Portugales euen at this daye make theyr viage to *Calicut*, *Samotra*, *Madagascar*, and such other Ilandes in the South east partes of the worlde, where Golde, Spices, Apes, and Elephantes are nowe founde in lyke manner. But as for *Tharsis* beyng a ctyte of *Cilicia* in Asia the lesse and the natie countreye of S. Paule the Apofle, and situate muche more toward the North, then is Iudea, and in maner directlye ouer againste Iudea on the otherfyde of the sea called Mare Mediteraneum, and in the same clime, in the which standeth the Ilande of Sicilia, and the ctyte of Ciuille in Spayne, it hardelye agreeth with the principles of Philofophie and common experience, that golde should be there engendred in lyke abundaunce as in Regions more towarde the fouth, much lesse Elephantes and Apes, which are no where engendred farre from the *Equinoctial* lyne, or beyonde the two Tropikes, nor yet wil engendre yf they be

Nothing new
vnder the Sunne.

3. Reg. 4
3. Reg. 9
3. Re. 10.

2. Par. 1
1. Par. 3.
Tharsis.
Golde Apes
Elephantes.
Salomons
shippes.
Ophir.

Where Gold is
engendred.
Scotland.
Hungary

3. Reg. 9
Azion Gaber.

The *Equinoctial*
line.

Calicut.

Tharsis in
Cilicia.

Sicilia.
Ciuille in Spayne.

Spyces.
 Pepper.
 Orange tree.
 East India.
 Solomon boughte golde of marchauntes.
 The south and southeast.
 Mat. 12.
 3 Reg. x
 1. Par. 9
 The quene of Saba, the quene of the south.
 2 par. 9
 3 Reg. x
 Saba in *Ethiopia* vnder Egypt.
 Saba in Arabia.
 The quene of Saba came from the Iland of *Meroe*.
 From Rome to England.
 The viage of our men to *Cathay*, Norway, Lappia, Finmarchia.
 Globes and mappes.
 Ptolomeus.
America.
 The strayghtes of *Magellanus*.
 The Ilandes of *Molucca*.
 Passage by the north sea into the East.
Pius secundus, lib. i. Capit. ii.
 Note wel the passage by ye North sea.
 Augustus th[e]mperour
Cimbria.
Caspia.
 The warres of ye *Macedonians*

broughte into those partes of the world. The lyke is to be vnderstande of Poppingiayes and spyces, and dyuers other beastes, frutes, and trees, which are engendered in certayne climes of the worlde, and wyll not prospere in other places: the reason wherof were here to longe [to] declare. For lyke as pepper wyll not growe in Spayne, no more wyll the Orange tree bringe fourth fruite in Englande. Wherefore, it may seme by good reason, that the Golde, Apes, and Elephantes teeth which were broughte from *Tharfis* (yf it were *Tharfis of Cilicia*) were not engendered there, but rather brought thether by merchauntes from the fouth partes of the world, out of Mauritania, Marmarica, Ethiopia, Libia, and Arabia, or otherwise by lande, from the East India, lyke as at this daye, the greate multitude of Spyces, Golde, Precious stones, Sylke, and Iuerye, whyche is at Calicut and Cambaia, growe not al in the regions there about, but are brought thether from dyuers other countreys, as doeth more largely appeare in this Boke. And that Salomons factoures for exchange of other marchaundyfe, bought the same in *Tharfis*, beyng brought thether from other countreys, as it is written in the thyrede Boke of the Kinges, that Salomon had great plentie of Gold of Marchauntes and Apothecaries. So that to conclude, I would rather thinke (sauiug reformacion of other better learned) that this *Tharfis* (and not *Tharfis of Cilicia*,) from whence Salomon had so great plentie of Gold and Iuerie, were rather some other countrey in the fouth partes of the world, then this *Tharfis of Cilicia*. For, not onely olde and newe Histories, dayly experience, and the principles of natural Philosophie doe agree, yat the places most apte to bring forth gold, spices, and precious stones, are the South and Southeast partes of the world, but also our Sauour Christ approueth the same, declaring that the Quene of the South (meaning the Quene of Saba) came from the vtmoste partes of the worlde to heare the wyfdom of Salomon. And lyke as by the auctoritie of these woordes it is playne from what partes of the world she came, the same to a philosophical head is apparent by suche ryches and presentes as she broughte with her. For albeit that in the Chronacles of Salomon it is not written by expressed wordes that she came from the Southe, yet is it wrytten that she came to Hierusalem with a very great trayne, with camels laden with spyces, swete odours, and exceeding much gold and precious stones, which descripcion doeth well agree, both with the situacion of the cytie of Saba in *Ethiopia* vnder Egypt: and also with the countrey of Saba, being in the middel of Arabia, inuironned about with great rockes wherein is a great wood of Precious trees, some of Cinomome and Cassia, and some bringing forth frankencense and myrre, as writeth *Plinius lib. 12.* and *Theophrastus li. 9. de Hist. Plant.* Wherefore the Quene of Saba myghte worthely be called the quene of the South, forasmuch as bothe Saba (or rather Sabat) in *Ethiopia*, whiche Iosephus thinketh to be the Iland of *Meroe*, now called *Eifaba*, beinge in the ryuer of *Nilus*, and that the quene came from thence, and also Saba in Arabia, are situate farre Southwarde from Hierusalem, euen in maner in the middel of the lyne, called *Tropicus Cancrici*, and the *Equinoctial* lyne, where the Pole Artike is eleuate not passing. 13. degrees or thereabout (as in *Meroe*) where as the same pole is eleuate at Hierusalem. 32. degrees: whereby it may appeare yat the quene of Saba (whom Christe calleth the quene of ye south,) came from the fouth partes about. xi. hundreth and. xl. miles from Hierusalem for the same distaunce is from Saba in *Meroe* to Hierusalem, as betwene Rome and England. But as touching this matter, it shall suffyse to haue sayde thus muche. Nowe therefore to returne home from these farre countreys, and to speake somewhat of this viage which oure countreyenne, haue attempted to sayle into the Easte partes, by the coastes of Norway, Lappia, and Finmarchia, and so by the narrowe tracte of the Sea by the coastes of Grouelande, into the frosen sea, called *Mare Congelatum*, and so forth to Cathay (yf any suche passage may be found) whiche onely doubteth doeth at this daye discourag many saynte hearted men, speciallye because in the moste parte of Globes and Mappes they see the continente or fyrme land, extended euen to the North Pole without any such passage. Which thing ought to moue no man greatly, forasmuch as the most parte of Globes and mappes are made after Ptolomeus Tables: Who, albeit he was an excellent man, yet were there many thinges hyd from his knowledge, as not sufficientely tryed or searched at those daies, as manifestly appeareth in that he knew nothing of *America* with the hole fyrme lande adherent thereunto, which is nowe found to be the fourth parte of the earth. Neyther yet knew he any thinge of the passage by the Weste into the Easte, by the strayghtes of *Magellanus* as you shal reade in this Boke. Neyther of the Ilandes in the Weste Occan Sea, nor of the Ilandes of *Molucca* situate in the mayne Easte Indian Sea. And as touchinge this passage, albeit, it were not knowen in Ptolomeus dayes yet other auctors of later time, who perhaps haue hadde further experience of the thing (as good reason is) doe wryte not onely that there is a passage by the Northe Sea into the mayne Easte Sea, but doe also further declare, howe certayne shippes haue safely sayled throughe the same, as *Pius secundus* (otherwyse called *Aeneas Siluius*) an excellent auctour descrybeth in his Boke of Cosmographie, where he hath these wordes folowing. Of the North Ocean Sea, whether it may be sayled aboute or not, the contencion is greater, yet is it apparaunte that the greateste parte thereof aboute Germanie, hath been searched by the commaundemente of Augustus th[e]mperour, euen vnto the promontorie or landes ende of the people, called *Cimbri*. The seas also and coastes of *Caspia* were so searched during the warres of the *Macedonians* vnder the dominion of *Seleucus* and *Anthiocus*, that al

most all the North on euery fyde was fayled about. Plinie rehearfe the testimonie of Cornelius Nepos, who wryteth that the King of Suenia (or Swethelande) gaue to *Metellus celer*, proconfull or leauetenaunte of Fraunce, certayne Indians or menne of Inde, whiche faylinge out of India for marchaundyse, were by tempest driuen into Germanie. We also reade in Otho, that vnder th[e] empyre of the Germanes, there was a shippe of Indians taken in the North sea of Germanie, and driuen thither by contrary wynd from the East partes: which thing coude by no meanes haue comen to passe, yf (as many menne thinke) the North sea were not nauigable by reafon of extreme cold and Ice. And these be the very wordes of *Pius Secundus*, whereunto I adde, that thys, notwithstandinge, yf it should so chaunce, that ether there can no such passage be found, or the same so dangerous, or otherwyse that the very cutte thereof by which onely perhappes any shippes might passe, could not be founde, yea, or to caste the worste, yf they shoulde perishe in this viage, yet I woulde wishe all men to be of such corage and constancie in these affayres, as are valiaunt capitaynes in the warres: who, yf by misfortune they take a foyle, doe rather studie how by some other wayes to recouer theyr honour and reputacion diminished by the same, then with shame, losse, and dishonour, euer afterwarde to geue place to theyr enemyes, or forweare the warres. Wherefore, to conclude, yf no good can be done this way, it were worthy the aduenture to attempt, yf the same viage may bee broughte to passe, another waye, as by the strayght called *Fretum trium fratrum*, westward and by North from England, whiche viage is sufficiently knowen to suche as haue any skyll in Geographie. As for other landes and Ilandes in the west sea, where the Eagle (yet not in euery place) hath so fpled his winges, that other poore byrdes may not without offence feke theyr praye within the compasse of the same, I wyll speake nothing hereof, bycause I wold be loth to lay an egge, wherof other men might hatche a serpent. Wherefore to let this passe, and to entre into another matter. Forasmuch as in these our daies hath chaunced so great a secret to be found, as the like hath neuer been knowen or heard before, (what soeuer God meant to kepe this mistery hyd so long) I thoughte it good to speake somewhat hereof: trusting yat the pleasaunt contemplacion of the thing it selfe, shal make the length of this preface lesse tedious, especially yf it find a reader whose soule delyteth to prayse God in his workes. The thing therefore is this, how the hole globe of the world (of the earth and water I meane) hath been fayled aboute, by the West into the East, as doth more largely appeare in this boke in the nauigacions of *Magellanus*, who from Spayne sayled Westward to the Ilandes of *Molucca* being in the East sea, farre beyond ye furthest partes of East India: and the portugales came to the same Ilandes from Spayne sayling Eastward by the coastes of Aphrica, Arabia, and the vtermoost India beyond the ryuer of *Ganges* where, in yat Indian sea the sayd Ilandes of *Molucca* are situate. A thing surely most wonderful, and in maner incredible, but that the fame is proued most certayne by experience, the teacher and mestres of all sciences, for lacke of whose ayde (experience I meane) lyke as many greate wittes haue fallen into great errorrs, so by her ayde, many base and common wittes haue attained to the knowledge and practife of such wonderfull effectes, as could hardely be comprehended by the discourse of reafon. Which thing or other lyke, I suppose was the cause why the noble Philosopher Aristoteles sayde: *Quod nihil est in intellectu quod non fuit prius in sensu*, that is, that nothing is in vnderstandinge, but the same was fyrst in sense, that is to saye subiect to ye senses. Yet would I not that any rashe witte shoulde hereby take holde, as though eyther Aristotle or I, meant that sense were more excellent then reafon, but rather that reafon vsing sense, taketh his principles and fyrst sedes of thinges sensyble, and afterwarde by his owne discourse and searching of causes, encreaseth the same from a feede to a tree, as from an acorne to an oke. Nought els to say, but that experience to be most certayn which is ioyned with reafon or speculation, and that reafon to be most sure which is confirmed with experience, accordinge as the Phisicians determen in theyr science, that neyther practyse is safe without speculation, nor speculation without practyse. Wherefore, whereas men of great knowledge and experience, are to great affaires, theyr attemptes haue for the moste parte good succeffe, as doeth moste playnly appeare in all histories: notwithstanding that some ignoraunt men wyl alledge that certayn rashe aduentures haue prospered well: which sayinge proneth no more then yf a man should say, that twise or thrise a man vnarmed slew a man armed (as dyd sometyme the wyld Irishmen at bullen) Ergo, it were better to fight vnarmed then armed. And wheras I haue here spoken of knowledge ioyned with experience, I meane by knowledge yat which we commonly call learning, whether it be gotten out of bokes (which are the writings of wyse and expert men) or otherwyse by conference and educacion with such as are lerned: meaning nought els by learning, but ye gathering of many mens wittes into one mans head, and the experience of many yeres, and many mens lyues, to the lyfe of one, whom we call a learned, wyse, and expert man. The which defynicion and effect of learning, the noble and lerned cortier Baltassar Castaglione (the auctour of the boke called in the Italian tongue *il cortegiono*.) diligently consideringe, doeth greatlye blame and reprove the frenshmen in that they thinke yat the knowledge of letters doeth hinder the affayres of warre, ye which perswasion he proueth by many reafons and examples to be most false. But as concerninge the matter whereof this boke entreateth the greate Philosopher Albertus Magnus, onelye by learninge, wythoute

Plinius.
Cornelius Nepos.
Suenia, called also
Suetia nere vnto
gothland and
norway.

A ship of Indians
driuen from the
East into the North
seas.

The viage to
Cathay
Westward and
by north.

The earth
compassed about

The viage of
Magellanus.
The Ilandes of
Molucca.

Experience, ye
teacher of al
sciences.

Sense and
vnderstandinge.

A sentence of
Aristotell.

Experience ioyned
with speculation

A particuler
proueth no
vniuersall.

What is
knowledge and
learning

Baltassar
Castaglione.
A false
perswasion of ye
Frenshmen.

Albertus Magnus

Temperat regions
vnder ye
Equinoctial line.

An error of S.
Augustine and
Lactantius.
Antipodes.
Apianus.

Lactantius.

The roundnes of
ye earth.
S. augustyne.

Apianus.

The apostles,
Antipodes the
one againste
th[e]other.

The Spanyardes
and the Indians
are *Antipodes*.

S. augustine of
the heresie of
Manicheus.
S. augustines
boke of retractes.

Mountaynes, let
not ye roundnes
of the earth.
A galle.

A Sentence of S.
augustines.

Commendacion of
s. augustin

Lactantius.

experyence, affirmed that habitable or temperate Regions myghte be vnder the Equinoctial or burninge lyne, as appeareth in hys Boke *de Natura locorum*, contrarye to the opinion of other wryters whyche were before hys tyme, and yet is nowe proued by experyence to bee moſte true, albeit not in all places vnder the ſayde lyne, the cauſe whereof were here to longe to declare. And lyke as Albertus Magnus by knowledge of Aſtronomye (wherein he excelled) came to the vnderſtandinge hereof, euen ſo that greate Clerke (but better dyuyne then Phyloſopher) Sayncte Auguſtynne and alſo Lactantius, for lacke of lyke knowledge in that ſcience, fell into a chyldiſhe erreure, denyng that there is anye people, called Antipodes, of whom the greate Aſtronomer of our tyme, Apianus wryteth in thys maner. Antipodes are they, whyche walke wyth theyr fete dyrectelye contrarye agaynſte oures, and haue the heauen dyrectelye ouer theyr heades as we haue. Yet haue we nothinge common wyth them, but all thinges contrarye: for when the Sunne cauſeth Sommer wyth vs, then is it Myddewynter wyth them: and when it is day wyth vs, it is nyghte wyth them: And when the daye is longeſte wyth vs, then is the longeſte nyghte wyth them, and the ſhorteſte daye. Whiche, Lactantius, a manne otherwyſe well learned, in his thyrde Booke, Capitulo foure and twentye, childiſſhelye erringe, wyth hys lyghte and opinionate argumentes, denyeth that there is anye fuche, and mocketh the Aſtronomers, becauſe they affyrme the earth to bee rounde, whiche neuertheleſſe they proue wyth moſte certayne and apparente demonſtracions of Geometrye, and vnſayleable experymentes. Whome, Sayncte Auguſtynne folowing, in his fixtenth Booke. *de Ciuitat. Dei. Capittu. ix.* wryteth after thys forte. Suche as fable that there is Antipodes, that is to ſaye, menne of the contrarye parte, where the funne ryſeth when it falleth to vs, and to haue theyr feete agaynſte oures, we oughte by no reaſon to beeleue. Thoſe bee the woordes of Sayncte Auguſtynne. Nothwithſtandinge (ſayeth Apianus) putte thou no doubtte Gentle Reader, that the Apoſtles of Chriſte were Antipodes the one to the other, and ſtode feete to feete the one agaynſte the other, when Iames th[e]elder and brother to Iohn the Euangelifte, the ſonne of Zebedeus, was in Spayne in Galitia, and Thomas the Apoſtle in the hygher India, they were moſte certaynelye Antipodes, walking feete to feete one agaynſte the other, almoſt as directly as a diametrical lyne. For the Spanyardes are Antipodes to the Indians, and the Indians in lyke maner to the Spanyardes. Which thinge alſo the excellente and aunciente Auctour Strabo conſfirmeth to bee true, and likewiſe Plinius *Nat. Hiſt. lib. 2. Cap. 67.* Dolateranus alſo, and all other Coſmographers and Aſtronomers. Hetherto Apianus: and to declare my opinion in fewe woordes, I thinke it no greate marueyle that Saincte Auguſtynne ſhoude fall into an erreure in the ſcience of Aſtronomie in whiche he trauayled but as a ſtraunger, forasmuche as he erred in many thinges in diuinitie which was his chief profeſſion: and was longe of the hereſye of *Manicheus* beefore he was conuerted by Saincte Ambroſe: and wrytte alſo at the lengthe a Booke of retractes, in which he correcteth hys owne errours. And I beleue playnely that, that excellent witte of hys, could not haue remayned in yat errour yf he had been wel exercyfed in Aſtronomy, or had knowen any fuche experyence as is ſpoken of here beefore, howe the Spanyardes by the Weſte and the Portugales by the Eaſte compaſſed aboute the earth, whiche coude neuer haue come to paſſe yf the earth were not rounde (*Quantum ad maximas ſui partes*) as they call it. For, as for hylles and Mountaynes, though they be neuer ſo greate, yet in reſpecte to the byggenes of the earth, they doe no more lette the roundneſſe hereof, then doe the litle knobbes of the berrye, which we call a galle, lette the roundneſſe of the ſame. Wherefore I am certaynelye perſwaded, that yf Sayncte Auguſtynne had continued hys ſtudye in Aſtronomye (as it hadde been pytye he ſhoude) or were alyue at thys daye, he woulde alſo haue retracted this erreure. But yf here anye ſuperſticious head ſhall thinke it a heynous matter in any poynte to contrarye Saincte Auguſtynne, lette hym hearken howe Auguſtynne hym ſelſe ſayeth: that he wyll neyther hys wrytyngeſ or other mennes, of howe greate name or fame ſoouer they be, otherwiſe to be beleued then the ſame ſhall, by reaſon bee approued to be true: *Neque quorumlibet diſputaciones, &c.* And lyke as the greate Philoſopher Ariſtotel, when he wryte agaynſte hys mayſter Plato of the queſtion *de Idais*, and agaynſte Socrates who by the oracle of Apollo was proued to be moſt wyſe, and certayne of hys frendes aſked hym why he durſte be ſo boude, he answered that Plato was hys frende, and ſo was Socrates: but trueth hys frende more then they bothe, euen ſo I thinke it no iniurye nor contumelye to Sayncte Auguſtynne, yf the ſame were ſayde of hym alſo geuyng hym otherwyſe hys dewe commendacions, as he was ſurelye an excellente man, of dyuyne witte, and knowledge, and ſo trauayled in fettyng ſoorth Chriſtes true Relygion in thoſe turmoylous dayes, in perpetual combatte, agaynſte learned heretykes and Prynces of the worlde, that he is worthelye called a Doctour and Pyller of Chriſtes Church. And as for Lactantius, the intente of whoſe wrytyngeſ was chieflye to thys ende, to dyminiſhe th[e]ſtimacion of Philoſophye, (as at thoſe dayes it was neceſſarie to doe amonge the Gentyles) and to aduaunce Goddes worde, (whyche they contemned for the ſimplicite of the ſame,) albeit, he attempted as farre as hys learninge woulde ſerue hym, to make all thynges in Philoſophy vncertayne, yet are hys argumentes ſo ſlender, that vnleſſe GOD by the ſecrete working of hys ſpyryte, hadde called the Gentyles to the true Faythe, I feare me leaſte fewe or none of them, (ſpecyallye of the greate wyttes) woulde haue been conuerted by Lactantius

argumentes. Howe he dalyeth in denyinge the yearth to bee rounde, and that it is poffyble that it myghte bee longe and rounde, (lyke an Egge,) or otherwyfe longe and holowe lyke a bote, (meanynge I fuppose that the Sea myghte bee conteyned in the holownesse of the fame, wyth fuche other opinyons grounded of no reason, it were to longe to rehearse. Yet, forasmuche as he was a learned manne, and for the better fatiffyinge of fuche wyttes as are defyreous to know some apperaunce of truth by naturall reafon and demonftracions, lette vs admytte that the earth were rounde after anye of thofe faffhions whiche he defcrybeth: yet can it not bee denied, but that it is conteyned wythin the holowenesse (yf I maye fo call it) of the ayre, hanynge the heauen in euerye place dyrectelye ouer euery parte of the fame, as fayeth the Poete and Philofopher *Virgill*, *Cælum undique fursum*: Excepte perhappes Lactantius shoulde thinke that it honge by some thyng, or were otherwyfe borne vppe wyth pyllers as the Poetes Fable, that the Gyaunte *Atlas* beareth the worlde on hys shoulders, whereby they meane that a manne of valiente mynde muft stoutelye beare the chaunces of the worlde. Of whyche hangeinge or bearynge of the earth, I reade a better and more true fayinge in the holye Scripture, where it is written, *Fert omnia uerbo oris fui*, that is, that God fustayneth and beareth all thinges with the woorde of hys mouth.

Holye Iob also fayeth, that the LORD stretcheth out the Northe ouer the emptye, and hangeth the earth vpon nothyng: Meaninge by nothyng, the ayre, becaufe to oure fenfes it appeareth in maner as nothyng: Or otherwyfe that it is not dependynge of anye other subftaunce, but to bee fustayned onelye by the power of GOD who hath appoynted the Elementes theyr places and lymittes, and caufeth the heuye to flande fafte: as wytnesseth Moyfes in hys fonge, fayinge: By the wynde of thy noftrils the waters gathered together, the flouddes floode styll as an heape, and the deepe water congeled together in the heart of the Sea. Wherefore yf the heauen be rounde (whiche no manne can reasonablye denye that euer fawe the Sunne and fterres moue.) And yf the earth bee the center of the worlde dependinge as we haue fayde beefore, then muft it needes folowe, that they whiche inhabitinge the Northwefte partes of the earth, haue the Pole Artike eleuate thyrtye degrees, muft needes bee Antipodes to them whiche inhabitinge the Southeafte partes of the earth, haue the Pole Antartike eleuate in the fame degree, and fo the lyke to bee vnderftand of all other eleuacions and degrees. And yf here anye wyll obiect, that eyther the earth or firme land is not fo large, or fo farre extended, or other wyfe not inhabited although it were fo large, or that the fea is greater then the lande, to thys I aunfwere, that no man knoweth further hereof then is tryed and founde by experience, as we haue fayde beefore. And albeit that the fea were larger then the firme lande, yet forasmuche as there are Ilandes founde in all places of the mayne Sea, and in maner all inhabited, there is no reason to the contrarye, but that the people of thofe Ilandes maye be Antipodes to fuch as dwel on the fyrme lande, on the contrarye parte, whether the earth bee round and longe, yea or fquare, (yf you wyll) notwythftandyng. But wyth what certayne demonftracions the Astronomers and Geometricians, proue the earth to bee rounde, and the Sphericall or rounde forme to bee moofte perfecte, it were to longe to declare. I wyll therefore make an ende of thys matter wyth the fayinge of Sayncte Paule in hys Oracion, to the menne of Athens. That GOD made of one bloudde, all nacions of menne, to dwell vpon the hole face of the earth.

¶ I hadde entended here (well beeloued Reader) to haue fpoken fomewhat of fuche ftraunge thynges and Monsters, whereof mencion is made in thys Booke, to th[e]nde that fuche as by the narownes of theyr vnderftandyng are not of capacitie to conceaue the caufes and natures of thynges, myghte partelye haue been fatiffyed wyth some fenfyble reafons. But beyng at thys tyme otherwyfe hindered, it fhall fuffife al good and honeft wittes, that whatfoeuer the Lorde hath pleafed, that hath he done in heauen and in earth, and in the Sea, and in all depe places.

¶ Ecclesiasticus. Capit. i.

¶ *The eye is not fatisfied with fyght, and the eare is not fylled with hearinge.*

Of the roundnesse
of ye earth.

The earth hangeth
in ye aire

The fable of
Atlas.

The word of God
beareth vppe the
worlde.

Iob. 26.

The elementes.

Exo. xv.

The eleuation of
the pole.

The largenes of
the earth.

Ilandes

Astronomers and
Geometricians.

Act. xvij

Psa. 135

C *The Table.*

C Of the Ilande of Iaua.	[p. 23.]
Of the Ilande of Madagafcar.	[p. 23.]
Of the Ilande of zanzibar.	[p. 23.]
Of the two Ilandes in the which men and women dwell a funder.	[p. 24.]
Of the mightie Empyre of Cathay, fubiect vnder the dominion of the great Cham or Cane, Emperour of Tartaria.	[p. 24.]
Of certayn Prouinces fubiect vnder the dominion of the great Cham.	[p. 25.]
Of the Prouince of Mangi.	[p. 26.]
Of the Region of Tangut.	[p. 26.]
Of the newe Ilandes, howe, when, and by whom they were founde.	[p. 28.]
Of the two Ilandes Iohanna and Hispana.	[p. 28.]
Of the Canibales, which eate mens fleshe.	[p. 29.]
Of the maners of the inhabitantes of Hispana.	[p. 29.]
Howe Christophorus Columbus, after that he had founde the newe Ilandes, returned to Spayne : and preparing a new nauie, failed agayn to ye Canibales.	[p. 29.]
Howe Columbus the Admiral, passed many Ilandes and what chaunced to hym and his in that viage.	[p. 30.]
Of the newe India, as it is founde and knowen in thefe oure dayes.	[p. 13.]
Of the Adamant fstone, otherwife called the Diamant.	[p. 14.]
Of the Kingdoms and cities of Narfinga and Canonor	[p. 14.]
Howe the Elephantes in India are prepared to the warres.	[p. 15.]
Of the beafte called Rhinoceros.	[p. 16.]
Of Calicut, the moſte famous markette towne of India.	[p. 16.]
Of the maners of the Indians in Calicut.	[p. 17.]
Of Pepper and other fpyces which growe in the Region of Calicut.	[p. 18.]
Of the byrdes and beaftes which are found in the Region of Calicut : and of the wyne of the tree.	[p. 19.]
From whence all kyndes of fpyces are brought to the cytie of Calicut.	[p. 20.]
Of the Iland of zaylon, and of the cinomome tree.	[p. 20.]
Of the cytie of Tarnafferri, and of the maners of the cytezyns.	[p. 20.]
Of the excellent cytie and Kingdom of Pego.	[p. 21.]
Of the Ilande of Sumatra, or Taprobana.	[p. 22.]
Of the Ilande of Bornei.	[p. 22.]
Of the Ilande of Giaua.	[p. 23.]
Howe the Spanyardes abufed the fubmiſſion and frendſhip of the inhabitauntes of the Ilandes.	[p. 31.]
Howe the Portugales foughte newe Ilandes in the Eaſt partes, and howe they came to Calicut.	[p. 32.]
Howe Magellanus by a ſtrayght or narrow arme of the Sea, fayled by the Weſte into the Eaſte to dyuers Ilandes, where alfo he was ſlayne.	[p. 33.]
Howe the Spanyardes came to the Ilandes of Molucca, and of the people with great hanging eares.	[p. 34.]
The third nauigacion of Christophorus Columbus.	[p. 35.]
[Howe Petrus Alonfus foughte newe Ilandes.	[p. 36.]
Howe Pinzonus companion to the Admiral, fought newe Ilandes.	[p. 36.]
The foure nauigacions of Americus Veſputius to the newe Ilandes.	[p. 37.]
The fyrſte viage of Veſputius.	[p. 37.]
The ſecond viage of Veſputius.	[p. 38.]
The thyrde viage of Veſputius.	[p. 39.]
The fourth viage of Veſputius.	[p. 39.]
Howe the Kyng of Portugale ſubdued certayne places in India, and of the ryche cytie of Malacha.	[p. 40.]
Of the Ilande of Medera, and the fortunate Ilandes, otherwyfe called the Ilandes of Canaria.	[p. 40.]
[Whether vnder the Æquinoccial circle or burninge lyne (called Torrida Zona) be habitable Regions.	p. 41.]

C *Finis.*

¶ Of the newe India,

as it is knowen and found in these our dayes.

In the yeare of oure Lorde. M.D.LIII.

After the description of Sebastian Munster in
his Booke of the vniuerfall Cosmographie.

Libr. v. De terris Asia Maioris.

And translated into Englishe

by Richard Eden.



Here are two viages or nauigacions made oute of Europa into India. The one southeast from spayne, by the coastes of Aphrica and Ethiopia, euen vnto Arabia to the citie called Aden. And from thence to the Ilande of Ormus, and from Ormus to the citie of Cambaia, and from thence euen vnto the citie of Calicut. Cambaia is situate nere vnto the floudde *Indus*. This citie is of great powre, riche, and abundaunt in al kyndes of grayne and corne. The foyle hereof bringeth forth sondry kyndes of swete oyntmentes, and cotten which groweth on certain trees called *Gofsampini*, this cotton, is otherwyse called *Bombage* or fylke of the trees. The Kyng of Portugall subdued this cytie, and bylded hard by the same a strong fortresse: with which thing the Turke beeing fore greued, commaunded a greate nauie of shippes with greate sumptuousnes to bee furnished in the goulfe called *Sinus Arabicus*: to the ende that he might dryue the Portugalles out of India, and the better to accom-
plishe this his purpose, he appointed one Soliman a noble man of

warre (beyng also the Captayne of Alcayre,) to be the admiral general, or gouernour of his nauie, hauing in his retenue. xx. thousand fouldiers beeyde mariners and gonners, whiche were in nombre foure thousand. This nauie was appointed in the hauen Suezio, beeing a port of the redde sea, in the yeare of Christ. 1538. And arryued fyrste at the citie Aden: where laying anker, the gouernour of the nauie sent letters to the king of Aden, certifying him that he woulde take his viage into India, from thence to expell the King of Portugall. The Kinge of Aden whiche was then tributarye to the King of Portugall, receyued the Turkes letters thankfully, offering him felse and all that he might make, to so mightie an Emperoure, desyringe the gouernoure to come forth of the ship, and to beholde the cytie obedient and readye at his commaundement, in the which also accordinge vnto his dignitie and office, he should be worthely interteyned: but the gouernour agayne allured and entyfed hym to come out of his citie, and so by crafte circumvented him, that he toke him priefoner, and commaunded him to be hanged on the fayle yarde of the shyp, and with hym foure other of the rulers of the citie of Aden, affirming that he was commaunded of the Turke so to handel them, because the cytiezins of Aden had not only made a leage with the Portugales, but had also payde them tribute: whiche nacion the Turke playnely entended to drieue out of India. And thus after the Kynges death, that most riche and beautiful cytie, was euer a praye to theues, spoylers, and murtherers without resyflaunce. Then the gouernoure departing from thence, lefte there behynde him a garrison of two thousand men of warre, and saylyng forwarde on hys viage, he came to the citie called *Dium*, whiche the Portugales held: and his armie was greatly encreased by the waye, as wel by land as by sea, by reason of the great confluence of the Turkes which on euery side reforted to him, so that in a short space they rowled before them a bulwarke or countremure of earth, in maner as bigge as a mountayne, which by little and litle they moued neare vnto the trenche or ditche of the castell, so that they might safely stand behynde the bulwarke, (thus rayfing a mount,) they besieged the castell on euery fyde, and battered the wallles and towres thereof very fore: yet that notwithstanding, were at the length, enforced to departe, not withoute greate losse and slaughter of theyr fouldiers: for this *Dium*, is the strongest citie that is vnder the dominion of

The —
ther is
Southweste.

The citie of
Cambaia

Calicut.

Gossipium,
Bombage or
cotton of the trees.

The turkes nauie
agaynste the
king of Portugale.

The cytie of Aden.

The kinge of
Aden is hanged.

The destruction
of the citie of
Aden.

The turke
besiegeth the
cytie of *Dium*.

The turke is
repulsed.

The excellencie
of the cite of
Cambaia.

Lacha is gumme
of a tree, and is
vsed in dying of
silke.

The Kyngdom of
Ioga.

The Kyngdom of
Dechan.

The diamonde
stone.

Cambaia: but the cytie of Cambaia, is situate in the goulfe called *Guzerat*, and is well inhabited, and in maner most excellent of all the cities of *India*, and is therefore called *Cayrus*, or *Alcayr*, or *Babilon* of *India*. It is enuironned with a walle, and hath in it very fayre byldinges. Ye Soldan or chefe ruler hereof, is of Mahumets secte as are ye Turkes. *Lacha* groweth there more plentifully then in any other countre. The inhabitauntes, for the moste parte goe naked, couering only theyr priuie partes: they bynd theyr heades about with a clothe of purple color. The Soldan or prince of this citie, hath in a redines for the warres. xx. thousand horsemen, he hath also a mightye and magnifical court. When he waketh in ye morning there is heard a great noyfe of cimbals, drumflades, timbrelles, fflames, pipes, flutes, trumpettes, and diuerse other muscal instrumentes, hereby signifying that the king lyueth and is in health and merye: in lyke maner doe they whyle he is at dyner. To the kyngdom of *Cambaia*, is the Kingdom of *Ioga* nexte adioyning, which reacheth farre on euerye fide. In this kingdom, by reason of the greate heate of the fonne, the bodies of men begin to waxe blacke and to be scorched: the people of thys countreye haue ringes hanging at their eares and colers aboute theyr neckes of fundry sortes, al befet and shyninge with precious stones. The foyle hereof is not very fruitful, this region is rough with mountaynes, the byldinge[s] are despicable, and euyl to dwel in: there is beyonde this, another Kingdom called *Dechan*: this cytie is very beautiful to behold, and fruitful in maner of al thinges: the king hereof vseth great pride, and folemnitie: his pompes and triumphes are in maner incredible, they that wayt vpon the kinge, weare on the vpper partes of theyr shoes certayne shyninge precious stones, as *Piropi* (whiche are a kind of Rubies or Carbuncles) with Diamandes and such other. But what maner of Iewelless they vse in ye stede of collers, earerings, and ringes, you may well confyder, whereas they geue fuche honour to theyr fete. In this kingdom is said to be a mountayne, out of the which Diamandes are digged.

¶ Of the Diamande stone, called in Latine Adamas.

The stone
Siderites.

The hardnes of
the diamond.

How the diamand
is made softe.

The montayne of
diamantes.



The Diamande is engendred in the mynes of *India*, *Ethiopia*, *Arabia*, *Macedonia*, and *Cyprus*, and in the golde mynes of the same countries. That of *India* excelleth all other in beautie and clearenes: that which is of the coloure of yron, is called *Siderites*, it is often tymes found in colour like vnto cristall, and though it be sometimes lyke thereto in whytnes, yet doth it differ from cristall in hardnes, in so much that if it be layd vpon an anuil and strongly stricken with a hammer, the anuyl and hammer shall foner be wounded and leape away, then the stone perished or diminished: it doth not onelye refuse the forge of Iron, but also resisteth the power of fyre, whose heate is so farre vnable to melte it, that it can not so muche as heate it, if we geue credit to Plinie, and is also rather made purer therby, then anye wayes defyled or corrupted: neuertheles, the finguler and excellent hardnes of this stone, is made so softe with ye hoate blood of a Goate or a Lyon, that it may be broken: and if it be put with molten lead in hoate fornaces, it waxeth so hoate that it wylbe diffolued: yet are not all Diamandes of such hardnesse, for that of *Cyprus*, and also that of the coloure of Iron called *Siderites*, may be broken with hammers and perced with another Diamand: his vertue is to bewray poisons, and to frustrate th[e]opperacion therof, and beeing therefore greatly esteemed of Kinges and Princes, it hath euer been of great price. The mountaine of *India* out of the which the Diamandes are digged, is compaffed with a walle on euery fyd, and kepte with a strong defence.

¶ Of the kingdoms and cities of *Narsinga* and *Canonor*.

The cite of
Narsinga.

The kinge of
Narsinga.



The King of *Narsinga*, in riches and dominion excelleth all other Kinges in those partes. The chiefe cytie where the King is resident, is in situacion and fynenes, much lyke vnto the cytie of *Milayne*, but that it standeth in a place somewhat declyning and lesse equall. This king hath euer in a redines manye thousandes of men of armes, as one that is euer at warre with other countreys, borderers nere aboute him. He is geuen to moste vile Idolatrie, and honoureth the deuyll, euen as doth the king of *Calicut*. The maners and fashions of the inhabitantes, are after this sorte. The gentlemen or such as are of greatest reuenewes, vse to weare an inward cote or peticote, not very long: hauing theyr heades bounde aboute with listes and rowles of fundry coloures after the Turkes. The common people, couer onli their priuie parts and are beyfde all together naked. The Kynge weareth on his head a flatly cap made of the riche cloth of *Asia*, beyng two handfulls in length. When he goeth to ye warres, he weareth a vesture of ye filke called *Goffampine*, which he couereth with a cloke adorned with plates of gold: ye hemme or edge of his cloke is befet with all maner of ouches and Iewelless. Hys horse is iudged to be of such valure if you respect ye price, as is one of

our cities. And this is by the meanes of ye innumerable multitude and fundrie kindes of precious stones, and perles wherewith ye trappers, barbes, and other furnitures of his horse are couered, with an incredible pompe and glori. The foyle of Narfinga, beareth nether wheate nor grapes, and is in maner without al kinde of fruites, except citrons and gourdes: the inhabitantes eate no bread, but ryce, fishe and fleshe, and also walnattes, which that countrey beareth, there begin spyces to be found, as ginger, pepper, mirabolanes, Cardamome, Cassia, and dyuers other kyndes of spyces.

Canano. is a very excellent cytie, fayre and beautifull in all things, fauing that the Kinge thereof is an Idolater. This citie hath a hauen whether the horses of Persia are brought, but theyr tribute or custome, is excedinge great: the inhabitantes lyue with ryce, fleshe, and fyshe as do they of Narfinga: in the warres they vse the sweorde, the round target, speares and bowes, and haue nowe also the vse of gones, they are all naked fauing their prieuie partes, and go beare headed, except when they goe to the warres, for then they couer theyr heades with a redde hatte which thei folde double, and bind it fast with a lyst or bande. In the warres they vse neither horse, mule, or affe, neither that kynde of camels which we commonly call dromedaries: but vse onely Elephantes. There is also in the kingdom of Narfinga another godly citie called *Bisnagar*: it is compassed aboute with a walle, and situate on the side of a hyll, beeyng. viij. myles in circuite hauinge also in it a famous market place. The foyle is very fruitful, there are all delicate thinges to be found that may encrease the pleasures of this lyfe. There maye no where be found more pleafaunt felde and woddes for hauking and huntinge, a man woulde thinke it were a very Paradyse of pleasure. The king of this citie is of great power, he keepeth dayly many thousandes of men at armes, vsinge Elephantes in the stede of horses. And hath euer foure hundreth Elephantes prepared for the warres.

¶ *How the Elephantes in India are prepared to warre.*



The Elephant is a beast very docible and apte to be taught, and little inferiour from humaine sense, excellenge all other beastes in fortitude and strength. Therefore ye Indians, when they prepare them to the warres, put great packfaddels vpon them, which they bind fast with two chaines of Iron, comming vnder theyr belyes. Vpon the packfaddels, they haue on euery side a little house or towre, or cage (if you list so to call it) made of wood. These towres ar made fast to the necke of the beaste with certayne sawed bordes of the thickenes of halfe a hande breath. Euery towre receyueth thre men. And betwene both the towres, vpon the back of the beast sitteth an Indian, a man of that countrey which speaketh vnto the beaste. For this beaste hath marueylous vnderstanding of the language of hys natyue countrey, and doth wonderfulli beare in memorie benefytes shewed vnto him. It is also moeste certayne that none other beaft draweth so nere to the excellence of humayne sence or reason as doeth this beaft, as maye most playnly appeare, yf we confidre, how he is geuen to loue and glory, to a certeyn frendly gentlenes and honest maners, ioyned with a marueylous discrecion, to know good from euil, more redy to recompence benefites then reuenge iniuries, which excellent properties are not to be found in other brute beastes. Therefore when the Elephantes go forward to ye warres, seuen armed men are appoynted to be caried vpon one Elephant, bearing with them, bowes, iauelins, sweordes and targettes: also the longe snout of the Elephant (which thei cal his hand) is armed with a sweorde of two cubites in length, and in bredth and thickenes a handfull, standinge righte forth, tyed faste to the snowte of the beaft, and thus beeing furnished, they procede to the battaile: and whereas occasion requyreth to go forward or backwarde, the ruler of the beaft geueth him warninge, whose voyce he vnderstandeth and obeyeth: stryke hym, sayth the ruler, forbear hym, be searfe agaynst these, abstayne from these, the beaste obeyeth hym in all thinges, as though he had humayn reason, but yf it so chaunce that being made afrayd with fire (which thinge they feare aboute all other) they beginne to flye, they can by no meanes bee allured to stoppe theyr course, or retourne agayne, for the people of that nacion, can with many subtyl deuises as often as them listeth, raife vp fires to make those beastes afrayde. There be some men which thincke that Elephantes haue no ioyntes in theyr legges, which opinion other affirme to be vntrue, for they haue ioyntes as haue other beastes, but that they are very low and almost at their fete. The females are of greater fiercenesse then the males, and of much greater strength to beare burdens: they are sometime taken with madnes, declaring the fame by theyr furious running. An Elephant exceedeth in greatnes thre wilde oxen called *Bubali*, and is much lyke of heare, and eyed lyke a swine, hauing a long snout, hanging downward, with the which he putteth into his mouth whatfoeuer he eateth or drinketh, for his mouth is vnder his throte, not muche vnlyke the mouth of a swyne: his snowte hath holes in it, and is holowe within, with this they ouerthrow ye stumpes of trees: and that of fuche bignes, that the forse of xxiiij. men is not able to do the fame. The two great tuskes which they haue comming farre oute of theyr

The riche trapping of the kinges horse.

Spices of Narsinga.

The cytie of Cananor.

The vse of Elephantes in the warres.

The cytie Bisnagar.

Hauking and huntinge. The kinge of bisnagar.

The Elephantes towre.

Elephantes vnderstandeth the language of theyr countrei.

Senen armed men vpon one Elephant

The ruler speaketh to the Elephant.

The Elephantes ioyntes.

The bignes and shape of the Elephaut.

The painters erre herein.

Vnderstande the handbreadth with the thumbe stretched forth. The Elephantes pase.

The Elephant is vexed with flies.

How the Elephant kylleth flies.

Enmitie betwene the Elephant and *Rhinoceros*.

The *Rhinoceros* ii. hornes

The fight betwene *Rhinoceros* and the Elephant

Rhinoceros naturally armed.

Rhinoceros sene in Portugale.

Rhinoceros ouercometh the Elephant.

Lowe and simple houses.

mouth, or placed in the vpper iawe, hauinge on euery fyde lappes hanging downe of the bignes of two hand brea[d]th. Theyr fete are round like vnto a flat trene dishe, hauing fyue toes like hoeues vndeuided, of the bignes of great oystershelles. Theyr tayles are lyke vnto the tayles of wilde oxen, thre handful in length, hauing but few heares. The males are hygher then the females. They are of fundry bignes; some are of. xiiij. handfuller hye, some of xiiij. and some. xvi. Their pase in goyng, is somewhat slowe and walowinge, by reason whereof, some whiche ryde on them and haue not been accustomed thereto, are prouoked to vomitte, euen as they were tossed on the sea. Yet it is great plesure to ride on the yong Elephantes, for they goe as softely as ambeling moiles. When you attempt to geat vp, to ryde on them, they bow downe toward you, as though they would ease you with a sterope, that you may the easelier geat vp, which neuertheles cannot wel be done without helpe. They are all vnbridede hauinge neither withe nor coller aboute theyr neckes, but goe with theyr heades al together lose. And becaufe they are not couered with bristels or bigge heares, they haue not so muche as in theyr tayle anye helpe to dryue away flies. For euen this greate beaste also (saycth Plinie) is troubled with this lytle vermyne. Their skinne is very rowghe, and full of chappes, and riftes, like the barke of a tree, being fomwhat filthye and full of fwette, whiche by heate resolued into vapoure, by fauour draweth flies vnto it: therefore when any flies or other creeping vermen are entered into the fayde riftes of theyr skinned, fodeynly bending and drawing together their skinne, they hold them fast and kyl them, and this is to them in the stede of a tayle, a mane, or rough and bristeled heare.

¶ Of the beaste called *Rhinoceros*.



Rhinoceros is comonly found in the same countrey, where Elephantes are engendred, and is borne an enemy to the Elephant (as faith Plinie) no lesse feking his destruction then doth the dragon: wherfore the Romaynes considering the natures of these beastes, were wont to put them together vpon the theater or stage, for a spectacle, therby to declare the natures of enemies. This *Rhinoceros* hath two hornes, whereof the one is of notable bignes, growing oute of his nosethrilles, and is of flatte forme, and as harde as Iron. The other groweth aboue in his necke, and is but a little one, but wonderful strong: when this beast attempteth to inuade the Elephant, he fyleth and whetteth his horne on a stone and stryketh at the belly of the Elephant, which place he knoweth to be most open to his stripes, and easyest to receaue hurt, becaufe of the softenes thereof, which he cutteth with his horne as with a sweord. Some auctours write that *Rhinoceros* is vnequall in bignes to the Elephant: but *Iulius Solinus* faith, that he is as long as the Elephant, but hath shorter legges: when *Rhinoceros* therefore and the Elephant ioyne together in fighte, they vse theyr naturall weapons: the *Rhinoceros* his horne, and the Elephant his tuskes, wherewith he so violentlye beateth and teareth the skinne of *Rhinoceros* being as harde as horne or shell, and scarcelye able to be pearfed with a dart, that he neuertheles enforseth him to fall downe. *Rhinoceros* agayne on the other partie so woundeth the belye of the Elephant with the horne of hys nosethrilles, yf he doe not preuente hys strokes, yat he fainteth with bleding. In the yere of Christ. 1513. the first day of Maye, was broughte oute of India to Emanuel the king of Portugale *Rhinoceros* alyue, of the coloure of boxe, fomwhat variable and as it wer chekered, couered with shelles lyke scales, or rather lyke shieldes. This beast was in bignes equall to an Elephant, but had shorter legges, and was armed on euery parte. He had a stronge and sharpe horne in his nosethrilles, the whiche (as I haue sayde) he fyleth, when he prepareth him to fight. All this great hatred betwene these two beastes, is for ye best pastures which one striueth to take from the other as some wryters saye. In the yere of Christe. 1515. King Emanuel fet forth a spectacle in the cite of *Lisbona*, in which was a combat betwene the Elephant and *Rhinoceros*. A fight doubtlesse worthy great admiracion. But in this fight, the Elephant had the ouerthrowe.

¶ Of Calicut, the most famous market towne of India.



He cytie of *Calicut* is in the continente or mayne lande. And the houses therof adioyning to the sea. It is not walled about, but conteyneth in circuite. vi. thousand houses, not adherent together as the maner of bylding is with vs, but one being distant from another, a further space. It is extended in length a thousand pases. The houses thereof, are but simple and very lowe, not passinge the heygth of a manne on horsebacke from the grounde. In the stede of a rooffe, they are couered with bowes of trees, harde and thicke couched together, the cause hereof is, that yf the earth there be in anye place digged fyue handfull depth, the water

springeth forth, by reason wherof they can lay no depe foundacions for theyr houses, fufficiente to beare anye heauey rooffe. The Kinge of thys citie is geuen to Idolatrie, and honoureth the deuyll himfelf. Yet he denieth not but that there is a God which made heauen and earth. And the fame to be the chiefe auctour and fyrfte caufe of all thinges. But fayth that he hath committed the rule and iudgemente of the world, to the deuill, to whom he hath geuen power to rewarde men with good or bad according to their defertes. This deuill they cal *Deumo*, but the mightie God and maker of the world, they cal *Iamerani*. The king hath in his Chappell the Image of this deuyl *Deumi*, fytting with a diademe or crowne on his head, much lyke vnto the myter which the Romaine Bifhoppes weare, faue that this deuills myter hath foure notable hornes. He fytth gapinge and hath a greate wyde mouthe, with foure teeth and a deformed nofe, lowringe eyes, a grimme, terrible, and threatening countenance, with hooked handes lyke flefhehookes, and feete not much vnylike the feete of a cocke. Al fuch as behold this horrible monfter, are fodeynly aftonied. For it is furely a thing moft vyle to beholde, and no leffe terrible. The chappel is on euery fyde ful of painted deuyls : and in euery corner thereof fytth a deuyll made of copper, and that fo workemanly handeled, that he femeth like flaming fire, miserably confuming the foules of men. This deuyl with his righte hande, putteth a foule to his mouth, and with his lefte hand, he taketh another from a place beneth. Euery morning their Prieftes (called *Bramini*) washe the Image of the deuyll with rofe water, or fuch other fwete liquoure, and perfume hym with dyuerfe fwete fauours, kneeling on theyr knees and praying vnto him. Euerye feuenth day, thei take the bloud of a cocke and put it in a filuer veffel, ful of burning coales : addinge thereunto innumerable odoriferous gummes and pouders to make a fwete fmoke or fumigacion. Then the Priefte taketh his fenfer with burning coles, putting therto frankencense, and thus maketh his oblacion to Sathan, during which tyme of facrifice, a lyttle fyluer bell, is ronge continuallye. The king fyttheth not downe to his meate, vntyll foure of his chapleins haue offred parte of the fame meate to the deuyl. And when the Kyng goeth to dyner, he fyttheth on the grounde withoute eyther carpet or table cloth. And as he fyttheth at diner, foure of the prieftes wayte vpon him ftanding : not approchinge nere vnto hym by the diftaunce of foure pafes, geuing reuerent attendaunce vnto the kinges talke. When he hath dyned, the Prieftes take the meate that is left, and geue it to the crows to eate : which byrdes they haue in fuch eftimacion, yat it is not lawful to hurt them. When the king fhall marie a wife, he goeth not to bed with her, vntill ſhe be defloured of ye high Priefte, whom the king for his paines rewardeth with. v. C. [five hundred] pieces of golde.

The king honoreth the deuill.

The Image of the deuill.
The biffhop of Romes vicar at *Calicut*.

The deuill eateth foules.

The deuilles chaplins.

Sacrifice to the deuyl.

The chapleins offer to the deuyl.

The prieftes wait on the kyng.

Crowes had in eftimacion
The prieftes defloure ye queene.

¶ Of the maners of the Indians in *Calicut*.



Next after the King, ye prieftes which ferue ye Idols, are had in chiefe reuerence. Nexte vnto them, the Magiftrates, called *Nerl*, are no leffe eftemed then amonge vs Senatoures or Lordes of the counfayl. When thefe goe abroade, they cary with them fwordes, targettes, bowes and iauelins. Such as are counted of the thyrde order, are in like place with them, as are Artificers with vs. They of the fourth order, lyue by fifhing. And to them of the fyfthe order, perteyneth the gathering of pepper, wyne, and walnuttes. The bafeft and pooreft fort, are they which fowe and gather ryce, beyng contemned both of the prieftes and Senatours. The

Prieftes.
Magiftrates.

Artificers.
Labourers.

King, the Quene, and the inhabitantes of the cytie, haue almoft no apparel, couering onely their fylthy partes with cotton of the tree called *Goffampine*, and not with filke: and are befide altogether naked. They goe barefoted and bareheaded. When the King is dead, yf there remayne alyue any heyres, males, either children or brethren, or brethers children, they fuccede not in the kingdome: for by custome of the countrey, the fyfters fonnes are inheritours to ye crown: but yf there bee no fuche lyuinge, he fuccedeth in the kingdom which is neareft of bloud to ye king, of whiche cofume, the reafon is (as they faye) becaufe the Prieftes defloure the Quenes. When the King taketh any farre iourney, or rydeth a hunting, the Prieftes wayte vpon the Quene at home, and kepe her company: for nothinge can be more thankefull to the kyng, then to haue the Quene thus accuftomed in adulterye with the Prieftes, by whiche common profutucion of the quene, he maye well iudge that the chyldren borne of her, are not to be eftemed as his owne: and therefore affigneth the right of his inheritance to his fyfters children, as to the nereft of his bloude, becaufe his brothers children (as is fayd before) may not fuccede him in the kingdome by the custome of the countrey. The noble men and marchauntes vfe this fafhion among themfelues. Such as haue wyues, do often tymes change their wyues, one frende with another for th[e]ncrease of further frendfhip. At which exchaunging of wyues, one of them fpeaketh to another after this manner. Forafmuch as you are my veri frend, let vs change wyues: on fuch condicion, that I maye haue yours and you myne. The other asketh him yf he fpeake in earnest. He fwareth yea: let vs goe then (fayth his felow) to my houfe: when they are come thether, the good man calleth forth his wife, faying vnto her:

The fuccession of the kingdom.

As are ye prieftes, fuch is ye people.
The prieftes kepe the quene.

Exchaunging of wyues.

Obedience in
cuyll.

One woman
married to seuen
men.

The punishment
of murther.

Sinne redemed
for money.

Superstition.

Outward
clenlynes.

Deuylish
gestures.

Woman, come hether and folow this man: for he shall from henceforth be thy hufband. She asketh him yf he speake in earnest: he answereth, in good earnest. Then sayth the woman: I wil folowe him gladly. He taketh her away with him, and in lyke maner fendeth his wyfe to his frende. And this is the custome which thei vse in chaunging of wyues. But the children remaine with theyr fyrste father. Other of these Idolaters vse dyuerse other customes. For among some of them, one woman is married to seuen hufbandes, which lie with her by course one after another. And when she hath broughte forth a child, she fendeth it to whiche of her seuen hufbandes she list: who maye in no case refuse it. When they eate, they lye along on the grounde, and haue theyr meate in great dishes, or treys of copper. In the stede of spones, they vse leaues of trees. Their meate, is ryce, fishe, spyces, and frutes of the common sorte. Yf any man committe murther, and bee apprehended, he is punished after this maner.

They haue a kynde of gallows made, with a poste of the lengthe of foure pases: On the whyche, not farre from the toppe, are fastened two staues with sharpe endes, ye one lying ouer the other after the maner of a croffe: then the body of ye offender is thrust through vpon one of ye staues. And so the miserable wretche hangeth vntyll he haue geuen vpe the ghost. But yf any man wound another, or beate hym with a staffe, he redemeth th[e] offence, payinge to the king a certayn of golde. When they pray, they go fyrst before the ryng of the funne, to some ryuer or standinge water, wherein they plunge themfelues, to th[e] intent to washe them cleane: And so beeing washed, they touche nothing vntyll they haue at home at theyr houses, poured forth theyr prayers before theyr Idols. When they laye them selues down on the grounde, secretelly to praye, they make certayne deuylish gestures lyke vnto madde men, staring with theyr eyes, and turning them inward after a straunge sorte, wyth no lesse deforminge their countenance, very monstros to beholde. When the king prepareth him to ye warres he hath in a readynesse a hundreth thousand souldiers. For of horsemen they haue no vse, but only of such as fyght on Elephantes. Al that are of the Kinges bande, haue a silken fyllet of scarlet colour, tied about their heades. When thei go to the warres they vse round sweordes, targets, iauelins, and bowes.

¶ Of Pepper and other spices which growe in the region of Calicut.

Howe pepper
groweth



Pepper groweth in ye suburbes of the cite of *Calicut*. There is some also gathered within the cite. The stalke of pepper is veri weake: so that it can not stande vpryghte, without a stake or proppe to sustein it, as haue ye vines. It is not much vnlike vnto Iuie: and in like maner crepeth and stretcheth forth it self embracing and ouerspreading such trees as grow nere vnto it. This tree (or rather shrubbe) is deuided into many branches, of the lengthe of two or thre hand bredth. The leaues are lyke the leaues of an Orenge tree: sauing that these are somewhat grosser and fatter, with small vaynes running betwene on the contrarye side. On

euery twigge ther hangeth fixe thicke clusters of berries, a hand breadth in length, and of the colour of wild grapes. They are gathered in the monethes of October and Nouember: Inclininge yet to a grene colour, and so laying them on mattes or couerlettes, they fet them in the funne to be dried: where, within the space of thre dayes, it waxeth black, euen as it is brought hether. They vse neyther cutting nor digging, or other tillage, but onely the simple and pure fruitfulness and encrease of the earth. Plinie sayth that the trees of pepper are lyke vnto oure iuniper trees. And that in his time, some affirmed yat they were brought soorth only in the front of ye mount *Caucasus* on the southfyde toward the sonne. But the Portugals, whiche in this our daies sayle into the East partes, haue found it otherwise. The region of *Calicut*, beareth also Ginger: which doubtles is a roote, and is often tymes founde of the weighte of. xii. vnces: but al are not of lyke bignes. This roote entreth no deper into ye ground, then. iii. or. iiii. handbredth, like vnto the rede. When ginger is digged out of ye ground, they leaue the knotte or ioynce of the roote, in the pytte out of which they digged the ginger: couering ye same with earth as a fede, agaynst the next yeare to encrease and bring forth more ginger. It is found in playn ground of a redde erth, as ar *Mirabalanes*. Ther groweth also diuers other frutes and shrubbes vnknownen to vs, as *Iaceri*, *graccara*, *amba*, *Carocapel*, *Comolanga*, and such other of which some haue the taste and fauoure of quinces, some of peaches, some of damaske prunes, some of melones, and some of figges, etc. *Aloe* groweth also in that region: and is a certayn gumme, gathered from a litle tree, which is fastened in the earth, onely with one roote after ye maner of a staffe, pytched in the grounde. The bodie of the tree, is tender and redde, of strong fauour and bitter tast. It fomtyme putteth forth droppes of gumme withoute anye cuttinge. And this of India, is muche better then that which groweth in *Iudca*.

Fruitful ground
without tillage

Ginger.

A rote for a sede.

Frutes vnknownen
to us.

Aloe.

¶ Of byrdes and beastes which are found in the region of Calicut: and of the wyne of the merueylous tree.



Here is found in *Calicut*, diuers and fundry kyndes of foure footed beastes and foules. As lions, wilde boores, hartes, hyndes, wolues, kyne, wyld oxen, goates, and Elephantes: whych neuertheles are not engendred there, but brought thether. There bee also grene poppingiays, and some [of] white fethers of variable colours, lying like scoutchins. Some also of purple colour.

Of these there is such plentie, that they are fayne to appoint men to kepe them from the rice which groweth there in the felde. They are merueylous chatteringe and of small price.

There are also birdes called *Sarau*, fomwhat lesse then poppingiays, but make a much fweter noyse. There are also manye other kyndes of byrdes vnlyke vnto oures: Of which, euery morning and euening is hearde fuche a harmonie and so fwete a noyse, that nothing can be more delectable: In so little mouthes consisteth in maner al musicke, and therefore the inhabitauntes lyue in greate pleasure, as though they were in an earthly paradise, where floures are euer springing, and trees continue grene al the hole yeare. The heauen is beneficiall vnto them, and the ayre most temperate continually. So that thei are nether bytten with colde in winter nor burnt with heate in fomer, but lyue as it were in continual springe tyme. The same region bringeth forth also Marmasets and Munkeys, whiche are great hinderance to ye men of the country: and specially to the poore forte, becaufe they clyme the walnut trees, and spyllle the fweete liquoure of the fruyte thereof, of which the Indians make most pleasaunt wyne.

For these Indians haue a tree most excellent about all other trees of the world, which bringeth fourth dates lyke vnto the Palme tree. This tree serueth them for firewood: and beareth a kynde of walnuttes most delicate to be eaten: Also a kind of cordes, softe cloth, wine, oyle, and fuger. But chiefly it bringeth fourth this excellent kynde of nuttes like vnto dates. From these they take awaye the fyrste rynde or barke and cast it in the fire. The other fruite is not muche vnlyke *Goffampine* cotton, or fylke. Of the floures they make cloth lyke filke: the flaxe whiche is leste, they spinne agayne, and make therof smal roopes or cordes. The last barke or rinde, containeth the nutte, whose thickenesse is no more then the lyttle fynger of a mans hande. Furthermore the fweete liquoure or wyne, is engendered with the nutte, so that as the nutte groweth, the liquoure also encreafeth: In so much that when the nut is full growen, the lyquoure fyllethe the inne warde partes of the same. And thys liquoure or wyne, is most cleare, not muche vnlyke vnto rose-water: Of which neuertheles is made a very fatte oile. They cut also the trunk or stocke of the tree in ye morning and euening: by whiche meanes they gather a most excellent liquour, which they seeth on the fyre, and make thereof so merueylous a drinke, that if a man drinke thereof beyond meafure, he is drieuen into furie and madnes. This liquour is vsed there in the stede of wyne. But let vs nowe returne to the beastes which are found in *Calicut*.

Serpentes growe there vnto such hodge greatnesse, that they are in maner as bigge as swyne. They haue heades muche larger then bores heades. Thei are foure foted, foure cubites in length, engendered and conuerfaunte in fennie and marrishe groundes. The men of that countrei saye that these beastes are without poyson. There are also found other kyndes of serpentes: of the whiche one kynde hath so mortall venime, that yf they drawe neuer so lyttle blud, it caufeth present death. There are other serpentes which in quantite represent the serpent called *Aspis*. Again, otherfome are much higher of whiche there are greate plentie. The men of the country thinke yat they are spirites fallen from heauen: and therefore haue them in great reuerence. Thei haue conceaued this opinion of them, becaufe that in maner with touching, they bringe present death. And this is the cause whi there is so great abundaunc[e] of serpentes, that by the kinges commaundement it is not lawfull to hurt them: and therefore they wander safelye where them listeth, and are esteemed of them as things that bring good fortune. For whereas the men of yat country, goe abroade aboute anye busines, thei take it for good luck to mete any of them by the waye. The poppingiayes of *India* are for the most part, of grene colour beyde ye head, which is ether redde or yelow like golde. They haue a great and large tounge, and are therefore of a louder voyce, and speake more plainly. They learne the fyrst and second yeare such thinges as are taughte them. And beare them longer in memory. They drinke wyne, and vse theyr fete in the stede of handes when they feede.

Papingiayes of dyuers kyndes.

Sweete singinge of birdes

Earthly paradise
Temperate ayre.
Continual spring.
Munkeys.

A tree of sundry commodities.

Silke of trees.

Ropes of trees.
Wyne of trees

Oyle of water

Serpentes as bigge as swine

Serpentes without poyson.

Serpentes counted for heauenly spirites.

Grene poppingiayes.

¶ Of the sundrye kindes of Spices, which are founde in Calicut, and from whence they are brought thither.

Canonor.

Zaylon.

Corimucol.

Meluzza.

Molucha.

Pego.

Ormus

Cambaia.

Arabia.

China.

Samotor.

Darnasseri.



inger groweth in *Calicut*, yet is there much brought thether from the cytie of *Canonor*.

Cinamome commeth from the Ilande of *Zaylon*, whyche is fyfye leages beeyonde *Calicut* Eastwarde.

Pepper groweth in *Calicut*: but muche more is brought thether from *Corimucol*, whiche is. xij. leages beyonde *Calicut*.

Cloues are gathered in a place, called *Meluzza*, certayn leages distant from *Calicut*.

Nutmegges and Mace, growe in *Molucha*, beyng distante from *Calicut* hundreth and thre score leages, and fomewhat more.

Muske and Castoreum, is brought from the region of *Pego*, whiche is from *Calicut*, almoſte hundreth and fyfye leages.

Pearles of the biggest forte, are gathered neare vnto the Iland and cytie of *Ormus*, situate in the goulfe called *Sinus Persicus*: And are fente from thence to *Calicut*, as to the generall market towne of all the East partes.

Spikenarde, and Mirabalanes, are brought from *Cambaia* to *Calicut*.

Frankencense, and Myrre, come from *Arabia*.

Aloe, and *Camphyre*, are brought from *Kyui*, or *Chiua*. l. [fifty] leages from *Calicut*.

Long pepper cometh from *Samotor*. Cardamome ye greater, is brought from *Canonor*.

Preſilium, or brayll, cometh from *Darnaſſeri*, otherwyſe called *Tarnaſſeri*, almoſt. CC. [two hundred] leages from *Calicut*.

¶ Of the Iland of Zaylon, and of Cinomome found there.

Elephanten.

Precious ſtones.

Cinomome.



Zaylon is a very large region, and bringeth fourth cheſelye Elephanten in greate plentie. It hath alſo Mountaynes of merueylous length: at the rootes wherof are found Rubines, Hiacinthes, Saphyres, Topaſes, and ſuche other precious ſtones. In this Iland groweth the Cinomome tree, not much vnlyke ye bayetree, ſpecially in the leaues. It bringeth forth graynes much lyke vnto baye berries, but fomewhat leſſe and whytiſhe. That which we commonly call Cinomome, is nothinge els but the barke or rynde of a tree, which is gathered after this maner. Every thyrde yeare they cut of the braunches of the trees, and take of the barke or rynde thereof, which is our Cinomome. They cut not the body of the tree, but only the braunches. When it is firſt gathered, it is grene, and not perfectly fwete vntyll it be kept a moneth. This Iland is ſituate vnder the Equinoctial line, where is continuall ſpringe all the yeare. The inhabitants weare clokes, with one arme oute vncouered, and haue clothe made of *Goffampine* cotton, or of filke. A rede is to them in the ſtede of ſworde, rapyre, and iauelyne. And are therefore feldome flayne in the warres.

The Equinoctial
lyne

Weapons of redes

¶ Of the cytie of Tarnaſſeri, and the maner of the cytezins there.

Narſinga.



The cytie of *Tarnaſſeri*, is diſtaunte from the Kingdome of *Narſinga*. xiiij. dayes ſayling Eſtward, and hath a king of great puyſſaunce and marueylous riche. The foyle of this citie, bringeth forth wheate, cotton of *Goffampine* trees, and plentie of filke. The fieldes bringe foorth all kindes of fruites; quinces alſo and oranges. It is replenished with manye and fundrye kyndes of beaſtes afwell wyld as tame, as kyne, ſhepe, gotes, ſwyne, hartes, hyndes, wolues and lyons. There are alſo ſeene thoſe kyndes of cattes which beare the riche fures called *Zibellini*, which we call Sables. In all the fieldes and woodes of this region are founde

many Peacockes, Faulcons, and moſt fayre Poppingiayes of white colour intermingled with ſeuē variable coloures. There is alſo maruelous plentie of hares and partryches. There are manye of other ſtraunge kyndes of foules: and ſpecially ſuch as lyue by praye, whiche are muche higher then Eagles: whoſe vpper beakes are of ſuche bignes and hardnes, that handles for ſweordes are made thereof. Alſo the cockes and hennes of thys region are

The beaſt whiche
beareth the furre
called Sables.

Foules of
uncruclous bignes.

muche hygher and bigger then ours. When the people of the countrey goe to theyr meate, they lye downe on the grounde withoute carpet or cloth: Yet vse they wooden vesselles, workemanlye made. Theyr drinke is water myxte with fuger: but the poorer forte, drinke onelye water. Their beddes are made of Gossampine cotton, wyth couerlettes also of cotton or fylke. They goe all in generall barefooted excepte the Priestes. The Kyng of this cytye, doeth not commytte his wife to the Priestes to bee defloured, as doth the king of *Calicut*, but to whyte men, as are the christians and Turkes. For this office is not committed to the Idoloters. But after that the new married quene hath been thus defloured the fyrst night, yf euer after she doe dishonour the Kyng her husband, by violating the faith made to him, from thencefoorth neuer to knowe any other man carnally, her punishment is death incontintently. When the Kynges or the Priestes dye, their bodies are laid on a great fyre, and the ashes thereof referued in erthen pottes, putting thereto a porcion of falte petre, and buryinge the same in theyr owne houfes. While the bodies are burning, they cast into the fyre al kyndes of fwete fauouring gummes, and spices: as Aloe, Frankencense, Myrre, Storax, Coralle, sandalles, and fuche other innumerable: In the meane tyme blowing trumpets and shawmes, after the maner of them which amonge the gentiles were canonized into ye nombre of the goddess. And within xv. dayes after ye husbandes death, the wyfe calleth to her all her kinffolkes, bidding them to a banket: and fo being decked with al her iewels, she procedeth with them to the place where her husbande was buried, where a graue is redye digged for her, inclofed about with filken cloth, hauinge in it a fyre made of fwete wood. When the woman hath thus feasted her kynffolkes, she eateth much of the herbe called *Betola*, wherby she is driuen into a madnes. In thys meane whyle, innumerable trumpetters (wearing such vestures as they vse in the deuyls seruice) go as it were on proceffion aboute the graue, while the woman runneth vp and down, daunsing continually like a frantike bodie. And thus when the ceremonies are fynished, she casteth her selfe headlong into the fyre and graue: and that with no lesse cherefulness then yf she should be receaued into heauen. And vnlesse the woman should performe thys custome, she should incurre most vyle infamie, and be a mocking stocke to all her nacion, as one that loued not her husband. But the common people vse not thys custome: but only the rulers and princes. And therefore the king him selfe is often tymes presente at these solemnitie.

¶ Of the kingdoms and cities of Pego and Bangella.



From the cytie of *Tarnasser*, to the cytie of *Bangalla*, is. xi. dayes saylinge. This cytie hath a kyng: and the countrey is very fruyteful with great plentie of wheat, fleshe, fuger, ginger, and gossampine cotton: and hath therefore very rich marchantes. There yearlye passeth from this cytie fyttye shippes frayghted wyth gossampine cotton, and silke clothes: which are caried from thence to the Turkes, Syrians, Arabians, Perfians, Ethiopians, and Indians. Here are also founde certayne Christian merchaunt men, which come out of Th[e] empire of the great *Cham* of *Cathay*: bringing with them Aloe, Castoreum and the fwete gumme called *Laserpitium*, with other fwete fauours. In this cytie, the men spinne and carde and make clothe, and not the womenne. From this cytie Eastwarde, is another great citie called *Pego*, beyng situate by a verye fayre ryuer. The Kinge of thys cytie, is an Idolater, and hathe innumerable menne of warre, both horfemenne and footemenne. The foyle beareth wheate plentifulye: and bringeth forth in maner all kyndes of beastes, and hath therefore great abudaunce of fleshe, yet are there but fewe Elephants: But of other beastes and foules, great plentie as is at *Calicut*: and speciallye of popingiayes, whiche are of louder voice then in any other place. There is little trafficque or marchaundise in this region, except iewels and precious stones, and speciallye Rubies, called *Pyropi*, whiche are broughte thether from the cytie of *Capelan*. These precious stones shyne so brighte in the darke nyghte, as though it were the fonne beames. The countrey adioyning, bringeth forth *Lacha*, *Sandalum*, called faunders: Also brafile, gossampine cotton and fylke. From *Pego* to the cytie of *Malaccha* (whiche some call *Melaqua*) is eygh[t]e dayes saylinge: where on the other fyde is fene a great Iland called *Sumatra*, otherwise *Samotra*, and was in time paste called *Taprobana*. This *Malaccha*, hath a goodly and commodious hauen: by reason wherof, moe shippes arriue there then in any other place: bringinge with them spycyces and other marchaundise in great abundance. The region is not generally fruyteful, yet hath it wheat and fleshe: but greate scarcenesse of wood. The foules wander in the feldes as they doe in the region of *Calicut*. But the popingiayes are here much fayrer. It bringeth forth also spices, faunders, tinne, elephantes, horses, shepe, wilde oxen, pecokes, and such other kyndes of beastes. It is not lawfull there to bye and sell, except you bye spices and fylke. It is also there very daungerous to walke in the citie in the nyghte feason, because of the theft and cruelnes of the inhabitants, which kil one another like dogges. And therefore the marchaund fraungers lodge not out of their shippes. How the Portugales subdued *Malaccha*, shalbe said hereatter in the description of the newe Ilandes.

Beddes of silke.
Priestes.
The quene defloured of white menne.
Adulteri punished with death
Howe the kinge is buried.
Ministrals.
The quene dyeth willingly.
The herbe *Betola*.
What credulitie maye doe in false religion.
Honour dere boughte.

The king and citie of *Bangella*
Silke.
Christian men of *Cathay*.
The citie of *Pego*.
Rubies shyning by night.
Lacha, *Lacca*, or *Lacha*, is ye gumme of a tree wherewith silke is colored.
Malaccha.
Sumatra.
Taprobana

¶ Of the greate and ryche Ilande of Sumatra, or Samotra, sometyme called Taprobana.

The Iland of Taprobana.

Men of a hundreth yeres of age.

Shelles of fishes for houses.

Great pearles. Coynded golde and siluer for moneye.

Fishes of monstrous bignesse.

Lacha.

Pepper solde by measure. Cathay. The Iland of banda.

The nutmeg tree.

Mace.

The Iland of Monoch.

Cloues.

Charles Waine. Pole Antartike.



Some thinke this Sumatra, to be that Iland which of the old writers is called *Taprobana*. It is verry great and riche: and hath in it foure Kinges crowned with Diademes. They are Idolaters: in religion, maner of lyuinge, and apparell, not muche vnlyke the Kinge of *Tarnafseri*. They exceade all other men in bignesse of bodie. They haue greye or blewe eyes, and are of cruell countenance, and terrible voyce. They are long lyued and lyue euen vntyl an hundreth yeres of age. The fea in certayne chanelis is of fuch heighth and depth, that no anker may come to the bottome therof. The inhabitantes are great fyshers on the fea, and haue great pleasure to take the shelle fyfhe, called the Tortoyse of the fea: of whiche, some are of fuche hodge bignes, that the shelle of one of them may fuffise to make a house well able to receaue a hole famelie. For some of them beare shelles of xv. cubites in length: and are therefore apt for that purpose. The most part of this Ilande is burnte with heate, and hath in it many defolate places and wilderneffes. There are founde many and greate Pearles. For their money, they vse coynded golde, fyluer and tynne. The golden coyne, hath on the one syde a deuils head grauen, and on the other syde a chariot which Elephantes draw. This region bringeth fourth more plentie of Elephantes, of greater stature, and a better broede, then are found in any other place. In the fea about this Ilande, are often tymes fene the great monstrous fyshes, and kynde of Whales, called Balene, which bring many incommodities to the inhabitantes. They are of fuch monstrous bignes, that when they approche to the Sea bankes, they feeme lyke vnto hylles: they haue rough backes full of sharpe prickes. And except men walke very warely by the fea bankes, they are in daunger to be fodeynly fwallowed vp of these monstres. Some of them haue so greate and wyde mouthes, that they sometymes swallowe whole shippes with the men. This cuntry bringeth fourth the *Lacha*, *Lacca*, or *Lacta*, which steyneth filke and cloth in high redde or crimison coloure. It is engendred in a tree, not much vnlyke vnto our walnut trees. Ther is also great plenty of pepper, higher then is founde in other places. In their mother tonge pepper is called *Molaga*. It is solde there by measure, as wheat is with vs, and not by weight. There is so great plentie hereof, that there are yearly certayne shippes laden therewith to *Cathay*, where ye aire is colder. From Sumetra to the Iland of Banda, which is but rude and barren, and of playne and lowe grounde, whose inhabitantes are barbarous, and little differinge from beastes, hauing lowe houfes, and no apparell but shertes, barefoted and bareheaded, with long heare, of despicable stature, dulle witted, of no strength, and Idolaters. The foyle of this cuntry, bringeth forth nothing but nutmegges, and a few other fruites. The stalke or bodi of ye nutmeg-tree, is not much vnlike ye stalke of a peache tree, bringing forth lyke braunches and leaues, but somewhat narrower. Before these nutts be ripe, ye mace crepeth on the tree, lyke a flourishing rose. And when the nutte waxeth ripe, the mace embrafeth it round about. And so they gather both together in commune, at a tyme appointed: for they vse no distribucion thereof, but he that gathereth most, hath most. This tree bringeth forth his fruyte plentifully without any arte of husbandrye or tyllage. They are gathered at fuch time as we gather chestnuttes. From this Iland within fixe dayes sayling, is the Iland of *Monoch*, in the which cloues are founde, as also in other Ilandes, therto adioyninge. The tree whiche beareth cloues, hath his stalke not much vnlike vnto the boxe tree, with leaues lyke the Cinomome tree, but somewhat rounder. And when the cloues beginne to waxe ripe, they beate the trees with redes, spreding fyrst couerlettes or mattes vnder ye fame. The grounde where these trees grow, is of ye colour of cleye or sand. This region is situate so low, that ye seuen starres called *Septentriones* (being not farre from *Vrfa maior*, called charles wayne) can not there be fene, because ye fourth pole (called pole Antartike) appeareth aboute the earth.

¶ Of the Ilande of Bornei.

Idolaters.

Camplire.



The Iland of Bornei (which some call Porne) is distant from *Monoch* fiftie leagues. The inhabitantes are Idolaters, very quick witted, and of maner of liuinge not greatly to be discommended. They vse not al one kynde of apparell. Some weare shertes of gossampine cotton, some beastes skinnes, and some high cappes lyke myters, of redde colour. This Iland bringeth forth yearly great plentie of *Camphora*, called camphyre, whiche they affirme to be the gumme of a certayn tree. Of this Ilande I wil speake more hereafter in the nauigacions toward the East partes.

¶ Of the Iland of Giaua.



The Iland of *Gyaua*, is distant from *Bornei*. v. dayes sayling towarde the south. This Iland is so great, yat it containeth in it many kingdoms: ye inhabitantes ar geuen to idolatri. It bringeth forth silke, which of it felse groweth there plentifullye in the wooddes. The precyous stone called *Smaragdus* (which is ye true *Emerode*) is found there more excellent, then in any other place of the worlde. It hath abundaunce of golde and copper of the best kynd. The foyle beareth wheat and other corne, with al kindes of frutes in great plentie. When the men of this countrie goe to the sea, theyr weapons are bowes, and arrowes of redes. They vse also to infect theyr arrowes with venime, and to blowe them oute of a trunke as we doe pellets of claye: with the which yf they drawe neuer so little bloud, presente death foloweth immedia[t]lye. They haue also this custome, that when they see theyr parentes by reason of age to be vnprofitable, they bring them to the market towne, and there sell them to the people called *Anthropophagi*, which eat mens fleshe, of whom they are incontinently slayne, and eaten. The fame doe they with the yonger forte also, yf they fall into any desperate disease.

Silke groweth in woodes.
The smaragde or emerode.
Go'de and copper

Arrowes of redes

Arrowes infected with venime.
A strange custome.

Anthropophagi.

¶ Of the Iland of Iaua.



Here are two Ilandes of thys name, as *Iaua* the more and *Iaua* the lesse. The biggest reacheth forth toward the South, and is sayd to haue in it many kingdoms. The inhabitantes are Idolaters and haue a peculier language. In this Iland is greate plentie of pepper, Nuttemegges, Spikenarde, Galangale, and other spices. Mani marchauntes of other countreies are wont to reforte thether, and geat great riches by ye spices which they carie from thense. In this Iland also are people called *Anthropophagi*, which are wont to eat mens fleshe.

Spices

¶ Of the Iland of Madagascar.



This Iland is counted to be one of the greatest and rycheffe Ilandes of the worlde. The inhabitantes are of Mahumets secte as are the Turkes. It bringeth forth many Elephanes, by reason wherof there is greate plentie of Iuerie which is the Elephanes tothe. For it is thought that there is no greater plentie of Iuerie, then in this Iland and in the Iland of *Cuzibet*. They eate the fleshe of none other beastes, but onely of Camels, because the Ilande is full thereof, and also that it is founde to be more holefome for the people of that countrey then any other fleshe. There are also in this Iland many woddes that bringe fourth redde sanders, for the which many marchauntes refort thether. In the sea about this Iland, great whales are taken, out of the which amber is gathered. There are lions, leopardes, hartes, hyndes, goates, and many other beastes and foules, by reason whereof, they vse muche haukinge and huntinge.

Mahumetistes
Elephanes.
Iuerie

The Iland of *Cuzibet*.
Camels fleshe eaten.
Woddes of redde Sanders.
Whales
Amber.
Lions, and Leopardes.

¶ Of the Iland of Zanzibar.



The Ilande of *Zanzibar*, hath a peculier Kinge and language. The inhabitantes are idolaters, and are of grosse and shorte stature: but yf theyr heygth dydde aunfwere, to theyr thickenesse and breadth, they mighte seme to be giauntes. They are all blacke, and goe naked, onely couering theyr pryuiue partes. The heare of theyr heades, is merueylouflye corlde. They haue greate mouthes, nofethrilles fyrting vpwarde and wyde, with great eares and cruell eyes. Theyr women are deformed by reason of theyr greate eyes, greate mouthes, and greate nofethrilles. They liue with milke, fleshe, ryce, and dates. They lacke wyne: yet they make a pleafaunt drinke of ryce, fuger, and other spices. Many marchauntes reforte thether for yuerie and Amber, for there is greate plentye of Elephanes and greate whales.

Bigge men of low stature.

People deformed

Ryce and Dates.
Drinke of spices
Amber.

¶ *Of the two Ilandes, in one of the which dwell onely men, and in the other onely women.*

The Iland of men.

The Iland of women.
Christians



IN the mayne sea, there are two Ilandes, distante the one from the other aboute. viiiij. or. ix. leagues toward the south, situate betwene the cytie of *Aden* and *Calicut*. In one of the which dwel onely men without the company of women, and is called the Ilande of men. And in the other dwell onely women, without men, and is called the Ilande of women. They are Christians and contract matrimonie. The women neuer come to the Ilande of men, but the men are accustomed to vyfite the women once in the yeare, and tarye with them thre monethes continually, euery man with his owne wife in his owne houle: after which time they returne agayn to [t]her owne Ilande, where they remayne all the yere after. The women kepe the men children with them vntyll they bee xv. yeares of age, and then send them to theyr fathers. The women haue nought els to do, but to take charge of their children, and to gather certayne frutes. But the men labour and haue care how they may fynde theyr wyfe and chylde. They are exercysed in fyshing, and sell fyshes both newe taken and olde dryed, to marchaunte straungers, whereby they receaue great commodities.

Fishing.

¶ *Of the greate Empyre of Cathay, being vnder the dominion of the great Cham (whiche some call the great Can) Emperoure of Tartaria, in olde tyme called Scythia.*

The great Cham of Tartari

Famous cities vnder the greate Cham.

Manye wyues.
What naturall affection may doe



HE superiour or high *India*, whiche is nowe called *Cathay*, is a region exceedinge large and of greate power, whose Emperour is ye great Cham of *Tartaria*, hauinge vnder him many Prouinces, people and Princes, and innumerable Ilandes in the great East sea, called the greate Ocean. He hath vnder his dominion great and famous cities, as are these: *Cambalu*, *Quenquinfu*, *Mien*, *Cacaufu*, *Canglu*, *Tadinfu*, *Tingui*, and dyuers other. Among the people of this countrey, one man hath manye wyues, whiche declare theyr loue to their husbandes after this fort. When the husband is dead, euery one of his wyues pleade their cause before a iudge, to proue which of them was most louing to her husband and beste beloued of him: so yat she which by the sentence of the iudges is found to haue been most faythful and diligente, decketh her selfe moste gorgeously in all her sumptuous araye, and procedeth like a *Virago* stoutly and cherefully to the fire, where the corps of her husbande was burnt, castinge her selfe into the same fyre, embrasing and kissing the dead bodi of her husband, vntyll she also be consumed by the fyre, whiche she reputeth for an honourable sepulture: whereas his other wyues are esteemed to lyue in shame and infamie. They ioyne in mariage, neyther in respect of riches or nobilite, but onely for loue and beautie: and rather for ye encrease of posteritie, then for pleasure. There is also another straunge custome among these Indians: and yat is, that whereas the poorer fort are not able to gene any dowry with theyr daughters to mariage, they bringe them forth, euen in ye floure of their age to ye market place, with trumpettes and such other instrumentes as they vse in the warres. Where, the multitude beyng called together, the maydes fyrste of all, discouere theyr backe partes, euen vp to the shoulders, and afterward theyr forepartes in lyke maners. And vpon this declaring their pouertie and nakednes, are married to such as lyke them best. This people of *Cathay*, are of the nacion of them which in tyme past were called *Scythians*, a kind of men (as faith *Hailho*) of subtill wyt: affirming that onely they see with two eies, and that all other men beyde them are blind of the one eye. Their quickenes or witte is great, but their boasting is more. The hole nacion is perswaded that they greatly excel all other men in subteltie of wit and knowledge. The inhabitantes are whyte men, with small eyes, withoute beardes, and vtterly voyde of all godly knowledge. For some of them pray to the sunne, some to the mone, some to Images, some to an oxe, and some to other monsters of theyr phantasticall supersticion. They haue no law written, and are of no faith. And albeit that in workemanship and artes they are marueylous wyttie, yet haue they no knowledge of dyuine or godly thinges. It is a timorous kynde of men, and greatly fearinge death. And are therefore in theyr warres, more politike then valient. In the warres, they vse arrowes, and certayne other kyndes of weapons vnknown to men of other countreis. The monie which they vse, is made of a certayne paper, beeinge foure square, with ye Kinges ymage printed thereon. Their housholde stuffe is

A strange custome

The people of *Cathay*.

Idolotours.

Money of paper

of golde and fyluer and other metals. They haue greate scarcenes of oyle. The great Emperour of *Cathay*, keepeth his courte in the riche and mightie cytie called *Cambalu*, being the cheffest citie of all the Empyre, and of fuch greatnesse that it conteyneth in circuite fixe leages. This citie is foure square, so that euery quadrature or fyde of the wall, hath in it thre principal portes or gates. Also in all the corners of the walles, are veri faire palaces, in which the artillery or armure of the cytie is reserued. The stretes are made very streyght and right forth: so that from any one gate to the other beinge directly ouer against the fame, a man may se plainly through the cytie, hauing ye houses on euery fyde lyke palaces, placed in goodly ordre, most beautifull to behold. Without the cytie, there are twelue great suburbes, adherent to the. xii. gates of ye cytie, whether the marchauntes and straungers, haue their continual recourse as to ye burse or strete. It can not be spoken what great abundaunce of marchaundise and riches is brought to [t]his citie: a man wold thinke that it were sufficient to serue all the worlde. Precious stones, pearles, filke, and spices of dyuers kindes are brought thether, from *India* and *Mangi*, and other regions. There passeth not a daye in the yeare in which there are not about a thousand waynes laden with filke which are brought to this citie by straunge marchauntes. What greate pompe, glory, and furniture of all thinges, is obserued in the Emperours courte, it can not be spoken. He hath in his courte twelue thousand horsemen, whiche haue the custodie of his body: and distribute their waytinge dayes after this order, yat whereas one of ye captaynes of this garison with his thre thousand fouldiers hath wayted vpon the kinges personne, three dayes, another captayne in lyke order wyth as manye menne succedeth in hys rowme for other three dayes, and lykewyse an other after hym, executethe the fame offyce. When the Emperoure maketh anye bankette, it cannot be faid what greate pompe is obserued. He hath fytting at his lefte hand his cheffest quene whom he most estemeth: and at his right hand hys sonnes, and fuche as are of the kinges blood: but thei fyt somewhat lower and further of. The other noble men which wayte not, fytte in a place yet somewhat lower. All fuch as in the court fyt at meat, vse none other drinking cuppes then of gold. The Princes whiche wayte on the Emperoure at hys meate, haue all theyr mouthes couered with fyne silken clothes, leaft in any case they should blow or breath on the kinges meate or drinke. And when the Emperour listeth vp his cup to drinke, al the musiciens and minstrels that stand about him, playe on theyr instrumentes, while in the meane time all fuche as wayte on hym, floupe downe and make lowe curtesie. How great honoure is exhibited to this Emperour, and howe manye precious and riche presentes are offred vnto him by his Princes, Dukes, Leauetenauntes and presydenes of prouinces, and rulers of cities, no man is able to expresse, forasmuche as he hath vnder him in maner innumerable Kingdomes, Prouinces, Nations and Dominions, which are on euery fyde about *Cathay*, and acknowledge him to be theyr onelye Lorde and King, whom they honoure and reuerence as a great God and mighti Mahumet. In what pompe and triumphant magnificence he sheweth him self when he goeth to hauke or hunt, and how many tentes he pitcheth in the felde, which being sene a farre of, a man would thinke to be a greate cytie, he that desyreth to knowe, let him reade *Paulus Venetus*, in the second boke of hys nauigacions into *India*, where he shal find thinges to marueyl at. In *Cathay* they make a pleasaunt drinke of ryce and certayne spyces, which in drinking excelleth the swetenes of wine. In many places they haue great lacke of wood: In the stede wherof, they digge out of the mountaynes a certayn kinde of blacke stone whiche burne in the fyre like coles, and continue so long, that yf they be kyndled ouer night, they kepe fyre vnto the morning.

Golde and Syluer.

The cytie of *Cambalu*.

Marchandyse.

Precious stones and spyces. Note.

The king of *Cathay* his court

The Quene.

Golden plate. Worldly glory.

A liuing Idol.

Paulus Venetus.

Drinke of rice and spyces.

Digged cole.

¶ Of certaine Prouinces and regions subiect vnder the dominion of the greate Cham Emperour of Cathay.



Here passeth through the kingdom of *Cathay*, a certayne greate ryuer called *Pulifachnites*, which emptieth it selfe in the great Ocean Sea, by the whiche ryuer, shippes haue their passage into that lande. Ouere this ryuer is a very fayre bridge of marble, beyng in length three hundred pases, and in breadth, eyghte pases, with. xxiii. arches, and grauen Lions on euery fyde, adorning the rayles or highest margentes of the fame. From hence it is not farre to the fayre and greate kingdom of *Tainfu*, in the which are many goodli vynes. For in the kingdom of *Cathay* there groweth no wyne, but is brought thether from this region. In this kingdome is greate vse of marchaundyse, and hath plentie of conning artificers, so that al the armure which the great Cham vseth in his warres, is made there. Toward the region of *Mangi*, is situate the ryuer *Caromoram*, whiche for the greate breadth and depth, hath no bridge. In this region is greate abundaunce of Ginger, filke, byrdes, and speciallye Phefantes. Somewhat beyonde this, is the great cytie of *Quenquinafu*, beyng the chief cytie of the fame kingdome. In this region are founde many muskecattes. This beaft in this countreye, is

A greate bridge of marble.

The kingdome of *Tainfu*.

Connyng artificers

Ginger.

Quenquinafu.

The muske cattie

but lyttle and fayre, aboute the bigneffe of a meane catte, with grosse heare lyke a harte, hauinge blunte clawes on his fete, with two longe teeth in the vpper iawe, and two in the nether iawe: and hath nere vnto the nauell a bladder full of a certayne matter like vnto bloud, being of wonderful fragrant faouore, and is the true muske.

Suet or muske.

¶ Of the Prouince of Mangi, and merueylous cyties conteyned in the same.

Marchandyse.

Salte.

Sylke.

Cloth of golde.

Ryce.

vi. M [six thousand] bridges of stone.

The great cite of Quinsai.

xij. M. [twelve thousand] bridges of stone.

Artificers.

Marchautes.

Common banketinge houses.

A good prouision againste fyre. Flesh of horses eaten.

A prouision against rebellion.

Anthropophagi.

Hennes hauinge heare in the stede of fethers.



The Prouince of *Mangi*, hath in it many notable and great cities, in the whiche is great exercyse of marchaundyse: and specially in the cite of *Conigangui*, is folde great plentie of falt. In the cytie of *Panchi*, there is great fale of filke. In the cytie of *Sianfu*, is made great plentie of clothes of golde and filke. In the cytie *Singui* is a famous market. where great abundance of marchaundise is brought by the ryuer. Nere vnto the cite of *Caigui*, groweth plentie of blade and ryce, that it is caried from thence to the court of the greate Cham. In ye cite of *Singui*, are numbred to be about fixe thousande bridges of stone, hauinge so highe arches, that

greate shippes maye passe vnder the fame without bowing down of the mast. There is another cite called *Quinsai*, which is so fayre and great, that there is thought to be no bigger in al the worlde. It conteyneth in circuite, a hundreth Italien miles, which make. xxv. leages. It hath twelue thousande bridges of stone, and those so highe that greate shippes with the maste standing vp right, maye passe vnder. This cytie is situate in a marissh ground, muche lyke vnto venes. Therefore if they should lack bridges, they could not passe ouer from the one fyde of the strette to the other. It hath innumerable artificers and many marchautes. The cytezins lyue pleafantly, and specially the women, which are fayrer then in other partes of *India*. Toward the South fyde of the cytye, there is a great lake or poole within ye walles of the cytie, whiche conteyneth in circuite about. viii. leages, hauinge about the bankes therof many noble mens houfes, very fayre both without and within. In the middeste of this lake, there are two litle Ilandes and in euery of them a goodly palace, in ye which are referued al fuche ornamentes and vessels as they vse for theyr mariages and solemne feastes, for whereas any of the cytezins entende to make any great banquet, or feaft, they bring theyr gestes to one of these palaces, where they are honorably entertained. In the stretes of ye cite, are certaine comon towres, into ye which, al such as dwell neare therto, carie theyr goodes and fluffe, yf it so chaunce, yat fyre be in the cite. The inhabitantes are Idoloters: and eate the fleshe of horses and camels, and of other vnclene beastes. The great Cham hath in this cytie a myghtie garison to the intente to auoyde rebellion, thefte and murther. For on euery bridge there wayteth dayly and nightlye. x. watchmen for the same purpose: and because the Prouince of *Mangi* is exceding large, the great Cham hath deuyded it into nyne Kingdomes, assigninge vnto euery one a peculier Kynge: whiche are al of greate powre, and yet subiecte to the greate Cham. One of them dwelleth in the cite of *Quinsai*. In thys Prouince of *Mangi*, is an other Kyngdomme, called *Fugui*, in whiche the people eate mannes fleshe, so that they dye not of any diseafe. They drinke the bloud and eate the fleshe of such as are slayne in ye warres. There are hennes found in this region, which in the stede of fethers, haue heare much lyke cattes heare of blacke colour: And laye very goode egges.

¶ Of the region of Tangut, and of the great desertes, and voyces of deuylles hearde in the same, and of the Salamandra.

The way from Persia to *Cathay*.

The cytie of *Lop*.

The iorney by y: desertes.

Bitter waters.



From the Kingdome of Persia, there are two iourneyes to the region of *Cathay*. For either the south side must be obserued towarde *India*, or elles to passe by the prouinces of *Carcham*, *Cotam*, and *Peim*, Northeastwarde to the cite of *Lop*, beyng the greatest and most notable cytie in all that region, lying betwene the East and the North at the entraunce at the great defert. In this cytie, al fuche marchautes, as entende to passe the desertes, make preparacion for all thinges necessarye for their iourneye: And rest in the same, vntill they are well prouided of strong asses and camels to carye there vitayles.

And when in ye defert their vitayles begin to fayle them, they kyl their asses or leaue them there in the wyldernes, because they can no longer prouide them of pasture, vntyll they haue passed ouer the deferte. But they preferue theyr camelles, becaufe they are susteyned wyth lesse meate, and beare greater burthens. In this deferte are often tymes founde bytter waters: but more often fresshe and sweete waters: so that in maner euerye daye for the space of thyrtye dayes, a man maye fynde fresshe water, but that in so lyttle quantite that it doeth not suffice al the marchautes whiche passe that waye together. That

deferte is verye full of mountaynes. And when you are come to the lowe and playn ground, the refidue of the iourney is all together by the fandes : it is throughout baren and faluage, so that it is not able to nourishe any beastes for lacke of pasture. In this wildernes are often tymes heard and sene, as well by daye as by night, fundrie illusions of euyl spirites. And therefore suche as trauallye through the same, haue nede to take great hede lest they disseuer or depart farre in fundre, or leaste any linger behynde his companie, aswel for that he may hereby lose the fight of them by reason of mountaynes or hilles, lyinge beetwene, as also because there are heard voyces of deuyls, calling them that wander alone, by theyr proper names, conterfeyting the voyces of theyr companie that goeth beefore, by this meanes withdrawing them from the right waye, and bringinge them to destruccion. There is often tymes heard in the ayre, as it were a noyse of musicall instrumentes : but more often like the founde of drumflades or timbrels. This great defert being passed ouer, they come to the cytie called *Sachion*, which is situate in the enteraunce of the greate Prouince of *Tangut*, where amonge certayne Mahumetistes, are found a fewe Christian men called *Nestoriani* of the secte of *Nestorius*. There are also manye Idoloters, hauinge theyr monasteries consecrated to dyuers Idols, to which they offre manye sacrifices and attribute greate honor to deuyls. And when a man hath a sonne borne, he forthwith commendeth him to some Idol, in whose honoure he nourissheth a ramme al that yeare, which after that his sonne be twelue monethes olde, at the nexte feaste of the same Idoll, he and his sonne offre with many ceremonies. When this oblacion is finished, thei bringe the sacrificed fleshe to a place appoynted, where al his kinfolkes being gathered together, they eate that fleshe with great religion, and kepe the bones reuerently in a certayn vessell : but in the funeralles of the dead they vse these ceremonies and supersticions. Al the neighbors of the dead, prouyde that the dead corps be burned : which custome all the people of the East partes do obserue. Yet some of them kepe ye dead bodye by them certayne dayes beefore they burne it : As some, seuen daies : some for the space of a moneth and some fixe monethes, preparing for the same a close cheste, so inuoluinge with cereclothe, and pouderinge with spyces the bodye therein inclosed, that no euyll fauoure maye passe foorth. Thys done, they paynte the cheste very curiouslye, and couer it with a precious clothe, placinge theyr dyninge table harde by the same, where they dyne continually as long as the dead bodie is thus referued at home. And in the dyner tyme for the space of one hole houre, they sette wyne and meat vpon the cheste, supposing the foule of the dead bodye to be partaker of the same. The Region of *Tangut*, is verye large, and conteyneth in it many priuate Prouinces, as the Prouince of *Camul*, of *Cinchital*, and *Suchur*, wyth dyuerse fayre Cyties, whiche are all Subiecte and obeye to the great Cham of *Cathay*. Some of the inhabitants beleue in Mahumet : some acknowledge Christe after the heresye of *Nestorius*. In the land of *Cinchital*, is a Mountayne oute of the whyche is dygged the myne of stele and Audanici. There is also founde the Serpente called *Salamandra*, which lyueth in the fyre wythoute any hurte. Of the heare of this serpent, is made a certayne cloth, which being cast in the fyre when it is foule, is thereby made cleane and very white if it remaine there for ye space of an houre. Such other innumerable and marueilous thinges, writeth *Paulus uenetus* that he hath sene and founde in his nauigacions into these partes : of whom also I haue gathered thus muche, lettinge passe manye other thinges whereof he speaketh more at large.

Illusions of euyl spirites
Voices of deuyls
Strange noises in the ayre.
The citie of *Sachion*. Christians of the heresie of *Nestorius*. Monasteries of Idoloters. A strange custome
Ceremonies in funerals
A grosse and wayne perswasion
The region of *Tangut*.
Mahumetistes.
Stele. *Salamandra*.
Paulus Venetus

¶ Here endeth the descripcion of the Nauigacions
from Spayne to the newe India Eastward,
and foloweth
Of the newe Ilandes and India found in the West Ocean sea,
from Spayne Westward and Southweste.

**¶ Of the newe India,
and Ilandes in the West Ocean Sea,
how, when, and by whom they
were found.**

*Christophorus
Columbus.*

Great enterprises
have euer ben
counted
phantasticall.

The fyrst viage
of *Christophorus
Columbus.*

The Ilandes
called *Gades.*
The Ilandes of
Canaria.



Hristophorus Columbus, a Gentleman of Italie, and borne in the cite of *Genua*, when he had been longe conuerfaunt in the Kyng of Spaynes courte, he applyed hys mynde to searche vnknown partes of the worlde. And for his better furtheraunce herein, made humble petition to the kinge, to ayde him in this his enterpryse, which doubtlesse shoulde redownde to his great honour, and no little commoditie to all the hole countreye of Spayne, yf by his helpe and charges, he might fynde new regions. But the Kinge and Quene laughed him to scorne, saying: that his ymaginacion was but vayne and phantasticall. At the length, eyght yeares beyng passed ouer, and *Columbus* styll persistinge in his purpose and fute, the Kyng began to geue eare to his talke, and after muche reafoninge and debating of the matter, determined to trie the witte of the manne. And there vpon commaunded a foyst and two brigantines to be furnished with all kynde of ordinaunce and vitalyes: which being pre-

pared, the fyrst of September, in the yere of Christ 1492, *Columbus* departed from the coastes of Spayne, and wente forwarde in his viage longe defyred. And when he had passed the Ilandes called *Gades*, he diuerted toward the fortunate Ilandes called *Insula Fortunata*, which are now called *Canaria*, because they are full of dogges. They were in time past called Fortunate, for the excellent temperatenes of the ayre, and greate fruytefulnes. *Columbus* departinge from hense, sayled towarde the Weste, and at the length founde certayne Ilandes, of the whiche two were very greate, wherof the one he called *Hispana*, and the other *Iohanna*.

¶ Of the two Ilandes Iohanna and Hispana.

Iohanna.



S Columbus came to the Ilande whiche he called *Iohanna*, he hearde a merueylous sweete noyse of innumerable byrdes, and especiallye of Nightingales whiche wandred in the thicke wooddes in the Moneth of Nouembre. He founde also mooste fayre Ryuers, fwete to drinke, and many goodly hauens. And as he sayled by the coastes of the Ilande Southweste warde, and coulde fynd no ende, he thought it had been the mayne land, and therefore determyned to drawe backe, being partly enforced by roughnes of the sea: and thus returninge some what Eastward, he came to an Iland whiche heafterwarde called *Hispana*, where arriuing to the land, he and

Hispana or
Hispaniola.

his companye was fene of the Inhabitanes of the Iland, which sodeinly fled into the thicke woodes: whom the Spanyardes purfewing, toke a womanne whome they brought to theyr shippe, entreatinge her verye gentillye, fyllinge her with delicate meates and wyne, and clothing her in fayre apparel, and so let her depart: for thei goe naked, and are not vsed to delicates. And as this womanne returned to her companie, some beyng moued by the lyberalitie declared vnto her, came by greate multitudes to the sea bankes, bringinge golde with them, which they chaunged for earthen pottes, and drinkinge glasses. Thus a further frendship by this meanes contracted, the Spanyardes begonne more diligently to searche their maner of luyng and maners, and so vnderstode that they had a king. And therefore enteringe further into the Iland, they were honorably receyued of the king. Thei vewyde their houfes, and merueyled to see them so bylded without the vse of Iron, which they are vterly without: in the stede whereof they vse a certeyn stone, wherwith the cut and sawe theyr timbre.

Gold for earth
and glasse.

The king of the
Iland.
Bylding without
the vse of Iron.

¶ Of the people called Canibales or Anthropophagi, which are accustomed to eat mans fleshe.



Her as the people of the forenamed Ilandes, fled at the sight of our menne, the cause thereof was, that they suspected them to haue been *Canibals*, that cruel and feareful people which eat mans fleshe, which nacion our men had ouerpasse, leauinge them on the southsyde. But after they had knowledge of the contrary, they made greuous complaynt to our men, of the beastly and feareful maners of these *Canibales*, which were no lesse cruel agaynst them, then the Tyger or the Lyon agaynste tame beastes. Declaring furthermore, yat when foeuer they take any of them vnder the age of xiiij. yeares, they vse to gelde them, and francke them vntill they be very fat, as we are wont to doe with capons or hennes: and as for fuche as drawe towarde. xx. yeare olde, to kyll them forthwith and pull out theyr guttes, and eat the same freshe and newe, wyth other extreme partes of the bodye, powdering the residue with salte, or keeping it in a certayne pickle as we do iegottes or sanfages. Yet eat they not the women, but referue them to encrease, as we doe hennes to lay egges. And if thei take any old women, they kepe them for drudges. And therefore when the *Canibales* make incurfion, the people of these Ilandes flye with all spede. For albeit they vse arrowes, yet are they not able to resyfte theyr fearfenes.

Canibales
Anthropophagi.

The fearfenes of
the *Canibales.*

Mans fleshe
powdered.

¶ Of the maners of the inhabitantes of the Iland of Hispana and of fuche thynges as are found there.



The inhabitantes of this Ilande, vse in ye stede of bread, certayne rotes like vnto nauie rotes, hauing the tast of soft and grene chestnuttes. Gold with them is in estimacion, for they hange certayne peces therof at their eares: they go not out of ye limities of their own contrie, nor exercise any marchandise with strangers: thei gather gold in ye sandes of a certen riuier which springeth out of veri high montaines. They gather it with great laboure and melte it and caste it, fyrste into masses or wedges, and afterwarde into brode plates. They haue no foure footed beastes, except connies: they haue serpentes of monstrous greatnes, but without hurte or venime. They haue also wylde turtle doues and duckes, muche greater then ours, and gefe whyter then swannes, fauing yat they haue redde heades. Thei haue also many poppingiayes: some grene, some yelowe, and some not muche vnylike them of India, with redde circles about their neckes. This Iland bringeth forth also *Mastix*, *Aloe*, and fuche other gummies: and especially certayne redde graynes, which are sharper then pepper.

Rootes in ye
stede of bread
Gold in estimacion.

Howe golde is
gathered.

Serpents wythout
venime.

Poppingiayes.

Spices and
Gummies.

¶ How Columbus, after he had found newe Ilandes, returned agayne to Spayne, where preparinge a newe nauie, he toke his viage to ye Canibales.



Columbus, not a little ioyeful of the landes newly found, the spring tyme drawing nere, he determined to returne to his cuntry: leauing with the king of the Iland. 38. men which should diligently searche the situacion of the Ilande, the maners of the people, and the natures of trees and fruites. But he, hoyfeninge vp his sayles, directed hys viage towarde Spayne, bringing with him tenne menne of the fayd Ilande, to th[e]nde that they might learne the Spanishe tonge, which they might easely doe, because al the wordes of theyr language may well be written with our letters. *Columbus*, after thys his returne, and fortunate successe in his fyrste viage, was honorablye receyued of the Kynge and Quene, and greatlye magnified with innumerable glorious titles: willinge that he should no more thenceforth be called *Columbus*, but the Admiral of the great Ocean Sea: and prepared for him towarde his second viage. xvij. foiftes and. xij. brigantines, wel furnished with al kynd of artillerye and plentie of vitayles, and in them twelue hundred men wel appoynted:

The Indian tong
Columbus, at his
returne, is made
Admiral of the
Ocean sea.

The second viag
of *Columbus*

Gades.
The Ilandes of
Canaria.

The Iland of
Dominica.

Insula Crucis.
Lisertes.

Houses of trees.

Young men stalled
to be made fatte.

Fine cokerye.

Canibales allured
wyth lyberalitie.

Come also to fowe, and al kindes of feedes and plantes. For, excepte pine apple trees and date trees, there growe none in these Ilandes that are knowen to vs. The Admirall toke also with him al fortes of Iron tooles to th[e]intent to byld townes and fortresses where his men might lye in safegarde. Therefore the first day of September departing from the Ilandes called *Gades*, with a prosperous wind he arryued at the Iland of *Canaria* the fyrst daye of October: from whense directing his viage toward the lefte hande, he sayled toward ye South, and at ye length came to the Ilandes of the *Canibals*. And because he came thether on the Sundaye called the Dominical day, he called the Iland where he arryued, *Dominica*: which when he perceyued to be but saluage and rude, he sayled on further: and in twentie dayes sayling, came to another Iland replenished with al kindes of trees, from which came a marueylous fragrant fauour: By reason whereof, some being allured by the pleafantnes of the place, went aland, where they fawe no kynde of lyuinge beastes, fauinge lyfertes of wonderful houdge greatnes. This Ilande he called *Insula Crucis*, whiche was also an Ilande of the *Canibales*, as afterward they proued in dede. For as they sayled about the Iland, they founde certayne lowe cotages made of trees, lyke vnto flagies. For they fet trees vpright in order round about, fastening postes in them crosse ouer, where vnto the trees cleaue faste, so that by this meanes they cannot fall. They frame the roofes of these cotages, with sharpe toppes after the maner of rownde tentes. And last of al, they inclose and couer these trees thus fet in order, wyth the leaues of date trees, and certen other trees, to th[e]intent to make them a stronger defence agaynst wynd and wether. And within the cotage, they tye the postes together with ropes of bombage cotton, and a certayne longe roote. They haue couches made, one aboue another, the flowres whereof they flawe wyth heye and cotton. And as soone as they hadde spied our men, they fled incontinente. And when oure men came into theyr houfes, they found in theym certayne young men bound to postes, and kept to be made fatte, and lykewyfe many olde womenne whiche these *Canibales* kepte to be their drudges. They founde there also earthen vesselles of all fortes, in which they fodde mens fleshe with poppingiayes, geefe, and duckes fleshe, al together in one vessell. They roasted also mans fleshe vpon spyttes, referuing the bones of the armes and legges, whiche they vse in the stede of Iron, to piece and ttype theyr arrowes. For they are vtterlye without Iron. They found also the head of a yong man, yet bleding and fastened to a poste. But certayne womenne whiche had fledde from the *Canibales* to oure menne, the Admirall commaunded to be gorgeously decked after the maner of our women, and with manye rewardes to be sent agayne to theyr owne companye. By meanes whereof, the *Canibales* beyng allured by the lyberalitie and gyftes of our men, hoping that they also shoulde be lykewyfe rewarded, came running toward our men: but when they drew fomwhat nere vnto them, they fled immediatly into the nexte wooddes. And thus our men departing from thence, returned to the Ilande of *Hispana*.

¶ *How the Admirall passed manye Ilandes, and what thynges chaunced to hym and his companie in that viage.*

Matinina An
Iland of women
onelye.

The names of
sundrye Ilandes.



AS the Admirall departed from the Iland of the *Canibales*, and went foreward on his viage, he passed by many Ilandes: among the whiche was one called *Matinina*, in whyche dwell only women, after the maner of them, called *Amazones*, as he learned of the men of the Ilandes which he brought with him into Spayne at his fyrste viage, and saued them from the fearfenes of the *Canibales*. He passed also innumerable other Ilandes of which to some he gaue names, as *Mons Farratus*, *Sancta Maria rotunda*, *Sancta Martinus*, *Sancta Maria antiqua*, and *Sancta Cruce*. Into the which oure men entering to th[e]intent to

fetche freshe water, found foure *Canibales*, which had taken foure yonge women: who, as soone as they had spied our men, wringed theyr handes, fering therby to defyre ayde of oure men: at whose coming to delyuer them, the men fled into the woodes and left the women. Shortly after, our men saw a bote coming on the sea with. viij. men and as many women: with whom oure men bickeringe lost one of theyr companions, by reason that these barbariens are accustomed to infecte theyr arrowes with venime: yet oure men preuayled and flewe parte of them, and broughte the refydue by forse to the Admirall. As they departed from hence, they found many other Ilandes, but such as they could not come to for the roughnes of the sea and multitude of rockes. But some of the fnallest brigantines which drewe no great depth, went fomewhat nearer, and noumbred aboue feuen and fortie Ilandes, and called the place *Archipelagus*. Sayling from hence, they found another Iland called *Buchema*, into the whiche ye *Canibales* make fundry incurfions, by reason wherof the inhabitantes are at continual warre with them. Thus at the length, the Admirall with his hole nauie returned to the Iland of *Hispana*: but in an euyl tyme. For they which he hadde lefte there for a

Arrowes infected
with venime.

Archipelagus.
Buchema

garrifon, were all dead: as were also they whiche he toke with him from the same Ilande into Spayne to vse them for intrepretours. Of whiche feuen dyed by chaunge of the ayre. One of them was permitted of the Admirall to departe, when the nauie came neare to hys countrey. The residue stole awaye priuelye, and swamme to lande: but the Admirall doubting whether all his men were dead or no, whiche he left in the Iland, commaunded certayne ordinaunce to be shot of, that by the noyse thereof they myghte haue warning to come forth, yf any laye lurking in corners: but none appeared, whose fatall dayes had fynished theyr lyfe. At the length, the kyng of the Ilande beyng therto enforced, declared the hole matter to the Admyrall as well as he coulde by interpreters: affirming that there were in the Iland other Kynges besyde him: and of greater power then he, which were fore offended that the Spaniardes hadde subdued the Ilandes: and in reuenge therof, came to the town where the Spaniardes lay, which they ouercame and burnt, and slew al the men therein: and that he also at the same conflicte, taking part with our men, was fore wounded with an arrow on the arme, for the better tryall whereof he bore hys arme in a towell, because it was not yet hole of that wounde. But shortely after they had knowledge, that the King fayned this tale: so that he hardely escaped the handes of the Admirall, who was determynd wyth some kynd of punishment to haue examined him further. But he suspecting the matter, fled into ye inner partes of the Iland, declaring therby, that he was the destruction of our men: whom, certayn of our companie, pursuinge, founde manye marueylous thinges: and especiallye ryuers in whiche is founde muche golde, and a mountayne, whose fande is sparkeled with gold. In this place, the Admirall bylded a citie, which he compassed about with a walle. And departing from hence, he searched almost all the Iland: in ye inner partes wherof he bylded a towre, and named it S. Thomas towre, whiche he made to th[e] intent that he might the more safelye searche out the secretes of so plentifull a region, and especiallye the gold mines of the same: and thus leauinge a garrifon there, he departed, takinge with him three foystes, wherwith he fayled to feke newe Ilandes, and came first to the Ilande of *Cuba*, and from thence to *Jamaica*, being greater then *Sicilia*, very fruytfull and wel inhabited. Which, when he had vewed, he departed from thence, and fayled about the sea costes where he sawe innumerable other small Ilandes, standinge so thicke, that the ship was in maner borne a lande: and was therefore enforced to returne home, the same way which he came.

Change of ayre is daungerous.

The king dissembleth with the Admyrall.

Golde found in riuers and mountaines.

The Ilandes of *Cuba* and *Jamaica*.

A multitude of Ilandes

¶ How the Spaniardes abused the submission and frendeshippe of the inhabitants of the Ilandes.



IN this meane tyme, the Spaniardes which the admiral had left in the Iland of *Hispana*, had euyl entreated the inhabitants: so that for wante of vitayles and foode, they begonne to famyne: imputinge the fault hereof vnto the Christian men, which had digged vp al the rootes wherwith thei were accustomed to make theyr bread. And whereas they yet perceaued, that ye Christian men entended to continue there, thei sent an ambassadour to the admiral to desyre him to refrayne the outragiousnes and crueltie of his men, at whose handes they sustained such iniuries and violence, as they scarcely looked for at the handes of mortal enemies. Declaringe further, that vnder the pretence of feking for gold they committed innumerable wronges and mischieuous actes, spoyling in maner all the hole region: and that for the auoyding of such enormities and oppreSSIONS, they hadde rather paye tribute, then to be thus dayly vexed with incurfions, and neuer to be at quiete. Vpon this complaynte it was agreed, that they shoulde paye yearely tribute to the Christian king and that they should applie them selues to gather and encrease theyr rotes, whiche were to them in the stede of flowre and wheat, and so consumed that with great labour they coulde scarcely fynde any in the wooddes. They payde therefore for their tribute, euery thre monethes, certayn pound weyghtes of gold: but suche as had no gold, payde spyces, and goffampine cotton. In the meane time the Spaniardes, who should haue been occupied in digging for golde, gaue them selues to play, wantonnes and idlenes, contemning, and falling into hatered with their gouernour, by which theyr licentiousnes, the people of the Iland beyng prouoked, became more disobedient and wyld, degeneratinge from al kind of honestie and faithfulness: yea ye spaniardes also became so negligent in feking for gold, yat sometyme the charges exceeded the gaynes. Neuerthelesse in the yere of Christ, 1501. they gathered within ye space of two monethes twelue thousand poundes weyght of golde. But the Admirall appoyntinge his brother *Bartholomeus Columbus*, to be gouernour of the Iland, he in the yere. 1495. determined to returne to Spayne, to certifye the kyng of al these matters. In which viage, he manfullye defended him self in battayl against the rebelles of certayne other Ilandes which had conspyred agaynst the Spanyardes.

The crueltie of the Christian men

Crueltie of couetousnes.

Bread of rotes.

The tribute of the barbarians

Disobedience foloweth idlenes

Note.
Bartholomeus Columbus.

¶ *How the Portugals fought newe Ilandes in the East partes, and how they came to Calicut.*



IN this meane tyme that ye Spanyardes foughte newe and vnknown landes in the West partes, the Portugales attempted to doe the same in the Easte partes. And least one of them should be a lette or hinderaunce to the other, they deuyded the world betwene them by the auctoritie of the Bishop of Rome, Alexander the. vi. of that name. And that on this condicion, that from the Ilandes called *Hesperides* (whiche are now called *Caput ueride*) the one should fayle Westwarde, and the other towarde the South pole, thus deuyding the world betwene them in two equal partes. So that whatfoeuer vnknown landes shoulde be discouered in the Easte partes, the same to be dewe to the Portugales: And all suche as shoulde be founde in the Weste partes, to appertayne to the Spanyardes. Whereby it came to passe, that the Spaniardes, euer by the South, fayled into the Weste, where they founde a large mayne land, with Ilandes great and litle innumerable, hauing in them great plentie of golde and pearles, and other great riches. But the Portugales, by the Southe, and costes of the Ilandes called *Hesperides*, and *Equinoctial* lyne, and *Tropicus Capricorni*, came into ye East, by the goulfe called *Sinus Persicus*, euen vnto the costes of India, within the riuier of *Ganges*, whereas is now the great market towne, and kingedome of *Calicut*. And from thence to the Iland of *Taprobana*, (now called *Sumetra*, *Zamara* or *Samotra*) and so forth to *Aurea Chersonesus*, whereas is nowe the great cytie of *Malaccha*, beyng one of ye most famous market townes of al ye East partes. From *Malaccha*, they entered into a great goulfe, by which they came to the region of *Sinarum*. Not farre from *Malaccha*, are the Ilandes called *Molucca*, in which al kyndes of spyces growe and are brought to the cytie of *Malaccha*. But the Spanyardes hauing knowledge what greate commoditie the Portugales had receyued by the Ilandes of *Molucca* attem[p]ted to proue yf they also might find the same Ilandes in sayling so farre Westward that they mighte at the length by West and southwest come into the East, as by good reason they presuppofed the roundnesse of the earth would permitte, if they were not otherwyse lette by the fyrme or mayne land lyinge in the waye and floppinge theyr passage, whereof as yet was no certeyntie known. And this dydde they to th[e] intent that by this meanes they myghte more easelye and wyth lesse charge bringe spyces from thence into Spayne. Therefore, the maner of this viage was, that they should fayle from the Weste, vnder the lowest hemispherie or halfe compasse of the earth, and so to come into the East. A thinge surelye that myghte feeme verye harde to attempte, because it was vncertaine whether that, most prudente and beneficiall nature, (who worketh al thinges with most high prouidence) had not so deuyded and seperated the East from the West, partly by sea, and partly by land, that there might by this way haue been no passage into the East. For it was not yet known, whether that great region of *America*, (whiche they call the fyrme or mayne lande) dyd seperate the Weste sea from the East: But it was founde that that fyrme lande extended from the West to the South. And that also towarde the North partes were found two other regions, whereof the one is called *Regio Baccalearum*, and the other *Terra Florida*: which, if they were adherent to the fayde fyrme land, there could be no passage by the Weste seas into the East India, forasmuch as ther was not yet founde any strayghte of the sea, wherby any enterance mighte be open into the East. In this meane while, the kyng of Spayne beyng elected Emperoure, prepared a nauie of fyue shippes, ouer the whiche he appointed one *Magellanus* to be captayne, commaunding him that he should fayle towarde the coastes of the sayd fyrme land, dyrectinge his viage by the south partes thereof, untill he had eyther found the ende of the same, or elles some streyghte wherby he mighte passe to those odoriferous Ilandes of *Molucca*, so famously spoken of for the great abundaunce of fwete fauours and spices founde therein. The shippes therefore, beyng well furnished with all thinges necessarrie, *Magellanus* departinge from Ciuile in Spayne, the tenth day of August, in the yeare of Christ. 1519. came fyrst to ye Ilandes of *Canaria*, and from thence to ye Ilandes called *Hesperides*: from whiche dyrectinge hys course betwene the West and the East toward the sayd fyrme land, in few dayes with prosperous sayling, he discouered a corner or poynt of the sayd mayne land, called *Promontorium S. Mariae*, where the people dwell, called *Canibales*, whiche are accustomed to eate mans fleshe. From hence he fayled on southwarde by the long tracte of this firme land, which reacheth so farre into ye south and extendeth so many degrees beyond ye circle called *Tropicus Capricorni*, yat the south pole (called pole Antartike) is there eleuated fortie and fyxe degrees. And thus beyng brought into the East, they saw certayn Indians gatheringe shel fyshes by the sea bankes: beyng men of very high stature, clothed with beastes skinnes. To whom, whereas certayne of the Spaniardes went a land, and shewed them belles and paynted papers, they begon to daunce and leape aboute the Spaniardes, with a rude and murmuring fonge. At the length there came three other, as though they

The bishop of rome deuideth ye world.

Hesperides or *Caput ueride*.

How the Spanyardes and ye Portugales deuided the world betwene them.

Gold and Pearles

The *Equinoctial* lyne.

The ryuer of *Ganges*.

Calicut.

Taprobana.

Samotra.

The great cytie of *Malaccha*.

The region of *Sinarum*

The Ilandes of *Molucca*.

Sayling into the East by the west The roundnes of the erth.

The firme land

Spices

The viage from the West vnto the Easte.

America.

The firme land.

Regio Baccalearum

Terra Florida.

The king of spayne sendeth fourth shippes.

The viage of *Magellanus* by the west into ye east.

The Ilandes of *Molucca*

The Ilandes of *canaria*.

Promontorium S. Mariae, *Canibales*

The eleuacion of the south pole. 46 degrees

The Region of giannes.

were ambassadours, whiche by certayn signes defyred ye Spaniardes to go with them further into the land, making a countenance as though thei wold intertayn them wel, where vpon, ye captayne *Magellanus* sent with them. vii. men well instructed, to th[e] intent to searche ye region and maners of the people. And thus they went with them into ye desertes, wher they came to a low cotage couered with wylde beastes skinned, hauing in it two manfions, in one of ye which were women and children and in the other only men. They interteined their gestes after a barbaros and beastly maner, whiche neuertheles femed to them princelike: for they killed a beaft, not much vnlike a wylde asse, whose fleshe (but halfe roasted) they set before our men, without any other kind of meate or drinke. Here were our men of necessitie constrained to lye al night vnder these skinned, by reason of the great abundaunce of snowe and wynde. And when it was day, our men were very earnest with them, and would in maner haue enforced them to goe with them to the shippe: which thing thei perceauing, couered them selues from the head to the foote with certayn horrible beastes skinned, and paynted theyr faces with fundrye colours. Thus taking their bowes and arrowes, and bringing with them other of theyr companie, of much greater stature and terrible aspect, then they were, they shewed them selues to oure men in araye, as though they were ready to fight. But the Spaniardes, whiche thoughte that the matter would haue comen to hand strokes, commaunded a piece of ordinaunce to be shotte of. The which although it dyd no hurte, yet these hardy giantes, which a little before femed to be as bold as though they durst haue made warre against Iupiter, were by the noyse thereof put in fuche feare, that they forthwith beganne to entreate for peace. Our men entended to haue brought some of these Gyautes wyth them into Spayne for the straungenes of the thinge: but they all escaped oute of theyr handes. *Magellanus* therefore vnderstandinge that it were vnprofytable to tarie there any longer, and that also the sea was very rough, and the wether stormie and boyste[r]ous, and that furthermore the firme lande extended further toward the south, in so muche, that the further they sayled that waye, they should fynde it so muche colder, he deferred hys proceeding vnto [in?] the moneth of may, at whiche tyme, ye sharpenes of winter, exceedeth with them, when as with vs, sommer is begon. He found there greate plentie of wood. The sea also ministred vnto them great abundaunce of shelifishe, besyde other fyshes of fundrie kyndes. He found lykewyse many springes of freshe and holesome waters: and vsed huntinge and taking of foules. Only bread and wyne, was lackinge in the shippe. The south pole was there eleuated fortie degrees.

Cotages couered with beastes skinned.

Onager.

Abundaunce of snowe and wynde

The Giantes are putte to flyght.

Extreme winter in maye.

The south pole eleuate.xl. degrees

¶ *How Magellanus by a strayght or narrow arme of the sea, sayled by the west into the East to dyuers Ilandes: where also he was slayne.*



He wynter now being past, the. xxiiij. day of Auguste, *Magellanus* departed from the place aforefayde, and styll folowed the tracte of the firme land toward the south, vntyl at the length, the. xxvi. day of Nouember, he found in that firme land, certayn open places lyke vnto strayghtes or narrow seas. Into the which entring with his nauie, he commaunded that certayn shippes should searche the goulfes on euery fyde, yf anye way or passage might be found into the East. At the length, they found a certayn depe straight, by the which they were perfwaded yat there was enteraunce into some other mayne sea, infomuch that *Magellanus* attempted to searche ye same. This straight was found to be somtime of ye bredth of thre Italian myles, sometyme two, and sometyme of tenne, and reached somwhat toward the West. The altitude or eleuacion of the south pole in this place, was founde to be. lii. degrees. They coulde see no people stering in the costes of this entraunce Therefore *Magellanus* feing thys lande to be rough and saluage, and vnpleasaut to abide in, by reason of extreme cold, he thought it not worthy the trauayle, to spend any time in ferching the same. Therefore sailing forward in his viage thus attempted by ye said strayghte, (which is now called the strayght of *Magellanus*) he was therby brought into another mayn sea, verye greate and large. The length of this strayght or narrow sea, is estemed to be a hundreth spanishe miles. The land which he had on his right hande, he doubted not to be mayne lande: and that on the left hand, he supposed to bee Ilandes. *Magellanus* sawe lykewyse the fyrm lande to be extended directly toward ye North: wherefore letting passe that great lande, he sayled by that greate and large sea betwene the West and the North: and that for this intente, that at the length he might by the West come into the East, and agayne vnder the burning lyne called *Zona Torrida*, beyng well assured that the Ilandes of *Molucca* (which he soughte) were in the Easte, and not farre from the *Equinoctial* lyne. When they hadde thus sayled fortie dayes, and came now agayne vnder the line or circle called *Tropicus Capricorni*, they founde two lyttle Ilandes inhabyted, but very barren, and therefore called them infortunate Ilandes. Departinge from thence they failed on for a great space, and found a certayne Ilande which ye inhabitantes called

The strayght of *Magellanus*.

The altitude of the south pole. lii. degrees.

The main sea beyond the strayghtes.
The fyrm land.

The burning line *Torrida Zona*.
The Ilandes of *Molucca*
Tropicus capricorni.

The Iland of
Inuagana.
The Ilandes of
Gades called
Cales Males.
Archipelagus.

Acatan.
Selani.

Massana.
Subuth.

Bread of the
trunke of trees.
Drinke of the
dropping of date
trees.
Golde and Ginger
Magellanus is
slayne.

The new
captaine *Serranus*
is betraied of his
bondman.

The king of
Subuth conspyreth
agaynst the
Spanyarden.

The captayne
Serranus is taken
prisoner.

The Ilandes of
Gibeth and *Porne*.
Siloli.

Peace and Idleness.

Bread of Rice

Camphire

Pearles as bigge
as turtle doues
egges.

A marvelous big
shellfish

Gilona.
Men with
hanging eares.

Inuagana, where ye eleuacion of the Northe pole, (called pole Artike) was. xij. degrees: And the length from the Ilandes called *Gades*, by the Weste, was iudged to bee. c.lviii. [one hundred and fifty-eight] degrees. Thus proceeding, they saw dyuers other Ilandes, and that so manye, that they supposed they had been brought into a great sea lyke vnto that called *Archipelagus*, where with sygnes and poyntinges (as the dumme are wont to speake with the dumme) they asked of these Indians, the names of the Ilandes, whereby they learned that they were in *Acatan*, and not farre from the Ilande called *Selani*, wel inhabited and replenished with abundaunce of al thinges necessaric for the commodities of this life. Sayling therefore toward the Ilande of *Selani*, they were with a contrary wind driuen on the Iland of *Massana*, from whence they came to the greate Iland of *Subuth*, where ye Spanyarden were wel enterteined of the Kinge of the Iland, who brought them into a certayn cottage, and fet before them such delicates as he hadde. Theyr bread, was of the trunke of a certen tree, cut in pieces, and fried with oyle. Theyr drinke was of the humoure or ioyfe which droppeth out of the braunches of the date trees, when they are cutte. Theyr meate was fuche as they toke by foulinge, with such fruites as the contrei brought forth. This Ilande was very riche of gold and ginger. In these partes *Magellanus* made warre agaynst the inhabitants of certayne other Ilandes: In whiche conflicte, the Spaniardes hauing the ouerthrow *Magellanus* was slayne with feuen of hys men. When the Spaniardes hadde thus lost their captayne, they elected a new gouernoure of their nauie, appointing one *Iohannes Serranus* to that office. *Magellanus* had also a bondman borne in the Ilandes of *Molucca*, whom he had bought in the cite of *Malacca*. This bondman vnderstode the Spanishe tonge: and where as the captayn *Serranus* could do nothing without him, who now lay sicke by reason of the woundes which he had receaued in the said conflicte, so that he was fayne to speake sharply to him and threaten to beate him or he could geat him out of the shyppe, he here vpon conceaued so great hatred and indignacion agaynst the Spanyarden, that he wente immediately to the Kinge of *Subuth*, declaring the couetousnes of the Spaniardes to be vnfacible, and yat they wold shortly vse crueltie agaynst him also, and bring him into subiection and seruitude. The barbarous king beleued his wordes, and therwith pryuelye with the ayde of the other Ilandes, conspired agaynst the Spanyarden, and toke or slew as many of them as came to a banket whereunto they were bidden vnder pretence of frendship. Among the which also, *Serranus* the Captaine was taken prifoner. But the resydue of the Spanyarden which remayned in the shippes, beyng taught and warned by the euyll chaunce which befell to their companions, and fearing greater deceytes and conspiracies, lyft vp their ankers and gaue wind to their sayles. In the meane tyme was *Serranus* brought bound to the sea bankes, desiring his companions to delyuer or redeme him from that horrible captiuitie of hys enemies. But the Spaniardes, albeit they toke it for a dishonour, to leaue or forsake their Captayne, yet fearing fraude or further diffimulacion, they sayled asyde from that Iland, and came to the Ilandes of *Gibeth* and *Porne*. In this mayne sea, were two great Ilandes, wherof the one was called *Siloli*, and the other *Porne* the lesse, where our men were wel entreated. The inhabitantes of *Porne* honoure the funne and the mone: they keepe also a certayn ciuile iustice and frendly loue one to another. And aboue all thinges, desyre peace and ydlenes. Therefore their chiefe studie is, in no case to moleste their neyghbours or straungers, or to be iniurious to anye man. They haue lyttle houses, made of earth and wood, and couered partely with rubbishe, and partly with ye bowes of date trees. They take as manye wyues as they are able to kepe. Theyr comon meat, is such as they take by foulinge or fiffhing. They make bread of ryce: and drinke, of the liquor whiche droppeth from the braunches of date trees, cutte. Some vse marchaundyse in the Ilandes nere about them: some applie themselves to huntinge and fyfshing, and some to husbandry. Their apparell, is of Goffampine cotton. They haue greate abundaunce of camphire, ginger and cinomome.

¶ *How the Spaniardes came to the Ilandes of Molucca, and of the people with great hanging eares.*



He Spaniardes takinge their leaue of the king of *Porne*, departed: dyrecting their viage toward the Ilandes of *Molucca*, whiche were shewed vnto them by the same King. They came fyrst to the costes of the Ilande called *Solo*, where are found Pearles as bygge as turtle doues egges: but they are gathered in the depth of the sea. The inhabitantes of this Ilande, at fuche tyme as the Spanyarden came thether, toke a shellysfhe of fuche houldge bignes yat the fleshe therof wayed. xlvij. pound weyght. Wherby it is apparaunt yat great pearles should be found there forasmuch as pearles are the byrth of certayn shellfishes.

From hence they came to the Iland of *Gilona*, in which are certayn people hauing hanging eares of such length, that they hang downe to their shoulers. Wherat as the Spaniardes marueyled, the men

of the Iland tolde them, that not farre from thence was another Iland in which were a kind of men, not onely with hanging eares, but also with eares of fuche breadth and length, that with one of them they myghte couer theyr hole head. But the Spanyardes, who foughte for gold and fpyces, and not for monstres, fayled dyrectly to the Ilandes of *Molucca*, where they arryued, the eyghte moneth after the death of their gouernour *Magellanus*. These Ilandes are fyue in noubre, the names wherof are these *Tharant*, *Muthil*, *Thedori*, *Mare*, and *Mathien*. Some of them are fyuate on thys fyde the *Equinoctiall* lyne, some vnder it, and some beyonde it. Some beare cloues, some Nutmegges, and some Cinomome. They are not farre distaunt the one from the other. They are but little and narrowe. The inhabitantes are very poore, because ther is no encrease of anye other thinge fauing onely of fpyces. They lyue with bread and fyshe, and sometime poppingiayes. They lurke in lowe cotages: And in syne, all thinges with them are despicable and vile, beside peace, idlenes, and fpyces. In *Thedori* is great plentie of cloues, as also in *Tarante* and *Mathien*. The trees which bringe forth cloues, growe not, but on rockes and broken cliffes, which sometime they grow so thicke, that they appeare lyke a lyttle woode or groue. This tree, bothe in leaues, biggenes, and heygth, is much lyke vnto the baye tree. It beareth the fruite in ye toppes of euery braunche. The budde springeth out fyrst, and then in it the floure, not much vnlike the floure of an orange tree. The cloue is fyrst redde: but after beyng scorched by the heate of the sonne, it is made blacke. The inhabitauntes deuide the groues of these trees betwene them, as we doe the vynes. The Iland of *Muthil*, bringeth forth cinomome. This tree, is ful of small braunches and baren, best lyking in a drye foyle, and is very like vnto the tree, that beareth the pomgranate. The barke of this tree, by reason of the great heate of the sonne, ryfing from the braunches, or bodie of the same, is gathered and dried at the sonne, and is so made perfecte cinomome. Neare vnto this, is another Iland, called *Beda*, greater and larger, then anye of the Ilandes of *Molucca*. In this Iland groweth the Nutmegge, whose tree is bigge and highe, and much lyke vnto the walnutte tree, for as is the walnutte, so is this fruite defended with a double couering, as fyrste with a grene huske, vnder the whiche is a thinne skinne or rimme like a nette, encompassing the shell of the nutte: which skinne we call the flowre of the nutmegge, but of the Spanyardes, it is called mace, an excellent and holesome fpyce. The other couering, is the shell of the nutte, within the which is the fruite it selfe, which we call ye nutmegge. Ginger groweth here and there in all the Ilandes of this *Archipelagus*, or mayne sea. Of the whiche, some is fowen, and some groweth of it selfe. But that which is fowen, is the better. The herbe of this, is lyke vnto that which beareth fafrane and hath hys roote, (which is Ginger,) much lyke vnto the same. In this meane time came two other shyppes out of Spayne: whereof the one fayled directly to the poynte of *Aphrica*, called *Promontorium bonæ spei*: And the other by the greate mayne South sea, to the coastes of that continent or fyrme land whereof we haue spoken here beefore. It shall suffyfe that we haue hetherto declared of the nauigacions whiche the Spanyardes attempted by the Weste to fayle into the Easte, by the strayghte of *Magellanus*, where the passage by Sea is open into the Easte, by the continente or fyrme lande of the newe worlde, called *America*. Nowe therefore lette vs retourne to the other Nauigacions of *Columbus*, otherwyse called the Admyrall, who longe beefore was the fyrst fynder of the newe Ilandes, and of the fayde mayne or fyrme land, and yet founde not that strayght or narrow fea, by the which *Magellanus* fayled from the West into the East.

¶ *The thyerde nauigacion of Christophorus Columbus.*



IN the yeare of Christ. 1498. *Columbus* the Admyral departed from Spayne with eyght foistes, and arryued fyrst at the Ilandes of *Medera*, where he deuyded hys nauie into two partes. For. v. of these shippes he directed to the Iland of *Hispana*: and with the residue, he failed towarde the south, entendinge to passe ouer the *Æquinoctial* line, and from thense to turne towarde the Weste, to searche fuche landes as were hetherto vnknowne to the Christian men. Coming therfore to *Caput ueride*, he failed to the burning line, called *Torrída zona* where he found so great heate, that he was in daunger of death: but returninge his shyppes towarde the West, he found a more holesome ayre and (as God woulde) came at the length to a lande well inhabtyed, where there came agaynst him and his, a bote with. xxiiij. young men, armed with bowes, arrowes, and shieldes, couering only theyr priue members with a clothe of Goffampine cotton, hauing also very longe heare. The admirall, (as well as he could by signes) allured them to communication. But they trusted not our men, fearing some deceate. The Admirall perceauing that he could nought preuayle, by signes and tokens, he determined with Musical instrumentes to appease their wildnesse. As the minstrelles therefore blewe theyr shaulmes, the barbarous people drew neare, suspecting that noyfe to bee a token of warre, whereupon they made ready theyr bowes and arrowes. But the Spaniardes drawinge nearer vnto them, caste certayne apparell into theyr

The Spanyardes arriue at the Ilandes of *Molucca*.

The tree that beareth cloues.

The cinomome tree.

The nutmeg tree

Mace.
The nutmegge.
Ginger

Promontorium bonæ spei

Columbus the admyral, first fynder of the newe Ilandes

The Ilandes of *Medera Hispana* or *Hispanica*

Greate heate vnder the burning lyne.

Signes and pointing

The faire region
of *Parias*.
Gold and Pearles

Fearse beastes.
Canibales

The Spanyardes
refuse to obey the
admiral.

bote, willing by this token of frendshippe to concile them, although all were in vayne. For they fled all awaye. Wherefore the Admyrall departing from thence, came to a region called *Parias*, wel inhabited and ful of ciuile people, declaring muche humanitie toward straungers. They shewed our men Pearles and Gold, and such other riches, desyryng them to come a land, where they gentelly entreated them. When our men asked them where they had fuche plentie of golde: they (with home poynting was in the stede of speech) declared by signes and tokens, that thei had it in certayne mountaines, and that thei could not without great daunger refort thether, by reason of certayne fearfe beastes in those partes, and also becaufe of the cruell people called *Canibales*, whiche inhabite those mountaynes. But the Admiral, becaufe his wheate fayled, was enforced to departe thence. Dyrectinge therfore his viage toward ye North easte, he came to the Iland of *Hispana*, where he found all things confounded and out of ordre. For the Spanyardes which were lefte in the Ilandes, refused to obeye the Admirall and his brother, mouinge greuous complayntes agaynst them before the King of Spaine, and at the length fente them thether bound.

¶ Howe Petrus Alonfus soughte newe Ilandes.



After that the Admyrall hadde incurred the indignacion of the Kynge, manye of his companions, fuche as hadde been broughte vpe with him, and were experte Sea menne, decreede to searche other partes of the worlde yet vnknown. Among which number was *Petrus Alonfus*, who with a shippe wel furnished, fayled to *Parias*, and from thence to *Curtana*, where he begon to exerceyse merchaundise with the inhabitantes, receauinge Pearles for belles and nedles. Entiring also into the land, he was honourably entertayned. In their woodes, he saw innumerable Peacockes, nothinge vnylyke vnto oures, fauing that the males differ litle

from the females. In this region are great plentie of Phefantes. *Alonfus* departinge from hense, failed to the region of *Canchietes*, beyng sixe dayes fayling from *Curtana*, toward the West. In this region is great abundance of golde, Poppingiayes, Gosfampine cotton, and moſte temperate ayre. From hence he fayled into another fruiteful region, but inhabited with wilde menne, which could by no gentilnes be allured to frendshippe. Departinge therefore from thence, he came to the region of *Ciniana*, whereas pearles are found in great plentie: but before he came there, he chaunced to come amonge the *Canibales*: agaynst whom, discharginge a piece of ordinaunce, he droue them easely to flight. But *Alonfus* laden with pearles, returned home into Spayne.

Parias
Curtana.
Pearles for belles
and nedles
Peacockes
Phefants.

The Region of
Canchietes.
The region of
Ciniana

Pearles

¶ Howe Pinzonus, companion to the Admirall, sought newe Ilandes.



Incentius, otherwise called *Pinzonus* in the yeare of Christe. 1499. prepared foure brigantines, and failed fyrst to the Ilandes of *Canaria*, and from thence to *Caput ueride*. From whence directinge his viage toward the south farre beyonde the *Equinoctial* lyne, he found men in a certayne Iland, but such as he could by no meanes concyle vnto him. Therefore leauinge them, he came to another lande, in whiche were innumerable naked people, dissimuling that thei desired to ioyne frendship with the Spaniardes. And whereas one of our men caste a bell amonge them oute of the shippe, they againe cast to the Spanyardes a masse or piece of

golde: which, one of oure companye somewhat to bolde, attemptinge to take vp, they fodeynlye toke him and caried him awaye with merueylous swiftenes: but our men leauing their shippes, made hast to help their fellowe, in so muche that the matter came to handstrokes. This conflict was so sharpe, that our men hadde much a doe to escape wyth theyr lyues, by reason of the fearfenes of the barbarians. Departing therefore from thence, they fayled toward the Northeaste, and came to the region of *Payra*, and to the Ilandes neare aboute the same in the whiche are woodes of fanders wherewith the marchauntes lade theyr shippes, and carie it into other countreys. In this Region also growe the trees, whiche beare *Cassia fistula* of the beste kynd. There is also founde a foure foted beast of monstros shape, whose former parte is lyke vnto a wolfe, fauing that the feete are lyke vnto the fete of a man, with eares like an owle: Hauinge also beneath his comon belye, an other belye lyke vnto a purse or bagge, in which he kepeth his yonge whelpes so long, vntyll they be able safely to wander abrode alone, and to geat theyr meate withoute the helpe of theyr parents. The whelpes while they are very yong, neuer come out of this bagge but when they sucke. This portentous beast with her three whelpes, was broughte to Ciuile in Spaine, and from thence to *Granata*.

Naked people.
Gold for belles.

A conflict betwene
the wild men and
the Spanyardes
The Region of
Payra.
Woodes of
Sanders.
The tree yat
beareth *Cassia*
fistula.
A monstrous
beast.

¶ Of the foure nauigacions of Americus Vesputius to the newe Ilandes.



Americus Vesputius, beyng sent with *Christophorus Columbus*, in the yere of Christ. M.cccc.xcij. at the commaundement of Ferdinando King of Castile, to seke vnknown landes, and wel instructed in sayling on the sea, after a fewe yeaes, set forward foure viages of hys owne proper charges. That is to witte, two vnder the fayd King Ferdinando, and two other vnder Emanuel, king of Portugale, of the which he himselfe wryteth after this maner.

Ferdinando kinge of castile.

¶ The fyrste viage of Americus Vesputius.



IN the yere of Christ, M.cccc.xcvij. the. xx. daye of Maye, we came with foure shippes, to the fortunate Ilandes, called *Insule fortunatae*, where the North pole hath his eleuacion. xxvij. degrees, and. xl. minutes. And from thence within the space of. xxvij. dayes, we came to a land more Westwarde then the fortunate Ilandes, where the North pole was eleuate. xvi. degrees: where also we founde a nacion of naked people, of innumerable multitude, whiche as sone as they sawe vs, fled to the next mountayne. From hence within two dayes sayling, we came to a safe port wher we founde manye men, which with much adoe, we could scarcely allure to comunicacion, although we profered them belles, lookinge glasses, cristallyne cuppes, and suche other iewelles. But at the length perceauing our good wyll and liberalitie towarde them, they came to vs by heapes, and ioyned frendshyp with vs without all feare. They goe all as naked as they came forth of their mothers wombe. They suffre no heare on their bodie fauing only on theyr head, in so much that they pul[o]f] ye heares of their browes. They are all so perfectelye exercysed in swimmyng, that they can continue therein, for the space of two leages without any thinge to beare them vp and especiallye the women. Their weapons are bowes and arrowes. They arme theyr arrowes with ye teeth of beastes and fyshes, bycause they lacke Iron and other metals. They kepe warre against theyr borderers whiche are of straunge language. They fyght not for the enlargeing of theyr dominion, forasmuche as they haue no Magistrates: nor yet for th[e] increase of riches, because they are contente with their owne commodities: but onely to reuenge the death of theyr predicesours. At theyr meate, they vse rude and barbarous fashions, lying on the ground without any table clothe, or couerlet. They slepe in certayne greate nettes made of Gossampine cotton and hanged a losfe in the ayre betwene trees. Their bodies are verye fmothe and clene by reason of theyr often washinge. They are in other thinges fythy and withoute shame. They vse no lawful coniunction of mariage, but euery one hath as many women as him listeth, and leaueth them agayn at his pleasure. The women are very fruitful, and refuse no laboure al the whyle they are with childe. They trauallye in maner withoute payne, so that the nexte day they are cherefull and able to walke. Neyther haue they theyr bellies wrimpeled, or loofe, and hanginge pappes, by reason of bearinge manye children. Their houses and cabbens, are all in common. Their houses are fashyoned lyke vnto belles: are made of greate trees fastened together, covered wyth the leaues of date trees, and made very stronge against wind and tempestes. They are also in some places so great, that in one of them fixe hundreth persons may lodge. They vse euery seuenth or eyght yere, to remove and chaunge theyr dwelling places, because that by theyr longe continuance in one place, the ayre shoulde bee infected. They vse no kynd of marchaundise or bying and selling, beyng content onely with that which nature hath lefte them. As for Golde, Pearles, precious stones, iewelles, and suche other thinges, which we in Europa esteeme as pleasures and delicates, they fette noughte by. They haue no kynde of corne. Their common fedinge, is a certayne roote whiche they drye and beate and make floure or meale therof. They eate no kynd of fleshe except mans fleshe: for they eate all suche as they kyll in theyr warres, or o[t]herwise take by chaunce. When we had thus vewed the countreye, and confydered the maners of the people, we determyned to sayle further, downe by the landes fyde, and came after a fewe daies, to a certayn hauen, where we sawe about twentie greate houses, rayfed vppe muche after the fashion of belles. There came vnto vs a great multitude of men vnder pretense of frendshyp. Some swimmyng, and some in botes. Who, as sone as they drew neare vnto vs, fodeynly bent theyr bowes against vs, where we defended oure selues manfully. In this bickeringe, we slewe of them about twentie, beesyde manye that were wounded: But of our men, were onely fyue hurte, whiche were all perfectlye healed. Thus departinge from this hauen, we sayled on, and came to another nacion, in conuerfacion and tongue vtterlye differing from the fyrst. For

Insule fortunatae.

Naked menne.

Wylde men allured with gentlenes

People expert in swimmyng.

Cabbens hanging betweene trees.

Women in common.

Women very stronge and fruitful.

Houses made of trees.

Houses of maruelous bignes.

Ryches and superfluites contemned

Bread of a certain roote.
Mans flesh eateo

A conflict

A gentle nacion
Parias.

Fruites vnlike
vnto oures.

Gold everywhere,

Canibales.

An expedition
agaynst ye
Canibales

comming oute of our shippe, we were very frendly entreated of them, where we continued for the space of nyne dayes. This region is veyre sayre, and fruitefull, hauinge manye pleasaunt woodes, which continue grene all the yeare longe. They haue frutes innumerable, vtterlye vnlyke vnto oures. The Region is situate dyrectelye vnder the lyne, called *Tropicus Calieri*. The inhabitantes them selues, call it *Parias*. Saylinge farre beyond this Region, and ouerpassinge manye countreyes and nacions, fyndinge Gold euery where, (but in no great quantitie) we came to another nacion full of gentleness and humanitie, where we rested. xxxvij. dayes. These people made greuouse complaynte vnto vs, that there was not farre from them, a certayne feare and cruell nacion, whiche vexed them fore, and made incurfion into theyr countreye at a certayne tyme of the yeare, kyllyng them and violentlye caryng them awaye, to th[e] intent to eat them, in so muche that they were not able to defend them selues agaynst theyr fearfulness. Whiche thinge when they hadde so lamentablye declared vnto vs, and we hadde made them promyse that we woulde reuenge theyr so manye iniuries, they ioyned vnto oure company feuen of theyr men. Thus we wente forward: and after feuen dayes, came to an Ilande, called *Ity*: where these feare people dwelte. Who, as sone as they hadde espyed vs, came armed agaynst vs. We ioyned with them in battaile, which contynued for the space of twoo houres. At the length we droue them to flyghte, and slewe and wounded a greate numbere of them, and toke. xxv. captiues. But of our men was onely one slayne, and. xxi. wounded, and shortly after restored to health. We gaue to those feuen men which went with vs, thre menne of oure prifouners and foure women, whom with greate reioyng they caried with them into theyr countreye: and we returninge home toward Spayne, with many captiues came fyrste to a porte of Spayne called *Calicum*, where we folde oure prifouners, and were ioyefullye receaued: In the yeare of Christ. M.cccc.xcix. the. xv. daye of Octobre.

¶ The seconde viage of Vesputius.

The *Equinoctial*
line.



IN the moneth of May folowing *Vesputius* attempted another viage and came by Ilandes of Canaria, euen vnto the burninge lyne, called *Torrída zona*, and founde a lande beeyonde the *Equinoctial* line, toward the South, where the South pole is eleuate fyue degrees. And wheras he coulde fynde no apte enteraunce into the land, and sayled vp and down alonge by the fame, he espyed a bote in which was aboute twentie men: who, as sone as they saw the Spanyardes, lepte into the Sea and escaped all, excepte two, which they toke. In theyr bote which they forfoke, were founde foure young men which they had by force taken oute of another country, hauinge theyr priue members newelye cutte of. These, *Vesputius* toke into his shippes and learned by theyr signes and tokens, that they hadde been taken of the *Canibales*, and should shortlye haue been eaten. But departinge from these costes, and saylinge on forward, they came to a commodious haue, where they founde muche people, with whom they ioyned frendshyp, and fell to changeinge of ware, receauinge for one bell, fyue hundreth Pearles. In this lande they drinke a certayne kynde of wyne, made of the iuyfe of frutes and fedes, beinge lyke whyte and redde fydar. Departinge from hence, and saylinge yet further, they founde a certayne Ilande in which was a beastly kind of people, and simple, yet very gentle. In this Ilande is no freshe water: but they gather the dew which in the night seafon falleth vpon certayne leaues muche lyke vnto the eare of an Affe. They lyue for the moste parte, by sea fishe. They haue no cotages or houfes: but haue certayne broade leaues, wherewith they defende them selues from the heate of thē Sunne, but not from showres: but it is veyre lykely, that it rayneth but lyttle in that Iland. *Vesputius* wyth his companye departinge from hence, sayled vnto another Ilande: into the whiche when he hadde entered, he founde certayne cotages, and in them two old women, and three young wenches, whiche were of so greate stature, that they marueyled thereat. And wheras our menne stryed with them to bringe them to the shyppe, to th[e] intent to haue caryed them into Spayne, they espyed cominge toward them fyxe and thyrtye men, yet of muche greater stature then were the women, bearing with them bowes, arrowes, and great flakes lyke vnto clubbes: at the fyghte of whome, oure menne beinge afrayd, made haste to theyr shippes. But these Gyauntes folowinge them euen to the Seafyde, bended theyr arrowes towards the Spanyardes, vntyll they discharged two pieces of ordinaunces, wyth the horryble founde whereof, they were immediatlye driuen to flight. Oure menne therefore departinge from thence, called that Ilande, the Ilande of Gyauntes. And came to another nacion, which frendlye entreated them, and offered them many Pearles: in so muche that they boughte. xix. markes weyghte of pearles, for a smal price. They gaue vs also certayne shellyshes, of the whiche, some conteyned in them a hundreth and thyrtye Pearles, and some fewer. Departinge from thence they came to the Ilande of *Antiglia*, which *Columbus* had discovered a few yeares before. Leauinge this, they sayled directlye to *Calicum*, a porte of Spayne, where they were honourablye receaued.

Canibales

Fyue hundreth
pearles for one bell.
Wine of the iuyse
of frutes

An Iland without
fresh water.

Broad leaues.

The land of
Gyauntes.

Pearles

A hundreth and
xxx. pearles in one
shellyshe.
Antiglia.
Calicum

¶ The thyrde viage of Vesputius.



Vesputius being called from Castile to serue Emanuel the King of Portugale, in the yeare of Christe. M. ccccc. ij. the tenth daye of May, departed from the hauen of Lisbonne, and sayled downe by the coastes of the sea Atlantike, vntill he came vnder the *Equinoctial* lyne. And the xvij. daye of Auguste, they arryued at a certayne lande where they found a kind of beastly people. This land is situate toward the South, fyue degrees beyonde the *Equinoctial* lyne. A greate multitude of the inhabitantes wer gathered together, and as well as they coulede by signes and poyntinges, desired oure men to come alande and to see theyr countrey. There

were two in the shippe, which toke vpon them to vewe the lande, and learne what spycies and other commodities might be had therein. They were appoynted to returne within the space of fyue daies at the vttermoost. But when eyght dayes were now paste, they whiche remayned in the shippes, heard yet nothing of theyr returne: wheras in the meane time great multitudes of other people of the same lande reforted to the Sea fyde, but could by no meanes be allured to comunicacion. Yet at the length they broughte certayne women, which shewed them felues familier towarde the Spaniardes: Wherupon they fent forth a young man, being very strong and quicke, at whom as the women wondered, and stode gasinge on him and feling his apparell: there came fodeynly a woman downe from a mountayne, bringing with her secreetely a great stake, with which she gaue him such a stroke behynde, that he fell dead on the earth. The other womenne foorthwith toke him by the legges, and drewe him to the mountayne, whyle in the mean tyme the men of the countrey came foorth with bowes and arrowes, and shot at oure men. But the Spaniardes discharginge foure pieces of ordinaunce agaynst them, droue them to flighte. The women also which had slayne the yong man, cut him in pieces euen in the sight of the Spaniardes, shewinge them the pieces, and roasting them at a greate fyre. The men also made certayn tokens. wherby they declared that not past. viii. daies before, they had in lyke maner serued other christian men. Wherefore ye Spaniardes hauinge thus sustayned so greuous iniuries vnreuenged, departed with euyl wil: fayling therfore further toward ye south, they found a nacion of great multitude, and of much genteler condicions, with whom they remained. viij. dayes, bartering and changinge ware with them. Sayling on yet farther, they went beyond ye line called *Tropicus Capricorni*, where the fouth pole is eleuate. 32. degrees: and wheras in those parts thei found no great riches, they failed yet further fouthward vntill ye pole was eleuate. liij. degrees: where thei came into such a tempeste, that they were enforced to gather vpp thei sayles, and to rowe only with the maste, directinge theyr viage toward the coastes of Ethiopia, from whence they returned againe to Lisbonne in Portugale.

The sea Atlantike.

Three of the Spaniardes slayne and eaten.

Fearsome and cruell women.

A ciuile people.

The south pole eleuate. liij. degrees.

Lisburne.

¶ The fourth viage of Vesputius.



His navigation was attempted in the yeare of Christ. M. ccccc. iij. but was not brought to the ende hoped for, by reason of a misfortune which chaunced in the goulfe of the sea Atlantike. *Vesputius* entended in this viage to sayle to the Ilande of *Melcha*, being in the East, in which is sayde to be great ryches, and the stacion of restinge place of all shippes comming from the goulfe *Gangeticus*, and from the Indian Sea. This *Melcha*, is situate more toward the West, and *Calicut* more enclininge towarde the south. *Vesputius* came fyrst to ye grene Ilandes, called *Insule uerides*: and sayled from them to *Serralliona*, beyng in the Southe

partes of Ethiopia: from whence saylinge on yet further, he fawe in the midst of the sea an Iland, high and merueylous: where also the M[as]ter. Pilate of this nauie, lost his shippe by running vpon a rocke: but all the mariners escaped. This shippe was of thre hundred tunne, and had in it al the power of the nauie. When *Vesputius* had entered into the Iland, he found it rude and vnhabited: yet was it full of byrdes: but had no beastes except Lisertes with forked tayles, and Serpentes. Thus makinge prouision for necessaries, he was enforced to returne to portugale, failing of his purpose.

The Ilande of *Melcha*.*Calicut*.*Insule uerides*

A shippe wracke.

Lisertes and Serpents

¶ *How the king of Portugale subdued certayn places in India:
and of the ryche Cytie of Malacha.*



Orasmuche as therefore in the yeares folowinge, there were more often nauigacions made from the West by the south into the East, and the Portugales had now founde a safe passage by ye sea, they thought it expedient for theyr better safetie, to make certayne fortifications and places of refuge in the Easte. The which theyr intent the better to accomplishe, King Emanuel appoynted one *Alphonfus* an experte man on the sea, to be captayne of this viage. Who, defyring to reuenge the losses and iniuries which the Portugales had before sustained, fayled directly to *Aurea Chersonesus*, now called *Malacha*, a merueylous great and riche citie, whose king is an infydel of the secte of the Moores: for euen thus farre was the secte of Mahumet extended. *Alphonfus* therefore at his coming thether, besieged the cytie, and made warre agaynst the Saracens whiche helde the same. In this conflict a greate noubre of theyr enemies beyng slayne, the Portugales entred into the citie by forse and kept the same, permitting free libertie to theyr souldiers to spoyle, kyll, and burne. The king himselfe, fyghting vpon an Elephante, and beyng fore wounded, fledde with the resydue of his companie. A greate noubre of the Moores were slaine with the losse of a fewe Portugales: manye were taken, and great spoyle caried awaye, in the whiche were seuen Elephantes, and all kyndes of ordinaunces pertyeing to the warres, made of copper, to the noubre of two thoufande pieces. The cytie beinge thus taken and sacked, and the enemyes driuen to flyghte, *Alphonfus* the Capitayne the better to prouyde for the sauegarde of the Christians, buylded a strong forte at the mouth or entraunce of the riuer which runneth through ye citie. At this time, that is to witte, in the yeare of Christ. M. cccc. xij. there were in *Malacha* many straungers and marchauntes of dyuerse nacions, whereby the cytie was replenished with great ryches and abudaunce of spyces. They of theyr owne mocion, defyred to make a leage with *Alphonfus*, and were of him gently receaued: So that for theyr better safetie, he permitted them to dwell in the houses neare about the forte. And by this meanes, this markette towne was reedified and broughte to muche better state than euer it was before. These thinges thus happely atchiued, and al thinges in *Malacha* set in good order, *Alphonfus* leauing in the forte a garrison of. vi. hundreth valiante souldiours, returned into India, where he besieged the chiefe castell of the cytie of *Goa*, which (he) a fewe yeares beefore, hadde with no smal daunger of our men, and great slaughter of their enemies, subdued vnder the dominion of Emanuel kynge of Portugale, and was now possessed of the mores, he manfully recouered agayne, and enforced them to render vp the same. Also the ambassadours of the Kinge of *Narfinga*, the Kinge of *Cambaia*, and the King of *Grosapha* with the legates of dyuers other kinges and Princes, offered them selues to be at a leage wyth *Alphonfus*, and thereupon broughte theyr presentes vnto hym. No lesse power and dominion obtayned the king of Spayne in the Ilandes of the Weste partes: In so muche that at his commaundement, were buylded fixe townes in the Ilande of *Cuba*. Lykewyse in the Ilande of *Iucalana*, was buylded a greate cytie wyth fayre houses. The Ilande of *Cozumella*, the Spanyardes called *Sancta Crux*, beecause they came fyrste thether in Maye, on the daye of the Inuencion of the Crosse. In the Ilande of *Hispana* or *Hispaniola*, were erected. 28. fuger presses, to presse ye fugre whiche groweth plentifully in certayne canes or redes of the same countrey. From hence also is brought the wood of *Guaiacum*, otherwyse called, *Lignum Sanctum*, wherewith dyuerse diseases are healed by the order of the newe dyete.

¶ *Of the Iland of Medera, and the fortunate Ilandes, otherwyse
called the Ilandes of Canaria.*



Etwene Spaine and the Ilandes of *Canaria*, is the Ilande of *Medera*, which the Spaniardes in our time founde vnhabited and saluage. But perceauinge that the foyle thereof, was very fruitfull, they burnt the woodes, and made the ground apt to bringe foorth corne, and buylded many houses, and so tilled the same, that at this day is no where founde a more fruitfull lande. It hath in it many springes of freshe water and goodly ryuers, vpon the which are bylded manye sawe mylles, wherewith manye fayre trees, lyke vnto Ceder and Cypresse trees, are fawed and cut in sunder, whereof are made most fayre tables, coberdes, cofers, and chayres, and such other curious workes made of wood. These trees are of redde colour, and swete

The Portugales
bild fortes in the
Easte partes.

Alphonfus

*Aurea
chersonesus.*

The great and
ryche cytie of
Malacha
Saracens.

Malacha besieged
The king fighteth
on an elephant.

Plenty of copper.

Marchaunts.
Spyces.

The cytie of *Goa*.

The Ambassadors
make a league
wyth *Alphonfus*

The west Ilandes
Cuba.

Iucalana.

Cozumel or
Sancta Crux.
Hispana.
Suger presses.

The wood called
Guaiacum.

Medera or
Madera.

Sawe milles.
Fayre tree

faour, the bodies and branches whereof are broughte into Spayne in great plentie. The Kyng of Portugale thought it good to plante in this Iland, that kynde of redes in which fuger groweth: wherein he was not deceaued in his opinion: For they growe there moste fruitfully, and beare fuger which excelleth the fugre of Candye or *Sicilia*. There were also vynes broughte out of Candye and planted in this Ilande, where they prosper fo wel, that for ye moste parte they bring forth more grapes then leaues, and those very great. In this Iland is also great plentie of Partriches, wyld doues, and Peacockes, wild bores, and diuers kindes of other beastes, which onely possessed the Iland before men dyd inhabite the fame. Also the Ilandes called *Insula fortunata*, (whiche are now called *Canaria*, for the multitude of dogges which are in them) are fayd to be no leffe fruytefull. These Ilandes are tenne in noumbre, of the which feuen are inhabited, and thre remaine defolate. They which are inhabited, are called by these names: *Fraeta laucea*, *Magna fors*, *Grancanaria*, *Teneriffa*, *Ginera*, *Palma*, and *Ferrum*. At *Columbus* first comming thether, the inhabitantes went naked, without shame, religion, or knowledge of God. But in successe of time, foure of the greatest Ilandes embrased the Christian faith: They haue eche of them a priuate language. *Teneriffa* and *Grancanaria*, are bigger then the other. *Teneriffa* may be fene afarre of, to the distaunce of fiftie leages, in a fayre and clere daye. The reason whereof is, that in the middest of the Iland, ryfeth a marueylous great and strong rock, which is thought to be. xv. leages high, and casteth fourth continuallye greate flames of fyre and pieces of brimstone, as doth the mount *Etna* in the Iland of *Sicilia*. The people of these Ilandes, lyue with barlye bread, flesshe, and mylke. They haue also greate plentie of Goates, wyld Affes, and Fygges. They lacke wyne and wheate.

Suger

Vynes

The Ilandes of *Canaria*.

Christians

A mount of burninge brimstone. Fygges.

¶ *Whether vnder the Æquinoctial circle or burninge lyne (called Torrida zona) be habitable Regions.*



Ius secundus (otherwise called *Eneas Siluius*;) of this question, wryteth in this maner.

It hath beene muche doubted whether habitable regions maye be founde vnder the *Equinoctial* lyne. *Eratoſthenes* is of th[e] opinion, that the ayre is there verye temperate. So thinketh *Polybius* also, affirming that the earth is there verye highe, and watered with many flowers. *Pofſidonius* ſuppofed that there is no Mountaynes vnder the *Equinoctial*. Some thoughte that the *Equinoctial* lyne was extended beyonde the earth ouer the mayne Ocean ſea: whiche thinge the Poete *Homere* ſemeth to inſinuate, where he ſaineth

Libr. i. Capit. v.

Eratoſthenes.

Polybius.

Pofſidonius.

The *Equinoctial* line

The poet *Homere*

that the horſes which drawe the chariote of [the] funne, drinke of the Ocean ſea, and the funne it ſelſe to take his noriſhement of the ſame. Whiche ſentence *Macrobius* alſo ſoloweth. Neither was *Albertus Magnus* farre from this opinion, who ſuppofeth yat the funne draweth vp ſo much moyſture vnder the *Equinoctial* circle, as engendreth the cloudes vnder the poles, where by reaſon of th[e] exceſſing coldneſſe, ayre is continually turned into water. But *Ptolomeus* thinketh the earth to bee extended beyonde the *Equinoctial*, whereas he placeth a part of the Iland of *Taprobana*, vnder the *Equinoctial*, and alſo many nacions of the *Ethiopiens*. Many haue thought that th[e] earthly Paradyſe was fette vnder that lyne: which opinion is contrary to th[e] auctoritie of the holy ſcripture which witneſſeth the two famous fluddes *Tigris* and *Euphrates* to ſpringe oute of Paradiſe: whiche neuertheleſſe we know from the North partes to fal into the goulfe called *Sinus Perſicus*: but as concerninge the heate vnder the *Equinoctial* lyne, the neareneſſe of the funne, or the directe beames of the ſame, are no ſufficiente cauſes why vnder that line ſhould be no habitable regions, if we conſider how thoſe places are otherwyſe ſhadowed, and tempered with the moyſtenes and dewes of the nightes, which are all the yeare throughe of equal length with the dayes. Yet wyl no man denye, but that vnder the *Equinoctial* througoute all the burninge lyne there are manye wilderneſſes and deſolate places, lacking water, and incommodious for the lyfe of man: Albeit euen in *Ethiopia*, people dwell neare to the ryuers and woodes. *Plinie* alſo fayth that one *Dalion*, and *Ariſtoleon*, and *Bion*, and *Bafilides*, went Southward beyonde *Meroæ* whiche is almoſte vnder the *Equinoctial*. And that *Simonides* who writte the deſcripcion of *Ethiopia*, dwelte fyue yeres in *Meroæ*: whiche Ilande, (becynge in the fyrme lande and compaſſed aboute wyth the Ryuer of *Nilus*) he affirmed to bee ſituate. 972. thouſande pafes beeyonde *Syenes* of *Egypte*, as the ſearchers of *Nero* declared. But at *Siennes* the *Aſtronomers* appoynte the ſommer conuerſion of the funne: and that there the burninge lyne beginneth, being diſtaunte from the *Æquinoctial* foure and twentie degrees, that is twelue thouſande furlonges. Wherby we maye perceaunte that *Meroæ* is ſituate ſome what beeyonde the myddeſt betwene the *Equinoctial* and *Siennes*. *Ptolomeus* alſo deſcrybeth the Region of *Agisimba* to bee inhabited beeyonde the *Equinoctial*. Lykewyſe the Mountaynes of the Mone, called *Montes Luna*, out of the which, the fennes or marifes of the riuier *Nilus* haue their ſpring and originall. He addeth hereunto that there are certayne *Ethiopiens* called *Anthropophagi*,

Macrobius.
Albertus Magnus.

Ptolomeus.

Taprobana

Ethiops

Tigris and *Euphrates.*
Sinus Perſicus.
The neareneſſe of the ſunne.

Temperatenes vnder the *Equinoctial*.
Torrida zona.

Ethiopia.
Plinie.

The Iland of *Meroæ*
Syenes in *Egypte*.
The conuerſion of the ſunne.
Of the furlonges of *Italie* viii. doe make one *Italien* myle, conteyning a. m. [thouſand] pafes.
Agisimba.
Montes Luna.
Paludes Nili.
Ethiops

Anthropophagi.
Habitable regions
how farre
extended.
Clima.

that is, such as eat mans fleshe, which inhabite regions beyond the *Equinoctial* about the space of xvi. degrees. And thus the inhabitation of men is found to be extended. x. hundreth thousand pases beyonde the *Equinoctial* lyne. Whiche space conteyneth no lesse then two clymes of earth. And a clyme is a porcion of the worlde betwene South and North, wherein is variacion in length of the daye, the space of halfe an houre.

¶ Finis.

¶ Thus endeth the fyfth boke of Sebastian Munster,
of the landes of Asia the greater, and of the
newe founde landes, and Ilandes.

1553.



¶ Imprinted at London, in Lom-
barde Strete, By Edward
Sutton.

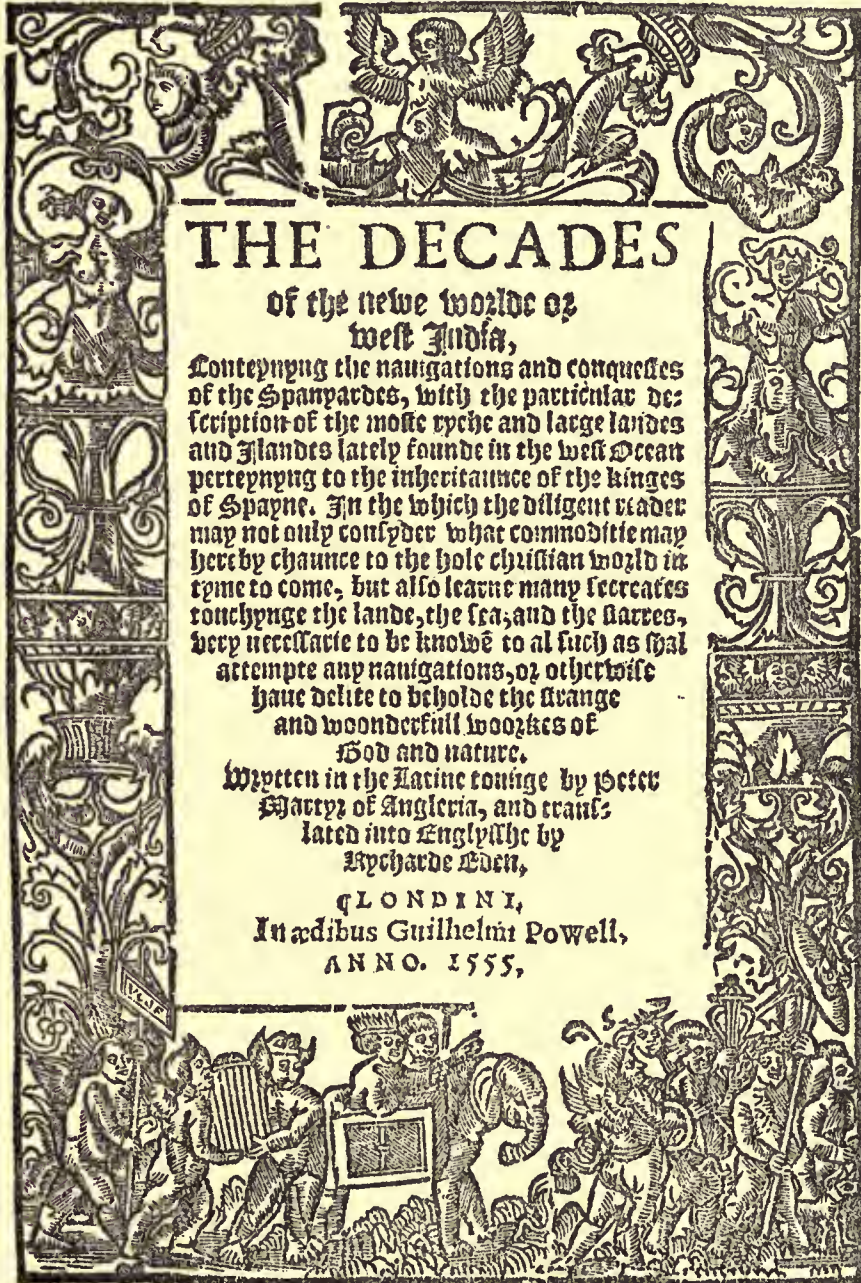


¶ To al aduenturers, and suche as take in hande greate enterpryses.

Who hath not of fowrenes felte the bitter tast,
Is not worthy of fwetenes to take his repast.
To cracke the nutte, he must take the payne,
The which would eate the carnell fayne.
Who that of bees feareth the stinge,
Shal neuer by hony haue great winninge.
As the fwete Rose bringeth forth the thorne,
So is man truely to ioye and payne borne.
The byrde vpon hope byldeth her neste,
Where ostentymes she hath but euyll reste,
Yet is she not therby driuen to fuche feare,
But yat she performeth the same the nexte yeare.
Much casting of periles doth noble corage fwage
Yet do not I commende rashenes or outrage.
What soles do fable, take thou no hede at all,
For what they know not, they cal phantastical.
Nought venter nought haue, is a saying of old.
Better it is to blow the cole, then to fyt a cold.
Fortes fortuna adiuuat, the Latin prouerbe faith,
But fayleth to such as faynt and lacke fayth.
God giueth al thinges, but not ye bul by ye horne
The plowman by trauaile encreafeth his corne.
As fortune fauereth thou mayst be riche or poore,
As *Cresus* or *Irus* that beggeth at the dore.

¶ *Omnis iacta sit alta.*

[The Third English book on America.]



Beyfde the Decades (the table of whose contentes yow may reade in the ende of the booke [see pp. 391-397.]) are conteyned furthermore in this booke these thynges followynge.

¶ Of the landes and Ilandes lately founde.	Folio. 149. [p. 186.]	The hyftorie of Paulus Iouius of the ambaſſade of great Baſilius Prince of Moſcouia to pope Clement the feuenth.	278. [p. 308.]
The popes bulle and donation	167. and. 171. [p. 201.]	Other notable thynges as concernynge Moſcouia, gathered owt of the bookes of Sigifmundus Liberus.	289. [p. 318.]
The hyftorie of the Weſte Indies, wrytten by Gonzalus Ferdinandus.	174. [p. 208.]	The deſcription of the regions and people lyinge North and Eaſte from Moſcouia to the ryuer Petzora and the prouince of Iugaria and the ryuer Obi. &c.	294. [p. 322.]
The ordinarie nauigation from Spayne to the Weſte Indies. Of two notable thynges as touchynge the Weſt Indies: and of the greate ryches brought from thence into Spaine. Of the golde mines and maner of woorkynge in them.	175. [p. 210.]	Of the famous ryuer of Tanais.	297. [p. 324.]
Of the maner of fyſhyng for pearles.	176. [p. 211.]	More directly from Moſcouia to Cathay.	298. [p. 325.]
The familiaritie that the Indians haue with the deuyll.	177. [p. 211.]	Of the Tartars. 299. [p. 327.] The nauigation by the froſen ſea.	303. [p. 330.]
Of temperate and habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall line. &c.	180. [p. 213.]	The letters miſſiue which kynge Edwarde the. vi. ſent to the kynges, princes, and other potentates inhabitynge the north eaſt partes of the worlde towarde the Empire of Cathay. 306. and. 308. [p. 333.]	
Of dyuers particular thynges, as woormes, ſerpentes, beaſtes, foules. &c.	181. [p. 215.]	The letters of the prince of Moſcouia ſente to kynge Edwarde. 319. [<i>Theſe are not included in the work.</i>]	
Of trees, fruites, and plantes, &c. 194. [p. 225.] [Of Reedes or Canes. 196. p. 227.]	184. [p. 217.]	Other notable thynges as touchynge the Indies: and of the foreknowledge that the poet Seneca had of the fyndynge of the newe worlde and other regions not then known. Of the greate Ilande whiche Plato cauled Atlantica or Atlantide. 310. [p. 337.]	310. [p. 337.]
Of the venomous apples wherwith the Canibales inueneme theyr arrowes. 199. [p. 229.] Of fyſhes & theyr maner of fyſhyng. 201. [p. 230.]	185. [p. 218.]	Of the colour of the Indians.	311. [p. 338.]
Of the ryſynge and faulynge of owre Ocean ſea and the fourth ſea called the ſea of Sur.	185. [p. 218.]	Why they were cauled Indians.	311. [p. 339.]
Of the freight of lande beinge betwene the north and fourth ſea.	185. [p. 218.]	The fyrſt diſcouerynge of the Weſt Indies.	312. [p. 339.]
Howe thynges of one kynde, dyffer by the nature of the place: and of the beaſtes cauled Tygers.	185. [p. 218.]	What maner of man Christopher Colon was, and howe he came fyrſt to the knowledge of the Indies.	313. [p. 340.]
Of the maners and cuſtomes of the Indians of the firme lande and of theyr women.	185. [p. 218.]	What labour and trauaile he tooke in attemptynge his firſte vyage to the Indies.	313. [p. 340.]
Of the Ilandes Hiſpaniola and Cuba.	185. [p. 218.]	Of newe Spaine cauled Noua Hiſpania or Mexico.	315. [p. 342.]
Of the Ilande of Cuba and other.	185. [p. 218.]	Of Peru. 316. [p. 343.] Of the great ryuer cauled Rio de la Plata. 316. [p. 343.]	
Of the lande of Baccalaos.	185. [p. 218.]	Of the hygher or ſuperior India cauled India Tercera or Terciera.	317. [p. 344.]
Other notable thynges gathered owt of dyners autours: and of the vniuerfall carde and newe worlde.	185. [p. 218.]	Ageyn of the landes of Laborador and Baccalaos.	318. [p. 344.]
A diſcourſe of the maruelous vyage made by the Spanyardes rounde about the worlde.	185. [p. 218.]	The diſcouerynge of the lande of Florida.	319. [p. 345.]
The order of the ſtarres about the pole Antartike.	185. [p. 218.]	An opinion that Europe, Africa, and Aſia, are Ilandes: and of certeyne Nauigations about the fame.	320. [p. 346.]
The prices of precious ſtones and ſpices with their weightes and meaſures as they are fould bothe of the Moores and Gentyles.	185. [p. 218.]	That the Spanyardes haue ſayled to the Antipodes whiche inhabite the vndermoſt halfe of the baule of the earth, contrary to th[e]opinions of the owlde wryters.	321. [p. 347.]
Of the weightes of Portugale and India, and howe they agree. Of the doones of the Ilande of Madera.	185. [p. 218.]	Who fyrſt founde the nedle of the compaſſe and the vſe thereof. 322. [p. 348.] The ſituation and byggenefſe of the earth. What degrees are.	323. [p. 349.]
Of the Ilande of faynt Thomas vnder the Equinoctiall line. The debate and ſtriſe betwene the Spanyardes and Portugales for the diuiſion of the Indies and the trade of ſpices. Of the pole Antartike and the ſtarres about the fame: and of the qualitie of the regions and diſpoſition of the elementes about the Equinoctiall line: Alſo of certeyne ſecreates touchynge the arte of ſaylynge.	185. [p. 218.]	A demonſtration of the roundeneſſe of the earth.	324. [p. 349.]
A diſcourſe of dyuers vyages and wayes by the which ſpices, precious ſtones, and golde were brought in owlde tyme from India into Europe and other partes of the worlde. Alſo of the vyage to Cathay and Eaſte India by the northe ſea: And of the viages of Sebaſtian Cabot.	185. [p. 218.]	What credit owght to be gyuen to wryters as touchynge the woorkes of nature.	325. [p. 351.]
Of the vyages to Moſcouia and Cathay.	185. [p. 218.]	The preface to the booke of metals.	326. [p. 355.]
A breefe deſcription of Moſcouia.	185. [p. 218.]	Of the generation of metalles and theyr mines, with the maner of fyndynge the fame.	327. [p. 356.]
The deſcription of the north regions: and howe they are habitable, contrary to th[e]opinion of the owlde wryters. Scandia. 267. [p. 298.] Gronlande. 268. [p. 299.] Iſlande. 269. [p. 300.] Laponia. 270. [p. 301.] Norway. 273. [p. 303.] Suetia or Suethlande. 275. [p. 305.] Gothia or Gothlande. 276. [p. 306.] Finlande and Eningia. 276. [p. 306.] Bothnia. 275. [p. 305.] The dyfference of regions and cauſes of great cities.	185. [p. 218.]	Of the mine of golde and the qualitie thereof.	334. [p. 362.]
		Of the myne of ſyluer.	340. [p. 366.]
		The maner of woorkynge in the golde mines of Egypte in owlde tyme.	342. [p. 369.]
		The diſcription of the two vyages made owt of Englande to Guinea in Afrike.	343. [p. 373.]
		A breife deſcription of Afrike.	344. [p. 374.]
		The fyrſte vyage to Guinea.	345. [p. 375.]
		The ſeconde vyage to guynea.	350. [p. 379.]
		The maner of fyndynge the Longitude of regions by dyuers wayes.	360. [p. 389.]
		A newe maner of fyndynge the Longitudes of regions.	361. [p. 390.]
		A breife rehearfall of the contentes of the bookes of the Decades, &c. [p. 391.]	

F I N I S.

¶ *The interpretation of certeyne woordes.*

¶ <i>Continente</i> (that is) the firme lande not incloſed with water, or no Ilande.	<i>Equinoctiall</i> , the line that diuideth the heauen and the earthe in the myddeſt betwene the two poles, in the which when the ſonne commeth, the days and nyghtes are of equal length	<i>Paralleles</i> , are lines whereby the ſonne paſſynge cauſeth variation of tyme.
A <i>Carauel</i> or <i>Caruel</i> , a kynde of ſhyppes.	<i>Clyme</i> , is a portion of the worlde betwene north and fourth.	<i>Gaiti Mammoni</i> , Monkeys.
<i>Hemiſpherium</i> , the halfe globe of the earth and water.		<i>Schoenus</i> , is a ſpace of xl. furlonges.
<i>Pefus</i> , a ducate and a halfe.		<i>Werſt</i> , is an Italian [<i>Ruſſian</i>] mile.
		<i>Colonie</i> , an habitacion.

The Indian language.

¶ <i>Canoa</i> , a boate or barke.	<i>Machana</i> , a ſworde.	<i>Quines</i> , preſtes.	<i>Cauni</i> , golde.
<i>Caciqui</i> , kynges or gouernours.	<i>Arcitos</i> , fonges or balades.	<i>Chiuy</i> , a man.	<i>Mayani</i> , nothyng. &c.
<i>Zemes</i> an Idole.	<i>Tona</i> , the moone.	<i>Ira</i> , a woman.	
<i>Tuyra</i> , the deuyll.	<i>Tonatico</i> , the foonne.	<i>Boa</i> , a houſe.	

¶ Note that the Ilande of Hiſpaniola, is nowe cauled San Domingo by reaſon of the chiefe city fo named. Alſo faynte Iohns Ilande cauled ſancti Iohannis, or Burichena, is otherwyſe cauled Boriquen.

■ POTENTISSIMO AC SERENISSIMO
PHILIPPO, AC SERENISSIMÆ POTENTISSIMÆQVE MARIÆ,

Dei gratia Regi ac Reginae, Angliæ, Franciæ, Neapolis, Ierusalem, et
Hiberniæ: Fidei defensoribus, Principibus Hispaniarum et Siciliæ,
Archiducibus Austriæ, Ducibus Mediolani, Burgundiæ, et
Brabantia, comitibus Haspurgi, Flandriæ, et Tirolis,
Richardus Edenus perpetuam optat fœlicitatem.



VM IN PRIMO VESTRO ingressu in hanc celeberrimam Londini urbem (illustrissimi Principes) cernerem quanto omnium applausu, populi concursu, ac ciuium frequentia, quanto insuper spectaculorum nitore, nobilium virorum splendore, equorum multitudine, tubarum clangore, cæterisque magnificis pompis ac triumphis, pro dignitate vestra accepti estis dum omnes quod fui est officij facere fatagebant, vbi in tanta hominum turba vix vnus reperiatur qui non aliquid agendo aduentum vestrum gratulabatur, cœpi et ego quoque aliorum exemplo (propius presertim ad me accedentibus Celsitudinibus vestris) tanto animi ardore ad aliquid agendum accendi ne solus in tanta hominum corona otiosus viderer, quod vix me continebam quin in aliquam extemporariam orationem temere erupuissem, nisi et præsentia vestra maiestas, et mea me obscuritas a tam audaci facinore deterruissem. Verum, cum postea penitus de hac re mecum cogitarem, consideraremque quam hæc omnia alioqui per se laude digna, vestris tamen meritis ac regiae dignitatis eminentiæ comparata, plebeia ac ludicra videantur, cœpi denuo cum animo meo reputare qua in re ita cum immortalis rerum memoria fœlicissimum vestrum aduentum gratularer, vt inde nominis vestri fama et splendor, non vllis spectaculorum temporarijs ostentis, sed rerum gestarum gloria, ad posteros perpetuo emanaret. Excutio statim diuitias meas. Perscrutor si quid ex penu meo depromere possum quod me ad aliquid agendum vestris heroicis virtutibus dignum excitet. Sed cum penes me nihil tale reperio, agnosco nuditatem meam, atque ad vos confugio. Patrum, auorum, proauorum, atque atauorum vitas et facta recolo. Syluam rerum gestarum video, totque præclarissimorum principum propagines, vt merito ab ipsis heroibus, Saturno videlicet, Ioue, ac Hercule, cæterisque theanthropis, originem duxisse videantur. Quod cum ita sit, non aliunde profecto quam ex hac sylua materies mihi petenda erit quo in mentibus hominum et æterna rerum memoria, perpetua spectacula rerum a vobis et progenitoribus vestris præclare gestarum, in mundi theatro ab omnibus cum summa nominis vestri fama ac veneratione cernantur. Cum itaque inter cætera a maioribus vestris præclare gesta, nihil sit admirabilius aut maiori laude dignum, quam quod incredibili fiducia et plus quam Herculeis laboribus superato Oceano, fœlicissimo tandem euentu, Indiæ Occidentalis

ditissimas Insulas atque Continentis amplissimas regiones, mortalium primi inuenerunt, in quibus infinitas incolarum myriades ad fidem Christi conuerterunt (quo nihil augustius aut Christianis principibus magis dignum excogitari potest) visus sum mihi quod non alia in re magis possem felicitati vestrae merito gratulari, quam si nostris quoque hominibus quibus haec haecenus nihil aut parum cognita sunt, innotescere faciam, ut perspectis illorum simul et vestrorum amplissimis imperijs non sine diuina prouidentia (ut credere par est) ad ipsos usque Antipodes et PLSV VLTRA terminatis, omnes boni, ipsa rerum magnitudine in admirationem ducti, vos ament et venerentur: Malis vero et improbis, os obstruatur si quam in maledicendo voluptatem capiunt. Haec dum cogito, venit mihi in mentem quod olim adolescens perlegi Decades de Nouo Orbe a Petro Martyre ab Angleria, illustrissimi Ferdinandi regis Catholici, ac tui (Serenissime rex) proavi oratore, Latine conscriptas, atque sacrae Caesariae maiestati patri tuo dedicatas. Tanti itaque auctoris fide et eruditione motus, eum praeter caeteris in nostram linguam traducendum suscepi, quod non solum ut historicus res Indicas cum summa fide scriptis mandauit, sed etiam ut philosophus (quod in caeteris scriptoribus desyderatur) naturalium rerum occultas causas reddit, ac admirabilium naturae operum (quibus haec vestra India plena est) rationes inuestigat. Atque ut huius Indiae posterior status cognoscatur, quantumque thesaurus auri, gemmarum, aromatum, aliarumque ditissimarum mercium ac annui census inde quotannis in Hispaniam aduehitur, adiunxi doctissimi viri Gonzali Ferdinandi Ouiedi libellum quem ille Indicae historiae generalis Summarij titulo inscripsit, eiusdemque illustrissimi Caroli Imperatoris patris tui nomini consecrauit: Caeteraque plurima ex recentioribus scriptoribus excerpti, quae mihi in tam immensa rerum memorabilium bibliotheca, praecipue adnotanda videbantur. Quae, quanta et qualia sunt, quantumque parafrangis, omnium heroum ac Argonautarum res gestas toto terrarum orbe tantopere celebratas superent, haec mea sequens praefacio vulgari sermone ad huius historiae lectores populumque Anglicum conscripta, fatis prolixa oratione indicabit, adeo ut idem hic repetere superuacuum sit, minimeque necessarium, quandoquidem Anglica lingua tibi Serenissima Regina vernacula est, idemque illustrissimo Regi quod tibi scriptum aut dictum existimen, non solum quod diuino vinculo vnum sitis in carne vna, sed etiam quod eadem animi lenitate, humanitate, affabilitate, caeterisque virtutibus, non minus animi moribus quam carnis vinculo vnum sitis. Sed neque hic opus est ut ego Latino sermone vestras virtutes, animi moderationem, clementiam, religionem, pietatem, educationem, castitatem felicitatem, fortunas, opes, munificentiam, victorias, imperia, stemmata, caeteraque huiusmodi multa enumerem, cum praefertim vir nobilis et doctus Leonhardus Goretius Polonus de his omnibus deque felicissimo vestro matrimonio, orationae fatis fusa tractauit, in qua nihil pretermisit quod ad Celsitudinis vestrae et progenitorum vestrorum gloriam virtute partam, pertineat. Caeterum cum regiae vestrae virtutes nominisque splendor ac regnorum amplitudo alias per vniuersa Christiani orbis imperia fatis nota sint, nisi forte ibi minime vbi maxime nota esse deberent, nempe in hoc Angliae regno, ideo opere praecium et rem omnibus bonis gratam, quodque mei est officij erga Celsitudines vestras me facturum existimaui, si haec nostris (ut dixi) hominibus, nostraque lingua ob oculos contemplanda proposuero. Quod quam feliciter aut dextre a me factum sit, aliorum esto iudicium. Quam vero fideliter, sincere, ac animo in Maiestatis vestras propenso hoc idem aggressus sum, testis est mihi conscientia mea in conspectu illius qui hominum corda et renes scrutatur. Macte igitur virtutis istius animi vestri estote Serenissimi Principes, atque Diuino auxilio freti, pergite ea qua coepistis fiducia, huius deploratae ac collapsae reipublicae nostrae statum, pristino decori restituere, id quod omnes a vobis expectant atque efflagitant,

pollicentes infuper vobis in eo negotio suam operam in nullo defuturam. Ne terreat vos quorundam canum latratus qui bonis omnibus oblatrant, et tunc desinent latrare cum desinent viuere. Vulgatissimum semper fuit improbos homines viris probis vel propter inuidiam vel propter dissimilitudinem, solere latrare. Et tamen ille probus semper habitus est, quem peruersi maxime improbauerint. Non est igitur curandum quid de nobis homunculi, sed quid viri boni loquantur. Cogitate (Serenissimi Principes) quod magnanimitate ac maiorum insignijs, aquilis et leonibus similes estis. Aquilæ natura est, alta petere, et aduersus solis radios in altum volare. Leonis proprium est parcere subiectis et debellare superbos. Generosus equus per plateas incedens, canes vt animalcula imbella præterit non perturbatus, Virtus non exercita (inquit Seneca ad Neronem) paruam laudem meretur. Non admodum magnificum fuerit mediocrem fortunam probe administrare: Sed tanta rerum omnium licentia non abuti, hoc vero admirabile est: Multo autem admirabilius in iuuenili ac lubrica ætate cui accedat ætas magistra: hijs præfertim qui contumelia lacescuntur, quæ alioqui homines vel placidissimos solet de gradu dejicere. Sed (vt supra dixi) non est hic mei propositi (Serenissimi Principes) vestras laudes pro meritis decantare, aut exprimere quo modo in fummo rerum fastigio vos humiles præbuisistis, de quare fusius in præfatione ad lectores tractauimus. Iam itaque vt huic epistolæ dedicatoriæ finem imponam, rogo Serenissimas Maiestates vestras vt has meas lucubrationes in hijs autoribus vertendis, (quas vestro nomini consecraui) ea humanitate ac fauore suscipiatis, quibus omnes beneuolo animo ad vos accedentes, facile admittitis ac neminem rejicitis. Quem admodum enim qui pomarium aut vineam plantauit ac maturos inde fructus collegit, illi merito primitias soluit a quo prima semina primasque arborum insitiones habuit, ita et ego qui a maiorum vestrorum rebus gestis primis sumptis feminibus, hos qualescumque fructus ædidi, videor profecto mihi, debito vestro honore vos defraudasse, nisi eosdem vestro nomini ac numini obtulissetem.

Deus. Opt. Max. Celsitudines vestras perpetuo seruat incolumes,
 faxitque vt fecunda sobolis propagine, summaque pace
 ac tranquillitate, huius regni habenas ad Diuini
 nominis gloriam, diu gubernetis.

FINIS.

RYCHARDE EDEN TO THE READER.



He moſte famous oratoure and learned Phyloſopher Marcus Tullius Cicero, wryteth, that in all conſultations as touchynge owre behauoure and order of luyng amonge men, it behoueth vs euer to beare in mynde howe farre the dignitie of mans nature, excelleth the condition of brute beaſtes. For they, beinge ruled altogether by ſence, delyte in nothyng but beaſtely appetites, whereunto they runne headlonge as to theyr onely felicitie. But the mynde of man, beinge of more noble nature, is nuryſhed with knowlege, and taketh pleaſure in diuiſyng or excogitayng ſume honeſt thyng, whereby it not onely leaueth amonge men a memorie of his immortall nature, but alſo engendereth the lyke affection in other that delyte to ſee and heare ſuch thinges as are commendable in theyr predicceſſours. And this ſurely thynke I to bee the cauſe that eyther the famous factes of worthy men, or ingenious inuentions of experte artificers, haue not onely nobilitate the autours and diuifers of the fame, or ſuch to whom they haue byn dedicate, but alſo that parte

of theyr commendations haue redounded to all ſuche as haue ſpente theyr tyme and taken paynes in illuſtratyng and ſettyng furthe theyr doyngeſ. For who ſhulde at this daye haue knowne Mauſolus the kynge of Caria, with his wyfe Artemiſia, or theſe famous artificers, Scopa, Bryaces, Timotheus, Leochares, or Pythis, if the wonderfull and ſumptuous woork of the ſepulcher whiche Artemiſia made for kynge Mauſolus her huſband (beinge of ſuch woorkemanshypp that it was accompted for one of the marueyls of the worlde) had not geuen vnto all theſe immortall fame, whereas neuertheleſſe it coulde not defende it ſelfe ageynſt th[e] iniurie of tyme confumyng all thynges. There remayneth at this daye no token of the laborious Tabernacle whiche Moiſes buylded, or of the renoumed and marueilous Temple that was buylded in Hieruſalem by Salomon and renewed by Eſdras. Yet ſhall the name of the excellent artificers Ooliab and Befelchel, and Hiram the kynge of Tyrus, lyue for euer in the memory of men. Furthermore alſo, Salomon hym ſelfe, although he were many other wayes famous, yet gaue he a greate parte of his glory to that princely buyldyng. But certeynly the moſt trewe and permanent glory, procedeth of ſuch monumentes as bryng ſume great and notable commoditie and profite to the lyfe of men, rather then of the hugious heapes of ſtones of the Pyramides of Egypt, wherin is nought els to ſee but the ſonde and barbarous oſtentation of ſuperfluous riches: Or of the Mazes cauled Labyrinthi, or of horryble great Images cauled Coloffi, of knottes inexplicable, of braſen caudrons of monſtrous byggeneſſe, of hauens with echo ſeuē tymes reboundyng, and dyuers ſuche other portentous inuentions, the which as they do delite vs in confideryng the maruelous arte and witte of ſuche artificers as diuifed and made the fame, ſo are they otherwyſe vnprofitable: And bryng rather a fame to theyr inuentoures, then trewe glorye. Perillus was famous by diuiſyng his braſen bulle: yet ſo, that it had byn better for hym to haue byn obſcure and vnknown. They haue therefore deſerued more trewe commendation whiche in buyldyng of cities, townes, fortrefſes, bridges, cundites, hauens, ſhyppes, and ſuche other, haue ſo ioyned magnificence with profecte, that bothe may remaine for an eternal teſtimonie of abſolute glory, whoſe perfection extendeth to the gratifyng of vniuerſal mankind as farre as mans mortalitie wyll permit. The whiche thinge whyle I conſider, and caule to memorie howe Cicero defineth trewe glory to bee a fame of many and greate deſertes eyther towarde owre citizens, owre countrey, or towarde all man kynde, and the fame to bee of ſuch excellencie that the owlde poetes for ſume effecte fayned it to bee the ſweete Ambroſia and Nectar wherwith the goddes are fedde, and that of ſuch force that who ſo may drynke therof, ſhal alſo become a god, (that is to ſay immortall and happy) mee thynke verely that (yf man may be a god to men as holy ſcripture ſpeaketh of Moiſes and other) the kynges of Spayne of late dayes (if I may ſpeake it without offence of other) may ſo much the more for theyr iuſt deſertes and good fortune be compared to thoſe goddes made of men (whom the antiquitie cauled Heroes and for theyr manyfolde benefites to man kynde honoured them with diuine honoure) as theyr famous factes ſo farre excell al other, as I dare not ſpeake to ſuch as haue not yet harde or redde of the fame, leaſt the greatneſſe therof ſhulde at the firſt brunte ſo muche aſtonyſhe the reader that he myght geue the leſſe credite to the autoure of this booke, who neuertheleſſe hath moſte faythfully wrytten this hyſtorye of ſuche thynges wherof he hath ſcene a greate parte him ſelfe (as being by

Commendation
of noble factes.

Mauſolus.
Cunnyng
artificers.

The Tabernacle
of Moiſes.
The Temple of
Salomon.
Hiram.

Trewe glory.

Great and
ſumptuous works

Fame differeth
from true glory.

Absolute glory.

What is true
glory.

The kynges of
Spayne.
Heroes.

The certentie of
this hyſtory

the moſte catholyke and puiffaunt kynge Ferdinando appoynted a commiſſionarie in th[e]affayres of India) and gathered the refidewe partly by information and partly out of the wrytinges of ſuch as haue byn (as Vyrgyll wryteth of Eneas, *Et quorum pars magna fui*) that is, doers and parte of ſuch thynges as are conteyned in the hyſtorie: as Gouvernours, Lieuetenautes, Capitaynes, Admirals, and Pylottes, who by theyr painefull trauayles and prowes, haue not onely ſubdued theſe landes and feas, but haue alſo with lyke diliger ce commytted th[e]order therof to wrytinge: And not this onely, but for the better tryall of the trewth herein, haue and yet doo in maner dayly fende from thenſe into Spayne ſuch monuments as are moſt certeyne teſtimonies of theyr doynge, as yow may reade in dyuers places in this boke. This newe worlde is nowe ſo much frequented, the Ocean nowe ſo well knowne, and the commodities ſo greate, that the kynge erected a houſe in the cite of Siuile (cauled the houſe of the contractes of India) perteynyng onely to th[e]affayres of the Ocean, to the which al ſuch reforte for neceſſaries as attempte anye vyage to this newe worlde, and lykewyfe at theyr returne make theyr accompte to the counſayle for the Indies for the golde and fuche other thynges as they brynge from thenſe. It is therefore apparent that the heroical factes of the Spaniardes of theſe days, deferue ſo greate prayſe that th[e]autour of this booke (beinge no Spanyarde) doth woorthely extolle theyr doynge aboute the famous actes of Hercules and Saturnus and ſuch other which for theyr glorious and vertuouſ enterpryſes were accounted as goddes amonge men. And ſurely if great Alexander and the Romans which haue rather obteyned then deferued immortal fame amonge men for theyr bluddye victories onely for theyr owne glory and amplifyinge theyr empire obteyned by ſlaughte of innocentes and kepte by violence, haue byn magnified for theyr doinges, howe much more then ſhal we thynke theſe men woorthy iuſt commendations which in theyr mercyfull warres ageynſt theſe naked people haue ſo vſed them felues towarde them in exchaungynge of benefites for victorie, that greater commoditie hath therof enſewed to the vanquiſhed then the victourers. They haue taken nothyng from them but ſuch as they them felues were wel wyllynge to departe with, and accounted as ſuperfluities, as golde, perles, precious ſtones and ſuch other: for the which they recompensed them with fuche thynges as they muche more eſtmed. But ſum wyll ſay, they poſſeſſe and inhabyte theyr regions and vſe them as bondemen and tributaries, where before they were free. They inhabite theyr regions indeede: Yet ſo, that by theyr diligence and better manuryng the fame, they maye nowe better ſuſteyne both, then one before. Their bondage is fuche as is much rather to be deſired then theyr former libertie which was to the cruell Canibales rather a horrible licencioſneſſe then a libertie, and to the innocent ſo terrible a bondage, that in the myddeſt of theyr ferefull idleneſſe, they were euer in daunger to be a pray to thoſe manhuntyng woolues. But nowe thanked be God, by the manhodde and pollicie of the Spanyardes, this deuelyſſhe generation is ſo confumed, partely by the ſlaughte of fuche as coulede by no meanes be brought to ciuilitie, and partly by referuyng ſuch as were ouercome in the warres, and conuertynge them to a better mynde, that the prophecie may herein bee fulfilled that the wolfe and the lambe ſhall feede together, and the wyldie fieldes with the vale of Achor, ſhalbe the folde of the heard of gods people. Moifes as the miniſter of the lawe of wrath and bondage geuen in fyer and tempeſtes, was commaunded in his warres to faue neyther man, woman, nor chylde, and yet brought no commoditie to the nations whom he ouercame and poſſeſſed theyr landes. But the Spaniardes as the myniſters of grace and libertie, brought vnto theſe newe gentyles the victorie of Chryſtes death wherby they beinge ſubdued with the worldely ſworde, are nowe made free from the bondage of Sathans tyrannie, by the myghty poure of this triumphante victourer, whom (as fayth the prophet) god hath ordeyned to be a lyght to the gentyles, to open the eyes of the blynde, and to delyuer the bounde owt of pryſon and captiuitie. What other men do phantaſie herein, I can not tell: but fuer I am, that lyke as the ſlowe and brutyſſhe wyttes, for the ſelenderneſſe of theyr capacitie and effeminate hartes, do neuer or ſeldome lyfte vp theyr myndes to the contemplation of goddes workes and maieſtie of nature, but lyke brute beaſtes lookynge euer downewarde, thynke the worlde to be in maner no bygger then theyr owne dungehylls or cagies, lyttle paſſyng whether the Chryſtian fayth do ſpreade through the worlde, or bee dryuen to one corner: Euen ſo al good wyttes and honeſt natures (I doubt not) wyl not onely reioyce to ſee the kyngedome of God to bee ſo farre enlarged vpon the face of the earth, to the confuſion of the deuyl and the Turkyſſhe Antichryſte, but alſo do the vttermoſt of theyr poure to further the fame. For ſurely, as Gonſalus Ouiedus wryteth to the Emperours maieſtie in his hyſtorie of the Weſte Indies, that he thynketh hym no trewe Spanyarde whiche reioyceth not in the good fortune of theyr kynges by whoſe ayde and godly zeale this myghtie portion of the worlde hath byn added to the flocke of Chryſtes congregation, Euen ſo do I thinke them no trewe Chryſtian men that do not reioyce with the Angels of heauen for the deliuerie of theſe owre brootherne, owre fleſſhe, and owre bones, from the handes of owre commune enemye the oulde ſerpente who hath ſo longe had them in hys poſſeſſion, vntyll the fulneſſe of the gentyles be accompliſhed accordynge to the time prefinite by hym, who vnto the yeare after his incarnation. M. CCCC. lxxxii. hath ſuffered the greate ſerpente of the ſea Leuiathan, to haue fuche dominion in the Ocean and to caſte ſuch myſtes in the eyes of men, that ſence the creation of the worlde vntyll the yeare before named, there hath byn no paſſage from owr knowne partes of the world to theſe newe landes, whereas nowe the fame

are moſte certeynely knowen to be not paſt. xxx. dayes faylynge from Spayne. Neyther yet had the church of Europe any knowlege of the myghtie Chryſtian Empire of Precioſus Iohannes, otherwyfe cauled Prefbyter Iohannes, Emperour of many Chryſtian nations in Ethiope, vntyll the yeare of Chryſte. M. CCCC. xxxiii. as largely appeareth in the nauigations of the Portugales, and eſpecially in the booke of Damianus a Goes, wrytten to the byſhop of Rome, Paule the thyrde of that name, of the fayth and religion of the Ethiopians which they haue hadde fence the tyme of the Apoſtles. A thyng certes moſt wonderfull, and fuche, that yf the fame were not hydde hetherto by gods vnſercheable prouidence, I can not but thynke much negligence or ignorance in owr forefathers and prediceſſours vntyll the dayes of the ryght noble, prudent, and Catholike kynge of Aragon Don Ferdinando grandfather to Th[e]mperours maieſtie by his eldeſt dowghter, and to the queenes hyghneſſe by his ſeconde dowghter the moſt vertuous lady queene Catherine her graces moother: A prince doubtleſſe of fuche nobilitie, prowes, magnificence, and all other vertues commendable in a prince, that who ſo ſhall indifferently way all his doinges and good ſucceſſe in all his affayres, comparinge the fame to th[e]nterpryſes and doinges atchyued by fuche famous princes in whome the Greekes and Romans haue ſo greatly gloryed, maye with one eye perceauē not onely howe farre his noble factes do furmount theyrs, but alſo wel conſyder what noble branches of iſſhewe were lyke to ſprynge owt of ſo woorthy a ſtock. And fuerly if fence the begynning of the worlde, the fauour of god toward men hath byn knowen by fuch benefites and bleſſynges as he hath geuen to men, it ſeemeth to me that in maner (onely Chryſte excepted) there neuer lyued man to whom god hath geuen greater benefites and ſhewed more fauoure. Great doubtleſſe was the fauour and mercie that god ſhewed vnto Noe, by whom he faued the remanent of mankynde beinge but fewe in number. But much greater was the grace which he ſhewed to kynge Ferdinando vnder whom and by whoſe meanes he faued not onely the bodies but alſo the foules of innumerable millions of men inhabytyng a great part of the worlde heretofore vnknown and drowned in the deluge of erreure. What ſhulde I here ſpeake of Abraham the father of fayth whoſe promyſes were great, and he cauled the frende of god: Dyd he or his poſteritie ſee Iſraell increaſe to fuch multitudes and nations as kyng Ferdinandos poſteritie may ſee th[e]increaſe of this ſpirituall Iſraell vnto whome as a ſeconde Abraham he was the father of fayth? Moifes was ſo great in the ſyght of god that he diſcloſed vnto hym his ſecrete name, and miraculoſly cauled a corner of the ſea to open at his prayer. But howe greater a myracle was it that he opened vnto the nauie of Don Ferdinando the greate Ocean thought before that tyme to bee without ende, where neuertheleſſe he and his poſteritie the kynges of Spayne haue nowe planted a newe Iſraell muche greater then that whiche Moifes ledde throughe the red ſea. It were here ſuperfluous to ſpeake of Dauid whom Godde founde a man accordynge to his hartes deſyre: and yet maye it be doubted whether his plages and ſcourges were greater then his benefites? His ſonne Salomon for al his inconstant and wauerynge wyſedome and his great ryches obteyned by his nauigations to Ophir, yet was there at this tyme no knowlege of Antipodes, neyther dydde any of his ſhyppes ſayle abowt the hole worlde, perce the Ocean, and trauerſe the Equinoctial line to th[e]inferiour hemiſpherie or halfe globe of the earthe and ſea as dyd the famous ſhypp Victoria ſent furth by Th[e]mperours maieſtie. A thyng doubtleſſe ſo ſtrange and marueylous that as the lyke was neuer done before, ſo is it perhaps neuer lyke to be done ageyne: ſo farre haue the nauigations of the Spanyardes excelled the vyage of Iafon and the *Argonautæ* to the region of Colchos, or all that euer were before. And although in the booke of kynges and Paralipomenon it bee hyperborically wrytten that in the dayes of Salomon golde and fyluer were in Hieruſalem in maner as plentiful as ſtones, and that his ſeruantes brought from Ophir foure hundreth and fiftie talentes of gold, yet do we not reade that any of his ſhyppes were ſo laden with golde that they ſoonke, as dyd a ſhypp of kynge Ferdinandos as yow maye reade in the laſt booke of the fyrſte Decade. Neyther was the dominion of Salomon extended from the ryuer of Euphrates to the lande of the Philiftians and th[e]extreme confines of Egypte to be compared with the large Empire whiche the kynges of Spayne haue in the weſt Indies: Nor his ryches of golde to be thought much in reſpect of that which hath byn brought from thenſe into Spayne as ſhall playnely appere to al fuche as wyll ſeeke to knowe the truth hereof. But to let paſſe to ſpeake any further of the myracles which god hath wrought by the handes of this noble prince in this newe world among theſe newe gentyles. Is it not well knowen to all the world what a defence and braſen wall he hath byn to all Chryſtendome in that he hath quite dryuen out of Spayne the Moores or Sarafens and Iewes which ſo many hundreth yeares poſſeſſed a greate parte of Spayne to no ſmaule daungiore of the hole Chryſtian Empire, and yet coulde neuer before bee cleane vanquyſhed vntyll the dayes of this noble and Catholyke prince ſo named for his warres ageynſte the infidelles, whom God rayſed for a Capitayne of his people as an other Gedion vnder whoſe banner they myght ouercome their enemies and purge his vineyarde from fuche wycked weedes. The which thyng doubtleſſe may ſeeme ſo much the greater and more difficulte, forafmuch as in the myddeſt of the chiefe heate of his chargeable

Preſter Iohn
the Chryſtian
Emperour of
Ethiope.

Don Ferdinando
kynge of Aragon.

The fauour of god
known by his
benefites.

Noe.

What god hath
wrought by kynge
Ferdinando.

Abraham.

Spirituall Iſraell.

Moifes.

Dauid.

Salomon.

Ophir.

Antipodes.

The nauigation
rounde about the
worlde.

The dominion
of Salomon.
Paral. 9.

The Indies.

The warres of
kynge Ferdinando
ageynſte the
Saracens.

The conqueste of
the IndiesThe conqueste
of Naples.The Emperours
maiestie.

warres ageynste the Moores of Granada, he euen then and at the same tyme sente furth shippes for the conquestyng of the Indies, as though he and the nation of the Spanyardes had byn appointed by god eyther to subdue the enemies of the fayth or to bringe theym to Christes religion. The selfe same kynge Ferdinando also abowte the yeare of Chryst. 1503. sente a nauie of shippes into Italy, where they vanquysshed, chafed, and slewe the Frenchemen, and recouered the kyngedome of Naples with all the dominions. belongynge thereunto. By which noble victory, his succession and posteritie as the[e]mperours maiestie and nowe his sonne the kynge owre master and foueraigne lorde haue euer fence enioyed th[e]inheritaunce of the same as of antiquitie by iust and ryght tittle dewe to them and theyr predicesours. And as it is the nature of god not only to shewe his loue and fauour to such as haue pleased hym, but also to poure furth the plentie of his grace vpon theyr succession from generation to generation, so hath he with lyke felicitie prospered the reigne of Th[e]emperours maiestie who by his wisedome and prowes hath not onely polittikly gouerned, but also augmented and enlarged such dominions as sel to hym by discente of inheritaunce. What shuld I speake of his warres and conquestes in India, in Aphrike, in Italie, in Fraunce, in Germanie, and in Flaunders: all the which to be declared accordyngely wolde rather require hole volumes then fewe sheetes of paper. Yet hath one in fewe woordes effectually expressed his dominions and conquestes in these verses folowyng,

*Impiger expauit rapidas transire per undas
Oceani Alcides: continuitque gradum.
Maximus at Caesar, PLVS VLTRA tendere cursum
Ausus, et ignotis est dare iura locis.
Et domita aurifera nunc victor gente reuerfus,
Cætera sub scepro ponat vt ipse suo.
Nam pater omnipotens vt famam terminet astris
Iussit, et imperium fincat Oceano.*

¶ An other also breiefely hath declared the same in these verses.

*Consortem Imperij voluit quia Iuppiter orbis,
Astra Deo cadunt, Carole terra tibi.*

And certes who so well considereth the progenie of kynges that in so shorte a time haue linially descended from Don Ferdinando, and howe many kyngedomes they possesse, may see that God hath fulfilled in hym also the promyses and blessinges of Abraham, as to make hym the father of many nations, and his seede to growe great vpon the earth: Also that many kynges shulde come furth of his loynes, and to make a perpetuall league and conuenaunt with hym and his posteritie to bee theyr god for euer. And here to omytte to speake of other: Was there euer better hope or more likenes then now, that these blessinges and promyses of god shulde continewe in this princely progenie, syth the vertues and felicitie of them al doo so shyne and florisse in our noble and gracious prince kynge Phylippe, to whom euen in his youth his father (occupied in the warres of Italye and Aphrike) comytted the hole gouernaunce of the kyngedomes of Spayne and the Indies. Of his behaouour in Englande, his enemies (which canker, vertue neuer lacked) They I say (if any such yet remaine) haue greatest cause to reporte well: ye so well, that yf his naturall clemencie were not greater then was theyr vnnaturall indignation they knowe them felues what myght haue folowed. The properties of fooles and wyse men are declared in these owld verses.

*Quid stulti proprium? Non posse et velle nocere.
Quid sapientis opus: Non velle et posse nocere.*

That is to say: What is the propertie of a foole? To wyl to doo hurte and can not. What is the woork of a wyse man? Not to wyl to hurte though he may. But whether he hath lacked poure or wyll, it is knowen to barbers and blere eyde men. Who lamented theyr folly more then he? Who more humbly admytted theyr futes and supplications? Ye who obteyned theyr pardon but he? Beynge a Lion he behaued hym selfe as a lambe, and strooke not his enemye hauynge the swoorde in his hande. Stoope Englande floope, and learne to knowe thy lorde and master, as hores and other brute beastes are taught to doo. Be not indocible lyke Tygers and dragons, and such other monsters noyous to man kynde. God by the mouth of Iſaias the prophet reprooueth the Israelites that they knewe not so well theyr dewtie towarde hym as dyd the brute beastes the mangiers of theyr masters. The ox and the asse (sayth he) knoweth the mangier of theyr master, but Israell knoweth not me. For shame let vs not be woofe then oxen and asses, and lyke vnto hores and mules in whom is no vnderstandyng. But O vnthankfull Englande and voyde of honest shame? Who hath geuen the the face of a hoore and toonge of a serpent without shame to speake venemous woordes in secretes ageynst the annoynted of god. O paynted hoore that hast Chryste in thy mouth and the deuyl in thy harte. Hathe not the pocke of thy licentiousnesse bruste furth in maner to thyne owne destruction. Howe longe wylt thou nuryfsh in thy boosome

Gen. 17.

The kinges
maiestieApostrophe to
Englande.

Isai. 1.

that serpente whose nature is to deuoure her moother? Take a vomyte in tyme least thy difeafe become vncurable. What neede I rehearse vnto the thy manyfolde infirmities and deformities whiche thou arte faulen into by thyne owne owtragiouineffe? If the greefes of them bee to thee vnfenible by reason of thy feebleneffe and longe sickenes, take vnto the that glaffe wherein thou gloryest with the Iewe and thynkest that thou feest al thynges and canst iudge all mysteries: Looke I say in that pure glaffe and beholde thy owne deformities, which thou canste not or wylte not feele. I feare greatly that if thou looke therein diligently and looke euen through the thy selfe, thou wylte abhorre thy selfe to see howe many monsters lye hid in the vnder the shape of man. There is euen nowe great talke of the in the mouthes of all men that thou hast of late yeares brought furthe many monsters and straunge byrthes, wherof dyuers men make dyuers interpretacions more monstrous then the monsters them selues. But shall I breefely and simply declare vnto thee the signification of thy monsters? Fyrst then confyder that they are monsters of mankynde and not of other beastes. Secundarily marke well that in them al, the headde is perfect, so that the monstrositie groweth owt of the body, although not owt of the hole body but certeyne partes therof. But not to go to farre. Confyder ageyne that disorder of the partes is a deformitie to the hole. One hath well interpreted that such monstrous byrthes signifie the monstrous and deformed myndes of the people myffhapened with phantastical opinions, dissolute luyunge, licentious talke, and such other vicious behaoures which monstrously deforme the myndes of men in the fyght of god who by fuche signes dooth certifie vs in what similitude we appere before hym, and thereby gyueth vs admonition to amende before the day of his wrath and vengeance. What deformed beastes are more monstrous then lyinge, rebellion, strife, contention, priue malice, flauderynge, mutteryng, conspiraces, and such other deuillysse imaginations. But O Englande whyle tyme is gyuen thee, circumsife thy harte. Put to onely thy good wyll, and thou mayste fynde grace and fauoure to recouer thyne aunciente bewtie whiche hath so longe been defaced. Thou haste nowe a kyng and queene that desyre thee to remember thy dewtie, and holde theyr armes abrode to embrace thee yf thou wylt drawe nere vnto them. They are fory to occupie the whyppe yf thou mightest otherwyse bee brought to obedience. But yf thou take pleasure to persist in frowarde stobbernesse, knowe thou that they are Lions whelpes and conquerours of monsters whereof thou hast had fuche experience, that proudly trustyng in thyne owne strengthe, and attemptyng lyke an other Nemroth to buylde a newe towre of confusion, the woorkes of thy gigantes were miraculously ouerthrowne by a woman who deliuered thee from that captiuitie, whereby thou oughteste to knowe the daungior thou wast in, and bee thankfull to thy deliuerer. Beware therefore leaste whyle thou contemne the peaceable princes that god hath sent the, thou bee lyke vnto Isopes frogges to whom for theyr vnquietnesse, Iupiter sent a hearon to picke them in the hedes. Consider what benefites thou mayst receaue at theyr handes if thou doo thy dewtie towarde them. Confyder ageyne that as they are able, so may thy gentelnesse make them wyllyng to recompense the same. Stoppe thyne eares from vayne fables as from the inchauntyng Mermaydes. For as manye speake of Robbyn Hoode and of his bowe that neuer shot therin, so doo fooles prate of such thynges as they knowe not. But O god? what phantasies are nowe in the heades of men? Howe redy they are to inuent lyes and tales? and of howe smaule sparkes they kyndle great flames? Summe are so curious to fynde faute in other, that for lacke of iust matter woorthy reproche in them whom they desyre to depraue, they speake euyll of theyr parentes and kynred of whom they knowe as lyttle. And not so satisfied they dispise and with lyinge dispraye theyr hole nation and countrey. Ye sum take such pleasure herein, that if they can fynde noughte els to dispraye, they wyll fynde faute in fuche as they fauour not, bycause they weare not theyr apparell as they doo, or perhappes are not so effeminate as they, or eate not as they eate, or fight not as they fyght, so parciall is the iudgement of fooles in theyr owne rudenesse, thynkyng them selues the better for disprayfyng of other. Spayne is a beggerly countrey sayth one: Th[e]mperour is but poore sayth an other: He is deade sayth an other: The Indies haue rebelled sayth an other, and eyther there commeth no more golde from thense, or there is no more founde nowe: with fuche other false and licentious talke diuised by vnquiet braines in whose heades the hammers of fedition seafe not to forge ingens of iniquitie. If I shulde here answere to all these querels particularly and as the woorthynesse of the thyng requireth, I myght fynde matter sufficient to make a volume of iuste quantitie and perhappes be tedious to summe. Yet not to passe ouer so great a matter vntouched, and partely to stoppe the mouthes of fuche impudente lyers, I haue thought good to speake sumwhat hereof. Fyrst therefore to speake of Spayne, and by the testimonie of oulde autours to declare the commodities therof: Plinie a graue and faythful autour, in the last boke and last chapiture of his natural history greatly commendyng Italy aboue al other contreys, giueth the second prayse vnto Spaine, aswel for al such thynges as in maner the heuen can geue and the earth bryng furth for the commoditie of this lyfe as also for the excellent wittes of men and Ciuile gouernaunce. Also Diodorus Siculus in the sixt booke of his Bibliotheca speakyng of Spayne (cauled of the Greekes Iberia) writeth that when in the mountaines named Pyrinei th[e] inhabitants burnt vp the wooddes, there ranne owt of the mountaynes as it were dyuers streames of pure fyluer molten by the heate of the fyre. But the estimation and price of fyluer beinge at those dayes to them vnknown, the Phenician marchauntes bought the same of them for thynges of smaule value: And caryng

Monstrous byrthes.

The significacions of monstrous byrthes.

The deformity of monstrous myndes.

The kyng and Queene.

Howe curious summe are to fynde faute in other.

Lyes Imagined.

Commendations of Spaine

Ryche syluer mynes in Spayne.

it into Grecia, Asia, and other countreys, got great rycheffe therby. For the desyre of gaynes (fayth he) so greatly moued the marchauntes, that when more syluer remayned then myght lade theyr shyppes, they tooke the leade frome theyr ankers, and put syluer in the place therof. The Phenices by these gaynes beinge made very ryche, dyd assigne many colonies both in Sicilie and the Ilandes there abowt, and also in Libya, Sardinia, and Iberia. But after many yeares when the Iberians (that is the Spaniardes) knewe the price of syluer, and applyed them selues to the seekyng of metals and founde great plentie of syluer, they obteyned greate ryches therby forasmuch as in maner al that earth of the mountaynes is so replenysshed with syluer that it is a marueylous thyng to confyde the nature of the region and the continual labour of the woorkemen in those mynes. Lykewyse when afterwarde the Romans subdued the Iberians, the Italians which for the desyre of gaynes searched those metals, gotte great rycheffe by the fame. For they deputed to that labour a multitude of bowghte seruantes, whiche searchoyng the vaynes of metals in dyuers places, and Percyng the earth dyuers wayes for the space of many furlonges, browght furthe great plentie of golde and syluer. But the rycheffe of these mynes was fyrst founde at such tyme as the Carthaginenes (the enemies of the Romane Empire) had the Iberians in subiection: which was the cause that theyr poure afterwarde increased. For, with monye hyryng the best and moste experte fouldiers, they kepte greuous warres ageynst theyr enemies. And not vsyng the ayde eyther of theyr owne fouldiers or theyr associates, they were a terrour to the Romanes, Sicilians, and Libyans, whom they browght into great daungiour by reason they passed them al in abundaunce of golde and syluer. With better fortune therefore, and greater hope of gayne are ryche metals fought in Spayne, the goodnesse of whose soyle yeldeth cloddes of earth conteynyng much golde and syluer. And these be the very wordes of Diodorus Siculus, which the later wryters doo also confirme. For Iulius Solinus in his Polyhistor, compareth Spayne to the best countreys in plentie of grayne, vyttayles, oyle, syluer, golde, and Iron. Likewyse Strabo, Statius, and Claudius, do no lesse commende it. It were to longe here to speake of the greate plentie of fine woolles lyttle inferiour vnto owrs: also abundaunce of fugar, vines, pomegranates, limondes, and orangies in such plentie that they suffice not only Spayne, but also in maner all Europe: whereas the apples and crabbes of Englande are scarcely able to ferue it selfe. And althowghe here summe wyll obiecte, that they lacke corne, woodde, and certeyne other thynges, yet are theyr commodities so greate otherwyse, that al such thynges are browght them owt of other countreys for theyr wares: and that in such plentie, that they are there better chepe then euer they were in Englande fence the signe of the fleete the poore mans Inne was pulled downe in all places. Summe for lacke of other matter, fynde greate faute that in trauallyng in Spayne, men shalbe serued with halfe a henne, and go to the cookes for theyr meate and to the tauerne for theyr drynke. And what then I praye yow? What inconuenience enfeweth hereof? Is it not better so to doo then to pay thryse for one thinge as is the maner to doo in summe of owre Innes and in tauernes where all that eate roste meate are beaten with the spitte, as where they that of late in Barthelmewe fayre payde fortie pence for a pygge, where the good man of the houle was not a shamed to make his vaunte that he had made foure shyllinges of a pygge, and had in one day taken foure pounce for pygges. But if I shuld here particularly and at large declare howe Englande is in fewe yeares decayed and impouerysshed, and howe on the contrary parte Spayne is inryched, I shulde perhappes displease more in descrybyng the myerie of the one, then please other in expresseyng the floryshyng state of the other, which by all reason is lyke dayly to increase, aswell for the great rycheffe that are yearly browght thither from the Indies, as also for the ryche syluer mynes that are founde of late in Spayne in the countrey of Asturia as I was credably informed by the woorthy and lerned gentelman Augustinus de Ceratta, Contador (that is) the auditour of the kynges myntes who had longe before byn surueyore of the golde mynes of Peru, and browght from thense and from Rio de Plata. xiii. thousand pounce weyght of syluer which was coyned to the kinges vse in the towre of London where neuer so much hath byn seene at once as suche as haue byn owld officers in the mynte doo affirme. What shulde I here speake of the golde which th[e]mperours maiestie receaueth frome all the Indies, whereas onely in the two meltyng shoppes of the gold mines of the Ilande of Hispaniola, is molten yearly three hundreth thousande pounce weyght of. viii. vnces to the pound, wherof the fyfte parte is dewe vnto hym, whiche amounteth to three score thousande weyght yearly. Yet doo I not here speake of the golde mines of the other Ilandes and the firme lande reachyng. viii. thousande myles from the north to the south: Neyther of the ryche Ilandes of the fourth sea cauled Mare del Sur, where the kyng of one lyttle Ilande named Tacarequi, Margaritea, or de las Perlas, lying in the goulfe of Saynt Michael, payeth yearly for his tribute a hundreth pounce weight of perles: Neyther yet of the fyfte parte of other thynges, as precious stones, brasile, goffampine cotton, spices, and dyuers other thynges, wheras also the ryche Ilandes cauled the Maluchas perteyne to the inheritaunce of Castile, althowgh the kyng of Portugale enioy them for certeyne yeares by composition. But the Indies haue rebelled (fay they) and there commeth no more golde from thense. But what if summe of them haue rebelled? dooth it therby folowe that there commeth no more gold from the other that lyue vnder obedience? But if thou wylte fay that they haue al rebelled at once, thou must proue that thou fayest eyther by hystorie or wytnesse of such as know the truth herof, as I (hauing made diligent searche for the fame) am able to proue the contrarie, and that

The Romans
inriched by the
syluer of Spayne.

The
Carthaginensis
inriched by the
syluer of Spain.

The commodities
of Spain

The sygne of
the scepter.

Englande
impouerysshed,
Spayne inriched.

Siluer mines
founde of late
in Spayne.

Syluer brought
frome Peru into
Englande.

Th[e]mperours
reuenues from
the Indies.

The Ilandes of
the Southe sea.

The Ilandes of
Maluca.

fuche talke is onely imagined by bufie headdes. Ageyne: what if they haue rebelled in fomme prouinces? dooth it folowe that they maye not ageyne be browght vnder fubiectiō as were oftentimes the prouinces of the Romanes and as were in owre dayes dyuers countreys of Englande whiche haue byn fore afflicted with that plage. But whether the fandes of the ryuers and the mountaynes of the Indies bee fo emptied with golde that no more can be founde there, I thinke it here fuperfluous to anfwere to this obiectiō, forasmuch as it is hereafter confuted in the booke of metals where yow fhall fynde by experience that metals growe and increafe, and that after certeyne yeares. fuche owide caues of the mynes as haue byn dygged, are ageyne replenyfshed with vre: Also that the fprynges of fuche mountaynes turnynge theyr courfe and breakynge furth in other places, brynge with them greate plentie of fuch golden-fande as is founde in the ryuers into the which they faule. What impudencie is it thierfore with woordes of reproche to caule hym poore whofe poure is fo greate, his treafure fo infinite, and his doinges fo chargeable, that I beleue that when fo euer it please almyghtie God to caule hym frome this lyfe to the greate damage of all Chryftendome, it fhallbe harde to fynde an other that fhall in all poyntes bee fo well able to fupplie that roome and maynteyne th[e] imperiall dignitie. Let al honeft natures therfore learne to fpeake well of princes accordynge to the fentence *De Principibus nil nifi bonum*, forasmuch as they are the minifters of god who hath theyr hartes in his hande and ruleth the fame as feemeth beſte vnto hym. For there is no poure neyther good nor badde, but of god: and he that refyſteth or fpeaketh euyll of the poure, refiſteth and fpeaketh euyll of god. Thou fhalt not fpeake euyll of the prince or ruler of thy people faith faint Paule.

But wheras nowe by the poure of Neptunus (I wot nere with what wynde) I haue byn dryuen thus farre from my nauigations, I haue thought good to turne my fayles and to folowe the ordinarie courfe which I beganne, and by th[e] exemple of this woorthy capitayne kynge Ferdinando, encourage al other to theyr poure to attempte the lyke vyages: As touchynge the which in fewe woordes to declare my opynion, if any man fhulde afke me what I thinke theſe thinges wyll growe to in tyme, I wyll anfwere as dooth the autoure of this booke, that when I confyder howe farre owre poſteritie fhall fee the Chriſtian religion enlarged, I am not able with tounge or penne to exprefſe what I conceaue hereof in my mynd. Yet one thyng I fee which enforceth me to fpeake and lament, that the harueſt is fo great and the workemen fo few. The Spanyardes haue fhewed a good exemple to all Chryſtian nations to folowe. But as god is great and woonderfull in all his woorkes, fo befide the portion of lande perteynyng to the Spanyardes (beinge eyght tymes bygger then Italye as yowe maye reade in the laſte booke of the feconde Decade) and befide that which perteineth to the Portugales, there yet remaineth an other portion of that mayne lande reachynge towarde the northeaſt, thought to be as large as the other, and not yet knowen but only by the fea coaſtes, neyther inhabyted by any Chriſtian men: whereas neuertheleſſe (as wryteth Gemma Phriſius) in this lande there are many fayre and frutefull regions, hygh mountaynes, and fayre ryuers, with abundaunce of golde and dyuers kyndes of beaſtes. Also cities and towres fo wel buylded and people of fuch ciuilitie, that this parte of the worlde feemeth lyttle inferiour to owre Europe, if th[e] inhabitants had receaued owre religion. They are wyttie people and refuſe not barteryng with ſtraungers. Theſe regions are cauled Terra Florida and Regio Baccalarum or Bacchallaos of the which yow may reade ſumwhat in this booke in the vyage of the woorthy owlde man yet lyuing Sebaſtiane Cabote, in the. vi. booke of the thyrd Decade. But Cabote touched only in the north corner and moſt barbarous parte hereof, from whence he was repulſed with Iſe in the moneth of Iuly. Neuertheleſſe, the weſt and fouth partes of theſe regions haue fence byn better ſearched by other, and founde to bee as we haue fayde before. The chiefe citie in the fouthweſt partes of theſe regions, is cauled Temixtetan, or Mexico in maner vnder the circle cauled Tropicus Cancri, and ſtrongely defended by the nature of the place. For it ſtandeth in a very great lake hauynge abowt it innumerable bridges, and buyldynges to be compared to the woorkes of Dedalus. Th[e] inhabitants alſo can wryte and reade. Summe wryters connecte this lande to the firme lande of Aſia: But the truth hereof is not yet knowen. And althoughe the Spanyardes haue certeyne colonies in that part of this lande that is nowe cauled Noua Hiſpania, yet are the people for the moſte parte Idolatours. Howe much therefore is it to be lamented, and howe greatly dooth it founde to the reproche of all Chriſtendomē, and eſpecially to ſuch as dwell nereſt to theſe landes (as we doo) beinge muche nearer vnto the fame then are the Spanyardes (as within. xxv. dayes faylinge and leſſe) howe muche I faye fhall this founde vnto owre reproche and inexcufable flothfulneſſe and negligence bothe before god and the worlde, that ſo large dominions of ſuch tractable people and pure gentiles, not beinge hytherto corrupted with any other falſe religion (and therefore the eaſyer to bee allured to embrace owres) are nowe knowen vnto vs, and that we haue no reſpecte neyther for goddes cauſe nor for owre owne commoditie to attempte ſomme vyages into theſe coaſtes, to doo for ovr partes as the Spaniardes haue doone for theyrs, and not euer lyke ſheepe to haunte one trade, and to doo nothyng woorthy memorie amonge men or thankes before god, who maye herein woorthely accuſe vs for the ſlackeneſſe of owre dewtie towarde hym. Saynt Paule the doctoure of the gentiles (to whoſe Apoſtelſhippe alſo theſe newe gentiles doo pertaine) was of ſuch zeale toward the Iewes whom god had reiected, that

The nauigations
of the Spanyardes.

Itali is. 1020 myles
in lengthe and.
126. in breadthe.

The lande cauled
Terra florida, and
regio baccalarum.

Looke the laſt
booke, thirde
decade.

This region is
now cauled Noua
Hiſpania. Sum
thinke that this
citie is Quinſai of
Marcus Paulus.

Looke the laſt
booke of the 3.
decade, and the
beginning of the
booke of the
landes lately
found.

The godlye zeale
of S. Paule.

he wyffhed hym felfe to bee accurfed of god for theyr fakes. He went from Damafcus to Arabie, preached the gofpell in Grecia, came prifoner to Rome, was fcourged and ftoned, and fuffered thryfe fhyprwacke, what then thinke yow he wold do if he were now aliuē? Is it to be thought that he wolde not aduenture. xxv. dayes faylynge to come to fuch a marte of foules in fuch redineffe to bee eafely obteyned? I beleue verely that neyther death, nor the deuyll, nor Leuiathan, nor the worlde, fhulde let hym but that he wolde geue th[e]onfet ageynft them all in hope of victorie by hym by whom he fayth he can doo all thynges. He was not negligent in his office nor ignorant of his rewarde, but trusted to the promeffe of him that fayde by the mouth of the prophet Ifai: Of them that fhall be faued, I wyl fende fum to the gentyles in the fea, into Aphrike and Libia, Italic, and Grecia, and into the Ilandes a farre of, to them that haue not harde of me, and haue not feene my glorie. The like zeale that Paule had, and proceadyng of the fame fpirite, hath euer fence Chryftes tyme, moued not only the Apoftles, but alfo many other famous and godly men (as fuperuifours of his testamente) to fende owte preachers into dyuers partes of the worlde to fhewe furth the gladde tydyng of the gofpell. By this zeale dyd Gregorye byffhoppe of Rome and fyrfte of that name, when he fawe Englyffhe mens chyl dren in Rome and afked what nation they were, when anfwere was made hym in the laten tounge that they were Angli, (that is, Englyffhe men) he fayd (alludyng to the fimilitude of the worde) that they myght wel be cauled Angeli, that is, Angels: Meanyng therby that lyke as god had done his part in geuyng them bodies of natural bewtie and comelyneffe, fo it apperteyned to his office beinge the cheefe pafoure of goddes flocke, to prouyde that theyr foules might be made woorthy to inhabite fuch bodies and the hole nation confecrated vnto god by baptifme. For he fayde furthermore: It is meete that vnto thefe alfo, the gofpell of life bee preached: And hereuppon immediatly fent preachers into Englande whereby the hole nation was in fhorthe tyme conuerted to Chriftes faith, although fum had receaued the gofpell long before euen from Chryftes tyme by the preachyng of Iofeph of Arimathia who afked the body of Chryfte of Pilote, and buryed it reuerently. I wolde to god that there were now many mo fuch Gregories in the worlde: And that there might lyke zeale and gentelneffe bee founde in vs Englyffhe men towarde other nations, as we haue founde in other towarde vs. Owre prediceffoures were not vtterlye vnmyndefull of thefe benefites, but applyed them felues lykewife to fpreade the gofpell in other nations. For Vadianus in his booke *De tribus terræ partibus*, wryteth, that more then feuen hundrethe yeares after the death of Chryfte, one Vnefride an Englyffhe man and byffhoppe of Mogunce, (nowe cauled Menfe) was the fyrfte that tawght the fayth of Chryfte amonge the Germaines, at fuch tyme as the Frankes and Almaynes had paffed ouer the ryuers of Rhene and Danubius, and by puttyng the garryfons of the Romans to flight, had poffeffed a great parte of theyr moft notable prouinces. For albeit that thefe rude and barbarous nations then accuftomed onely to warre and robberie did hardly admitte that holfome doctrine at the beginning. Yet by the pollicie and wifedome of the Frankes, it came fo to paffe that in maner through owt all Germanie, greate increafe of the Christian religion folowed there moft ample victories, as the lyke fuffeffe is alfo feene in thefe barbarous nations fubdued by the Spanyardes. Whereby it is apparent, that although fum holde opinion that none owght to bee compelled to the faythe, yet we fee by experience that without difputyng of opinions (leste the pacientes fhulde dye before the phifitians agree of the remedie) thefe entreprifes haue taken good effect to the great glory of god who cauleth men vnto hym by dyuers meanes and at dyuers ages of the declinyng worlde, otherwyfe nowe then in the tyme of Chryfte and his Apoftles when the poure of miracles was giuen vnto men to confirme the newe fayth which had yet preuaied lo where in the worlde. Albeit, I beleue verely, that if we wolde take the matter in hande accordyngly, god wolde not forget to ayde vs with miracles if it fhuld fo be requifite, as yowe may reade in this booke howe he wrought miracles by the fayth of a fimple mariner euen in th[e]infancie of faythe. And fuerlye, lyke as there is no caufe why we fhulde anye thyng doubte of goddes goodneffe in this behalfe if the faut be not in owre felues. Euen fo, if we wolde fyrfte fette owre handes to the plowe, we ought to hope that he wolde giue increafe and woorke with vs as he hath doone with other, by whose prosperous fuffeffe we may plainly fee that it was his wyll that fuche thynges fhulde go forwarde. For euen Ifraell to whom promeffe was made by fignes and miracles that they fhulde poffeffe the lande to th[e]inheritaunce wherof, the fea opened it felfe to giue them free paffage, yet were they commaunded by the poure of the fwoorde to make way, with greate loffe and flaugther of men and by force of armes to obteyne the lande promyfed to theyr fathers, whiche neuertheleffe fewe of them poffeffed that firft fought for the fame, but leste theyr carkefes in the wilderneffe. Is it not alfo written of the Iuwes which repayred the walles of the citie of Hierufalem after theyr captiuitie in Babilon, that Nehemias theyr capitaine fet the people in order with fwoordes, fpeares, and bowes to defende the workemen? And that alfo euen the Princes of Iuda wrought vppon the walles and caried burdens? lykewyfe that they wrought with one hande and held theyr fwoordes in the other? And if it were lawful for Ifraell accordyng to the fleffhe, to vfe all meanes and pollicies to buylde vp the walles of earthly Hierufalem, howe muche more then ought the fpirituall Ifraclites to

Isai. 66.

Gregorie the Firft.

Th[e]office of byshoppes.

England converted to the faith of christ.

This vnfride was afterwarde named Boniface.

Whether any may be compelled to the faythe.

The tyme of miracles.

Miracles of late dayes.

Howe Ifraell poffeffed the lande of promeffe.

Esdra. 2. cap. 4.

vfe all poffible meanes to buylde vp the walles and temples of fpirituall Hierufalem, whose fundation is Chrifte, wyllynge all the nations of the worlde to be buylded vppon the fame. It is the proprietie of a wyfe buylder to vfe fuch tooles as the woorke requireth. And not at all tymes or in all woorkes to vfe one toole. For that that ferueth in fofte tymber, wyll not ferue in knottie pieces, nor yet for ftones. Th[e]xpert phifitian vfeth vehement remedies for deperate difeafes: And cunninge furgians vfe burnynge and cuttynge if the cafe fo require, as in cuttynge of the fynger to faue the hande, or in cuttynge of the hand to faue the hole body. Ye it hath fymtymes fo chaufed that wheras men haue entended hurt, there hath good proceeded therof in fine: As he that wolde haue flaine Prometheus, wounded his wenne with his fwoorde, whereby he was healed of that difeafe. So is god able to turne euyll into good, and to make thynges that are not, as thynges that are. Euen fo although fumme wyll obiecte that the defyre of golde was the chiefe caufe that moued the Spanyardes and Portugales to feache the neue founde landes, trewly albeit we fhulde admitte it to bee the chiefe caufe, yet dooth it not folowe that it was the only caufe, forasmuch as nothynge letteth but that a man may bee a warriour or a marchaunte, and alfo a Christian. Therefore what fo euer owre chiefe intende bee, eyther to obteyne worldely fame or rycheffe, (although the zeale to encrease Christian religion ought chiefly to moue vs) I wolde to god we wolde fyrft attempte the matter: And then I doubt not but that it wolde fo comme to paffe with vs as it dyd with them who of longe time after the beginning of the worlde before menne were accuftomed to eate fleffhe, thought it firft fufficient fo to vfe them felues amonge beafte that they were not hurte of them: but shortly after, vfed them for theyr commoditie: Then begunne to weare theyr fkinnes: And in fine, fell to eatynge of theyr fleffhe, and to vfe certeine partes of them for remedies ageinft difeafes. Euen fo may thefe barbarians by the only conuerfation with the Christians, (although they were enforced therto) be brought to fuch familiaritie with ciuilitie and vertue, that not onely we maye take greate commoditie thereby, but they may alfo herewith imbibe trewe religion as a thing accidental although neyther they nor we fhulde feeke the fame. For lyke as they that goo much in the foonne, are coloured therewith although they go not for that purpofe, So may the conuerfation of the Christians with the gentyles induce them to owre religion, where there is no greater caufe of contrarye to refyfte as is in the Iuwes and Turkes who are already drowned in theyr confirmed erreure. But thefe fimple gentiles luyng only after the lawe of nature, may well bee lykened to a fmoother and bare table vn timer, or a white paper vn timer, vpon the which yow may at the fyrft paynte or wryte what yow lyfte, as yow can not vpon tables already paynted, vn timer yow rafe or blot owt the fyrfte formes. They may alfo th[e]flyer bee allured to the Christian fayth, for that it is more agreeable to the lawe of nature then eyther the cerimonious lawe of Moifes, or portentous fables of Mahometes Alcharon. If we were therefore as defyrous to enlarge the fayth of Chryfte as to feeke worldly gooddes, why do we deferre to aduenture that wherin we may doo bothe. We muft not nowe looke for a neue Paule or doctoure of the gentiles to bee conuerted by heauenly reuelations: Or for a neue Moifes to leade men through the fea: Or for an Angel to cary men in the ayer from one place to another as Habacucke the prophete was caryed by the heare of his heade from Iudea to Babilon: Or as Phylippe th[e]ppofle was caryed by the fpirite from Gaza to Azotus: but muft (as fayth the prophete Ifaias) euery man exhorte his neyghboure, and bid his broother be of good chere: That the mafon and carpenter may buylde togyther, and fay to the glewe or cemente, it is good and fafte byndynge. What negligence and flackeneffe hath hytherto byn in Christian men in this kynde of buyldynge of goddes lyuely temple, the greate clerke Erasmus hath declared in his booke intituled Ecclefiastes, whose woordes for the woorthynesse of the autoure, I haue here thought good to rehearfe as they are wrytten by hym in the laten tounge in the fyrfte booke of the fayde woorke. He wryteth therefore as foloweth.

Audimus quotidianas queremonias deplorantium collapsam Christianam religionem, eamque ditionem quæ quondam complexa est vniuersum terrarum orbem, in has angustias esse contractam. Hoc igitur quibus ex animodolet, eos decet ardentibus assiduisque votis flagitare a Christo vt operarios dignetur mittere in messem suam, aut (vt melius dicam) seminatores mittere in segetem suam. Deum immortalem, quantum in orbe patet agrorum in quibus aut non dum iactum est semen Euangelicum, aut ita iactum est, vt plus sit zizaniarum quam tritici. Orbis minima pars est Europa: Omnium florentissima pars est Græcia et Asia minor in quam magno successu primum a Iudæa demigravit Euangelium. At hæc fere tota, nonne tenetur a Mahumetanis et ijs qui Christi nomen habent inuisum? Iam in Asia maiore quæ latissime patet, quid obsecro nostrum est? quum ipsa Palestina vnde primo effluxit lux Euangelica, seruiat Allophylis? In Aphrica vero quid nostrum est? Nec dubitandum est quin in tanta vastitate regionum sint populi rudes et simplices qui facile possent ad Christum alicui, si mitterentur qui facerent bonam sementem. Quid quod quotidie regiones hæcenus incognitæ reperiuntur, ferunturque superesse quo nullus adhuc nostratium peruenit. Omitto nuuc infinitam Iudeorum vim nobis admixtam: omitto plurimos qui titulo Christi tegunt Ethnicos: omitto tantas schismaticorum et hæreticorum phalanges. Quantus in his effret prouentus Christo, si gnauim ac fideles mitterentur operarij qui iaciant semen bonum, qui reuellant zizaniam, qui plantent plantulas bonas, malas exterpent, qui extruant domum Dei, demoliantur structuras non innitentes petrae Christo, denique qui mctant maturam segetem, sed Christo

The buylding of spirituall Hierusalem.

The conuersion of the gentiles.

The christian faythe.

Isai. 45.

Augustia Christianæ ditionis.

Preſteian
Aethiopia rex.

Filapii.

Franciſcani
Seraphici.
Dominicani
Cherubici.
Linguae
impericia.
Miracula.

Damianus a Goes

To the christian
princes.

The ſheepe of
Europe.

The doctoure
of diuinitie

An admonition
to riche men.

The marchant.

me tant non ſibi, et animas Domino colligant, non opes ſibi. Nuper Aethiopiae rex quem vulgus appellat Preſteian, per oratorem ſuum ſubmiſit ſe ſedi Romanae, non nihil expoſtulans cum pontifice quod ea gens quum a fide Chriſti non fit aliena, tam diu fuerit a totius orbis paſtore neglecta. Quidam viri boni, et propagandae religionis ſtudioſi, queruntur Pilapios Scythiae ſeptentrionalis populum mire ſimplicem ac rudem, a neſcio quibus principibus Chriſtianis teneri ditione, ſed ita duro premi iugo humano, vt eis non imponatur ſuaue iugum Chriſti, atque ita ſpoliari bonis externis, vt non ditentur opibus euangelicis. Pulcherrimum, Deoque gratiſſimum erat dare potius quam accipere ijs quos ſtudemus Chriſto lucrifacere, ac ſic eos in ditionem noſtram recipere vt gaudeant ſe ſubicctos eſſe principibus ſub quorum imperio commodius degant quam ante debebant. Nouimus cicurare beſtias feras et horribiles, vel ad voluptatem, vel ad uſum vulgarem: et non nouimus manſuſfacere homines vt ſeruiant Chriſto? Monarchae alunt qui doceant elephantos ad ſaltandum, qui doment leones ad luſum, qui doment lynces et leopardos ad venatum: et monarcha eccleſiae non inuenit quo homines alliciat ad amabile Chriſti ſeruicium? Scio vix vllam reperiri beluam domitu difficiliorem quam eſt Iudeus obſtinatus, et obduratus haereticus: quanquam nullum eſt animal tam immite quod non cicuratur beneficentia et ſuauiſſitate. E repertis regionibus euclititur aurum et gemmae: Sed triumpho diuinitus erat illuc inuclere Chriſtianam ſapientiam auro precioſiorem, ac margaritam euangelicum quod omnibus diuenditis benae comparatur. Dominus iubet ſuis rogare dominum meſis vt extrudat operarios quod meſis eſſet ampla, operarij pauci. Non minus opus eſt nunc rogare deum vt in tam late patentes agros eſticiat operarios, Sed excuſant omnes, alius aliud. Atqui Chriſtiana ditio tot habet myriadas Franciſcanorum in quibus probabile eſt quamplurimos eſſe qui vere flagrant igni ſeraphico: nec pauciores ſunt myriades Dominicanorum, et in his conſentaneum eſt permultos eſſe Cherubici ſpiritus. Ex his cohortibus eligantur viri, mundo vere mortui, Chriſto viuui, qui ſyncere apud barbaras gentes doceant verbum Dei. Excuſatur linguae imperitia. Atqui principes ob humanas legationes inueniunt qui varias linguas perdiſcant: Et Themiftoles Athenienſes vno anno ſic didicit ſermonem Aſiaticum vt abſque interprete cum rege loqui poſſet: An idem non ſtudebimus in tam ſublimi negotio? Inter barbaros et ignotas nationes Apoſtoli inuenerunt victum et amicum: et Deus pollicitus eſt nihil deſuturum quaerentibus regnum Dei. Nec miracula quidem deſutura ſunt ſi res poſtulet, modo ad ſit ſyncera fides cum ſeraphica charitate, &c.

Furthermore Damianus a Goes, wryteth in his booke *De deploratione Lappianae gentis*, that he was the fyrſt that moued Eraſmus to ſpeake ſumwhat hereof: And that he (Eraſmus I meane) was determined to write a iuſt volume of this matter yf he had not byn preuented by death. Albeit (ſayth Damianus) in his booke entitiled *Eccleſiaſtes*, he dyd not keepe ſilence of ſo wicked an vngodlyneſſe, whiche ſurely is fuche, that it may in maner make all Chriſtian men (and eſpeciallye fuch vnto whom god hath gyuen poure and knowlege) giltye of ſo heyghuous a crime, that he may take vengeance of them in the day of iudgement before the iuſte iudge Chryſt. Nowe therfore (ſayth he) let the Chriſtian Monarches take heede what accoumpte they ſhall make before the tribunal of Chryſte at the laſte daye, when neyther fauoure, nor pardon, or flatterie can take place to bee any excuſe for the loſſe of ſo many ſoules. And theſe be the very woordes of the woorthipful and lerned man Damianus a Goes, wrytten to the byſſhoppe of Rome Paule the thyrde of that name, whom he further chargeth to looke diligently hereunto, as a thyng moſte chieflye perteynyng to the office of Chriſtian prelates. Mee thynke verely that the ſheepe of Europe ſhulde by this tyme be ſo well fedde, that they ſhulde by good reaſon be ſo ſtronge and mightie in Chriſtes religion (excepte they be infected with the dyſeaſe which the phiſicians caule Cachexia, beinge an euyl diſpoſition of the body whereby the more they are fed the worſe they lyke) that many ſheppardes myght well bee ſpared to bee ſent to other ſheepe which ought to be of the fame foulde. For this purpoſe the doctoure of diuinitie when he commenfeth, hath his ſcapular caſt ouer his headde in token that he hathe forſaken the worlde for Chriſtes ſake: And his bootes on his legges in token that he ſhall euer bee in a redineſſe to go forwarde in preachyng the goſpell, as I doubt not there bee many in Englande wolde gladly doo euen amonge theſe newe gentyles if they were therto mainteyned by the ayde of the ſecular poure as in this caſe it ſhalbe requiſite for the furniture of neceſſaries hereunto apperteynyng, I muſt nowe therfore appele vnto yow, yow riche men and rulers of the worlde, to whom god hath giuen gooddes as thynges neyther good nor badde of them ſelues, but onely as they are vſed wel or euil. If yowe vſe them well, they are the gyftes of god wherwith yow may doo many thynges acceptable both to god and men. And if yow vſe them otherwyſe, yowe poſſeſſe not them, but they poſſeſſe yow, and theyr canker and ruſte (as ſaythe the Apoſtle) ſhalbe a teſtimonie ageinſt yow in the day of the great audit. Thinke not therfore that this thyng perteyneth not vnto yowe, if yowe perteyne vnto Chriſte and looke to haue any parte with hym. Conſyder with yowre ſelues if it were onely to get worldely ryches, howe redye and greedy yowe wolde bee to venture a greate deale to get a thyrde part, without caſtyng of any perell by lande or by ſea, as the wyttie poet Horaſe hath in fewe wordes deſcrybed the marchauntes deſyre and aduenture to obteyne rycheſſe.

*Impiger extremos currit mercator ad Indos,
Per mare pauperiem fugiens, per saxa, per ignes.*

The which verses are thus much to say in effecte.

The marchaunt in hope greate rycheffe to fynde,
By fyer and by water passeth to Inde,
By the burnte line or Equinoctiall,
To flye from pouertie and hafarde all.

As the poet hath in these verses, by the marchaunt declared the desyre that couetous men haue to obteyne slippery riches, the lyke affection to obteyne worldly fame and honour, maye we see in valiant and noble capitaynes in the warres where they contende to put them selues forward to the moste daungerous aduenture as to haue the forewarde of the battayle: a token surely of much nobilitie and manly corage. But oh immortall god? Is it not to bee lamented that men can be so valient, stowte, and in maner desperate in theyr owne priuate matters, perteynyng onely to theyr bodies, and yet so coulde, negligent, and fearefull in goddes cause and thynges touchyng the health of theyr soules? If there were neyther deuyll nor lawe to accuse men before god in this case, shall not theyr owne consciences bee a lawe of condemnation ageynste them in that they haue not shewed that loue to mankynde, which the very lawe of nature moueth brute beastes to shewe one to an other in their generations? But what hope is there (excepte god wolde in maner by myracle conuerte the hartes of such men) what hope is there I say, that they wyll depart with any of theyr gooddes, muche lesse aduenture theyr bodies, to the furtheraunce of Christes religion in these regions beinge so farre from them, wheras many shewe lyttle loue, charitie, or liberalitie (if not rather crueltie, tyrannie, and oppreession) to theyr poore neighbours and brootherne dwelling euen at home at theyr owne elbowes. But as this couetoufnesse is to bee reproued, so is the liberalitie of such to be commended as haue byn at greate coaste and charges in settyng forwarde suche viages: wherein not onely the marchauntes of London, but also diuers noble men and gentelmen aswell of the counfayle as other, which bothe with theyr money and furtheraunce otherwyse haue furnysshed and sent furth certeyne shyppes for the discoueryng of suche landes and regions as were heretofore vnknown, haue herein deserued immortall fame, for as much as in such attemptes and daungerous vyages, they haue shewed no smaule liberalitie vpon vncerteyne hope of gayne: wherein they haue deserued so much the greater prayse as theyr intent seemed to bee rather to further honest enterprises then for respecte of vantage. And here certeynely in the mention of these viages I myght seeme vngratefull if I shulde omitte to giue dewe commendations to the two chiefe capitaynes of the fame as the woorthy knyght syr Hugh Wylloby and the excellent pilotte Rycharde Chaunceler who haue therein aduentured theyr lyues for the commoditie of theyr countrey: Men doubtlesse woorthye for their noble attemptes to bee made knightes of the Ocean or otherwyse preferred if euer god sende them home ageyne although they fayle of theyr purpose. For as suche haue obteyned absolute glory that haue brought great thynges to passe, so haue they deserued immortall fame which haue only attempted the fame: forasmuch as fortune (who sumtymes fauoureth the vnworthyest) is not in the pouere of man. Xerxes obteyned glorie in makyng a bridge ouer the sea Hellepontus ioynyng Europe to Asia, and Darius ouer Bosphorus when he passed with his armye toward the Scythians. No lesse fame and commendation (although not lyke glory) deserued Demetrius, Cesar, Calligula, and Seleucus Nicanor, whiche attempted to cutte in fundre certeyne places cauled Isthmi, (beinge narrowe portions of lande so diuidyng two seas, that there is no passage from the one to the other) and yet neuer finished that they tooke in hande, beinge hyndered eyther by deathe, warres, or other chaunces. The auncient Romans and Greekes gaue such glorie vnto them that had eyther well deserued of the common welthe, or otherwyse attempted such great enterprises as might bee profitable for mankynde, that after theyr death they caused Images of golde, syluer, brasse, Iuery, and marble to bee made to theyr lykenesse, and the fame to be placed in theyr solemne hauies, palaices, or temples, with certeyne verses made to the commendation of them whom the Images represented. And this no lesse to prouoke and encorage other forward natures to th[e] emulation of their vertues, then also to geue them the due honoure of theyr iust desertes. And surely if euer sence the begynnyng of the worlde any enterpryse haue deserued greate prayse as a thyng atchyued by men of heroically vertue, doubtlesse there was neuer any more woorthy commendation and admiration then is that whiche owre nation haue attempted by the north seas to discover the mightie and riche empire of Cathay, by which vyage not only golde, syluer, precious stones, and spices, may be brought hether by a safer and shorter way, but also much greater matters may hereof enfewe in tyme if it shall please God to gyue vnto Christian men such passage into those regions, whereby such familiaritie may further growe betwene the Christian princes

The desyre of wordely fame.

Men are slothfull in goddes cause.

Vyages from Englande.

Syr Hugh Wylloby and Rycharde Chaunceler.

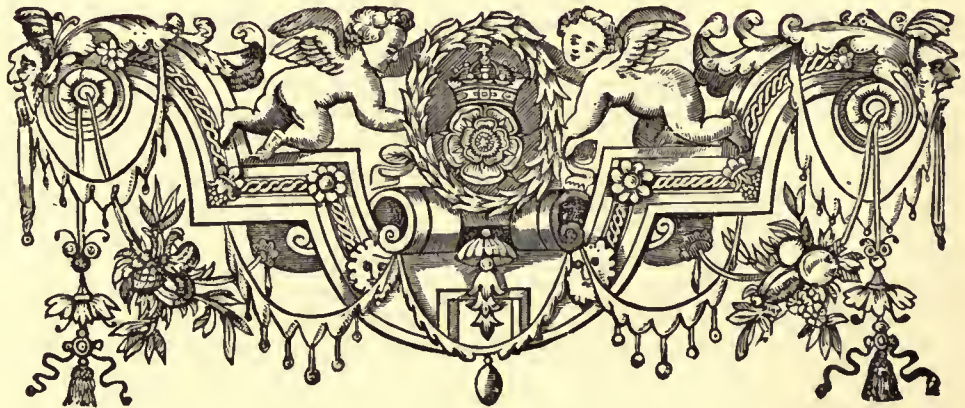
Glory and fame.

The rewarde of noble enterprises.

The vyage to Cathay by the north seas.

Societe betweene
the Tartars and
the Christians
The Turke.
The Sophie.
Tambulanes.
Baialetes.

of Europe and the greate emperoure of Cathay, that (as wryteth Haytho *De societate Christianorum et Tartarorum*) there can nothyng be imagined more effectuall for the confusion of the Turke if the great Cham of Cathay and the Sophie of Persia on the one fyde, and the Christian Princes on the other fyde, shulde with one consent inuade his dominions, as dyd Tamburlanes Th[e]mperoure of the Tartars who abowte the yere of Christe. M. CCC. lxxxviii. toke prisoner Baialetes Ottomanus Th[e]mperoure of the Turkes and flewe. xx. thousande of his men in one battayle besyde many other great victories, as yowe may further reade in this booke in the hystorie of Paulus Iouius. And to haue fayde thus muche in maner of a preface it may suffice.



[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

SECTION I.

Pietro Martire.

The First Decade, . *Of the Ocean.*

First printed in 1511.

The Second Decade, . *Of the supposed Continent.*

The Third Decade, . [*The discovery of the Pacific by Vasco Nunez de Balboa, on the 25th September 1513. The voyages of Pedro Arias, and Sebastian Cabot.*]

The Second and Third Decades were first printed in 1516.

Of the new found islands (i.e. Yucatan and Mexico.)

First printed in 1521.]

[This eloquent Dedication first appeared in the Second and enlarged Edition of the *Decades*, the printing of which was finished at Alcala on 9th November 1516. Nearly the whole of the following First *Decas* (pp. 65-105) had, however, been previously printed in 1511, and was for the most part *written* even earlier than that year.]

¶ TO THE MOSTE NOBLE PRINCE AND CATHOLIKE KYNGE, CHARLES,
PETER MARTYR OF ANGLERIA WYSHETH
PERPETUALL FELICITIE.



He diuine prouidence, frome the tyme that he fyrste created the worlde, hath referued vnto this day the knowlage of the great and large Ocean sea: In the which tyme he hath opened the fame, chiefly vnto yowe (moste mightie Prince) by the good fortune and happie successe of yowr grandfather by yowr mothers fyde. The fame prouidence (I knowe not by what destenie) hath brought me owt of my natiue cuntry of Milane, and owt of the cite of Rome (where I continued almost. x. yeares) into Spaine, that I myght particularlye collecte, these marueylous and newe thynges, which shoulde otherwyfe perhappes haue line drowned in the whirlepoole of obliuion: forasmuch as the Spanyardes (men

woorthy [of] greate commendation) had onely care to the generall inuentions of these thynges. Notwithstandinge, I doo not chalenge vnto me only, the thankes of the trauaile bestowed herein, wheras the chiefe rewarde therof is due to Ascanius vicounte Cardinal, who perceauynge that I was wyllyng to departe owt of the cite to be present at the warres of Granatum, dissuaded me from my purpose. But seing that I was fully resolued to departe, exhorted and required me to wryte vnto hym such newes as were famous in Spayne and woorthy to be noted. I tooke therfore my iorney into Spaine chiefly for the desyre I had to see th[e] expedition whiche was prepared ageynst the enemies of the fayth: forasmuche as in Italye, by reason of the dissention among the Princes, I coule fynde nothyng wherewith I myght feede my wytte, beinge a younge man desyrous of knowlage and experience of thynges. I was therefore presente at the warres: from whence I writte to Cardinal Ascanius, and by fundry epistels certified hym of such thynges as I thought moste woorthy to be put in memorie. But when I perceaued that his fortune was turned from a natural moother to a steppedame, I ceased from wrytyng. Yet after I fawe, that by th[e] ouerthrowe of the enemies of owre faythe, Spayne was purged of the Moores as of an euyll weede plucked vp by the rootes, Leaste I shulde bestowe my slippery yeares in vnprofitable Idleneffe I was mynded to returne to Italie. But the singlar benignitie of bothe the Catholyke Kyng and queene nowe departed, and theyr large promyses towarde me vpon my returne from my legacie of Babilon, deteyned me frome my purpose. Yet dooth it not repent me that I drewe backe my foote: Afwel for that I see in no other place of the worlde at this time the lyke woorthy thynges to be done: As also that in maner through owt all Italy, by reason of the discorde of the Christian

The largenes of the Ocean vnknown to this day.

Cardinal Ascanius.

The warres of Granatum ageynst the Moores.

The antour was sent ambassadour to the Soltane of Alcayr in Egypte.

Italy disquieted with warres.

The sequels of warre.

Kynge Frederike.

Leo the tenth, byshoppe of Rome.

Spayne subdued from the Moores.

The kyn[g]dome of Naples.

Note, frome the begynnyng of the worlde.

The temperatness of the Equinoctial vnknowne to the owlde wryters.

Continente or firme lande as bygge as thre Europes

Ryches are the instrumentes of conquestes.

Princes, I perceaued all thynges to runne headelonge into ruine, the countreys to be destroyed and made fatte with human bludde: The cities sacked, virgines and matrones with their gooddes and possessions caried away as captiues and miserable innocentes without offence to be slayne vnarmed within their owne houfes. Of the which calamities, I dyd not onely heare the lamentable owtcryes, but dyd also feele the same. For euen the bludde of mine owne kinssfolkes and frendes, was not free from that crueltie. As I was therefore mufynge with my selfe of these thynges, the Cardinal of Arragonie, after that he had seene the two fyrste bookes of my Decades wrytten to Afcanius, required me in the name of kynge Frederike his vncler, to put foorth the other eyght epistell bookes, In the meane tyme also, while I was voyde of all care as touchynge the matters of the Ocean, the Apostolicall messengers of the bysshoppe of Rome Leo the tenth, (by whose holsome counsayle and autoritie we truste the calamities of Italy shalbe fynnysshed) raysed me as it were frome sleape, and encoraged me to proceade as I had begunne. To his holynesse I writte two Decades comprysed in short bokes after the maner of epistels, and added them to the fyrst, which was printed withowt myne aduise, as shall further appeare by the preface folowyng.

But nowe I returne to yow (most noble Prince) from whom I haue sumwhat digressed. Therefore wheras yowr graundefathers by your moothers fyde, haue subdued all Spayne vnder yowr dominion except onely one corner of the same, and haue also lefte yowe the kyngedome of Naples with the frutefull Ilandes of owr seas, it is suerly a greate thyng and woorthy to be noted in owre cronacles. But not offendynge the reuerence due to owre prediceffors, what so euer frome the begynnyng of the worlde hath byn doone or wrytten to this day, to my iudgement seemeth but little, if wee confyder what newe landes and countreys, what newe seas, what fundry nations and tounge, what golde mynes, what treasuries of perles they haue lefte vnto yowre hyghnesse, besyde other reuenues. The whiche, what they are and howe greate, these three Decades shall declare.

Come therefore moste noble Prince elected of God, and enioy that hyghe estate of thynges not yet vnderstode to men. We offer vnto yowe the Equinoctial line hetherto vnknowne and burnt by the furious heate of the foonne and vnhabitable after the opinion of the owlde wryters a fewe excepted: But nowe founde to bee most replenished with people, faire, frutefull, and moste fortunate, with a thowfande Ilandes crowned with golde and bewtifull perles, besyde that greate portion of earth supposed to bee parte of the firme lande, excedynge in quantitie three Europes. Come therefore and embrace this newe worlde,

and suffer vs no longer to consume in defyre of yowr presence. From hense, from hense I faye (most noble younge Prince) shall instrumentes be prepared for yow, whereby al the worlde shalbe vnder yowr obeysaunce.

And thus I byd yowr maiestie farewell: To whose taste if I shal perceau the fruites of this my tyllage to be delectable, I wyll hereafter doo my endeuoure that yowe maye receaue the same more abundauntly. From Madrid. The day before the Calendes of October,

In the yeare of. Chryste.

M. D. X V I.

FINIS.

THE FIRSTE BOOKE OF THE DECADES
OF THE OCEAN, WRITTEN BY PETER MARTYR OF
Angleria, Milenoes, counsiler to the kyng of Spayne and
Protonotarie Apostolicall, To *Ascanius*
Sphorcia, vicount Cardinall. etc.



THE REVERENDE AND thanckefull antiquite was accustomed to esteeme those men as goddesses, by whose industrie and magnanimitie fuche Landes and Regions were discovered, as were vnknownen to theyr predicessoures. But vnto vs hauynge onely one god whom we honour in triplicitie of person, this relecth, that albeit we do not woorschip that kind of men with diuine honoure, yet do we reuerence them, and woorthely maruell at theyr noble actes and enterprifes. Vnto kynges and princes we gyue due obeyfaunce, by whose gouernaunce and furtheraunce they haue bin ayded, to perfurme theyr attemptes. We commende bothe, and for theyr iust desertes worthely extoll them. Wherefore, as concernyng the Ilandes of the west Ocean, lately discovered, and of the auctours of the fame, (whiche thyng you desyre by your letters to knowe) I wyll begynne at the fyrst auctoure therof, lest I be iniurious to any man. Take it therefore as foloweth.

☞ *Christophorus Colonus* (other wise called *Columbus*) A gentilman of Italy, borne in the cite of *Genua*, perfwaded Fernando and Elyzabeth, catholike prynces, that he doubted not to fynde certayne Ilandes of *India*, nere vnto owre Ocean sea, if they wolde furnyssh hym with shyppes and other thynges apperteynyng. Affyrminge that therby not onely the Christian religion myght be enlarged, but Spayne also enryched by the great plentie of golde, pearles, precious stones, and spices, whiche might be founde there. At the lengthe three shyppes were appoynted hym at the kynges charges: of the which one was a great caracte with deckes: and the other two were light marchaunte shyppes without deckes, whiche the Spaniardes call *Carauelas*. Thus he departed from the costes of Spaine about the calendes of September, in the yere of Christ 1492. and set forward on his viage, being accompanied with. CC. xx. [two hundred and twenty] Spanyardes. The fortunate Ilandes (as manye thinke them to be, whiche the Spaniardes call *Canarie*, found but of late dayes) are distaunte from the Ilandes of *Gades*, a thousande and two hundredth myles, accordyng to theyr accepte: for they say they are distant three hundredth leaques: wheras such as are expert sea men, affyrme that euery leaque conteyneth foure myles, after theyr supputations. These Ilandes were called fortunate, for the temperate ayre whiche is in them. For neyther the coldenesse of wynter is sharpe vnto them, nor the heate of sommer intollerable. Yet some men are of opinion, that those were in olde tyme called the fortunate Ilandes, whiche the Portugales call *Capo Verde*. *Colonus* therfore sayled, fyrste to the Ilandes of *Canarie*, to the intente there to refreshe his shyppes with freshe water and fuell, before he committed him selfe to thys so laborious a vyage. And bycause I haue here made mention of the Ilandes of *Canarie*: It shall not be muche from my purpose to declare howe of vnknownen they became knownen, and of saluage and wilde, better manured. For by the longe course of manye yeres, they were forgotten, and remayned as vnknownen.

These feuen Ilandes (therefore) called the *Canaries*, were founde by chaunce by a frenche man, called *Betanchor*, by the permission of queene Katharine, protectrix of kyng Iohn her son, while he was yet in his nonage, about the yere of Christe. M.CCCC.V. This *Betanchor* inuaded two of these Ilandes called *Lancelotus* and *Fortifuentura*, whiche he inhabited and brought to better culture. He beinge deade, his son and heire folde bothe the sayde Ilandes to certayne Spaniardes.

After this, *Fernandus Peraria* and his wyfe, inuaded *Ferrea* and *Gomera*. The other three were subdued in our tyme. *Grancanaria*, by *Petrus de Vera*, citezen of the noble cite of *Xericium*, and Michaell of *Moxica*.

1
The reward of
vertue

The Ilandes of
the weste Ocean.

Christophorus
Colonus.

India.

The fyrst viage
of Colonus.

The Ilandes of
Canarie.
Gades or
Cals mals.
A leaque, what it
conteyneth by sea.
The fortunate
Ilandes.
Cabouerde.

The seuen Ilandes
of Canarie.
Betanchor A
frenche man
subdued the
ilandes of Canarie
Lancelotus.
Fortisuentura.
Ferrea.
Gomera.
Grancanaria

Palma.
Tenerifen.
Alphonfus Lugo.

2

Colonus men rebel
against hym.

Faire wordes and
promises.

Hispaniola.
Iohanna.

Nightingales
syng in
Nouember.

The Ilande of
Ophir.

The ilandes of
Antilia.

A shypwrack

The people of
the ilande.
Naked people.

Expert swimmers.
Gold for erth and
glasse.
Many kynges

Relygious and
humaine people.

Canoas.

Monoryla. 3

They haue no
Iren.
Canibales or
Caribes
Anthropophagi.

The crueltie of
the Canibales.

Palma and *Tenerifen*, by *Alphonfus Lugo*, at the kynges charges. *Gomera* and *Ferrca* were easely subdued: But the matter wente harde with *Alphonfus Lugo*. For that naked and wylde nation, fyghtinge onely with stoness and clubbes, droue his armie to flighte at the fyrste assaulte, and slewe about foure hundreth of his men. But at the length he ouercame them. And thus all the Ilandes of *Canaria* were added to the dominion of Spayne. From these Ilandes *Colonus* directynge his viage towarde the weste, folowinge the fallinge of the sonne, but declining somewhat towarde the left hande, sayled on forwarde. xxxiii. dayes continually, hauynge onely the fruition of the heauen and the water. Then the Spanyardes whiche were accompanied with hym, beganne fyrste to murmure secretly among them felues: and shortly after with wordes of reproche spake euyll of *Colonus* theyr gouernoure, and consulted with them felues, eyther to rydde hym out of the waye, or elles to cast hym into the sea: Ragynge that they were deceyued of a straunger, an outlandishe man, a Ligurian, a Genues, and brought into fuche daungerous places, that they myght neuer returne ageyne. And after. xxx. dayes were paste, they furiously cryed out againste him, and threatned him that he shulde passe no further. But he euer with ientyll wordes and large promyses, appeased theyr furie, and prolonged day after day, some tyme defying them to beare with hym yet a whyle, and some time putting them in remembrance that if they shulde attempte any thinge agaynst him, or other wise disobey hym, it wolde be reputed for treason. Thus after a fewe dayes, with cherefull hartes they espied the lande longe looked for. In this fyrst navigation, he discouered. vi. Ilandes, wherof twoo were exceding great: Of whiche, the one he called *Hispaniola*, and the other *Iohanna*. But at that tyme he knewe not perfectly that *Iohanna* (other wyse called *Cuba*,) was an Ilande. As they coasted alonge by the shore of certayne of these Ilandes, they harde nyghtingales syng in the thicke woodes in the month of Nouember. They found also great riuers of freshe water, and naturall hauens, of capacitie to harborowe greate nauies of shippes. Saylinge by the coastes of *Iohanna*, from the northe poynte to the west, he rode lyttell lesse then eyght hundreth miles (for they call it a hundreth and foure score leaques) supposyng that it had byn the continent or fyrme land, bicause he coulde nother fynd the landes ende, nor any token of the ende, as farre as he coulde iudge with his eye: wherfore he determined to returne backe agayne, beyng therto partly enforced by the roughnesse of the sea. For the sea banckes of the Ilande of *Iohanna*, by fondrye wyndinges and turnynges, bende them felues so muche towarde the Northe, that the northnortheaste wynde roughly tossed the shippes by reason of the wynter. Turnynge therfore the stemples of his shippes towarde the Easte, he affirmed that he had founde the Ilande of *Ophir*, whyther Salomons shippes sayled for golde. But the description of the Cosmographers well considered, it seemeth that bothe these, and the other Ilandes adioynng, are the Ilandes of *Antilia*. This Ilande he called *Hispaniola*: on whose northe fyde as he approached nere to the lande, the keele or bottome of the biggeste vessell ranne vpon a blynde rocke couered with water, and cloue in funder. But the playnnesse of the rocke was a helpe to them that they were not drowned. Makynge haste therfore with the other two shippes to helpe them, they brought awaye al the men without hurte. Here comming fyrst a land, they sawe certayne men of the Ilande: who perceauynge an vnknown nation comminge towarde them, flocked together and ranne al into the thicke wooddes, as it hadde byn hares coursed with grehoundes. Owre men purfuing them, tooke onely one woman, whom they brought to the shippes: where fyllinge her with meate and wyne, and apparelinge her, they let her departe to her company. Shortly after a greate multitude of them came runnyng to the shore to beholde this newe nation, whom they thought to haue discended from heauen. They cast them felues by heapes into the sea, and came swimmyng to the shippes, bryngyng golde with them, which they chaunged with owre men for erthen pottes, drinking glasse, poyntes, pyntes, hawkes belles, lokinge glasse, and fuche other trifles. Thus growng to further familiaritie, owre men were honorably enterteined of the kyng of that parte of the Ilande, whose name was *Guaccanarillus*: for it hath many kynges, as when Eneas arriued in Italy, he founde *Latium* diuided into many kyngedomes and prouinces, as *Latium*, *Mezentium*, *Turnum*, and *Tarchontem*, which were seperated with narrow boundes, as shall more largely appere hereafter. At the euen tyde about the faulynge of the sonne, when owre men went to praier, and kneled on their knees after the maner of the Christians, they dyd the lyke also. And after what maner so euer they sawe them praye to the crosse, they folowed them in all poyntes as well as they coule. They shewed much humanitie towardes owre men: and helped them with theyr lighters or small boates (whiche they call *Canoas*) to vnlade theyr broken shippe: And that with fuche celeritie and cherefulness, that no frende for frende, or kynfeman for kynfeman, in fuche case moued with pitie, coulde do more. Theyr boates are made only of one tree, made holow with a certain sharpe stone (for they haue no yron.) And are very longe and narowe. Many affirme that they haue fene some of them with fortie ores. The wylde and myscheuous people called *Canibales* or *Caribes*, whiche were accustomed to eate mannes fleshe (and called of the olde writers, *Anthropophagi*) molest them excedyngly, inuadyng theyr cuntry, takynge them captiue, kyllyng and eatyng them. As owre men sayled to the Ilandes of these meke and humayne people, they lefte the Ilandes of the *Canibales*, in maner in the middest of theyr viage towarde the south. They complained that theyr Ilandes were no lesse vexed with the incurfions of these manhuntynge *Canibales* when they go forth a rouynge to seeke theyr praye: then are

other tame beastes, of Lyons and Tigers. Such chyldren as they take, they geld to make them fat as we doo cocke chikyns and younge hogges, and eate them when they are wel fedde: of fuche as they eate, they fyrst eate the intralles and extreme partes, as handes, feete, armes, necke, and heade. The other moste fleshy partes, they powder for flore, as we do pestelles of porke and gammondes of bakon. Yet do they abstayne from eatynge of women and counte it vyle. Therefore fuche younge women as they take, they keepe for increace, as we doo hennes to leye egges. The olde women, they make theyr drudges. They of the Ilandes (which we may nowe caul owres) bothe the men and the women when they perceau the *Canibales* coming, haue none other shyfte but onely to flie: for although they vse very sharpe arrowes made of reedes, yet are they of small force to repreffe the furie of the *Canibales*: for euen they them selues confesse, that tenne of the *Canibals* are able to ouercome a hundreth of them if they encountre with them. Theyr meate is a certeyne roote which they cal *Ages*: muche lyke a nauew roote in fourme and greatnesse: but of sweete taste, muche lyke a greene chefnutte. They haue also an other kynde of rootes, whiche they call *Iucca*, wherof they make breade in lyke maner. They vse *Ages* more often roasted or foddren, then to make breade therof. But they neuer eate *Iucca*, excepte it be first sliced and pressed, (for it is ful of lycoure) and then baked or foddren. But this is to be marueled at, that the iuyce of this roote is a poyson as strong as *Aconitum*, so that if it be dronke it causeth present death, and yet the breade made of the masse therof, is of good taste and holsome, as all they haue proued. They make also an other kynde of breade of a certayne pulfe, called *Panicum*, muche lyke vnto wheate, wherof is great plentie in the dukedome of Mylane, Spayne, and Granatum. But that of this cuntry is longer by a spanne, somewhat sharpe towarde the ende, and as bygge as a mannes arme in the brawne: The graynes wherof are fette in a maruelous order, and are in fourme somewhat lyke a pease. While they be foure and vnripe, they are white: but when they are ripe they be very blacke. When they are broken, they be whyter then snowe. This kynde of grayne, they call *Maizium*. Golde is of some estimation among them: for some of them hange certain small pieces therof at theyr eares and nofethrilles. A lyttell beyonde this place, our men wente a lande for fresshe water, where they chanced vpon a Ryuer whose fande was myxed with muche golde. They founde there no kindes of foure footed beastes excepte three kyndes of lyttell conyes. These Ilandes also nourishe serpentes: but such as are without hurt. Lykewise wyld geefe, turtle doues, and duckes, much greater then ours, and as whyte as swannes, with heades of purple coloure. Also Popiniaies, of the whiche some are greene, some yelowe, and some lyke them of *India*, with yelowe rynges about theyr neckes, as Plinie describeth them. Of these they broughte fortie with them, of moste liuely and delectable coloures, hauyng theyr fethers entermengled with greene, yelowe, and purple, whiche varietie, deliteth the sene not a litle. Thus muche thought I good to speake of Poppingiaies, (ryghte noble Prynce) specially to this intente, that albeit the opinion of Christophorus Colonus (who affirmeth these Ilandes to be parte of *India*) dothe not in all poyntes agree with the iudgement of auncient wryters as touchyng the bignesse of the Sphere and compasse of the Globe as concernyng the nauigable portion of the same beyng vnder vs, yet the Poppingiaies and many other thynges brought from thence, doo declare that these Ilandes fauour somewhat of *India*, eyther beyng nere vnto it, or elles of the same nature: forasynuche as Aristotle also, about the ende of his booke *De Cælo et Mundo*, and likewise *Seneca*, with diuerse other authours not ignorant in Cosmography, do affirme that *India* is no longe tracte by sea, distant from Spayne by the weste Ocean, for the foyle of these Ilandes, bryngeth forth the Mastix, Aloes, and fundrye other sweete gummes and spyces as doth *India*. Cotton also of the gossampine tree, as in *India* in the cuntry of the people called Seres.

¶ The languages of all the nations of these Ilandes, maye well be written with our Latine letters. For they cal heauen *Turci*. A house, *Boa*. Golde, *Cauni*. A good man, *Taino*. Nothing, *Mayani*. All other wordes of theyr language, they pronounce as playnely as we doo the Latine tongue. In these Ilandes they founde no trees known vnto them, but pyne app[le] trees, and date trees: And those of maruelous heygth and exceding harde, by reason of the greate moystnesse and fatnesse of the grounde, with continuall and temperate heate of the sonne, whiche endureth so all the hole yere. They playnely affyrme the Ilande of *Hispaniola* to be the most fruitfull lande that the heauen compasseth aboute, as shall more largely appere hereafter in the particular description of the same, whiche we intende to fette forth when we shall be better instructed.

Thus makynge a leage of frendshyppe with the kyng, and leauynge with hym. xxxviii. men to searche the Ilande, he departed to Spayne takynge with hym. x. of the inhabitauntes to lerne the Spanishe tongue, to the intent to vse them afterwarde for interpretours. *Colonus* therefore at his returne, was honorably receaued of the kyng and queene: who caused him to fytt in theyr prefrence, whiche is a token of great loue and honoure amonge the Spaniardes. He was also made Admirall of the Ocean: and his brother goue[r]noure of the Iland.

Towarde the second viage, he was furnished with. x[v]ii. shippes: wherof three were great caraces of a thousand tunne: xii. were of that forte, whiche the Spaniardes call *Carauelas*: without deckes: and two other of the same forte somewhat bygger, and more apte to beare deckes, by reason of the gretnesse of theyr mastes.

Ages.
Rootes in the
steede of meate.
Iucca.
Breade of rootes.

An herbe of a
straunge nature.

Maizium.

Golde in
estimation.

Golde in the
sandes of ryuers.
Serpentes without
venime.
Turtle doues
Duckes.
Poppingiaies.
Plini.

These Ilandes are
parte of *India*.
The Indians are
Antipodes to the
spaniardes.

Aristotle.
Seneca.
India not far
from Spaine
4
Mastix.
Aloe.
Gossampyne
cotton or bombase.
Seres.
The language of
these Indians.
Trees and frutes
vknown to vs.
Fat and moyste
grounde.
Heate continuall
and temperate.
The fruitfulness of
hispaniola

The seconde viage
of *Colonus*.

Corne and sedes
to sowe.

Tooles and
artillery.

Water droppynge
from a tree
continually.

He had also a thousand and two hundred armed footemen well appoynted: Amonge whiche were many artificers, as fmythes, carpenters, myners, and fuche other: Certayne horsemen also, wel armed: Likewife mares, shiepe, heyghfers, and fuch other of bothe kindes for increafe. Lykewife all kynde of pulfe or grayne and corne, as wheate, barlye, rye, beanes and pease, and fuche other, as well for food as to fowe: Befyde vynes, plantes and feedes, of fuche trees, fruites, and herbes, as thofe countreyes lacke. And (not to be forgotten) fundry kindes of artillery and iron tooles, as bowes, arrowes, crossebowes, bylles, hargabufes, brode swoordes, large targettes, pikes, mattockes, shoouelles, hammers, nayles, sawes, axes, and fuche other. Thus beyng furnished accordyngely, they fet forwarde from the Ilandes of *Gades*, (nowe called *Cals*,) the vii. day before the calendes of October, in the yere of Christe. 1493. and arriued at the Ilandes of *Canarie*, at the calendes of October. Of these Ilandes, the laste is called *Ferrea*, in whiche there is no other water that maye be drunke, but onely that is gathered of the dewe whiche continually distilleth from one onely tree growynge on the highest backe of the Ilande, and falleth into a rounde trenche made with mannes hande. We were infourmed of these thynges within fewe dayes after his departure. What shal succede, we wyl certifie yowe hereafter. Thus fare ye well, from the courte, at the Ides of Nouember. 1493.

THE SECONDE BOOKE OF THE FYRSTE DECADE to Ascanius Phorcias, vicounte Cardinall, etc.



Owe repete (ryghte honorable Prynce) that yowe are desirous to knowe what newes we haue in Spayne from the newe worlde: and that those thynges haue greatly deltyed you which I wrote vnto yowre highnesse of the fyrste nauigation. Yowe shal now therefore receaue what hath succeeded. *Methymna Campi*, is a famous towne in high Spayne in the respecte frome yowe, and is in that parte of Spayne whiche is called *Castella Vetus*: beyng distant from *Gades* about. xl. myles. Here the courte remayned, when aboute the. ix. of the kalendes of Aprell in this yere of nynetic and foure, there were postes fente to the kyng and queene, certifyinge them that

there were. xii. shippes come from the newe Ilandes and arryued at *Gades*. But the gouernoure of the shippes fente worde to the kyng and queene that he had none other matter to certifie them of by the postes, but onely that the Admirall with fife shippes and. iiii. score and tenne men remayned styll in *Hispaniola*, to searche the secretes of the Ilande. And that as touching other matters, he hym selfe wolde shortly make relation in theyr prefece, by worde of mouthe. Therefore the daye before the nones of Aprel, he came to the courte him selfe. What I learned of him and other faythfull and credible men whiche came with hym from the Admirall, I wyl reherse vnto yowe in fuch order as they declared the fame to me when I demaunded them. Take it therefore as foloweth. The thyrde daye of the Ides of October, departyng from *Ferrea*, the laste of the Ilandes of *Canarie*, and from the costes of Spayne with a nauie of. xvii. shippes, they sayled. xxi. dayes before they came to any Ilande: inclyning of purpose more towarde the lefte hand then at the fyrst viage, folowyng the northnortheast wynde: and arriued fyrst at the Ilandes of the *Canibales*, or *Caribes* of which, onely the fame was knowen to our men. Amonge these, they chauned fyrst vpon one, so beset with trees, that they coulde not se so muche as an elle space of bare earthe or stony grounde. This they called *Dominica*, bicause they found it on the funday. They taried here no tyme, bycause they sawe it to be deserte. In the space of these. xxi. dayes, they thynke that they sayled viii. hundreth and. xx. leaques, the Northnortheast wynde was so full with them, and so fresshly folowed the sterne of theyr shippes. After they hadde sayled a lyttell further, they espied dyuerse Ilandes replenysshed with fundrye kyndes of trees, from the whiche came fragrant fauours of spyces and swete gummes. Here they sawe neyther man nor beaste, except certayne lifartes of huge bignesse, as they reported whiche went alande to viewe the countrey. This Iland they cauled *Galana*, or *Galanta*. From the cape or poynt of this Iland, espyng a mountayne a farre of, they sayled thither. Aboute. xxx. myles from this mountayne, they sawe a ryuer discending whiche seemed to be a token of some great and large fludde. This is the fyrste lande whiche they founde inhabited from the Ilandes of *Canarie*, and is an Ilande of the *Canibales*, as they lerned by the interpretours whiche they tooke with them from *Hispaniola* into Spayne at theyr fyrste viage. Serchyng the Ilande, they founde innumerable villages of. xx. houses or. xxx. at the mooste, fette rounde abowte in order, makynge the streete in coompasse lyke a markette place. And forasmuch as I haue made mention of theyr houses, it shal not be greatly from my purpose to describe in what maner they are buylded. They are made rounde lyke belles or rounde pauylions. Theyr frame is rayfed of excedyng hyghe trees, fette close together and fast rampaired in the grounde, so standyng a slope and bending inward that the toppes of the trees ioyn

Methymna Campi.

Castella Vetus.

Gades

5

The Iland of
Ferrea.

Ilands of the
Canibales.

The Iland of
Dominica.
viii. hundreth and
xx. leaques in. xxi.
dayes.

Lysertcs,

The Ilande of
Galanta.

The Iland of
Guadalupea.

Vilages of. xx. or.
xxx. houses
The building of
theyr houses.

together and beare one agaynste an other, hauynge also within the house, certayne stronge and shorte props or postes whiche fusteyne the trees from fallynge. They couer them with the leaues of date trees and other trees strongly compact and hardened, wherewith they make them close from wynde and wether. At the short postes or proppes within the house, they tie ropes of the cotton of goffampine trees, or other ropes made of certayne long and toughe rotes much lyke vnto the shrubbe called *Spartum*, wherof in olde tyme they vsed to make bondes for vynes and cabuls and ropes for shyppes. These they tye ouerthwarte the house from poste to poste. On these they ley as it were certayne mattresses made of the cotton of the goffampine trees, whiche growe plentifully in these Ilandes. This cotton the Spaniardes call *Algodon*, and the Italians *Bombasine*. And thus they sleepe in hangynge beddes. At the enteraunce of one of theyr houses, they sawe two Images of woodde lyke vnto serpentes, whiche they thoughte had byn such idoles as they honour. But they lerned afterwarde that they were sette there onely for coomlynesse. For they knowe none other god then the Sunne and Moone, although they make certayne Images of goffampine cotton to the similitude of such phantasies as they fay appere to them in the nyghte. Our men found in theyr houses, all kyndes of erthen vessels, not muche vnylike vnto oures. They founde also in theyr kichens, mannes flesshe, duckes flesshe, and goose flesshe, al in one pot: and other on the spittes redye to be layde to the fire. Entryng into theyr inner lodgynges, they founde faggottes of the bones of mennes armes and legges, which they referue to make heades for theyr arrowes, bycause they lacke iron. The other bones they caste away when they haue eaten the flesshe. They founde likewise the heade of a yonge man fastened to a poste and yet bleding. They haue in some villages, one great haule or pallaice, aboute the whiche theyr common houses are placed. To this they resort, as often as they come together to playe. When they perceaued the commynge of our men, they fledde, in theyr houses they founde also about. xxx. chyldeyn and women captiues which were referued to be eaten, but our men tooke them away to vse them for interpretoures. Searchyng more diligently th[e]ynner partes of the Ilande, they founde. vii. other ryuers, bygger then this whiche we spake of before, runnyng throughe the Ilande, with fruitfull and pleafante banckes, delectable to beholde. This Ilande, they called *Guadalupea*, for the similitude that it hath to the mounte *Guadalupus* in Spayne, where the Image of the virgin MARIE is religiously honored. But the inhabitauntes caul it *Carucueria*, or *Queraquiera*. It is the chiefe habitation of the *Canibales*. They brought from this Iland. vii. Popyngayes, bygger then phesantes, muche differynge from other in coloure: hauynge theyr backes, brestes, and bealies of purple coloure, and theyr wynges of other variable coloures. In al these Ilandes is no lesse plentie of popyngayes then with vs of sparrows or starlings. As we brynge vp capons and hennes to francke or make them fatte, so do they these bigger kyndes of popyngayes for the same purpose. After that they hadde thus searched the Ilande and dryuen these *Canibales* to flyghte, (whiche ranne away at theyr fyrst approche as sone as they had espied them) they cauled theyr company together. And as soone as they had broken the *Canibals* boates or lyghters (whiche they call *Canoas*) they lowfed theyr ankers the daye before the Ides of Nouember, and departed from *Guadalupea*. *Colonus* the admirall, for the defyre he hadde to se his companions, whiche at his fyrst vyage he lefte the yere before in *Hispaniola* to searche the countrey, lette passe many Ilandes bothe on his righte hande and lefte hande, and sayled directly thither. By the waye, there appeared from the Northe. A great Ilande which the captiues that were taken in *Hispaniola*, cauled *Madanino*, or *Matinino*: Affirmyng it to be inhabited only with women: To whom the *Canibales* haue accesse at certen tymes of the yeare, as in owlde tyme the *Thracians* had to the *Amazones* in the Ilande of *Lefbos*. The men children, they sende to theyr fathers. But the women theye kepe with them selues. They haue greate and stronge caues or dennes in the ground, to the which they flye for safegarde if any men resorte vnto them at any other tyme then is appoynted. And there defende them selues with bowes and arrowes, agens the violence of fuche as attempte to enuade them. They coulde not at this tyme approche to this Ilande, by reason of the Northenortheast wynde which blewe soo vehemently from the same, wheras they nowe folowed the Eastefoutheast. After they departed from *Madanino*, and sayled by the space of. xl. myles, they passed not farre frome an other Ilande which the captiues sayde to bee verye peopulous, and replenyshed with all thynges necessarie for the life of man. This they cauled *Mons Serratus*, bycause it was ful of mountaynes. The captiues further declared that the *Canibales*, are wonte at some tyme to goo frome theyr owne coastes aboute a thoufande myle to hunte for men. The daye folowyng, they sawe an other Ilande the whiche, bycause it was rownde, they cauled *Sancta Maria Rotunda*. The nexte daye, theye founde an other, which they cauled *S. Martini*. Which they lette passe also bycause they had no leasure to tarye. Lykewyse the thirde daye they espyed an other, whose *Diametral* syde extendynge frome the Easte to the weste, they iudged to bee a hundreth and fyftie myle. Theye affirme all these Ilandes to be maruelous fayre and frutefull. This laste, they cauled *Sancta Maria Antiqua*. Saylyng yet forwarde, and leauynge many other Ilandes, after they had sayled aboute fortie myle, they chaunced vpon an other muche bygger then any of the reste, which th[e]inhabitan[t]s caule *Ay Ay*, but they named it *Insula crucis*. Heare they cast anker to fetche fresshe water. The Admiral also commaunded. xxx. men to go a lande out of his owne shyp, and to search the Ilande Here they founde fowre dogges on the

Gossampine cotton.

Bombase. Ilanginge beddes.

Images.

Fyne cookery
Arrowe heds of bones.

6

The mounte Guadalupus.

Carucueria.
Popyngayes bygger then phesauntes

The Canibales dryuen to flyght.

Matinino an Ilande of women.

The Ilandes of Mons Serratus.

Huntinge for men.
Sancta Maria Rotunda.
Sanctus Martinus.

Sancta Maria Antiqua.

Insula crucis
An Ilande of the Canibals.

The Canibales are expert archers. Arrowes infected with veneme.

A conflict with the Canibales. 7

The fiercenes and terrible countenance of the Canibales.

Methymna Campi.

Innumerable Ilandes.

The mynes of Metales and precious stones.

The sea cauled Archipelagus. Insula. S. Iohannes or Buchena.

Death for deathe

The mountaynes are colder then the playnes.

From Dominica to Hispaniola fyue hundredth leagues

The Spanyardes lefte in the Iland are slayne. Kyng Guaccanarillus rebelleth.

Two images of goulde. 8

Libertie and idlens.

A happy kind of lyfe.

shore. The Inhabitants are *Canibales*, and maruelous experte in shutinge, as well women as men: And vse to infecte theyr arrowes with poyson: when they had taryed there two dayes, they sawe a farre of, a *Canoa*, in the whiche were eight men and as manye women hauynge with them bowes and arrowes. They fearfly assayled owre men withoute all feare, and hurte sum of them with theyr venemous arrowes. Amonge these there was a certen woman to whome the other gaue reuerence and obeyde as though she were theyr queene. Her sonne wayted vppon her, beinge a younge man, strongly made, of terrible and frownyng countenance and a lyons face. Owre men leaste they sholde take the more hurte by beinge wounded a farre of, thought it beste to ioyne with them. Therefore with all spede settinge forewarde with their ores the brigantine in whiche they were sette alande, they ouerturned their *Canoa* with a great violence, which beinge ouerwhelmed, they notwithstandinge, as well the women as the men fwymminge, caste theyr dartes at owre men, thicke and threefowlde. At the lengthe, gatherynge them felues together vpon a rocke couered with the water, they fought manfully vntyll they were ouercome and taken, one being slayne, and the queenes sonne fore wounded. When they were brought into the Admirals shippe, they dyd no more put of their firmes and cruell countenances, then do the Lyons of *Libia* when theye perceaued them felues to be bownde in chaynes. There is no man able to behowlde them, but he shall feele his bowelles grate with a certen horroure, nature hath endewed them with soo terrible menacyng, and cruell aspecte. This coniecture I make of my selfe and other which often tymes wente with me to see them at *Methymna Campi*. But nowe to returne to the viage. Proceedinge thus further and further, more then fyue hundrethe myles, firste towardes the Westefoutheweste, then towarde the Southwest, and at the lengthe towarde the Weste northe weste, they entered into a mayne large sea hauinge in it innumerable Ilandes, maruelouslye differinge one frome an other, for sum of them were verye frutefull and full of herbes and trees. Other sum, verye drye, barren, and rowgh with high rockye mountaynes of stone, wherof sum were of bright blewe or asurine coloure, and other glysteringe white: wherfore they supposed them by good reason to bee the mynes of metalles and precious stones. But the rowghnes of the sea, and multitude of Ilandes standinge so thicke togyther, hindered them soo, that they cowlde caste no anker leaste the bigger vesselles shulde runne vppon the rockes. Therefore they deferred the searchinge of these Ilandes vntyl an other tyme. They were fo manye and stooode so thicke, that they coulde not number them. Yet the smauler vesselles which drewe no greate depthe, entered emonge them and numbered fortie and fyxe Ilandes. But the bigger vesselles, kepte aloofe in the mayne sea for feare of the rockes. They caule the sea where this multitude of Ilandes are situate, *Archipelagus*. Frome this tracte proceedinge forrewarde, in the mydde waye there lyeth an Iland which th[e] inhabitants caule *Burichena*, or *Buchena*. But they named it *Insula S. Iohannis*. Dyuers of theym whome we had delyuered frome the *Canibales*, sayde that they were borne in this Ilande: affirminge it to be verye peopulous and frutefull, hauinge also manye fayre wooddes and hauens. There is deadly hatred and continual battayle betwene them and the *Canibales*. They haue no boates to passe from their owne coastes to the *Canibales*. But if it bee their chaunce to ouercome them, when they make incurfion into theyr countreye to feke their praye (as it sumtyme happeneth, the fortune of warre beinge vncerteine) they ferue them with like fause, requitinge deathe for deathe. For one of theym mangeleth an other in pieces, and roste them and eate them euen before their eyes. They taryed not in this Ilande. Yet in the weste angle therof, a fewe of them went a lande for freshe water, and fownd a greate and high howfe after the maner of their buylding, hauinge. xii. other of their vulgare cotages placed abowte the fame: but were all leste defolate, whether it were that they reforted to the mountaynes by refon of the heate which was that tyme of the yeare, and to returne to the playne when the ayre waxeth cowlde, or els for feare of the *Canibales* which make incurfion into the Ilande at certen seafons. In all this Ilande is only one kinge. The south fyde hereof extendeth abowte two hundrethe myles. Shortlye after, they came to the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, beinge distante frome the firste Ilande of the *Canibales*, fyue hundrethe leagues. Here they fownde all thynges out of order, and theyr felowes slayne which they leste here at their fyrste vyage. In the beginninge of *Hispaniola*, (hauinge in it many regions and kyngedomes as we haue fayde) is the region of *Xamana* whose kinge is named *Guaccanarillus*. This *Guaccanarillus* ioyned frendshippe with owre men at the fyrste viage, and made a league with them: But in the absence of the Admirall, he rebelled, and was the cause of owre mens destruction, althowgh he diffimuled the fame, and pretended frendship at the Admirales returne. As owre men fayled on yet a litle further, they espied a longe *Canoa* with many ores, in which was the brother of *Guaccanarillus* with only one man waytinge on hym. He brought with hym two Images of goulde, which he gaue the Admirall in the name of his brother. And towlde a tale in his language as concerninge the deathe of owre men, as they proued afterwarde, but at this tyme had no regarde to his communication for lacke of interpretours, which were eyther all deade, or escaped or floulne awaye when they drewe nere the Ilandes. But of the. x. [ten.] vii. [seuen] dyed by change of ayre and dyet. The inhabitantes of these Ilandes haue byn euer soo vsed to liue at libertie, in playe and pastyme, that they can hardely away with the yoke of feruitude which they attempte to shake of by all meanes they maye. And surely if they had receaued owre religion, I wolde thinke their life moste happye of all men, if they might

therwith enioye their aunciente libertie. A fewe thinges contente them, hauinge no delite in fuche superfluites, for the which in other places men take infinite paynes and commit manie vnlawfull actes, and yet are neuer fatiffied, wheras many haue to muche, and none inowgh. But emonge these simple fowles, a fewe clothes ferue the naked: weightes and measures are not needefull to such as can not skyll of crafte and deceyte and haue not the vse of pestiferous monye, the feede of innumerable myscheues. So that if we shall not be ashamed to confesse the truthe, they seeme to lyue in that goulden worlde of the whiche owlde wryters speake so much: wherin men lyued simple and innocentlye without inforcement of lawes, without quarrellinge Iudges and libelles, contente onely to fatiffie nature, without further vexation for knowlege of thinges to come. Yet these naked people also are tormented with ambition for the desyre they haue to enlarge their dominions: by reason wherof they kepe warre and destroy one an other: from the which plage I suppose the golden world was not free. For euen then also, *Cede, non cedam*, that is, gyue place, and I wyll not giue place, had entred emonge men. But nowe to returne to the matter from which we haue digressed. The admirall desyrous to knowe further of the death of his men, sent for *Guaccanarillus* to come to him to his ship, dissimulinge that he knew any thinge of the matter. After that he came aboard shyp, saluting the Admirall and his company gyuing also certen golde to the Capetaynes and offycers, turned him to the women captiues which not longe before our men had deliuered from the *Canibales*. And earnestly beholding one of them whome owre men cauled Catharyne, he spake gentelly vnto her. And thus when he had seene and marueyled at the horses and fuche other thinges as were in the shyppe, vnknown to them, and had with a good grace and merelye asked leaue of the Admirall, he departed. Yet sum there were which counfeyled the Admirall to kepe hym styll: that if they might by any meanes proue that he was consentinge to the death of owre men, he might bee punished accordinglie. But the Admirall considering that it was yet no tyme to incense th[e] inhabitants myndes to wrathe, dysmyssed hym. The next daye folowing, the kinges brother refortyng to the shippes, eyther in his owne name or in his brothers, seduced the women. For on the next nyght about mydnight, this Katherine aswell to recouer her owne libertie as also her felowes, being suborned therto eyther by the kinge or his brothers promifes attempted a much more difficulte and dangerous aduenture then dyd *Cloelia* of Rome, which beinge in hostage with other maydes to the kynge *Porcena*, deceaued her keepers, and rode ouer the ryuer *Tiber*, with the other virgins which were pledges with her. For wheras they swamme ouer the ryuer on horsebacke. This Katharyne with feuen other women, trustyng onely to the strengthe of theyr owne armes, swamme aboute three longe myles: and that also, at fuche tyme as the sea was sumwhat rowghe. For euen soo farrre of frome the shore, lay the shippes at rode, as nigh as they could coniecture. But owre men folowinge them with the shippeboates, by the same light seene on the shore wherby the women were ledde, tooke three of them: supposinge that Katharyne with the other foure, went to *Guaccanarillus*. For in the springe of the morninge, certen messengers beinge sente to hym by the Admirall, had intelligence that he was fledde with all his familie and stufte, and the women also. which thinge ministred further suspection that he was consentinge to the death of owre men. Wherfore the Admirall sente forthe an armye of three hundrethe men, ouer the which he appoynted one *Melchior* to be capitayne, wylling him to make diligent searche to fynde owte *Guaccanarillus*. *Melchior* therfore with the smauleste vessels enteringe into the countreye by the ryuers and scouringe the shores, chaunced into certen crooked goulfes defended with. v lyttle and stiepe hilles, supposinge that it had byn the mouth of sum greate ryuer. He founde here also a verye commodious and safe hauen, and therefore named it *Portus Regalis*. They faye that the enteraunce of this is so crooked and bendinge, that after the shippes are once within the fame, whether they turne them to the lefte hand, or to the ryght, they can not perceau where they came in vntyll they returne to the mouth of the ryuer: Although it be there so brode that three of the byggeste vessels may fayle together on a froot. The sharpe and high hilles on the one fyde and on the other, so brake the wynde, that they were vncerten howe to rule theyr fayles. In the myddle gulfe of the ryuer, there is a promontorie or point of the lande with a pleasaunte groue full of Poppingayes and other byrdes which breede therein and singe verye sweetlye. They perceaued also that two ryuers of no smaule largenes fell into the hauen. Whyle they thus searched the lande betwene bothe, *Melchior* espied a high house a farre of, where supposinge that *Guaccanarillus* had lyne hyd, he made towarde it. And as he was goynge, there mette hym a man with a frownyng countenaunce and a grymme looke, with a hundreth men folowynge hym, armed with bowes and arrowes, and long and sharpe staues like iaelynnes, made harde at the endes with fyre. Who approachyng towards owre men, spake owte alowde with a terryble voyce, sayenge that they were *Taini*, (that is) noble men, and not *Canibales*. But when owre men had gyuen them signes of peace, they lefte bothe theyr weapons and fiercenes. Thus geuynge eche of them certen haukes belles, they tooke it for so greate a rewarde, that they desyred to enter bondes of nere frendshyppe with vs, and feared not immediatly to submitte them selues vnder owre power, and reforted to our shyps with theyr presentes. They that measured the house (beinge made in rounde forme) fownde it to be from fyde to fyde. xxxii. greate paces, compased abowte with. xxx. other vulgare houfes, hauinge in them many beames crosse ouer, and couered with reedes of fundry colours, wrethed and as it

Superfluite.

Many haue to much and none inough.

The goulden worlde

Naked men troubled with ambition.

Gyue place.

The Admirall sendeth for the kyng.

No horses in the Ilandes

A tyme for all thynges.

A desperate aduenture of a woman.

Cloelia of Rome.

Guaccanarillus is sought. Melchior.

9

Poppingayes and byrdes.

Taini.

Haukes belles.

A large hous

Reedes of
sundry colours.

Caccic[e]us.

Hoiedus and
Gorualanus.

Golde in ryuers
faulnge from
mountaynes.

The maner of
gathering golde.
Graynes of golde.

A masse of rude
golde weighinge
ix ounces.

Cannaboa, kynge
of the house of
gold

Holsome water
and plentie of
fyshe.

The day and nyght
of equal length
in December.
Byrdes breed in
December

The eleuation
of the pole

The starres are
cauled gardens
of the pole. 10

The Equioctial
lyne.

A chapel and
preestes.

Marchaunts
Sirophoicians.
The Cynamome
tree.

Xilaloos or
lignum Aloes.

were weaued with maruelous art When owre men asked fum of them where they myght fynde *Guaccanarillus*. They aunswered that that Region was none of his. But they kynges beyng there presente. Yet they fayde they supposed that *Guaccanarillus* was gone from the playne to the mountaynes. Makyng therefore a brotherly league with this *Caccicus*, (that is to faye a kynge) they returned to the Admyrall to make relation what they hadde feene and harde: whervppon he sent forth dyuers other Centurians with their hundrethes to searche the cuntry yet further. Emonge the which were *Hoiedus* and *Gorualanus*, noble younge gentlemen and of great courage. And as they went towarde the mountaines to seeke *Guaccanarillus*, dyuidinge the mountaynes betwene them, one of them fownde on the one fyde therof foure ryuers faulnge from the same mountaynes: and the other founde. iii. on the other fyde. In the fandes of all these ryuers is fownd great plentye of goulde, which th[e] inhabitants of the same Ilande which were with vs, gathered in this maner. Making holes in the fande with theyr handes, a Cubette deape, and takynge vp fande with their lefte handes from the botome of the fame, they picked out graynes of goulde with their ryght handes withoute any more arte or cunynge. And fo deliuered it to owre men: who affirme that many of them thus gathered, were as bygge as tares or fytchis. And I my selfe fawe a masse of rude goulde, (that is to say, fuch as was neuer molten) lyke vnto fuche stones as are founde in the bottomes of ryuers, weighinge nyne ownces, which *Hoieda* him selfe fownde. Beinge contented with these signes, they returned to the Admirall to certifie him hereof. For the Admirall had commaunded vnder payne of punyshement that they shuld meddle no further then their commiffion: which was only to searche the places with their signes. For the same went that there was a certayne kynge of the mountaynes from whenfe those ryuers had their faule, whom they caule *Caccicus Caunaboa* that is, the lord of the house of golde. For they caule a house *Boa*, goulde, *Cauni*: and a kynge or Lorde, *Caccicus*, as we haue fayde before. They affirme that there can noo where be found better fyssh, nor of more pleasant tast, or more holsome then in these ryuers: also the waters of the same to be most holsom to drynke. *Melchior* hym selfe towld me, that in the moneth of December, the days and nyghtes bee of equal length among the *Canibales*. But the sphere or circles of the heauen, agreeth not therunto. Albeit that in the same moneth, fume byrdes make their nestes, and fume haue alreedy hatched their egges by reason of the heate beinge rather continuall then extreme. He towld me also when I questioned with hym as concernynge the eleuation of the pole from the horizontal lyne, that al the sterres cauled *Plastrum* or charles wayne, are hydde vnder the Northe pole to the *Canibales*. And surely there returned none from thense at this viage, to whome there is more credit to be gyuen, then to this man. But if he had byn skilfull in Astronome, he shulde haue fayde that the day was almoste equall with the night. For in no place towarde the stay of the sonne (cauled *Sollicitium*) can the night be equall with the day. And as for them, they neuer came vnder the *Equinoctiall*, for asmuch as they had euer the northe pole theyr guyde, and euer eleuate in sight aboute the *Horizontal*. Thus haue I briefly written vnto yowre honoure, as muche as I thought sufficente at this tyme. And shall shortly hereafter (by Gods fauoure) wryte vnto you more largely of fuche matters as shalbe dayly better knowen. For the admirall hym selfe (whome I vse famylyerly as my verye frende) hath promysed me by his letters, that he wyl gyue me knowlege of al fuch thynges as shall chaunce. He hath nowe chofen a stronge place where he may buyld a Citie nere vnto a comodious hauen. And hath alreedy buylded many houses and a chapell in the whiche (as in a newe worlde heretofore voyde of all religion) god is dayly serued with. xiii. preestes accordinge to the maner of owre churches. When the tyme nowe approched when he promysed to fende to the kynge and queene, and hauynge prosperous wynde for that purpose, sent backe the. xii. Caruelles wherof we made mencion before it was no fmaul hynderance and greefe, vnto hym: Especially confyderynge the death of his men whom he left in the Ilande at the fyrst vyage, wherby we are yet ignorant of many places and other secretes wherof we might otherwyse haue had further knowlege. But as tyme shall reueale them ageyne, fo wyll I aduertysse yowe of the same. And that you may the better knowe by conference had with the *Apothecaries* and marchaunt strangers *Sirophoicians*, what these Regions beare, and howe hotte theyr ground is, I haue sent you all kyndes of graynes, with the barke and inner partes of that tree whiche they suppose to bee the Cinamome tree. And yf it be your pleasure to taste eyther of the graynes, or of the fmaule feedes the which you shoulde perceaue to haue sawlen from these graynes, or of the wodde it selfe, touch them firste softly mouinge them to your lypes. For although they bee not hurtefull, yet for theyr exceffe of heate, they are sharpe and byte the tongue, yf they remayne any whyle theron. But if the tongue be blystered by tastynge of them, the fame is taken away by drynkyng of water. Of the corne also wherof they make theyr breade, this brynger shall delyuer fume graynes to your Lordehyppe bothe whyte and blacke: And therwith also, a Trunke of the tree of *Aloes*. The which yf you cutte in peeces, you shall feele a sweete fauoure to proceade from the same. Thus fare you hartely wel. From the courte of *Methinna Campi*. The thyrde day before the Calendes of May. *Anno. Domini*, M. CCCC. XCIIII.

THE THYRDE BOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE,
to Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonye and Newie to the kynge.



Owe desyre that folshe *Phaeton* shulde ageine rule the Chariotes of the Sunne: And contende to drawe sweete lycoures out of the harde flynte, wheras you requyre me to dyscribe vnto you the newe worlde, fownde in the weste by the good fortune and gouernaunce of the Catholike Princes *Ferdinandus* and *Helisabeth*, your Vncle and Aunte: shewyng me also the letters of kynge *Frederike* your vncle, wrytten to me in the same behalfe. But fythe you haue layde this burden on my backe, in whose power it is to commaunde me to take vppon me more then I am wel able. Ye bothe shal receaue this precious stone, rudely

cloued in leade after my maner of workemanshypp. Wherefore when you shall perceaue the lerned forte frendelye: The malicious, eniuously: And the backebyters, furiously, to bende theyr sclaunders darts ageynst owre fayre *Nymphes* of the *Ocean*, you shall freely proteste in howe short tyme, and in the myddeste of what troubles and calamities, you haue enforced me to wryte of the same. Thus fare you well frome *Granata* the ninthe day before the Calendes of May.

We haue declared in the boke here before, howe the Admirall passed by the coastes of the *Canibales* to the Ilande of *Hispaniola* with his whole nauie. But nowe we entende further to shewe what he fownde as concernyng the nature of this Ilande, after that he had better searched the seacreates of the same: Likewyse of the Ilande of *Cuba* nere vnto it which he yet supposed to bee the firme lande. *Hispaniola* therefore (which he affirmeth to bee *Ophir*, wherof we reade in the thyrd boke of the kynges) is of latitude, fyue southe degrees: hauyng the northe pole eleuate on the northe syde. xxvii. degrees: And on the Southe syde (as they saye) xxii. degrees. It reacheth in length from the Easte to the Weste, feuen hundrethe and foure score myles. It is distant from the Ilandes of *Gades* (cauled *Cales*) xlix. degrees, and more as sum faye. The forme of the Ilande, resemeleth the leafe of a chesnutte tree. Vppon a high hyll on the North syde of the Ilande, he buylded a citie, bycause this place was most apte for that purpose by reason of a myne of stones which was nere vnto the same, feruyng well bothe to buylde with, and also to make lyme. At the bottome of this hyll, is there a great playne of three score myles in length: and in bredth sumwhere. xii. sumwhere. xx. myles where it is brodest, and. vi. myles where it is narrowest Through this playne runne dyuers fayre ryuers of holfoome waters. But the greatest of them which is nauigable, fauleth into the hauen of the citie for the space of halfe a furlonge. Howe fertile and fruitfull this valley is, you shal vnderstand by these thynges which folowe. On the shore of this ryuer, they haue lymyted and enclosed certeyne grounde to make gardeynes and orchardes, in the which al kyndes of bygger herbes, as radyshe, letuse, colewortes, borage, and such other, waxe ripe within. xvi. dayes after the feede is sown. Lykewyse Melones, Gourdes, Cucumers, and fuche other, within the space of. xxxvi. dayes. These garden herbes, they haue freshe and greene all the whole yeare. Also the rootes of the canes or reedes, of the lycour wherof, fuger is made, growe a cubette high within the space of. xv. dayes: but the lycoure is not yet hardened. The lyke they affirme of plantes or shrouddes of younge vines: And that they haue the second yeare gathered ripe and sweete grapes of the same. But by reason of to muche rankenes, they beare but fewe clusters. Furthermore, a man of the countrey sowed a lyttle wheat about the Calendes of February, and brought with hym to the citie a handfull of the ripe eares of the same the thyrd day before the calendes of Aprell: which was that yeare the vigile of the Resurrection of owre Lorde. Also, al kyndes of pulse, as beanes, peafon, fytches, tares, and fuche other, are ripe twyfe in the yeare, as all they which come from thense, affirme with one voyce: Yet that the grounde is not vniuersally apte to beare wheate. In the meane tyme whyle these thynges were doinge, the Admirall sent owte a companye of. xxx. men to searche the Region of *Cipanga*, otherwyse cauled *Cibana*. This Region is full of mountaynes and rockes: And the myddle backe of the hole Ilande in the whiche is greate plentie of goulde. When they that went to searche the Region, were returned they reported maruelous thynges as touchyng the great ryches of this Region. Frome these mountaynes, descende foure greate ryuers, which by the maruelous industrye of nature, deuided the hole Ilande into foure partes, in maner equall, ouerspreadinge and wateringe the hole Ilande with their branches. Of these foure ryuers, the one reacheth towarde the Easte. This the inhabitantes caule *Iunna*: An other, towarde the Weste, and is cauled *Attibunicus*. The thirde towarde the Northe, named *Iachem*: the laste reacheth into the Southe, and is cauled *Naiba*. The daye before the Ides of Marche, the Admiral him selfe with al his horse men and foure hundreth footemen, marched directly towarde the South syde of the goulden Region. Thus passyng ouer the ryuer, the plaine and the mountayne which enuironed the other syde of the playne, he chaunced vpon an other vale the which a ryuer muche bygger then the fyrste, and many other meane ryuers

The fable of Phaeton.

Kynge Ferdinandus and queene Helisabeth

Nereides. He meaneth the Ilandes.

Hispaniola.

11
Ophir whether Salomons ships sayled for golde.

Isabella.

A playne of threescore myles of lengthe.

A token of maruelous fruitfulness.

Herbes grene al the hole yeare. Sugar reeds plantes and vines.

Corne and grayne ripe twice a yeare

The Region of Cipanga or Cibana. Golde.

Foure greate ryuers.

The golden region of Cibana.

Vales and
mountaynes

The vale of
Cibana.

Golde for haukes
bels. 12

Graynes and
pipple stones of
golde.

They passe not
for golde, in that
it is golde onely
but. etc.

Stones of golde as
byg as the heade
of a chyld.

Spyces.

Wylde vines of
pleasaunte taste.

Fruitful
mountaynes

Golde in the
sandes of ryuers
faulginge from the
mountaynes.
Libertie and
Idelnes.
The mountaynes
are coulde.

The Ilande of
Cuba.

Least any other
prince, &c

Discencion
betweene the
Portugales and
Spaniardes.

The Ilandes of
Cobouerde or
Hisperides 13

The Portugales
viages

runne through. When he had also conueighed his armye ouer the ryuer and passed the seconde vale whiche was in no part inferiour to the firste, he made away through the thirde mountayne, where was no passage before, and descended into an other vale which was nowe the beginnunge of *Cibana*. Through this also runne many fluddes, and ryuers, out of euery hyll, and in the sandes of them all, is fownde great plentie of goulde. And when he had nowe entered three score and twelue myles into the goulden region from the citie he entended to buylde a fortresse vppon the toppe of a hyll, standing by the shore of a certeyne great ryuer, that he might the better and more safelye feache the secretes of the inner partes of the Region. This he cauled the fortresse of faynte Thomas. The which in the meane tyme whyle he was buyldynge, th[e] inhabitants beinge desirous of haukes belles and other of owre things, reforted dayly thither. To whom the Admirall declared, that if they wolde brynge goulde, they shulde haue what so euer they wolde aske, Forthwith turnynge their backs and runnyng to the shore of the next ryuer, they returned in a short tyme, brynginge with them their handes full of goulde. Amongest al other, there came a owld man bringynge with him two pybble stones of goulde weighinge an vnce, desyryng them to gyue him a bell for the fame who when he sawe oure men maruell at the byggenes therof, he made signes that they were but smaule and of no value in respecte of fume that he had feene. And takyng in his hande foure stoncs the least wherof was as bygge as a walnut, and the byggest as bygge as an orange, he sayde that there was fownde peeces of goulde foo bygge in his countrey, beyng but halfe a dayes iourney from thense, and that they had no regarde to the gatheringe therof. Wherby we perceauce that they passe not muche for goulde in asmuch as it is goulde only, but so farre esteeme it, as the hande of the artificer hathe fashioned it in any coomely fourme. For who doth greatly esteeme rowgh marble or vnwrought Iuerye. But if they be wrought with the cunninge hande of *Phidias* or *Praxiteles*, and shaped to the similitude of the fayre nimphes or fayeres of the sea (cauled *Nereiades*) or the fayres of the wods, (cauled *Hamadriades*) they shal neuer lacke byers. Befyde this owld man, there came also dyuers other, brynginge with them pypple stones of gold weighing. x. or. xii. drammes: And feared not to confesse, that in the place where they gathered that golde, there were found sumtyme stoncs of gold as bygge as the heade of a chyld. When he had taryed heare a fewe dayes, he sent one *Luxanus*, a noble younge gentylman with a fewe armed men to feache all the partes of this Region. Who at his returne, reported that th[e] inhabitants shewed him greater things then we haue spoken of here before. But he dyd openly declare nothyng therof: which they thought was doone by the Admirales commaundement. They haue wooddes full of certeyne spyces: but not suche as we commonly vse. These they gather euen as they do golde: that is as much as wyl ferue for their purpose, euery man for hym selfe, to exchange the fame with the inhabitants of other countreys adioyninge to them, for such things as they lacke, as dyffhes, pottes, flooles, and suche other necessaries. As *Luxanus* returned to the Admiral, (which was about the Ides of Marche) he fownde in the wooddes, certeyne wylde vines, rype and of pleasaunt taste. But th[e] inhabitants passe not on them. This Region though it bee full of stoncs and rockes (and is therefore cauled *Cibana*, whiche is as muche to saye as a stone) yet it is well replenyshed with trees and pastures. Ye they instantly affirme, that if the grasse of these mountaynes bee cutte, it groweth ageyne within the space of foure dayes, higher then wheate. And for as muche as many showers of rayne doo faule in this Region, whereof the ryuers and fluddes haue their increafe, in euery of the which, golde is fownde myxte with sande in all places, they iudge that the golde is dryuen from the mountaynes, by the vehement course of the streames which faule from the same, and runne into the ryuers. The people of this Region are gyuen to Idelnes and playe. For suche as inhabyte the mountaynes, fyt quakyng for coulde in the wynter feafon, and had rather soo wander vppe and downe Idelly, then take the peines to make them apparell, wheras they haue wooddes full of gossampine cotton. But such as dwel in the vales or plaines feele no coulde in wynter. When the Admirall had thus searched the beginnunge of the region of *Cibana*, he repayed to *Isabella* (for so he named the citie) where, leauinge the gouernance of the Ilande with his deputies, he prepared hym selfe to seach further the lymettes of the Ilande of *Cuba* or *Iohanna*, which he yet doubted to bee the firme lande, and distant from *Hispaniola*, onely three score and ten myles. This dyd he with more speedy expedicion, caulng to remembraunce the kinges commaundement, who wylled hym fyrst with all celeritie to ouer runne the coastes of the newe Ilandes, leaste any other prince shulde in the meane tyme attempte to inuade the same. For the Kynge of Portugale affirmed that it perteyned only to hym to discouer these vnknown landes. But the byshop of Rome Alexander the. vi. to auoyd the cause of this discencion, graunted to the Kynge of Spayne by th[e] auctoritie of his leaden bulles, that no other prince shulde bee so boulde as to make any viages to any of those vnknown regions, lyenge without the precinct of a directe lyne drawn from the North to the Southe a hundred leagues westwarde without the paralelles of the Ilandes cauled *Capud Viride*. or *Cabouerde*, which we thinke to bee those that in owld tyme were cauled *Hesperides*. These perteyne to the kynge of Portugale. And frome these, his pylottes whiche doo yearely feache newe coastes and regions, directe their course to the Easte, saylyng euer towarde the lefte hande by the backe of Aphrike and the seas of the Ethiopians: Neyther to this day had the Portugales at any tyme sayled Southwarde, or Westwarde from the Ilandes of *Cabouerde*.

Preparyng therfore three shippes, he made haste towarde the Ilande of *Iohanna* or *Cuba* whyther he came in shorte space, and named the poynt therof where he fyrst arryued, *Alpha* and *O*: that is, the fyrste and the laste: for he supposed that there had byn th[e]end of owre Easte bycaufe the sonne fauleth there: And of the weste, bycaufe it ryfeth there. For it is apperente, that westwarde, it is the beginnunge of *India* beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*: And Eastwarde, the furthest ende of the same: which thinge is not contrary to reason forasmuche as the Cosmographers haue lefte the lymites of *India* beyonde *Ganges* vndetermined: where as also fume were of opinion that *India* was not farre from the coastes of Spaine as we haue sayde before. Within the prospecte of the begynnyng of *Cuba*, he founde a commodious hauen in the extreme angle of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*. For in this part, the Iland receaueth a greate goulfe. This hauen, he named faynt Nycolas porte, beinge scarfely. xx. leaques from *Cuba*. As he departed from henfe and fayled westwarde by the fouth fyde of *Cuba*, the further that he went, so muche the more the sea seemed to bee extended in breadth and to bende towarde the fouth. On the fouth fyde of *Cuba*, he fownde an Ilande which th[e]inhabitanes caule *Iamaica*. This he affirmeth to bee longer and broder then the Iland of Sicilie: hauyng in it only one mountayne, which on euery parte begynninge from the sea, ryfeth by little and little into the myddeft of the Ilande: And that foo playnely without rowghnes, that fuche as goo vp to the toppe of the fame, can scarfely perceaue that they ascende. This Ilande he affirmed to bee very fruitfull and full of people as well in th[e]inner partes of the same as by the shore: And that th[e]inhabitanes are of quicker wytte then in the other Ilandes, and more experte artificers and warrelyke men. For in many places where he woulde haue arryued, they came armed ageynst him and forbodde him with threatening wordes. But beinge ouercome, they made a league of frendship with hym. Thus departyng from *Iamaica*, he fayled towarde the Weste with a prosperous wynde for the space of threescore and tenne dayes: thinkinge that he had passed so farre by the compasse of the earth being vnderneath vs, that he had byn nere vnto *Aurea Chersonesus* (nowe cauled *Malaccha*,) in owre Easte India beyonde the beginnunge of *Persides*. For he playnely beleued that he had lefte onely two of the twelue howres of the sonne, which were vnknewen to vs, for the owlde wryters haue lefte halfe the course of the sonne vntouched, where as they haue but onely discuffed that superficiall parte of the earth which lyeth betwene the Ilandes of Gades and the ryuer of *Ganges*: or at the vttermoste, to *Aurea Chersonesus*. In this nauigation, he chaunced on many furious seas, running with a faule as it had byn the streames of fluddes: Also many whorlepooles, and shelves, with many other daungers, and streyghtes by reason of the multytude of Ilandes, which ley on euery fyde. But not regarding all these perelles, he determyned to proceade vntyl he had certaine knowledge whether *Cuba* were an Ilande or firme lande. Thus he fayled forward coastinge euer by the shore towarde the weste for the space of CC. xxii. [two hundred and twenty-two] leaques, that is, abowte a thousande and three hundreth myles: And gaue names to feuen hundreth Ilandes by the waye: Leauyng also on the lefte hande (as he feared not to reporte) three thousande here and there. But let vs nowe returne to fuche thinges as he fownde worthy to be noted in this nauigation. Saylinge therfore by the fyde of *Cuba*, and searchinge the nature of the places, he espied not farre from *Alpha* and *O*, a large hauen of capacitie to harborowe manye shippes: whose enteraunce is bendinge, beinge inclosed on bothe fydes with capes or poyntes which receaue the water. This hauen is large within, and of exceadinge depthe. Saylinge by the shore of this porte, he sawe not farre frome the same, two cotages couered with reedes, and in many places fyer kyndeled. Here he sente certeyne armed men owte of the shippes to the cotages: where they fownde nother man nor woman, but rostemeate enowgh. For they fownde certeyne fpyttes of woodde lyenge at the fyre, hauinge fyshe on theym abowt a hundreth pownde weight, and two serpentes of. viii. foote longe a piece, wherat marueylinge, and lokyng abowt if they coulde espye any of th[e]inhabitanes, and that none appeared in syght (for they fledde all to the mountaynes at the commyng of owre men) they fell to theyr meate, and eate the fyshe taken with other mens trauallye: But they absteyned from the serpentes, which they affirme to differ nothinge from Crocodiles of Egypt, but onely in byggenes. For (as *Plinie* sayth) Crocodiles haue fumetymes byn fownde of. xviii. cubettes long. But of these the byggest were but of. viii. fote. Thus beinge well refreshed, they entered into the next woodde where they fownde many of the same kynde of serpentes hangyng vpon bowghes of trees: of the which, fume had theyr mouthes tyed with strynges, and fume theyr teethe taken owte. And as they searched the places nere vnto the hauen, they sawe abowte. lxx. men in the toppe of a hyghe rocke, whiche fledde as soone as they had espied owre men. Who by signes and tokens of peace, caulinge them ageyne, there was one which came nere them and stooode on the toppe of a rocke, seemyng as though he were yet ferefull. But the Admirall sent one *Didacus* to hym, a man of the same countrey, whom he had at his fyrste vyage taken in the Ilande of *Guanahaini*, beinge nere vnto *Cuba*: wyllinge hym to come nere and not to bee afrayde. When he harde *Didacus* speke to him in his owne tonge he came bowldly to hym: and shortly after referred to his company, persuadinge them to come without all feare. After this message was doone, there descended from the rockes to the shippes, abowt three score and ten of th[e]inhabitanes, proferinge frendshippe and gentelnes to owre men: whiche the Admirall accepted thankfully, and gaue them dyuers rewardes: And that the rather, for that he had intelligence by *Didacus* th[e]interpretoure, that they were the kynges

Alpha and O
The ende of the
Easte and west.

Note.
India not far
from Spayne.

Saynt Nycolas
porte.

The Iland of
Iamaica.

Iamaica.

Quicke wytted
people.

The compasinge
of the earth.

Aurea
Chersonesus, or
Malaccha.
A secreate of
Astronomie.
The ryuer of
Ganges.

Daungerous
streights by
reason of many
Ilandes.

The Admirall gaue
names to seuen
hundreth Ilandes.
Three thousand
Ilandes.

A large hauen

Rosted fyshe and
serpents of. viii.
foote longe.

14

Crocodiles of
Egypte.

Didacus
th[e]interpretour.

The kynges
fysshers.

Serpentes
esteemed for
delicate meat
Ophiophagi.

Blossomes and
fruites bothe at
one tyme.

Trees which
beare gourds

A multitude of
Ilandes.

Hotte water.

A straunge kynde
of fysshynge.
A huntyng
fysshe.

Abundance of
tortoyses. 15

Fysshmen.

The fysshe
Guaicanum.

Humaine people.

A mountaine
fruitfull and well
inhabited.

Dogges of strange
shape and dumme.
Duckes.
Hearons.
Streightes.

fysshers, sent of theyr lorde to take fysshe ageynst a folemne feaste which he prepared for an other kynge. And wheras the Admirales men had eaten the fysshe whiche they lefte at the fyre, they were the gladder therof, bycause they had lefte the serpentes. For there is nothinge amonge theyr delicate dysshes, that they esteeme so muche as these serpentes: In soo muche that it is no more lawfull for the common people to eate of them, then peacocks or phefantes amonge vs. As for the fysshes, they doubted not to take as many more the same nyght. Beynge asked why they fyrst roasted the fysshe which they entended to beare to their kynge. They answered, that they might bee the fressher and vncorrupted. Thus ioyninge handes for a token of further frendeship, euery man reforted to his owne. The Admirall went forwarde as he had appoynted, folowing the faulginge of the sonne from the beginninge of *Cuba* cauled *Alpha* and *O*. The shores or sea bankes euen vnto this hauen, albeit they be ful of trees, yet are they rowgh with mountains. Of these trees, some were ful of bloffoomes and flowres, and other laden with fruites. Beyond the hauen the lande is more fertile and peopulous, whose inhabitantes are more gentyll and more desyrous of owre thinges. For as sone as they had espied owre shippes, they flocked all to the shore, brynginge with them fuche breade as they are accustomed to eate, and gourdes full of water, offeringe theym vnto owre men, and further desyryng them to coome alande. In all these Ilandes is a certeyne kynde of trees as bygge as elmes, whiche beare gourdes in the steade of fruites. These they vse only for drynkyng pottes, and to fetch water in, but not for meate, for the inner substance of them, is frowner then gale, and the barke as harde as any shelle. At the Ides of Maye, the wathe men lokinge owte of the toppe castell of the shyppes toward the Southe, sawe a multitude of Ilandes standinge thicke together, beynge all well replenished with trees, grasse, and herbes, and wel inhabyted. In the shore of the continent, he chaunced into a nauigable ryuer whose water was soo hotte, that no man myght endure to abyde his hande therein any tyme. The day folowinge, espying a farre off a Canoa of fysher men of th[e]inhabitanes, fearinge least they shulde flye at the fyght of owre men, he commaunded certeyne to assaile them pryuely with the shyppes boates. But they fearinge nothinge, taryed the comminge of owre men. Nowe shal you heare a newe kind of fysshinge. Lyke as we with greyhoundes doo hunte hares, in the playne fieldes. So doo they as it were with a huntyng fysshe, take other fysshes. This fysshe was of shape or fourme vnknown vnto vs: but the body therof, not muche vnlyke a greate yele: hauinge on the hynder parte of the heade, a very towgh skynne, lyke vnto a greate bagge or purse. This fysshe is tyed by the fyde of the boate with a corde lette downe soo farre into the water, that the fysshe maye lye close hyd by the keele or bottome of the same, for shew may in no case abyde the fight of the ayer. Thus when they espie any greate fysshe, or tortoyse (wherof there is great abundance bygger then great targettes) they let the corde at lengthe. But when the feeleth her selfe loosed, shew enuadeth the fysshe or tortoyse as swiftly as an arrowe. And where she hath once fastened her howld shew casteth the purse of skynne wherof we spake before: And by drawyng the same togyther, so graspeleth her pray, that no mans strength is sufficient to vnloose the same, excepte by litle and litle drawinge the lyne, shew bee lysted sumwhat about the brymme of the water. For then, as sone as she seeth the brightnes of the ayer, shew lettethe goo her howlde. The praye therefore, beinge nowe drawn nere to the brymme of the water, there leapeth foodenly owte of the boate into the sea soo manye fysshers, as maye suffice to holde faste the praye, vntyll the reste of the company haue taken it into the boate. Which thinge doone, they loofe so muche of the cord, that the hunting fysshe, may ageyne returne to her place within the water: where by an other corde, they let downe to her a piece of the praye, as we vse to rewarde greyhoundes after they haue kylled theyr game. This fysshe, they caule *Guaicanum*, But owre men caule it *Reuersum*. They gaue owre men foure tortoyfes taken by this meanes: And those of such byggenes that they almoste fylled theyr fysshinge boate. For these fysshes are esteemed amonge them for delicate meate. Owre men recompensed them ageyne with other rewardes, and soo lette them departe. Beinge asked of the coompass of that lande, they aunswered that it had no ende westwarde. Most instantly desyryng the Admirall to coome alande: or in his name to sende one with them to salute their *Cazicus*, (that is) their kinge: Affirmyng that he wolde gyue owre men many presentes, yf they wolde goo to hym. But the Admiral, leaste he shulde bee hyndered of the vyage which he had begunne, refused to goo with them. Then they desyred to knowe his name, and towld owre men lykewyse the name of theyr kyng. Thus sayling on yet further euer toward the West, within fewe dayes he came nere vnto a certeyne exceding high mountayne, wel inhabyted by reason of the great fertilitie of the same. Th[e]inhabitanes of this mountayne, brought to owre shippe, breade, gossampine cotton, cunnies, and fundry kyndes of wyldfowle: demaundyng relygiouly of th[e]interpretoures, if this nation descended not from heauen. The kynge of this people, and dyuers other sage men that floode by hym, informed hym that that lande was no Ilande. Shortly after, enteringe into one of the Ilandes beinge on the lefte hande of this lande, they fownde no body therin: for they fledde al at the commyng of owre men. Yet fownde they there foure dogges of maruelous deformed shape, and fuche as coulde not barke. This kynd of dogges, they eate as we do goates. Here is great plentie of geefe, duckes, and hearons. Betwene these Ilandes and the continent, he entered into soo narrow streyghtes, that he coulde scarcely turne backe the shippes: And these also so shalowe, that the keele of the shypps sumtyme rased

on the landes The water of these streyghtes, for the space of fortie myles, was white and thycke lyke vnto mylke, and as thowgh mele had byn sparkeled through owte al that fea. And when they had at the lengthe escaped these strayghtes, and were nowe coome into a mayne and large fea, and had fayled theron for the space of foure score myles, they espyed an other exceedinge hygh mountayne, whyther the Admirall reforted to flore his shyppes with frefshe water and fuel. Heare amonge certeyne wooddes of date trees, and pyneable trees of excedyng height he fownd two natiue sprynges of frefshe water. In the meane tyme whyle the woodde was cuttinge and the barrells fyllyng, one of owre archers went into the wood to hunt: where he espyed a certeyne man with a whyte vesture, foo lyke a fryer of th[e] order of faynt Marye of *Mercedis*, that at the fyrste sight he fupposed it had byn the Admiralles preefte which he browght with hym, beyng a man of the fame order. But two other folowed hym immediatly owte of the same wooddes, shortly after, he fawe a farre of a hole company of men clothed in apparel, beinge abowte. xxx. in nomber. Then turning his backe and crying owte to his felowes, he made haste to the shyppes with all that he myght dryue. These apparelled men, made signes and tokens to hym to tary and not to bee afrayde. But that notwithstandinge, he ceased not to flye. The Admirall beinge aduertised hereof, and not a lyttle reioyfyng that he had fownde a ciuile people, incontinently fent forth armed men, with commaundement, that yf neede should foo requyre, they shulde enter fortie myles into the Ilande, vntyl they myght fynde eyther those apparelled men, or other inhabitantes of that cuntry. When they hadde passed ouer the woodde, they came into a greate playne full of graffe and herbes, in which appeared no token of any pathe way. Here attemptinge to goo through the graffe and herbes, they were foo entangled and bewrapte therein, that they were scarcely able to passe a myle, the graffe beinge there lyttle lower then owre rype corne. Beinge therefore weryed, they were enforced to returne ageyne, fyndyng no pathe way. The day folowing he fent fourth. xxv. armed men an other way: Commaunding them to make diligent searche and inquisition what maner of people inhabited the land. Who departinge, when they had fownde not farre from the fea fyde certeyne steppes of wyld beastes, of the which they suspected sum to bee of Lyons feete being striken with feare, returned backe ageyne. As they came they fownde a woodde in the which were many natiue vines here and there crepinge abowte highe trees, with many other trees bearinge aromaticall frutes and fpyces. Of these vines they browght with them into Spaine many clusters of grapes very ponderous and full of lycoure. But of the other frutes, they browght none bycause they putrified by the waye in the shippe, and were caste into the fea. They faye also that in the laundes or medowes of those wooddes, they fawe flockes of greate cranes twyfe as bygge as owres. As he went forward and turned his fayles towarde certeyne other mountaines, he espyed two cotages on the shore, in the whiche he fawe onely one man: who beinge browght to the shyppe, signified with heade, fyngers, and by al other signes, that he coulde deuise that the lande which lay beyonde those mountaynes, was very full of people. And as the Admirall drewe nere the shore of the same, there mette hym certeyne *Canoas* hauinge in them many people of the cuntry, who made signes and tokens of peace and frendeshyp. But here *Didacus* th[e] interpretour whiche vnderstode the language of th[e] inhabitantes of the beginning of *Cuba*, vnderstode not them one whytte, wherby they confydred that in fundry prouinces of *Cuba*, were fundry languages He had also intelligence, that in the inlande of this Region, was a kynge of greate power, and accustomed to weare apparell. He fayth that all the tracte of this shore, was drowned with water and full of mudde, befette with many trees, after the maner of owre maryfishes, yet whereas in this place they wente alande for frefshe water, they fownde many of the shel fysshes in the whiche pearles are gathered. But that coulde not cause the Admirall to tracte the tyme there, entendinge at this viage, only to proue howe many landes and seas he coulde discouer accordinge to the kynges commaundement. As they yet proceded forwarde, they fawe here and there al the waye alonge by the shore, a great fmoke ryfinge, vntyll they came to an other mountayne foure score myles distant. There was no rocke or hyll that coulde be fecene, but the same was all of a fmoke. But whether these fyres were made by th[e] inhabitantes for their necessary bufynes, or as we are wont to fette beacons on fyre when we suspecte th[e] approche of owre enemies, thereby to gyue warninge to theyr neyghbours to bee in a redines, and gather together if perhappes owre men shulde attempte any thinge ageynst them, or otherwyfe as seemethe most lykely, to caule them togyther as to a wonder to behould owre shippes, they knewe yet no certentie. In this tracte, the shores bended sumetyme towarde the Southe, and sumetyme towarde the Weste and westefouthwest: And the sea was euery where entangled with Ilandes: by reason whereof, the keeles of the shippes often tymes rased the landes for shalownes of the water: So that the shyppes beinge very fore brufed and appayred, the fayles, cables, and other tackelings, in maner rotten, and the vytayles, (especially the byskette breade) corrupted by takyng water at the riftes euyll clofed, the Admirall was enforced to turne backe ageyne. This laste poynte where he touched of *Cuba* (not yet beinge knowen to be an Ilande) he cauled *Euangelista*. Thus turning his fayles toward other Ilandes lyinge not farre from the fupposed continente, he chaunced into a mayne fea where was suche a multitude of greate tortoyfes, that sumtyme they flayed the shyppes. Not longe after, he entered into a gulfe of whyte water, lyke vnto that wherof we spake before. At the length fearing the shelves of the Ilands, he returned to the shore of *Cuba* by

Whyte and thicke water.

Wooddes of date trees.

Men apparelled like white fryers.

16

Grasse almost as hyghe as corne.

Steppes of wyld beastes feete.

Natiue vines

Trees bearinge spyces and sweete frutes.
Greate Cranes.

Dyuers languages in the Ilande of Cuba.

Pearles in shellysshes.

The sea entangled with Ilandes

Euangelista.

A multitude of great tortoyfes

A goufe of whyte water
Humaine people.
Stock doues of more pleasaunt tast then partriches.

17

The humanitie of a reuerende owlde gouernour.

An oration of the naked gouernour.

Theyr opinion of the soul of man.

Desyre of golde founde that which religion coulde not fynde.
Virtus post nummos. &c.

The Iland as common as the sunne and water.

The golden worlde.

Prouision without care.

Simple diete

18

The Iland of Iamaica.

Hispaniola.

The Canibales.

the fame way which he came. Here a multitude of th[e]inhabitanes, as well women as men, reforted to hym with cheerefull countenance and without feare: bringynge with them popingayes, breade, water, and cunnyes: But especially stocke doues much bygger then owres: which he affirmeth, in fauour and taste, to bee muche more pleasaunt then owre partriches. Wherefore where as in eatinge of them he perceaued a certeyne fauoure of spyce to proceade from them, he commaunded the crope to bee opened of fuche as were newly kylled, and fownde the fame full of sweete spyces, whiche he argued to bee the cause of theyr strange taste. For it standeth with good reason, that the fleshe of beastes, shulde drawe the nature and qualitie of theyr accustomed nuryshmente. As the Admirall harde masse on the shore, there came towarde hym a certeyne gouernour, a man of four score yeares of age, and of great grauitie, althowgh he were naked fauinge his pryue partes. He had a great trayne of menne waytinge on hym. All the whyle the preeste was at masse, he shewed hym felse verye humble and gaue reuerente attendaunce with graue and demure countenance. When the masse was ended, he presented to the Admirall, a baskette of the frutes of his countrey, delyueringe the fame with his owne handes. When the Admirall had gentelly interteyned hym, desyringe leaue to speake, he made an oration in the presence of *Didacus* th[e]interpretoure, in this effecte. I haue byn aduertised (moſte mighty prince) that you haue of late with greate power subdued many landes and Regions hytherto vnknownen to you: and haue brought no little feare vpon all the people and inhabitantes of the fame. The which your good fortune, you shal beare with lesse infolencie, if you remember that the foules of men haue two iourneyes after they are departed from this bodye. The one fowle and darke, prepared for fuche as are iniurious and cruell to mankynde: The other pleasaunt and delectable, ordeyned for them which in theyr lyfe tyme, loued peace and quietnes. If therefore you acknowledge your selfe to bee mortall, and confyder that euery man shall receaue condigne rewarde or punyishment for such thynges as he hath done in this life, you wyl wrongfully hurte no man. When he had sayde these wordes and other lyke, which were declared to the Admirall by th[e]interpretoure, he marueylinge at the iudgemente of the naked owlde man, answered, that he was gladde to heare his opinion as touchinge the fundry iourneys and rewardes of fowles departed from theyr bodyes: Supposinge that nother he, or any other of th[e]inhabitanes of those Regions, had had any knowlege thereof. Declaringe further that the chiefe cause of his comminge thither was to instructe them in such godly knowlege and trewe religion: And that he was fente into those countreys by the Christian kynge of Spayne (his lorde and maister) for the same purpose: And specially to subdue and punish the Canibales and such other mischeuous people: And to defende innocentes ageynst the violence of such euyl doers wyllynge hym and all other such as embrased vertue, in no case to bee afrayde: But rather to open his mynde vnto him, if eyther he, or any other fuche quiete men as he was, hadde fusteyned any wronge of theyr neyghbours: and that he wold see the same reuenged. These comfortable wordes of the Admirall soo pleased the owlde man, that notwithstanding his extreeme age, he woulde gladly haue gone with the Admirall as he had doone in deede, if his wyfe and chyldren had not hyndered hym of his purpose. But he marueyled not a lyttle, that the Admirall was vnder the dominion of an other: And muche more, when th[e]interpretour towlde hym of the glorie, magnificence, pompes, greate powre, and furnymentes of warre of owre kynges, and of the multitudes of cities and townes which were vnder theyr dominions. Intendynge therefore to haue gonne with the Admirall, his wyfe and children fell prostrate at his feete, with teares desyringe hym not to forsake them and leaue them desolate. At whose pytifull requestes, the worthy owlde man beinge moued, remayned at home to the comfort of his people and famylie, satisfiynge rather them then hym selfe. For not yet ceasinge to wonder, and of heauy countenance bycause he myght not departe, he demaunded oftentymes if that lande were not heauen, which brought forth fuche a kynde of men. For it is certeyne, that amonge them, the lande is as common as the sonne and water: And that Myne and Thyne (the feedes of all myfcheefe) haue no place with them. They are contente with soo lyttle, that in soo large a countrey, they haue rather superfluitie then scarfenes. Soo that (as wee haue sayde before) they seeme to lyue in the goulden worlde, without toyle, lyuinge in open gardens, not intrenched with dykes, dyuyded with hedges, or defended with waules. They deale trewely one with another, without lawes, without bookes, and without Iudges. They take hym for an euyl and myscheuous man, which taketh pleasure in doinge hurte to other. And albeit that they delyte not in superfluities, yet make they prouision for th[e]increase of fuche rootes, wherof they make theyr breade, as *Maizium*, *Iucca*, and *Ages*, contented with fuche simple dyet, wherby health is preferred, and dyseases auoyded. The Admirall therefore departinge from thense, and myndinge to returne ageyne shortly after, chaunced to coome ageyne to the Ilande of *Iamaica* beinge on the fowthe syde therof: and coasted all alonge by the shore of the fame, from the Weste to the Easte. From whose last corner on the East syde, when he sawe towarde the North on his lefte hand, certeyn high mountains he knewe at the length that it was the fowthe syde of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, which he had not yet passed by. Wherefore at the Calendes of September, enteringe into the hauen of the fame Ilande, cauled faynt Nycolas hauen, he repayed his shippes to th[e]intent that he myght ageyne waſt and spoyle the Ilandes of the Canibales, and burne all theyr Canoas, that those raueninge wolues myght no longer persecute and deuoure the innocent sheepe. But he was at this tyme hyndered of his

purpose by reafon of a dyfeafe which he had gotten with to muche watchinge. Thus beinge feeble and weake, he was ledde of the maryners to the cite of *Ifabella*, where, with his two brytherne which were there, and other his familers, he recouered his health in fhorthe space. Yet coulde he not at this tyme affayle the Canibales, by reafon of fedicion that was ryfen of late amonge the Spanyardes which he had lefte in *Hifpaniola*, wherof we wyll fpeake more heereafter. Thus fare ye wel.

Sickenes of to much watchinge.

THE FOURTH BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE
to Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonie.



Olonus the Admirall of the Ocean, returning (as he fupposed) from the continent or firme lande of East India, had aduertifement that his brother *Boilus* and one *Peter Margarita*, an owld familer of the kinges, and a noble man, with diuers other of thofe to whom he had left the gouernement of the Iland, were of corrupted mynde ageynft him, departed into Spayne. Wherefore as wel to purge him of fuch crimes as they fhuld ley to his charge, as alfo to make a fupply of other men in the place of them which were returned, and efpecially to prouyde for vitales, as wheat, wyne, oyle, and fuch other which the Spanyardes are accuftomed to eate, bycaufe they coulde not yet well agree with fuch meates as they fownde in the Ilandes, determined fhortly to take his vyage into Spayne. But what he dyd before his departure, I wyll brefely rehearfe.

Easte India.
The Spanyardes rebelle in the Admirals abfence.

The kynges of the Ilandes which had hitherto lyued quietly and content with theyr lyttle whiche they thought abundante, wheras they nowe perceaued that owre men began to faften foote within theyr Regions and to beare rule amonge them, tooke the matter fo greuoufly, that they thought nothyngel elles but by what meanes they myght vtterly destroy them, and for euer abolyfhe the memory of theyr name. For that kynde of men (the Spanyardes I meane which folowed the Admirall in that nauigation,) was for the moft parte vnruely, regardyng nothinge but Idlenes, playe, and libertie: And wolde by no meanes abfteyne from iniuries: Raufhyng the women of the Ilandes before the faces of their hufbandes, fathers, and brethrene: By which theyr abhomyable myfdeamaynour, they difquieted the myndes of all th[e] inhabitants: In fo much that where fo euer they fownde any of owre men vnprepared, they flewe them with fuche fyercesnes and gladnes, as though they had offered facryfyce to God. Intendyng therefore to pacifie their troubled myndes, and to punyfh them that flew his men before he departed from thenfe, he fent for the kyng of that vale, which in the booke before, we defcrybed to bee at the foote of the mountaynes of the Region of *Cibaua*. This kynges name was *Guarionexius*: who, the more fleyghtly to concyle vnto hym the frendefhypp of the Admirall, gaue hys fyfter to wyfe to *Didacus*, a man from his chyldes age browght vp with the Admiral, whom he vfed for his interpretoure in the prouinces of *Cuba*. After this, he fent for *Caunaboa*, cauled the lorde of the howfe of goulde: that is, of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*. For this *Caunaboa*, he fente one capitayne *Hoieda*, whom the ditionaries of *Caunaboa* had enforced to keepe his howlde byfieginge for the fpace of. xxx. dayes, the fortrefse of faynte Thomas, in the which *Hoieda* with his fyttie fouldiers, floode at theyr defence, vntyll the comminge of the Admirall. Whyle *Hoieda* remayned with *Caunaboa*, many ambaffadours of the kynges of dyuers Regions were fent to *Caunaboa*, perfuadinge hym in no condicon to permitte the Christians to inhabite the Ilande, except he had rather ferue then rule. On the other parte, *Hoieda* aduertifed *Caunaboa* to goo to the Admirall, and to make a league of frendefhip with hym. But the ambaffadours on the contrary part, threatened hym, that yf he wolde foo doo, the other kynges wolde inuade his Region. But *Hoieda* aunfwered theym ageyne, that wheras they confpired to maynteyne their libertie, they fhuld by that meanes be browght to feruitude and deftruction if they entended to refift or keepe warre ageynft the Christians. Thus *Caunaboa* on the one fyde and the other, beinge troubeled as it were a rocke in the fea, beaten with contrary fluddes, and much more vexed with the ftormes of his gyltie confcience for that he had priuillie flaine. xx. of owre men vnder pretence of peace feared to coome to the Admirall. But at the length, hauing excogitated this deceyte, to haue flayne the Admirall and his coompany vnder the colour of frendefhippe if oportunitie wold foo haue ferude, he repayred to the Admiral with his hole familie and many other wayting on hym, armed after theyr maner. Beinge demaunded why he browght foo greate a rout of men with hym, he aunfwered that it was not decente for foo great a prince as he was, to goo forth of his howfe without fuche a bande of men. But the thinge chaunced much otherwyfe then he looked for. For he fell into the fnares which he had prepared for other. For wheras by the way he began to repente hym that he came forth of his howfe, *Hoieda* with many fayre wordes and promyfes, browght hym to the Admirall: At whose commaundement, he was immediatly taken and put in prifon: So that the fowles of owre men were not longe

The kynges of the Ilande rebell.

The Spaniardes misbehauour.

Guarionexius the kyng of the great vale
Didacus the interpretour
Caunaboa, the kyng of the house of golde.

Capitayne Hoieda

19

Kyng Caunaboa, had slain the Spanyardes.

Caunaboa conspireth the Admiralles death.

Fayre words make fooles fayne.

Famine in the Ilande of hispaniola.

The hunger of golde causeth great famine.

The towre of conception.

A masse of gold weighinge. xx. ounces.

Tofus.

Electrum is a metall naturally mixt of one portion of golde and an other of siluer beinge of propertie to bewray poyson, and was **20** therfore in owlde tyme in greater estimation then golde.

The myne of Electrum.

An other kynde of amber is taken out of greate wbole fishes Orpement or oker. Wooddes of brasile trees.

Causes of hinderance. Licenciusnes of to much libertie

And this only gathered and not digged out of the bodi of the mine

The people make supplication to stand to their tribute

from their bodies vnreuedged. Thus *Caunaboa* with all his familie beinge taken, the Admirall was determined to runne ouer the Ilande. But he was certified that there was such famine amonge th[e]inhabitanes, that there was alredeye fyftie thoufande menne deade therof: And that they dyed yet dayly as it were rotton sheepe: The cause wherof was wel knowne to bee their owne obstinacie and frowardnes. For where as they sawe that owre men entended to choofe them a dwelling place in the Ilande, supposinge that they myght haue driuen them from thence if the vytailes of the Ilande shoulde fayle, they deterned with them felues, not only to leaue fowing and plantyng, but also to destroy and plucke vp by the rootes euery man in his owne region, that whiche they had alredeye fowen of both kyndes of breade wherof we made mencion in the fyrst booke. But especially amonge the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, otherwyfe cauled *Cipanga*, for as muche as they hadde knoweledge that the golde which abundeth in that Region, was the cheefe cause that deteyned owre men in the Ilande. In the meane tyme, he sent fourth a Capitayne with a bande of men to searche the fowthe fyde of the Ilande. Who at his returne, reported that throwghe out all the Regions that he trauayled, there was fuche scarfenes of breade, that for the space of. xvi. dayes he eate nowght elles but the rootes of herbes, and of younge date trees, or the fruites of other wylde trees, But *Guarionexius*, the kyng of the vale lyinge beneth the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, whose kyngedooome was not foo wasted as the other, gaue owre menne certeyne vytailes.

Within a fewe dayes after, bothe that the iourneys myght bee the shorter, and also that owre men myght haue more safe places of refuge, if the inhabitantes shuld hereafter rebell in lyke maner, he buylded an other fort[r]esse (whiche he cauled the towre of Conception) betwene the cite of *Ifabella* and faint Thomas fortresse, in the marches of the kyngdome of this *Guarionexius* within the precincte of *Cibaua* vpon the fyde of a hyll, hauynge a fayre ryuer of holsome water runnyng hard by the same. Thus when the inhabitantes sawe newe buyldynges to bee dayly erected, and owre shippes lying in the hauen rotten and halfe broken, they beganne to despayre of any hope of libertie, and wandered vp and downe with heuie chere. From the towre of Conception, searchyng diligently the inner partes of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, there was a certeyne kyng whiche gaue them a masse of rude golde, as bygge as a mans fyft, weighing. xx. vnces. This golde was not fownde in the banke of that ryuer, but in a heape of drye earthe: and was lyke vnto the stone cauled *Tofus*, whiche is foone refoled into fande. This masse of golde, I my selfe sawe in Castile, in the famous cite of *Methynna Campi*, where the courte lay all that wynter. I sawe also a great piece of pure *Electrum*: of the whiche belles and apothecaries morters, and many fuche other vessels and instrumentes maye bee made, as were in owlde tyme of copper of the cite of *Corinthus*. This piece of *Electrum*, was of such weight, that I was not onely with both my handes vnable to lifte it from the grownde, but also not of strengthe to remoue it eyther one waye or an other. They affirmed that it wayde more then three hundredth pounde weight, after. viii. vnces to the pownde. It was fownde in the howfe of a certen prynce, and lefte hym by his predecessours. And albeit that in the dayes of th[e]inhabitanes yet liuyng, *Electrum* was no where digged, yet knewe they where the myne therof was: but owre men with muche adoo, coulde hardely cause them to shewe them the place, they bore them fuche priuie hatred. Yet at the length, they browght them to the myne, beyng nowe ruinate and stopped with stones and rubbifhe. It is muche easier to dygge then is the iren myne: and myght bee restored agein, if myners and other woorkemen skylfull therin, were appoynted therto. Not farre from the towre of Conception, in the same mountaynes, is fownd great plentie of Amber: and owte of certen rockes of the same distilleth a substance of the yelowe coloure whiche the paynters vse. Not farre from these mountaynes are many greate wooddes, in the which are none other trees then brasile, whiche the Italians caule *Verzino*. But here perhappes (right noble prynce) yowe wolde aske what shoulde be the cause, that where as the Spanyardes haue brought owte of these Ilandes certen shyppes laden with brasile, fumwhat of goffampine cotton, a quantitie of amber, a lyttel golde, and fumfpices, why they haue not broughte fuche plentie of golde and fuche other ryche marchaundies as the fruitfulness of these regions seeme to promisse. To this I answere, that when *Colonus* the admirall was lykewife demanded the cause hereof, he made answere that the Spanyardes whiche he tooke with him into these regions, were gyuen rather to slepe, pley, and ydlenesse, then to labour: And were more studious of fedition and newes, then defyrous of peace and quietnesse: Also that beyng gyuen to lycencioufnes, they rebelled and forfooke hym, fyndyng matter of false accusafions agaynst hym, bycause he went aboute to repreffe theyr owtragioufenes. By reason wherof he was not yet able to breake the power of the inhabytantes, and freely to possesse the full dominion of the Ilande. And these hynderaunces to be the cause that hitherto the gaynes haue fearfully counteruayled the charges. Albeit, euen this yere whyle I wryte these thynges at yowre requeste, they gathered in twoo moonethes the fumme of a thoufande and twoo hundredth poundes weight of golde. But bycause we intende to speake more largely of these thynges in theyr place, we wyl nowe retourne from whene we haue digressed. When the inhabitantes perceaued that they could by no meanes shake the yoke from their neckes, they made humble supplication to the Admirall that they myght stande to theyr tribute, and apply them felues to reincrease the fruites of theyr countrey, beinge nowe almoeste wasted. He graunted them theyr requeste: and appoynted such order that euery Region shulde paye their tribute, with the commodities of theyr countreys, accordinge to

theyr portion, and at fuche tyme as they were agreed vpon. But the violent famine dyd frustrate all these appoyntmentes. For all the traunayles of theyr bodyes, were scarfely able to suffice to fynde them meate in the wooddes, whcreby to fusteyne theyr lyues, beinge of long tyme contented with rootes and the fruites of wylde trees. Yet manye of the kynges with theyr people, euen in this extreme necessity, brought parte of theyr tribute: Moste humbly desyryng the Admirall to haue compassion of theyr calamities, and to beare with them yet a while, vntyll the Iland were restored to the owlde flate. Promynginge farther, that that which was nowe wantinge, shulde then bee dowble recompensed. But fewe of the inhabitantes of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, kepte theyr promyse, bycause they were forer oppressed with famine then any of the other. They faye, that the inhabitantes of these mountaynes, differ no lesse in maners and language from them which dwel in the playnes, then amonge vs, the rusticalles of the countrey from gentylmen of the courte: wheras notwithstandinge, they lyue bothe as it were vnder one portion of heuen, and in many thinges, much after one fasshion, as in nakednes, and rude simplicitie. But nowe lette vs returne to *Caunaboa*, the kynge of the howfe of golde, beinge in captiuitie. When he perceaued him selfe to be caste in pryson, fretinge and gratinge his teethe as it had bin a lyon of *Libia*, and dayely and nightly deuisinge with hym selfe howe he myght bee delyuered, beganne to persuaide the Admirall, that for as muche as he had nowe taken vnto his dominion the Region of *Cipanga* or *Cibaua* (wherof he was king) it shulde bee expedient to fende thyther a garryson of Christian men, to defende the same from the incurfions of his owld enemyes and borderers. For he sayde, that it was signyfyed vnto hym, that the countreye was wasted and spoyled with fuche incurfions. By this crafty deuise, he thought to haue brought to passe, that his brother whiche was in that regyon, and the other his kynsefolkes and frendes with their adherentes, shoulde haue taken, eyther by fleyghte or force, as many of owre men, as myght haue redeemed hym. But the Admyrall vnderstandyng his crafty meanynge, sente *Hoieda* with fuche a company of men; as might vanquishe the Cibauians, if they shulde moue warre ageynste them. Owre men had scarfely entered into the Region, but the brother of *Caunaboa* came agenste them with an armie of fyue thousande naked menne, armed after theyr maner with clubbes, arrowes typte with bones, and speares made harde at the endes with fyre. He stole vpon owre men beyng in one of theyr howfes: and encamped rownde about the same on euery fyde. This Cibauian, as a man not ignorant in the disciptyne of warre, abowte the distance of a furlonge from the house, diuided his armye into fyue batayles, appoyntinge to euery of them a circuite by equal diuision: And placed the froot of his owne batayle, directlye ageynst owre men. When he had thus fet his batayles in good array, he gaue certeyne signes that the hole army shulde marche forwarde in order with equal paces, and with a larome fresshly assaile theyr enemyes, in such fort that none might escape. But owre men iudginge it better to encounter with one of the batayles, then to abyde the brunt of the hole army, gaue onfet on the mayne batayle aranged in the playne, bycause that place was most commodious for the horfemen. When the horfemen therfore hadde gyuen the charge, they ouerthrewe them with the brestes of theyr horfes, and slewe as many as abode th[e]nde of the fyght. The residue beinge stryken with feare, disparceled, and fledde to the mountaynes and rockes: from whense they made a pytifull houlyng to owre men, desyryng them to spare them: protestinge that they wolde neuer more rebelle, but doo what so euer they wolde commaunde them, if they wolde suffer them to lyue in theyr owne countrey. Thus the brother of *Caunaboa* beinge taken, the Admirall licenced the people to reforme euery man to his owne. These thinges thus fortunately atchiued this Region was pacified. Amonge those mountaynes, the vale which *Caunaboa* inhabited, is cauled *Magona*, and is excedyng fruitfull: hauinge in it many goodly springes: and ryuers, in the lande wherof, is fownde great plentie of golde. The same yeare in the mooneth of Iune, they faye there rose fuche a boyl[r]ous tempeste of wynde from the fowtheaste, as hath not lightly ben harde of: The violence hereof was such that it plucked vppe by the roots what so euer greate trees were within the reache of the force therof. When this whirle wynde came to the hauen of the citie, it beate downe to the bottome of the sea, three shippes which lay at anker, and broke the cables in fundre: and that (which is the greater maruail) without any florme or rowghnes of the sea, onely turnyng them three or foure tymes abowte. The inhabitantes also affirme, that the same yeare, the sea extended it selfe further in to the lande, and rose higher then euer it dyd before by the memory of man, by the space of a cubet. The people therfore, muttered amonge them selues, that owre nation hadde trowbled the elementes, and caused such portentous signes. These tempestes of the ayer (which the Grecians caule *Tiphones*, that is, whirle wyndes) they caule, *Furacanes*: which they say, doo often tymes chaunce in this Ilande: But that neyther they nor theyr great grandfathers euer sawe fuche violent and furious *Furacanes*, that plucked vppe greate trees by the rootes: Neyther yet fuche furges and vehement motions on the sea, that soo wasted the lande. As in dede it may appeare, for as muche as, where so euer the sea bankes are nere to any plaine there are in maner euery where, flourishing medowes reachinge euen vnto the shore. But nowe let vs returne to *Caunaboa*. As kynge *Caunaboa* therefore and his brother shoulde haue binne brought into Spayne, they dyed by the waye for veye penfyuenes and anguyse of mynde. The Admiral, whose shippes were drowned in the forsayde tempeste, perceauinge him selfe to bee nowe enclosed, commaunded forthwith two other shippes (which the Spaniardes

Famine.

The nature of the Region disposeth the maner of the people.

Kynge Caunaboa in captiuitie.

The persuasion of Caunaboa.

21

Caunaboa his brother rebelleth.

A conflict betwene the Cibauians and the Spanyardes.

The Cibauians hate the ouerthrowe.

A great tempest in the moneth of Iune.

Three shippes drowned lyinge at anker

Whirle wyndes Furacanes.

The death of kynge Caunaboa and his brother.

Bartholomeus
Colonus the
leuetaunant
searcheth the
golde mines.

22

The golde mynes
of Salomon.

Golde in the
superficiall partes
of the earth.

The Admirall
taketh his viage
to spaine

caule *Carauelas*) to bee made. For he had with hym, all maner of artificers perteyning therunto. Whyle these thinges were dooinge, he sent fourth *Bartholomeus Colonus* his brother, beinge leuetaunant of the Ilande, with an army of men to searche the golde mynes beinge dystant three score leaques from the citie of *Isabella*, which were fownde by the conducte of certeyne people of the Ilande, beefore the mynes of *Cipanga* or *Cibaua* were knowen. In these mynes, they fownde certeyne deepe pittes which had byn digged in owlde tyme, owte of these pyttes, the Admirall (who affirmeth this Ilande of *Hispaniola* to bee Ophir, as we haue sayde before) supposeth that Salomon the kyng of *Hierusalem* had his greate ryches of golde wherof we reede in the owlde testamente: And that his shippes sayled to this Ophir by the goulfe of *Persia* cauled *Sinus Persicus*. But whether it bee soo or not, it lyeth not in me to iudge, but in my opinion it is farre of. As the myners dygged the superficiall or vppermost parte of the earthe of the mynes, duryng for the space of. vi. miles, and in dyuers places fyfted the same on the drye lande, they fownde such plentie of golde, that euery hyred labourer could easely fynde euery day, the weyght of three drammes. These mynes beinge thus searched and fownde, the Lieuetenaunte certified the Admirall hereof by his letters. The which when he had receaued the. v. daye of the Ides of Marche. Anno. 1495. he entered into his newe shippes, and tooke his viage directly to Spayne to aduertise the kyng of all his affayres, leauinge the hole regiment of the Iland with his brother the Lieuetenaunte,

II THE FYFTE BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE, to Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonie.

The golden towre.

Lacke of vytayles.



After the Admyrall departing into Spain his Brother the Lieuetenaunte, buylded a fort[re]sse in the golde mynes, as he had commaunded hym. This he cauled the golden towre, bycause the labourers fownde golde in the earth and stone wherof they made the waules of the fortresse. He consumed three monethes in makynge the instrumentes wherwith the golde shulde bee gathered, washed, tried, and molten. Yet was he at this tyme by reason of wante of vitayles, enforced to leaue all thynges imperfecte, and to goo seeke for meate.

Thus as he with a bande of armed men, had entered three score myles further within the lande, the people of the countrey here and there refortynge to hym, gaue hym a certen portion of theyr breade in exchange for other of owre thynges. But he coulde not long tary here, bicause they lacked meate in the fortresse, whyther he hasted with such as he had now gotten. Leauyng therefore in the fortresse a garryson of tenne men, with that portion of the Ilande breade whiche yet remayned, leauyng also with them a hownde to take thofe kyndes of lyttle beastes which they caule *Vffas*, not muche vnlyke owre conyes, he returned to the fortresse of Conception. This also, was the moonthe wherin the kyng *Guarionexius*, and also *Manicautexius*, bortherer vnto hym, shulde haue brought in theyr tributes. Remaynyng there the hole moonthe of Iune, he exacted the hole tribute of these twoo kynges, and vytayles necessary for hym and fuche as he brought with hym, whiche were abowt foure hundreth in number. Shortely after, abowte the calendes of Iulye, there came three *Carauels* from Spayne, bringynge with them fundry kyndes of vitayles, as wheate, oyle, wyne, bacon, and marckelmas beafe: whiche were dyuyded to euery man accordynge as neede required. Sum also was lost in the cariage for lacke of good lookyng too. At the arryuall of these shyppes, the lieuetenaunte receaued commaundment from the kyng and the Admyrall his brother, that he with his men shulde remoue theyr habitation to the fowthe fyde of the Ilande, bycause it was nerer to the golde mynes: Also that he shoulde make dilygent searche for those kynges whiche had slayne the Christian men, and to sende them with theyr confederates, bownd into Spayne. At the nexte vyage therefore, he sent three hundreth captiues with three Kinges: And when he had diligently searched the coastes of the fouth fyde, he transported his habitation, and buylded a fortresse there, vpon the toppe of a hyll, neere vnto a fure hauen.

Huntinge
houndes.

Kyng
Manicautexius.

Vytayles brought
from Spayne.

Saynt Dominikes
towre.

Groues of
date trees.

Isabella.

23

This fortresse, he cauled faynt Dominikes towre. Into this hauen, runneth a ryuer of holsome water, replenyshed with fundrye kyndes of good fysshes. They affyrme this ryuer to haue many benefytes of nature. For, where fo euer it runneth all thynges are excedyng pleasaunte and fruitfull: hauyng on euery fyde, groues of date trees, and dyuers other of the Ilande frutes so plentyfully, that as they sayled alonge by the shore, often tymes the branches therof laden with flowres and frutes, hunge soo ouer theyr heades, that they myghte plucke them with theyr handes. Also that the frutefulness of this grownde, is eyther equall with the foyle of *Isabella*, or better. In *Isabella*, he lefte only certeyne sicke men and shippe wrightes, whom he had appointed to make certeyne *carauels*. The residue of his men, he conueighed to the fowth, to saint Dominikes towre. After he had buylded this fortresse, leauinge therein a garryson of. xx. men, he with the remanent of his souldiers, prepared

them felues to searche the inner partes of the Weste fyde of the Ilande, hytherto knowen onely by name. Therefore abowte. xxx. leaques, (that is) foure score and tenne myles from the fortresse, he chaunced on the ryuer *Naiba*, whiche we sayde to descende from the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, ryght towarde the fowth, by the myddeft of the Iland. When he had ouerpasse this ryuer with a coompanye of armed men diuided into. xxv. decurions, that is, tenne in a company with theyr capitaynes, he sent two decurions to the regions of thov kinges in whose landes were the great woods of brafile trees. Inclyninge towarde the lefte hande, they fownde the woodes, entered into them, and felled the hygh and precious trees, which were to that day, vntouched. Eche of the decurions fylled certeyne of the Ilande howses with the trunkes of brafile, there to be referued vntyll the shyppes came which shulde cary them away. But the Lieuetenaunt directinge his iourney towarde the ryght hande, not farre from the bankes of the ryuer of *Naiba*, fownde a certeyne kynge whose name was *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, encamped ageynst th[e] inhabitants of the prouince of *Naiba*, to subdue them vnder his dominion, as he had doone manye other kynges of the Ilande, bortherers vnto hym: The palaice of this great kynge, is cauled *Xaragua*: and is situate towarde the Weste ende of the Ilande, distante from the ryuer of *Naiba*. xxx. leaques. All the prynces which dwell betwene the Weste ende and his palaice, are ditionaries vnto hym. All that Region from *Naiba*, to the furthest marches of the weste, is vtterly withoute golde, although it bee full of mountaynes. When the kynge had espied owre men, layinge a parte his weapons, and gyuinge signes of peace, he spake gently to them, (incerteine whether it were of humanitie or feare) and demaunded of them what they woold haue. The Lieuetenaunte aunswered: That he shulde paye tribute to the Admirall his brother, in the name of the Christian kynge of Spayne. To whom he sayde: Howe can yowe requyre that of me, whereas neuer a Region vnder my dominion bringeth fourth golde. For he had harde, that there was a strange nation entered into the Ilande, whiche made greate searche for golde. But he supposed that they defyred none other thyng. The leauetenaunt answered ageyne: God forbydde that we shulde enioyne any man to paye fuch tribute as he myght not easely forbear, or fuch as were not engendered or growinge in the Region: But we vnderstand that your Regions brynge fourth great plentie of Goffampine cotton, and hemepe, with fuche other, whereof we desyre yowe to gyue vs parte. When he harde these woordes, he promysed with cherefull countenance, to gyue hym as muche of these thynges as he wolde requyre. Thus dismissinge his army, and sendinge messengers beefore, he hym selfe accompanied the Leauetenaunte and brought hym to his palaice, beinge dystante (as we haue sayde). xxx. leaques. In al this tracte, they passed through the Iurisdiction of other princes beinge vnder his dominion: Of the whiche, fume gaue them hemepe, of no lesse goodnes to make tackelinges for shippes then owre woodde. Other fume, brought breade, and fum goffampyne cotton: And soo euery of them payde tribute with fuche commodities as theyr countreys brought fourth. At the lengthe they came to the kinges mansion place of *Xaragua*. Before they entered into the palaice, a greate multitude of the kynges seruantes and subiectes reforted to the courte, honorably (after their maner) to receaue their kyng *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, with the strangers which he brought with hym to se the magnificence of his courte. But nowe shall yowe heare howe they were interteyned. Amonge other tryumphes and fyghtes, two are especially to bee noted. Fyrste there mette them a company of. xxx. women, beinge al the kynges wyues and concubines, bearinge in theyr handes branches of date trees, singinge and daunfinge: They were all naked, sauynge that theyr pryue partes were couered with breeches of goffampine cotton. But the virgins, hauynge theyr heare hangynge downe abowte their sholders, tyed abowte the foreheade with a fyllet, were vtterly naked. They affirme that theyr faces, brestes, pappes, handes, and other partes of theyr bodyes, were excedynge smoothe, and well proportioned: but fumwhat inclyning to a louely brown. They supposed that they had seene those most beautyfull *Dryades*, or the natyue nymphes or fayres of the fontaynes wherof the antiquites speake so muche. The branches of date trees which they bore in theyr right handes when they daunced, they delyuered to the Leauetenaunt with lowe curtesy and smyllynge countenance. Thus enteringe into the kynges howse, they fownde a delycate supper prepared for them after theyr maner. When they were well refreshed with meate, the nyght drawinge on, they were brought by the kynges officers, euery man to his lodginge, accordyng to his degree, in certeyne of theyr howses abowte the palaice, where they rested them in hangynge beddes after the maner of the countrey, wherof we haue spoken more largely in an other place.

¶ The daye folowyng they brought owre men to their common haule, into the whiche they coome together as often as they make any notable games or tryumphes, as we haue said beefore. Here, after many daunfynge, fyinginge, maskinge, runnynges, wrestlynges, and other tryinge of mastryes, foodenly there appered in a large plaine nere vnto the haule. ii. greate armies of men of warre, whiche the kynge for his pastyme had caused to bee prepared, as the Spaniardes vse the playe with reedes whiche they caule *Iuga de Canias*. As the armies drewe neere together, they assayed the one the other as fierfely, as if mortal enemies with theyr baners spleade, shulde fight for theyr goodes, theyr landes, theyr lyues, their libertie, theyr countrey, theyr wyues and theyr chyldren. Soo that within the momente of an howre, foure men were slayne, and many wounded. The battayle also shoulde haue contynued longer, if the kynge had not at the request of owre men, caused them to cease. The thyrde day, the

The ryuer of Naiba

Wooddes of brasile trees.

Kinge Beuchius Anacauchoa. The palaice of xaragua.

Mountaynes without gold

Tribute.

The wolfe entreateth the sheepe.

Hempe and gossampine cotton

Howe the Lieuetenant was receaued at the kynges palaice.

The kynges wyues.

Well fauered women.

Dryades.

24

A delicate supper.

Hanginge beddes.

A common haule.

A pretie pastyme.

Foure men slaine in sport

Lieuetenant confelynge the kynge to fowe more plentie of goffampine vppon the bankes nere vnto the waters fyde, that they myghte the better paye theyr tribute priuately accordyng to the multitude of theyr howfes, he repayred to *Ifabella* to vyfite the sicke men whiche he had lefte there, and also to see howe his woorkes wente forwarde. In the tyme of his abfence. xxx. of his men were confumed with diuerfe difeafes. Wherefore beinge fore trowbled in his mynde, and in maner at his wyttes ende what he were best to doo, for as muche as he wanted al thynges necessarie as well to restore them to healthe whiche were yet acrafed, as also vitayles to mayntaine the hole multitude, where as there was yet no shippe coome from Spaine, as at the length he determyned to fende abrode the sicke men here and there to iundrye Regions of the Ilande, and to the castelles which they had erected in the fame. For directly from the cite of *Ifabella* to faynt Dominikes towre, that is, from the north to the fouth, through the Iland, they had buylded thus many castelles. Fyrste. xxxvi. myles distante from *Ifabella*, they buylded the castell of *Sperantia*, from *Sperantia*. xxv. myles, was the castell of faynte Catharine, from faynte Catharines. xx. myles, was faynt Iames towre. Other. xx. miles from faynte Iames towre, was a stronger fortresse then any of the other, which they cauled the towre of Conception: which he made the stronger bicaufe it was situate at the rootes of the golden mountaynes of *Cibaua*, in the greate and large playne foo fruitfull and well inhabited as we haue before defcribed. He buylded also an other in the mydde waye betwene the towre of Conception and faynt Dominikes towre. The which also was stronger then the towre of Conception, bycaufe it was within the lymittes of a great kynge, hauinge vnder his dominion fwe thowfande men: whose chiefe Citie and heade of the Realme, beyng cauled *Bonauum*, he wyllid that the castell shulde also bee cauled after the fame name. Therefore leauyng the sicke men in these castels and other of the Ilande howfes nere vnto the fame, he hym selfe repayred to faynte Dominikes, exactinge tributes of all the kynges whiche were in his waye. When he had taryed there a fewe dayes, there was a rumor spredde, that all the kynges abowte the borders of the towre of Conception, had conspyred with desperate myndes to rebell agenste the Spaniardes. When the Lieuetenaunte was certified hereof, he tooke his iorneye towarde them immediately, not beyng discouraged eyther by the lengthe of the waye, or feebleness of his fouldyers, beyng in maner forweried with trauayle. As he drewe nere vnto them, he had aduertisement that kynge *Guarionexius* was chofen by the other prynces to bee the Capitayne of this rebellion: And that he was enforced therto halfe vnwilling, beyng seduced by theyr perwasions and prouocations. The whiche is more lykely to be trewe, for that he had before had experience of the Capitayne and prouocations. They came together at a daye appoynted, accompanied with. xv. thowfande men, armed after their maner, once agen to proue the fortune of warre. Here the Lieuetenaunte confultyng with the Capitayne of the fortresse and the other fouldiers of whom he had the conducte, determyned to fette vpon them vnwares in their owne howfes before they coulde prepare theyr army. He sent foorth therfore to euery kynge, a Centurian, that is, a capitaine of a hundreth, which were commaunded vppon a sudden to inuade theyr howfes in the night, and to take them sleepinge, beefore the people (beinge scattered here and there) might assemble togyther. Thus secreatly enteringe into their vylages, not fortified with waules, trenches, or bulwarkes, they broke in vppon them, tooke them, bounde them, and led away euery man his prisoner according as they were commaunded. The Lieuetenaunt hym selfe with his hundreth men, assayled kynge *Guarionexius* as the woorthier perfonage, whom he tooke pryfoner as dyd the other capitaynes theyr kynges, and at the same howe appoynted. Foureteene of theym were browght the same nyght to the towre of Conception. Shortlye after, when he had put to death two of the kynges which were the chiefe autours of this newe reuolte, and had suborned *Guarionexius* and the other kynges to attempte the fame: least the people for fowe of theyr kynges shulde neglecte or forsake their cuntrye, whiche thinge myght haue byn greate incommoditie to owre men, who by th[e]increase of theyr feedes and fruites were oftentimes ayded, he freely pardoned and difmissed *Guarionexius* and the other kynges. The people in the meane tyme flocked togyther abowte the towre, to the number of fyue thowfande withowte weapons, with pytiful howling for the delyueraunce of theyr kynges: The ayer thundered, and the earth trembeled through the vehemencie of theyr owtcry. The Lieuetenaunt warned *Guarionexius* and the other kynges, with threatenynge, with rewardes, and with promyses, neuer hereafter to attempte any fuche thyng. Then *Guarionexius* made an oration to the people of the great power of owre men, of theyr clemencie towarde offenders, and liberalitie to fuche as remayne faithfull: defyringe them to quiet theyr myndes: and from henefoorth nother in deede nor thought to interpryse any thyng ageynst the Christians, but to obeye and ferue them, excepte they wolde dayly bryng them felues into further calamities. When the oration was synyshed, they tooke hym vp and fet hym on theyr shulders, and foo caryed hym home to his owne palaice. And by this meanes, this Region was pacified for a whyle. But owre men, with heauy countenaunce, wandered vppe and downe, as defolate in a strange cuntrye, lackinge vytailes, and worne owte of apparell, whereas. xv. moonethes were nowe passed fence the Admirals departure: duringe which tyme, they coulde heare nothyng owte of Spayne. The Leauetenaunt comforted them all that he coulde with fayre wordes and promyses. In the meane tyme, *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, the kynge of the Weste partes of the Region of *Xaragua* (of whom we spake before) fente messengers to the Lieuetenaunt to signifye vnto hym, that he hadde in a redynes the

goffampine cotton and fuche other things as he wylled hym to prepare for the paymente of his trybute. Whervppon the Lieuetenaunt tooke his iorney thither, and was honorably receaued of the kynge and his fyfter, sumtyme the wyfe of *Caunaboa* the kynge of *Cibaua*, bearing no leffe rule in the gouernaunce of her brothers kyngedome, then he hym felfe. For they affirme her to bee a wyfe woman, of good maners, and pleafaunt in company. Shee earnestly perfluaded her brother by th[e]xample of her husbände, to loue and obeye the Christians. This woman was cauled *Anacaona*. He fownde in the palaice of *Beuchius Anacauchoa*. xxxii. kynges whiche hadde brought theyr tributes with them, and abode his comminge. They brought with them also besyde theyr trybute assigned them, further to demerite the fauour of owre men, great plentie of vytayles: as bothe kyndes of breade, cunnyes, and fysshes, alre dyed bycause they shulde not putrifie: Serpentes also of that kynd which wee fayd to bee esteemed amonge them as most delicate meate, and lyke vnto Crocodiles fauing in byggenes. These serpentes they caule *Iuannas*, which owre men learned sumewhat to late to haue byn engendred in the Ilande. For vnto that day, none of them durfte aduenture to taste of them by reason of theyr horrible deformitie and lothefumnes. Yet the Lieuetenaunt beinge entyfed by the pleasantnes of the kynges fyfter, determined to taste of the ferpentes. But when he felte the fleshe therof to bee so delicate to his tonge, he fel too, amayne without al feare. The which thinge his companyons perceauinge, were not behynde hym in greedines: In foo muche that they hadde nowe none other talke then of the sweetenes of these ferpentes: which they affirme to bee of more pleafaunte taste, then eyther owre phefauntes or pertriches. But they lose theyr taste, excepte they bee prepared after a certeyne fashion: as doo peacockes and phefauntes except they bee interlarded beefore they bee roasted. They prepare them therefore after this maner. Fyrst takynge owte theyr bowels euen from the throte to the thyghes, they washe and rubbe theyr bodies very cleane bothe within and withowte. Then roulng them togyther on a cyrcle, inuolued after the maner of a slepyng snake, they thruste them into a potte of no bygger capacitie then to houlde them only. This doone, puttinge a lyttle water vnto them with a portion of the Ilande pepper, they feethe them with a soft fyre of sweete woodde, and fuche as maketh no greate smoke. Of the fat of them beinge thus fodde, is made an excedinge pleafaunte brothe or potage. They fay also, that there is no meate to bee compared to the egges of these ferpentes, which they vse to feethe by them selues. They are good to bee eaten as sone as they are fodde: And may also bee referued many dayes after. But hauinge fayde thus muche of theyr intertaynement and daintie fare, let vs nowe speake of other matters. When the Lieuetenaunt had fylled one of the Ilande howfes with the goffampine cotton which he hadde receaued for trybute, the kynges promyfed furthermore to gyue hym as muche of theyr breade, as he wolde demaunde. He gaue them hartie thankes and gently accepted theyr frendly profer. In the meane time whyle this breade was gatheringe in fundry Regions to bee brought to the palaice of *Beuchius Anacauchoa* kynge of *Xaragua*, he sent messengers to Ifabella for one of the two carauelles which were lately made there: intendinge to fende the same thither ageyne laden with breade. The maryners gladdes of these tydynges, sayled abowte the Ilande, and in short space brought the shippe to the coastes of *Xaragua*. The fyfter of kynge *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, that wyfe and pleafaunt woman *Anacaona*, (the wyfe sumtyme of *Caunaboa* the kynge of the golden howse of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, whose husbände dyed in the way when he shulde haue byn caryed into Spayne,) when shee harde saye that owre shyppe was arryued on the shore of her natiue countrye, perfluaded the kynge her brother that they bothe myght goo togyther to see it. For the place where the shyppe lay, was not paste. vi. myles distante from *Xaragua*. They rested all night, in the mydde way, in a certeyne vyllage in the which was the tresurye or iewell howse of *Anacaona*. Her treasure was nother goulde, fyluer, or precious stones, but only thynges necessary to bee vsed, as cheyars, stooles, settels, dysshes, potingers, pottes, pannes, bafons, treyes, and fuche other howsholde stufte and instrumentes, workemanly made of a certeyne blacke and harde shyninge woodde which that excellent lerned phisition Iohn baptiste *Elifius*, affirmeth to bee hebene. What so euer portion of wytte nature hath gyuen to the inhabitants of these Ilandes, the same doth most appeare in these kynde of woorkes, in whiche they shewe great arte and cunnyng. But those which this woman had, were made in the Iland of *Guanabba*, situate in the mouth of the weste fyde of *Hispaniola*. In these they graue the lyuely Images of fuch phantasies as they suppose they see walke by night which the Antiquitie cauled *Lemures*. Also the Images of men, ferpents, beastes, and what foo euer other thyng they haue once seene. What wolde yowe thinke (most noble Prynce) that they could doo, if they had the vse of Iren and steele? For they onely fyrste make these softe in the fyre, and afterwarde make them holowe and carue them with a certeyne stone which they fynde in the ryuers. Of stooles and chayers, shee gaue the Lieuetenaunt. xiiii. And of vesselles perteynyng to the table and kychen, shee gaue hym three score, sum of wood and sume of earthe. Also of goffampine cotton ready spunne foure great bottomes of excedinge weight. The day folowing when they came to the sea fyde, where was an other vylage of the kynges, the Lieuetenaunt commaunded the shyppe boat to bee brought to the shore. The kyng also had prepared two canoas, paynted after theyr maner: one for hym felfe and certeyne of his gentelmen: an other for his fyfter *Anacaona* and her waytinge women. But *Anacaona* desyred to bee caried in the shyppe boate with the

Queene Anacaona, the wife of kynge Caunaboa.

xxxii. kynges.

Serpentes eaten.

26

The dressing of serpentes to be eaten.

Serpentes egges eaten

Gossampine cotton.

Queene Anacaona

The tresurie of Queene Anacaona

Hebene wood.

The Ilande of Guanabba

Conninge artificers

A stone in the steede of Iren

Gunnies.

27

Musical
instrumentes.
Ignorance causeth
admiration.Roldanus
Xeminus.
The intemperancie
and malice of a
seruile witte
aduanced.

Ciguaians.

Maiobanexius, the
great kynge of
the mountaynesThe inhalytantes
of the mountaynes.Guarionexius
rebelleth ageyne.Roldanus
Xeminus rebelleth.

28

Licenciousnes
in libertieHercules pyllers.
A violente
persasion.

Lieuetaunte. When they nowe approached nere vnto the shyppe, certeyne great pieces of ordinaunce were discharged of purpose. The sea was fylled with thunder, and the ayer with fnooke. They trembled and quaked for feare, supposinge that the frame of the world had byn in danger of fauling. But when they sawe the Lieuetaunte lawgh, and looke cherefully on them, they cauled ageyne theyr spirites. And when they yet drewe nerer to the shippe, and harde the noyse of the flutes, shalmes, and drummes, they were wonderfully astonied at the sweete harmony therof. Enterynge into the shyppe and beholdinge the fore-shippe and the sterne, the toppe castel, the maste, the hatches, the cabens, the keele, and the tackelinges, the brother fixinge his eyes on the fyfter, and the fyfter on the brother, they were bothe as it were dumme and amafed, and wyfte not what to faye for too muche wonderynge. Whyle beholdinge these thinges they wandered vp and downe the shippe, the Lieuetaunt commaunded the ankers to bee loofed, and the failes to be hoysed vp. Then were they further astonied, when they sawe foo greate a mole, to moue as it were by it selfe, without ores and without the force of man. For there arose from the earth fuche a wynde as a man wolde haue wyshed for of purpose. Yet furthermore, when they perceaued the shyppe to moue fymtyme forwarde and fymtyme backwarde: fymtyme towarde the ryght hande and fymtyme towarde the lefte, and that with one wynde and in maner at one instante, they were at theyr wyttes ende for to muche admiration. These thynges fynished and the shyppes beinge laden with breade and fuche other rewardes, they beinge also recompensed with other of owre thynges, he dismissed not onely the kynge *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, and his fyfter, but lykewife all theyr seruantes and women replenyshed with ioye and woonderinge. After this, he hym selfe tooke his iorney by foote with his souldiers to the cite of *Ifabella*: where he was aduertified that one *Roldanus Ximenus*, a nawghty felowe, (whom before beinge his seruante, he had preferred to bee capitayne of the myners and labourers, and after made hym a Iudge in causes of controuerfie) had vsed hym selfe owtragiouly and was malyciously mynded ageynst hym, and further, the cause of muche mischiefe in his absence. For kynge *Guarionexius* (who a whyle before was pardoned of his former rebellion, and persuaded the people to obeye the Spanyardes) was by his nawghty vface, and fuche other as were confethered with hym, so accensed to reuenge the iniuries which they susteyned at his handes, byfyde the abhominable actes which they folowyng onely the lawe of nature, abhorred to admytte, that he with his famelie, famylyers, and ditionaries, of desperate mynde fledde to the mountaynes beinge distant from *Ifabella* onely tenne leaques Westwarde, towarde the north fyde of the sea. These mountaynes, and also the inhabitantes of the same they caule by one name *Ciguaios*. The greate kyng of al the kynges and regions of these mountayne[s], is cauled *Maiobanexius*: and his courte or palaice is named *Capronus*. The mountaynes are rowgh, hygh, and fuche as no man can passe to the toppes therof. They are also bendyng: and haue theyr corners reachinge downe to the sea. Betwene bothe the corners of the mountaynes, is there a greate playne, by the which many riuers faule from the mountaynes into the sea. The people are verye fierse and warlyke men, hauing their original of the Canybales. For when they descende from the mountaynes to the playnes to keepe warre with theyr bortherers, they eate all fuche as they kyll. *Guarionexius* therefore, flyng to this kyng of these mountaynes, gaue hym many presentes of fuche thynges as are wantinge in his countrey: therwith declaringe howe vylely, vylaynously, and violently, he had byn vsed of owre men: with whom he could nothinge preuayle nother by fayre meanes, nor by foule: nother by humilytie nor by floutnes. And that to bee the cause of his refortinge to hym at that tyme: moste humbly defyring hym to bee his defence ageynst th[e] oppressions of fuche myscheuous people. *Maiobanexius* here vppon, made hym promesse to ayde and helpe hym ageynst the Christians al that he myght. The Lieuetaunt therefore made hast to the fortresse of Conception: whyther as foone as he was coome, he sent for *Roldanus Xeminus*, who with fuche as folowed hym, lay in certeyne of the Ilande vylages, twelue miles distant from the fortres. At his comminge, the Lieuetaunt asked hym what al these sturres and tumultes ment. He answered without abasement: Yowre brother the Admirall hath to do therwith, and shall answere for the same before the kynge. For we perceaued that the kynge hath foo put hym in truste, that he hath hadde no regarde to vs. Here we perseyne for hunger whyle we folowe yowe: and are dryuen to seeke owre vnhappy foode in the desertes. Yowre brother also, assigned me assifant with yowe in gouerninge the Ilande. Wherefore fyth yowe haue no more respecte vnto vs, we are determyned noo longer to bee vnder yowre obedience. When *Roldanus* had spoken these wordes and fuche other, the Lieuetaunte wolde haue layde handes on hym: but he escaped his fyngers, and fledde to the weste partes of the Region of *Xaragua*, hauinge with hym a trayne of threescore and tenne men whiche were of his confetheracie. Here this fylthy fynke of rebels thus conspired, played their vages and lyued with loofe brydels in al kyndes of myschefe, robberyng the people, spoylinge the countrey, and rauyshinge bothe wyues and virgines. Whyle these thynges were doing in the Ilande, the Admirall hadde eyght shyppes appoynted hym by the kinge: Of the whiche he sent two laden with vitayles, from *Cales* or *Cades* of Hercules pyllers, directly to the Lieuetaunt his brother. These shyppes by chaunce arryued fyrst on that fyde of the Ilande where *Rolandus Xeminus* ranged with his coompanyons. *Rolandus* in shorte tyme hadde seduced them: promysinge them in the steade of mattockes, wenches pappes: for laboure, pleasure: for hunger,

abundance: and for wearynes and watchinge, sleepe and quietnes. *Guarionexius* in the meane tyme, affemblinge a power of his freendes and confetherates, came oftentimes downe into the playne, and slewe as many of the Christian men, as he coulde meete conuenientlye, and also of the Ilande menne whiche were theyr freendes: waslyng theyr grounde, destroyinge theyr feedes, and spoylinge theyr vylages. But *Roldanus* and his adherentes, albeit they had knowlege that the Admiral wolde shortly coome, yet feared they nothyng bycause they had seduced the newe menne whiche came in the fyrste shippes. Whyle the Lieuetenaunt was thus tossed in the midst of these stormes, in the meane tyme his brother the Admyrall fet forwarde from the coastes of Spayne: But not directly to *Hispaniola*: For he turned more towarde the southe. In the which vyage, what he dyd, what coastes bothe of the lande and sea he coompafed, and what newe regions he discouered, wee wyl fyrst declare. For to what ende and conclusion the fayde tumultes and feditions came, wee wyl expresse in th[e]nde of the booke folowyng. Thus fare ye well.

The furie of
guarionexius

The thyrde vyage
of Colonus the
Admirall.

THE SIXTE BOOKE OF THE FYRSTE DECADE,
to Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonie.



Olonus the Admyral, the thyrde day of the Calendes of Iune, in the yeaere of Christe. 1498. hoysed vp his sayles in the hauen of the towne *Barramedabas*, not farre distant from Cales: and fet forwarde on his vyage with eyght shippes laden with vytayles and other necessaries. He diuerted from his accustomed rafe which was by the Ilandes of *Canarie*, by reason of certeyne frenchemen pirates and rouers on the sea, whiche laye in the ryght way to meete with hym. In the way from *Cales* to the Ilandes of *Canarie*, abowte foure score and ten myles towarde the lefte hande, is the Ilande of *Madera*, more southwarde then the cite of

Frenche men
pyrats.

The Iland of
Madera.

Ciuiile by foure degrees. For the pole artyke is eleuate to *Ciuiile*, xxxvi. degrees: But to this Iland (as the mariners saye) only xxxii. He sayled therefore fyrste to *Madera*. And sendinge from thene directly to *Hispaniola*, the refydue of the shippes laden with vytayles and other necessaries, he hym selfe with one shyppe with deckes, and two marchaunt carauelles coasted towarde the fouth to coome to the *Equinoctial* lync, and fo furth to folowe the tracte of the same towarde the West, to th[e] intent to searche the natures of suche places as he coulde fynde vnder or nere vnto the same, leauinge *Hispaniola* on the north fyde on his ryght hande. In the myddle of his rafe, lye. xiii. Ilandes of the Portugales, whiche were in owlde tyme cauled *Hesperides*: And are now cauled *Caput Viride*, or *Cabouerde*. These are situate in the sea, ryght ouer ageynst the inner partes of *Ethiope*, Westwarde two dayes saylinge. One of these the Portugales caule *Bonauista*. With the snayles, or rather tortoyfes of this Ilande, many leprous men are healed and clenfed of theyr leprofite. Departing fodainly from henfe by reason of the contagioufnes of the ayre, he sayled. CCCCLXXX. [four hundred and eighty] myles towarde the Weste fouthwest, which is the myddeft betwene the weste and the southe. There was he so vexed with maladies and heate (for it was the moneth of Iune) that his shyppes were almoſte fette on fyre. The hoopes of his barrells cracked and brake, and the fresshe water ranne owte. The men also complaind that they were not able to abyde that extremitie of heate. Here the northe pole was eleuate only. v. degrees from the Horizontall. For the space of. viii. dayes in the which he suffered these extremities, only the fyrst day was fayre: but all the other, cloudy and rayny: yet neuerthelesse feruent hotte. Wherefore it oftentimes repented hym not a little that euer he tooke that way. Beinge tossed in these dangiours and vexations eyght contynuall dayes, at the lengthe an Eastsoutheaste wynde arose, and gaue a prosperous blaste to his sayles. Which wynde folowinge directly towarde the weste, he fownde the starres ouer that paralelle, placed in other order, and an other kynde of ayer, as the Admirall hym selfe towlde me. And they al affirme, that within three dayes saylinge, they fownde moſte temperate and pleafaunte ayre. The Admirall also affirmeth, that from the clime of the great heate and vnholfome ayer, he euer ascended by the backe of the sea, as it were by a hygh mountayne towarde heauen. Yet in all this tyme, coulde he not once see any lande. But at the length, the day before the Calendes of Iuly, the watcheman lookyng forth of the toppecastell of the greateſt shyppe, cryed owte alowde for ioy that he spyed three excedyng hyghe mountaynes: Exhortinge his felowes to bee of good cheere, and put away all pensiuenes. For they were very heavy and sorowfull, as well for the greefe which they susteyned by reason of th[e] intollerable heate, as also that theyr fresshe water sayled them, which ranne owte at the ryfes of the barrells, caused by extreme heate as we haue sayde. Thus beinge wel comforted, they drewe to the lande. Yet at theyr fyrst approche, they coulde not arryue by reason of the shalownes of the sea nere the shore. Yet lookyng owte of theyr shyppes, they might wel perceauce that the Region was inhabyted and well cultured. For they sawe very fayre gardens, and pleafaunte medowes:

The Admiral
[s]layeth to the
Equinoctiall.

xiii. Ilandes of
Hesperides, now
cauled Cabouerde

Healyng of the
leper.

Contagious ayre
and extreme heate

The pole eleuate.
v. degrees.

29
The starres placed
in other order.

A sea rysyng lyke
a mountayne.

Heate causeth the
barrells to breke.

Swete sauours
proceedynge
frome the lande.

The Iland of Puta.
People of [good]ly
corporature and
longe heare nere
the Equinoctiall.

The higher the
coulde.

Difference
betwene people of
one clime.
Ethiopia.

Note the cause of
difference.

Musical
instrumentes.

30

The violent course
of the water from
the Easte to the
Weste.

The goulfe cauled
Os Draconis.
A conflict betwene
the freshe water
and the salte.

A sea of fresh
water.

Marmasets and
monkeys.

frome the trees and herbes wherof, when the mornynge dewes beganne to ryse, there proceeded manye swete fauoures. Twentie myles distant from henfe, they chaunced into a hauen, verry apte to harborowe shippes, but it had no ryuer runninge into it. Saylinge on yet sumwhat further, he fownde at the lengthe a commodious hauen wherin he might repayre his shippes and make prouision of freshe water and fuell. *Arenalis* cauleth this lande *Puta*. They fownd no houfes nere vnto the hauen: but innumerable steppes of certein wilde beastes feete, of the which they fownde one deade much lyke a goate. The day folowynge, they fawe a Canoa commynge a farre of, hauinge in it. xxiiii. younge men of godly corporature and high stature, al armed with targets, bowes and arowes. The heare of theyr heds, was longe and plaine, and cutte on the forheade much after the maner of the Spanyardes. Theyr priuie partes were couered with filletes of gossampyne cotton, of fundry coloures enterlaced: And were besyde al ouer naked. Here the Admirall confideringe with hym selfe the corporature of this people and nature of the lande, he beleued the fame to bee foo much the nerer heauen then other Regions of the same paralelle, and further remoued from the grosse vapours of the vales and maryffhes, howe muche the hygheste toppes of the byggest mountaynes are distante from the deepe vales. For he earnestly affirmeth, that in all that nauigation, he neuer wente owte of the paralelles of Ethiope: So greate difference is there betwene the nature of th[e] inhabitants and of the foyles of dyuers Regions all vnder one clyme or paralelle: as is to see betwene the people and regions being in the firme lande of Ethiope, and theym of the Ilandes vnder the same clime, hauinge the pole starre eleuate in the same degree. For the Ethiopians are all blacke, hauinge theyr heare curld more lyke wulle then heare. But these people of the Iland of *Puta* (beinge as I haue sayde vnder the clyme of Ethiope) are whyte, with longe heare, and of yelowe colour. Wherefore it is apparente, the cause of this foo greate difference, to bee rather by the difpofition of the earthe, then constitucion of heauen. For wee knowe, that snowe fauleth on the mountaynes of the Equinoctiall or burnte lyne, and the fame to endure there continually: We knowe lykewyse that th[e] inhabitants of the Regions farre distante frome that lyne towarde the northe, are molested with greate heate.

¶ The Admirall that he myght allure the younge men to him with gentelnes, shewed them lokyng glaffes, fayre and bright vesselles of copper, haukes belles, and fuche other thynges vnknowen to them. But the more they were cauled, so much the more they suspected crafte and deceate, and fledde backwarde. Yet dyd they with greate admiracion beholde owre men and theyr thynges, but styll hauinge their ores in theyr handes redy to flye. When the Admirall fawe that he coulde by no meanes allure them by gyftes, he thought to proue what he coulde do with muscicall instrumentes: and therefore commaunded that they which were in the greatest shippe, shulde play on theyr drummes and shalmes. But the younge men supposinge this to bee a token of battayle, lefte theyr ores, and in the twyn[k]lyng of an eye hadde put theyr arrowes in theyr bowes and theyr targettes on theyr armes: And thus directinge theyr arrowes towarde owre men, floode in expectacion to knowe what this noyse myght meane. Owre men lykewife preparinge theyr bowes and arrowes, approached toward them by lyttle and lyttle. But they departinge from the Admirals shippe, and trufinge to the dexteritie of theyr ores came foo neare one of the lesse shippes, that one of theym plucked the cloke from the gouernour of that shippe, and as wel as they coulde by signes, requyred hym to coome alande, promysinge feyth that they wolde common with hym of peace. But when they fawe hym goo to the Admirals shippe whether he went to aske leaue that he might common with them, suspectinge heareby fume further deceate, they lept immediatly into the Canoa, and fledde as swyft as the wynde. So that to conclude, they coulde by no meanes be allured to familiaritie. Wherefore the Admirall thowght it not conuenient to bestowe any longe tyme there, at this vyage. No greate space frome this Ilande, euer towarde the weste, the Admirall faith he fownde so owteragious a faule of water, runninge with fuch a violence from the Easte to the Weste, that it was nothyng inferioure to a myghty streame faulyng from hyghe mountaynes. He also confessed, that since the fyrst daye that euer he knewe what the fa mente, he was neuer in fuche feare. Proceedinge yet sumwhat further in this daungerous vyage, he fownde certeyne goulfes of viii. myles, as it had byn the[e]nterance of fume greate hauen, into the which, the fayde violent streames dyd faule. These goulfes or streyghtes, he cauled *Os Draconis*, that is, the dragons mouth. And the Iland directly ouer ageynste the same, he named *Margarita*. Owte of these streyghtes, isshewed no lesse force of freshe water: whiche encounteringe with the faulte, dyd stryue to passe forth: Soo that betwene bothe the waters, was no fmaule conflict. But enteringe into the goulfe, at the lengthe he fownde the water therof very freshe and good to drynke. The Admirall hym selfe, and they which were his companions in this vyage, beinge men of good credit, and perceauinge my diligence in searching for these matters, towlde me yet of a greater thyng. That is, that for the space of. xxvi. leaques, amountynge to a hundreth and foure myles, he sayled euer by freshe water: In so muche, that the further he proceeded, especially towarde the west, he affirmeth the water to bee the fresher. After this, he came to a highe mountayne, inhabited onely with moonkeys or marmasets on that part towarde the East. For that fyde was rowgh with rockye and stony mountains: And therefore not inhabyted with men. Yet they that went alande to searche the countrey, fownde nere vnto the sea, many fayre fieldes well tyllid and fowen: But noo people, nor yet houfes or cotages. Parhappes they were

gone further into the countrey to fowe theyr corne and applye theyr hufbandry, as wee often see owre hufbande men to leaue theyr stations and vylages for the same purpose. In the weste syde of that mountayne, they epyed a large playne, whither they made haste, and cast anker in the brode ryuer. As soone as the inhabitants had knowledge that a strange nation was arryued in theyr coastes, they came flockinge withowte all feare to see owre men. We vnderfode by theyr fygnes and poyntynges, that this Region was cauled *Paria*: and that it was very large: In so muche that the further it reacheth towarde the weste, to be so muche the better inhabited and replenished with people. The Admirall therefore, takyng into his shyppes foure of the men of that lande, searched the weste partes of the same. By the temperatenes of the ayer, the pleasauntnes of the grownde, and the multytude of people which they saw dayly more and more as they sayled, they coniectured that these thynges portended sum great matter: As in deede their opinion sayled them not, as we wyll further declare in his place. The soonne not yet ryfen, but beginninge euen now to ryse, beinge one day allured by the pleasauntnes of the place and swete fauours which breathed from the land to the shippes, they went alande. Here they fownde a greater multytude of people then in any other place. As owre men approched towarde them, there came certeine messengers from their *Cacici*, that is, the kynges of the countrey, to desyre the Admirall in the name of theyr princes to coome to theyr palayces withowte feare, and that they and al theyrs shulde bee at his commaundement. When the Admirall had thanked them and made his excuse for that tyme, there came innumerable people with theyr boates to the shippes: hauyng for the most parte cheynes abowte theyr neckes, garlandes on theyr heades, and braselettes on theyr armes of pearles of India: And that so commonlye, that owre women in playes and tryumphes haue not greater plentie of stonnes of glasse and crystall in theyr garlandes, crownes, gerdels, and fuche other tyrements. Beinge asked where they gathered them, they poynted to the next shore by the sea bankes. They signified also by certeyne scorneful giestures which they made with theyr mouthes and handes, that they nothyng esteemed perles. Taking also baskettes in theyr handes, they made signes that the same might bee fylled with them in shorte space. But bycause the corne wherwith his shyppes were laden to bee caryed into *Hispaniola*, had taken hurt by reason of the salte water, he determined to deferre this marte to a more conuenient tyme. Yet he sent to lande two of the shippe boates laden with men, to th[e] intent to fetch sum garlandes of perles for exchange of our thynges, and also sumwhat to searche the nature of the Region and disposition of the people. They enterteyned owr men gently: and came flockyng to them by heapes, as it hadde byn to beholde sume straunge monstres. Fyrste there came to meete owre men, two men of grautie, whome the multitude folowed. One of these was well in age, and the other but younge. They thinke it was the father with his soonne whiche shulde succede hym. When the one had saluted and embrased the other, they brought owre men into a certeyne rownde howse, nere vnto the whiche, was a greate court. Hether were brought many chayers and stooles made of a certeyne blacke woodde, and very coonngely wrowght. After that owre men, and theyr Princes were sette, theyr wayting men came in laden, sume with fundry delicate dysshes, and sume with wyne. But theyr meate, was only frutes: and those of dyuers kyndes and vtterly vnknown to vs. Theyr wyne was both whyte and redde: not made of grapes, but of the lycour of dyuers frutes, and very pleasaunte in drynkyng. After this banquette made in the owlde mans howse, the younge man brought them to his tabernacle or mancion place, where was a greate company bothe of men and women, but they floode deceauered the one from the other. They are whyte, euen as owre men are, faunye fuche as are much conuerfant in the sonne. They are also very gentyll, and full of humanitie towarde strangiers. They couer theyr pryue partes with goffampine cotton wrowght with fundry coloures: and are besyde all naked. There was fewe or none, that had not eyther a collar, a cheyne, or a braselette of golde and pearles, and many had all. Beinge asked where they had that golde, they poynted to certeyne mountaynes, feemyng with theyr countenance to dissuade owre men from goinge thither. For puttinge theyr armes in theyr mouthes, and grynninge as though they bytte the same, sylle poyntinge to the mountaynes, they seemed to insinuate that men were eaten there: But whether they mente by the Canibales, or wyld beasts owre men cowlde not well perceau. They tooke it excedinge greuouslye, that they coulde nother vnderstande owre men, nor owre men them. When they which were sente to lande, were returned to the shippes abowte three of the clocke at after noone the same daye, bringinge with them certeyne garlandes and collers of pearles, they loosed theyr ankers to departe, myndinge to coome ageyne shortly, when all thynges were sette in good order in *Hispaniola*. But he was preuented by an other, which defeated hym of the rewarde of his traually. He was also hyndered at this tyme by reason of the shalownes of the sea and violent course of the water, which with continual tossing, broofed the greatest ship as often as any great gale of wynde arose. To auoyde the daungiors of fuche shalowe places, and shelves, he euer sent one of the smaulest carauelles before, to try the way with foundinge: and the byggest shyppes folowed behynde. The Regions beinge in the large prouince of *Paria* for the space of CCXXX. [two hundred and thirty] myles, are cauled of th[e] inhabitants, *Cumana*, and *Manacapana*: from these regions distant three score leagues, is there an other Region cauled *Curiana*. When he had thus passed ouer this long tract of sea, supposinge sylly that it had byn an Ilande, and doutinge that he

The fayre and large region of *paria*.

Temperate ayer and fruitful grownde.

Swete sauours proceadyng frome the lande.

Humayne people.

Cheynes and garlandes of gold and perles

31

Baskettes ful of pearles, I knowe who had bags ful.

Howe the Admirals men were enterteyned.

Cheyers and stoles of hebene.

Frutes and wyne.

Wyne of the lycour of frutes.

Whyte men nere the Equinoctial

Mountaynes are the matrices of golde.

Canibales

Shalownes of the sea.

The vse of caruelles or brigantines.

Cumana and Manacapana regions of the prouince of *Paria*. *Curiana*.

A ryuer of maruelous depth and bredth.

A sea of weedes. Lentiscus. Mastix.

32

The eleuation of the pole at Paria.

Note a secrete as concerning the pole starre.

An experience

A maruelous secrete.

That the earth is not perfectly rownde.

Paradis is in the mountaynes of paria.

Looke the ninth booke seconde decade.

Paria is part of the firme lande of india
Tyme reuealeth all things

Paria more southwarde then hispaniola

The spanyardes rebell in the Admirals absence

might passe by the Weste to the Northe directlye to *Hispaniola*, he chaunced into a ryuer of. xxx. cubettes depthe, and of such breadth as hath not lyghtly byn harde of. For he affirmeth it to bee. xxviii. leaques. A lyttle further toward the Weste, yet fumwhat more fowthwarde as the bending of the shore requyred, he entered into a fea full of herbes or weedes. The feede of the herbes whiche fwymme on the water, are muche lyke the berryes of the tree cauled *Lentiscus*, which beareth the sweete gumme cauled *Mastix*. They grewe soo thicke, that they fumetyme in maner flayed the shippes. The Admirall reported, that here there is not one daye thorowghe owte all the yeare muche longer or shorter then an other: And that the Northe pole is here eleaute onely fyue degrees as at *Paria*, in whose tracte all these coastes lye. Hee also declared certeyne thynges as concerninge the variete of the northe pole: The which because they feeme contrarye to th[e] oppinions of all the Astronomers, I wyll touche them but with a drye foote as fayth the prouerbe. But it is wel knowne (moste noble prince) that the starre which we caule the pole starre, or northe starre, (cauled of the Italians *Tramontana*) is not the very poynte of the pole Artyke vpon the whiche the axes or extremities of heauens are turned abowte. The which thyng may well be proued, if when the starres fyrst appeare, yowe beeholde the pole starre through any narowe hole. For soo, applyinge yowre instrument therto in the morninge fumwhat before the daye spryng haue blemysht theyr lyght, yf then yowe looke through the same hole, yowe shall perceauie it to bee moued from the place where yowe saweit fyrst. But howe it commeth to passe, that at the begynnyng of the euenyng twilight, it is eleuate in that Region only fyue degrees in the moneth of Iune, and in the morninge twilight to bee eleuate. xv. degrees by the same quadrante, I doo not vnderstande. Nor yet doo the reafons which he bringeth, in any poynt fatyffye me. For he fayth, that he hereby coniectured, that the earth is not perfectly rownde: But that when it was created, there was a certeyne heape reysed thereon, much hygher then the other partes of the same. So that (as he faith) it is not rownde after the forme of an apple or a bal (as other thynke) but rather lyke a peare as it hangeth on the tree: And that *Paria* is the Region which possesseth the supereminente or hyghest parte thereof nereste vnto heauen. In soo muche that he earnestly contendeth, the earthly Paradyse to bee situate in the toppes of those three hylles, which wee sayde beefore, that the watche man sawe owte of the toppe castell of the shippe: And that the outrageous streames of the freshe waters whiche soo violentlye iflhewe owte of the sayde goulfes and stryue soo with the salte water, faule headlonge from the toppes of the sayde mountaynes. But of this matter, it shall suffice to haue sayde thus muche. Lette vs nowe therefore returne to the historye from which we haue dygrefsed. When he perceaued hym selfe to bee thus inwrapped in soo greate a goulfe beyonde his expectacion, soo that he had now no hope to fynde any passage towarde the northe whereby he myght sayle directlye to *Hispaniola*, he was enforced to turne backe the same way by the which he came, and directed his viage to *Hispaniola* by the northe of that lande lyinge towarde the Easte. They which afterwarde searched this lande more curiouslye, wyll it to bee parte of the continente or firme lande of India, and not of *Cuba* as the Admiral supposid. For there are many which affirme that they haue sayled rownd about *Cuba*. But whether it bee so or not, or whether enuyng the good fortune of this man, they seeke occasiõs of querelinge ageynste hym, I can not iudge: But tyme shall speake, which in tyme appoynted, reuealeth both truth and falsehod. But whether *Paria* be Continent or not, the Admirall dothe not muche contende. But he supposeth it to bee Continente. He also affirmeth that *Paria* is more southwarde then *Hispaniola*, by eyght hundredre fourefcore and two myles. At the length he came to *Hispaniola* (to see his fouldiers which he left with his brethren) the thyrde day of the calendes of September: In the year 1498. But (as often tymes chaunceth in humayne thynges,) amonge his soo many prosperous, pleasaunte, and luckye affayres, fortune menged fume feedes of wormewoodde, and corrupted his pure come with the malicious weedes of coccle.

THE SEVENTH BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE, to the same Lodouike Cardinall. etc.



When the Admirall was nowe coome to the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, he fownde all thynges confounded and owte of order. For *Roldanus* (of whom wee spake beefore) refused in his absence to obey his brother, trustyng to the multitude of such as were confethered with him. And not onely behaued hym selfe proudly ageynst the Admiralles brother and Lieuetenaunt fumtyme his maister, but also sente letters to his reproche to the kyng of Spayne, therin accusyng bothe the brethren, leying heynous matters to theyr charges. But the Admirall ageyne, sent messengers to the kyng, which myght informe hym of theyr rebellion: Instantly defyryng his grace, to fende hym a newe supplye of men, wherby he myght suppress the licentioufnes and

punyshe them for theyr mischeuous actes. They accused the Admirall and his brother to bee vniust men, cruel enemies and sheaders of the Spanyshe bludde: declarynge that vpon euery lyght occasion, they wolde racke them, hange them, and heade them: And that they tooke pleasure therin. And that they departed from them as from cruell tyrantes and wyld beastes reioynginge in bludde, also the kynges enemyes. Affyrminge lykewyfe that they well perceaued theyr intente to bee none other then to vsurpe Th[e]mpire of the Ilandes: whiche thyng (they sayde) they suspected by a thousand coniectures. And especially in that they wolde permitte none to reforte to the golde mynes, but only fuche as were theyr familiers. The Admirall on the contrary parte, when he desyred ayde of the kyng to infringe theyr insolencie, auouched that al those his accusers, which had deuised fuche lyes ageynste hym, were nowghtye felowes, abhominable knaues and vylaynes, theues and baudes, ruffians aduouterers and rauishers of women, faulfe periured vagabundes, and fuche as had byn eyther conuict in prysons, or fledde for feare of Iudgment: soo escaping punyshement, but not leauinge vice wherin they styll contynued and browght the fame with them to the Ilande, lyuinge there in lyke maner as before, in thefte, lechery, and all kyndes of myscheefe: And soo gyuen to Idlenes and sleepe, that wheras they were browght thither for myners, labourers, and scullyans, they wolde not nowe goo one furlonge from theyr houfes except they were borne on mens backes, lyke vnto them whiche in owlde tyme were cauled *Ediles Curules*. For, to this office, they put the miserable Ilande men, whom they handeled moste cruelly. For leaste theyr handes shulde discontynewe from sheadinge of bludde, and the better to trye theyr strength and manhod, they vsed nowe and then for theyr pastyme to stryue amonge them felues and proue who coulde most cleanly with his swoorde at one stroke stryke of the heade of an innocent. Soo that he which coulde with moste agilitie make the heade of one of those poore wretches to flye quyte and cleane from the body to the grounde at one stroke, he was the best man and counted moste honorable. These thynges and many fuche other, the one of them layde to the others charge beefore the kyng. Whyle these thynges were doinge, the Admirall sente his brother the lieuetenaunt with an army of foure score and tenne footemen, and a fewe horsfemen, (with three thousande of the Ilande men which were mortall enemies to the Ciguauians) to meete the people of *Ciguaua*, with Kyng *Guarionexius* theyr graunde capitayne, who had doone muche myscheefe to owre men and fuche as faoured theym. Therefore when the Lieuetenaunt had conducted his army to the bankes of a certeyne greate ryuer runnyng by the playne which we sayd before to lye betwene the corners of the mountaynes of *Ciguaua* and the sea, he fownde two scoutes of his enemyes lurking in certeyne bushes: wherof the one, castyng hym selfe head longe into the sea, escaped: and by the mouthe of the ryuer swamme ouer to his coompanyons. The other beinge taken, declared that in the woodde on the other side the ryuer, there lay in campe fyxe thousande Ciguauians redy, vnwares to assayle owre men passyng bye. Wherfore the Lieuetenaunte syndyng a shalowe place where he myght passe ouer, he with his hole army entered into the ryuer. The which thyng when the Ciguauians had espyed, they came runnyng owte of the wooddes with a terrible crye and moste horrible aspect, much lyke vnto the people cauled *Agathyrsi* of whom the poete virgile speaketh. For they were all paynted and spotted with fundry coloures, and especiall with blacke and redde whiche they make of certeyne frutes nooryshed for the same purpose in theyr gardens, with the ioyce wherof they paynt them felues from the foreheade, euen to the knees: hauing theyr heare (whiche by arte they make longe and blacke if nature deny it them) wretched and rowled after a thousande fasshions. A man wold thinke them to bee deuylls incarnate newly broke owte of hell, they are soo lyke vnto helhoundes. As owre men waded ouer the ryuer, they shotte at them and hurled dartes soo thicke, that it almoste tooke the lyght of the sonne from owre men. In so much that if they had not borne of the force therof with theyr targettes, the matter hadde gonne wronge with them. Yet at the length, many beinge wounded, they passed ouer the ryuer, which thyng when the enemies sawe, they fledde: whome owre men persuinge, slewe fume in the chafe: but not many, by reason of theyr swyftenes of foote. Thus beinge in the wooddes, they shotte at owre men more safely. For they being accustomed to the wooddes and naked without any lette, passed through the bushes and shrubbes as it had byn wyld bores or hartes: wheras owre men were hyndered by reason of theyr apparell, targettes, longe iauelens, and ignorance of the place. Wherfore, when he had rested there all that nyght in vayne, and the daye folowyng sawe none steringe in the wooddes, he went (by the counsel and conducte of the other Ilande men which were in his armye) immediatly from thense, to the montaynes in the which king *Maiobanexius* had his cheefe mansion place in the vylage cauled *Capronum*, by the which name also, the kynges palaice was cauled, beinge in the same vylage. Thus marchyng forward with his army, abowte twelue myle of, he encamped in the vylage of an other kyng, which th[e] inhabitants had forsaken for feare of owre men. Yet makyng diligent searsh, they fownde two, by whom they had knowleage that there was tenne kynges with *Maiobanexius* in his palaice of *Capronum*, with an army of eight thousand Ciguauians. At the Lieutenantes fyrst approche, he durst not gyue them battayle vntyll he had sumwhat better searched the Region: Yet did he in the meane tyme skyrmysh with them twyfe. The nexte nyght abowte mydnyght, he sent furth scoutes, and with them guydes of the Ilande men which knewe the countrey. Whom the Ciguauians espyenge from the mountaynes, prepared them felues

33

The Spanyardes accuse the Admirall.

The Admirales answere.

Insolencie and idelnes of libertie.

These had the custodies of the temples.

A cruel and deuelyshe pastyme.

Kyng Guarionexius is capitaine of vi. thousand Ciguauians.

Picti Agathyrsi. Naked men painted with the ioyce of certen frutes.

Heare made long and black by arte.

The vse of targettes. The Ciguauians are dryuen to flyght.

34

Kyng Maiobanexius.

An army of viii. thousand Ciguauians.

A Larome.
The Ciguauians
put to flyght
ageine

The Lieuetenaunt
his ambassage
to kyng
Maiobanexius.

Kyng
Guarionexius.

Maiobanexius his
answere.
Natural hatred
of vyce.

The
Lieuetenautes
gentelnes toward
maiobanexius

35
A rare faythfulnes
in a barbarous
kyng.

The
Lieuetenautes
messengers are
slayne.

Al the kirges are
dryuen to flyght.

to the battayle with a terrible crye or alarome after their maner: but yet durst not coome owte of the wooddes, fupposing that the Lieuetenaunt with his mayne army had byn euen at hande. The day folowynge, when he brought his army to the place where they encamped, leaping owt of the wooddes, they twyfe attempted the fortune of warre, fiercely assaying owre men with a mayne force, and woundinge manye before they coude couer them with theyr targettes. Yet owre men put them to flyght, flewe many, and tooke many. The refydewe fledde to the wooddes, where they kept them styll as in their moſte safe houlde. Of them which were taken, he ſent one, and wyth hym an other of the Ilande men which was of his parte to *Maiobanexius* with commaundement in this effect. The Lieuetenaunt brought not hether his army (O *Maiobanexius*) to kepe warre eyther ageynſt yowe or yowre people: For he greatly deſyreth yowre frendſhippe. But his entent is, that *Guarionexius* who hath perſuaded yowe to bee his ayde ageynſte hym to the greate deſtruction of yowre people and vndoynge of yowre countrey, may haue dewe correction aſwell for his diſobediencie towarde him, as alſo for rayſing tumultes amonge the people. Wherefore, he requyreth yowe and exorteth yowe, to delyuer *Guarionexius* into his handes. The which thyng yf yowe ſhall performe, the Admirall his brother wyll not only gladly admitte yowe to his frendſhypp, but alſo enlarge and defende yowre dominion. And if herein yowe reſuſe to accompliſſhe his requeſte, it wyll folowe, that yowe ſhall ſhortelye repent yowe therof. For yowre kyngedome ſhall be waſted with ſwoorde and fyer, and yowe ſhall abyde the fortune of warre wherof yowe haue had experience with fauour, as you ſhall further know here after to yowre payne, yf with ſtobernes yowe prouoke hym to ſhewe the vttermoſte of his poure. When the meſſenger had thus doone his errante, *Maiobanexius* answered, that *Guarionexius* was a good man, indued with many vertues as all men knewe: And therefore he thought hym worthy his ayde: eſpecially in as muche as he fledde to hym for ſuccoure, and that he had made him ſuch promeſſe, whom alſo he had proued to bee his faithfull frende. Ageyn, that they were naughty men, violent and cruell, deſyringe other mens gooddes, and ſuche as ſpared not to ſheede innocentes bludde: In fyne, that he wolde not haue to doo with ſuche myſcheuous men, nor yet enter into frendſhippe with them. When theſe thynges came to the Lieuetenautes eare, he commaunded the vylage to be burnt where he hym ſelſe encamped, with many other vylages there abowte. And when he drewe nere to the place where *Maiobanexius* lay, he ſent meſſengers to him ageyne, to common the matter with hym, and to wyll hym, to fende ſume one of his moſte feythful frendes to entreate with hym of peace. Where vpon the kyng ſent vnto hym one of his cheefe gentelmen, and with hym two other to wayte on hym. When he came to the Lieuetenautes preſence, he frendly requyred hym to perſuade his lord and maſter in his name, and ernelly to admonyſſhe hym, not to ſuffer his ſtoryſhinge kyngedome to bee ſpoyled, or hym ſelſe to abyde the haſarde of warre for *Guarionexius* ſake: And further to exhorte hym to delyuer hym, excepte he wolde procure the deſtruction bothe of hym ſelſe, his people, and his countrey. When the meſſenger was returned, *Maiobanexius* aſſembled the people, declaring vnto them what was doone, but they cried owte on hym to delyuer *Guarionexius*: And beganne to curſe the daye that euer they had receaued hym, thus to diſturbe theyr quietnes. *Maiobanexius* answered them, that *Guarionexius* was a good man, and had well deſerued of him, giuinge hym many princely preſentes: And had alſo tawght both his wyfe and hym to ſynge and daunce, whiche thyng he dyd not lyttle eſteeme. And was therefore fully reſolued in no caſe to forſake hym, or ageynſte all humanitie to betraye his frende whiche fledde to hym for ſuccoure: but rather to abyde al extremities with him, then to miniſter occaſion of obloquye to ſlaunders to reporte that he had betrayed his geſte whom he tooke into his houſe with warranties. Thus diſmiſſinge the people ſighinge and with ſorrowfull hartes, he cauled *Guarionexius* before hym, promyſinge hym ageyne, that he wolde bee partaker of his fortune whyle lyfe laſted. In ſo muche that he thought it not beſte to fende any further woorde to the Lieuetenaunt: but appoynted hym whome before he ſent to hym, to keepe the way with a garryſon of men, to th[e]intent that if any meſſengers ſhulde be ſent from the Lieuetenaunt, to ſleye them by the way, and admitte none to communication or further entretie of peace. In the meane tyme, the Lieuetenaunt ſent twoo, wherof the one was a captiue Ciguauian, and the other an Ilande man of them which were frendes to owre men: They were bothe taken and ſlayne. The Lieuetenaunt folowed them onely with ten footemen and ſoure horſemen. Fyndinge his meſſengers deade in the waye, he was further prouoked to wraethe, and determyned more extremely to deale with *Maiobanexius*. And therefore wente forwarde incontently with his hole army to his cheefe palaice of *Capronum* where he yet laye in campe. At his approche, all the kynges fledde, euery man his way, and forfooke theyr capitayne *Maiobanexius*: who alſo with all his famelye, fledde to the rowgh mountaynes. Sum of the Ciguauians, ſowght for *Guarionexius* to ſleye hym, for that he was the cauſe of all theſe troubles. But his feete ſaued his lyfe. For he fledde in tyme to the mountaynes where he lurked in maner alone amonge the defolate rockes.

Whereas nowe the Lieuetenautes ſouldiers were forweryed with longe warre, with watchinge, laboure, and hunger, (for it was nowe three moonethes ſence the warres beganne) many deſyred leaue to departe to the towre of Conception, where they had graneges and exerciſed tyllage. He gaue them theyr paſſeportes with allowance of vytayles, ſoo that only thyrtye remayned with hym. Theſe three moonethes warre, they

contynued very paynefull and myferablye: Soo that duryng al that tyme, they had none other meate but only *Cazibi*: that is, fuche rootes whereof they make theyr breade, and that but fylde to theyr fyll: Also *Vffas*, that is, lyttle beastes lyke Conyes, if by chaunce now and then, they tooke fume with theyr houndes. Their drinke was none other then water, such as they fownde, fumtyme sweete, and fumtyme muddy faueringe of the maryffhes. Emonge these delicats, that lyttle sleepe that they had, was euer for the moſte parte abroad vnder the firmamente: And that not without watchemen, and in contynual remoouinge as the nature of warre requyred. With these fewe therefore, the Lieutenant determined to ſearch the mountaynes, dennes, and caues, if he coulde in any place fynde the ſteppes of *Maiobanexius* or *Guarionexius*. In the meane tyme certeyne of his menne (whom hunger enforced to goo a huntinge to proue if they coulde take any conies) chaunced vpon twoo of *Maiobanexius* familyers, whiche were ſent to certeyne vylages of his, to make prouifion of breade. These he enforced to declare where they lord lay hydde. And vſed the ſame alſo for guides to bringe owre men to the place. Twelue of owre men tooke this enterpryſe in hand, painting them ſelues after the maner of the Ciguaians. Soo that by this ſtratageme or policie, they came ſodenly vpon *Maiobanexius*, and tooke hym priſoner with his wyfe, children, and familie, and conueighed them to the towre of Conception to the Lieutenant. Within a fewe dayes after, hunger compelled *Guarionexius* to come owte of the dennes: whome, certeyne of the people fearinge the Lieutenant, bewrayde to owre hunters. The Lieutenant beinge certified hereof, ſent furthe a bande of foote men, commaunding them to lye in ambuſhe vntyll fuche tyme as *Guarionexius* wente from the playnes to the mountaynes, and then ſodenly to intrappe hym. They went as they were commaunded, tooke hym, and brought hym awaye with them. And by this meanes were all the Regions nere abowte, pacified and quyeted. A certeyne noble woman of nere kynred to *Maiobanexius*, and wyfe to an other kynge whoſe dominion was yet vntouched, folowed hym in al theſe aduerſities. They affirme this woman to bee the fayreſt and moſte bewtiful that euer nature brought forth in the Ilande. Whom, when the kynge her huſbande who loued her moſte ardently (as her bewtie deſerued) harde ſaye that ſhee was taken priſoner he wandered vpe and downe the deſertes lyke a man owte of his wytte, not knowinge what to doo or ſaye. But at the lengthe, he came to the Lieutenante, promyſinge moſte faythfully that he wold ſubmitte hym ſelſe and all that he coulde make, vnder his poure, ſoo that he wold reſtore hym his wyfe. The Lieutenant accepted the condition and reſtored him his wife, with certeyne other rulers and gentelmen which he had taken priſoners before: Charginge them, and byndinge them with an othe, to bee euer redye at his commaundement. Shortly after, this kynge, of his owne free motion, came ageyne to the Lieutenant, bringyng with hym fyue thouſande men without weapons, ſauyng onely fuche inſtrumetes as they vſe in tyllage of theyr grownde. He brought with hym alſo, ſeedes to ſowe: wherwith at his owne charge, he cauſed fuche plentie of theyr corne and fruites to growe in fundry places of the large vale whereof wee ſpake before, that ſhortely after, were ſeene manye fayre and fruitfull fieldes that came therof. And for his gentelnes beinge rewarded of the Lieutenante with certeyne of owre thynges, he departed ioyfully. When the report hereof came to the Ciguaians, it moued the myndes of the kynges to hope of clemencie. Where vpon they came togyther to the Lieutenant with humble ſubmiſſion and faythful promeſſe euer after to bee vnder his obedience: defyring hym to reſtore vnto them theyr kynge, with his familye. At theyr requette, the kynges wyfe and his houſeholde was ſette at Libertie, but he kepte ſtyll as a priſoner. Theſe thynges dyd the Lieutenant in the Ilande, not yet knowinge what his aduerſaries and accuſers had layde to his charge before the kynge of Spayne: who beinge diſquyeted with theyr querelinges and accuſacions, and eſpecially for that by reaſon of theyr diſcention, of ſoo greate abun dance of golde and other thynges, there was as yet but lyttle brought into Spayne, appointed a newe gouernour which ſhuld ſee a redreſſe in theſe thinges: And eyther to punyſhe fuche as were faultie, or elles to ſende them to hym. What was ſownde ageynſte the Admirall and his brother, or ageynſt his aduerſaries whiche accuſed hym, I doo not wel knowe. But this I am ſure of, that both the brethrene are taken, brought, and caſt in priſon, with their goodes conſiſcate. But as ſoone as the kynge vnderſtoode that they were brought bounde to Caſes, he ſent meſſengers in poſte, with commaundemente that they ſhulde bee loofed and come freely to his preſence: wherby he declared that he tooke theyr troubles greuouſlye. It is alſo ſayde, that the newe gouernoure ſent letters to the kynge, wrytten with the Admiralles hande in ſtraunge and vnknownen fypheringes, to his brother the Lieutenant beinge abſente, wyllyng hym to bee in a redynes with a poure of armed men to come and ayde hym if the Gouernoure ſhulde profer hym any violence. Wherof the gouernour hauinge knowleage (as he ſaythe) beinge alſo aduertified that the Lieutenant was gonne to his brother before the men which he had prepared were in a redynes, apprehended them bothe vnwares, before the multitude came togyther. What wyl folowe, tyme, the moſte trewe and prudent Iudge, wyl declare. Thus fare ye well.

The Spanyardes are painfull in the warres.

A desperate aduenture with xxx. men

A polic[i]e. Kynge Maiobanexius is taken.

Guarionexius is taken.

36
A Bewtiful woman.

A kynge ſendeth the lieutenant fyue thousand men to tyll the grownde.

The kynges ſubmit themſelues to the Lieutenant

A newe gouernour of the ilande.

An vnworthy reward for ſoo greate paynes.

THE EYGHTH BOOKE OF THE FYRSTE DECADE,
to Cardinall Lodowike.



The greate, ryche, and plentiful Ocean sea, heretofore vnknownen, and nowe fownde by *Christophorus Colonus* the Admyrall, by th[e] autoritie and furtherance of the Catholyke kynge, I haue presented vnto yowre honoure (ryght noble Prince) lyke a golden cheyne vnwoorkmanly wrought. But yowe shall nowe receaue a precious iewell to bee appendaunt therto. Therefore emonge suche as were pylottes or gouernoures vnder the Admyrall, and had dilygently marked the courfes and differences of the wyndes, many had licences graunted them of the kynge to seeke further of theyr owne charges, vppon condicion to pay hym faithfully his portion, which is the fyft parte. But bycaufe emonge all other, one *Petrus Alphonfus* (cauled *Nignus* by his furname) sayled towarde the Southe with more prosperous fortune then any of the other, I thinke it best first to speake sumwhat of his vyage. He therefore, with only one shippe, well furnyshed at his owne charges, after that he had his passeporte with commaundement in no case to caste anker paste fyftie leaques distante from any place where the Admyrall hadde touched, sayled fyrste to *Paria* where the Admyrall fownde bothe the men and women foo laden with cheynes, garlandes, and brasettes of pearles, as wee haue sayde before. Coastynge therfore alonge by the fame shore accordinge to the kynges commaundement, (yet leauinge behynde hym the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapaná*) he came to the Region which th[e] inhabitants thereof, caule *Curiana*: where he fownd a hauen (as he saythe) muche lyke the porte of *Gades* or *Cales*. In to the which enteringe, he fawe a farre of certeyne howfes on the shore, and perceaued when he drewe nere, that it was a vylage of onely eyght howfes. Proceadyng yet further for the space of three myles, he espyed an other vylage well replenyshed with people, where there met hym fyftie naked men on a coompany hauinge with them a certeyne ruler, who defyred Alphonfus to coome to theyr coastes. He browght with hym at this tyme, many haukes belles, pynnes, nedels, brasettes, cheynes, garlandes, and rynges with counterfet stonnes and glasses, and such other tryfelles, the which within the momente of an houre, he hadde exchaunged for. xv. vneces of theyr pearles which they wore abowte theyr neckes and armes. Then they yet more earnestly defyred him to sayle to theyr coastes: Promysynge hym that he shulde there haue as many pearles as he wolde defyre. He conde[f]cended to their requeste: And the daye folowynge, came to the place where they appoynted hym: Lyinge there at anker, a great multytude of people resorted to hym, instantly requyringe hym to coome alande. But when he confydered the innumerable multytude of people which was there assembled, and that he had only. xxxiii. men in his coompany, he durste not commyt hym selfe to theyr handes, but gaued them to vnderstand by signes and tokens that they shulde coome to the shyppe with theyr canoas. For theyr boates (which the men of the Iland caule *Canoas*) are made only of one hole peece of woodde as in the Ilandes: yet more rude, and not soo artificially as theyrs are. These they caule *Gallitas*: They swarmed therefore to the shyp as faste as they myght, brynginge with them great plentie of pearles (which they caule *Tenorás*) exchaunginge the same for owre marchaundies. He fownde this people to bee of gentyl nature, simple and innocente, beinge conuerfant with them in theyr howfes, for the space of. xx. dayes. Theyr howfes are made of woodde, couered with the leaues of date trees. Theyr meate for the moste parte, is the shellyffshes in the whiche pearles are engendred, wherof theyr sea coastes are ful. They haue also greate plentie of wylde beastes, as hartes, wylde bores, and coonys lyke vnto hares, both in colour and byggenes. Stocke doues also, and turtle doues. Lykewyfe geefe and duckes which they nooryshe in theyr howfes as wee doo. Peacockes flye abowte in maner in euerye woodde and groue: but they are not distinct with fundry coloures as ours are: for the cockes are lyke vnto the hennes. These people of *Curiana*, are craftie hunters and exceding cunning archers, soo that they wyll not lightly mysse any beast or byrde that they shoote at. Owre men confumed certeyne dayes here very plefauntly. Duryng which tyme, who soo euer brought them a peacocke, had for the fame, foure pynnes. He that brought a pheasaunt, had twoo: And for a flocke doue or turtle doue, one: And for a goofe, a smaull lookinge glasse or a lyttle stone of glasse. Thus they bought and foulded with proferynge and byddyngge, denyngge and refusinge as it had byn in a greate market. When pynnes were profered them, they asked what they shulde doo with them, beinge naked. But owre men fatified them with a craftie answere, declaring by tokens that they were very necessary to picke theyr teeth and to pul thornes owte of theyr flesshe. But aboue al thynges haukes belles were most esteemed amonge them, for theyr founde and faire coloure: And wolde therefore gyue much for one of them. Owre men lodginge in theyr howfes, harde in the nyght seafon horryble noyfes and rorynges of wylde beastes in the wooddes which are full of exceadinge greate and hygh trees of fundry kyndes. But the beastes of these

The Ocean sea
heretofore
vnknownen.

Shipmasters vnder
the Admiral.

The fyft. portion
dewe to the kynge.

37

The nauigation of
Petrus Alphonfus.
Paria.

Cumana.
Manacapaná.
Curiana.

Pearles for tryfelles.

Great plentie of
pearles.
Humayne people.

Shel fyshes in
which pearles are
engendred.
Beastes and
foules.

Hunters and
archers.

Theyr maner of
bargening

The vse of pynnoes.

Haukes bells in
great estimation.

Roringe of wylde
beastes

wooddes, are not noyfome to men. For the people of the countrey goo dayly a hunting, naked, with their bowes and arrowes: Yet hath it not byn harde of, that any man hath byn slayne of any wylde beaste. As many hartes or wylde bores as owre men wolde defyre them to brynge, they wolde kyl in the wooddes with their bowes and arrowes, and not fayle to brynge them. They lacke kyne, goates, and sheepe. They breade is made of rootes, as is theirs of the Ilandes. This nation, hath blacke heare, grosse and fumwhat curld, yet longe also. They keepe their teeth very whyte: And for that purpose vse to cary a certeine herbe betwene theyr lypes for the most parte of the day, and to wasshe theyr mouthes when they cast it away. The women doo all theyr busynes at home in theyr howses, and haue also the cure of tyllage of the grounde. But the men apply them selues to the warres and huntyng, to playe, singyng and daunsing. They haue fundry kyndes of water pottes, iugges, and drinckinge cuppes made of earthe in other places abowt theym and brought thether for exchange of other thynges: For they vse fayres and markettes for the fame purpose: and are gretly defyrous of such thynges, as are not brought forth or made in theyr countrey, as nature hath gyuen a dispoition to al men to defyre and bee dellyted with newe and strange thynges. Many of them, had hangyng at theyr pearles, the Images of certeine beastes and birdes very artificiously made of golde, but not pure. These also are brought them from other places for exchange of other thynges. The golde wherof they are made, is natieue, and of much lyke finenes to that wherof the florenes are coyned. The men of this countrey, inclofe theyr priue members in a gourde, cutte after the fashion of a coddepiece: or els, coouer the fame with the shelle of a tortoyse, tyed abowte theyr loynes with laces of goffampine cotton. In other places of that tract, they thrust the synew within the sheethe therof, and bynde the skinne fast with a stringe. The greate wylde beastes wherof wee spake before, and many other thynges whiche are not founde in any of the Ilandes, testifie that this region is part of the continent or firme land. But the chiefeft coniecture wherby they argue the same, is, that by the coastes of that lande, from *Paria* towarde the weste, they sayled aboute three thoufande myles, fyndyng no signe or token of any ende. These people of *Curiana* (whiche fum caule *Curtana*) beinge demaunded where they hadde suche plentie of golde, signified that it was brought them from a Region cauled *Canchieta* or *Cauchieta*, beinge distant from them fyxe foonnes, that is, fyxe dayes iourney westwarde: And that theyr Images of goulde, were made in the fame Region. Where vppon owre men directed theyr vyage thither immediatly: and arryued there at the calendes of Nouember, in the yeare of Christ a thoufande and fyue hundreth. The people of the countrey reforted to them withoute feare, bryngyng with them of the golde which we sayde to bee natyue in that Region. This people had also collers of pearles abowte theyr neckes, whiche were brought them frome *Curiana* for exchange of theyr marchandies. None of them wolde exchange any of those thynges which they had owte of other countreys: as nother the Curians golde, nor the Canchietans pearles. Yet amonge the Canchietans, they fownde but little gold redy gathered. They toke with them from thense, certen very fayre marmafets or munkeys, and many poppingayes of fundry coloures. In the monethe of Nouember, the ayer was there most temperate, and nothyng coulede. The guardens of the north pole, were owte of fyght to bothe these people, they are soo nere to the Equinoctiall. Of the degrees of the pole, they can gyue none other accoumpte. These people, are wel dispoised men, of honest condicions, and nothyng suspicious. For all most all the nyght longe, they reforted to the shippe with theyr boates, and went aboorde ship withoute feare, as dyd the Curians. They caule pearles, *Corixas*. They are fumwhat ielyous. For, when any straungers coome emonge them, they euer place theyr women behynd them. In this Region of *Canchieta*, the goffampine trees growe of them selues commonly in many places, as doo with vs elmes, wyllowes, and falowes. And therefore they vse to make breeches of cotton, wherwith they coouer theyr pryue partes in many other Regions there aboute. When they had yet sayled on forwarde by the fame coastes, there came fourth ageynste them abowte twoo thoufande men, armed after theyr maner, forbydding them to coome aland. These people were soo rude and saluage, that owre men coulede by no meanes allure them to familiaritie. Owre men therefore, contented only with their pearles, returned backe the fame way they came: where they remayned with the Curians continually for the space of twentie dayes, and fylled theyr bellies wel with good meate. And here it seemeth to me, not farre from my purpose, to declare what chaunced vnto them in theyr returne, when they came nowe within the fyght of the coaste of *Paria*. They happened therefore in the way, at *Os Draconis* and the goulfes of *Paria*, (wherof wee spake before) to meete with a nauie of. xviii. Canoas of *Canibales* which went a rouyng to hunt for men. Who as soone as they had espyed owr men, assailed theyr shippe fiercely and without feare enclosed the fame, disturbing owre men on euery fyde with theyr arrowes. But owre men so feared them with theyr gunnes, that they fledde immediatly, whom owre menne folowinge with the shippe boate, tooke one of theyr Canoas, and in it, only one Canibal (for the other had escaped) and with hym, an other man bownde: Who, with teares runninge downe his cheekes, and with giesture of his handes, eyes, and heade, signified that fyxe of his coompanyons had byn cruelly cutte in pieces and eaten of that myfcheuous nation: and that he shulde haue byn lykewyse handeled the day folowyng. Wherfore they gaue hym poure ouer the Canyball, to doo with hym what he wolde. Then with the *Canibales* owne clubbe, he layde on hym al that he might dryue with

Hartes and wylde bores.

38
Blacke and curld heare.
White teethe.

Earthen vessels.

Conning artificers.

Base golde.

A strange maner of couerage theyr priuities.

Tokens of the contioer or firme lande.

The golden Region of Canchieta.

Temperate ayer in Nouember.

The Equinoctiall lyne.
Humane people

Gossampine trees.
Chorlyshe people

Alphonsus returneth to *Paria*.

Canibales in the goulfes of *Paria*.

39

Death for death.

Howe the
canibales fortifie
theyr campe

Haraia.

Salte engendred
of the water of
the sea.

Sprynge of salt
water.

The bodies of
princes dryed and
reserued

Threescore and
xvi. poundes
weight of perles
for. v. shillynges.
The course of the
sea toward the
weste.

Perles as common
as chaffe
Petrus Alphonsus
in prison.

Orient perles as
bygge as hasel
nuttes.

40

Curiana
Os Draconis.
Cumana.
Manacapana.
The Iland of
Margarita.

The nauigation of
Vincentius and
Aries Pinzonus

Licence and
passeporte.

hande and foote, grinninge and fretinge as it had byn a wylde bore: Thinkynge that he had not yet sufficiently reuenged the death of his companions, when he had beaten owte his braynes and guttes. When he was demaunded after what forte the Canibales were woont to inuade other contreys, he answered that they euer vfed to carye with them in theyr Canoas, a greate multitude of clubbes: The whiche, where foo euer they lande, they pitche in the grownde, and encampe them felues within the coompasse of the same, to lye the more safely in the nyght seafon. In *Curiana*, they fownde the head of a capitaine of the Canibales, nailed ouer the doore of a certeyne gouernoure, for a token of victorie, as it hadde byn the slanderde or helmette taken from the enemye in battayle. In these coastes of *Paria*, is a Region cauled *Haraia*, in the whiche, greate plentie of falte is gathered after a strange forte. For the fea beinge there tossed with the poure of the wyndes, dryueth the falte waters into a large playne by the fea fyde: where: afterward when the fea waxeth caulme, and the foonne begynneth to shyne, the water is congeled into moste pure and whyte falte, wherewith innumerable shyppes might bee laden, if men doo reforte thether for the same beefore there faule any rayne. For the rayne meltethe it, and causeth it to synke into the sande, and foo by the pores of the earthe, to returne to the place from whence it was dryuen. Other say, that the playne is not fylled from the fea, but of certeyne springes whose water is more sharpe and falt then the water of the fea. Th[e] inhabitants doo greatlye esteeme this bay of falte. Which they vse, not only for their owne commoditie, but also workinge the same into a square forme lyke vnto bricke, they sell it to strangers for exchange of other thynges whiche they lacke. In this Region, they stretche and drye the deade bodies of theyr kinges and noble men, layinge the same vpon a certeyne frame of woodde much lyke vnto a hurdle or grediren, with a gentell fyre vnder the same, thus by lyttle and lyttle confuminge the flesshe and keepinge the skynne hole with the bones inclofed therein. These dryed carcafes, they haue in greate reuerence, and honour them for theyr houfeholde and famylier goddes. They say that in this place they sawe a man, and in an other place a woman, thus dryed and referued. When they departed from *Curiana*, the. viii. day of the Ides of February to returne to Spayne, they had three score and. xvi. poundes weight (after. viii. vneces to the pownde) of perles, which they bought for exchange of owre thynges, amountinge to the value of fyue shyllinges. Departinge therefore, they consumed three score dayes in theyr iourney (althowgh it were shorter then frome *Hispaniola*) by reason of the contynuall course of the sea into the weste, whiche dyd not only greatlye fley the shippe, but also sumtymes dryue it backe. But at the length they came home foo laden with perles, that they were with euery maryner, in maner as common as chaffe. But the master of the shyppes, *Petrus Alphonsus*, beinge accused of his companyons that he had flowen a great multitude of precious perles, and defrauded the kyng of his portion which was the fyue part, was taken of *Fernando de Vega*, a man of greate lerninge and experience and gouernour of *Gallecia*, where they arryued, and was there kepte in pryson a longe tyme. But he stylly denyeth that euer he deteyned anye parte of the perles. Many of these perles were as bygge as hasell nuttes, and oriente, (as we caule it) that is, lyke vnto them of the Easte partes. Yet not of foo greate price, by reason that the holes therof are not foo perfecte. When I my selfe was presente with the ryght honorable duke of *Methyna*, and was bidden to dyner with hym, in the cite of Ciuile, they browght to hym aboue a hundreth and twentie vneces of perles to be foule: which surelye did greatlye delyte me with their fayrenes and brightnes. Sum saye, that *Alphonsus* hadde not these perles in *Curiana* beinge distante from *Os Draconis* more then a hundreth and twentie leaques, but that he had them in the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapana*, nere vnto *Os Draconis* and the Ilande of *Margarita*. For they deny that there is any perles fownde in *Curiana*. But sith the matter is yet in controuerfie, we wyll passe to other matters. Thus muche yowe haue whereby yowe maye coniecture what commoditie in tyme to coome may bee looked for from these newe landes of the west Ocean, whereas at the fyrste discoueringe, they shewe such tokens of greate ryches. Thus fare ye well.

THE. IX. BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE to Cardynall Lodouike.



Incentiagnes Pinzonus, and also *Aries Pinzonus*, his neuie, by his brothers fyde, which accompanied the Admiral *Colonus* in his fyrste vyage, and were by him appoynted to bee masters of two of the smaule shippes which the Spanyardes caule *Carauelas*, beinge moued by the greate ryches and amplytude of the new landes, furnyshed of theyr owne charges, foure carauels in the hauen of theyr owne countrey which the Spanyardes caule *Palos*, bortheringe on the weste Ocean. Hauynge therfore the kynges licence and passeporte to departe, they loofed from the hauen, abowte the Calendes of December, in the year 1499. This hauen

of *Palos* is three fcore and twelue myles diftant from *Gades*, commonly cauled *Cales*: and three fcore and foure myles from *Ciulle*. All th[e] inhabitants of this towne, not one excepted, are greatly gyuen to fearching of the fea, and continually exercyfed in fayling. They alfo directed theyr vyage fyrft to the Ilandes of Canarie by the Ilandes of *Hefferides*, nowe cauled *Cabouerde*, which fum caule *Gorgodes Meducias*. Saylinge therfore directly towarde the fouth frome that Iland of the *Hefferides* which the Portugales (being poffeffers of the fame) caule *Sancti Iacobi*, and departinge frome thence at the Ides of Ianuary, they folowed the fouthweft wynde, beinge in the myddeft betwene the fouth and the wefte. When they fuppofed that they had fayled aboute three hundrethe leaques by the fame wynde, they fay that they lofte the fyght of the Northe ftarre: and were fhortelye after, toffed with excedinge tempeftes bothe of wynde and fea, and vexed with intollerable heate. Yet fayled they on further (not without greate daunger) for the fpace of twoo hundrethe and fortie leaques, folowing yet the fame wynde by the loft pole. Wherefore, whether habitable Regions bee vnder the Equinoctiall lyne or not, let thefe men and the owlde wryters, afwel Philofophers as poetes and cofmographers difcuffe. For thefe men, affirme it to bee habitable, and marueloufly replenifhed with people: and they, that it is vnhabitable by reafon of the foone beames dependenge perpendicularly or directlye ouer the fame. Yet were there many of the oulde wryters, whiche attempted to proue it habitable. Thefe maryners beinge demaunded, if they fawe the fouth pole, they anfwered that they knewe no ftarre there lyke vnto this pole, that myght be decerned aboute the poynte. But that they fawe an other order of ftarres, and a certeyne thicke myft ryfyng from the horizontall lyne, which greatly hyndered theyr fyght. They contende alfo, that there is a great heape or ryfyng in the myddeft of the earth, which taketh away the fyght of the fouth pole, vntyll they haue vtterly paffed ouer the fame. But they verely beleue that they fawe other images of ftarres, muche differinge from the fituation of the ftarres of owre hemifpherie or halfe circle of heauen. Howe fooeuer the matter bee, as they informe vs, wee certifie yowe. At the lengthe, the feuenth day of the calendes of Februarye, they efpied lande a farre of. And feinge the water of the fea to bee troubelous, foundinge with theyr plummet, they founde it to bee. xvi. fathames deepe. Goinge a lande, and tarienge there for the fpace of twoo dayes, they departed bycaufe they faw no people fteringe, althowghe they fownde certeyne fleppes of men by the fea fyde. Thus grauinge on the trees and the ftones nere vnto the fhore, the kynges name and theyrs, and the tyme of theyr comming thether, they departed. Not farre from this ftation, folowyng the fyers on the lande by nyght, they founde a nation lyinge vnder the open fyrmamente after the maner of warre. Owre men thought it not befte to trowle them vntyll the morninge. Therefore, at the ryfyng of the foone, fortie of owre men well armed, wente toward them: ageynft whom came furth. xxxii. of them, with bowes, flinges and dartes, euen redy to the feyght. The other companye folowed them, armed after the fame maner. Owr men affirme that they were of hygher ftature then eyther the Almaynes or Pannonians. They behelde owre men with frownyng and threatenynge countenance. But owre men thought it not good to faule to bickeringe with them, vncerteyne whether it were for feare, or bycaufe they wolde not dryue them to flight. Wherefore they went aboute to allure them by faire meanes and rewardes. But they refused all kynde of gentelnes, and ftoode euer in a redines to feight, declaringe the fame by fignes and tokens. Thus owr men reforted to theyr fhippes, and they to the place from whence they came, without any further bufynes. The fame nyght abowte mydnyght, they fledde, and left the place voyde where they lay in campe. Owre men fuppofe them to bee a vagabunde and wanderinge nacion lyke vnto the Scythians, withowte houfes or certeyne dwellinge places, lyuinge onely with the fruites of the earth, hauing theyr wyues and chyldren folowinge them. Such as meafured their footeftepes in the fande, affirme with greate othes, that one of theyr feete is almoft as longe as twoo feete of owre men of the meane forte. Saylinge on yet further, they founde an other ryuer, but not of deapth fufficient to beare the carauels. They fent therfore the foure fhippe boates to lande, ful of armed men to fearch the countrey. They efpied vpon a hyghe hyll nere vnto the fea fyde, a greate multitude of people, to whom owre company fent furthe one man with certeyne of owre thynges to allure them to exchange. And when he had caft a haukes bell towarde them, they caft downe a wedge of golde a cubette longe. The which as he ftouped to take vppe, they foodenly inclofed hym, and caryed hym away. But he was fhortly after refcued by his companyons, to fum of their paynes: for they flewe eyght of owre men, and wounded many a farre of, with theyr arrowes, and dartes made of wood hardened at the endes with fyre. After this, they encompafed owre fhippe boates within the ryuer, and came raffhelye within the reache of owre men, layinge houlde on the boates fydes, where they were thruft through and hewen in peeces as it had byn fheepe, by reafon they were naked. Yet wolde they not for al this, gyue ouer: but tooke from owre men one of their boates, hauing noo men in it. For the gouernour therof being flayne with an arrowe, the other fledde and escaped. And thus they left this fierce and warlyke people, faylinge towarde the northweft alonge by the fame coaftes, with forowfull hartes for the death of theyr companyons. [When they had fayled abowte. xl. leaques, they chaunced into a fea of fuche freffe water, that they fylled theyr banelles and hogges heades therwith. Searching the caufe hereof, they vnderftoode that a vehement courfe of ryuers difcended with great violence from the toppes of certeyne greate hylles. They fay

Cales. Ciulle.

The Ilandes of Canarie
Cabouerde.

S. Iames Ilande.

The North pole
owte of syght.

Habitable Regions
vnder the
Equinoctiall lyne.

An other order of
ftarres
A thicke mist
A ryfyng in the
myddeft of the
earth.

41

People of hygh
ftature.

A vagabunde
kynde of men

Giantes.

Desperate
bouldenes.

A sea of freshe
water.

Cap 7. 1. 1.

Many fruitfull
Ilandes.
Humane people.

Mariatamball.
Camomorus.
Paricora.

Regions of Paria.
Golde and perles.

Os Draconis.

Cumana.
Manacapaná.
Curiana

The hole earth
largely taken,
maye bee cauled
an Ilande.

Maragnonus
a ryuer
of exceadinge
breadth and full
of Ilandes looke
decade ii. liber. ix.

42

Boriostomea, and
Spiriostomea,
mouthes of the
ryuer of Danubius.

The commodities
of the Regions
and Ilandes about
Paria.
Brasile.

Mani fruitfull
Ilandes lefte
desolate.
Canibales.

Trees of Cassia
fistula.

Trees of maruelous
byggenges.
A monstrous
beaste.

Alteracion of ayer
and change of
meate

Cathay in India
beyonde the
ryuer of Ganges
A shipwrake
by tempest.

also that there lyeth within the sea, many fortunate and fruitfull Ilandes, and well inhabyted: And that th[e]inhabitantes of this tracte are men of meeke nature and fuche as doo not refuse strangers: Yet lyttle profytable to them, bycause they had noo marchandyes for their purpose, as golde or precyous stones. For lacke wherof, they brought frome thense thyrtye captiues to sell for slaues. Th[e]inhabitantes caule this Region *Mariatambal*. The Region of the easte parte of that ryuer, is cauled *Camomorus*: And that of the weste parte, *Paricora*: in the mid lande wherof, th[e]inhabitantes signified that there is greate plentie of golde. For, folowynge this ryuer directly toward the Northe (as the bendynge of the shore requyred) they recouered ageyne the syght of the north pole. All the coaste of this tracte, perteyneth to *Paria*, the which (as we sayd before) was fyrst founde by *Colonus* hym selfe, and hath in maner in euery place, greate abundaunce of pearles. They saye that these coastes are adioynynge vnto, and all one with *Os Draconis*, and also bortherynge vpon the Regions of *Cumana*, *Manacapaná*, *Curiana*, *Cauchieta*, and *Cuchibachoa*. Wherefore they thought it to bee parte of the firme lande of India beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*. For the greate and large coompasse therof, dothe not permit that it shulde bee an Ilande. Albeit, the hole earth vncouered with water, largely taken, may bee cauled an Ilande. From the poynte of that land where they lost the sight of the north pole, saylynge by a continuall tracke abowte three hundreth leaques towarde the weste syde of *Paria*, they say that almoste in the mydde way, they chaunced into a ryuer cauled *Maragnonum*, which they affirme to bee of fuch exceadinge breadth, that it myght feeme incredible, if the antiquitie dyd not make mention of the lyke. Beinge demaunded of me if it were not falte water where it diuided the lande, they answered, that the water therof was very fresshe and sweete: And that the further it ranne, to bee soo muche the fressher: Also full of Ilandes and holsome fyfhe. They dare auouche the breadth therof, to bee more then thirtie leaques. Yet if wee well weighe and consyder the largenes and wydenes of *Boriostomea* and *Spiriostomea*, the mouthes of the famous ryuer of *Ister* (nowe cauled *Danubius*) and howe farre they violate or corrupte the falte water with their freshenes, wee shall cease to marueile, although this other ryuer bee greater. For, who can diminysshe the poure of nature, but that it may make this bigger then the other, and an other bygger then this. And I suppose this to bee the ryuer wherof *Colonus* the Admirall made mention in the discription of his vyage in these coastes. But wee shall hereafter haue further knowlege hereof. Let vs nowe therefore returne to the commodities of these Regions. They fownde in many Ilandes abowte *Paria*, great wooddes of brasile trees: And brought awaye with them, three thousande poundes weight thereof. They say that the brasile of *Hispaniola*, is muche better then this, to dye clothe with a more fayre and durable colour. From hense, folowynge the wynde (whiche the Spanyardes caule *Norduest*, and the Italians *Graco*) they passed by many Ilandes very fruitfull, yet lefte defolate and wasted by reason of the crueltie of the Canibales. For they went alande in many places, and fownde the ruines of many destroyed howfes. Yet in sum places, they founde men, but those exceadinge fearefull, flynge to the mountaynes, rockes, and wooddes at the sight of euery straunger or shippe, and wanderinge without houfes or certeyne abydinge places, for feare of the Caniballes layinge wayte and huntinge after them. Here they founde those great trees which of them selues in dyuers places bringe furth the fruite or spice whiche the Apothecaries caule *Cassia fistula*: And that of noo lesse goodnes then that which the phisitians minister to such as bee diseased with the ague. But it was not ripe at theyr beinge there. They affirme that there are trees of fuche byggenes, that. xvi. men ioynynge handes togyther and standinge in coompasse, can scarcely embrace sum of them. Emonge these trees is fownde that monstrous beaste with a snowte lyke a foxe, a taylor lyke a marmasette, eares lyke a batte, handes lyke a man, and feete lyke an ape, bearing her whelpes abowte with her in an owtwarde bellye much lyke vnto a greate bagge or purse. The deade carkas of this beaft, you sawe with me, and turned it ouer and ouer with yowre owne handes, marueylynge at that newe belly and wonderfull prouision of nature. They say it is knowen by experience, that shee neuer letteth her whelpes goo owte of that purse, except it bee eyther to play, or to sucke, vntyl fuche tyme that they bee able to gette theyr lyuing by them selues. They tooke this beaste with her whelpes: But the whelpes dyed shortly after in the shyppes. Yet the damme liued certeyne moonethes: But at the length, not beinge able to abyde soo greate alteration of ayer, and change of meate, shee dyed also in the way. But of this beaste, wee haue sayde enowgh. Let vs nowe therefore returne to the autoures of these thynges. These twoo *Pinzoni*, the vncler and the neuie, susteyned manye great trowbles and horrible tempestes and perilles in this nauigation. For when they had nowe sayled by the coastes of *Paria* abowte. vi. hundreth leaques, and (as they supposed) beyonde the cite of *Cathay* and the coastes of Easte India beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*, there rose foodenly soo fierce a tempeste in the mooneth of Iuly, that, of the foure carauels which they had with them, twoo were drowned euen beefore theyr eyes: and the thyrde lyenge at anker, with lyke foodennes caryed owte of theyr fyght through the violence of the tempeste: The fourth also lyeinge at anker, was soo shaken and broofed, that al the feames therof were almost loofed. Yet came they to lande owt of this laste shyppe, but vtterlye despayrynge of the shyppe. Wherefore consultyng with them selues what was best to bee doone in soo extreeme a case, and how to prouide them a safe dwellinge place in those Regions beinge owt of al hope how to departe from thense, they determined

to fley all the inhabitantes of the contrey nere abowte them, leaſte they with the other ſhulde conſpire togyther to kyl them, but theyr fortune was better. For the carauell which the tempeſte had caryed away, was coome to them ageyne. This had in it. xviii. men: And the other that remayned, was faued and repayed. With theſe two therefore, they tooke theyr vyage directly to Spaine And thus beinge toſſed with tempeſtes and vexed with aduerſities, they returned to theyr natiue contrey of *Palos*, to theyr wyues and children, the day before the Calendes of October, with the loſſe of many of theyr dere frendes and neighbours. They brought with them Cinamome and gynger: but not very good, bycauſe they were not there fully ſeaſoned with the heate of the ſoone before they brought them from thenſe. They brought alſo, certeyne precious ſtones, whiche *Baptiſta Elyſius*, that excellent philoſopher and yowre lordſhippes phiſitian, affirmeth to bee trewe Topaſes. After theſe mens returne, other of theyr neighbours beinge moued thereto by a certeyne emulation, to proue yf theyr fortune wolde bee anye better, lyke men of good corage, beinge nothing diſcomforted by the harde fortune of theyr neighbours, knowinge that it often tymes chaunceth that that which is one mans vndoinge is an other mans makynge, attempted a newe vyage towarde the fowthe by the coaſtes of *Paria*, folowyng the ſteppes of *Colonus* the Admiral, who had fyrſt diſcouered the fame. They alſo brought with them greate plentie of *Caffia fiſtula*: And fownde that precious medicine cauled of the Spanyardes, *Anima album*, whoſe perfume is of moſt excellent effect to heale the reumes, murrus, and heauines of the heade. As touchinge this vyage, as yet I knowe noo other newes that I thought worthy to certifie yowe of. Wherefore, I wyl nowe make an ende of this booke, bycauſe yow put me ſo often in remembrance of your departure. Yet to accompliſhe the Decade, I wyl declare ſumwhat of the ſuperſtitions of *Hiſpaniola*. Yowe ſhall nowe therefore vnderſtand the illuſions wherwith the people of the Ilande haue byn ſeduced after the errorrs of the owlde gentilitie, and wandered in the ignorance and blyndenes of humane nature corrupted by the diſobedience of owr fyrſt parentes, which hath remayned in all nations vpon the face of the earth, except where it hath pleaſed god by the lyght of his ſpिरite by his woorde, to poure vppon his electe the grace of renouation, by the lyght wherof the naturall darkenes receaueth fume clearenes as in a glaſſe, vntyll imperfection ſhalbe abolyſhed. Owre men therefore, were longe in the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola*, before they knewe that the people thereof honorede any other thyng then the lyghtes of heauen, or had any other Religion. But when theye had byne nowe longe conuerſante with them, and by vnderſtandyng their language, drewe to a further familiaritie, they had knowlege that they vſed dyuers rites and ſuperſtitions. I haue therefore gathered theſe fewe thynges folowyng, owte of a booke wrytten by one *Ramonus* an heremyte, whom *Colonus* had leſte with certeyne kynges of the Ilande to inſtruct them in the Chriſtian fayth. And bycauſe in maner their hole religion is none other thing then Idolatry, I wyl begynne at theyr Idoles. It is therefore apparenſe by the Images which they honour openly and commonly, that there appere vnto them in the nyghte ſeaſons certeyne phantaſies and illuſions of euyl ſpिरites, ſeducinge them into many ſonde and folyſhe errorrs. For they make certeyne Images of goſſampine cotton fouled or wretched after theyr maner, and harde ſtopped within. Theſe Images they make ſytting, much lyke vnto the pictures of ſpिरites and deuelles which owr paynters are accuſtomed to paint vppon waules. But forasmuch as I my ſelfe ſent yowe foure of theſe Images, yowe may better preſently ſignifie vnto the kyng yowre vnclē, what maner of thynges they are, and howe lyke vnto paynted deuelles, then I can expreſſe the fame by wrytynge. Theſe Images, th[e] inhabitantes caule *Zemes*: wherof the leaſte, made to the lykēnes of younge deuels, they bind to theyr forheades when they goo to the warres ageynſt their enemies: And for that purpoſe haue they thoſe ſtrynges hangynge at them which yowe ſee. Of theſe, they beleue to obeyne rayne if rayne be lackyng, and lykewyſe fayre wether. For they thinke that theſe *Zemes* are the mediatours and meſſengers of the greate god, whom they acknowledge to be only one, eternall, withowte ende, omnipotent and inuiſible. Thus euery kyng hath his particuler *Zemes* which he honoureth. They caule the eternall god, by theſe twoo names, *Iocauna*, and *Guamaonocon*, as theyr prediceffours tawght them. Affirminge that he hath a father cauled by theſe fyue names: that is, *Attabeira*, *Mamona*, *Guacarapita*, *Liella*, *Guimazoa*. Nowe ſhall yowe heare what they fable on the earth as touchinge the originall of man. There is in the Ilande a Region cauled *Caunana*, wher they fayne that mankynde came fyrſt owte of twoo caues of a mountayne: and that the byggeſt forte of men, came furth of the mouth of the byggeſt caue, and the leaſt forte owte of the leaſte caue. The rocke in the which theſe caues are, they caule *Cauta*. The greateſt denne, they name *Cazibaxagua*, and the leſſe *Amaiauna*. They ſay, that before it was lawful for men to come forth of the caue, the mouth of the caue was kepte and watched nyghtly by a man whoſe name was *Machochael*. This *Machochael*, departinge ſumwhat farre from the caue to th[e]intente to ſee what thynges were abrode, was foodenly taken of the foonne (whoſe fight he was forbydden) and was turned into a ſtone. They fayne the lyke of dyuers other, that whereas they went forth in the nyghte ſeaſon a fyſſhyng, ſo farre from the caue that they coulde not returne before the ryſyng of the ſoone (the which it was not lawful for them to behold) they were transformed into myrobalane trees, which of them ſelues growe plentifully in the Ilande. They faye furthermore, that a certeyne ruler cauled *Vagoniona*, ſent one furth of the caue to goo a fyſſhyng, who by lyke chaunce

Extreme remedie in a desperat case

43

Cinamome and gynger

Topaſes.

Men of noble corage.

A nother vyage

Anima album

The ſuperſtitions of hispaniola. The errorrs of the owlde gentilitie.

The grace of renouation.

Ramonus an heremyte. Idolatry and Idoles.

Illuſions of euyl ſpिरites. Images of goſſampine cotton

Zemes. Younge deuyls.

Mediatours. Only one god eternall. The names of god. The father of god.

The originall of man kynde

Fables much lyke Ouide his transformations

44

The original of Mirobalane trees.

The nightgale.	was turned into a nyghtyngale bycause the foonne was ryfen beefore he came ageyne to the caue : And that
The Iland of Mathinino.	yearelye abowte the same tyme that he was turned into a byrde, he dothe in the nyght with a moornyng fonge bewayle his myffortune, and caule for the helpe of his maister <i>Vagoniona</i> . And this they thynke to bee the
Children turned into frogges.	cause why that byrde singeth in the night seafon. But <i>Vagoniona</i> , beinge fore troubled in his mynd for the losse of his familer frende whom he loued foo intierly, leauinge the men in the caue, brought foorth onely the
A speciall grace.	women with theyr fuckyng chylde, leauinge the women in one of the Ilandes of that tracte, cauled <i>Mathinino</i> , and caryed the chylde awaye with hym : which poore wretches oppressed with famine, fainted and remained
Holy reliques	on the banke of a certeyne ryuer where they were turned into frogges, and cryed <i>toa, toa</i> , that is, <i>mama, mama</i> , as chylde are wont to crye for the mothers pappe. And hereof they fay it commeth that frogges vse to crye fo
Women are slippery cattayle. Al wisdome goeth not by age.	pytifully in the spryng tyme of the yeare : And that men were scattered abroad in the caues of <i>Hifpaniola</i> withoute the companie of women. They fay also, that whereas <i>Vagoniona</i> hym selfe, was accustomed to
Here nedeth sum tropological interpretour.	wander in dyuers places, and yet by a speciall grace, neuer transformed, defcended to a certeyne fayre woman whom he fawe in the bottome of the sea, and receaued of her certeyne pibble stonnes of marble (whiche they
<i>Myrmidones</i>	caule <i>Cibas</i>) and also certeyne yelowe and bright plates of laton, whiche they caule <i>Guaninos</i> . These thynges to this day are had in greate estimation amonge the kynges, as goodly iewels and most holy reliques. These
Preachers for the denyll.	men whiche we fayde before were lefte in the caues withoute women, went furth in the nyght (as they fay) to wasshe them selues in a ponde of raine water and fawe a farre of by the way a greate multitude of certeyne
A vengeable greate gourde.	beastes in shape sumwhat lyke vnto women, creping as thicke as antes aboute the myrobalane trees : And that as they attempted to take these beastes, they slypped owte of their handes as they had byn yeles. Where vpon
The originall of the sea.	they consulted, and determyned by th[e]advice of the elders, that al suche shulde bee fowght foorthe amonge them, as were scabbyd and leprous, to th[e]intente that with theyr rowghe and harde handes, they myght th[e]efelyer take holde of them. These men, they caule <i>Caracaracoles</i> : And fente them foorthe a huntinge to take
45	these beastes. But of many which they tooke, they coude keepe but only foure : The whiche as they wolde haue vsed for women, they fownde that they lacked womans priuities. Wherefore caulinge th[e]elders ageyne to
The originall of Ilandes.	counsayle, to consult what were beste to bee done in this case, theyr advice was that the byrde which wee caule the Pye, shuld bee admitted with his byll to open a place for that purpose, whyle in the meane tyme these men
A holy caue.	cauled <i>Caracaracoles</i> , shulde hould fast the womens thighes abroad with theyr rowgh handes. Full wyfely therfore was the pye put to this office, and opened the womens priuities, and hereof the women of the Ilande haue
Images.	theyr original and offspringe. But nowe doo I ceafe to marueyle that the owlde Grekes dyd fable and wryte fo many bookes of the people cauled <i>Myrmidones</i> , which they fayned to bee engendred of antes or pissemerer.
The originall of the soone and moone.	These and suche lyke, the fagest and wyfest of the people, preache continually to the simple forte, and reherse the fame as moste holy oracles. But it is yet more chyldyshe that they fable as touchinge th[e]originall of the
Pylgramage.	sea. For they fay that there was once in the Ilande, a man of greate power, whose name was <i>Iaia</i> : whose only foonne beinge dead, he buryed hym within a greate gourde. This <i>Iaia</i> , greuouflye takyng the death of his
Walkyng sprytes. <i>Incubi</i> .	foonne, after a fewe moonthes, came ageyne to the gourde : The which when he had opened, there isshewed foorth many great whales and other monsters of the sea : where vpon he declared to suche as dwelt abowte
A remedye ageynst walkyng sprytes.	hym, that the sea was enclosed in that gourde. By which report, foure brethren (borne of one woman who dyed in her trauail) beinge moued, came to the gourde in hope to haue many fyshes. The whiche when they had taken in theyr handes, and espied <i>Iaia</i> comming, (who oftentymes resorted to the gourd to vifet the boones of his foonne) fearinge least he shulde suspecte them of thefte and sacrileage, sodaynely let the gourde faule owte of theyr handes : which beinge broken in the faule the sea furthwith brake owte at the ryftes therof, and so fylled the vales, and ouerflowed the playnes, that only the mountaynes were vncouered, whiche nowe conteyne the Ilandes which are seene in those coastes. And this is the oppinion of theyr wyfe men as concernyng th[e]originall of the sea. But nowe (most noble prince) you shall heare a more pleasaunt fable. There is a certeyne caue cauled <i>Iouanaboina</i> , in the territyre of a certeyne kyng whose name is <i>Machinnech</i> . This caue they honour more religiously then dyd the Grekes in tyme paste, Corinth, Cyrrha, or Nyfa : And haue adourmed it with pictures of a thousand fashions. In th[e]enterance of this caue they haue twoo grauen <i>Zemes</i> , wherof the one is cauled <i>Binhaitel</i> , and the other <i>Marobu</i> . Beinge demaunded why they had this caue in foo greate reuerence, they answered earnestly, bycause the Soonne and the Moone came fyrst owt of the fame to gyue lyght to the worlde. They haue religious conourse to these caues, as wee are accustomed to goo on Pylgramage to Rome or Vaticane, Compostele, or Hierusalem, and most holye and heade places of owre Religion. They are also subiect to an other kynde of superstition. For they thinke that deade folkes walke in the nyght, and eate of the fruite cauled <i>Guannaba</i> , vnknewen vnto vs, and sumwhat lyke vnto a quynfe. Affirmyng also that they are conuerfant with lyuing people, euen in theyr beddes, and to deceaue women in takyng vpon them the shape of men, shewyng them selues as though they wolde haue to doo with them : But when the matter commeth to actual deede, foodenly to vanyshe away. If any doo suspecte that a deade body lyeth by hym when he feeleth anye straunge thyng in the bedde, they fay hee shalbe owt of dout

by feelynge of the belly therof: affirmyng that the spirites of deade men may take vpon them al the members of mans body, fauinge only the nauell. If therefore by lacke of the nauell he doo perceauce that a deade body lyeth by hym, the feelynge is immediatly refolued. They beleue verely, that in the nyght, and often tymes in theyr iourneys, and especially in common and hygh wayes, deade men doo meete with the luyunge. Ageynste whome, if any man bee floute and owte of feare, the phantafye vanyssheth incontinently. But yf anye feare, the phantafy or vyfion doth foo affaute hym and ftryke hym with further feare, that manye are thereby astonysfhed and haue the lymmes of theyr bodyes taken. Th[e]inhabytantes beinge demaunded of whom they had those vayne supersticions, they answered that they were lefte them of theyr forefathers as by discent of inheritance: And that they haue had the fame (before the memory of man) compofed in certeine rymes and fonges, which it was lawful for none to lerne but onely the kynges foonnes, who commytted the fame to memorye, bycaufe they hadde neuer any knoweledge of letters. These they fynge beefore the people on certeyne folemne and festiuall dayes, as most religious ceremonies: whyle in the meane tyme they play on a certeyne instrumente made of one hole peece of woodde sumwhat holowe lyke a tymbrell. Their preestes and diuines (whom they caule *Boitios*) instructe them in these superstitions. These preestes, are also phisitians, diuisinge a thousande craftes and subtylties howe to deceaue the simple people which haue them in greate reuerence. For they persuaue them that the *Zemes* vse to speak with theym familiarlye, and tel them of thynges to come. And if any haue bin sicke and are recovered, they make them beleue that they obteyned their healthe of the *Zemes*. These *Boitii*, bynde them selues to muche fastinge and owtewarde clenlynes and poureinges: Especially when they take vpon them the cure of any Prince. For then they drynke the pouder of a certeyne herbe, by whose qualitie they are dryuen into a furye: At whiche tyme (as they say) they lerne many thynges by reuelation of the *Zemes*. Then, puttinge secreatly in theyr mouthes, eyther a stone, or a bone, or a piece of fleshe, they coomme to the sicke perfon, commaundinge al to departe owte of that place, excepte one or twoo, whom it shall please the sicke man to appoynt. This doone, they goo about hym three or foure tymes, greatly deforminge theyr faces, lypes, and nofethrils with fundry fylthy giestures: blowynge, breathinge, and fuckyng the forheade, temples, and necke of the pacient, wherby (they faye) they drawe the euyll ayer from hym, and fucke the difeafe owt of his veynes. Then rubbinge hym about the shoulders, thyghes, and legges, and drawynge downe their handes close by his feete, holdinge them yet faste togyther, they runne to the dore beinge open, where they vnclose and shake their handes, affirminge that they haue dryuen away the difeafe, and that the pacient shall shortly bee perfectly restored to health. After this, comynge behynde hym, he conueygheth the piece of fleshe owte of his owne mouth like a iuggeler, and sheweth it to the sicke man, sayinge, behoulde what you haue eaten to muche: you shall nowe bee hole, bycaufe I haue taken this from you. But if he intende yet further to deceaue the pacient, he persuaedeth hym that his *Zemes* is angry, eyther bycaufe he hath not buylded hym a chapell, or not honored hym religiously, or not dedicated vnto him a groue or garden. And if it foo chaunce that the sicke perfon dye, his kinsfolkes by wytchecrafte enforce the deade to confesse whether he dyed by naturall destenye, or by the neglygence of the *Boitius*, in that he had not fasted as he shulde haue doone, or not mynistred a conuenient medicine for the difeafe. Soo that yf this phisitian bee founde faultie, they take reuenge of hym. Of the stones or bones which these *Boitii* carye in theyr mouthes, yf the women can coome by them, they keepe them religiously beleauinge them to bee greatly effectuall to helpe women whiche trauallye with chyld: And therefore honoure them as they doo theyr *Zemes*. For dyuers of th[e]inhabitantes, honour *Zemes* of dyuers fashions. Some make them of woodde, as they were admonyshed by certeyne visions apperinge vnto them in the wooddes. Others, whiche haue receaued anfwere of them amonge the rockes, make them of stone and marble. Sum they make of rootes to the similitude of fuche as appeare to them when they are gathering the rootes cauled *Ages*, wherof they make theyr breade, as we haue sayde before. These *Zemes*, they beleue to send plentie and frutefulness of those rootes, as the antiquitie beleued fuche fayries or spirites as they cauled *Dryades*, *Hamadryades*, *Satyros*, *Panes*, and *Nereides*, to haue the cure and prouidence of the sea, wooddes, and sprynges and fountaynes, assigninge to euery thyng, theyr peculier goddes. Euen soo doo th[e]inhabitantes of this Ilande attribute a *Zemes* to euery thyng, supposinge the same to gyue care to theyr inuocations. Wherfore, as often as the kynges aske counsaile of their *Zemes* as concerning their warres, increafe of frutes or scarfnes, or health and sickenes, they enter into the houe dedicate to theyr *Zemes*, where, snuffinge vp into theyr nofethrils the pouder of the herbe cauled *Cohobba* (wherwith the *Boitii* are dryuen into a furye) they say that immediatly they see the houfes turne topsy turuye, and men to walke with theyr heeles vpwarde: of fuche force is this pouder vtterly to take away all sense. As soone as this maddenes ceafeth, he embraseth his knees with his armes, holdynge downe his heade. And when he hath remayned thus a while astonysfhed, he lysteth vp his heade as one that came newe owt of sleepe: And thus lokynge vp toward heauen, Fyrst he sumbeleth certeyne confounded wordes with hym selfe. Then certeyne of the nobilitie or chiefe gentelmen that are about him (for none of the common people are admytted to these mysteries) with lowde voyces gyue tokens of reioyng that he is returned to them from the speache of the *Zemes*, demaundyng of hym what he hath seene. Then hee openinge his

Phantasies
proceedynge of
feare.
Al is not good that
is owlde

Syngynge and
playynge

Preestes and
diuines.
Phisitians.
Ignorance is
nourished with
superstition.
Fastynge and
outward clenlynes.

A pouder of
maruelous effecte.

Iuggelynge.

A strange maner
of curing

46

Angry gods
They make the
deade to speake.

Diuers Idols of
sundry shape.

Fayries or spirites
of the gentyles.

Peculier goddes.

They aske
consaile of Idols

The pouder of the
herbe Cohobba.

Secreate misteries.

Reuelations.

The spirite of
Apollo.
The SibillesI haue harde the
lyke of other in
Englande.Hungery and
lecherous gods.Children with two
crownes

47

Wanderinge
Images.

Mediatours.

A woman zemes
of great poure.Fyue dayes
fastinge.A maruelous
illusion of the
deuyll.
The deuyll
sumtyme telleth
truth.The Idols
abolysed.

mouthe, doateth that the *Zemes* spake to hym duryng the tyme of his traunce: declaring that he had reuelations eyther concerninge victorye or destruction: famyne or plentie: health or fyckenes, or what foo euer happeneth fyrst on his toonge. Nowe (moste noble Prince) what neede you hereafter to marueyle of the spirite of *Apollo* foo shakynge his Sibylles with extreme furie? Yowe had thought that the superflitious antiquitie hadde perysht. But nowe wheras I haue declared thus much of the *Zemes* in generall, I thought it not good to lette passe what is fayde of them in particuler. They faye therefore, that a certeyne kynge cauled *Guamaretus*, had a *Zemes* whose name was *Corochotum*: who (they fay) was often tymes woonte to descende from the hygheste place of the houle where *Guamaretus* kepte hym faste bounde. They affirme, that the cause of this his breakynge of his bandes and departure, was eyther to hyde hym selfe, or to goo seeke for meate, or els for the acte of generation: And that sumtymes beinge offended, that the kynge *Guamaretus* had byn negligent and flacke in honouringe hym, he was woont to lye hyd for certeyne dayes. They fay also that in the kynges vylage there are sumtyme chyldren borne hauing twoo crownes which they suppose to bee the children of *Corochotum* the *Zemes*. They fayne lykewyse, that *Guamaretus* beinge ouercome of his enemies in the battayle, and his vylage with the palaise confumed with fyre, *Corochotus* brake his bandes and was afterwarde founde a furlonge of, safe and withowte hurte. He hath also an other *Zemes* cauled *Epileguanita*, made of woodde, in shape lyke a foure footed beaste: who also is fayde, often tymes to haue gonne from the place where he is honoured, into the wooddes. As foone as they perceau him to bee gonne, a great multitude of them gather together to seeke hym with deuoute prayers: And when they haue fownde hym, brynge hym home religiously on theyr shulders to the chapell dedicated vnto hym. But they coomplayne that fence the commynge of the Christian men into the Ilande, he fledde for all togyther, and coulede neuer fence bee founde, wherby they diuined the destruction of theyr country. They honoured an other *Zemes* in the lykenes of a woman, on whom wayted twoo other lyke men, as they were ministers to her. One of these, executed th[e] office of a mediatour to the other *Zemes* which are vnder the power and commaundement of this woman, to rayfe wyndes, cloudes, and rayne. The other is also at her commaundemente a messenger to the other *Zemes* whiche are ioyned with her in gouernaunce, to gather togyther the waters whiche faule from the hygh hylles to the valleys, that beinge loofed, they may with force burst owte into greate fluddes and ouerflowe the country if the people doo not gyue due honoure to her Image. There remayneth yet one thyng woorthy to bee noted, wherwith we wyll make an ende of this booke. It is a thyng well knowen, and yet freshe in memory amonge the inhabitantes of the Ilande, that there was sumtyme twoo kynges (of the which one was the father of *Guarionexius* of whom we made mention before) which were woont to absteyne fyue dayes togyther continually from meate and drinke, to knowe sumwhat of theyr *Zemes* of thynges to coome: And that for this fastynge beinge acceptable to theyr *Zemes*, they receaued anfwere of them, that within fewe yeares, there shuld coome to the Ilande a nation of men couered with apparell, which shulde destroye al the customes and cerymonyes of the Iland, and eyther slei all theyr chyldren, or brynge them into feruitude. The common fort of the people, vnderstoode this oracle to bee mente of the Canibales. And therefore when they had any knowlege of theyr commynge, they euer fledde, and were fully determynd neuer more [to] aduenture the battayle with them. But when they sawe that the Spanyardes had entered into the Ilande, consultinge amonge them felues of the matter, they concluded that this was the nation which was ment by th[e] oracle. Wherin, theyr opinion deceaued them not. For they are nowe all subiecte to the Christians, all fuche beinge slayne as stoobernely resisted. Nor yet remayneth there anye memory of theyr *Zemes*: for they are al brought into Spayne, that we myght bee certified of theyr illusions of euyl spirites and Idoles, the which yowe yowre selfe (most noble Prince) haue seene and felte when I was presente with yowe. I let passe many thynges bycause yow put me in remembrance that to morowe yowe take yowre iorney towarde yowre country, to brynge home the queene yowre aunte, whom yowe accompanyed hether at the commaundemente of kynge Frederyke yowre vncl. Wherfore I byd yowe farewell for this tyme, defyringe yowe to remember yowre *Martyr*, whome yowe haue compelled in the name of the kynge yowre vncl, to gather these fewe thynges owte of a large feelde of hystories.

THE TENTH AND LASTE BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE,
as a conclusion of the former bookes:

Wrytten to Inacus Iopez Mendocius, countie of Tendilla, and viceroye of Granata.



THE fyrst begynnyng and newe attempte, when *Colonus* had taken vpon hym th[e] enterpryse to searce the Ocean sea, I was earnestly moued and requyred by the letters of certeyne of my frendes and noble men of Rome to wryte suche thynges as shoulde happen. For they whyspered with greate admiracion, that where as there were many newe landes founde, and nations which liued naked and after the lawe of nature, they coulde here noo certentie therof, beinge greatly desyrous of the fame. In this meane tyme had fortune ouerthrowne *Afcanius* (his brother Lodouike beinge cast owt of Mylayne by the frenchmen) whose autoritie wold not suffer me to bee idle, but euer to haue my pen in hande. To hym I wryte the twoo fyrst bookes of this decade, besyde many other of my hyd commentaries whiche yowe shall see shortly. Fortune dyd noo lesse withdrawe my mynde frome wrytyng, then disturbe *Afcanius* from power. As he was tossed with contrary stormes and ceased to perswade me, euen soo flacked my feruentnes to enquire any further, vntyl the yeare of Christe. 1500. When the court remayned at *Granata* where yowe are viceroye: At which time Lodouike the Cardinall of Aragonie, neuie to kynge Frederike by his brothers fyde (beinge at *Granata* with the queene *Parthenopea* the fyfster of owre catholike kynge) browght me kynge Frederikes letters, wherby he exhorted me to fynyshe the other bookes whiche folowed the twoo epystell bookes, which I wryte to *Afcanius*. For they both acknowledged that they hadde the copie of all that I wryte to cardinall *Afcanius*. And albeit that euen then I was sicke (as yowe knowe) yet tooke I the burden vpon me, and applyed my selfe to wrytyng. I haue therefore chofen these fewe thynges, owte of a greate heape of suche as seemed to me most worthy to bee noted amonge the large wrytynges of the autoures and searchers of the fame. Wherefore, forasmuch as yowe haue endeouored to wreste owt of my handes the hole exemple of al my woorkes, to adde the fame to the innumerable volumes of yowre librarie, I thought it good nowe to make a breefe reherfall of those thynges which were done from that yeare of a thowfande and fyue hundreth, euen vnto this yeare which is the tenth from that. For I entende to wryte more largelye of these thynges hereafter, if god graunte me lyfe. I hadde wrytten a hole booke by it selfe of the superstitions of the people of the Ilande, supposinge therewith to haue accomplysed the hole Decade confityng of tenne bookes. But I haue added this to the tenth as a perpendicular lyne, and as it were a backe guyde or rerewarde to the other: So that yowe may knytte the fyrst tenth, to the nynthe, and impute this to occupie the place of the tenth to fyll vp the Decade. This order haue I appoynted, lest I shulde bee compelled often times to wryte ouer the hole woork, or sende yowe the fame defaced with blottes and interlynynge. But nowe let vs coome to owre purpose. The shippe masters and maryners ranne ouer many coastes duryng these tenne yeares: But euer folowed suche as were fyrste fownde by *Colonus*. For rafinge continually alonge by the tracte of *Paria*, which they beleue to bee parte of the firme lande or continent of easte India, fume of them chanced vpon certeyne newe landes towarde the easte, and fume towarde the weste, in which they fownde bothe goulde and frankensence. For they browght from thense many iewels and ouches of golde, and greate plentie of frankensence, whiche they had of the people of those countreys, partely for exchange of fume of owre thynges, and partely by force, ouercommynge them by warre. Yet in fume places, although they bee naked, they ouercame owre men, and slewe hole armies. For they are excedinge fierce, and vse venemous arrowes, and longe staues lyke iauelens, made harde at the ende with fyer. They fownde many beastes, both creepinge and foure footed, muche differinge from owres, variable and of fundrye shapes innumerable: yet not hurtfull, excepte Lyons, Tygers, and Crocodiles. This I meane in fundry Regions of that greate lande of *Paria*: but not in the Ilandes: Noo not soo much as one. For all the beastes of the Ilandes, are meeke and withowte hurte, except men which (as wee haue sayde) are in many Ilandes deuourers of mans fleshe. There are also dyuers kyndes of foules. And in many places battes of such bynges, that they are equal with turtle doues. These battes, haue often tymes affauted men in the nyght in theyr sleepe, and soo bytten them with theyr venemous teethe, that they haue byn therby almoft dryuen to madnes, in soo much that they haue byn compelled to flye from such places, as from rauenous harpies. In an other place, where certeyne of them slepte in the nyght season on the sandes by the sea fyde, a monster commynge owte of the sea, came vpon one of them secreatly and caryed hym away by the myddeste owte of the fight of his felowes to whome he cryed in vayne for helpe vntyll the beast lepte into the sea with her praye.

The Lawe of nature.

Milayne in the hands of the frenchmen

48

Epistel books

The historye folowing, conteyneth the actes of ten yeare

Paria, part of the firme land of East India

Golde and frankensence.

The fiercenes of the naked people. Innumerable beastes vnylike vnto owres.

Nothing hurtfull in the Ilandes.

Battes as bygge as turtle doues.

A man deuoured of a monster of the sea

The Spanyardes
profer them selues
to subdue the
newe landes.

Note the largenes
of the newe landes.

Commendacion of
the Spaniardes.

49

Antipodes.

The autours
excusse.

Hispaniola.

The nature of the
place, altereth
the formes and
qualities of
thynges.
Wheate.
Herbes.
Catayle.
Hogges.

Plentie of beastes
and foule.

Cuba, is an
Ilande.

The description
of Cuba.

The Iland of
Burichema or
S. Iohannis.
Golde mynes

The order of
woorkyng in the
golde mynes.

The kynges
bryng their
subiectes
to woork in
the golde mynes.

Tyllage.

50

They abhorre
laboure
They are docible.

The kynges
chyl dren.

It was the kynges pleasure that they shulde remayne in these landes, and buylde townes and fortresses. Where vnto they were foo wel wyllynge, that dyuers profered them felues to take vppon them the subduing of the lande, making great sute to the kyng that they might bee appoynted therto. The coaste of this tracte is exceedyng greate and large: and the Regions and landes therof extende maruelous farre: Soo that they affirme the continent of these Regions with the Ilandes abowte the same, to bee thyrse as bygge as al Europe, besyde thofe landes that the Portugales haue fownde fouthwarde, whiche are also exceedyng large. Therefore doubtlesse Spayne hath deserued greate prayse in these owre dayes, in that it hath made known vnto us foo many thowfandes of *Antipodes* which leye hyd before and vnknown to owre forefathers: And hath thereby mynyfired so large matter to wryte of, to fuche lerned wyttes as are desyrous to fette furthe knowlege to the commoditie of men: to whom I opened a way when I gathered these thynges rudely to gyther as yowe fee: The which, neuerthelesse I trust yowe wyll take in good parte, aswell for that I can not adourne my rudenes with better vesture, as also that I neuer tooke penne in hande to wryte lyke an historiographer, but only by epistels scribeled in haste, to satisfie them, from whose commaundementes I myght not drawe backe my foote. But now I haue digressed enowghe. Let vs nowe therefore returne to *Hispaniola*. Owre men haue founde by experience, that the breade of the Iland is of smaule strenght to such as haue byn vsed to owr breade made of wheate: And that theyr stren[g]thes were much decayed by vsyng of the same. Wherefore the king hath of late commaunded that wheate shulde bee sowne there in diuers places and at fundry tymes of the year. It groweth into holowe reedes, with fewe eares, but those verry bygge and frutefull. Theyfynde the lyke softenes or delicatenes to bee in herbes, which growe there to the height of corne. Neat or cattall, becomm of bygger stature and exceedyng fat, but theyr fleshe is more vnfaury, and theyr bones (as they say) eyther withowte marye, or the same to bee verry waterysffe. But of hogges and swyne, they affirme the contrarye, that they are more holfoome and of better taste, by reason of certeyne wylde frutes whiche they eate, beinge of muche better nooryshment then maste. There is almost none other kynd of fleshe commonly fownde in the market. The multitude of hogges, are exceedingly encreased, and becomm wylde as soone as they are owte of the swynehardes keepyng. They haue fuche plentie of beastes and foules, that they shall hereafter haue noo neede, to haue any brought from other places. Th[e]increase of all beastes, growe bygger then the broode they came of, by reason of the rankenes of the pasture, althowgh theyr feadyng bee only of grasse, withowte eyther barley or other grayne. But wee haue fayde enowgh of *Hispaniola*. They haue nowe fownde that *Cuba*, (which of longe tyme they thought to haue byn firme lande for the greate length therof) is an Ilande. Yet is it noo maruell that th[e]inhabitantes them felues towlde owre men when they searched the length therof, that it was withowte ende. For this nacion being naked and contente with a llytle, and with the limites of theyr owne contrey, is not greatly curious to know what theyr neyghbours doo, or the largenes of theyr dominion. Nor yet knewe they if there were any other thinge vnder heauen, besyde that whiche they walked on with theyr feete. *Cuba*, is frome the Easte into the Weste, muche longer then *Hispaniola*: And in breadthe from the Northe to the Southe, much lesse then they supposed at the fyrst: for it is very narowe in respecte to the length: And is for the moste parte, very frutefull and pleasaunt, Eastwarde not farre from *Hispaniola*, there lyethe an Ilande, lesse then *Hispaniola* more then by the halfe, which owre men cauled *Sancti Iohannis*, beinge in maner square. In this they founde exceedyng ryche golde mynes. But beinge nowe occupied in the golde mynes of *Hispaniola*, they haue not yet sent labourers into that Iland. But the plentie and reuenue of golde of al other Regions, gyue place to *Hispaniola*, where they gyue them felues in maner to none other thyng then to gather golde, of which woork this order is appoynted. To euery such wyttie and skylfull man as is put in truste to bee a furuoier or ouerfeer of these woorkes, there is assigned one or more kynges of the Ilande with theyr subiectes. These kynges accordyng to theyr league, coome with theyr people at certeyne tymes of the year, and resorte euery of them to the golde myne to the which he is assigned: where they haue all maner of dygginge or mynyng tooles deliuered them: And euery kyng with his men, haue a certeyne rewarde alowed them for theyr labour. For when they departe from the mynes to fowyng of corne, and other tyllage (wherunto they are addict at certeyne other tymes, leaste theyr foode shulde fayle them) they receaue for theyr laboure, one a ierken, or a dublet, an other a sherte, an other a cloke or a cappe. For they nowe take pleasure in these thynges, and goo no more naked as they were wont too doo. And thus they vse the helpe and laboure of the inhabitantes both for the tyllage of theyr ground, and in theyr gold mines as thowghe they were theyr seruantes or bondemen. They beare this yoke of feruitude with an euyl wyll: but yet they beare it. They caule these hyred labourers, *Anaborias*. Yet the kyng doth not suffer that they shulde bee vsed as bondemen: And onely at his pleasure they are fette at libertie or appoynted to woork. At fuche tyme as they are cauled together of theyr kynges to woork (as fouldiers or pioners are assembled of theyr centurians) many of them stele away to the mountaynes and wooddes, where they lye lurkyng, beinge content for that tyme to lyue with wylde frutes, rather then to take the paynes to laboure. They are docible and apte to lerne, and haue nowe vtterly forgotten theyr owlde supersticions. They beleue godly, and beare wel in memory fuche thynges as they haue lerned of owre faith. Theyr kynges children are brought vp with the chiefest of owre

men, and are instructed in letters and good maners. When they are growen to mans age, they fende them home to theyr countreys to bee exemple to other, and especially to gouerne the people if theyr fathers bee dead that they maye the better set foorth the Christian Religion, and keepe theyr subiectes in loue and obedience. By reason whereof, they coome nowe by fayre meanes and gentell perfuasions to the mynes which lye in two Regions of the Ilande aboute thirtie myles distant from the citie of *Dominica*: wherof the one is cauled *Santli Christophori*: And the other being distant aboute foure score and tenne myles, is cauled *Cibaua*, not farre from the cheefe hauen cauled *Portus Regalis*. These regions are very large: In the which in many places here and there, are fownd sumtyme euen in the vpper cruft of the earth and sumtyme amonge the stones, certeyne rounde pieces or plates of golde, sumtyme of fmaule quantitie, and in sum places of great weyght: In so muche that there hath byn found rounde pieces of three hundreth pounce weyght, and one of three thousande, three hundreth and tenne pounce weyght: The whiche (as yowe harde) was sente hole to the kynge in that shyppe in the which the gouernour *Boadilla* was comming home into Spayne, the shyppe with all the men beinge drowned by the way, by reason it was ouer laden with the weight of golde and multytude of men. Albeit, there were moo then a thousande persons whiche fawe and handeled the piece of golde. And wheras here I speake of a pounce, I doo not meane the common pounce, but the summe of the ducate of golde, with the coyne cauled *Triens*, which is the thyrde parte of a pounce, whiche they caule *Pesus*. The sum of the weyght hereof, the Spanyardes caule *Castellanum Aureum*. Al the golde that is dygged in the mountaynes of *Cibaua* and *Porte Regale*, is caryed to the towre of Conception, where shoppes with al thynges apperteyninge are redy furnysshed to fyne it, melte it, and caste it into wedges. That doone, they take the kynges portion therof, whiche is the fyfte parte, and soo restore to euery man his owne whiche he gotte with his labour. But the golde whiche is fownde in faynt Christophers myne and the Region there aboute, is caryed to the shoppes whiche are in the vylage cauled *Bonauentura*. In these twoo shoppes, is molten yerely, aboute three hundreth thousand pounce weight of golde. If any man bee knowen deceatefully to keepe backe any portion of golde, whereof he hath not made the kynges officers pryue, he forfitteth the same for a fyne. There chaunce amonge them often tymes many contentions and controuersies, the whiche onlesse the magistrates of the Ilande doo fynyshe, the cafe is removed by appellation to the hyghe counfayle of the courte, from whose sentence it is not lawfull to appele in all the dominions of Castyle. But lette vs nowe returne to the newe landes frome whense we haue digressed. They are innumerable, dyuers, and exceedynge fortunate. Wherfore the Spanyardes in these owre dayes, and theyr noble enterpryses, doo not gyue place eyther to the factes of *Saturnus*, or *Hercules*, or any other of the ancient princes of famous memorie which were canonized amonge the goddesses cauled *Heroes* for theyr searchinge of newe landes and regions, and bringinge the same to better culture and ciuilitie. Oh God: howe large and farre shal owre posteritie see the Christian Religion extended? Howe large a campe haue they nowe to wander in, whiche by the trewe nobilitie that is in theym, or moued by vertue, wyll attempte eyther to deferue lyke prayse amonge men, or reputacion of well doinge before god. What I conceaue in my mynde of these thynges, I am not able to expresse with penne or tonge. I wyll nowe therefore soo make an ende of this perpendicular conclusion of the hole Decade, as myndinge hereafter to searche and gather euery thyng particularlye, that I maye at further leasure wryte the same more at large. For *Colonus* the Admiral with foure shyppes, and a hundreth threescore and tenne men appointed by the kynge, discouered in the yeare of Christe. 1502. the lande ouer ageynste the weste corner of *Cuba*, distant from the same aboute a hundreth and thirtie leagues: In the myddest of which tracte, lyeth an Ilande cauled *Guanassa*. From hense he directed his vyage backwarde towarde the Easte by the shore of that coast, supposinge that he shulde haue founde the coastes of *Paria*: but it chaunced otherwyse. It is sayd also that *Vincentius Agnes* (of whom we haue spoken before) and one *Iohannes Diaz* (with dyuers other of whose vyages I haue as yet no certeyne knowleage) haue ouer runne those coastes. But if God graunt me life, I trust to know the truthe hereof and to aduertise yowe of the same. Thus fare ye well.

The two chiefe golde mynes of hispaniola.

Golde founde in the vpper part of the earth.

A piece of golde weighinge three thousande three hundreth and ten pounds.
A coastly ship wrake.

Pesus.

The fynnyng and distribution of golde.

Three hundreth thousand weyght of gold molten yerely in hispaniola.

Controuerses

The newe landes.

The Spanyardes noble enterpryses. are not inferiour to the actes of Hercules or Saturnus. etc.

Enlarging of the Christian Religion.
The original of trewe nobilitie.

51

The Ilande of Guanassa

The vyage of Iohannes Diaz.



¶ The seconde Decade foloweth.

THE FYRST BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE,
TO LEO BYSSHOP OF ROME, THE TENTHE OF THAT NAME,
Of the supposed Continent or firme lande.



West Antipodes.

The increase of
the Christian
congregation.

*Christophorus
Colonus.*
Of landes distante
from the
Equinoctiall from
fyue degrees to
ten.
The death of
Colonus.
A generall lycence.

The nauigation of
Alphonsus Fogeda.

52

*Portus
Carthaginis.*

The Region of
Caramairi.
People of goodly
stature

Apples whiche
turne into
wormes.

SENSE the tyme that *Galeatius Butrigarius* of Bononie, and *Iohannes Cursius* of Florence (moste holye father) came to the catholyke kynge of Spayne, the one, of yowre holynes ambafage, and th[e]other for th[e]affaires of his common welth, I was euer for the moste parte in theyr coompanie, and for theyr vertues and wysfedoome, had theym in greate reuerence. And wheras they were greatly gyuen to studye, and continuall reuoluinge of dyuers autours, they chaunced vppon certeyne bookes negligently let slyppe owte of my handes, entreatinge of the large landes and Regions hetherto lyinge hyd, and almost west *Antipodes*, fownde of late by the Spanyardes. Yet beinge allured and delited with the newenes and strangenes of the matter althowgh rudely adourned, they commended the fame: Therwith earnestly defyringe me in theyr owne names, and requyring me in the name of yowr holynes, to adde here vnto all fuche thynges as were fownde after that tyme, and to gyue them a copie thereof to fende to yowre holynes, that yowe myght therby vnderstande, bothe howe greate commoditie is chaunced to the progenye of mankynde, as also increase of the militante congregation in these owre dayes, by the fortunate enterpryses of the kynges of Spayne. For lyke as rased or vnpaynted tables, are apte to receaue what formes soo euer are fyrst drawn theron by the hande of the paynter, euen soo these naked and simple people, doo soone receaue the customes of owre Religion, and by conuerfation with owre men, shake of theyr fierce and natiue barbarousnes. I haue thought it good therefore to fatiffie the request of these wyse men, especially vfyng th[e]autoritie of yowre name, wherunto not to haue obeyed, I shulde esteeme my selfe to haue commytted a heynous offence. Wherefore I wyl nowe brefely reherfe in order, what hyd coastes the Spanyardes ouerranne, who were the autours therof, where they rested, what further hope they browght, and fynallye what great thynges those tractes of landes doo promesse in tyme to coome. In the declaration of my decade of the Ocean, which is nowe printed and disperfed throwghowte Christendome vnwares to me, I described howe *Christophorus Colonus* fownde those Ilandes wherof we haue spoken, and that turnyng from thense towarde the lefte hande southwarde, he chaunced into greate regions of landes, and large seas, distant from the Equinoctiall lyne, onely from fyue degrees to tenne: where he founde brode ryuers and exceedinge hygh mountaynes couered with snowe and harde by the sea bankes, where were many commodious and quyet hauens. But *Colonus* being now departed owte of this lyfe, the kynge beganne to take care, howe those landes myght be inhabited with Christian men to th[e]increase of owre fayth: Where vppon he gaue licence by his letters patentes to al such as wolde take the matter in hand, and especially to twoo, wherof *Diego Nicuesa* was one, and the other was *Alphonsus Fogeda*. Wherefore about the Ides of December, *Alphonsus* departinge fyrst with three hundreth souldiers from the Ilande of *Hispaniola* (in the which wee sayde the Spanyardes had builded a citie, and planted theyr habitacion) and saylyng in maner full fouth, he came to one of the hauens founde before whiche *Colonus* named *Portus Carthaginis*, bothe bycause of the Ilande standyng ageynste the courfe of the streame, and also that by reason of the largenes of the place and bendyng fydes, it is muche lyke to the hauen of Spaine cauled *Carthago*. Th[e]inhabitanes caule the Ilande *Codego*, as the Spanyardes caule the Ilande of theyr hauen, *Scombria*. This Region is cauled of the inhabitantes *Caramairi*: In the which they affirme bothe the men and women to bee of goodly stature, but naked. The men haue theyr heare cutte rownde by theyr eares, but the women were it longe. Bothe the men and women are very good archers. Owre men fownde certen trees in this prouince, which bore greate plentie of sweete apples, but hurteful, for they turne into wormes when they are eaten. Especially the shadowe of the tree, is contagious,

for fuche as sleepe vnder it any tyme, haue theyr headdes fwolne and lose theyr fight. But if they sleepe but a while, theyr fyght commeth ageyne after a fewe dayes. This porte is dystant foure hundredth fyftie and fyxe myles from that parte of *Hispaniola* which the Spanyardes caule *Beata*, in the which also they furnyssh the them felues when they prepare anye vyage to seeke other newe landes. When *Fogeda* had entered into the hauen, he inuaded, flewe, and spoyled the people, whome he founde naked and scattered. For they were gyuen hym for a praye, by the kynges letters patentes bycause they hadde bin before tyme cruel ageynst the Christians, and coulde neuer bee allured to permytte them quietly to coome within theyr dominions. Here they founde gold, but in no greate quantitie, nor yet that pure. They make of it, certeyne breft plates and brooches, which they weare for coomelynes. But *Fogeda* not content with these spoyles, vsinge certeyne captiues whiche he had taken before, for guydes, entered into a vyllage twelue myles distante frome the sea fyde further into the lande, into the whiche they were fledde whom he fyrst inuaded. Here he founde a naked people, but apte to warre. For they were armed with targettes, shieldes, longe swoordes made of wood, and bowes with arrowes typte with bone, or hardened with fyer. As soone as they had espyed owre men, they with their gestes whom they had receaued, assayled them with desperate myndes, beinge therto more earnestly prouoked, beholding the calamitie of these whiche fledde vnto them, by the violence doone to theyr women and chyldren, in the spoyle and slawghter. In this conflicte owre men had the ouerthrowe: In the which, one *Iohannes de Lacoffa* (beinge in autoritie nexte vnto *Fogeda* the capitayne, and also the fyrste that gathered golde in the sandes of *Vraba*) was flayne with fyftie fouldiers. For these people infecte theyr arrowes with the deadly poyson of a certeyne herbe. The other with theyr capitayne *Fogeda* beinge discomfited, fledde to the shyppes. Whyle they remayned thus in the hauen of *Carthago* forowfull and penyue for the losse of their companions, the other capitayne *Diego Nicuesa*, (whom they lefte in *Hispaniola*, preparyng hym selfe towards the vyage in the hauen *Beata*) came to them with fyue shippes and seuen hundredthe foure score and fyfteene menne. For the greater number of fouldyers, folowed *Nicuesa*, both bycause free libertie was gyuen them to choose which of the capytaynes them lyst, and also that by reason of his age, he was of greater autoritie: But especially bycause the rumoure was that *Beragua* beinge by the kynges commission appoynted to *Nicuesa*, was rycher in golde then *Vraba* assigned to *Alphonfus Fogeda*. Therefore, at the arryuall of *Nicuesa*, they consulted what was beste to bee doone: And determyned fyrste to reuenge the deathe of their felowes. Where vppon, settinge theyr battayle in arraye, they marched in the nyght towards them whiche flewe *Coffa* with his coompanyons. Thus stealyng on them vnwares in the last watche of the nyght, and encompasinge the vyllage where they laye, consistyng of a hundredth howses and more, hauynge also in it thryfe as many of theyr neyghbours as of them felues, they fet it on fyer, with diligent watche that none myght escape. And thus in shorte tyme they browght theym and theyr howses to affhes, and made them pay the raunfome of bludde with bludde. For of a greate multitude of men and women, they spared onely fyxe chyldren, al other being destroyed with fyer or sword except fewe which escaped priuilye. They lerned by the referued chyldren, that *Coffa* and his felowes were cutte in pieces and eaten of them that flewe them. By reason wherof, they suppose that these people of *Caramairi* tooke theyr originall of the *Caribes* otherwyse cauled *Canibales*. Here they founde fume golde amonge the affhes. For the hunger of golde, dyd noo lesse encorage owr men to aduenture these perels and labours then dyd the possessyng of the landes. These thynges thus fynysht, and the death of *Coffa* and his felowes reuenged, they returned to the hauen. After this, *Fogeda* whiche came fyrst, fyrst lykewyse departinge with his army to seeke *Vraba*, commytted to his gouernaunce, sayled by an Ilande cauled *Fortis*, lyinge in the mydwaye betwene *Vraba* and the hauen of *Carthago*. In to the which descendinge, he fownde it to bee an Ilande of the Canybales, brynginge with hym frome thense two men and seuen women: for the residue escaped. Here he fownde in the cotages of them that fledde, a hundredthe foure score and tenne drammes of golde, caste and wrought in dyuers formes. Saylynge forwarde from henf, he came to the Easte coastes of *Vraba*, whiche th[e] inhabitants caule *Caribana*, from whense the *Caribes* or *Canibales* of the Ilandes are sayde to haue theyr name and originall. Here he beganne to buylde a fortresse, and a vyllage nere vnto the fame, therein intendencyng to place theyr fyrst habitacion. Shortly after, beinge instructed by certeyne captyues that there was aboute twelue myles further within the lande, a certeyne vyllage cauled *Tirusi*, hauinge in it a ryche golde myne, he determyned to destroye the vyllage. To the which when he came, he fownde th[e] inhabitants redye to defende theyr ryght: And that foo stoutly, that encounteryng with them, he was repulsd with shame and damage. For these people also, vse bowes and venemous arrowes. Within a fewe dayes after, beinge enforced for lacke of vytayles to inuade an other vyllage, he hym selfe was stryken in the thyghe with an arrowe. Summe of his felowes say, that he was thus wounded of one of th[e] inhabitants whose wyfe he had ledde awaye captiue before. They say also that he had first frendly comoned with *Fogeda* for redemyng of his wyfe, and had appoynted a day to brynge a portion of golde for her raunfome: And that he came at the daye assigned, not laden with golde, but armed with bowes and arrowes, with eyght other confetherate with hym, whiche had bin before partetakers of the iniuries doone to them first at the hauen of *Carthago*, and afterward at the burnyng of the vyllage. In

A tree whose shadowe is hurtfull.

Fogeda his autoritie confirmed by the kynges letters patentes.

Warylke people.

The Spanyardes haue the ouerthrowe.

Arrowes infected with poyson.

The nauigation of Diego Nicuesa.

The regions of Vraba and Beragua.

The Spanyardes reuenge the death of theyr companyons.

A greate slawghter.

Canibales.

The hunger of golde.
53

The Ilande Fortis

Wrought gold

Caribana.

A gold myne.
The Spanyardes are repulsd.

Fogeda is wounded.

Ransome.

reunge wherof they had desperatly consecrated them felues to death. But the matter beinge knowen, the captayne of this conspiracie was slayne of *Fogeda* his coompanyons, and his wyfe deteyned in captiuitie. *Fogeda* also through the malicioufnes of the veneme, consumed and was dryed vp by lyttle and lyttle. Whyle these thynges chaunced thus, they espyed *Nicuesa* the other capitayne to whom *Beragua* the region of the weste fyde of *Vraba*, was assigned to inhabite. He gaue wynde to his fayles to take his vyage towarde *Beragua*, the day after that *Fogeda* departed owte of the hauen of *Carthago*. He with his army which he browght with hym, coasted euer alonge by the shore vntyll he came to the goulfe *Coiba*, whose kynges name is *Careta*. Here he founde theyr language to bee in maner nothyng lyke vnto that of *Hispaniola* or of the hauen of *Carthago*: wherby he perceaued that in this tracte there are many languages differinge from theyr owne bortherers. *Nicuesa* departinge frome *Coiba*, wente to the prouince or Lieutenantsshippe of *Fogeda* his companion. Within a fewe dayes after he hym selfe enteringe into one of those marchaunt shippes whiche the Spanyardes caule *Carauelas*, commaunded that the bygger vessels, shulde folowe farre behynde. He tooke with hym twoo smaule shippes commonly cauled bergantynes or brygantynes. I haue thought it good in all the discourse of these bookes, to vse the common names of thinges, bicause I had rather bee playne then curious: especially forasmuche as there doo dayly aryse manye newe thynges vnknownen to the antiquitie, wherof they haue lefte noo trewe names. After the departure of *Nicuesa*, there came a shyppe from *Hispaniola* to *Fogeda*, the capitayne wherof, was one *Barnardino de Calauera*, who had stoulne the fame from *Hispaniola* with three score men, withowte leaue or aduice of the Admirall and the other gouernours. With the vytayles whiche this shippe browght they refreshed theym felues and fumewhat recouered theyr strengthes muche weakened for lacke of meate, *Fogeda* his companyons whyspered and muttered ageynste hym daylye more and more, that he fedde them furthe with vayne hope. For he had towlde them that he left *Ancifus* in *Hispaniola* (whom he chose by the kynges commission to bee a Iudge in causes, bycause he was lerned in the lawe) to coome shortly after him with a shippe laden with vytayles: And that he marueyled that he was not coome many dayes sence. And herein he said nothyng but trewth. For when he departed, he lefte *Ancifus* halfe redy to folowe hym. But his felowes supposinge that all that he sayde of *Ancifus* had byn fayned, fume of them determyned priuillie to steale away the twoo brigantynes frome *Fogeda*, and to returne to *Hispaniola*. But *Fogeda* hauing knowleage hereof, preuented theyr diuise. For leauynge the custodie of the fortresse with a certeyne noble gentelman cauled *Francisco Pizarro*, he hym selfe thus wounded, with a fewe other in his companie, entered into the shyppe wherof we spake before, and sayled directly to *Hispaniola*, both to heale the wound of his thygh if any remedy myght bee found, and also to knowe what was the cause of *Ancifus* taryinge: Leauing hope with his felowes (which were nowe browght from three hundreth to three score, partly by famyne and partly by warre) that he wolde returne within the space of. xv. dayes: prescribyng also a condition to *Pizarro* and his companions, that it shulde not bee imputed to them for treason to departe from thense if he came not ageyne at the day appoynted with vytayles and a newe supply of men. These. xv. dayes beinge nowe paste, whereas they coulde yet heare nothyng of *Fogeda*, and were dayly more and more oppressed with sharpe hunger, they entered into the twoo brigantynes which were lefte, and departed from that land. And as they were nowe faylynge on the mayne sea towarde *Hispaniola*, a tempeste foodeynly arysynge, swalowed one of the brygantynes with all that were therein. Sum of theyr felowes affirme that they playnely fawe a fyshe of houghe greatenes swymmyng abowte the brygantyne (for thofe seas brynge furthe greate monsters) and that with a stroke of her tayle, she broke the rudder of the shyppe in peeces: which faylynge, the brigantine beinge dryuen abowt by force of the tempest, was drowned not farre from the Ilande cauled *Fortis*, lyinge betwene the coastes of the hauen *Carthago* and *Vraba*. As they of the other brygantyne wolde haue landed in the Ilande, they were dryuen backe with the bowes and arrowes of the fierce barbarians. Proceadyng therefore on theyr vyage, they mette by chaunce with *Ancifus* betwene the hauen of *Carthago*, and the Region of *Cuchibacoa* in the mouthe of the ryuer whiche the Spanyardes cauled *Boium gatti*, that is, the house of the catte, bycause they fawe a catte first in that place: and *Boium*, in the toonge of *Hispaniola*, is a house. *Ancifus* came wyth a shyppe laden with all thynges necessarye, bothe for meate and drynke, and apparell, bryngynge also with hym an other brigantine. This is he for whose comming the capitayne *Fogeda* looked for foo longe. He loofed anker from *Hispaniola* in the Ides of September: And the fourth day after his departure, he espyed certeyne hyghe mountaynes, the whiche for the abundance of snowe which lyeth continually in the toppes therof, the Spanyardes cauled *Serra Neuata*, when *Colonus* the fyrst fynder of those Regions passed by the fame. The fyfte daye, he sayled by *Os Draconis*. They whiche were in the brygantyne, towlde *Ancifus* that *Fogeda* was returned to *Hispaniola*. But *Ancifus* supposinge that they had fayned that tale, commaunded them by th[e]authoritie of his commission to turne backe ageyne. The brigantiners obeyed and folowed hym: yet made they humble sute vnto hym that he wolde graunte them that with his fauour they myght eyther goo ageyne to *Hispaniola*, or that he hym selfe wolde brynge them to *Nicuesa*: And that they wolde for his gentelnes declared towarde them in this behalfe, rewarde hym with twoo thoufande drammes of golde. For they were

ryche in golde, but poore in breade. But *Ancifus* assented to neyther of theyr requestes: affirmynge that he myght by no meanes goo anye other way then to *Vraba* the prouince assigned to *Fogeda*. Where vpon, by theyr conduct, he tooke his vyage directly toward *Vraba*. But nowe let it not seme tedious to yowre holynes to heare of one thyng worthy to bee remembered, which chaunced to this Lieuetenaunt *Ancifus* as he came thether. For he also cast anker in the coastes of the region of *Caramairi* whiche wee sayde to bee famous by reason of the hauen of *Carthago*: and of the goodly stature, strength, and beauty of both men and women beinge in the fame. Here he fent certeyne to goo alande on the shore, both to fetche fresshe water, and also to repaire the shippe boate which was fore broofed. In this meane tyme a greate multitude of the people of the cuntry armed after theyr maner, came aboute owre men as they were occupied abowte theyr busynes, and floode in a redynes to feight, for the space of three dayes contynually: duryng whiche tyme, neyther durft they fet vpon owre men, nor owre men assayle them. Thus bothe parties keepynge theyr arraye, floode styl three hole dayes the one gafynge on the other. Yet all this tyme owre men applyed theyr woorke, placinge the shippwrightes in the myddeste of theyr armye. As they floode thus amafed, twoo of owre coompanye wente to fyll theyr water pottes at the mouthe of the ryuer nere vnto them both, where foodenly there came furthe ageynste them a capitayne of the barbarians with ten armed men which inclofed them, and with terrible countenance bent theyr arrowes ageynste them, but shotte them not of. One of owre men fledde: but the other remayned, caulynge his felowe ageyne and rebukynge hym for his fearefulness. Then he spake to the barbarians in their owne language which he had lerned beinge conuerfant with the captiues that were caryed from thense longe before. They marueylynge to here a straunger speake in their natieue tonge, put of theyr fiercenes and fell to frendly communication, demaunding who were the capitaynes of that coompanye whiche were arryued in theyr lande. He answered that they were strangers passyng by: And that he marueyled why they wold attempte to dryue them from theyr coastes and disturbe theyr shippes: arguinge them of follye and crueltie, and further threatinge their ruine and destruction, except they wold vse them felues more frendely towarde them. For hee aduertised them that there wolde shortly coome into theyr lande armed men, in nomber lyke to the sandes of the sea: And that to theyr vtter destruction, not only if they refysted them not, but also excepte they receaued them and enterteyned them honorably. In the meane tyme *Ancifus* was enformed that his men were deteyned. Wherefore suspectinge fume deceate, he browght furth al his target men for feare of theyr venomous arrowes: And settinge them in battell arraye, he marched forwarde towarde them which steyed his men. But he which communed with the barbarians, gyuinge him a signe with his hande to procede noo further, he steyed. And caulng to hym the other, he knewe that all was safe. For the barbarians profered him peace, bycause they were not they whom they suspected them to haue byn: meanyng by *Fogeda* and *Nicuesa*, who had spoyled the vyllage standinge there by the sea fyde, and caryed away many captiues, and also burnt an other vyllage further within the lande. And therefore (as they sayde) the cause of theyr comminge thether, was to reuenge thofe iniuries, if by any meanes they coulde. Yet that they wolde not exercyse theyr weapons ageynste the innocent. For they sayde it was vngodly to feyght ageynst any, not beinge prouoked. Layinge a parte therefore theyr bowes and arrowes, they enterteyned owre men gentelly, and gaue them great plentie of salted fyfsh and breade of theyr contrey: And fylled theyr vessels with fyder made of theyr contrey frutes and feedes, not inferiour to wyne in goodnes. Thus *Ancifus* hauinge entered into frendshyp and made a league of peace with th[e]inhabitates of *Caramairi* whiche were before fore prouoked by other capitaynes, he lanced from that lande, and directed his course to *Vraba* by the Ilande *Fortis*, hauinge in his shippe a hundreth and fyftie fresshe men whiche were substitute in the place of fuche as were deade. Also twelue mares, and manye fwine, and other beastes both males and females for increase. Lykewyfe, fyftie pieces of ordinaunce, with a greate multytude of targettes, fwoordes, iauelyns, and fuche other weapons for the warres. But all this with euyl speede and in an euyl houre. For as they were euen nowe enteringe into the hauen, the gouernour of the shippe which fatte at the helme, stroke the shyppe vpon the sandes, where it was foo fast enclofed, and beaten with the waues of the sea, that it opened in the myddeste, and al lost that was therein. A thyng surely miserable to beholde. For of all the vytayles that they had, they faued onely twelue barels of meale, with a fewe chiefes, and a lyttle bysket breade. For al the beastes were drowned: And they them felues scaped hardly and halfe naked by helpe of the brigantine and ship boate, caryeng with them only a fewe weapons. Thus they fell from one calamitie into an other, beinge nowe more carefull fo rtheyr lyues then for golde. Yet beinge browght alyue and in health to that land which they foo greatly defyred, they coulde doo noo lesse then to prouide for the fusteynyng of theyr bodies, bycause they coulde not lyue onely by ayer. And wheras theyr owne fayled, they must needes lyue by other mens. Yet amonge these foo many aduerfities, one good chaunce offered it selfe vnto them. For they founde, not farre from the sea fyde, a groue of date trees, amonge the which, and also amonge the reke or weedes of the maryshes, they espyed a multitude of wyld bores, with whose fleshe they fed them felues wel certeine dayes. These they say to bee lesse then owres: And with foo shorte tayles, that they thought they had byn cutte of. They dyffer also from owres in theyr feete: for theyr hynder feete are hole vndiuided, and also withowte any

Riche in gold and pore in breade.

The Region of Caramairi

Feare on both partes.

Ship wryghtes.

55

The vse of targettes agens venomous arrowes.

The barbarians haue respect to iustice

Salted fishe.

Wyne of frutes and seedes.

Vraba.

Artillerie.

Ancisus ship wracke.

Meale, cheeses, and bysket.

A groue of date trees.

Wyld bores.

56

Apples of a
strange kynd

Ceders of Libane.

Sorbes are cauled
in french Cormier
they grow not in
Englande.
The frute cauled
zizipha or Iuiuba

Caoibales.

Men of desperat
boldnes.The goulfe of
Vraba.The great ryuer
of Darien, fauleth
into the goulfe of
Vraba.

Prayer and vowes.

The souldiers
make an othe.The barbarians
are dryuen to
flight.

57

Chestnuttes.

The ryuer of
Darien, but viii.
degrees from the
Equinoctial.Golde founde in a
thicket of reedes.

houfe. But they affirme that they haue proued by experience theyr flefthe to bee of better taste and more holfoome then owres. Durynge this tyme, they fedde also of dates and the rotes of younge date trees, which they eate likewyfe in Ciuile and *Granata* where they caule them *Palmitos*, of the leaues wherof they make biefomes in Rome. Sumetymes also, they eate of the appels of that Region, whiche haue the taste of prunes, and haue also stoness in them, and are but lyttle and of redde coloure. I suppose them to bee of that kynde wherof I eate in the cite of *Alexandria* in Egypt in the moneth of Aprell: The trees wherof, the Iewes that dwel there, beinge lerned in the lawe of Moyfes, affirme to bee the Ceders of Libane, which beare owlde fruites and newe all the yeare as dothe the orange tree. These apples are good to bee eaten, and haue a certeyne sweetnes myxte with a gentell sharpnes, as haue the frutes cauled *Sorbes*. Th[e]inhabitantes plant these trees in their orchardes and garedens, and nooryshe theym with greate diligence as wee doo cherries, peaches, and quynses. This tree in leaues, heyght, and trunke, is verry lyke vnto the tree that beareth the frute cauled *Zizipha*, which the Apothecaries caule *Iuiuba*. But wheras now the wylde bores beganne to faile them, they were ageyne enforced to consulte and prouyde for the tyme to coome. Where vpon with theyr hole army, they entered further into the land. The Canibales of this prouince, are moste experte archers. *Ancifus* had in his coompany, a hundreth men. They mette by the way with only three men of th[e]inhabitantes, naked, and armed with bowes and venemous arrowes, who without al feare, assayed owr men fiercely, wounded manye, and flewe manye: And when they had emptied theyr quyuers, fledde as fwyftely as the wynde: For (as we haue sayde) they are excedyng fwyfte of foote by reason of theyr loofe goinge frome theyr chyldes age. They affirme that they lette flyppe no arrowe owte of theyr bowes in vayne. Owre men therefore returned the same waye that they came, much more infortunate then they were before and consulted amonge them felues to leaue that lande: espceyally because th[e]inhabitantes had ouerthrowne the fortresse which *Fogeda* buylded, and had burnt thirtie houfes of the vyllage, as soone as *Pizarrus* and his company lefte of *Fogeda*, had forsaken the lande. By this occasion therefore, beinge dryuen to seeke further, they had intelligence that the weste fyde of that goulfe of *Vraba*, was more frutefull and better to inhabite. Wherefore, they sent the one halfe of theyr men thither with the brigantine, and lefte the other nere to the sea fyde on the easte part. This goulfe, is. xxiii. myles in bredth: And howe muche the further it entereth into the firme lande, it is soo muche the narrower. Into the goulfe of *Vraba*, there faule many ryuers: but one (as they fay) more fortunate then the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypte. This ryuer is cauled *Darien*, vpon the bankes whereof, beinge verry frutefull of trees and grasse, they entended to playnte their newe colonie or habitacion. But th[e]inhabitantes maruelynge at the brygantine beinge bygger then theyr canoas, and specially at the fayles therof, fyrst sente away theyr chylde and weakeste forte of theyr people with theyr baggage and housholde stufte, and assembled all fuche togyther bothe men and women, as were meete for the warres: Thus beinge armed with weapons and desperate myndes, they floode in a redynes to feight, and taryed the comminge of owre men vpon a lyttle hyl, as it were to take th[e]aduantage of the grounde. Owre men iudged them to bee aboute fyue hundreth in nomber. Then *Ancifus* the capytayne of owre men, and Lieuetenant in the steede of *Fogeda*, fettinge his men in order of battayle array, and with his hole coompany kneelinge on his knees, they al made humble prayers to god for the victorie, and a vowe to the Image of the blessed virgin whiche is honoured in Ciuile, by the name of *Santla Maria Antiqua*, promynginge to fende her manye golden gyftes and a fraunger of that contrey: also to name the vyllage *Santa Maria Antiqua* after her name: lykewyfe to erecte a temple cauled by the same name: or at the leaste to dedicate the king of that prouince his palaice to that vse, if it shulde please her to assiste them in this daungerous enterpryse. This doone, al the fouldiers tooke an othe, that noo man shulde turne his backe to his enemies. Then the capytayne commaundinge them to bee in a redynes with theyr targets and iauelens, and the trumpeter to blowe the battayle, they fiercely assayed theyr enemyes with a larome. But the naked barbarians, not longe able to abyde the force of owre men, were putte to flyght, with theyr kyng and capytayne *Cemaccus*. Owre men entered into the vyllage, where they fownde plentie of meate fuche as the people of the contrey vse, sufficente to assuage theyr present hunger, as breade made of rootes, with certeine fruites vnlyke vnto owres, whiche they referue for store as wee doo chestnuttes. Of these people, the men are vtterly naked: but the women from the nauell downewarde, are couered with a fyne clothe made of gossampine cotton. This Region is vtterly withoute any sharpnes of wynter. For the mouthe of this ryuer of *Darien*, is only eyght degrees distante from the *Equinoctiall* lyne: So that the commone forte of owre men, scarcely perceau any difference in lengthe betwene the day and nyght all the hole yeare. But bycause they are ignorant in astronomie, they can perceau noo fmaule difference. Therefore wee neede not much passe if the degree do differ sum what from theyr opinion, for asmuche as the difference can not bee greate. The day after that they arryued at the lande, they fayled alonge by the ryuer, where they founde a greate thicket of reedes continuinge for the space of a myle in length supposing (as it chaunced in deede) that the bortherers there aboute which had fledde, had eyther lyne lurkyng there, or els to haue hyd theyr stufte amonge those reedes: Where vpon, armyng them felues with theyr targettes, for feare of the people lyinge in ambuffhe, they searched the thicket dilygently,

and founde it withowte men, but replenyfhed with householde fluffe and golde. They fownde also a great multitude of sheetes, made of the fylke or cotton of the goffampine tree. Lykewyfe dyuers kyndes of vessels and tooles made of woodde, and many of earth: Also many breste plates of gold and ouches wrought after theyr maner, to the fum of a hundreth and two pounce weight. For they also take pleasure in the bewtie of gold, and worke it very artificially, although it bee not the price of thynges amonge them as with vs. They haue it owte of other Regions for exchaunge of such thynges as theyr contrey bringeth furthe. For suche Regions as haue plentie of breade and goffampine, lacke golde: And suche as brynge furth golde, are for the most parte wrought with montaynes and rockes, and therefore baren. And thus they exercise marchandies withowte the vse of money. Reioyng therefore with double gladdenes, aswell in that they sawe greate lyknes of golde, as also that fortune hadde offered them soo fayre and frutefull a contrey, they sent for theyr felowes whom they hadde lefte before in the easte fyde of the goulfe of *Vraba*. Yet fume saye that the ayer is there vnholosome, bycause that parte of the Region lyethe in a lowe valley enuironed with mountaynes and marysshes.

Sheetes of goffampine.

Breste plates of golde.

The golden Regions, are for the moste parte baren.

THE SECONDE BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE,
Of the supposed continente.



Haue describ'd to yowre holynes where *Fogeda* with his coompany (to whome the large tractes of *Vraba* was assigned to inhabite) intended to fasten there foote. Lette vs nowe therefore leaue them of *Vraba* for a whyle, and returne ageyne to *Nicuesa* to whom the gouernance and Lieuetenauteshippe of the moste large prouince of *Beragua* (beinge the weste fyde of the goulfe of *Vraba*) was appoynted. We haue declared howe *Nicuesa* departinge with one carauell and two brigantines frome *Vraba* the iurisdiction of his frende and companyon *Fogeda*, directed his course westwarde to *Beragua*, leauinge the bygger shippes fumewhat behynde hym, to folowe hym a farre of. But he tooke this diuise in an euyll howre. For he bothe loste his felowes in the nyght, and went past the mouth of the ryuer of *Beragua*, which he chiefly sowght. One *Lupus Olanus* a Cantabrian, and gouernoure of one of the greate shippes, had the conducte of one of the brigantines. He commynge behynde, lerned of th[e] inhabitants which was the way Eastwarde to the goulfe of *Beragua* ouer passed and lefte behynde of *Nicuesa*. *Olanus* therefore directinge his course towarde the Easte, mette with the other brigantine which had also wandered owte of the way by reason of the darkenes of the nyght. The gouernour of this brigantine, was one *Petrus de Vmbria*. Thus bothe beinge gladde of theyr meetinge, they consulted what was best to bee doone, and which way they coulde coniecture their gouernour had taken his vyage. After deliberation, they iudged that *Nicuesa* could no more lacke fum to put him in remembraunce of *Beragua*, then they them selues were myndful therof, hopynge also to fynde hym there. They sayled therefore towarde *Beragua*: where they founde within. xvi. myles dystant, a ryuer which *Colonus* named *Lagartos*, bycause it noorythethe greate lyfardes whiche in the Spanyssh toonge are cauled *Lagartos*. These lyfertes are hurtfull bothe to man and beaste, and in shape muche lyke vnto the Crocodiles of the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypte. In this ryuer, they founde theyr companyons and felowes of theyr erreure lyinge at anker with the greate shippes which folowed behynde by the gouernours commaundement. Here the hole assembl[i]e beinge carefull and disquieted by reason of the gouernours erreure, after consultacion, by th[e] aduise of the capitaynes of the brigantines, who had rafed nere vnto the coastes of *Beragua*, they sayled directly thether. *Beragua*, in the language of th[e] inhabitants of the fame prouince, is as much to saye, as the golden ryuer. The region it selfe is also cauled by the fame name, takynge name of the ryuer. In the mouth of this ryuer, the greatest vessels cast anker, and conueighed al theyr vytailes and other necessaries to lande with theyr shippe boates: and elected *Lupus Olanus* to bee theyr gouernour in the steede of *Nicuesa* whom they had loste. By th[e] aduice therefore of *Olanus* and the other vnder capitaynes, that all hope of departure myght bee taken from the fouldiers which they had nowe browght thether, and to make them the more wyllinge to inhabite that land, they vtterly forfooke and caste of those shyppes beinge nowe rotten for age, and suffered them to bee shaken and broofed of the ferges of the sea. Yet of theyr foundeste planks, with other newe, made of the trees of that Region (which they say to be excedinge bygge and hygh) they framed a newe carauel shortly after, whiche they myght vse to ferue for theyr necessitie. But *Beragua* was founde by the vnfortunate destenie of *Petrus de Vmbria*. For he, beinge a man of prompt wytte and apt forwardenes to attempte thynges (in whiche fumetyme fortune wyll beare a stroke notwithstandinge owre prouidence) tooke vpon hym th[e] aduventure to searche the shore to th[e] intent to find a waye for his felowes where they myght beste coome alande. For this purpose, he chose

Fogeda, the Lieuetenaunt of Vraba.

Nicuesa the Lieuetenaunt of Beragua.

Nicuesa loste his felowes in the nyght.

Lupus Olanus

Petrus de vmbria

The capitaynes consulte where to find theyr lost gouernour.

The ryuer Lagartos.

58

The golden ryuer of Beragua.

The enterprise and death of Petrus de Vmbria.

The daungerous
place of Scilla in
the sea of Cicillie.

Swymmlnge

The fysshier boate
of Nicuesa his
carauele.

The miserable
case of Nicuesa.

59

The Region of
Gratia Dei or
Cerabaro.

The ryuer of
Sancti Matthei.

The rigoroussnes
of Nicuesa.

Corne waxeth
rype euery fourth
month

The commendation
of a younge man
brought vp with
Colonus.

Portus Bellus.
Weakenes of
hunger.

Cape, Marmor.

hym twelue maryners, and wente aboorde the shippe boate whiche serued the greateste shyppes. The flowinge of the fea, raged and rored there, with a horrible whurlinge as wee reede of the daungerous place of *Scylla* in the fea of Scicillie, by reason of the hounge and ragged rockes reachyng into the fea, from which the waues rebounding with violence, make a greate noyse and rowghnes on the water, whiche rowghnes or reflowinge, the Spanyardes caule *Refacca*. In these daungers wretched *Vmbria* wresteled a while. But in shorte space, a waue of the fea almoste as bygge as a mountayne, reboundinge from the rockes, ouerwhelmed the boate and deuoured the same with the men, euen in the fight of theyr felowes: So that of them all, onely one escaped by reason he was experte in fwymmyng. For gettinge holde of the corner of a rocke, and susteynyng the rage of the fea vntyll the nexte daye when it waxed caulme, and the shore was drye by the faule of the water, he escaped and vntoyld to his coompanye. But *Vmbria* with the other eleuen, were vtterlye caste away. The resydue of the coompany, durst not committe them selues to the shippe boates, but went alande with theyr brigantines. Where remaynyng a fewe dayes, and faylinge alonge by the ryuer, they founde certeyne vyllages of th[e]inhabitanes, which they caule *Mumu*. Here they beganne to build a fortresse, and to fowe feedes after the maner of theyr countrey, in a certeyne vale of frutefull grownde, bicaufe in other places the region is baren. As these thynges were thus dooinge in *Beragua*, one of their coompanye standyng vpon the toppe of a hyghe rocke of especiall, and lyftyng his eyes towarde the Weste, beganne to crye, Lynyn fayles, lynyn fayles. And the nerer it drewe towarde hym, he perceaued it to bee a shyppe boate commyng with a lyttle fayle. Yet receaued they it with muche reioyfyng: for it was the fysshier boate of *Nicuesa* his carauale, and of capacitie to carye onely fyue men, and had nowe but three in it, which had stoune it from *Nicuesa* bycause he refused to gyue credit to them that he had passed *Beragua*, and lefte it behynde hym Eastwarde. For they feinge *Nicuesa* and his felowes to confume dayely by samynne, thought they wolde proue fortune with that boate, if their chauce myght bee to fynde *Beragua*, as in deede it was. Debatinge therefore with theyr felowes, of these matters, they declared howe *Nicuesa* erred and loste the carauale by tempest, and that he was nowe wanderinge amonge the marysshes of vnknown coastes, full of myferie and in extreeme penurie of all thynges, hauinge nowe lyued for the space of three score and tenne dayes, only with herbes and rootes, and fylldome with frutes of the countrey, contented to drinke water, and yet that often tymes saylyng, bycause he was instant to trauayle westwarde by foote, supposyng by that meanes to come to *Beragua*. *Colonus* the fyrste fynder of this mayne lande, had coasted alonge by this tracte, and named it *Gratia Dei*: but the inhabitantes caule it *Cerabaro*. Throgh the this Region, there runneth a ryuer which owre men named *Sancti Matthei*, diftante from the weste fyde of *Beragua* aboute a hundrethe and thirtie myles. Here I lette passe the name of this ryuer, and of manye other places by the names which th[e]inhabitanes vse, bycause owre men are ignorant thereof. Thus *Lupus Olanus* the conductor of one of the shippes of *Nicuesa*, and nowe also vice Leauetenaunt in his steede, after that he hadde receaued this information of the maryners, sente thether a brigantine vnder theyr gudyng, these maryners therefore, which came in the fysshier boate, founde *Nicuesa*, and browght hym to the place where *Olanus* laye, whome at his comyng he caste in pryson, and accused hym of treason bycause he vsurped th[e]autoritie of the Lieuetenauntshippe, and that for the desyre he had to beare rule and bee in autoritie, he tooke no care of his errours: also that he behaued hym selfe negligently: demaundinge further more of hym, what was the cause of his soo longe delay. Lykewyse he spake to al the vnder officers sharplye and with a troubled mynde: And within fewe dayes after commaunded them to trusse vp theyr packes, and make them redye to departe. They desyred hym to quyet hym selfe, and to forbear them a while vntyl they had reaped the corne that they had sowne, which wolde shortly bee rype. For all kynd of corne waxeth rype there euery fourth moonethe after it is sowne. But he vtterly denied to tarye any whytte: but that he wolde forthwith departe from that vnfortunate lande: And plucked vp by the rootes al that euer was browght into the goulfe of *Beragua*, and commaunded them to directe theyr course towarde the Easte. After they had sayled aboute the space of. xvi. myles, a certeyne younge man whose name was Gregorie, a Genues borne, and of a chyld browght vp with *Colonus*, cauled to remembrance that there was a hauen not farre frome thense: And to proue his fayyng trewe, he gaue his felowes these tokens: that is, that they shulde fynde vpon the shore, an anker of a lofte shyppe halfe couered with sande: And vnder a tree nexte vnto the hauen, a spryng of cleere water. They came to the lande: founde the anker and the spryng, and commended the wyte and memorye of the younge man, that he only amonge many of the maryne[r]s whiche had seached those coastes with *Colonus*, bore the thyng soo well in mynde. This hauen, *Colonus* cauled *Portus Bellus*. Wheras in this vyage for lacke of vytayles they were sumetymes enforced to goo alande, they were euel entreated of the inhabitantes. By reason wherof, theyr strengthes were soo weakened with hunger, that they were not able to keepe warre ageynst naked men, or fearfully to beare theyr harnes on their backs. And therefore owre men loste twentie of theyr coompanye, which were slayne with venemous arrowes. They consulted to leaue the one halfe of theyr felowes in the hauen of *Portus Bellus*: And the other parte *Nicuesa* tooke with hym towarde the Easte: where abowte twentie and eyght myles from *Portus Bellus*, he intended to buylde a fortresse harde by the fea fyde vpon the poynte or cape which in tyme paste *Colonus* named *Marmor*.

But they were foo feeble by reason of longe hunger, that theyr strength ferued them not to fusteyne fuche labour. Yet he erected a lyttle towre able to refyft the fyrft affaute of the inhabitantes. This towre he cauled *Nomen Dei*. From the tyme that he left *Beragua*, what in the iorney amonge the fandie playnes, then also for hunger whyle he buylded the towre, of the fewe which remayned a lyue, he losfe twoo hundreth. And thus by lyttle and lyttle, the multitude of feuen hundreth foure score and fyue men, was nowe brougnt to scarfely one hundreth. Whyle *Nicuesa* lyued with these few miserabile men, there arose a contention amonge them of *Vraba*, as concerninge the Lieuetenantshippe. For one *Vaschus Nunnez*, by the iudgemente of all men, trustyng more to his strengthe then wytte, floured vp certeyne lyght felowes ageynst *Ancifus*, sayinge that *Ancifus* had not the kynges letters patentes for that office: And that it was not sufficient that he was autorised by *Fogeda*. And therefore forbodde that he shulde execute the office of the Lieuetenantshippe: And wyllled them to chuse certeyne of theyr owne coompanye, by whose counsaile and authoritie they myght bee gouerned.

Thus beinge diuided into factions by reason that *Fogeda*, their capitayne came not ageyne, whom they supposed to bee nowe deade of his venemous wounde, they contended whether it were beste to substitute *Nicuesa* in his place. The wyfeste forte fuche as were famylier with *Nicuesa*, and coulde not beare th[e] insolencie of *Vaschus Nunnez*, thought it good that *Nicuesa* shuld bee fowght owt throwgh owt all those coastes. For they had knoweledge that he departed from *Beragua* bycause of the barenes of the grounde: And that by th[e] exemple of *Ancifus*, and fuche other as had made shippewracke, it were possible that he might wander in fume secrete place: And that they coulde not be quiete in their myndes vntyll they knewe the certentie, whether he with his felowes were alyue or deade. But *Vaschus Nunnez*, fearinge leaste at the commyng of *Nicuesa* he shulde not bee had in autoritie emonge his felowes, sayde they were mad men to thinke that *Nicuesa* lyued: And although he were alyue, yet that they hadde noo neade of his helpe. For he auouched that there was none of his felowes, that were not as meete to rule as *Nicuesa*. While they were thus reafonyng too and froo, one *Rodericus Colmenaris* arryued in those coastes with two greate shippes hauinge in them three score fresshe men, with greate plentie of vitales and apparel. Of the navigation of this *Colmenaris*, I intende to speake sumewhat more. He therefore departed from the hauen of *Hispaniola* cauled *Beata* (where they prepare and furnyssh the them felues whiche make any viage into these landes) aboute the Ides of October in the yeare. 1510: And landed the. ix. of Nouember in a Region in the large prouince of *Paria* founde by *Colonus* betwene the hauen *Carthago* and the Region of *Cuchibachoa*. In this viage what by the rowghnes of the sea and fiercenes of the barbarians, he suffered many incommodities. For when his fresshe water sayled, he sayled to the mouthe of a certeyne riuer which th[e] inhabitantes caule *Gaira*, beinge apte to receaue shippes. This ryuer had his course from the toppe of an exceadinge hyghe mountayne couered with snowe, hygher then the which, all the coompanyons of this capitayne *Rodericus*, faye that they neuer fawe. And that by good reason, yf it were couered wyth snowe in that Region which is not pass ten degrees distante from the *Equinodial* lyne. As they beganne to drawe water owt of their shippeboate, a certeyne Kyng made towarde them appareled with vestures of gossampine cotton, hauinge twentie noble men in his coompanye appareled also: Whyche thinge seemed straunge to owre men, and not seene before in those parties. The Kinges apparell, hunge loose from his shoulders to his elbowes: And from the gerdle downewarde, it was muche like a womans kertle, reachinge euen to his heeles. As he drewe neere towarde owre men, he seemed frendly to admonyssh the them to take none of the water of that ryuer, affirminge it to bee vnholfome for men: And shewed them that not farre from thense, there was a ryuer of good water. They came to the ryuer. And endeuouringe to coome nere the shore, they were dryuen backe by tempeste. Also the burbulinge of the sande, declared the sea to bee but shalowe there. They were therefore enforced to returne to the fyrste ryuer where they myght safely caste anker. This Kinge layde wayte for owre men. For as they were syllinge their barrells, he set on them with abowt feuen hundreth men (as owre men iudged) armed after their maner, although they were naked. For only the kyng and his noble men were appareled. They tooke away the shippeboate, and brooke it in maner to chips: foo fiercely assaylyng owre menne with their venemous arrowes, that they slewe of them fortie and feuen beefore they coulde couer them selues with their targettes. For that poyson is of such force, that albeit the woundes were not great, yet they dyed therof immediatly. For they yet knewe noo remedie ageynste this kynde of poyson, as they after lerned of th[e] inhabitantes of *Hispaniola*. For this Ilande bringeth foorth an herbe which queneth and mortifieth the violent poyson of the herbe wherewith their arrowes are infected, foo that it bee ministred in tyme. Yet of owre coompany whiche went for water, feuen escaped that conflicte, and hyd them selues in a hollowe tree, lurkyng there vntyll nyght. Yet escaped they not the handes of their enemyes. For the shippe departed from thense in the nyght season and lefte them there, supposinge that they had byn slayne. Thus by manye fuche perels and daungers (which I lyghtly ouerpasse bicause I wyl not bee tedious to yowre holynes) he arryued at the length at the hauen of *Vraba*, and cast anker at the easte syde therof, from whense not longe before, owre men departed to the west syde by reason of the barenes of that foyle. When he had

Nomen Dei.
Nicuesa his men
consumed

Contencion
about the
lieutenantship
of Vraba.
Vaschus Nunnez
moueth sedition.
Ancifus
lieutenant for
Fogeda.

60

Nicuesa.

*Rodericus
Colmenaris.*
The nauigation
of Rodericus
Colmenaris.

Cuchibachoa.

The ryuer Gaira.
An exceadinge hygh
mountayne
couered with
snowe.

Appareled men.

Seuen and forty
Spanyades are
slaine with
venemous arrowes.
Ierua.
A remedie agense
venemous arrows

Seuen men left
behynde.

The hauen of
Vraba.

61 contynued a while in the hauen, and sawe noo man stourynge, marueylinge at the filence of the places (for he supposed there to haue fownde his felowes) he coulede not coniecture what this shulde meane: and there vpon beganne to suspecte that eyther they were deade, or that they had chaunged the place of theyr habitacion. To knowe the certentie hereof, he commaunded all the greate ordinaunce and other smaule gunnes which he had in his shippes, to bee charged: And fyers to bee made in the nyght vpon the toppes of the rockes. Thus the fyers beinge kyndeled, he commaunded all the gunnes to bee shotte of at one instante: by the horrible noyse whereof, the goulfe of *Vraba* was shaken, althowghe it were. xxiii. myles distante: for foo brode is the goulfe. This noyse was harde of theyr felowes in *Dariena*: And they aunswered them ageyne with mutual fyers. Wherefore, by the folowynge of these fyers, *Colmenaris* brought his shippes to the West syde. Here those wretched and miserable men of *Dariena* which nowe thorowgh famen and feeblenes helde theyr very fowles in theyr teethe redy to departe from theyr bodies by reason of the calamities which befell vnto them after *Ancifus* shippewracke, lyfinge vp theyr handes to heauen, with the teares runnyng downe theyr cheekes bothe for ioye and forowe, embrased *Rodericus* and his felowes with such kynde of reioynginge as their presente necessitie seemed to requyre. For whereas they were before his comminge, withoute vytayles and almooste naked, he brought them abundance of meate, drynke, and apparell. It restethe nowe (mooste holy father) to declare what came of the diffention amonge them of *Vraba*, as concernynge the gouernaunce after the losse of theyr capitaynes.

The goulfe of
Vraba.
Dariena.

Famen.

What became of
the contention of
Vraba

THE THYRDE BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE Of the supposed continent.

Beragua.



1.1 the chiefe officers in *Beragua*, and such as were most politike in counsayle, determyned that *Nicuesa* shulde bee fowght owte if by any meanes he coulede bee founde. Where vpon they tooke from *Ancifus* the gouernoure refusinge the comynge of *Nicuesa*, a brygantyne whiche he made of his owne charges: And agreed, ageynst bothe the wyll of *Ancifus*, and the master of fence *Vaschus Nunnez*, that *Nicuesa* shulde bee fowght forth to take away the stryfe as touchinge the gouernement. They elected therfore *Colmenaris* (of whom we spake before) to take this matter in hande: wyllynge hym to make diligent search for *Nicuesa* in those

Nicuesa is sought
forth

coastes where they supposed he erred. For they harde that he had forsaken *Beragua*, the region of an vnfrutefull grounde. They gaue hym therfore commaundement to bryng *Nicuesa* with hym, and further to declare vnto hym that he shulde doo ryght good seruice to coome thether, in takyng away th[e]occasion of theyr feditions. *Colmenaris* tooke the thyng vpon hym the more gladly bycause *Nicuesa* was his very frende: Supposinge that his comynge with vytayles shulde bee noo lesse thankefull to *Nicuesa* and his coompanie, then it was to them of *Vraba*. Furnysfhyng therefore one of his owne shippes whiche he brought with hym and also the brigantyne taken frome *Ancifus*, he frayghted the same with part of the vytayles and other necessaries which he brought with hym before from *Hispaniola* to *Vraba*. Thus courfynge alonge by all the coastes and goulfes nere there abowte, at the length at the poynte called *Marmor*, he founde *Nicuesa*, of all lyuyng men most infortunate, in maner dryed vppe with extreeme hunger, fylthye and horrible to beholde, with onely three score men in his company, leste alyue of feuen hundreth. They al seemed to hym foo miserable, that he noo lesse lamented theyr case, then yf he had founde them deade. But *Colmenaris* comforted his frende *Nicuesa*: and embrasinge hym with teares and cherefull woordes, relyed his spirites, and further encouraged hym with greate hope of better fortune: declaryng also that his comynge was looked for and greatlye desyred of al the good men of *Vraba*, for that they hoped that by his autoritie, theyr discorde and contention shulde bee fynysfied. *Nicuesa* thanked his frende *Colmenaris* after such forte as his calamitie requyred. Thus they tooke shyppe to gyther, and sayled directly to *Vraba*. But so variable and vnconstant is the nature of man, that he foone groweth owte of vse, becommeth insolente and vnmyndful of benefites after to much felicitie. For *Nicuesa*, after thus many teares and weepynge, after dyuers bewaylinges of his infortunate desteny, after so many thankes geuyng, ye after that he had faulen downe to the grounde and kyssed the feete of *Colmenaris* his sauoure, he beganne to quarel with hym before he came yet at *Vraba*, reprouinge hym and them all for th[e]alteracion of the slate of thynges in *Vraba*, and for the gatheringe of golde: Affirming that none of them owght to haue layde hande of any golde with owte the aduice of hym or of *Fogeda* his coompanion. When these saynges and suche lyke, came to the eares of theym of *Vraba*, they foo stoured vp the myndes of *Ancifus* Lieuetenaunte for *Fogeda*, and also of *Vaschus Nunnez*, of the contrary parte, ageinste *Nicuesa*,

Nicuesa is founde
in a miserable
case.

Insolencie of to
much felicitie.

62

Nicuesa fauleth
from one miserie
into an other.

that shortly after his arrayall with his three score men, they commaunded hym with threatenynge to departe from thenfe. But this pleased not the better fort. Yet fearynge leaft tumult shulde bee amonge the people whom *Vaschus Nunnez* had stered to factions, the best parte was fayne to giue place to the greatest. This wretched man therefore *Nicuesa* thus drowned in miseries, was thruste into the brigantyne whiche he hym selfe brought: and with hym only feuentene men, of his three score which remayned alyue. He tooke shyppes in the Calendes of Marche in the yeare. 1511. intendynge to goo to *Hispaniola* to coomplayne of the raffhenes of *Vaschus Nunnez*, and of the violence doone to hym by *Ancifus*. But he entered into the brigantine in an vnfortunate houre: for he was neuer seene after. They supposse that the brigantine was drowned with all the men therein. And thus vnhappy *Nicuesa* faulynge headlonge owte of one miserye into an other, ended his lyfe more myserablye then he lyued. *Nicuesa* beinge thus vylely reiected, and al theyr vytayles confumed which *Colmenaris* brought them, faulynge in maner madde for hunger, they were enforced lyke raueninge woolues fealyng theyr praye, to inuade fuche as dwelte abowte theyr confynes. *Vaschus Nunnez* therefore, theyr newe capitayne of theyr owne election, assembling togyther a hundreth and thirtie men, and fettinge them in order of battell after his fwoordeplayers fashon, puffed vppe with pryde, placed his fouldiers as pleased hym in the forwarde and rereward, and fume as pertifens about his owne person. Thus associatinge with hym *Colmenaris*, he wente to spoyle the kynges which were bortherers there abowte, and came fyrst to a Region abowte that coaste, cauled *Coiba*, (wher of we made mencion before) imperiously and with cruel countenance commaunding the kyng of the region whose name was *Careta*, (of whome they were neuer troubled as often as they passed by his dominions) to giue them vytayles. But *Careta* denied that he coulde giue them any at that tyme: alleagynge that he had oftentimes ayded the Christians as they passed by those coastes: by reason wherof his store was nowe confumed: Also that by the meanes of the contynuall warre which he kepte euer from his chyldes age with a kyng whose name is *Poncha*, bortheringe vppon his dominion, he and his famelie were in greate scarfenes of all thynges. But *Vaschus* wolde admytte none of these excufes: And thervppon tooke *Careta* prifoner, spoyled his vyllage, and brought hym bound with his twoo wyues and chyl dren and all his famelie to *Dariena*. With this kyng *Careta*, they founde three of the felowes of *Nicuesa*, the whiche when *Nicuesa* passed by those coastes to seeke *Beragua*, fearynge punysshment for theyr euyll defertes stoule away from the shyppes lyinge at anker: And when the nauie departed, commytted them felues to the mercie of *Careta*, who enterteined them very frendely. They had nowe bynne there. xviii. moonethes, and were therefore as vtterly naked as the people of the contrey. Duringe this tyme, the meate of th[e] inhabitants feemed vnto them delicate dishes and princely fare: especially bycause they enjoyed the same withowte any stryfe for myne and thyne, which twoo thynges moue and enforce men to fuch harde shyftes and miseries, that in lyinge they feeme not to lyue. Yet defyred they to returne to theyr owlde cares, of fuche force is education and natural effection towarde them with whom we haue byn brought vp. The vytayles whiche *Vaschus* brought frome the vyllage of *Careta* to his felowes lefte in *Dariena*, was rather fumewhat to assuage theyr present hunger, then vtterly to take away theyr necessitie. But as touchinge *Ancifus* beinge Lieutenant for *Fogeda*, whether it were before these thynges or after, I knowe not. But this I am fure of, that after the reiectinge of *Nicuesa*, many occasions were fought agens *Ancifus* by *Vaschus* and his factionaries. Howe foo euer it was, *Ancifus* was taken, and cast in pryson, and his goodes confiscate. The cause hereof was, (as *Vaschus* alleaged) that *Ancifus* hadde his commission of the Lieutenantsshippe, of *Fogeda* onely whome they fayde to bee nowe deade, and not of the kyng. Sayinge that he wolde not obey any man that was not put in office by the kyng hym selfe by his letters patentes. Yet at the request of the graueste forte, he was fumewhat pacified, and delt more gentely with hym, hauinge fum compassion of his calamities. And thervppon commaunded hym to bee loofed. *Ancifus* beinge at libertie, tooke shyppes to departe from thenfe to *Hispaniola*. But beefore he had hoyfed vppe his fayle, all the wyfest forte reforted to hym, humbly defyringe hym to returne ageyne: promysynge that they wolde doo theyr diligence, that *Vaschus* beinge reconciled, he myght bee restored to his full autoritie of the Lieutenantsshippe. But *Ancifus* refused to consent to theyr request and foo departed. Yet fume there were that murmured that god and his angels shewed this reuenge vpon *Ancifus*, bycause *Nicuesa* was reiected through his counsaile. Howe foo euer it bee, the searchers of the newe landes, faule headlonge into ruine by theyr owne follye, confuminge them felues with ciuile discorde, not weighinge foo greate a matter, nor employinge theyr beste endeouore aboute the fame as the woorthynes of the thyng requyreth. In this meane tyme, they determyned all with one agreemente, to sende messengers into *Hispaniola* to the younge Admirall and viceroy, sonne and heyre to *Christophorus Colonus* the fynder of these landes, and to the other gouernoures of the Ilande (from whom the newe landes receaue theyr ayde and lawes) to signifie vnto them what state they stode in, and in what necessitie they lyued: also what they had founde, and in what hope they were of greater thynges if they were furnyshed with plentie of vytayles and other necessaries. For this purpose they elected at the assignement of *Vaschus*, one *Valdunia*, beinge one of his faction, and infructed by hym ageins *Ancifus*. And to bee assistant with hym, they appoynted one *Zamudius* a Cantabrian: So that commaunde-

The greatest part ouercommeth the best

The death of Nicuesa.

Famen enforseth them to faule to spoylyng.

Vaschus vsurpeth the [e] autoritie of the Lieutenantsshippe.

Careta, kinge of Coiba.

Kyng Careta is taken and spoyled.

Hunger is the best sauce.

Myne and thine the seedes of al mischefe.

Ancifus, lieutenant for Fogeda, is cast in prison.

Ancifus taket his vyage to hispaniola.

63

The reuenge of God.

The inconueniences of discorde.

The sonne in the heyre of Colon is Admirall and Viceroy of hispaniola.

Valdunia.

ment was gyuen to *Valdiuia* to returne from *Hispaniola* with vytayles: And *Zamudius* was appoynted to take his vyage into Spayne to the kynge. They tooke shippe together with *Ancifus*, hauinge in mynde to certifie the kynge howe thynges were handeled there, muche otherwyfe then *Zamudius* information. I my selfe spake with both *Ancifus* and *Zamudius* at their comynge to the courte. Whyle they were occupied aboute these matters, those wretched men of *Dariena* loosed *Careta* the kynge of *Coiba* vppon condicion that he shulde ayde them in theyr warres ageynst his enemy and theirs, kynge *Poncha* bortheringe vpon his dominions. *Careta* made a league with them, promynginge that as they passed by his kyngedome, he wolde gyue them all thynges necessarief, and meete them with an armie of men, to goo forwarde with them to the battaile agenst *Poncha*. Their weapons are nother bowes nor venemed arrowes, as we fayde th[e] inhabitants to haue which dwel eastwarde beyonde the goulfe. They feight therefore at hande, with longe swordes (which they caule *Macanas*) made of wood bycause they haue noo Iren. They vse also longe staues lyke iauelens hardened at the endes with fyer, or typte with bone. Also certeyne slynges and dartes. Thus after the league made with *Careta*, bothe he and owre men had certeyne dayes appoynted them to tyll theyr grounde and fowe theyr feedes. This doone, by the ayde of *Careta* and by his conduction, they marched towarde the palaice of *Poncha*, who fledde at theyr comynge. They spoyled his vyllage and mytigated theyr hunger with fuch vytayles as they founde there. Yet coulde they not helpe their felowes therwith by reason of the farre distance of the place, althowghe they had greate plentie. For the vyllage of *Poncha*, was more then a hundreth myles distant from *Dariena*: wheras was also none other remedy but that the fame shulde haue byn caryed on mens backs to the sea fyde beinge farre of, where they left theyr shyppes in the which they came to the vyllage of *Careta*. Here they founde certeyne powndes weyght of gold, grauen and wrought into fundrye ouches. After the facking of this vyllage they reforted toward the ships intending to leaue the kinges of the inland vntouched at this tyme, and to inuade onely them which dwelt by the sea coastes. Not farre from *Coiba*, in the same tracte, there is a Region named *Comogra*, and the Kinge thereof, cauled *Comogrus* after the same name. To this Kinge they came fyrst next after the subvertion of *Poncha*: And founde his palaice situate in a frutesfull playne of twelue leaques in bredthe, at the rootes of the further fyde of the nexte mountaynes. *Comogrus* had in his courte a certeyne noble man of nere confanguinitie to Kynge *Careta*, whiche had fledde to *Comogrus* by reason of certeyne dissention whiche was betwene *Careta* and hym. These noble men, they caule *Iura*. This *Iura* therfore of *Coiba*, mette owre men by the way, and conciled *Comogrus* to them, bycause he was well knowen to owr men from the time that *Nicuesa* passed fyrst by those coastes. Owre men therefore went quietlye to the palaice of *Comogrus* beinge distante from *Dariena* thirtie leaques by a plaine waye abowte the mountaynes, This Kynge *Comogrus*, had feuen fonnes, younge men of comelye forme and stature, whiche he had by fundry wyues. His palaice was framed of postes or proppes made of trees fastened togyether after a straunge sorte, and of foo stronge bylding, that it is of no lesse strenght then waules of stone. They which measured the length of the floure thereof, founde it to bee a hundreth and fyftie pafes, and in breadthe, foure score foote: beinge roofed and paued with maruelous arte. They founde his store houfe, furnysshed with abundance of delicate vitailles after the maner of theyr countrey: And his wyne celler replenished with great vesselles of earth and also of woodde fylled with theyr kynde of wyne and fyder. For they haue noo grapes. But lyke as they make theyr breade of those three kyndes of rootes cauled *Iucca*, *agis*, and *Maizium*, (whereof we spake in the fyrste decade) Soo make they theyr wyne of the frutes of date trees, and fyder of other frutes and feedes, as doo the Almaynes, Flemynges, Englyfthe men, and owre Spanyardes whych inhabite the mountaynes, as the Vafcons and Asturians: likewise in the mountaynes of the Alpes, the Noricians, Sueuians, and Heluetians, make certeyne drynkes of barley, wheat, hoppes, and apples. They fay also that with *Comogrus*, they droonk wynes of fundry tastes, both whyte and blacke. But nowe yow shall heare of a thyng more monstros too behoulde. Enterynge therfor into the inner partes of the palaice, they were browght into a chamber hanged aboute with the carkefes of men, tyed with ropes of goffampine cotton. Beinge demaunded what they ment by that superstition, they answered that those were the carkefes of the father, graundefather, and great graundfather with the other auncestours of theyr Kynge *Comogrus*. Declaringe that they had the same in greate reuerence, and that they tooke it for a godly thyng to honour them religiously: And therefore appareled euery of the same sumptuouslye with golde and precious stonnes accordyng vnto theyr estate. After this forte dyd the antiquitie honour theyr *Penates*, whiche they thought had the gouernaunce of their lyues. Howe they drye these carkefes vppon certeine instrumentes made of wood, like vnto hurdels, with a softe fyer vnder the same, so that onely the skynne remayneth to houlde the bones together, we haue described in the former decade. Of *Comogrus* his feuen fonnes, the eldest had an excellent naturall wytte. He therfore thought it good to flatter and please thys wandryng kynde of men (owr men I meane) luyng onely by shiftes and spoyle, least beinge offended and feekyng occasions ageynste hym and his familie, they shuld handle hym as they dyd other whiche fowght noo meanes howe to gratifie them. Wherefore, he gaue *Vaschus* and *Colmenaris* foure thousande ounces of golde artificially wrought, and also fyftie slaues whyche he had taken in the warres. For fuche, eyther they fell for exchange of other thynges, or

Zamudius and Ancifus, take their vyage to Spayne.

Kynge Poncha.

Swordes of woodde.

Kynge Careta conspireth with the Spanyardes agenst kynge Poncha.

Wrought gold

The region of Comogra, distant from Dariena. xxx. leaques.

Kynge Comogrus.

The kynges palaice.

64

Wyne and syder

Blacke wine.

The bodies of deade kynges religiously honoured.

Penates.

The carcases of men dryed

The kynges sonne a yonge man of excellent wytte.

Foure thousande vnces of wrought golde.

otherwise vse them as theym lysteth: For they haue not the vse of money. This golde with as muche more which they had in an other place, owre men wayed in the porche of *Comogrus* his palaice to separate the fyfte parte thereof, whiche portion is due to the Kynges eschequer. For it is decreed that the fyft parte of both golde, perles, and precious stones, shulde be assigned to the Kinges tresourers: And the refydue, to bee diuided emonge them selues by composition. Here as brabblinge and contention arose emonge owr men abowt the diuidinge of gold, this eldeste foonne of Kyng *Comogrus* beinge presente, whome we prayfed for his wysedome, commynge fume what wyth an angry countenance towarde hym whiche helde the balances, he strooke them wyth his fyfte, and scatered all the golde that was therein, abowt the porche, sharply rebukynge them wyth woordes in this effecte. What is the matter yowe Christian men, that yow soo greatly esteeme soo litle a portion of golde more then yowr owne quietnes, whiche neuerthelesse yow entend to deface from these fayre ouches and to melte the fame into a rude masse. If yowre hunger of goulde bee soo insatiable that onely for the desyre yowe haue therto, yowe disquiete soo many nations, and yow yowre selues also susteyne soo many calamit[i]es and incommodities, lyuing like banished men owte of yowre owne countrey, I wyll shewe yowe a Region floweing with goulde, where yowe may satisfie yowr raueninge appetites. But yowe muste attempte the thyng with a greater poure: For it standeth yow in hande by force of armes to ouercome kynges of greate puissaunce, and rigorouſ defenders of their dominions. For besyde other, the greate kyng *Tumanama* will coome soorth ageynste yowe, whose kengdome is moste ryche with golde, and distante from hense onely fyx foonnes: that is, fyx dayes: for they number the dayes by the sonne. Furthermore, or euer yowe canne coome thether, yow must passe ouer the mountaynes inhabited of the cruell Canybales a fierce kynde of men, deuourers of mans flesshe, lyuing withowt lawes, wanderinge, and withowt empire. For they also, beinge desyrous of golde, haue subdewed them vnder theyr dominion whiche before inhabited the golde mynes of the mountaynes, and vse them lyke bondemen, vsyng their labour in dygginge and workynge theyr golde in plates and fundry Images lyke vnto these whiche yowe see here. For we doo no more esteeme rude golde vnwrought, then we doo cloddes of earthe, before it bee formed by the hande of the worke-man to the similitude eyther of fume vessell necessarie for owre vse, or fume ouch bewetifull to be worne. These thynges doo wee receaue of them for exchange of other of owre thynges, as of prisoners taken in warre, whiche they bye to eat, or for sheetes and other thynges perteynyng to the furnytur of householde, fuche as they lacke which inhabite the mountaynes: And especially for vitayles wherof they stande in greate neede by reason of the barrennes of the mountaynes. This iorney therefore, must bee made open by force of men. And when yowe are passinge ouer these mountaynes (poynting with his fynger towarde the southe mountaynes) yowe shal see an other sea, where they sayle with shyppes as bygge as yowres (meanynge the carauelles) vsyng both fayles and ores as yowe doo, althowghe the men bee naked as wee are. All the waye that the water runnethe frome the mountaynes, and all that syde lyng towarde the Southe, bryngeth soorth golde abundantly. As he sayde these woordes, he poynted to the vesselles in whiche they vse to serue theyr meate, affirmyng that kyng *Tumanama*, and all the other kynges beyonde the mountaynes, had fuche and al their other householde stuffe of golde: And that there was noo lesse plentie of golde amonge those people of the Southe, then of Iren with vs. For he knewe by relation of owre men, wherof owre swoordes and other weapons were made. Owre capitaynes marueylng at the oration of the naked younge man (for they had for interpretours those three men whiche had byn before a yere and a halfe conuerfant in the court of kyng *Careta*) pondered in theyr myndes, and earnestly considered his sayings. Soo that his raffhenes in scatteringe the golde owte of the balances, they turned to myrth and vrbantie, commendynge his dooinge and fayinge therein. Then they asked hym frendely, vpon what certeyne knoweledge he spake those thynges: Or what he thowght beste herein to bee doone yf they shulde brynge a greater supple of men. To this, younge *Comogrus*, slayinge a while with hym selfe as it were an oratour preparinge him selfe to speake of fume graue matter, and disposyng his bodye to a giesture meete to persuaide, spake thus in his mother tonge. Gyue eare vnto me o yowe Chrystians. Albeit that the gredie hunger of golde hath not yet vexed vs naked men, yet doo we destroy one an other by reason of ambition and desyre to rule. Hereof springeth mortall hatred amonge vs, and hereof commethe owre destruction. Owre predicesours kepte warres, and soo dyd *Comogrus* my father with princes beinge bortherers abowt hym. In the which warres, as wee haue ouercoome, so haue wee byn ouercoome, as dothe appere by the number of bondemen amonge vs, which we tooke by the ouerthrowe of owre enemyes, of the whiche I haue gyuen yowe fiftie. Lykewyse at an other tyme, owre aduersaries hauinge th[e]upper hande agenste vs, ledde away manye of vs captiue. For fuche is the chaunce of warre. Also, amonge owre familiers (wherof a great number haue byn captiues with them) beholde here is one whiche of longe tyme ledde a paynefull lyfe in bondage vnder the yoke of that kyng beyonde the mountaynes, in whose kyngdome is fuche abundance of golde. Of hym, and fuche other innumerable, and lykewyse by the refort of free men on theyr syde comminge to vs, and ageyne of owre men resortinge to them by safe conduct, these thynges haue byn euer as well known vnto vs, as owre owne possessions. But that yowe maye bee the better affured hereof, and bee owte of all suspection that yowe

The distribution of golde.

Younge Comogrus his oration.

The hunger of golde.

A region floweing wyth golde.

Kyng Tumanama.

Canibales.

65

The golde mynes of the mountaynes.

Vnwrought golde not esteemed.

Exchange.

Abundance of golde.

Householde stuffe of gold

Naked people tormented with ambition.

A vehement persuasion.

shal not bee deceaued, make me the guyde of this viage, byndyng me fast and keepyng me in safe custodie to bee hanged on the next tree, yf yowe fynde my saynges in any point vntrewe. Folowe my counfayle therefore, and fend for a thousande Christian men apte for the warres, by whose power we may with also the men of warre of *Comogrus* my father armed after owre maner, inuade the dominions of owre enemyes: where, bothe yowe may bee satiffyed with golde, and we for owre conductyng and aydyng yowe in this enterpryse, shall thynke owre felues abundantly rewarded, in that yowe shall helpe to delyuer vs from the iniuries and perpetuall feare of owre enemyes. After these woordes, this prudente younge *Comogrus* helde his peace. And owre men moued with greate hope and hunger of golde, beganne ageine to fwalowe downe theyr spettle.

66

A token of hunger.

THE FOUVRTH BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE, Of the supposed Continent.

Kynge Comogrus is baptised with his famely.

Valdiuia returneth from hispaniola.



After that they had taryed here a fewe dayes and baptised *Comogrus* with all his fameli, and named hym by the name of Charles after the kynge of Spayne, they returned to theyr felowes in *Dariena* leauinge with hym the hope of the thousande souldyers, which his sonne requyred to passe ouer those mountaynes towarde the South sea. Thus enteringe into the vyllage which they had chosyn to inhabite, they had knowlege that *Valdiuia* was returned, within fyxe moonethes after his departure: but with noo great plentie of vytayles, bycause he browght but a smaule shippe: yet with hope that shortly after, there shulde bee sent them abundance of vytayles with a newe supply of men. For younge *Colonus*, the Admiral and viceroy of *Hispaniola*, and the other gouernours of the Ilande, acknowledged that hetherto they had noo respecte to theym of *Dariena*, bycause they supposed that *Ancifus* the Lieutenant had safely arryued there with his shippe laden with vatayles: wyllynge them from hensforth to bee of good cheere, and that they shulde lacke nothyng hereafter: But that at this present tyme, they had noo bygger shippe wherby they myght fende them greater plentie of necessaries by *Valdiuia*. The vytayles therefore which he browght, serued rather sumwhat to mytigate theyr present necessitie, then to satiffye theyr lacke. Wherfore within a fewe dayes after *Valdiuia* his returne, they fel ageine into lyke scarfnes: especially for asmuch as a great storme and tempest whiche came from the hyghe mountaynes with horrible thunder and lyghtnyng in the mooneth of Nouember, browght with it suche a fludde, that it partely caryed away and partly drowned all the corne and feedes whiche they had sowne in the moonethe of September in a frutefull gronde before they went to kyng *Comogrus*. The feedes which they of *Hispaniola* caule *Maizium*, and they of *Vraba* caule *Hobba*: Wherof they make theyr breade, which also wee sayde to bee rype thryfe euery yeare, bycause those Regions are not bytten with the sharpnes of wynter by reason of theyr nerenes to the Equinoctiall lyne. It is also agreable to the principles of naturall philosophie, that this breade made of *Maizius* or *Hobba*, shulde bee more holsome for th[e] inhabitants of those contreys then breade made of wheate, by reason that it is of easyer digestion. For wheras coule is wantinge, the naturall heate is not dryuen from the owtwarde partes into the inwarde partes and precordials, wherby digestion is much strengthened. Beinge therefore thus frustrate of the increafe of theyr feedes, and the kynges nere abowte them spoyled of both vytayles and golde, they were enforced to seeke theyr meate further of: And therwith to signifie to the gouernours of *Hispaniola* with what great necessitie they were oppressed: And what they had lerned of *Comogrus* as concernyng the Regions towarde the Southe: wyllynge them in confideration therof to aduertise the kynge to fende them a thousande souldiers, by whose helpe they myght by force make waye through the mountaynes diuidyng the sea on bothe sydes, if they coule not bryng the fame to passe quietly. The same *Valdiuia* was also sent on this message, caryng with hym to the kynges tresourers (hauinge theyr office of recepte in *Hispaniola*) three hundreth poundes weyght of golde after eyght ounces to the pounce, for the fyfte portion dewe to the kynges eschequer. This pounce of. viii. vnces, the Spanyardes caule *Marcha*, whiche in weyght amounteth to fyftie pieces of golde cauled *Castellani*. But the Castilians, caule a pound *Pesum*. We conclude therefore, that the sume hereof, was. xv. thousande of those peeces of golde cauled *Castellani*. And thus it is apparente by this accompte, that they receaued of the barbarous kynges, a thousande and fyue hundreth poundes of eyght ounces to the pounce. All the whiche they founde redy wrought in sundry kyndes of ouches, as cheynes, brafelets, tablets, and plates, bothe to hange before theyr brestes, and also at theyr eares, and nosethryls. *Valdiuia* therefore tooke shypinge in the same carauell in the whiche he came last, and returned also beefore the thyrde day of the Ides of Ianuary, in the yeare of Christ M. D. XI. What chanced to hym in this vyage, we wyl declare in place conuenient. But let vs nowe returne to them which

Horrible thunder and lightnyng in the moneth of Nouember.

Bread of Maizius and hobba

Digestion strengthened by owtwarde cold.

Hunger.

A newe supply of a thousande souldyers.

Marcha.

Pesus.

A thousande and fyue hundreth poundes weyght of wrought gold

67

remayned in *Vraba*. After the dismissing of *Valdiuia*, beinge pricked forward with owtrageous hunger, they determined to searche the inner partes of that goulfe in fundry places. The extreme angle or poynt of the same goulfe is distant from the enterance therof, aboute foure score myles. This angle or corner, the Spanyardes caule *Culata*. *Vaschus* hym selfe came to this poynte with a hundreth men, coastynge alonge by the goulfe with one brygantine and certeyne of the boates of those regions, which the Vrabiens caule *Vru*, lyke vnto them whiche th[e] inhabitants of *Hispaniola* caule *Canoas*. From this poynt, there fauleth a ryuer from the East into the goulfe, ten tymes bygger then the ryuer of *Dariena* which also fauleth into the same. Saylyng alonge by the ryuer about the space of thirtie myles (for they caule it nyne leaques) and sumwhat inclynynge towarde the ryght hande fouthwarde, they founde certeyne vyllages of th[e] inhabitants, the Kyng whereof, was cauled *Dabaiba*. Owre men also were certifyed before, that *Cemacchus* the kyng of *Dariena* whom they put to flyght in the battayle, fledde to this *Dabaiba*. But at the commynge of owre men, *Dabaiba* also fledde. It is thowght that he was admonyshed by *Cemacchus*, that he shulde not abyde the brunte of owre men. He folowed his counsayle: forfooke his vyllages, and lefte all thynges defolate. Yet owre men founde heapes of bowes and arrowes: Also much household stufte and many fysshynge boates. But those maryshe groundes were neyther apte for sowinge of feedes or planting of trees. By reason wherof, they founde there fewe fuche thynges as they desyred: that is, plentie of vytayles. For th[e] inhabitants of this Region, haue noo breade but such as they get in other contreys nere abowte them by exchange for theyr fyfthe, only to ferue theyr owne necessitie. Yet founde they in the houses of them that fledde, golde wrought and grauen, amountynge to the fume of feuen thousande of those pieces whiche we sayde to bee cauled *Castellani*: Also certeyne canoas: of the which they brought away twoo with them, and great plentie of theyr houholde stufte, with certeyne bundels of bowes and arrowes. They saye, that from the maryshes of that ryuer, there coome certeyne battes in the nyght season, as bygge as turtle doones, inuadyng men and bytinge them with a deadly wounde, as fume of them testifie whiche haue byn bytten of the same. I my selfe communing with *Ancifus* the Lieutenant whom they reiected, and amonge other thynges askynge him of the venemous bytinge of these battes, he toulde me that he hym selfe was bytten by one of them on the heele, his foote lyng vncovered in the nyght by reason of the heate in sommer season: But that it hurt hym noo more, then yf he hadde byn bytten by any other beaste not venemous. Other saye, that the bytyng of fume of them is venemous: Yet that the same is healed incontiently, if it be wasshed with water of the sea. *Ancifus* toulde me also, that the venemous woundes made by the Canibales arrowes infected with poyson, are healed by wasshyng with water of the sea, and also by cauterising with hotte Irens: And that he had experience thereof in the region of *Caribana*, where many of his men were so wounded. They departed therefore, from the poynte of the goulfe of *Vraba*, not well contented bycause they were not laden with vitales. In this their returne, there arose foo greate a tempest in that wyde goulfe, that they were enforced to caste into the sea, all the household stufte whiche they tooke from the poore wretches whiche lyued onely by fysshinge. The sea also swalowed vpp the two boates that they tooke from them, wherewyth the men were likewise drowned. The same tyme that *Vaschus Nunnez* attempted to searche the poynte of the goulfe towarde the fouthe, euen then by agremente, dyd *Rodericus Colmenaris* take his viage towarde the mountaynes by the easte, with thre score men, by the ryuer of the other goulfe. Aboute fortie miles distante from the mouthe of the ryuer, (for they caule it twelue leaques) he founde certeyne vilages situate vppon the bankes of the ryuer, whose *Chiui*, (that is,) kinge, they caule *Turui*. With this kinge dyd *Colmenaris* yet remayne when *Vaschus* after his returne to *Dariena*, saylyng by the same ryuer, came to hym. Here refreshinge theyr hole company with the vitales of this *Turui*, they departed from thense togyther. Other fortie myles from hense, the ryuer encompafeth an Iland inhabited with fyfsher men. In this, bycause they sawe greate plentie of the trees which beare *Cassia fistula*, they named the Iland *Cannafistula*. They found in it, threescore villages of tenne cotages apiece. On the right syde of the Iland there runneth an other ryuer, whose chanel is of depth sufficiente to beare brigantines. This ryuer they cauled *Riuum Nigrum*: from the mouthe wherof about. xv. myles distante they founde a towne of fyue hundreth houses seuered: whose *Chebi*, (that is,) kinge, was cauled *Abenamachei*. They all forfooke theyr houses as soone as they harde of owre mennes commynge. But when they sawe that owre men persued them, they turned ageyne and ranne vppon them with desperat mindes, as men driuen from their owne possessions. Theyr wepons, are swordes of wod, and long staues like iauelens, hardened at the ende with fyer: But they vse neyther bowes nor arrowes: nor any other of th[e] inhabitants of the weste syde of the goulfe. The pore naked wretches were easely dryuen to flight with owre weapons. As owre men folowed them in the chase, they tooke the kinge *Abenamachei* and certeyne of his noble men. A common fouldier of owres whom the kyng had wounded, coomynge to hym when he was taken, cutte of his arme at one stroke with his swoorde. But this was doone vnwares to the capitaynes. The number of the Christian men which were here, was aboute a hundrethe and fiftie: the one halfe whereof, the capytaynes lefte here, and they with the resydue, rowed vpp the ryuer ageyne with twelue of the boates of those Regions, whiche they caul. *Vru*, as they of *Hispaniola* caule them *Canoas*, as we haue sayde. From the ryuer of *Riuus Niger* and the Iland of *Cannafistula*,

The goulfe of Vraba.

Culata.

Vaschus searcheth the goulfe of Vraba.

A maruelous great ryuer, faulyng into the goulfe of Vraba.

Kyng *Dabaiba* and *Cemacchus*, are dryuen to flyght.

Marysse grounde

Wrought gold wheyghynge vii. thousand *Castellanes*.

Battes as bygge as turtle doues.

Ancifus bytten of a batte

Remedies ageynst venemous arrows

A tempest.

Colmenaris taketh his vyage towarde the montains

Kyng *Turui*.

The Iland of *Cannafistula*.

68
The ryuer of *Riuus Niger*.
A towne of v. hundreth houses.

Th[e] inhabitants of the west syde of the goulfe.

Kyng *Abenamachei*, is taken and his arme cut of.

Many other ryuers fauling into Riuis Niger.

Kyng abibeiba dwellethe in a tree.

Abundance of moyster and heat is cause of byggenes.

The rysynge of the Ocean sea.

Trees of maruelous height

Plinie.

Frutefull grounde.

Cellers in the grounde.

Abibeiba, the kyng of the tree, yeldethe to Vaschus.

69

Gold no more esteemed then stones.

Canibales.

for the space of threecore and ten myles, leauing both on the right hande and on the lefte many riuers fauling into it bigger then it selfe, they entred into one by the conductynge of one of the naked inhabitantes, beinge appoynted a guyde for that purpose. Vppon the banke of this ryuer next vnto the mouthe of the same, there was a kynge cauled *Abibeiba*: who, bycause the Region was full of marysshes, had his palaice buylded in the toppe of a highe tree, a newe kynde of byldynge and feldome seene. But that lande beareth trees of fuche exceeding heigh[h]th, that emonge theyr branches, a man may frame large houfes: As wee reede the like in diuers autoures howe in many Regions where the ocean fea ryfethe and ouerflowethe the lande, the people were accustomed to flye to the high trees, and after the faule of the water, to take the fyfthe lefte on the lande. This maner of buyldinge, is to laye beames crosse ouer the branches of the trees, faste bownde togyther, and there vppon to rayfe theyr frame, strongly made ageynste wynde and wether. Owre men suppose that they buylde theyr houfes in trees, by reason of the greate fluddes and ouerflowinge of ryuers whiche often tymes chaunce in those Regions. These trees are of fuche heighth, that the strength of no manes arme is able to hurle a stone to the houfes buylded therein. And therefore doo I gyue the better credit to Plinie and other autours whiche wrytte that the trees in fume places in *India* are soo high by reason of the frutesfulnes of the grounde, abundance of water, and heate of the Region, that noo man is able to shute ouer theym with an arrowe. And by iudgemente of all men, it is thought that there is noo frutfuller ground vnder the soonne, then this is whereof wee nowe entreate. Owr men measuringe manye of these trees, founde theym to bee of fuche biggnes, that feuen men, ye fumetymes eight, holdinge hande in hande with theyr armes streached furthe, were scarcely able too fathame them aboute. Yet haue they theyr cellers in the grounde, well replenysshed with such wynes wherof wee haue spoken beefore. For albeit that the vehemencie of the wynde, is not of poure to caste downe those houfes, or to breeke the branches of the trees, yet are they toffed therewith, and swaye sumwhat from fyde to fyde, by reason wherof, the wyne shulde bee muche troubeled with moouinge. All other necessayre thinges, they haue with theym in the trees. When the kynge or any other of the noble men, dyne or suppe in these trees, theyr wynes are brought theym from the celleres by theyr seruantes, whyche by meanes of exercise, are accustomed with noo lesse celeritie to runne vppe and downe the steares adherente to the tree, then doo owre waytyng boyes vppon the playne grounde, fetch vnto what wee caule for from the cobbarde byfyde owr dynyng table. Owre men therefore, came to the tree of kinge *Abibeiba*, and by th[e]interpretoures cauled hym foorth to communication, gyuinge hym signes of peace, and there vppon willinge hym to coomme downe. But he denyed that he wolde coomme owte of his house: Desyringe them to suffer hym to lyue after his fashion. But owre men fell from fayre woordes to threateninge, that excepte he wolde descende with all his famelie, they wolde eyther ouerthrowe the tree, or elles set it on fyer. When he had denied them ageyne, they fell to hewing the tree with theyr axes. *Abibeiba* feeinge the chippes faule from the tree on euery fyde, chaunged his purpose, and came downe with only two of his soones. Thus after they had entreated of peace, they communed of gatheringe of golde. *Abibeiba* answered that he had noo golde, and that he neuer had any neede therof, nor yet regarded it any more then stones. But when they were inflante vppon hym, he sayde vnto them. If yowe soo greatly desyre golde, I will seeke for fume in the nexte mountaynes, and bringe it vnto yowe. For it is plentifully engendred in those mountaynes. Then he appointed a day when he wold bringe this golde. But *Abibeiba* came neyther at the day, nor after the daye appoynted. They departed therefore from thense well refreshed with his vitales and wyne, but not with goulde as they hoped. Yet were they enformed the like by *Abibeiba* and his ditionaries as concerninge the golde mynes and the Canibales, as they harde beefore of kinge *Comogrus*. Saylinge yet further aboute thirtie myles, they chaunced vppon certeyne cotages of the Canibales: But vtterly voyde with owte men or stufte. For when they had knowlege that owre men wandered in the prouinces nere aboute theym they reforted to the mountaynes, caryinge al theyr goodes and stufte wyth them.

THE FYFTE BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE

Of the supposed continent.



IN the meane tyme whyle these thynges were doone alonge by the shores or bankes of the ryuer, a certeyne Decurian, that is a capytayne ouer tenne, of the coompanye of those which *Vaschus* and *Colmenaris* had lefte for a garryson in *Riuo Nigro* in the dominion of kyng *Abinamachei*, whether it were that he was compelled through hunger, or that his fataule dayes was nowe coome, he attempted with his souldiers to searche the countreys nere there about, and entered into the vyllage of a king cauled *Abraiba*. This capitaynes name was *Raia*: whom *Abraiba* slewe, with twoo of his felowes: but the resydue fledde. Within a fewe dayes

after, *Abraiba* hauinge compaffion of the calamitie of his kynfeman and neyghbour *Abenamacheius* being dryuen from his owne poffeffions (whose arme alfo we fayd before that one of the fouldiers cut of at the riuer of *Riuo Nigro* and nowe remaynyng with *Abraiba* to whome he fledde by fletth after he was taken, went to *Abibeiba* th[e] inhabitour of the tree, who had nowe lykewyfe forfaken his contrey for feare of owre men, and wandered in the defolate mountaynes and wooddes. When he had therfore founde him, he fpake to him in this effecte. What thyng is this Oh vnfortunate *Abibeiba*: or what nation is this that foo tormenteth vs that wee can not enioye owre quyet lybertie? Howe longe, howe longe I fay fhall wee fuffer theyr crueltie? were it not much better for vs to die, then to abide fuch iniuries and oppreffions, as yow, as *Abinamacheius* owre kynfeman, as *Cemacchus*, as *Careta*, as *Poncha*, as I and other princeꝝ of owr order doo fusteyne? Canne any thinge bee more intollerable then to fee owre wyues, owre chyldren, and owre fubiectes, to bee ledde awaye captiues, and owre goodes to be fpoyled euen before owre faces.

I take the goddes to wytnes, that I fpeake not foo much for myne owne part as I doo for yowe whose cafe I lament. For albeit they haue not yet touched me, neuertheleffe, by the example of other, I owght to thynke that my destruction is not farre of. Let vs therefore (yf wee bee men) trye owre ftrenge and proue owre fortune ageynft them whiche haue delte thus cruelly with *Abenamacheius*, and dryuen hym owte of his contrey. Let vs fet on them with all owre poure, and vtterly deftroy them And yf wee can not fleye them al, yet fhall wee make them afrayde eyther to affayle vs ageyne, or at the leaft dimynyffhe theyr poure. For what foo euer fhall befaule, nothyng can chaunce woofe vnto vs then that which we now fuffer. When *Abibeiba* harde thefe wordes and fuch other like, he conde[f]cended to doo in al thinges as *Abraiba* wolde requyre: Where vppon they appoynted a day to bryng the conspiracie to paffe. But the thyng chaunced not accordyng to their defyre. For of thofe whiche wee fayde to haue paffed to the Canibales, there returned by chaunce to *Riuo Niger* the nyght before the day appoynted to woork theyr feate, thirtie men to the ayde of theym whiche were lefte there yf anye fedition fhulde ryfe as they fufpected. Therefore at the daunying of the day, the confetherate kynges with fyue hundred of their ditionaries armed after theyr maner, befeaged the vyllage with a terrible alarome, knowyng nothyng of the newe menne which came thether the fame nyght. Here owre target men came fourth ageynft them, and fyrft affayled them a farre of with theyr arrowes, then with theyr pykes, and lafte with theyr fwoordes: But the naked feely fowles, perceauinge a greater number of theyr aduerfaries then they looked for, were foone dryuen to flyght, and flayne for the moft parte lyke fcaterynge fheepe. The kynges efcape, they flewe manye, and tooke many captiues whiche they fente to *Dariena* where they vfe them for labourers to tyll and fowe they gronde. Thefe thynges thus happely atchyued, and that prouince quyeted, they returned by the ryuer to *Dariena*, leauinge theyr thyrtye men for a garryfon vnder the gouernance of one *Furatado* a capitayne. This *Furatado* therefore, fente from *Riuo Nigro* where he was appoynted gouernoure, twentie of his felowes and one woman, with. xxiii. captiues to *Vafchus* and his company, in one of the byggest *Canoas* of that prouince. As they rowed downe by the ryuer, there came fourth foodenly ouerthwarte the ryuer ageynft them, foure greate *Canoas*, which ouerthrew theyr boate and flewe as many of them as they coule coome by, bycaufe they were vnprepared fufpecting noo fuch thinge. Owre men were all drowned and flayne excepte twoo, which hyd them felues amonge certeyne fagottes that swamme on the water, in the whiche they laye lurkyng, and foo efcape to theyr felowes in *Dariena*: who by them beinge aduerted hereof, beganne to cafte theyr wyttes what this thyng might meane: beinge no leffe folicitate for them felues, then meditatynge in what daunger they felowes had byn in *Riuo Nigro*, excepte by good fortune, thofe thirtie newe men which were fente to them, had coome to the vyllage the nyght before the conspiracie fhulde haue byn wrought. Confultinge therefore what was beft to bee doone herein, at the lengthe with dylygent fearchynge they had intelligence that fyue kynges, that is to wytte, *Abibeiba* the inhabitoure of the tree, and *Cemacchus* dryuen from his vyllage whiche owre menne nowe poffeffed, *Abraiba* alfo and *Abenamacheius*, kynfemen, with *Dabaiba* the king of the fyfther men inhabytyng the corner of the goulfe whiche we cauled *Culata*, were all affembled to confpire the Christian mens destruction at a day affigned. Which thyng had furely coome to paffe, if it had not byn otherwyfe hyndered by gods prouidence. It is therefore afcrybed to a myracle: And trewly not vnwoorthely if wee weye howe chaunce detected and bewrayed the counfayle of thefe kynges. And bycaufe it is worthy to bee harde, I wyll declare it in fewe wordes. *Vafchus Nunnez* therefore, who rather by poure then by election, vfurped the gouernaunce in *Dariena*, beinge a mafter of fence, and rather a rafshe royster then politike capitayne (although fortune fumtyme fauoureth fooles) amonge many women which in dyuers of thefe regions he had taken captiue, had one whiche in faouere and bewtie excelled all other. To this woman her owne brother often tymes reforted, who was alfo dryuen owte of his contrey with kyng *Cemacchus*, with whom he was very familier and one of his chiefe gentelmen. Amonge other communication which he had with his fyfther whom he loued entierly, he vttered thefe wordes. My deare and welbeloued fyfther, gyue eare to my faynges, and keepe moſte fecreatelye that whiche I wyll declare vnto yowe, yf yowe defyre yowre owne wealth and myne, and the proſperitie of owre contrey and kynfepolkes. The infolencie and crueltie of thefe menne

Abraiba cauſeth the kynges to rebell.

Men good enough yf they had iren

The kynges are are dryuen to flyght.

70
Captiues.

A garyſon of xxx. men.

xviii. Spanyardes ſlayne and drowned

The kynges which conſpired the death of the Chriſtians.

A ſtrange chaunce

Vafchus.

Women can keepe no counſayle.

whiche haue dryuen vs owte of owre possessions, is soo intollerable, that the princes of the lande are determyned noo longer to susteyne theyr oppreffions.

By the conductinge therfore of fyue kinges (which he named in order) they haue prepared a hundreth greate *Canoas*, with fyue thousande men of warre by lande and by sea, with vitales also in the village of *Tichiri*, sufficient to maintayne such an army. Declaringe further, that the kinges by agremente, had diuided emonge them the goodes and headdes of owre men: And therfore admonysht her, at the daye appoynted by sume occasion to conueigh her selfe owte of the way, lest shee shuld bee slayne in the confusion of the bataile. For the souldier victourer, is not woonte to spare any that commethe in his rase. And thus shewing his syfter the daye assigned to the slawghter, he departed. But the younge woman (for it is the swoord that women feare and obserue more then the grautie of *Cato*;) whether it were for the loue or feare that shee had to *Vaschus*, forgettinge her parentes, her kynffolkes, her cuntrye and all her frendes, ye and all the kinges into whose throtes *Vaschus*, had thruste his swoorde shee opened all the matter vnto hym, and conceled none of those thinges whiche her vndiscrete broother had declared to her. When *Vaschus* therfore had hard the matter, he caused *Fuluia*, (for soo had they named her) to fende for her brother, who came to her immediatly, was taken, and enforced to tell the hole circumstances of the matter. Where vppon, he playnely confessed that kinge *Cemacchus* hys lorde and maister, fente those foure canoas to the destruction of owre men, and that these newe conspiracies were attempted by his confaile. Likewise that *Cemacchus* fowght the destruction of *Vaschus* hym selfe when he sent hym fortie men vnder pretence of frendshippe to tyll and sowe his grownd after the maner of the contrey, gyuinge them in commaundement to fleye *Vaschus* at *Marris*, whyther he resorted to comforte his laboures as the maner is of all good husbandes. Yet durste they at noo tyme execute theyr lordes commaundemente vppon hym, bycause *Vaschus* came neuer emonge them afoote or vnarmed, but was accustomed to ryde to them in harnes with a iauelen in his hande and a swoorde by his syde. Wherefore *Cemacchus* beinge frustrate of his particuler confaile, tooke this laste thing in hande to his owne destruction and his neighbours. For the conspiracie beinge detected, *Vaschus* cauled threescore and tenne souldiers, commaundinge them to folowe him, but declared nothing vnto them whether hee wente or what hee entended to do. He wente forwarde therfore fyrste towarde *Cemacchus* which ley from hym, onely tenne myles. But he had knowlege that he was fledde to *Dabaiba* the kinge of the marishes of *Culata*. Yet searchinge his village, he founde a noble man a ruler vnder hym and also his kinsfeman, whome he tooke prisoner with many other of his familiers and frendes both men and women. The same houre that he sette forwarde to seeke for *Cemacchus*, *Rodericus Colmenaris* rowed vp the ryuer with foure of theyr byggeste *Canoas* and threescore men by the conduction of the maydes brother who brought hym to the village of *Tichiri*, in the which we sayd all their vitales to remayne whiche were prepared for theyr armye. *Colmenaris* therfore, sacked the village, and possessed all their vitayles and wyne of fundry colours: likewise tooke the gouernoure thereof prisoner, and hanged hym on the tree in whiche he dwelte hym selfe, commaundinge hym too bee shotte throwgh with arrowes in the fight of th[e]inhabitantes, and with hym foure other rulers to bee hanged on iebbettes to the exemple of other rebelles. This punysshmente thus executed vppon the conspiratours, strooke the hartes of all th[e]inhabitantes of the prouince wyth fuche feare, that there is not nowe a man that dare stoore his finger ageynst the wrathe of owre men. They lyue nowe therefore quietly: And the other kinges by theyr exemple doo the gladlyer liue in subiection, with lesse offence bearinge the yoke whyche they can by noo meanes shake of.

An army of C
[hundred] canoas
and fyue. M.
[thousand] men.
Tryumphe before
victory

Affection
corrupteth trew
iudgement.

71

The conspiracie
of the kynges is
detected.

Kyng Cemacchus,
conspyreth the
deth of Vaschus.

Vaschus pursuweth
the kynges with
three score and
ten men.

Colmenaris
sacketh the
village of Tichiri.

Fyue rulers
hanged and shot
through with
arrows.

The golden
regions on the
south side the
mountaynes.

The death of
Valdiuia and
Zamudius.

THE SYXTE BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE

Of the supposed continente.



Hese thynges, thus sfinysht, assemblinge all their company together they determined with one consente, that a messynger shulde foorth with bee sente to *Hispaniola* (from whense they haue their lawes and ayde) to declare the hole order of all these affayres, fyrste to the admirall and gouernoure of the Ilande, and afterwarde to the Kinge of Spayne, and to persuaue hym to fende those thousand men which younge *Comogrus* said to bee expediente to passe ouer the mountaynes lying betwene them and the golden regions towarde the Southe. *Vaschus* him selfe dyd greatly affecte this embasage: But neyther wolde the resydewe of his felowes electe hym therto, nor his factionaries suffer hym to departe: Aswell for that therby they thought they shulde bee left desolate, as also that they murmured that if *Vaschus* shulde once goo from them, he wolde neuer returne to fuche turmoyles and calamities, by th[e]example of *Valdiuia* and *Zamudius*, who had byn now absente fence

the mooneth of January, in soo muche that they thought they wolde neuer coomme ageine. But the matter was otherwise then they tooke it, as I wyl shewe in his place. For they were periffhed. At the lengeth after many scrutines, they elected one Iohn *Quicedus*, a graue man well in yeares, and treafurer of the kings eschequer in those prouinces. They had conceaued a good opinion of this *Quicedus* that all thynges shulde bee well brought to passe by his meanes, aswell for his wyfdome, as also that they were in good hop[e] of his returne, bycause he had brought his wiffe with hym to those regions, whome he lefte with his felowes for a pledge of his comminge ageyne. When they had thus elected *Quicedus*, they were ageyne of diuers opinions whome they might ioine with hym for affisance: Affirminge that it were a daungerous thinge to committe soo weightye a matter to one mans handes. Not that they mistrusted *Quicedus*, but bycause the life of man is frayle, and the change of the ayer perelous, especially to theym hauynge nowe of longe tyme byn accustomed to the temperature nere vnto the *Equinoctiall*, if they shulde bee compelled to returne to the North with alteration of ayer and dyet. They thought it therefore good to appoynt a companion to *Quicedus*, that if by chance the one shuld fayl the other might remayne: And that if they both escaped, the king shuld gyue the better credit to the relation of both: After longe confultation therefore, they chose *Rodericus Colmenaris* a man of good experience, of whom we haue often tymes made mencion. For from his youth, he had traauyld ouer al Europe by land and by sea, and was present at the doinges of all thynges in Italy ageynst the Frenchemen: Of whose returne also, they had noo smaule hope bycause he had many fermes and hadde tyllid and sowne much grounde in *Dariena*, by th[e]increase wherof he might get much gold by fellyng the same to his felows. He lefte therefore the charge of al his affayres in *Dariena*, with his partener *Alphonfus Nunnez*, a Iudge of the lawe, who also was lyke to haue byn chosen procuratoure of this vyage before *Colmenaris* if one had not put them in remembraunce that he had a wyfe at *Matritis*: fearyng leaft beinge ouercome with her teares, he wolde no more returne. *Colmenaris* therefore, a free man and at libertie beinge affociate affisstant with *Quicedus* they tooke shyping together in a brigantine, the fourth day of the Calendes of Nouember, in the yeare of Christ. 1512. In this vyage, beinge tossed with sundry tempestes, they were by the violence of the wynde, cast vpon the Weste coastes of that large Ilande whiche in the fyrste Decade we cauled *Cuba*, supposed to haue byn fyrme lande. They were fore oppressed with hunger. For it was nowe three moonethes fence they departed from their felowes. By reason whereof, they were enforced to take lande to proue what ayde they coulde gette amonge the inhabitantes. Theyr chaunce therefore, was to arryue in that part of the Ilande, where *Valdiuia* was dryuen alande by tempest. But oh yowe wretched men of *Dariena*? Tary for *Valdiuia* whom yowe sent to prouide to helpe yowe necessities? Prouyde for yowre felwes rather and trust not to them whose fortune yowe knowe not. For when he arryued in *Cuba*, th[e]inhabitantes slewe him with al his felowes, and lefte the carauell wherin they were caried, torne in pieces and halfe covered with sande on the shore: where *Quicedus* and *Colmenaris* fyndyng the fragmentes therof, bewayled their felowes myffortune. But they founde none of theyr carkefes: supposinge that they were eyther drowned, or deuoured of the Canibals, which oftentimes make incurfions into that Ilande to hunte for men. But at the length, by twoo of the Ilande men which they had taken, they had knowlege of *Valdiuia* his destruction: And that th[e]inhabitantes the more greedely attempted the same, for that they had harde by the bablyng of one of his felowes that he had great plentie of gold. For they also take pleasure in the bewtie of gold, which they forme artificially into sundry ouches. Thus owre men stryken with penyuenes for the cruell destenie of theyr felowes, and in vayne seekyng reuenge for theyr iniuries, determyned to forsake that vnfortunate lande, departyng from those couetous naked barbarians with more sorowe and necessitie then they were in before. Or euer they had passed the South syde of *Cuba*, they fel into a thousande myffortunes: and had intellygence that *Fogeda* arryued thereabout, leadyng a myferable lyfe, tossed and turmoyled with tempestes and vexed with a thousand perplexities: Soo that departing from thense almost alone, his felowes beinge for the most parte all confumed with maladies and famyn, he came with much difficultie to *Hispaniola*, where he dyed by force of the poyson of his venemous wound which he had receaued in *Vraba* as we haue said before. But *Ancifus* elected Lieuetenaunt, sayled by all those coastes with much better fortune. For as he hym selfe toulde me, he founde prosperous wyndes in those parties, and was well enterteyned of th[e]inhabitantes of *Cuba*. But this specially in the dominion of a certeyne kynge whose name was *Commendator*. For wheras he desyred of the Christian men whiche passed by, to bee baptifed, demaundyng the name of the gouernour of the Ilande next vnto *Hispaniola*, beinge a noble man and a knyght of th[e]order of *Calatraua* of which order al are cauled *Commendatores*, this kynges desyre was to bee named after hym. Kynge *Commendator* therefore, frendely receaued *Ancifus*, and gaue hym greate abundance of al thynges necessarie. But what *Ancifus* lerned of theyr religion duryng the tyme of his remaynyng there, I haue thought good to aduertise yowre holynes. Yowe shall therefore vnderstande, that certeyne of owre men saylinge by the coastes of *Cuba*, lefte with kynge *Commendator* a certeyne poore maryner beinge diseafed. Who in shorte space recoueringe his health, and hauynge nowe sumwhat lerned theyr language, beganne to growe into great estimation with the kynge and his subiectes, in soo muche that he was oftentimes

Iohannes
Quicedus is sent
to Spain

72

Change of the
ayer is daungerous.

Rodericus
Colmenaris,
assistant with
Quicedus.

A wyfe is a
hynderance

Cuba.

Three moonethes
from Dariena to
Cuba, by reason
of tempests

The death of
Valdiuia.

Hurt of lauyshenes
of the tonge.

The calamitie and
death of Fogeda.

Maladies and
famen.

The prosperous
vyage of Ancifus.

A kyng of Cuba
baptised by the
name of
Commendator.

Ancifus

73

A maruelous
historic howe God
wrought miracles
by the simple fayth
of a maryner.

Be not rashe in iudgement

Zemes.

A chapel builded to the picture of the virgin Mary

God respecteth the infancie of faith for zeles sake

One Religion turned into an other, holdeth styl many thynges of the fyrst.

A strange fantasie.

The effect of godly zeale.

A miracle in the tyme of the battayle

The virgin Mary, is present at the battayle.

74

A maruelus experience of fayth

Muche lyke vnto this, is redde iii. Reg. xviii.

the kynges Lieuetenaunt in his warres ageynst other princes his bortherers. This mans fortune was foo good, that all thynges prospered well that he tooke in hande. And albeit that he were not lerned, yet was he a vertuous and well meanyng man accordyng to his knowlege, and dyd religiously honoure the blessed virgin, bearyng euer about with hym her picture fayre paynted vpon paper and fowd in his apparell nere vnto his breste: Signifyng vnto the kyng, that this holynes was the cause of al his victories: perfuadyng hym to doo the lyke, and to cast away all his *Zemes* which were none other then the fymilitudes of euyll spirites, moſte cruell enemyes and deuourers of owre fowles: And to take vnto hym the holy virgin and moother of god to bee his patronesse if he defyred all his affayres afwell in warre as in peace to succede prosperously. Also that the blessed virgyn wolde at noo tyme fayle hym, but bee euer redy to helpe him and his, if they wolde with deuoute hartes caule vppon her name. The maryner had foone perfluaded the naked nation: And there vppon gaue the kyng (who demaunded the fame) his pycture of the virgin, to whom he buylded and dedicate a chapell and an altare, euer after contemnyng and reiectyng his *Zemes*. Of these *Zemes* made of goſſampine cotton to the fimilitudes of sprytes walkyng in the nyght which they ofentymes see, and ſpeake with them familiarly, wee haue ſpoken ſufficiently in the nynth booke of the fyrſte Decade. Furthermore, accordyng to the inſtitution of this maryner, when the foonne draweth towarde the faule, this kyng *Commendator* with all his famely bothe men and women, reforte daylye to the fayde chapell of the virgin Marie, where kneelyng on theyr knees and reuerently bowyng downe theyr heades, holdyng their handes ioyned togyther, they ſalute th[e] image of the virgin with theſe woordes: *Aue Maria, Aue Maria*. For fewe of them can rehearſe any more woordes of this prayer. At *Ancifus* his beinge there, they tooke hym and his felowes by the handes, and ledde them to this chapell with reioyfyng, ſayinge that they wolde ſhewe theym maruelous thynges. When they were entered, they poynted with theyr fyngers to the Image of the virgin al to beſet and hanged abowte with ouches and iewels and many earthen pottes, fylled ſum with fundry meates, and ſume with water, rownde aboute all the tabernacle. For theſe thynges they offer to the image in the ſteede of ſacrifice, accordyng to theyr owlde ſuperſicion towarde theyr *Zemes*. Beinge demaunded why they dyd thus, they answered, leaſte the image ſhulde lacke meate if perhaps it ſhuld be a hungerd. For they moſt certainly beleue that images may hunger, and that they doo eate and drynke. But what ayde and helpe they confeſſe that they haue had of the godly poure of this image, that is of the bleſſed virgin, it is a thyng woorthy to be harde, and moſt affuredly to bee taken for a truthe. For by the report of owre men, there is ſuch feruent godly loue and zeale in theſe ſimple men toward the holy virgin, that to them beinge in the daungers of warre ageynſt theyr enemies, they doo in maner (yf I may foo terme it) compel her to deſcende from heauen to helpe them in theyr neceſſities: For ſuch is the goodnes of god, that he hath leſte vnto men in maner a pryce wherby wee may purchaſe hym with his holy angels and fayntes, that is to wytte, burnyng loue, charitie and zeale. Howe therefore can the bleſſed virgin at any time be abſent from them which cal for her helpe with pure faith and feruent loue? *Commendator* him ſelſe, with al his noble men and gentelmen, doo teſtifie with one voyce, that in a fought battayle in the which this maryner was capitayne, bearyng with hym this picture of the virgin Marie, the *Zemes* of theyr enemies turned their backes and trembeled in the preſence of the virgins Image and in the fyght of them all. For euery of them bryngte theyr *Zemes* to the battayle, hopyng by theyr helpe to obteyne the victorie. Ye they ſay further, that duryng the tyme of the battayle, they ſawe not only an Image, but a liuely woman clothed in fayre and whyte apparel, aydyng them ageynſt theyr enemies: whiche thyng alſo the enemies them ſelues acknowledge, confeſſyng that on the contrarye parte ſhee appeared to them, ſhakyng a ſepter in her hande with threatenynge countenance, whiche cauſed theyr hartes to ſhake and faynt for feare. But after that this maryner departed from them, beinge taken into a ſhypp of certeyne Chriſtians paſſyng by thoſe coaſtes, *Commendator* declared that he with all his ſubiectes, continually obſerued his inſtitucions: In foo muche that beinge at contention with another prince, which of theyr *Zemes* were moſte holy and of greateſte poure, the matter grewe to ſuche extremitie that they tryed it with hande ſtrokes: And that in all theſe attemptes, the bleſſed virgin neuer fayled hym, but was euer preſente in the brunte of the battayle, and gaue hym eaſye victorie with a ſmaule poure of men, ageynſt a mayne armye of his enemies. Beinge demaunded with what woordes they cryed vppon the virgin Mary when they aſſayled theyr enemies, they answered that they had lerned noo other woordes of the mariners doctrine, but *Sancta Maria adiuua nos, Sancta Maria adiuua nos*: That is, holy Mary helpe vs, holy Marye helpe vs: And this alſo in the Spanyſhe tonge. For he had leſte theſe woordes in the mouthes of all men. Whyle they murdered and deſtroyed them ſelues thus on bothe ſydes, they fell to entreatie of peace and agreed to trye the matter, not hande to hande by combatte of certeyne choſen for bothe parties as the maner was amonge the Romaynes and dyuers other nations in the owlde tyme, or by any flyght or policie, but that twoo younge men ſhulde bee choſen, for eche partie one, with theyr handes bounde faſt behynde them in the playne fieldes, bothe parties beinge ſworne to acknowledge that *Zemes* to bee the better, which fyrſt looſed the bandes of the younge man whiche ſtoode bounde for the tryall of his religion. Thus diuidyng them ſelues, and placeyng the fayde younge men before them in the fyght of them al, with theyr handes faſt bounde by theyr enemies, the

contrary parte cauled fyrst on theyr *Zemes* (that is, the deuyll to whose similitude theyr Images are made) who immediatly appered in his lyknes aboute the younge man that stode bounde in the defence of Sathans kyngedome.

But as foone as *Commendator* with his coompanye cryed *Sancta Maria adiuua nos, Sancta Maria adiuua nos*, forthwith there appeared a fayre virgin clothed in whyte, at whose presence the deuell vanquished immediatly. But the virgin hauinge a longe rod in her hande, and putting the same on the bandes of the younge man that stode for *Commendator*, his handes were loosed immediatly in the fyght of them all, and his bandes founde about the handes of hym that stode for the other partie, in somuch that they them selues fownde hym dowble bounde. But for all this, were not the enemies satisfiied: querelinge that this thyng was doone by fum flyght or diuise of man, and not by the poure of the better *Zemes*. And there vppon requyred for th[e]aduoydyng of all suspection, that there myght bee eyght graue and sage men appoynted, for eche fyde foure, whiche shulde bynde the men in the fyght of them all, and also gyue iudgemente whether the thyng were doone withoute crafte or gyle. Oh pure simplicitie and constant fayth: Oh golden and blessed confidence. *Commendator* and his familiars, doubted not to graunte theyr enemies theyr requeste with lyke faythe wherwith the diseafed woman obteyned healthe of the fluxe of her bludde, and wherby Peter feared not to walke on the sea at the fyght of his master Christe. These younge men therefore were bounde in the presence of these eight graue men, and were placed within theyr lystes in the fyght of bothe parties. Thus vppon a signe gyuen, when they cauled vppon theyr *Zemes*, there appered in the fyght of them all, a deuyll with a longe taylor, a wyde mouthe, greate teeth, and hornes, resemyng the similitude of the Image which the kyng being enemye to *Commendator*, honoured for his *Zemes*. As this deuyll attempted to loofe the bandes of his cliente, the blessed virgin was immediatly presente as before at the caule of *Commendator* and his subiectes, and with her rodde loosed the bandes of her suppliant, which were ageyne lykewyfe founde fast tyed aboute the handes of hym that stode for the contrarye parte. The enemies therefore of *Commendator*, beinge slyken with greate feare and amafed by reason of this greate miracle, confessed that the *Zemes* of the virgin was better then their *Zemes*. For the better profe wherof, these pagans beinge bortherers to *Commendator*, which had euer before byn at continuall warre and enmitie with hym, when they had knowlege that *Ancifus* was arryued in those coastes, they sente ambasadoures vnto hym, to desyre hym to send them preestes of whom they might bee baptised: Where vppon he sent them twoo which hee had with hym there at that present. They baptised in one day a hundreth and thirtie of th[e]inhabitanes, sumtyme enemyes to *Commendator*, but now his frendes and ioyned with him in aliance. All sliche as came to bee baptised, gaue the preestes of theyr owne liberalitie, eyther a cocke or a henne. But no capons: for they can not yet skyl how to carue theyr cocke chykens to make them capons. Also certeyne falted fyfshes, and newe fyne cakes made of theyr breade: likewise certeyne foules franked and made fatte. When the preestes reforted to the shippes, fyxe of these newe baptyfed men accompanied theym laden with vitales, wherwith they ledde a ioyfull Easter. For on the Sunday two dayes before saynte *Lazarus* day, they departed from *Dariena*, and touched at that tyme, onely to the cape or angle of *Cuba* nere vnto the Easte fyde of *Hispaniola*. At the requeste of *Commendator*, *Ancifus* lefte with hym one of his coompanye, to th[e]intente too teache hym and his subiectes wyth other his bortherers, the salutacion of the angell whiche we caule the *Aue Maria*. For they thinke them selues to be foo much the more beloued of the blessed virgin, as they can reherse the more wordes of that prayer. Thus *Ancifus* takinge his leaue of kynge *Commendator*, directed his course to *Hispaniola*, from whiche he was not farre. Shortely after, he tooke his viage to Spayne, and came to *Valladoleta* to the kynge, to whom he made grenous complaint of the infolencie of *Vaschus Nunnez*, in so muche that by his procuremente, the Kynge gaue fentence ageynste hym. Thus muche haue I thought good (moste holy father) wherof to aduertye yowr holynes as concernyng the religion of these nations, not only as I haue byn instructed of *Ancifus* (wyth whom I was dayly conuersante in the court and vsed hym familiarlye) but also as I was enformed of dyuers other men of greate autoritie, to th[e]intente that yowre excellencie may vnlerstande howe docible this kynde of men is, and wyth what facilitie they may bee allured to embrace owr religion. But this can not bee doone foodenlye. Yet we haue greate cause to hope that in shorte tyme they wilbe all drawen by litle and litle to the euangelicall lawe of Christe, to the great encrease of his flocke. But let vs nowe returne to the messengers or procuratours as concernyng the affayres of *Dariena*.

The deuill
appearth in his
lyknes

An other miracle.

Math. 14.

The deuill
appearth agein.

The virgin Mary
ouercometh the
deuyll.

Infidels conuerted
by miracle, and
baptised.

75

The preestes
rewarde.

Aue Maria.

Ancifus vyage to
Spain

Ancifus
complayneth of
Vaschus.

The haruest is
great, but the
labourers are fewe.

THE SEVENTH BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE
Of the supposed continente.

From Dariena to Hispaniola viii. dayes saylung.



From *Dariena* to *Hispaniola* is eyghte dayes sailinge and sumtymes lesse with a prosperous wynde. Yet *Quicedus* and *Colmenaris* the procuratours of *Dariena*, by reason of tempestes and contrary wyndes, could scarcely faile it in a hundrethe dayes. When they had taryed a fewe dayes in *Hispaniola*, and had declared the cause of the comminge to the admirall and the other gouernours, they tooke shippinge in two marchante shippes beinge redye furnysshed, which were also accustomed to faile too and froo betwene Spayne and the llande of *Hispaniola*. They departed from *Dariena* (as we sayde before) the fourth day of the calendes of nouember in the yeare of Christ. 1512, and came not to the courte before the calendes of May in the yeare folowinge beinge the yeare of Christe. 1513. At th[e]yr comynge to the courte, *Iohannes Fonseca* (to whom at the begynnynge the charge of these affayres was committed, whom also for hys faithful seruice towarde the kinge, yowre holynes created generall commissarie in the warres ageynste the moores) receaued them honorably, as men comminge from the newe world, from naked nations, and landes vnknown to other menne.

The procuratours of Dariena, are honorably receaued at the courte.

Their complexion is altered

Of whom the autour had information

76

The greate master of the kynges ships

Petrus arias is elected gouernour of Dariena.

Th[e] oracion of the byshop. of Burges in the defence of Petrus arias.

The warres of Aphrica.

By the preferment therefore of the bysshope of *Burges*, *Quicedus* and *Colmenaris* were brought before the king, and declared theyr legacie in his prefence. Suche newes and presentes as they brought, were delectable to the kinge and his noble men, for the newnes and straungnes therof. They also suiorned with me often tymes. Theyr countenaunces doo declare the intemperatenes of the ayer and region of *Dariena*. For they are yelowye lyke vnto them that haue the yelowye gaundies: And also swolne. But they ascrybe the cause hereof, to the hunger which they susteyned in tyme past. I haue byn aduertised of th[e] affayres of this newe worlde, not onely by these procuratours of *Dariena*, and *Ancifus*, and *Zamudius*, but also by conference with *Baccia* the lawier, who ranne ouer a greate parte of those coastes. Likewyse by relation of *Vincentius Annez* the patrone of the shippes, and *Alfonfus Nignus*, both being men of greate experience and wel traauyled in those parties, beside many other, of whom wee haue made mention in other places. For there came neuer any from thense to the court, but tooke greate pleasure to certifie mee of al thynges eyther by woorde of mouth or by wrytyng. Of many thynges therefore which I lerned of them, I haue gathered fuche as to my Iudgement seeme moste worthy to satisfie them that take delyste in hystories. But let vs nowe declare what folowed after the comminge of the procuratours of *Dariena*. Therefore, before theyr arryual there was a rumoure spreade in the courte, that the chiefe gouernoures and Lieutenantes *Nicuesa* and *Fogeda*, also *Iohannes De la Coffa* (a man of such reputacion that by the kinges letters patentes he was named the greate master of the kynges shippes) were all perished by mischaunce: And that those fewe which yet remainyd alyue in *Dariena*, were at contencion and discorde amonge them felues: So that they neyther endeoured theyr diligence to allure those simple nations to owre faythe, nor yet had regarde to searche the natures of those Regions. In consideration wherof, the kyng was determynd to fende a newe capitayne thither whiche shulde restore and set all thynges in good order, and put them owte of autoritie whiche hadde vsurped th[e] empire of those prouinces withowte the kynges speciall commaundement. To this office, was one *Petrus Arias* assigned, a man of greate prowes and a citisen of *Segouia*. But when the procuratours of *Dariena* had published in the courte howe greate a matter it was, and of what moment, many laboured earnestly to the kyng, to take the office owte of his handes. But the bysshop of *Burges* beinge the kinges chiefe chaplayne, and one of the commissioners appoynted by hym in these matters, beinge aduertised hereof, came immediatly to the kyng, and spake to hym in this effect. May it please yowre hyghnes to vnderstand (moste catholyke Prince) that wheras *Petrus Arias* a man of valiente corage and greate seruice, hath offered hym selfe to aduenture his lyfe in yowre maiesties affayres, vnder vncerteyue hope of gayne and moste certeyne perels, yet that notwithstandinge sum other haue ambiciously maliced his felicitie and preferment labouringe for th[e] office whereto he is elected: It maye please yowre grace herein soo to shewe hym yowr fauour and permit hym to enioye his fayde office, as yowre maiestie doo knowe hym to bee a woorthy and meete man for the same, hauyng in tyme paste had greate experience of his prowesse and valiantnesse, aswell in behauinge hym selfe as orderinge his fouldiers, as yowr hyghnes may the better confyder if it shal please yowe to caule to remembrance his doinges in the warres of Aphrica, where he shewed hym selfe bothe a wyse Capitayne, and valient fouldier. As concerninge his maners and vsages other wayes, they are not vnknown to yowre maiestie, vnder whose wyng he hath of a chylde byn browght vp in the courte, and euer founde faythfull towarde yowre hyghnesse. Wherefore, to declare my opinion vnder yowre graces fauour (whom it hath pleased to appoynt me a

commissioner in these affayres) I think it were vngodly that he shuld bee put from his office at the fute of any other, especially beinge thereto moued by ambition and couetoufnes: who perchaunce woold proue them felues to be the fame men in the office if they shuld obteyne it, as they nowe shewe them felues in the ambitious desiryng of the fame. When the bysshoppe hade sayde these woordes, the kynge confirmed the election of *Petrus Arias* in more ample maner then before: wyllynge the bysshoppe to appoynt hym a thousande and two hundred fouldiers at his charges, makynge hym a warrante to th[e] officers of his eschequer to delyuer hym money in preste for the fame purpose. *Petrus Arias* therfore beinge thus put in office and authorysed by the kynges letters patentes vnder his brode seale, chose a greate number of his fouldiers in the court, and soo departed frome *Valladoleta* aboute the calendes of October in the yeare 1513: And sayled fyrst to Ciuile beinge a verye ryche citie and well replenyshed with people: where by the kynges magistrates he was furnyshed with men and vytayles and other necessarys perteynyng to soo greate a matter. For the king hath in this citie erected a house feruinge only for th[e] affayres of the Ocean, to the which al they that goo or coome from the newe landes and Ilandes, reforte to gyue accomptes afwell what they cary thither as what they bryng from thense, that the kynge may bee truly answered of his custome of the fyfte part bothe of golde and other thynges as wee haue sayde before. This house, they caule the house of the Contractes of *Indi*. *Petrus Arias* founde in Ciuile aboute two thousand younge men which made great fute to goo with hym: lykewyse noo small number of couetous owlde men: of the whiche, many offered them felues to goo with him of theyr owne charges without the kynges stipende. But lest the shippes shulde bee pestered with to great a multitude, or leaft vytayles shulde fayle them, the libertie of free passage was restraynt. It was also decreed that noo stranger might passe without the kynges licence. Wherefore I doo not a lyttle maruaile at *Aloisius Cadamustus* a venetian and wryter of the Portugales vyages, that he was not a shamed to wryte thus of the Spanyardes nauigations: we went: we fawe: we dyd. Wheras he neuer went, nor any Venetian fawe. But he stoule certeyne annotations owte of the three first bookes of my fyrst Decade wrytten to Cardinal *Africanus* and *Arcimboldus*, supposinge that I woold neuer haue publysshed the fame. It myght also happen that he came by the copie therof at the hande of sum ambasadoure of Venice. For I haue graunted the copie to many of them, and was not daungerous to forbyd them to communicate the fame to other. Howe so euer it bee, this honeste man *Aloisius Cadamustus* feared not to challenge vnto hym the frute of an other mans labour. Of the inuentions of the Portugales (which surely are woonderfull) whether he haue wrytten that whiche he hath feene (as he sayth) or lykewise bereaued other men of the iuste commendations of theyr trauayles, I wyll not iudge, but am content to let hym lyue after his maner. Emonge the company of these fouldiers, there were none embarked but siche as were licenced by the kynge, except a fewe Italians, Genues, who by frendshippe and fute were admitted for the Admirals sake younge *Colonus*, sonne and heyre to *Christophorus Colonus* the fyrst fynder of those landes. *Petrus Arias* therfore tooke shippynge in the ryuer *Betis* (nowe cauled *Guadalqueuir*) runnyng by the citie of Ciuile, aboute the beginnyng of the yeare of Christe. 1514. But he loosed anker in an euyll houre. For siche a tempeste folowed shortly after his departure, that it rent in pieces two of his shippes, and soo tossed the other that they were enforced to heaue ouer boorde parte of theyr vytayles to lyghten them. All such as escaped, sayled backe ageyne to the coastes of Spayne: where, beinge newly furnyshed and refreshed, by the kynges officers, they went forward on theyr viage. The master pylot of the gouernoures shyppe, was *Iohannes Vesputius* a Florentine, the neie of *Americus Vesputius*, who left hym as it were by discente of inheritance, th[e] experience of the mariners facultie, and knowlege of the sea, carde and compasse. But wee were aduertised of late by certeyne which came from *Hispaniola*, that they had passed the Ocean with more prosperous wynde. For this marchant shyppe commynge from *Hispaniola* founde them landinge at certeyne Ilandes nere there aboute. But in the meane tyme whyle my importunate caulers on, *Galeaccus Butrigarius* and *Iohannes Cursius*, men studious by all meanes to gratifie yowre holynes, ceafed not to put me in remembrance that they had one in a redines to depart into Italy, and taryed onely to cary with hym vnto yowre holynes these my fayre *Nereides* althowgh rudely decked, leaffe I shulde bestow muche tyme in vayne, I haue let passe many thynges, and wyll reherse onely such as seeme in my iudgement mooste woorthye memory, althowgh sumwhat difordered as occasion hath ferued. So it is therfore that this *Petrus Arias* hath a wyfe named *Helisabeth a Boadilla*, beinge niefe by the broothers fyde to the marques of *Boadilla*, which rendered the citie of *Segouia* to Fernando and Helisabeth princes of Spayne at such tyme as the Portugales inuaded the kingdome of Castile: by reason wherof they were encoraged fyrste to refyfte, and then with open warre to assaile and expulse the Portugales for the greate trefure which kynge Henry brother to queene Helisabeth hadde gathered togyther there. This marquesse whyle shee luyed, dyd euer shewe a manly and floute mynde, bothe in peace and warre, so that by her counsaile manye noble thynges were brought to good effecte in Castile: vnto this noble woman, the wyfe of *Petrus Arias* was niefe by her brothers fyde. Shee folowyng the magnanimitie of her aunt, perceauinge her husbände nowe furnyshyng hym selfe to depart to the vnknown coastes of the newe woorld, and those large tractes of lande and sea, spake these wordes vnto hym. My mooste deare and welbeloued husbände, we ought not nowe to forget that from owre younge

Petrus Arias Lieutenante of *Dariena*.
Petrus Arius hath a thousand and two hundred men appoynted at the kynges charges.

A house in Ciuile appointed to the affayres of India.

Perularia.

77

Many profer them selues to go of theyr owne charges.
Aloisius Cadamustus is reproued.

The Portugales inuentions.

The nauigation of *Petrus Arias*.

A shipwracke

Americus Vesputius.

A notable exemple of a valient woman.

Kynge Henry.

The wyfe of *Petrus Arias*

78

yeares we haue byn ioyned togyther with the yoke of holy matrimonie to th[e]intente that wee shulde soo lyue togyther and not a funder duryng the tyme of owre naturall lyfe. Wherefore for my parte to declare my affection herein, yowe shall vnderstande, that whyther so euer yowre fatal destinye shall dryue yowe, eyther by the furious waues of the greate Ocean, or by the manyfoulde and horrible daungers of the lande, I wyll furely beare yowe company. There can no perell chaunce to me so terrible, nor any kynde of death so cruell, that shal not bee much easyer for me to abyde, then to liue so farre seperate from yowe. It were muche better for me to dye, and eyther to bee cast into the sea to bee deuoured of the fysshes, or on the lande to the Canibales, then with continuall mournynge and bewaylinge, to lyue in deathe and dye luyng, whyle I confume in lookyng rather for my husbandes letters then for hym selfe. This is my full determinacion, not rashely nor presently excogitate, nor concealed by the lyght phantasie of womans brayne, but with longe deliberation and good aduifement. Nowe therefore choose to whether of these twoo yowe wyll assente: Eyther to thruste yowre swoorde in my throte, or to graunte me my requeste. As for the chyldren which god hath giuen vs as pledges of owr insepurable loue, (for they had foure fonnes and as many dowghters) shal not stay me a moment. Let vs leaue vnto them suche gooddes and possessions as haue byn left vs by owre parentes and frendes wherby they may lyue amonge the woorthful of theyr order. For other thynges I take no care. When this noble matrone of manly vertue had fynished these woordes, her husbände feinge the constant mynde of his wyfe, and her in a redynes to doo accordynge to her woordes, had no hart to denye her louinge peticion: but embrasinge her in his armes, commended her intente and consented to her requeste. Shee folowed hym therefore as dyd *Ipsicrata* her *Mithridates* with her heare hangeinge loofe aboute her sholders. For shee loueth her husbände as dyd *Halicarnassia* of *Caria*, hers beinge deade, and as dyd *Artemisia* her *Mausolus*: We haue also had aduertisement sence their departure that she (beinge browght vp as it were amonge soft fethers) hath with no lesse floute corage susteyned the roringes and rages of the Ocean, then dyd eyther her husband or any of the maryners brought vp euen amonge the fourges of the sea. But to haue sayde thus much hereof, this shal suffice. Let vs nowe speake of other thynges no lesse woorthy memorie. Therefore, whereas in the fyrste Decade we haue made mencion of *Vincentius Annez Pinzonus*, ye shal vnderstande that he accompanyed *Christophorus Colonus* the Admirall in his fyrst vyage, and afterwarde made an other vyage of his owne charges with onely one shyppe. Ageyne, the fyrste yeare after the departinge of the Capitaynes *Nicuesa* and *Fogeda*, he ran ouer those coastes of *Hispaniola*, and searched all the southe fyde of *Cuba* from the Easte to the weste, and sayled rownde about that Ilande which to that day for the greate length thereof, was thought to haue bin part of the continent or firme land, althowgh some other say that they dyd the lyke. *Vincentius Annez* therefore, knowyng nowe by experience that *Cuba* was an Ilande, sayled on further, and found other landes westward from *Cuba*, but such as the Admirall had fyrst touched. Wherefore, beinge in maner encompassed with this newe lande, turninge his course towarde the lefte hande, and raising the coastes of that lande by the East, ouerpassinge also the mouthes of the goulfes of *Beragua*, *Vraba*, and *Cuchibachoa*, he arryued at the Region which in the fyrst Decade we cauled *Paria* and *Os Draconis*: And entered into the greate goulfe of freshe water, which *Colonus* discouered, beinge replenished with great abundance of fyfthe, and famous by reason of the multitude of Ilandes luyng in the same, beinge distant Eastwarde from *Curiana* aboute a hundredth and thirtieth myles, in the which tract are the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapana*, whiche also in the fyxe booke of the fyrst Decade we sayde to bee Regions of the large prouince of *Paria*, where many affirme to bee the gretefte plentie of the beste pearles, and not in *Curiana*. The kinges of these regions (whom they caul *Chiacones*, as they of *Hispaniola* caule them *Cacici*) beinge certified of the comminge of owre men, sente certeyne spyes to enquire what newe nation was arryued in theyr coastes, what they browght, and what they wolde haue: and in the meane tyme furnysshed a number of theyr *Canoas* (whiche they caule *Chichos*) with men armed after their maner. For they were not a lytle astonished to beholde owre shippes with the sayles spreade, wheras they vse no sayles, nor can vse but smaule ons if they wolde, by reason of the narownes of theyr canoas. Swarmynge therefore aboute the shippe with theyr canoas (which we may well caule *Monoxyla*, bycause they are made of one hole tree,) they feared not to shute at owr men beinge yet within their ships and keepinge them selues vnder the hatches as safely as yf they had byn defended with stone waules. But when owre men had shotte of certeyne pieces of ordinance ageynst them they were soo discomfited with the noyse and slaughter therof that they droue them selues to flight. Beinge thus disparcelled, owr men chased them with the shippe bote, tooke many, and slewe many. When the kynges harde the noyse of the gunnes, and were certified of the losse of their men, they sent ambafadours to *Vincentius Annez* to entreate of peace, fearinge the spoyle of theyr goodes and destruction of theyr people, if owre men shulde coomme alande in theyr wrathe and furye. They desyred peace therefore, as could bee coniectured by their signes and poyntinges. For owre men vnderstoode not one worde of theyr language. And for the better prooffe that they desired peace, they presented owre men with three thousand of those weights of gold that the Spanyardes caule *Castellanum Aureum*, which they commonly caule *Pesum*. Also a greate barell of woodde full of moste excellente masculine frankensence, weighing about two thousande and fyxe hundredth poundes weight after eight ounces to the pounde: Whereby they knewe that that lande

The thyrd
nauigation of
Vincentius
Pinzonus.

Cuba.

Beragua.
Vraba.
Cuchibachoa.
Paria.
Os Draconis
Curiana.
Cumana.
Manacapana.

Plentie of Pearles.

Monoxyla.
The Barbarians
assayle owre men
beinge in theyr
shyppes.
The vse of gunnes.

79

Great abundance
of gold and
frankensence.
Olibanum,

brought furthe greate plentie of frankenfence. For there is noo entercoufse of marchaundies betwene th[e] inhabitants of *Paria* and the fabeans beinge soo farre diftante, wheras also the[y] of *Paria* knowe nothyng withoute theyr owne coastes. With the golde and frankenfence whiche the[y] presented to owre men, they gaue them also a greate multitude of theyr peacockes, bothe cockes and hennes, deade and alyue, afwell to fatiffie theyr present necessitie, as also to cary with theym into Spayne for encrease. Lykewyfe certeyne carpettes, couerlettes, table clothes and hanginges made of gossampine filke fynely wrought after a straunge diuise with pefante and variable colours, hauing golden belles and fuche other spangles and pendauntes as the Italians caule *Sonaglios*, and the Spanyardes *Cascaules*, hanging at the purfles therof. They gaue them furthermore fpeakinge poppingiais of fundry colours as many as they wolde aske. For in *Paria*, there is no lesse plentie of poppingiais, then with vs of dooues or sparous. Th[e] inhabitants of these Regions both men and women are appareled with vestures made of gossampine cotton, the men to the knees, and the women too the calfe of the legge. The fasshion of theyr apparell, is fymple and playne muche like vnto the Turkes. But the mens, is double and quilted like that whiche the Turkes vse in the warres. The princes of *Paria*, are rulers but for one yeare: But their autoritie is noo leffe emonge the people both in peace and warre, then is th[e] autoritie of other kynges in those Regions. Their villages are buylded in coompasse, along by the bankes of all that greate goulfe. Fyue of theyr princes came to owre men wyth theyr presentes, whose names I thought worthy to bee put in this historie in remembrance of soo notable a thinge *Chiaconus Chiauaccha*, (that is the prince of *Chiauaccha*, for they caule princes or kinges *Chiaconus*) *Chiaconus Pintiguanus*, *Chiaconus Chamailaba*, *Chiaconus Polomus*, and *Chiaconus Potto*. The goulfe beinge fyrste founde of the admirall *Colonus*, they caule, *Baia Natiuitatis*, bycause he entered into the fame in the day of the natiuitie of Chrifte: But at that tyme he only passed by it withoute anye further searhing, and *Baia* in the Spanyfhe tong, signifieth a goulfe. When *Vincentius* had thus made a league with these Princes, followinge his appoynted courfe, he founde many regions towarde the East, desolate by reafon of diuers fluddes and ouerflowynges of waters: also many standyng pools in dyuers places, and those of excedyng largenes. He ceased not to folowe this tracte vntyll he came to the poynte or cape of that moste longe lande. This poynte femethe as though it wolde inuade the monte *Atlas* in *Aphrica*. For it prospecteth towarde that parte of Aphrike, whiche the portugales caule *Caput Bonæ Sperantie*. The poyntes or capes of the mount *Atlas*, are rough and saluage nere vnto the sea. The cape of *Bona Speranza*, gathereth thirte and foure degrees of the Southe pole, cauled the pole antartike: But that poynte, onely feuen degrees. I suppose this lande to bee that, whiche I fynde in owlde wryters of Cosmographie to bee cauled the greate Iland Atlantike, without any further declaringe eyther of the fyuation, or of the nature therof.

Sabea, is a contrey in Arabie, which bringeth forth frankenfence

Paria. Peacockes which wee caule Turkye cockes.

Carpets and couerlettes fynely wrought.

Popyngayes.

Th[e] apparell of the inhabitants of *paria*

Rulers for one yeare.

The greate goulfe of *Paria*.

Baia Natiuitatis the gret goulfe of *Paria*.

Vincentius maketh a league with v. princes. of *Paria*.

Mount *Atlas* in aphrike.

The great Iland atlantike

THE EIGHT BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE

Of the supposed continente.



When Iohan the king of portugale lyued which was prediceffoure to hym that nowe reigneth, there arose a great contention betwene the Castilians and Portugales as concerninge the dominion of these newe founde landes. The Portugales, bycause they were the firste that durst attempte to searche the Ocean sea fence the memorie of man, affirmed that all the nauigations of the Ocean, ought to pertyne to theym onely. The Castilians argued on the contrarie parte, that what so euer god by the ministracion of nature hath created on the earth, was at the begynnyng common emong men: And that it is therfore lawfull to euery man to possesse fuche landes as are voyd of Christian inhabitours. Whyle the matter was thus vncerteynly debated, bothe parties agreed that the controuerfie shulde bee decerned by the byffhope of Rome, and plighted faithe to stande to his arbitrimente. The kyngedome of Castile was at that tyme gouerned by that great Queene *Helisabeth* with her husbände: for the roialme of Castile was her dowerye. Shee also and the kyng of Portugale, were cofyn germaynes of two fyfters: by reafon wherof the diffention was more easely pacified. By th[e] assent therof of both parties, Alexander the byffhop [of] Rome, the. vi. of that name, by th[e] autoritie of his leaden bull, drewe a right line from the North to the South a hundreth leaques westwarde withoute the paralelles of those Ilandes whiche are cauled *Caput Viride* or *Cabouerde*, Within the compase of this lyne (althowgh foomme denye it) fauleth the poynte of this lande wherof we haue spoken, which they caule *Caput Sancti Augustini*, otherwyfe cauled *Promontorium Sancti Augustini*, that is, saynt Augustines cape or poynte. And therfore it is not lawfull for the Castilians to fasten foote in the begynnyng of that lande. *Vincentius Annez* therfore, departed from thense, beinge aduertised of th[e] inhabitants, that on the other fyde of the hyghe mountaynes towarde the

Contention betwene the Castilians and Portugales for the newe landes

80

The bysshop of Rome diuideth the land

Cabouerde lok^d decade i. lib. iiii

The golden region
of Ciamba.

The Iland of S.
Iohannes

Fyue byshoppes
of the Iland(s)
made by the
bysshop of Rome.

The Canibales of
the Iland of
Sancta Crux.

South, lying before his eyes, there was a Region cauled *Ciamba*, which brought forth greate plentie of golde. Of certeyne captiues whiche he tooke in the goulfe of *Paria* (which certenly pertaineth to the dominion of Castile) he brought fume with hym to *Hispaniola*, and lefte them with the younge Admirall to lerne owre language. But he hym selfe, repayred to the courte to make earnest sute to the kynge that by his fauoure, he myght bee gouernour of the Iland of *Sancti Iohannis* (otherwyse cauled *Burichena*, beinge distante from *Hispaniola* onely. xxv. leaques) bycause he was the fyrst fynder of golde in that Ilande. Before *Vincentius* made sute for this office, one Don Christopher a Portugale, the foone of the countie of *Camigna*, was gouernoure of the Ilande: whom the Canibales of the other Ilandes flewe, with all the Christian men that were in the same, excepte the byshop and his familiers, which fledde and shyfted for them felues, forsakyng the church and all the ornamentes thereof. For yowre holynes hath consecrated fyue bysshoppes in these Ilandes at the request of the most catholyke kynge. In *Sancto Dominico* being the chiefe cite of *Hispaniola*, *Garfia de Padilla*, a regular fryer of the order of saynt Fraunces, is bysshop. In the towne of Conception, doctor *Petrus Xuarez* of *Deza*: And in the Ilande of saynte Iohn or *Burichena*, *Alfonfus Mansus* a licenciante, beinge bothe obseruant of th[e] institucion of saynt Peter. The fourth, is fryer Barnarde of *Mesa*, a man of noble parentage, borne in *Toledo*, a preacher, and bysshop of the Ilande of *Cuba*. The fyfte is *Iohannes Cabedus*, a fryer preacher, whom yowre holynes annoynted mynister of Christ, to teache the Christian faithe amonge the inhabitantes of *Dariena*. The Canibales shall shortly repent them, and the bludde of owre men shalbe reuenged: And that the sooner, bycause that shortly after they had committed this abhominable slaughter of owre men, they came ageyne from their owne Ilande of *Sancta Crux* (otherwyse cauled *Ay Ay*) to the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*. and flewe a kynge whiche was a frende to owre men, and eate hym and all his famely, vtterly subuertinge his vyllage, vpon this occasion that violatinge the lawe of hostage, he had slayne feuen Canibales whiche were lefte with hym by composition to make certeyne canoas, bicause the Iland of *Sancti Iohannis* beareth greater trees and apter for that purpose, then doth the Ilande of *Sancta Crux* the chiefe habitacion of the Canibales. These Canibales yet remaynyng in the Ilande, certeyne of owre men sayling from *Hispaniola*, chaunced vpon them. The thyng being vnderstode by th[e] interpretoures, owre men quarelyng with theym and caulynge them to accompte for that mischeuous deede, they immediatly directed their bowes and venemous arrowes ageynst them, and with cruell countenaunces threatened them to bee quyet, least it shulde repent them of theyr comyng thither. Owre men fearyng theyr venemous arrowes (for they were not prepared to fyght) gaue them signes of peace. Being demaunded why they destroyed the vyllage, and where the kynge was with his famelye, they answered that they rased the vyllage and cutte the kynge with his famelye in peeces and eate them in the reuenge of theyr feuen workemen: And that they had made faggottes of theyr bones to cary them to the wyues and chyldren of theyr slayne workemen, in wytnesse that the bodies of theyr husbandes and parentes lay not vnreunged: and therewith shewed the faggottes of bones to owre men: who beinge astonysed at theyr fierces and crueltie, were enforced to dissimble the matter and houlde theyr peace, quarelyng noo further with them at that tyme. These and fuche other thynges doo dayly chaunce, the which I doo let passe least I shulde offende the eares of yowr holynes with fuche bluddy narrations. Thus haue wee sufficiently digressed from the regions of *Beragua* and *Vraba* beinge the chiefeste foundations of owre purpose. Wee wyll nowe therefore entreate fumewhat of the largenes and depthe of the ryuers of *Vraba*: Also declare bothe what they and the landes whiche they runne through doo bryng forth: lykewyse of the greatnes of the lande from the Easte to the West, and of the bredth therof from the Southe to the North, and what theyr opinion and hope is of thynges yet vnknownen in the same. Wee wyll therefore beginne at the newe names wherwith the Spanyardes haue named these prouinces sence they were vnder the dominions of the Christians.

81

Beragua and
Vraba.

The ryuers of
Vraba.

THE NYNTH BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE, Of the supposed Continent.



Beragua therefore, they cauled *Castella Aurea*, that is golden Castile: And *Vraba* they named *Andaluzia Noua*, that is, newe Andalusia. And lyke as of many Ilandes which they subdued, they choose *Hispaniola* for the chiefe place of theyr habitacion, soo in the large tract of *Paria*, they appoynted theyr colonie or bydyng place in the two regions *Vraba* and *Beragua*, that all fuche as attempte any vyages in those coastes, may reforte to them as to safe portes to bee refreshed when they are wery or dryuen to necessitie. All owre feedes, and plantes, do nowe maruelously encrease in *Vraba*. Lykewyse blades, fettes, slippes, graffes, fuger canes, and

Beragua, cauled
Castella aurifera,
and Vraba,
Andaluzia noua.
Sum caule Peru,
Noua Castilia.
Beragua and
Vraba, regions of
Paria.
The frutefulness
of Vraba

fuche other as are brought from other places to those regions, as also beastes and foules as we haue sayde before. O maruelous frutefulness. Twentie dayes after the feede is fowne, they gather ripe cucumers, and such lyke, But colwortes, beetes, Letuse, Borage are ripe within the space of ten dayes. Gourdes, melones, and pompones, within the space of xxviii. dayes. *Dariena* hath many natie trees and frutes of dyuers kyndes with fundry tastes, and holsome for the vse of men: of the which I haue thought it good to descrybe certeyne of the best. They nooryshe a tree which they caule *Guaiana*, that beareth a frute much resemblinge the kynde of citrons which are commonly cauled limones, of taste somewhat sharpe myxt with swetenes. They haue also abundance of nuttes of pynetrees, and great plentie of date trees, whiche beare frutes bygger then the dates that are knowen to vs: but they are not apte to bee eaten for theyr to much fownes. Wyld and baren date trees, growe of them selues in fundry places, the branches wherof they vse for biesommes, and eate also the buddes of the same. *Guarauana*, being higher and bygger then the orange tree, bringeth furth a great frute as bygge as pome citrons.

Ther is an other tree much lyke to a chefnut tree whose frute is lyke to the bygger sort of fygs, beinge holsome and of plefant taste. *Mameis*, is an other tree that bringeth fourth the frute as bygge as an orange, in taste nothyng inferioure to the beste kyndes of melones. *Guananala*, heareth a frute lesse then any of the other, but of sweete faouere lyke spice, and of delectable taste. *Houos*, is an other tree whose frute bothe in shape and taste, is much lyke to prunes, but somewhat bygger. They are surely perswaded that this is the *Myrobalane* tree. These growe soo abundantly in *Hispaniola*, that the hogges are fedde with the frute therof as with masse amonge vs. The hogges lyke this kynde of feadyng soo well, that when these frutes wax ripe, the swyneherdes can by no meanes keepe them owte of the wooddes of these trees: by reason wherof, a greate multytude of them are becomme wyld. They also affirme, that in *Hispaniola*, swynes fleshe is of much better taste and more holsome then mutton. For it is not to bee doubted, but that dyuers kyndes of meates do engender fundry tastes and qualities in fuche as are nooryshed therewith. The moste puiffaunte prince *Ferdinandus*, declared that he had eaten of an other frute brought from those landes, beinge full of scales with keyes much lyke a pine apple in forme and coloure, but in tendernes equal to melopepones, and in taste exceeding all garden frutes. For it is noo tre, but an herbe much lyke vnto an archichoke, or *Acantho*. The kynge hym selfe, gaue the cheefest commendation to this. I haue eaten none of these frutes. For of a great number which they brought from thense, only one remayned vncorrupted, the other beinge putrified by reason of the longe vyage. All fuche as haue eaten of theym newly gathered in theyr natyue foyle, doo maruelously commende theyr swetenes and plefaunt taste. They dygge also owte of the ground certeyne rootes growyng of them selues, whiche they caule *Botatas*, much lyke vnto the nauie rootes of Mylayne, or the greate puffes or musheroms of the earth. Howe soo euer they bee duffed, eyther fryed or fodde, they gyue place to noo such kynde of meate in plefant tendernes. The skyn is somewhat towgher then eyther of nauies or musheroms, and of earthy coloure: But the inner meate therof, is verye whyte. These are nooryshed in gardens, as we sayde of *Iucca* in the fyrste Decade. They are also eaten rawe, and haue the taste of rawe chefnuttes, but are somewhat sweeter. Wee haue spoken sufficiently of trees, herbes, and frutes. We wyll nowe therefore entreate of thynges fencitiue. The laundes and desolate pastures of these regions, are inhabited and deuoured of wild and terrible beastes, as Lions, Tygers, and such other monsters as we nowe knowe, and haue byn descrybed of owlde autours in tyme past. But there is especially one beast engendered here, in which nature hath endeoured to shewe her cunningg. This beaste is as bygge as an oxe, armed with a longe snoute lyke an Elephant, and yet no Elephant. Of the colour of an oxe and yet noo oxe. With the houle of a horse, and yet noo horse. With eares also much lyke vnto an Elephant, but not soo open nor soo much hangyng downe: yet much wyder then the eares of any other beaste. Of the beast which beareth her whelpes about with her in her seconde belly as in a purse (beinge knowen to none of the owlde wryters) I haue spoken in the fyrst Decade which I doubt not to haue coome to the handes of yowre holynes. Let vs nowe therefore declare what refleth of the fluddes and ryuers of *Vraba*. The ryuer of *Dariena* fauleth into the goulfe of *Vraba* with a narowe chanel, scarily able to beare the canoas or lyghters of that prouince, and runneth by the vyllage where they chose theyr dwellinge place. But the ryuer in the corner of the goulfe which we sayde that *Vaschus* passed by, they found to bee xxiiii. furlonges in bredth (which they caule a league) and of exceedynge depthe, as of two hundredre cubettes, faulyng into the goulfe by dyuers mouthes. They say that this ryuer fauleth into the goulfe of *Vraba*, lyke as the ryuer *Ister* (otherwyse cauled *Danubius*, and Danowe) fauleth into the sea Pontike, and *Nilus* into the sea of Egypte: wherfore they named it *Grandis*, that is great: whiche also they affirme to nooryshe many and great Crocodyles, as the owld wryters testifie of *Nilus*, and especially as I haue lerned by experience, hauinge sayled vp and downe the ryuer of *Nilus* when I was sent ambasadoure to the Soldane of Alcayr at the commaundement of the moste catholyke Kynge. What I may therefore gather owte of the wrytynges of so many lerned autours as concernyng the ryuer of *Nilus*, I knowe not. For they say that nature hath gyuen two riuers of that name to water the lande, whether they wyll them to spryng owte of the mountaynes of the moone

The frutefulness of Dariena.

Dyuers holmsy frutes of trees.

Guaiana,

Pine trees.

Date trees.

Guarauana

Mameis.

Guananala.

Houos.

Mirobalani.

Hogges fed with mirobalanes Swynes fleshe of better tast and more holsum then mutton.

82

Frutes putrified on the sea.

Botatas.

Lions and Tygers.

A strange beast.

The ryuers of Vraba.

The ryuer of Darien fauleth into the goulfe of Vraba.

A league is xxiiii. furlonges

Danubius.

Grandis or Rio grandis.

A crocodile is much lyke an ente, but of exceedyng bignes. The autoure of this booke was in Egypt

The riuer Nilus
in Egypte
Montes Lunæ.

The Portugales
nauigacions.

The ryuer Senega,
another channell
of the ryuer of
Nilus.
Crocodiles.
The thyrede and
fourth Nilus.
Delagartos.

83

The ryuers
springe owt of the
mountaynes.

Crocodiles
engendred on
other ryuers
besyde Nilus in
Egypte.
Byrdes and foules.

Popingayes.

A philosophical
discourse as
concerning
th[e]original of
springes and
ryuers.
The breadth of
the lande at
Vraba, from the
North Ocean to
the South sea.

A ryuer of
maruelous
byggenes loken
the first decade
the ix. boke.

The great ryuer
Maragnonus. liber.
iij. decade. i.
Mariatambal.
Camamorus.
Paricora.

Paradise.
Loke. vi. boke
fyrst decade.

The sea.

The land enclosed
with two seas.

or the foonne, or owte of the toppes of the rowgh mountaines of *Ethiopia*: Affirming one of the fame to faule into the goulfe of Egypte toward the Northe, and the other into the South Ocean sea. What shall wee faye in this place? Of that *Nilus* in Egypte, there is noo doubt. The Portugales also whiche fayle by the coastes of the Ethiopians cauled *Nigrita*, and by the kyngedome of *Melinda* passinge vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, amonge theyr maruelous inuentions haue founde an other towarde the South, and earnestly affirme the fame to bee also deriued from the mountaynes of the moone: And that it is an other chanell of *Nilus*, bycause it bryngeth fourth Crocodyles, whereas it hathe not byn reade before tyme that any other ryuer noorysshed Crocodyles fauinge onely *Nilus*. This ryuer, the Portugales caule *Senega*. It runneth through the Region of the *Nigritas*, beinge very frutefull towarde the north shore but on the fouth fyde fandie and rowghe. Crocodiles are also engendred herein. What shall wee then fay of this thyrede: ye I may wel fay the fourth. For I suppoze them also to bee Crocodiles which *Colonus* with his company founde armed with scales as harde as shelles in the ryuer cauled *Delagartos* wherof wee haue made mention before. Shall wee fay that these ryuers also of *Darien* and *Vraba*, haue theyr originall from the mountaynes of the moone, wheras they sprynge owte of the nexte mountaynes, and can by noo meanes haue the fame originall with *Nilus* in Egypte, or els that in the kyngedome of *Melinda*, from whence foo euer they are deryued. Whereas these other (as we haue sayde) springe owt of the next mountaines whiche deuyde an other fouth sea with noo greate distaunce from the North Ocean. Wherefore it appeareth by experience of such as haue traauayled the worlde in owre time, that other waters besyde the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypte, maye lykewyse brynge fourth Crocodiles. In the marysshes also and fennes of the Regions of *Dariena*, are founde greate plentie of Phefauntes and peacockes, (but not of variable coloures) with many other kyndes of byrdes and foules vnylike vnto owres, as well apte to bee eaten, as also to delite the eares of menne with pleasaunt noyfe. But owre Spanyardes, bycause they are ignorant in foulunge, take but fewe. Also innumerable popingayes of fundry kindes are found chattering in the groues of those fenny places. Of these there are fume equall to Capons in byggenes, and fume as lyttle as sparowes. But of the diuersitie of popingayes, we haue spoken sufficiently in the fyrst Decade. For in the rafe of this large lande, *Colonus* hym selfe browght and sent to the courte a greate number of euery kynde, the which it was lawfull for all the people to beholde, and are yet dayly browght in lyke maner. There remayneth yet one thyng mozte worthy to bee put in hyflorye: The which I had rather to haue chaunced into the handes of *Cicero* or *Liuius*, then into myne. For the thyng is foo marueylous in my estimation, that I fynde my wytte more entangeled in the description hereof, then is fayde of the henne when shee feeth her younge chekyn inwrapped in towe or flaxe. The breadth of that lande from the North Ocean to the fouth sea is only fyxe dayes iourney by relation of th[e]inhabitantes. The multitude therefore and greatnes of the ryuers on the one side and on the other fyde the narowenes of the lande, brynge me into fuche doubt howe it can coome to passe, that in foo litle a space of three dayes iourney, meafuryng from the hygh toppes of those mountaynes, I doo not vnderstande howe foo many and foo great ryuers, may haue recourse into this north sea. For it is to bee thought that as many doo flowe towarde th[e]inhabitantes of the fouth. These ryuers of *Vraba* are but fmaule, in comparifon of many other in those coastes. For the Spanyardes fay, that in the tyme of *Colonus*, they founde and passed by an other ryuer after this, whose goulfe faulunge into the sea, they affirme to bee lyttle lesse then a hundreth myles in the fyrste coastes of *Paria*, as wee haue sayde elsewhere. For they fay that it fauleth from the toppes of hyghe mountaynes with foo swyfte and furious a course, that by the violence and greatnes therof, it dryueth backe the sea althowgh it bee rowghe and enforced with a contrary wynde. They all affirme lykewyse, that in all the large tracte therof, they felt noo fower or falte water, but that all the water was fresshe, sweete, and apte to bee dronke. Th[e]inhabitantes caule this ryuer *Maragnonum*: And the regions adiacent to the fame, *Mariatambal*, *Camamorus*, and *Paricora*. Besyde those ryuers whiche I haue named before, as *Darien*, *Grandis*, *Dabaiba*, *Beragua*, *Sancti Mathei*, *Boius gatti*, *Delagartos*, and *Gaira*, they which of late haue searched those coastes, haue founde many other. Deliberatinge therefore with my selfe, from whence these mountaynes beinge foo narowe and nere vnto the sea on bothe fydes, haue fuch great holowe caues or dennes of fuche capacitie, and from whence they are fylled to cast fourth fuch abundance of water, hereof also askyng them the opinions of the inhabitantes, they affirme them to bee of dyuers iudgements herein: Alleagyng fyrst the greatnes of the mountaynes to bee the cause, whiche they fay to bee very hygh, which thyng also *Colonus* the first synder therof affirmeth to bee trewe: Adding there vnto that the Paradise of pleafure is in the toppes of those mountaines whiche appeare from the goulfe of *Paria* and *Os Draconis*, as he is fully persuaded. They agree therefore that there is greate caues within these mountaynes: but it resteth to confyder from whence they are fylled. If therefore all the ryuers of fresshe waters by th[e]oppinion of manye, doo foo flowe owte of the sea as dryuen and compelled throwghe the passages or pores of the earth by the ponderous weyght of the sea it selfe, as wee see them breake furth of the sprynges and directe their course to the sea ageyne, then the thyng is lesse to bee marueyled at here then in other places. For wee haue not redde that in any other place twoo fuch seas haue enuironed any lande with foo narowe lymittes. For it hath on the right fyde, the great Ocean where the fonne goeth downe on the lefte hande: And an other

on the other fyde where the fonne ryfeth, nothyng inferioure to the fyrft in greatenes, for they fuppofe it to bee myxte and ioyned as all one with the fea of Eaft India.

This lande therefore being burdened with fo great a weight on the one fyde and on the other (yf this opinion bee of anye value) is enforced to fwalowe vp fuch deuoured waters, and ageyne to caft foorth the fame in open fpringes and freames. But if wee fhall denye that the earth draweth humours of the fea, and agree that all fountaynes or fprynges are engendered of the conuerfion or turnyng of ayer into water diftilling within the holowe places of the montaynes (as the moft part thinke) we wyll gyue place rather to th[e]autoritie of them whiche ftycke to thofe reafons, then that owre fenfe is fatiffyed of the full truth therof. Yet doo I not repugne that in fume caues of mountaynes, water is turned into ayer. For I my felfe haue feene, howe in the caues of manye mountaynes in Spayne, in maner fhowers of rayne doo faule continually: And that the water gathered by this meanes, doth fend furth certeyne ryuers by the fydes of the mountaynes, wherewith al fuche trees as are planted on the ftiepe or foote of the mountaynes, as vines, Oliue trees, and fuche other, are watered. And this efppecially in one place: As the ryght honorable Lodouike the Cardinall of Aragonie moft obfequious to yowre holynes, and twoo other byfhoppes of Italy, wherof the one is *Siluius Pandonus*, and the other an Archebyffhop (whofe name and tittle I doo not remember) can beare me wytnes. For when wee were togyther at *Granata*, lately delyuered from the dominion of the Moores, and walked for owre paftyme to certeine pleafaunte hylles (by the whiche there ranne a fayre ryuer) Whyle Cardinall Lodouike occupied hym felfe in fhutyng at byrdes whiche were in the bufhes nere vnto the ryuer, I and the other twoo byffhops determined to clime the mountaynes to feache th[e]originall and fprynge of the ryuer: for wee were not farre from the toppes thereof. Fologyng therefore the courfe of the ryuer, wee founde a greate caue in which was a continuall faule of water as it had byn a fhoure of rayne: the water wherof, faulyng into a trenche made with mans hand, encreafeth to a ryuer, and runneth downe by the fydes of the mountaynes. The lyke is alfo feene in this famous towne of *Valladoletto* (where we nowe fuiorne) in a certeyne greene clofe, not paff a furlonge diftant from the waulles of the towne. I graunte therefore that in certeyne places by conuerfion of the ayrie dewe into water within the caues of fuche mountaynes, many fprynges and ryuers are engendred. But I fuppofe that nature was not follicitate to bryng furthe fuche greate fluds by this fo fnaule induftry. Twoo reafons therefore, do found beft to my iudgement: whereof the one is, the often faule of rayne: The other, the continuall autumne or fprynge tyme which is in thofe regions beinge foo nere vnto the Equinoctial that the common people can perceauie no difference betwene the length of the day and the night through owt al the yeare whereas thefe two feafons are more apte to engender abundance of rayne then eyther extreme wynter or feruent fummer. An other reafon in effect much lyke vnto the fyrft, is this: If the fea bee full of pores, and that by the pores therof beinge opened by the Southe windes, wee fhall confent that vapours are lyfted vp wherof the watery cloudes are engendred, this lande muft needes bee moyfted with moo fhoures then anye other, yf it bee as narowe as they faye, and enuironed with twoo mayne feas collaterally beateinge on the fame. Howe fo euer it be: I can not but gyue credit to the report of fuch worthy men as haue recourfe to thofe regions: And can noo leffe then declare the fame albeit it may feeme incredible to fume ignorant perfons not knowyng the poure of nature to whome Plinie was perfuaded that nothyng was impoffible. Wee haue therefore thought it good to make this difcourfe by the way of argument, leaft on the one fyde, men of good lernyng and iudgement, and on the other fyde, fuche as are ftudious to fynde occafions of quarelyng in other mens wrytynges, fhulde iudge vs to bee fo vndefcreete lyghtly to gyue creditte to euery tale not beinge confonant to reafon. But of the force and greate violence of thofe freffe waters, which repulginge the fea make fo greate a goulfe (as wee haue fayde) I thinke the caufe therof to bee the greate multitude of fluddes and ryuers, whiche beinge gathered together, make fo great a poole: and not one ryuer as they fuppofe. And for as muche as the mountaynes are excedyng hyghe and ftiepe, I thinke the violence of the faule of the waters to be of fuch force, that this conflicte betwene the waters, is caufed by th[e]impulfion of the poole that the falte water can not enter into the goulfe. But here perhappes fume wyll marueyle at me why I fhulde marueyle foo muche hereat, fpeakyng vnto me fcornefully after this maner. Why dothe he foo marueyle at the greate ryuers of thefe Regions? Hathe not Italye his *Eridanus*, named the kyng of ryuers of the owlde wryters? Haue not other regions alfo the lyke? as wee reede of *Tanais*, *Ganges*, and *Danubius*, which are fayde foo to ouercoome the fea, that freffe water may be drawne fortie myles within the fame. Thefe menne I wolde fatiffie with this anfwere. The famous ryuer of *Padus*, in Italye (whiche they nowe caule *Po*, and was of the Greekes cauled *Eridanus*) hath the greate mountaynes cauled *Alpes* diuidyng Fraunce, Germanie, and Pannonie from Italye, lyyng at the backe therof as it were bulwarges full of moyfture: And with a longe tracte receauyng *Ticinum* with innumerable other great ryuers, fauleth into the fea Adriatique. The lyke is alfo to bee vnderftode of the other. But thefe ryuers (as owre men were enforced by the kynges) faul into the Ocean fea with larger and fuller chanelles nere hand. And fume there are which affirme this lande to bee very large in other places althowgh it bee but narowe here. There commeth alfo to my remembrance an other caufe: the whiche althowgh it bee of no greate force, yet doo I entende to wryte it.

84

Conuerfion of ayer into water in the caues of mountaynes.

Showers of rayne in the caues of mountaynes

The often fal of rayne and continuall fprynge time. The Equinoctiall.

The pores of the sea and the South wynd.

Nothinge impoffible to the poure of nature.

The cause of the greatnes and force of the goulfe.

Hygh and ftiepe hylles

85

The fludde Eridanus. *Tanais*. *Ganges*. *Danubius*. *Padus*. *Alpes*.

Ticinum.

The sea Adriatique, fume caule the goulfe of Venes

An other reafon

The ryuer
Alpheus.

Arethusa

Longe caues in
the mountaynes.

Perhappes therefore the length of the lande reachyng far from the Easte to the weste, if it bee narowe, may bee a helpe hereunto. For as wee reade that the ryuer *Alpheus* passethe through the holowe places vnder the sea from the cite of *Elis* in *Peloponeso*, and breaketh foorth at the fountayne or spryng *Arethusa* in the Iland of *Sicilia*, so is it possible that these mountaynes may haue fuche longe caues perteynyng vnto them, that they may be the receptacles of the water passing through the landes beinge farre distante: And that the same waters commyng by foo longe a tracte, may in the way bee greatly encreafed by the conuerfion of ayer into water, as wee haue sayde. Thus muche haue I spoken freely, permitteinge bothe to them whiche doo frendly enterprete other mens doinges, and also to the malicious scornors, to take the thyng euen as them lysteth. For hetherto I can make no further declaration hereof. But when the truth shalbe better knowen, I wyl do my diligence to commit the fame to wryting. Nowe therefore, forasmuche as we haue spoken thus muche of the breadth of this land, we intend to describe the length and forme of the same.

THE TENTH BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE, *Of the supposed Continent.*

The length and
forme of the Iland
Cap. S. Augusti.
Eyght tymes
bygger then Italy
besyde that part
whiche the
portugales
possesse. Italy
is in length a
thousand and two
hundredth myles,
and in breadth
four hundredth
and ten.

Cardes of the sea.

The carde of
Americus
Vesputius.

The carde of
Colonus.

The carde of
Iohannes de la
Cossa.

86

The carde of
Andreas moralis.

The maner of
measuring the
cardes.

Loke decade i.
liber. iii.
The Iland of
Cabouerde.

Maragnonum
Os Draconis

A league.
Cuchibacoo.

Caramairi.
Carthago.
The Iland *Fortis*.
Vraba.
Beragua.



That lande reacheth foorth into the sea euen as doth Italy, although not like the legge of a man as it doth. But I nowe compare a Pigmean or a dwarfe to a giant. For that part therof which the Spaniardes haue ouer runne from the sayde Easte poynt which reacheth toward the sea Atlantike (the ende not beinge yet founde toward the Weste) is more then eyght tymes longer then Italye. And by what reafon I am moued to say eyght tymes, yowre holynes shall vnderstande. From the tyme therefore that I fyrste determined to obeye their requestes who wylled me fyrste in yowre name to wryte these thynges in the laten tonge, I dyd my endeuoure that all thinges myght coome foorth with dewe tryall and experience. Wherupon I repayred to the byshoppe of *Burges* beinge the chiefe refuge of this nauigation. As wee were therefore secretly togyther in one chamber, we had many instrumentes perteynyng to these affayres as globes and manye of those mappes which are commonly cauled the shipmans cardes, or cardes of the sea. Of the which, one was drawn by the Portugales, wherunto *Americus Vesputius* is sayde to haue put to his hande, beinge a man moste experte in this facultie and a Florentyne borne: who also vnder the stipende of the Portugales, hadde sayled toward the south pole many degrees beyond the Equinoctiall. In this carde we founde the fyrst front of this land to bee brooder then the kynges of *Vraba* had perswaded owre men of theyr mountaynes. To an other, *Colonus* the Admirall whyle he yet lyued and searched those places had gyuen the beginnyng with his owne handes: Wherunto *Bartholomeus Colonus* his brother and Lieutenant had addid his iudgement, for he also, had sayled aboute those coastes. Of the Spanyardes lykewyse, as many as thought them selues to haue any knowlege what perteyned to meafure the lande and the sea, drewe certeyne cardes in parchement as concernyng these nauigations. Of all other, they most esteeme them which *Iohannes de la Coffa* the cõpanion of *Fogeda* (whom wee sayde to bee slayne of the people of *Caramairi* in the hauen *Carthago*), and an other expert pylot cauled *Andreas Moralis*, had fet foorth. And this aswell for the greate experience which they bothe hadde (to whom these tractes were as wel known as the chambers of theyr owne houses) as also that they were thought to bee cunninger in that parte of Cosmographie which teacheth the description and meafuringe of the sea. Conferinge therefore all these cardes togyther, in euery of the whiche was drawn a lyne expreffinge, not the myles, but leagues after the maner of the Spanyardes, we tooke owre compases and beganne to measure the sea coastes after this order. From that poynt or fronte which we sayde to bee included within the lyne perteynyng to the Portugales iurisdiction, beinge drawn by the paralelles of the Ilandes of *Cabouerde*, but a hundredth leagues further toward the weste (which they haue nowe also searched on euery syde) we founde three hundredth leagues to the enterance of the ryuer *Maragnonum*: And from thense to *Os Draconis*, seuen hundredth leagues: but sumwhat lesse in the description of fume: For they doo not agree in al poyntes exquisitely. The Spanyardes wyl that a league conteyne foure myles by sea and but three by lande. From *Os Draconis*, to the cape or poynt of *Cuchibacoo*, which beinge passed, there is a goulfe on the lefte hande, we meafured three hundredth leagues in one carde, and much thereabout in an other. From this poynt of *Cuchibacoo*, to the region of *Caramairi* in which is the hauen *Carthago* (which sum caule *Carthagenia*) we found about a hundredth and feuentie leagues. From *Caramairi* to the Ilande *Fortis*, fiftie leagues. From thense to the goulfes of *Vraba* amonge the which is the village cauled *Sancta Maria Antiqua* where the Spanyardes haye apoynted theyr habitacion, only. xxxiii. leagues. From the ryuer of *Vraba* in the prouince of *Dariena* to the ryuer of *Beragua*

where *Nicuesa* hadde intended to haue fastened his foote if god hadde not otherwyfe decreed, we meafured a hundreth and thirtie leagues. Frome *Beragua* to that ryuer whiche wee fayde of *Colonus* to bee cauled *Sancti Matthei*, in the which also *Nicuesa* loofinge his carauell, wandered in greate calamities, we founde in owre cardes, onely a hundreth and fortie leagues: Yet many other which of late tyme haue coome from these partes, haue descrybed many moo leagues in this tracte from the ryuer of *Sancti Matthei*: In which also, they place dyuers ryuers, as *Aburema* with the Ilande cauled *Scutum Cateba* lyinge before it, whose kynges name is *Facies combusta*. Lykewise an other ryuer cauled *Zobroba*: after that, *Vrida*: and then *Duraba* in the which gold is founde. Furthermore, many goodly hauens, as *Cerabaro* and *Hiebra*, foo cauled of th[e] inhabitants. And thus if yowre holynes wyll conferre these numbers togyther, yowe shall fynde in this accompte, a thousand fye hundreth twentie and fyue leagues, whiche amounte to fyue thousande and feuen hundreth myles from the poynt of *Sancti Matthei*, which they caule *Sinum perditorum*: that is, the goulfe of the losse men. But we may not leaue here. For after this, one *Astur Ouetenses*, otherwyfe named *Iohannes Dias de Solis*, borne in *Nebriffa* (which bringeth fourth many lerned men) faylinge frome this ryuer towarde the weste, ouer ranne manye coastes and leagues: But the myddeste of that shore, bendethe towarde the North: And it is therfore directly placed in order with the other. Yet may we gather by a diameter or ryght lyne, about three hundreth leagues. Hereby maye yowe gather what is the length of this lande. But of the breadth, perhappes wee shall hereafter haue further knowledge. Let vs nowe speake sumwhat of the varietie of the degrees of the eleuation of the pole starres. This lande therefore, although it reache fourth from the East into the Weste, yet is it crooked and hathe the poynt bendynge so toward the south, that it loseth the sight of the North pole, and is extended beyonde the Equinoctial lyne feuen degrees towarde the South pole. But the poynt herof, perteyneth to the iurisdiction of the Portugales as we haue fayde. Leauinge this poynt and faylinge toward *Paria* the north starre is seene ageyne, and is so much the more lyfted vp, in howe much the region enclyneth more towarde the Weste. The Spanyardes therefore, haue dyuers degrees of eleuations, vntyl they come to *Dariena* beinge their chiefe station and dwellynge place in those landes. For they haue forsaken *Beragua*, where they found the North pole eleuate. viii. degrees. But from hense the lande doth foo muche bende towarde the North, that it is there in maner equall with the degrees of the frayghtes of Hercules pyllers: especially yf wee measure certeyne landes founde by them towarde the Northe fyde of *Hispaniola*. Emonge the which, there is an Ilande, about three hundreth and. xxv. leagues from *Hispaniola*, as they say whiche haue searched the same, named *Boiua* or *Agnanco*, in the which is a continual sprynge of runnyng water of such maruelous vertue, that the water therof beinge dronk, perhappes with fume dyete, maketh owld men younge ageyne. And here must I make protestacion to yowre holynes, not to thynke this to bee fayde lightly or rashely. For they haue foo spredde this rumour for a truth throwhowt all the courte, that not onely all the people, but also many of them whom wisedome or fortune hath diuided from the common fort, thinke it to be true. But if yowe shal aske my opinion herein, I wyl answere that I wyll not attribute so greate poure to nature: but that god hath noo lesse referued this prerogatiue to hym selfe, then to searche the hartes of men, or to gyue substance to priuation, (that is) beinge to noo beinge: Excepte we shall beleue the fable of *Colchis* of *Eson* renouate, to bee as trewe as the wrytinges of *Sibylla Erythrea*. Albeit perhappes the scoles of phisitians and naturall philosophers wyll not muche flycke to affirme that by th[e] use of certeyne secreate medecines and dyete, the accidentes of age (as they caule them) may be longe hydden and deferred, which they wyll to bee vnderflooded, by the renouacion of age. And to haue fayde thus much of the length and breadthe of these Regions, and of the rowghe and hugious mountaynes with theyr watery caues, also of the dyuers degrees of that lande, I thinke it sufficient. But I thought it not good to let passe what chaunced to these miserable men amonge theyr generall calamities. I remember that when I was a chylde, mee thought my bowelles grated and that my spirites were maruelouslye troubeled for verye pitie, when I readde in the poet Virgyl howe *Achemenides* was left of *Vlyffes* vpon the fea bankes amonge the gigantes cauled *Cyclopes* where for the space of many dayes from the departinge of *Vlyffes* vntyll the comynge of *Eneas* he ate none other meate but only beryes and hawes. But owre vnfortunate Spanyardes whiche folowed *Nicuesa* to inhabite *Beragua*, wolde haue estemed hawes and beryes for greate delicates. What shulde I heare speake of the heade of an asse bowght for a greate price, and of such other extremities as men haue suffered in townes befeaged? After that *Nicuesa* hadde determyned to leaue *Beragua* for the barrennes of the foyle, he attempted to searche *Portum Bellum*, and then the coastes of the poynt cauled *Marmor*, if he myght there fynde a place more fortunate to inhabite. In this meane tyme, so greuous famen oppressed his souldiers, that they neyther absteyned from eatinge of mangie dogges which they had with them awfell for theyr defence as for huntynge (for in the warre ageynst the naked people, dogges flooded them in greate fleade) nor yet sumtymes from the flayne inhabitants. For they founde not there any frutefull trees or plentie of foules as in *Dariena*, but a barren grounde and not meete to bee inhabited. Here certeyne of the souldiers made a bargein with one of theyr felowes for the price of a leane dogge, who also was almoste deade for hunger: They gaue the owner of the dogge many of those pieces of golde which they caule *Pesos* or golden Castellans. Thus agreinge of the

R. Sancti Matthei.

R. Aburema Scutum Cateba R. Zobroba. Vrida. Duraba. Cerabaro. Hiebra.

Note.
R. d. los perdidos
The nauigation of Iohannes Dias.

The eleuation of the pole.

The iurisdiction of the Portugales.
Paria.

Dariena. Beragua.

Hercules pyllers.

87

The Ilande *Boiua* or *Agnanco*.
A water of maruelous vertue.
The renouacion of age.

The accidentes of age may bee hydden.

Achemenides. Vlysses. Eneas.
Extreme hunger.

This was at the siege of hierusalem.

Portus Bellum Marmor.

Mangy dogs eaten.

A mangy dog dere sold.

Broth of a mangy
dogs skynne.
Toades eaten

A deade man
caten.

88

Note.

Petrus Arias
whom the
Spanyarde caule
Pediarias.

price, they fleid the dogge to bee eaten, and caste his mangie skynne with the bones of the heade hangyng therto, amonge the bushes. The day folowyng, a certeyne footeman of theyr company, chaunced to fynde the skynne beinge nowe full of maggottes and stynkyng. He brought it home with hym, fodde it, and ate it. Many reforted to hym with theyr dysshes for the brothe of the fodde skynne, proferinge hym for euerye dysshefull a piece of golde. An other founde twoo toades and fodde them which a ficke man bought of hym for twoo fyne shertes curiously wrought of lymen intermyxt with golde. Certeyn other wanderyng abowte to seeke for vytayles, founde in a pathway in the myddeft of a fyeelde, a deade man of th[e]inhabitanes whiche had byn slayne of his owne coompanye and was nowe rotten and stynkyng. They drewe hym a fyde, difmemberde hym secreatly, rosted hym and ate hym, therewith asswagyng theyr hunger as yf they had byn fedde with pheafauntes. One also, which departinge from his companions in the nyght seafon, went a fyshyng amonge the reedes of the marysshes, lyued only with flyme or mudde for the fpace of certeyne dayes, vntyll at the lengthe creepinge and almoſte deade, he founde the way to his felowes. And thus these miserabile men of *Beragua* vexed with these and suche other afflixtions, were browgh[t]e from the number of feuen hundreth threcore and ten souldiers, scarsely to fortie, beinge nowe also added to the coompany of them in *Dariena*. Fewe were slayne of th[e]inhabitanes. But the refydewe consumed by famen, breathed owt theyr wery fowles, openyng a waye to the newe landes for such as shal coome after them, appeasinge the fury of the barbarous nations, with the price of theyr bludde. Consyderinge therefore after these stormes, with what ease other men shall ouerrunne and inhabite these landes, in respecte to the calamities that these men haue suffered, they shall seeme to goo to bryde feastes where all thynges are redy prepared ageynst their commyng. But where *Petrus Arias* arryued with the kynges nauie and newe supply of men, to this houre I knowe no certentie. What shall chaunce hereafter I wyll make diligente inquisition if I shall vnderstande this to bee acceptable to yowre holynes. Thus I byd yowe hartely farewell: from the courte of the mooste Catholyke kyng, the day beefore the nones of December, in the yere of Christe, M. D. XIII.



¶ THE FYRST BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE;
TO THE BYSSHOPPE OF ROME LEO THE TENTH.



Was determyned (moste holye father) to haue clofed vp the gates to this newe worlde, supposinge that I had wandered farre enough in the coastes therof, while in the meane time newe letters were brought me from thense, which caused me ageyne to take my penne in hande. For I receaued letters not only from certeyne of myne acquaintaunce there, but also frome *Vaschus Nunnez* whome we sayde by the confidence of his owne poure with his confetherates, to haue vsurped the gouernance of *Dariena* after the reiecting of *Nicuesa* and *Ancifus*, Lieutenantes. By his letter wrytten after his warlyke maner, wee vnderstand that he hath passed ouer the mountaynes, diuidyng the Ocean knowen to vs, from the other mayne sea on the south fyde of this lande hetherto vnknown. His epistell is greater then that cauled *Capreensis de Seiano*. But wee haue gathered out of that and other, onely suche thynges as we thought moste woorthy to bee noted. *Vaschus* foo behaued hym selfe in these affayres, that he dyd not onely pacifie the kynges

displeasure conceaued ageynst hym, but also made hym so fauorable and gracious good lorde towarde hym, that he rewarded him and his coompanions with many honorable gyftes and priuileges for theyr attemptes. Wherefore I desyre yowre holynes to inclyne yowre attentue eares, and to confyder with a ioyfull mynde what they haue browght to passe in these great enterpryses. For this valiante nation (the Spanyardes I meane) haue not onely with greate paynes and innumerable dangers subdued to the Christian empire, infinite hundredes and legions, but also myriades of men. *Vaschus Nunnez* therefore, whether it were that he was impacient of Idlenes (for a valiente mynde can not rest in one place or bee vnoccupied) or leaste any other shulde preuent hym in soo great a matter (suspecting the newe gouernour *Petrus Arias*) or being moued by both these causes, and especially for that the kyng had taken displeasure with hym for such thynges as he had doone before, toke th[e] aduerture vpon hym with a fewe men to brynge that to passe which the sonne of kyng *Comogrus* thought could hardly haue byn doone with the ayde of a thousande men, wherof *Petrus Arias* was appoynted capitayne for the same purpose. Assemblyng therefore certeyne of the owlde fouldiers of *Dariena*, and many of those whiche came lately from *Hispaniola*, allured by the fame of greater plentie of golde, he gathered an armye of a hundreth fourescore and tenne men. Thus beinge furnysshed and redie to take his vyage by sea, whyle the wynde serued hym, he departed frome *Dariena* with one brygantine and tenne of theyr boates whiche they caule Canoas as wee haue sayde. Fyrst therefore arryuyng in the dominion of *Careta* kyng of *Coiba* and frende to the Christians, and leauyng his shyppe and boates there, he made his deuout prayers to almyghtie god, and therwith went forwarde on his iourney by lande toward the mountaynes. Here he fyrst entered into the region of kyng *Poncha*, who fledde at his commyng as he had doone before. But *Vaschus* sent messengers to hym by the conduct of certeyne of *Careta* his men, promysyng hym frendship and defence ageynst his enemies, with many other benefites. *Poncha* thus entyfed with the fayre speache and frendly profers bothe of owre men and of the Caretans, came to owr men gladly and wyllingly makyng a league of frendshippe with them. *Vaschus* enterteined hym very frendly, and perswaded him neuer thereafter to stande in feare. Thus they ioyned handes, embrafed, and gaue greate gyftes the one to the other to knytte vp the knotte of continuall amitie. *Poncha* gaue *Vaschus* a hundreth and ten poundes weyght of golde, of that pounce which the Spanyardes caule *Pesum*. He had no greater plentie of golde at this tyme, by reason he was spoyled the yeare before as we haue sayde. *Vaschus* to recompence one benefyte with an other, gaue hym certeyne of owre thynges, as counterfet rynges, Christal stonnes, copper cheynes and braselettes, haukes belles, lokyng glasse, and suche other fyne stufte. These thynges they set much by and greatly esteeme. For suche thynges as are straunge, are euery where counted precious. He gaue also to *Poncha* certeyne axes to fell trees: which he accepted as a princely gyfte,

Vaschus Nunnez,
gouernor of
Dariena.

The newe south
Ocean.

Commendation of
the Spanyardes.

A valient mynd
can not bee ydle.

A desperate
aduerture

Vaschus his vyage
toward the golden
mountaynes.

Careta kyng of
Coiba

Kyng Poncha

89

A hundreth and x.
poundes weyght
of golde.

Strange thynges
are counted
precious.

Lacke of iren	<p>bycaufe they lacke Iren and all other metals except golde: by reafon wherof they are enforced with greate labour to cut theyr trees to buylde theyr houfes, and epecially to make theyr boates holowe withoute instrumentes of Iren, with certeyne sharpe stones whiche they fynde in the ryuers. Thus <i>Vafchus</i> leauynge all thynges in fafetie behynde hym, marched forwarde with his armye towarde the mountaynes, by the conducte of certeyne guydes and labourers which <i>Poncha</i> had gyuen hym, as well to leade hym the way, as alfo to cary his baggages and open the ftraightes through the defolate places and craggy rockes full of the dennes of wylde beaftes. For there is feldoomer entercourfe or byinge and fellynge betwene thefe naked people, bycaufe they ftand in neede of fewe thynges and haue not the vfe of money. But yf at any tyme they exercife any bartering they doo it but nere hande, exchanginge golde for houfholde ftuffe with theyr confines whiche fumewhat efteme the fame for ornamente when it is wrought. Other fuperfluities they vtterly contemne, as hynderances of theyr fweete libertie, forafmuch as they are gyuen only to play and Idelnes. And for this caufe, the high wayes which lye betwene theyr regions are not much worne with many iorneyes. Yet haue theyr fcoutes certeyne priuie markes whereby they knowe the waye the one to inuade the others dominions, and fpoyle and infefte them felues on bothe fydes with mutual incurfions priuillie in the nyght feafon. By the helpe therfore of theyr guydes and labourers, with owre carpenters, he paffed ouer the horrible mountaynes and many greate ryuers lyinge in the way, ouer the which he made brydges eyther with pyles or trunkes of trees. And here doo I let paffe manye thynges whiche they fuffered for lacke of necefaries, beinge alfo in maner ouercome with extreme labour, leaffe I fhulde bee tedious in reherfinge thynges of fmaule value. But I haue thought it good not to omitte fuche doinges as he had with the kynges by the waye. Therefore or euer he came to the toppes of the hygh mountaynes, he entered into a Region cauled <i>Quarequa</i>, and mette with the kyng thereof cauled by the fame name, with a greate bande of men armed after theyr maner, as with bowes and arrowes, longe and brode two handed fwordes made of wodde, longe ftaues hardened at the endes with fyer, dartes alfo and flynges. He came proudly and cruelly ageynft owre men, and fent meffengers to them to byd theym ftande and procede no further: demaundyng whyther they went and what they hadde to doo there. Herewith he came foorth and fhewed hym felfe beinge appareled with al his nobilitie: but the other were all naked. Then approchinge towarde owre men, he thretened them with a lions countenance to depart from thenfe except they wolde bee flayne euery mothers fonne. When owre men denyed that they wolde goo backe, he affayled them fiercely. But the battayle was fone fynyffhed. For as foone as they harde the noyfe of the hargabufies, they beleued that owre menne caryed thunder and lyghtenyng about with them. Many alfo beinge flayne and fore wounded with quarels of crossebowes, they turned their backes and fledde. Owre men folowynge them in the chafe, hewed them in piefes as the butchers doo fleffhe in the shamwelles, from one an arme, from an other a legge, from hym a buttocke, from an other a fhulder, and from fume the necke from the bodye at one ftroke. Thus, fyxe hundreth of them with theyr kyng, were flayne lyke brute beaftes. <i>Vafchus</i> founde the houle of this kyng infected with moft abhominable and vnnaturall lechery. For he founde the kynges brother and many other younge men in womens apparell, fmoth and effeminately decked, which by the report of fuch as dwelte abowte hym, he abufed with prepofterous venus. Of thefe abowte the number of fortie, he commaunded to bee gyuen for a pray to his dogges. For (as we haue fayd) the Spaniardes vfe [t]he helpe of dogges in their warres ageynft the naked people whom they inuade as fiercely and rauenyngely as yf they were wylde boares or hartes. In foo muche that owre Spanyardes haue founde theyr dogges noo leffe faythful to them in all daungious and enterpryfes, then dyd the Colophonians or Castabalenfes which intituted hole armies of dogges foo made to ferue in the warres, that beinge accuftomed to place them in the fore froonte of the battayles, they neuer fhrunke or gaue backe. When the people had harde of the feure punyffhement which owr men had executed vppon that fylthy kynde of men, they reforted to them as it had byn to Hercules for refuge, by violence bryngyng with them al fuch as they knewe to bee infected with that peftilence, fpettyng in theyr faces and cryng owte to owre men to take reuenge of them and rydde them owte of the worlde from amonge men as contagious beaftes. This flinkyng abomination hadde not yet entered amonge the people, but was exercifed onely by the noble men and gentelmen. But the people lyftinge vp theyr handes and eyes toward heauen, gaue tokens that god was greuoufly offended with fuch vyle deedes. Affirmyng this to bee the caufe of theyr foo many thunderinges, lyghtnyng, and tempeftes wherwith they are foo often troubeled: And of the ouerflowinge of waters which drowne theyr fets and frutes, whereof famenne and dyuers difeafes infue, as they fimplie and faythfully beleue, althowgh they knowe none other god then the foonne, whom onely they honoure, thinkyng that it dooth bothe gyue and take awaye as it is pleafed or offended. Yet are they very docible, and eafye to bee allured to owre cuftomes and religion, if they had any teachers. In theyr language there is nothyng vnpleafante to the eare or harde to bee pronounced, but that all theyr woordes may bee wrytten with latin letters as wee fayde of th[e] inhabitants of <i>Hispaniola</i>. It is a warlyke nation, and hath byn euer hetherto molefous to theyr bortherers. But the region is not fortunate with frutful ground or plentie of gold. Yet is it full of greate barren mountaynes beinge fumewhat colde by reafon of theyr heyght. And</p>
A stone in the steede of Iren.	
Superfluites hynder libertie.	
Carpenters.	
Brydges.	
The region of Quarequa.	
Kinge Quarequa is dryuen to flyght.	
Hargabufies.	
Crossebowes	
vi. C. [six hundred] Barbarians are slaine Vnnatural lechery.	
90	
The vfe of dogges in the warre agent the naked Barbarians.	
Naturall hatred of vnnatural sinne.	
<i>Palatini</i> . I wolde all men were of this opinion.	
The hartest is great and the woorkemen but fewe.	
Warrelyke people.	
The hygher the colder.	

therfore the noble men and gentelmen are apparelled. But the common people lyue content onely with the benefytes of nature. There is a region not past two dayes iourney distant from *Quarequa*, in which they founde only blacke Moores: and those excedynge fierce and cruell. They suppose that in tyme paste certeyne blacke mores sayled thether owt of *Aethiopia* to robbe: and that by shippewrackle or fume other chaunce, they were dryuen to those mountaynes. Th[e]inhabitanes of *Quarequa* lyue in continuall warre and debate with these blacke men. Here *Vaschus* leauinge in *Quarequa* many of his souldiers (which by reason they were not yet accustomed to such trauayles and hunger, fell into dyuers diseafes) tooke with hym certeyne guydes of the Quarequatans to conduct hym to the toppes of the mountaynes. From the palaice of kynge *Poncha*, to the prospect of the other fouth sea, is only fyxe dayes iorney: the which neuerthelesse by reason of many hynderances and chaunces, and especially for lacke of vyttayles, he coulde accomplyshe in noo lesse then. xxv. dayes. But at the length, the feuenth daye of the calendes of October, he behelde with woonderinge eyes the toppes of the hygh mountaynes shewed vnto hym by the guydes of *Quarequa*, from the whiche he myght see the other sea soo longe looked for, and neuer seene before of any man comynge owte of owre worlde. Approching therefore to the toppes of the mountaynes, he commaunded his armye to stey, and went him selfe alone to the toppe, as it were to take the fyrst possession therof. Where, faulynge prostrate vpon the grounde, and rayfinge hym selfe ageyne vpon his knees as is the maner of the Christians to pray, lyftynge vppe his eyes and handes towarde heauen, and directinge his face towarde the newe founde fouth sea, he poored forth his humble and deuout prayers before almyghtie God as a spirituall sacrifice with thankes gyuing, that it had pleased his diuine maiestie to referue vnto that day the victorie and praise of so greate a thyng vnto hym, beinge a man but of fmaule witte and knowlege, of lyttle experience and base parentage. When he had thus made his prayers after his warlike maner he beckened with his hande to his coompanions to coome to hym, shewynge them the greate mayne sea heretofore vnknown to th[e]inhabitanes of Europe, Aphrike, and Asia. Here ageyne he fell to his prayers as before: defyringe almyghtie God and the blessed virgin to fauour his beginniges, and to gyue hym good successe to subdue those landes to the glorie of his holy name and encrease of his trewe religion. All his coompanions dyd lykewyse, and prayfed god with loude voyces for ioye. Then *Vaschus*, with no lesse manlye corage then Hanniball of Carthage shewed his souldiers Italye and the promontories of the Alpes, exhorted his men to lyft vp their hartes, and to behoulde the lande euen nowe vnder their feete, and the sea before their eyes, whiche shulde bee vnto them a full and iust rewarde of theyr great laboures and trauayles nowe ouerpasse. When he had sayde these woordes, he commaunded them to raise certeine heapes of stoncs in the steepe of alters for a token of possession. Then descendynge from the toppes of the mountaynes, least such as might come after hym shulde argue hym of lyinge or falschod, he wrote the kynge of Castelles name here and there on the barkes of the trees bothe on the ryght hande and on the lefte: and rayfed heapes of stoncs all the way that he went, vntyll he came to the region of the nexte kynge towarde the south whose name was *Chiapes*. This kynge came forth the ageynste hym with a greate multitude of men: threateninge and forbyddyng him not onely to passe through his dominions, but also to goo no further. Herevpon, *Vaschus* set his battayle in array, and exhorted his men (beinge nowe but fewe) fiercely to assaile theyr enemies, and to esteeme theym noo better then dogges meate as they shulde bee shortly. Placeinge therefore the hargabusiers and masties in the forefroonte, they saluted kynge *Chiapes* and his men with such a larome, that when they hard the noyse of the gunnes, sawe the flames of fyre, and smelte the fauour of brymstone (for the wynde blew towarde them) they droue them felues to flight with suche feare lease thunderboultes and lyghtnynges folowed them, that manye fell downe to the grounde: whom owre men pursuinge, fyrst keepinge theyr order, and after breakyng theyr array, flewe but fewe and tooke many captiue. For they determined to vse no extremitie, but to pacifie those Regions as quietlye as they myght. Enteringe therefore into the palaice of kynge *Chiapes*, *Vaschus* commaunded many of the captiues to bee loosed: wyllynge them to searcho wte theyr kynge, and to exhorte hym to coome thither: And that in soo doinge, he wolde bee his frende and profer hym peace, besyde many other benefites. But if he refused to coome, it shulde turne to the destruction of hym and his, and vtter subuersion of his contrey. And that they myght the more assuredly do this message to *Chiapes* he sent with them certeyne of the guydes whiche came with hym from *Quarequa*.

Thus *Chiapes* beinge perswaded aswel by the Quareqans who coulde coniecture to what ende the matter wolde coome by th[e] experience whiche they had seene in them felues and theyr kynge, as also by the reasons of his owne men to whome *Vaschus* hadde made soo frendely promyses in his behalfe, came forth the caues in the whiche he lurked, and submytted hym selfe to *Vaschus*, who accepted hym frendelye. They ioyned handes, embraced the one the other, made a perpetuall league of frendshippe, and gaue greate rewardes on bothe sydes. *Chiapes* gaue *Vaschus* foure hundred poundes weyght of wrought goulde of those poundes whiche they caule *Pesos*: And *Vaschus* recompensed hym ageyne with certeyne of owre thynges. Thus beinge made freendes, they remayned togyther a fewe dayes vntyll *Vaschus* souldiers were coome which he lefte behynde hym in *Quarequa*. Then caulinge vnto hym the guydes and labourers which came with hym from thense he

A region of black moores

Diseases of change of ayer and dyet.

The south sea.

Vaschus is coome to the syght of the newe south sea.

Prayer.

God rayseth the poore from the dungehyl

91

Hanniball of Carthage.

Vaschus taketh possession of the moutaynes

Kynge Chiapes.

A battayle.

Chiapes is dryuen to flight.

Vaschus sendeth for king Chiapes.

Chiapes submitteth hymselfe to Vaschus.

iiii. C. [four hundred] poundes weyght of wrought gold

Vaschus addiceth
the newe land
and sea, to the
dominion of
Castile.

Kynge Coquera
is dryuen to flyght.
Vaschus vseth
both gentelnes
and rigour.

92

vi. C. [six
hundred] and
l. [fifty] poundes
weyght of wrought
gold

A goulfe of
threescore myles.
Saynt Michaels
goulfe

The manly corage
and godly zeale
of Vaschus

Ryches are the
synewes of warre
The faythfulnes of
kynge Chiapes.

A tempest on the
sea.

The increasing of
the South sea.

The Northe
Ocean.

Hard shyft in
necessitie.

93

The Region
Tumacca.

rewarded them liberallye and difmissed theym with thankes. Shortly after, by the conduct of *Chiapes* hym selfe, and certeyne of his men, departinge from the toppes of the mountaynes, he came in the space of foure dayes to the bankes of the newe sea: where affemblynge al his men togyther with the kynges scribes and notaries, they addicted al that maine sea with all the landes adiacent there vnto to the dominion and Empire of Castile. Here he left part of his fouldiers with *Chiapes* that he myght th[e]selfe seache those coastes. And takyng with hym nyne of theyr lyghters made of one hole tree (which they caule *Culchas* as th[e] inhabitants of *Hispaniola* caul them *Canouas*) and also a bande of fourescore men with certeine of *Chiapes* men, he passed ouer a greate ryuer and came to the region of a certeyne kynge whose name was *Coquera*. He attempted to refyfte owre men as dyd the other, and with lyke successe: for he was ouercoome and put to flyght. But *Vaschus* who entended to wynne hym with gentelnes, fente certeyne Chiapeans to him to declare the greate poure of owre menne: howe inuincible they were: howe mercifull to such as submit them felues, also cruell and feuere to such as obstinately withstande them. Promynginge hym furthermore, that by the frendshippe of owre men, he myght bee well assured by th[e] example of other, not onely to lyue in peace and quietnes hym selfe, but also to bee reuenged of th[e] iniuries of his enemies. Wylling hym in conclusion foo to weigh the matter, that if he refused this gentelnes profered vnto hym by foo greate a victourer, he shulde or it were longe, lerne by feelyng to repent him to late of that perel which he myght haue auoyded by hearing. *Coquera* with these woordes and exemples, shaken with great feare, came gladly with the messengers, bryngyng with him fyxe hundreth and l. [fifty] *Pefos* of wrought gold, which he gaue vnto owre men. *Vaschus* rewarded hym lykewise as we sayd before of *Poncha*. *Coquera* beinge thus pacified, they returned to the palaice of *Chiapes*. Where, visityng their companions, and reflyng there a whyle, *Vaschus* determyned to seach the nexte greate goulfe, the which, from the furthest reachyng therof into the lande of their countreys, from the enteraunce of the mayne sea, they saye to bee threescore myles. This they named faynt Michaels goulfe, which they say to bee full of inhabited Ilandes and hugious rockes. Enteringe therefore into the nyne boates or *Culchas* wherwith he passed ouer the ryuer before, hauinge also with hym the fame companye of fourescore hole men, he wente forwarde on his purpose, although he were greatly dissuaded by *Chiapes*, who earnestly desyred hym not to attempt that vyage at that tyme, affirming the goulfe to be foo tempestuous and stormy three moonethes in the yeare, that the sea was there by noo meanes nauigable: And that he had seene many *Culchas* deuoured of whirlepoles euen beefore his eyes. But inuincible *Vaschus*, impaciente of idlenes, and voyde of all feare in goddes cause, aunswered that god and his holy sayntes wolde prosper his enterpryses in this case, forasmuche as the matter touched God and the defence of the Christian religion, for the mayntenaunce wherof it shulde bee necessarie to haue great abundance of ryches and treasure as the synewes of war ageynste the enemies of the saythe. Thus vyinge also th[e] office both of an oratoure and preacher, and hauinge perswaded his companyons, he lanced from the lande. But *Chiapes*, least *Vaschus* shulde any thynge doubt of his faythfulnes towarde hym, profered himselfe to goo with hym whither foo euer he went: And wolde by noo meanes assent that *Vaschus* shulde depart from his palaice, but that he wolde brynginge hym on the waye and take part of his fortune. Therefore as soone as they were nowe entered into the maine sea, such fourges and conflictes of water arose ageynst them that they were at theyr wyttes endes whither to turne them or where to reffe. Thus beinge tossed and amased with feare, the one loked on the other with pale and vncherefull countenaunces. But especially *Chiapes* and his company, who had before tyme with their eyes seene th[e] experience of those ieopardies, were greatly difcomforted. Yet (as god wolde) they escaped all, and landed at the nexte Ilande: Where makinge safe theyr boates, they rested there that nyght. Here the water foo encreased, that it almost ouerflowed the Iland. They say also that that fourth sea doth foo in maner boyle and swelle, that when it is at the hyghest it doth couer many greate rockes, which at the faule therof, are seene farre aboue the water. But on the contrary parte, all suche as inhabite the North sea, affirme with one voyce, that hit scarsely riseth at any tyme a cubet aboue the bankes as they also confesse which inhabite the Ilande of *Hispaniola* and other Ilandes situate in the same. The Ilande therefore beinge nowe drye by the faule of the water, they reforted to theyr boates which they founde all ouerwhelmed and full of sande, and fume fore brufed, with great ryftes, and almost lost by reason theyr cables were broken. Such as were brufed, they tyed fast with theyr gyrdels, with flippes of the barkes of trees, and with tough and longe stalkes of certein herbes of the sea, stopping the ryftes or chynkes with grasse accordyng to the presente necessitie. Thus were they enforced, to returne backe ageyne lyke vnto men that came frome shippewracke, beinge almost confumed with hunger, bycause theyr vytayles were vtterly destroyed by tempeste. Th[e] inhabitants declared that there is harde all the yeare horrible rorynge of the sea amonge those Ilandes as often as it ryfethe or fauleth. But this most especially in those three monethes in the which it is moste boyst[r]ious as *Chiapes* towlde *Vaschus* before: Meanynginge (as they coulde coniecture by his woordes) October, Nouember, and December: for he signified the present moone and the twoo moones folowyng, countyng the moonethes by the moones, whereas it was nowe October. Here therefore refreshynginge hym selfe and his fouldiers a whyle, and passynginge by one vnprofitable kynge, he came to an other whose name was *Tumaccus*, after the name of the region, beinge situate on that fyde

of the goulfe. This *Tumaccus* came fourth ageynste owre men as dyd the other, and with lyke fortune. For he was ouercoome, dryuen to flyght, and many of his men slayne. He hym selfe was also fore wounded, but yet efcaped. *Vaschus* fent certeyne messengers of the Chiapeans to hym to returne, and not to bee afrayde. But he could be nothyng moued nether by promyffes nor threateninges. Yet when the messengers were infant, and ceassed not to threaten death to him and his famely, with the vtter defolation of his kyngedome if he perfisted in that obstinacie, at the length, he fent his foonne with them: whom *Vaschus* honorably entertheyninge, apparelinge hym gorgiously and gyuing hym many gyftes, fent hym to his father, wyllynge hym to persuade hym of the puiffaunce, munificence, liberalitie, humanitie, and clemencie of owre men. *Tumaccus* beinge moued by this gentelnes declared toward his sonne, came with him the thyrde day, bryngynge nothyng with hym at that tyme. But after that he knewe that owre men defyred goulde and pearles, he fent for fyxe hundreth and. xiiii. *Pefos* of golde, and two hundreth and fortie of the biggest and fayrest perles befyde a great number of the fmaulest forte. Owre men marueyled at the byggenes and fayrenes of these perles although they were not perfectly whyte bycause they take theym not owte of the sea musculs excepte they fyrst rost them, that they may th[e]selfe open them selfe, and also that the fyssh maye haue the better taste, whiche they esteeme for a delicate and princely dyshe, and set more thereby then by the perles them selues. Of these thynges I was enformed of one *Arbolantius* beinge one of *Vaschus* coompanions whom he fent to the kyng with manye perles and certeyne of those sea musculs. But when *Tumaccus* sawe that owre men soo greatly regarded the bewtie of the perles, he commaunded certeyne of his men to prepare them selues to goo a fysshynge for perles. Who departinge, came ageyne within foure dayes, bringynge with them twelue pounce weight of orient perles after eight ounces to the pounce. Thus reioyfyng on bothe parties, they embrased and made a league of continuall frendshippe. *Tumaccus* thought him selfe happie that he had presented owre men with such thankfull gyftes and was admitted to theyr frendshippe: and owre men thinkynge them selues happie and blessed that they had founde suche tokens of great ryches, swalowed downe theyr spettle for thyrste. At all these doinges, kyng *Chiapes* was present as a wytnes and coompanion. He also reioyfed not a lyttle, aswell that by his conductinge he sawe that owre men shulde be satisfied of theyr defyre, as also that by this meanes he had declared to the next kyng his bortherer andemie, what frendes he had of owre men, by whose ayde he myght lyue in quyetnes and bee reuenged of his aduersarie if neede shulde soo requyre. For (as wee haue sayde) these naked kynges infeste them selues with greuouus warres onely for ambition and defyre to rule. *Vaschus* bofeth in his epistell, that he lerned certeyne maruelous secretes of *Tumaccus* hym selfe as concernynge the greates ryches of this lande: wherof (as he sayth) he woold vtter nothyng at this presente, for asmuch as *Tumaccus* toulde it him in his eare. But he was enformed of bothe the kynges, that there is an Ilande in that goulfe, greater then any of the other, hauing in it but onely one kyng, and hym of soo great poure, that at suche tymes of the yeare as the sea is caulme, he inuadethe theyr dominions with a greates nauie of *Culchas*, spoyling and caryng a way for a praye, all that he meeteth. This Iland is distant from these coastes, onely twentie myles: Soo that the promontories or poyntes therof rechyng into the sea, may bee seene from the hylles of this Continent. In the sea nere about this Ilande, sea musculs are engendred of such quantitie, that many of them are as brode as buckelers. In these are perles founde (beinge the hartes of those shell fyshes) often tymes as bygge as beanes, sumtymes bygger then olyues and such as sumptuous *Cleopatra* myght haue defyred. Although this Ilande bee soo nere to the shore of this firme lande, yet is the begynnyng therof in the mayne sea without the mouth of the goulfe. *Vaschus* beinge ioyfull and mery with this rych communication, fantaing nowe in maner nothing but princes treasures, beganne to speake fierce and cruell wordes ageynst the tyranne of that Ilande, meanyng hereby too woonne the myndes of the other kynges, and bynde them to hym with a nearer bonde of frendship. Yet therfore raylynge further on hym with spytefull and opprobrious wordes, he swore great othes that he woold furthwith inuade the Ilande, spoylynge, destroyng, burnynge, drownynge, and hangynge, sparinge neyther swoorde nor fyre, vntyll he hadde reuenged theyr iniuries: And therwith commaunded his *Culchas* to bee in a redynes. But the two kynges *Chiapes* and *Tumaccus*, exhorted hym friendly to deferre this enterpryse vntyll a more quiete season, bycause that sea was not nauigable withoute greates daunger, beinge nowe the begynnyng of Nouember. Wherin the kynges seemed to faye trewe. For as *Vaschus* hym selfe wryteth, great roryng of the sea was harde amonge the Ilandes of the goulfe by reason of the raginge and conflicte of the water. Great ryuers also descending from the toppes of the mountaynes the same time of the yeare, and ouerflowyng theyr bankes, dryuyng downe with theyr vyolence greates rockes and trees, make a maruelous noyse. Lykewise the furie of the South and Northeast wyndes, associate with thunder and lyghtnyng at the same season, dyd greatly moleste them. Whyle the wether was fayre they were vexed in the nyght with cold: and in the daye time, the heate of the sonne troubled them: wherof it is noo maruaile, forasmuche as they were nere vnto the Equinoctiall lyne, although they make noo mention of the eleuation of the pole. For in such regions, in the nyght, the mone and other coulde planettes: but in the daye, the foone and other hotte planettes, doo chiefly exercise theyr influence: Although the antiquitie were of an other

Kyng *Tumaccus* is driuen to flyght.

Golde and perles.

Musculs of these.

Fysshynge for perles. xii pounce weyght of perles.

The thyrst of golde.

Ambition amonge naked men.

This Ilande is cauled *Margaritea* *Diues*, or *Dites*. A kyng of greates poure.

Bigge perles. *Cleopatra*, queene of Egypt resolued a pearle in vineger and drunke it, price. v. thousande pounce of owr mony. The fiercenes of *Vaschus*. 94

Great ryuers faulynge from mountaynes. Thunder and lyghtnyng in Nouember. Colde in the nyght nere the Equinoctiall.

Habitable regions
vnder the
Equinoctiall lyne.

The nauitions
[? nauigations] of
the Portingales
towards the southe
pole.

Antipodes.
He meaneth S.
Augustine and
Lactantius.

The starres about
the southe pole.

Lactea via.

A similitude
declarunge
Antipodes.

opinion, fupposinge the Equinoctiall circle to bee vnhabitable and defolate by reafon of the heate of the foonne hauinge his courfe perpendiculerly or directly ouer the fame: except a fewe of the contrary opinion, whose assertions the Portugales haue at thefe dayes by experience proued to bee trewe. For they faile yearly to th[e]inhabitanes of the fourth pole, being in maner *Antipodes* to the people cauled *Hyperborei* vnder the North pole, and exercife marchaundies with them. And here haue I named *Antipodes*, forasmuch as I am not ignorant that there hath byn men of fingular witte and great lernyng, which haue denyed that there is *Antipodes*: that is, fuch as walke feete to feete. But it is moft certeyne, that it is not gyuen to anye one man to knowe all thynges. For euen they alfo were men: whose propertie is to erre and bee deceaued in many thynges. Neuertheleffe, the Portugales of owre tyme haue fayled to the fyue and fyftie degree of the fourth pole: Where, coompanyng abowte the poynt thereof, they myght fee throughowte al the heauen about the fame, certeyne fhynnyng whyte cloude here and there amonge the flarres, lyke vnto theym whiche are feene in the tracte of heauen cauled *Lactea via*, that is, the mylke whyte waye. They fay, there is noo notable flarre neare about that pole lyke vnto this of owres whiche the common people thynke to bee the pole it felfe (cauled of the Italians *Tramontana*, and of the Spanyardes *Nortes*) but that the fame fauleth benethe the Ocean. When the sonne defcendeth from the myddefte of the exiltree of the woorld from vs, it ryfeth to them, as a payre of balances whose weyght inclynnyng from the equall poyfe in the myddeft towards eyther of the fydes, caufeth the one ende to ryfe as much as the other fauleth. When therefore it is autumne with vs, it is fprynge tyme with them: And fummer with vs when it is wynter with them. But it fufficeth to haue fayde thus much of ftrange matters. Let vs now therefore returne to the hiftorie and to owre men.

THE SECONDE BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.



Aschus by th[e]aduice of kynge *Chiapas* and *Tumaccus*, determyned to deferre his vyage to the fayde Ilande vntyll the nexte fprynge or fummer, at which tyme *Chiapas* offered hym felfe to accompanie owre men and ayde them therein all that he myght. In this meane tyme *Vaschus* had knowlege that thefe kynges had nettes and fysshynge places in certeyne ftations of that fea nere vnto the shore, where they were accustomed to fyfhe for fea muscals in the which perles are engendred: And that for this purpose they had certeyne dyuers or fyffhers exercifed frome theyr youthe in fwymmyng vnder the water. But they doo this onely at

certeyne tymes when the fea is calme, that they may th[e]efelyer coome to the place where thefe fhell fyffhes are woonte to lye. For the bygger that they are, foo much ly they the deaper and nerer to the bottome. But the leffer, as it were dowghters to the other, are nerer the bryme of the water. Lykewyfe the leaſte of all, as it were their niefes, are yet nearer to the fuperficiall parte therof. Too them of the byggeſte forte whiche lye loweſte, the fyffhers defcende the depthe of three mens heyght, and fumtyme foure. But to the dowghters or niefes as their fucceſſion, they defcend onely to the mydde thygh. Sumtymes alfo, after that the fea hath byn difquyeted with vehemente tempeſtes, they fynde a greate multytude of thefe fyffhes on the fandis, beyng dryuen to the ſhore by the vyolence of the water. The perles of thefe whiche are founde on the fandis, are but lytle. The fiſſhe it felfe, is more pleaſaunte in eatynge then are owre oysters as owre men report. But perhappes hunger the ſweete fauſe of all meates, cauſed owre men foo too thynke. Whether perles bee the hartes of fea muscals (as Ariſtotell fuppoſed) or the byrthe or ſpaune of there intrals (as *Plinye* thought) Or whether they cleaue contynually to the rockes, or wander by coompanies in the fea by the guydynge of th[e]jeldeſte: Whether euerye fyffhe brynges foorth the one perle or more, at one byrthe or at dyuers: Alfo whether theye bee fylled frome the rockes wherunto theye cleaue, or maye bee eaſylye pulled awaye, or otherwyfe faule of by them felues when theye are coomme to there full growth: Lykewyfe whether perles bee harde within the ſhelle or foſte, owre men haue as yet noo certayne experyence. But I truſte or it bee longe, too knowe the truth hereof. For owre men are euen nowe in hande with the matter. Alfo, as foone as I ſhall bee aduertysed of the arryual of *Petrus Arias* the capytayne of owre men, I wyll deſyre hym by my letters to make diligent ſearche for theſe thynges, and certifye me therof in all poyntes. I knowe that he wyll not bee ſlacke or omytte any thyng herein. For he is my verye frende: and one that taketh greate pleaſure in confyderyng the woorkes of nature. And ſurelye it ſeemeth vnto me vndeceate, that wee ſhoulde with fylence ouerſlyppe ſo greate a thyng whiche aſwell in the owlde tyme as in owre dayes, hath, and yet doothe, drawe bothe men and women to emmoderate deſyre of ſuperfluos pleaſure. Spayne therefore ſhalbe able hereafter with perles to fatiffie the gredye appetite of fuche as in wanton pleaſures are lyke vnto *Cleopatra* and *Aſopus*. So that frome henſforth we ſhal neyther enuy nor

The maner of
fyſshynge for
perles.

Three kindes of
perles.

95

Dyuers queſtions
as concernynge
perles

Petrus arias

Wanton and
ſuperfluos
pleaſures.
Cleopatra.
Aſopus.

reuerence the nyfe frutefulness of *Stoidum*, or *Taprobana*, or the redde sea. But lette vs nowe returne to owre purpose. *Vaschus* therefore determined with the fysshers of *Chiapes* to proue what myght bee doone in his fyfthe pooles or flations of sea muscules. *Chiapes* to shewe hym selfe obediente to *Vaschus* his requeste, although the sea were boyft[r]ious, coommaunded thirtye of his fysshers to prepare them selves and to reforte to the fysshinge places. *Vaschus* sente onelye fyxe of his men with them to beeholde them frome the sea bankes, but not to coommitte them selues to the daunger of the sea. The fysshynge place was distante frome the palayce of *Chiapes* aboute tenne myles. They durste not aduenture to dyue to the bottome by reason of the furye of the sea. Yet of the muscules whiche lye hyghest, and of fuche as were dryuen to the shore by the vyolence of the water, they broughte fyxe greate farthels in the space of a fewe dayes. The perles of these were but lyttle, aboute the bygnes of smaule fythes: yet verye fayre and bewtyfull, by reason theye were taken newlye owte of the fyfthe, beinge yet rawe. And that they shulde not bee reproued of lyinge as concerninge the bignes of these sea musculs, they sente many of them into Spayne to the kyng with the perles, the fyfthe beyng taken owte. Wee thinke verily that there maye in noo place bygger bee founde. These shelle fyfthes therefore beyng thus founde here in soo manye places in that sea, and gold in maner in euery house, doo argue the ryche tresurye of nature too bee hyd in those coastes, forasmuche as fuche greate ryches haue byn founde as it were in the lytle fynger of a gigantes hande. What then maye wee thynke of the hole hande of the gyante (for hetherto theye haue onely bynne in hande with the confynes of *Vraba*) when theye shall haue thorowly searched all the coastes and secretes of the inner partes of all that large lande. But *Vaschus* contented with these fynges and ioyfull of his good successe in these enterprifes, determined by an other waye to returne to his felowes in *Dariena*, where also, they haue golde mynes aboute tenne myles from the village. He gaue therefore kyng *Chiapes* leaue to depart, and to folowe hym noo further: Confailynge hym to continue faythfull to the christian kyng his lorde and maister. Thus embrasinge the one the other, and ioyninge handes, *Chiapes* departed, with teares declaring the good mynde which he bore to owre men. *Vaschus* leauing his ficke men with *Chiapes*, went forward on his iourney with the resydue, hauinge also with him for guydes three of *Chiapes* maryners. He conueyghed his armye ouer a greate ryuer into the dominion of a certeine kyng cauled *Teaocha*: who beinge aduertified of the coomynge of owre men, of whose famous actes he had harde muche before, was verye gladd therof and enterteyned them honorably: So that for a token of his frendly affection towarde them, he gaue *Vaschus* twentie poundes weyght of wrought golde after eyght ounces to the pounde: Also twoo hundreth bigge perles: but not fayre, by reason they were taken owt of the musculs after they had byn foddren. After they had ioyned handes, *Vaschus* recompensed hym with certeyne of owre thynges. Lykewise rewardynge his guydes the seruantes of *Chiapes*, he dismissed them with commendations to theyr lord. Kyng *Teaocha* at the departure of owr men from his palaice, dyd not onely appoint them guydes to conduct them in the way, but also gaue them certeyne slaues in the steede of beastes to cary theyr vytayles, bycause they shulde passe through many desertes, baren and rowgh mountaynes and terrible wooddes full of tygers and Lions. He sent also one of his sonnes with these slaues, ladyng them with salted and dried fyfthe, and breade of those regions, made of the rootes of *Maizium* and *Iucca*. He also commaunded his sonne not to depart from owr men vntyl he were licenced by *Vaschus*. By theyr conductinge therefore, *Vaschus* came to the dominion of an other kyng whose name was *Pacra*, a cruell tyranne, fearefull to the other kynges his bortherers, and of greater poure then any of them. This tyran, whether it were that his giltic conscience for his mischenous actes, put him in feare that owre menne wolde reuenge the fame, or that he thought hym selfe inferior to resist them, fled at theyr commynge. *Vaschus* wryteth that in these regions in the mooneth of Nouember he was fore afflicted with greate heate and intollerable thirst, by reason that syde of the mountaynes hath lyttle water: In soo muche that they were in daunger to haue perished but that certeyne of th[e] inhabitants shewed them of a sprynge which was in the secrete place of a woodde, whither *Vaschus* with all speade sent twoo quycke and stronge younge men of his coompanions with theyr gourdes and fuche water vesselles as *Teaocha* his men broughte with them. Of th[e] inhabitantes, there durst none depart from there coompany bycause the wylde beastes doo foone inuade naked men. For in those mountaynes, and especially in the wooddes neare vnto the springe, they saye that they are sumtymes taken owte of there houses in the nyght, excepte they take good heede that the doores bee well sparde. It shall not bee frome my purpose here to declare a particular chaunce before I enter any further in this matter. Theye saye therefore that the laste yeare the regyon of *Dariena* was noo lesse infested and trowbeled with a fierse tyger, then was *Calidonia* in tyme paste with a wylde bore, and *Nemea* with a horrible lyon. For they affyrme that for the space of fyxe hole moonethes there passed not one nyghte withoute summe hurte doone: soo that it kyled nyghtlye eyther a bullocke, a mare, a dogge, or a hogge, sumtimes euen in the highe wayes of the village. For owre men haue nowe greate heardes of cattayle in those regions. They say also that when this tyger had whelpes, noo man myght safelye goo furthe of his doores, bycause shee spared not men if shee mette fyrste with them. But at the length, necessitye enforced them to inuente a policye howe they myght bee reuenged of fuche bludshed. Searchynge therefore dilygently her footeleppe, and folowynge the pathe wherbye shee was accustomed in the

Stoidum.
Taprobana.

The fysshing place
of king Chiapes.

Golde in maner in
euery house.
The ryche
tresurye of
nature.

The golde mynes
of Dariena.

96

Kyng Teaocha
enterteyneth
Vaschus frendlye.
Twentye pounde
weyght of wrought
golde.

Desertes full of
wylde beastes.

Dried fysshe

Kyng Pacra
a tyranne.

Greate heate in
the moneth of
Nouember.

Hurte by wylde
beastes.

A tyger.
Calydonia is a
foreste in
Scotlande.
Nemea is a wodde in
Greece.

Tigers whelpes.

Thus the Egyptians
take Crocodiles.

The dogge tyger taken.
The rorynge of the tyger.

Tigers flesh eaten.
97

The bitche tyger.

Tigers whelpes.

A straunge thyng.

Kyng Pacra

Naturall hatred of vyce.

Foure kynges denoued of dogges.

The vse of dogges in warre aginst naked men.

The Canybales are experte archers.

Swoordes of woodde.

Fiftie pounce weyght of golde.

98

nyght feason to wander owte of her denne to seeke her praye, theye made a greate trenshe or pytte in her walke, coueringe the same with hurdels wheruppon they caste parte of the earthe and disperfed the refydue. The dogge tyger chaunfed fyrste into this pitfaul, and fel vppon the poyntes of sharpe stakes and fuche other ingens as were of purpose fixed in the bottome of the trenshe. Beynge thus wounded, he rored soo terrybly, that it grated the bowels of fuche as harde hym, and the wooddes and montaynes neare aboute, rebounded the noyfe of the horryble crye. When they perceaued that he was layde faste, they reforted to the trenshe and slewe hym with stones, dartes, and pykes. With his teethe and clawes, he broke the dartes into a thousande chyppes. Beynge yet deade, he was fearefull to all fuche as behelde hym: what then thinke you he wolde haue doone beynge alyne and loofe. One *Iohannes Ledisma* of Ciuile, a nere frynde to *Vaschus* and one of his coompanyons of his trauayles, toulde me that he hym selfe dyd eate of the fleshe of that tiger: and that it was nothings inferyor to biefe in goodnes. Beynge demaunded howe they knewe hit to bee a tyger forasmuche as none of them had euer feene a tyger, they answered that they knewe hit by the spottes, fiercenes, agilyte, and fuche other markes and token wherby the anciente writers haue describied the tiger. For sum of them, had before tyme seene other spotted wilde beastes, as lybardes and panthers. The dogge tiger beynge thus kylled, theye folowyng the trafe of his steppes towarde the mountaines, came to the denne where the bytche remayned with her twoo younge fuckyng whelpes. But shee was not in the denne at there coommyng. Theye fyrste caryed awaye the whelpes with them. But afterwarde fearyng leaste they shulde dye bycause theye were verye younge, entyndyng when they were bygger to sende them into Spayne, they put cheynes of yren aboute there neckes, and caryed them agayne to there denne: whither returnyng within a fewe dayes after, they founde the denne emptye and the cheynes not remoued frome there place. Theye suppose that the damme in her furye tore them in pyeces and caryed them awaye, leste anye shulde haue the fruition of them. For theye playnely affirme that it was not possible that they shulde bee loofed frome the chaynes alyue. The skynne of the deade tyger stuffed with drye herbes and strawe, they sente to *Hispaniola* to the admyrall and other of the chiefe rulers frome whome the newe landes receyue there lawes and succoure. It shall at this tyme suffyce to haue written thus much of the tygers, as I haue lerned by the reporte of them whiche bothe susteyned damage by there rauenyng, and also handeled the skynne of that whiche was flayne. Let vs nowe therefore returne to kyng *Pacra* frome whome wee haue digressed. When *Vaschus* had entred into the houfes forsaken of *Pacra*, he sente messengers to reconcyte hym as he had doone the other kynges. At the first he refused to coomme. But after threatenynge, he came with three other kynges in his coompanye. *Vaschus* writethe that he neuer fawe a more monstrous and deformed creature: And that nature hath onely gyuen hym humane shape, and otherwyse to bee worfe then a brute beaste, with maners accordyng to the linyamentes of his bodye. He abused with moste abhominable lechery the doughters of foure kynges his bortherers frome whome hee had taken them by vyolence. Of the fylthye behaoure of *Pacra*, of his crueltie and iniuries doone by hym, many of the other kynges made greuous coomplayntes to *Vaschus* as vnto a hygh Iudge and iuste reuenger: Moste humblye befechyng hym to see fuche thynges punysshed, forasmuche as theye tooke hym for a man sente of god for that purpose. Herevppon *Vaschus* aswell to wyne their good wylles, as also too shewe an exemple of terroure to fuche as vsed lyke fashions, coommaunded that this monstrous beaste with the other three kynges whiche were subiecte to hym and of lyke conditions, shulde bee geuen for a praye to his feyghting dogges, and their torne carkefes to bee burned. Of these dogges whiche theye vse in the warres, theye tell maruelous thynges. For theye faye that theye runne vppon th[e] inhabitants armed after there maner, with noo less fiercenes then if theye were hartes or wylde bores, if the Spaniardes doo but onely poynte towarde them with their fyngers: In soo muche that oftentymes they haue had noo neede too dryue their enemyes too flyght with swoordes or arrowes: But haue doone the same onely with dogges placed in the forefronte of their battayle, and lettynge them flyppe with their watche woorde and priuye token. Wheruppon the barbaryans fryken with feare by reason of the cruell countenaunces of the masties, with their desperate bouldenes and vnaccustomed houlyng and barkyng, haue disparclid at the fyrste onfette and broke their arraye. Yet it chaunfeth otherwyse when theye haue anye conflicte agaynst the Canibales and the people of *Caramairi*. For these are fyerfer, and more warrelyke men: Also so experte arche[r]s, that theye can moste certenlye dyrect their venomous arrowes aginst the dogges with fuche celeritye as if theye were thunderboltes: By reason wherof, they sumtymes kyl many of them. Th[e] inhabitants of these montaynes, doo not keepe warre with bowes and arrowes: But vse onely *Machanis*, that is certayne longe and broude swordes made of woodde: Also flynges, longe pykes and dartes hardened at the endes with fyere. Whyle kyng *Pacra* yet lyued, noo man coulde knowe of hym neyther by fayre meanes nor by foule, where he had the golde whiche was founde in his house. For owre men founde in his iewel houfe fyfthe poundes weyght of golde. Beynge therefore demaunded where he had it, he answered that they whiche gathered the same in those montaynes in his fathers dayes, were all deade: And that senfe he was a chylde, he neuer esteemed golde more then floones. More then this, theye coulde not gette of hym. By this feure punysshment executed vppon *Pacra*, *Vaschus* concyled vnto hym the myndes of all the other kynges of that prouynce. And

by this meanes it came too paffe, that when he fente for the fycke men whiche he lefte behynde hym with kynge *Chiapes*, an other kynge whiche was in the mydde waye (whose name was *Bononiama*) enterteined them gentellye, and gaue them. xx. pounce weyght of pure wrought golde, befyde great plentye of vyttayles. And not this onely, but also accompanied them hym felfe vntyll he had brought them safelye frome his palaice into the domynyon of *Pacra*: Where takyng eche of them by the ryghte handes, he delyuered them to *Vaschus* hym felfe, as a faythfull pledge commytted too his charge, and therewith spake to *Vaschus* in this effecte. Mooste myghtye and valyaunte vycourer, beholde I here delyuer vnto yowe, yowre coompanions in fuche plight as I receaued them: wiffhyng that I had byn aswell able to gyue them healthc, as they were hertely welcume to fuche pore enterteynement as I was able to shewe them. For the faouere and gentelnesse whiche I haue founde bothe in yowe and them, he shall rewarde yowe whiche fendeth thunderyng and lyghtelyng to the destruction of myscheuous men, and of his clemencye giueth vnto good men plentye of *Iucca* and *Maizium* in dewe seafon. As he spake thefe woordes, he lysted vppe his handes and eyes towarde the foonne whome they honoure for god. Then he spake further to *Vaschus*, sayinge: In that yowe haue destroyed and flaine owre vyolent and proude enemies, yowe haue brought peace and quyetnesse to vs and owre famelyes, and bounde vs for euer to loue and obeye yowe. Yowe haue foo ouercoome and tamed wylde monfsters, that wee thynke yowe to bee fente from heauen for the punyfement of euyll men and defence of innocentes, that vnder the protection of yowre myghtye fwoorde, wee maye hereafter leade owre lyues withowte feare, and with more quietnesse gyue thanks to the giner of all good thinges for his mercie shewed vnto vs in this behalfe. When th[e]interpretoure had toulde *Vaschus* that kyng *Bononiama* had sayde thefe woordes, and fuche lyke, *Vaschus* rendered hym lyke thanks for his humanyte declared towarde owre men, and rewarded hym as he had doone other in whome he founde lyke gentilnesse. *Vaschus* wryteth that he lerned manye thynges of this kynge as concernyng the greate rycheffe of thefe regions: But that he wolde at this present speake nothyng therof: And reherfethe the fame as thynges lyke to haue good succeffe. What this implicate *Hiperbole*, or aduancement meaneth, I doo not well vnderfande. But he playnely feemeth hereby to promyffe manye greate thynges. And surelye it is to be thought that accordyng to his hope, great riches maye bee looked for. For they came in maner into none of th[e]inhabytauntes houfes, but that they found in them, eyther bresteplates or currettes of golde, or elles golden ouches, iewels, or garlandes to weare aboute there heades, neckes, or armes. I coniecture therfore thus by a fymilitude of owre houfes: If amonge vs any man of great poure were moued with the defyre to haue great plentye of Iron, and wolde enter into Italye with a mayne force as dyd the Gothes in tyme pafte, what abundaunce of Iron shoulde he haue in their houfes: where as he shulde fynde in one place a fryngpan, in an other a chauldron, here a tryuet, and there a fpytte, and thefe in maner in euery pore mannes houfe, with fuche other innumerable: Whereby any man maye coniecture that Iren is plentifully engendred in fuche regions where they haue foo greate vfe therof. Owre men also perceaued that th[e]inhabytantes of thefe regions do no more esteeme golde then we do Iren: nor yet foo muche after they fawe to what vfe Iren ferued vs. Thus muche haue I thoughte good to write too yowre holyneffe of fuche thynges as I haue gathered owte of the letters of *Vaschus Nunnez*, and learned by woorde of mouthe of fuch as were his companyons in thefe affayres. As wee receyue them, fo wee gyue them vnto yowe. Tyme which reueleth all secretes, shall hereafter mynyfter larger argument of wrytyng. Theye coulde at this tyme doo no greate thyng in fearchyng the golde mynes, forasmuche as of a hundreth fourefcore and tenne men whiche *Vaschus* broughte with hym from *Dariena*, there remayned onely threecore and ten, or at the most fourefcore, whose ayde he nowe vfed in thefe dangerous aduentures, leanyng euer the crafed men behynd hym in the kynges houfes all the waye that he went. But they mooste especially fell into fundrye difeafes, whiche came lately from *Hifpaniola*. For they were not able to abyde fuche calamities as to lyue onely contented with the breade of thofe regions, and wylde herbes without falte, drinkinge none other then ryuer water, and that oftentimes eyther lackinge or vnwholfome, where as before their stomakes had byn vfed to good meates. But the owlde fouldiours of *Dariena*, were hardened to abyde all forowes, and exceedyng tollerabile of labour, heate, hunger, and watchyng: In fo muche that merilye they make their boofte that they haue obserued a longer and fharper lent then euer yowre holinesse inioyned. For they faye that for the fpace of foure hole yeares, they eate none other then herbes and frutes, excepte nowe and then perhappes fyfhe, and verye feldoomes flefhe: yea, and that fumtime for lacke of al thefe, they haue not abhorred from mangye dogges and fylthy toades as wee haue sayde before. The owlde fouldiers of *Dariena*, I caule thofe whiche fyrfte folowed the capytaynes *Nicuefa* and *Fogada* to inhabyte the lande, of the whiche nowe fewe were luyng. But lette vs nowe omytte thefe thynges, and retourne to *Vaschus* the vycourer of the montaynes.

Kynge
Bononiama, frende
to the christians.
Wroughte golde.

The oration of
kynge Bononiama

The sparke of the
lawe of nature, is
the lawe written
in the hartes of
men.

Hiperbole.

Great plenty of
golde.

A fymilitude for
the profe of
plentye of golde.

Iren more
estemed then
golde.

99
Change of dyet
is daungerous.

Owlde souldiers.

A longe lent.

THE THYRDE BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.



When *Vaschus* had remained thirtie dayes in the palayce of kynge *Pacra*, concilynge vnto hym the myndes of th[e]inhabitantes and prouidinge thynges necessarye for his coompanions, he departed frome thense by the conducte of certayne of kynge *Teaocha* his men, and came too the banke of the ryuer *Comogrus*, wherof the region and king therof, are named by the same name. He founde the fydes of these montaynes so rude and baren, that there was nothinge apte to bee eaten, but wilde rootes and certayne vnpleasante frutes of trees. Two kynges beinge neare of bludde, inhabyted this infortunate region, whiche *Vaschus* ouerpasse with al speede for feare of hunger. One of these poore kynges was named *Colochus*, and the other *Ciuriza*. He tooke them bothe with hym to guye hym in the waye, and dismyssed *Teaocha* his men with vytayles and rewardes. Thus for the space of three dayes, he wandered throughe many deferte wooddes, craggie mountaynes, and muddy maryshes full of fuche quamyres that men are ostentymes swalowed vp in them if they looke not the more-warelye to their fiete. Also through places not frequented with sorte of men, and fuche as nature had not yet opened to their vse, forasmuche as th[e]inhabitanthes haue feldoome entercourse betwene them, but onely by fundrye incurtions, the one to spoyle and destroye the other: Beynge otherwise contented to lyue onely after the lawe of nature, withowte worldly toyle for superfluous pleasures. Thus enteringe at the lengthe into the territorye of another kynge whose name was *Buchebuea*, they founde all thynges voyde and in silence: For the kynge and his subiectes, were all fledde to the wooddes. When *Vaschus* sente messengers to fetch hym, he dyd not onely at the fyrste submytte hym felse, but also promysse his ayde with all that he myghte make: Protestyng furthermore, that he fledde not for feare that owre men wolde doo hym any iniurie, but that he hyd hym felse for verye shame and grieffe of mynde, for that he was not able to receyue them honorablye accordyng vnto their dignitye, bycause his store of vitayles was consumed. Yet in a token of obedience and frendshyppe, he sent owre men many vesselles of golde, desyryng them to accepte them as the gifte of a frind whose good will wanted not in greater thynges if his abilytye were greater. By whiche wordes the poore man seemed tq insinuate that he had byn robbed and otherwise cruelly handled of his bortherers. By reason wherof, owre men were enforced to departe frome thense more hungrily then theye came. As theye wente forwarde therfore, they espyed certeine naked men coomminge downe from a hylle towarde them. *Vaschus* coommanded his armye to staye, and sente his interpretours to them to knowe what they wold haue. Then one of them to whom the other seemed to gyue reuerence, spake in this effect. Owre lorde and kinge *Chiorifus*, greeteth yowe well: Wyllyng vs to declare that he hath harde of yowre puissaunce and vertue wherby yowe haue subdued euell men and reuenged the wronges doone to innocentes. For the whiche yowre noble factes and iustyce, as he doothe honour yowre same, soo wolde he thinke him felse moste happye if he myght receiue yowe into his palaice. But, forasmuche as his fortune hath byn so euell (as he imputeth it) that beyng owte of yowre waye, yowe haue ouerpasse hym, he hath sent yowe this golde in token of his good wyll and fryndshyppe towarde yowe. And with these wordes he deliuered to *Vaschus* thirtye dyffes of pure golde. Addyng hereunto, that when so euer it shulde please him to take the paynes to coomme to their kynge, he shulde receyue greater gyftes. He declared further, that a kynge whyche was their bortherer and mortall enemye, was very ryche in golde: And that in subduyng of hym they shulde bothe obtaine greate rycheffe, and also deliyer them from dayly vexations: whiche thinge myght easilye be doone by their helpe bycause they knewe the countrye. *Vaschus* put them in good coomforte, and gawe them for rewarde certayne Iren axes whiche they more esteemed then greate heapes of golde. For they haue lyttell neede of golde, hauyng not th[e]use of pestiferous money. But he that maye get but one axe or hatchet, thynketh hym felse rycher then euer was *Craffus*. For euen these naked men doo perceyue that an axe is necessarye for a thousande vses: And confesse that golde is desyred onely for certayne vaine and effeminate pleasures, as a thyng whiche the lyfe of man maye lacke withowte any inconuenience. For owre gluttony and superfluous sumptuousnesse hath not yet corrupted them: By reason wherof they take it for noo shame to lacke cobardes of plate, where as the pride and wantonnes of owre tyme dooeth in maner impute it to vs for ignominye to bee withowte that, wherof by nature we haue no neede. But their contentation with the benefytes of nature doothe playnly declare that men may leade a free and happy life without tables, table clothes, carpettes, napkyns, and towels, with fuche other innumerable wherof they haue no vse, excepte perhappes the kynges furnishe their tables with a fewe golden vessels. But the common people dryue awaye hunger with a pyece of their breade in the one hande, and a piece of broylde fysh or

Comogrus.

Two poore kynges.

Desertes.

Kynge *Buchebuea*
submytteth him
selfe

Vessels of golde.

Kynge *Chiorifus*
sendeth *Vaschus*
xxx. dysshes of
pure golde.

100

Axes of Iren more
esteemed then any
gold

Superfluous and
effeminate
plesures

An example of the
lyfe of owre fyrst
parentes.

fumme kynde of fruite in the other hande. For they eate fleshe but feldome. When their fingers are imbrued with any ounctuous meates, they wype them eyther on the foules of their feete, or on their thyghes, ye and fumtymes on the skynnes of their priuye members in the fleede of a nappekynne. And for this cause doo they often tymes washe them felues in the ryuers. Owre men therfore wente forwarde laden with golde, but fore afflicted with hunger. Thus they came at the length to the dominion of kyng *Pocchorrofa* who fledde at their coommyng. Here for the space of thirtye dayes they fylled their emptye bellies with breade of the rootes of *Maizium*. In the meane tyme *Vaschus* sente for *Pocchorrofa*: who beyng allured with promisses and fayre woordes, came and submytted hym selfe brynginge with hym for a present. xv. poundes weighte of wrought golde, and a fewe slaues. *Vaschus* rewarded hym as he had doone other before. When he was mynded to depart, he was aduertised that he shulde passe through the dominion of a certayne kyng whose name was *Tumanama*. This is hee whome the soonne of kyng *Comogrus* declared to bee of foo great poure and fearefull to all his bortherers, and with whom many of *Comogrus* familyers had byn captiue. But owre men nowe perceiued that they measured his poure by their owne. For their kinges are but gnattes compared to elephantes, in respecte to the poure and pollicye of owre men. Owre men were also enformed by fuche as dwelte neare aboute *Tumanama*, that his region was not beyonde the montaynes as they supposed: Nor yet so ryche in golde as younge *Comogrus* had declared. Yet consulted they of his subduyng: whiche they thoughte they myght th[e]aslyer bryng to passe bycause *Pocchorrofa* was his mortall enemye, who moste gladly promysed them his aduice and ayde herein. *Vaschus* therefore, leauynge his fycke men in the vyllage of *Pocchorrofa*, tooke with hym threcore of his moste valiante souldiers, and declared vnto them howe kyng *Tumanama* had oftentimes spoken proude and threatnyng woordes ageynste them: Lykewise that it nowe stode them in hande of necessitye to passe through his dominion: And that he thought is beste to fette vpon hym vnwares. The souldiers consented to his aduice, and exhorted him to gyue th[e]aduenture, promysinge that they wolde folowe hym whether fo euer he wente. They determined therfore to go two dayes iorney in one daye, that *Tumanama* not knowynge of their fooden commyng, myght haue no leasure to assemble an armye. The thyng came to passe euen as they had deuysed. For in the fyrste wathe of the nyght, owre men with the *Pocchorrosians*, inuaded the vyllage and palaice of *Tumanama*, where they tooke hym prisoner suspectynge nothinge lesse. He had with hym two younge men whiche he abused vnnaturally: Also fourscore women whiche he had taken vyolently from dyuers kynges. Lykewise a greate number of his gentelmen and subiectes were taken stragelynge in other vyllages neare aboute his palaice. For their houfes are not adherent together as owres bee, bycause they are oftentimes troubeled with vehement whirlewyndes by reason of the suddenn chaunges and motions of the ayre caused by the influence of the planetes in the equalitie of the daye and nyght beyng there in maner bothe of one lengthe throughowte all the yeare, soasmuche as they are neare vnto the Equinoctiall lyne as we haue sayde before. Their houfes are made of trees, couered and after their maner thetched with the stalkes of certayne towghe herbes. To the palayce of *Tumanama*, was onely one house adherent, and that euen as bygge as the palayce it selfe. Eyther of these houfes were in length a hundreth and twentie pases, and in bredth fyftie pases as owre men measured them. In these two houfes the kyng was accustomed to muster his men as often as he prepared an armye. When *Tumanama* therefore, was thus taken captiue with all his *Sardanapanicall* famelye, the *Pocchorrosians* bragged and threatened hym beyng nowe bounde, that he shulde shortly bee hanged. The other kynges also his bortherers, reioyfed at his myffortune. Wherby owre men perceaued that *Tumanama* was no lesse troublesome to his neighbours, then was *Pacra* to the kinges of the southe syde of the montaynes. *Vaschus* also the better to please them, threatned hym greuoufly: But in deede entended no euell toward him. He spake therfore sharply vnto hym with these woordes: Thou shalt nowe suffer punysshment thou cruell tyranne, for thy pryde and abominations. Thou shalt knowe of what poure the christians are whom thou haste foo contemned and threate[n]d to drawe by the heare of their heades to the nexte ryuer and there to drowne them as thou haste often tymes made thy vaunte emonge thy naked slaues. But thou thy selfe shalt fyrste feele that whiche thou haste prepared for other: And herewith commaunded hym to bee taken vppe. Neuerthelesse gyuyng a priuye token of pardon to them whiche layde handes on him. Thus vnhappye *Tumanama*, fearyng and beleuyng that *Vaschus* had mente in erneste as he commaunded, fell prostrate at his feete and with teares defyred pardon: Protestyng that he neuer spake any fuche woordes. But that perhappes his noble men in their droonkenesse had so abused their toonges whiche he coulde not rule. For their wynes although they bee not made of grapes yet are they of force to make men droonken. He declared furthermore that the other kynges his bortherers had of malice surmysed fuche lyes of hym enuyng his fortune bycause he was of greater poure then they. Moste humbly defyryng *Vaschus* that as he tooke hym to bee a iuste vycetourer, soo to gyue no credytte vnto their vniuste and malycious complaintes. Addyng herevnto that if it wolde please hym to pardon hym not hauinge offended, he wolde bringe him great plentie of gold. Thus layng his ryght hande on his breast, he swore by the sonne, that he euer loued and feared the chrystians sence he fyrste harde of their fame and vctories: Especially when he harde saye that they had *Machanas*, that is, swoordes sharper then

Plentie of gold and scarcenesse of meate.

King *Pocchorrofa* submytteth hymselfe.

xv. pounde weyghte of wrought golde.

Kyng *Tumanama* looke decad. ii. lib. iiii.

A good pollicye.

101

Kyng *Tumanama* is taken prisoner.

The cause of vehemente wyndes nere the Equinoctiall.

Kyng *Tumanama* his palaice.

Vaschus his woordes to kyng *Tumanama*.

Oderunt quem metuent.

Kyng *Tumanama* his woordes.

Tumanama is pardoned.

xxx. pounce weyghte of wroughte golde.
lx. pounes weyght of golde.

102

They abhorre labour.

The coloure of the golden earthe and a tryall of the same.

Tokens of great plentie of golde.

Vaschus fauleth sicke.
Feeblenes of hunger and watchinge.

Kynge Comogrus friendly to the Christians.

The large and fruteful plain of Zauana.
The ryuer Comogrus.

103

thearse, and such as cutte in pieces al thynges that coomme in their waye. Then directyng his eyes towarde *Vaschus* who had his swoorde in his hand, he spake thus. Who (excepte he were owte of his wytte) dare lyfte vpp his hande ageynste this swoorde of yowres wherwith yowe are able with one strooke to cleave a man from the heade to the nauell. Lette no man therefore perswade yowe (o moste myghtye victourer) that euer fuche woordes proceded owte of my mouthe. As *Tumanama* with trembeling spake these woordes, therwith swallowyng downe the knot of deathe, *Vaschus* feemed by his teares to bee moued to compassion: And speakyng to hym with chearefull countenance commaunded hym to bee loofed. This doone, he fente immediatly to his palaice for. xxx. pounes weyght of pure gold artificially wrought into fundry ouches whiche his wyues and concubynes vsed to weare. Also the thyrdē daye folowyng, his noble men and gentylmen sent threcore pounes weight of golde for their fyne and raunsumme. *Tumanama* beyng demaunded wher they had that gold, answered that it was not gathered in his dominions But that it was brought his auncestours from the ryuer *Comogrus* toward the fouthē. But the *Pocchorrosians* and other his enemies, sayd that he lyed: Affirmyng that his kingdome was ryche in golde. *Tumanama* on the contrary part, instantly protested that he neuer knewe any golde myne in all his dominions. Yet denyed not but that there hath sumtimes byn found certayne fmaule graines of golde, to the gatheryng wherof, he neuer had any regarde, bycause they coulde not gette it without great and longe labour. Whyle these thynges were dooinge, the fycke men whiche *Vaschus* had lefte in the village of *Pocchorrosa*, came to hym the. viii. day of the Calendes of January in the yere of Christe. M. D. XIII. bringyng with them certayne labourers from the kynges of the fouthē with fundrye instrumentes to dygge the grounde and gather golde. Thus passyng ouer the day of the natiuite of Christ without bodely labour, vppon fainte Steuens daye he brought certeyne myners to the fyde of a hyll not farre dystante from the palaice of *Tumanama*, where (as he faith) he perceaued by the coloure of the earth that it was lykely to bryng furthe golde. When they had dygged a pytte not past a hand breadth and a halfe, and slyfted the earthe therof, they founde certayne fmaule graynes of golde no bygger then lintell feedes, amountyng to the weyght of twelue graynes as they prouyd with their balances of assaye before a notarie and wytnesse that the better credytte myghte bee gyuen therto. Wherby they argued that the rychenesse of that lande was agreable to the report of the bortherers, although *Vaschus* coulde by noo meanes cause *Tumanama* to confesse the fame. They supposse that he nothyng esteemed fo fmaule a portion. But other faye that he denyed his countrey to bee frutefull of golde, leaste by reafon therof the desyre of golde, myght intyfe owre men to inhabyte his kyngdome, as in deede the feely kynge was a prophet in soo thinkyng. For they chose that and the region of *Pocchorrosa* to inhabyte, and determyned to buylde townes in them bothe, if it shulde fo please the kynge of Castyle: Aswell that they myght bee baytinge places and vytailyng houfes for fuche as shulde iorney towarde the fouthē, as also that both the regions were frutfull and of good grounde to beare frutes and trees. Intendyng nowe therefore to departe from thense, he tried the earth by chaunce in an other place, where the coloure of the grounde with certayne shyninge stones, feemed to bee a token of golde. Where causyng a fmaule pitte to bee dygged lyttell beneath th[e]upper cruste of the earthe, he founde fo muche golde as weyghed that pyece of golde whiche the Spaniardes caule *Castellanum aureum*, and is commonly cauled *Pefus*, but not in one grayne. Reioyfyng at these tokens in hope of great riches, he badde *Tumanama* to be of good coomforte, promisyng hym that he woulde bee his frende and defender, soo that he troubeled not any of the kynges whiche were frendes to the Christians. He also perswaded hym to gather plentie of golde. Summe faye that he ledde awaye all *Tumanama* his women, and spoyled him leaste he shuld rebell. Yet he delyuered his soonne to *Vaschus* to bee broughte vpp with owre men, to learne their language and relygyon, that he myght therafter the better vse his helpe aswell in all thynges that he shulde haue to doo with owre men, as also more polytykely rule, and obtayne the loue of his owne subiectes. *Vaschus* at this tyme fell into a vehement feuer by reafon of excesse of labour, immoderate watchyng, and hunger: In fomuche that departyng from thense, he was sayne too bee borne vppon mennes backes in shietes of gossampyne cotton. Lykewyse also many of his souldiers whiche were soo weake that they coulde nother go nor stonde. To this purpose they vsed the helpe of th[e]inhabytantes, who shewed them felues in al thynges wyllyng and obedyente. Also summe of them whiche were sumwhat feeble and not able to trauallye, although not greuouly fycke, were ledde by the armes vntyll they came to the domnyon of kynge *Commogrus* a greate frende to the Christlyans, of whom wee haue largely made mention before. At *Vaschus* commyng thether, he founde that the owlde kynge was deade, and his soonne (whome we fo praysed for his wifedome) to raygne in his steade: And that he was baptised by the name of Charles. The palayce of this *Comogrus*, is situate at the foote of a siepe hyll well cultured. Hauyng towarde the fouthē a playne of twelue leages in breadth and veary frutefull. This playne, they caule *Zauana*. Beyond this, are the great and hyghe montaynes whiche deuyde the two feas wherof we haue spoken before. Owte of the styep hylles, spryngeth the ryuer *Comogrus*, whiche runneth throwghe the fayde playne to the hyghe montaynes, receauyng into his chanell by their valleys, all the other ryuers, and fo fauleth into the fouth sea. It is dystante from *Dariena*, aboute threcore and tenne leages

towarde the weste. As owre men therefore came to these parties, kynge *Comogrus* (otherwyse cauled Charles by his christian name) mette them ioyfully and entertaigned them honorably, gyyunge them their fyll of pleasaunte meates and drynkes. He gaue also to *Vaschus*, twenty pounce weyght of wrought golde. *Vaschus* recompened him with thinges which he esteemed muche more: As axes and fundry kyndes of carpenters tooles. Also a fouldiours cloke, and a faire fherte wrought with needle woork By these gyftes, *Comogrus* thought hym selfe to bee halfe a god amonge his bortherers. *Vaschus* at his departyng from hense, earnestly charged *Comogrus* and the other kynges to remayne faithfull and obedient to the christian king of Castile, if they defyred to lye in peace and quietnesse: And that they shulde hereafter more diligently applye them selues to the gatheringe of golde to bee fente to the great christian *Tiba* (that is) kyng. Declaryng further, that by this meanes they shuld bothe gette them and their posterity a patrone and defender ageynst their enemyes, and also obtayne great abundaunce of owre thinges. These affayres thus happely achiued, he wente forwarde on his vyage to the palaice of kyng *Poncha*, where he founde foure younge men whiche were come from *Dariena* to certifye hym that there were certayne shyppes coomme from *Hispaniola* laden wyth vyttayles and other necessaries. Wherefore takyng with him twentie of his moste lusty fouldiers, he made haste to *Dariena* with longe iorneyes: leauinge the refydue behynd him to folow at their leasure. He writeth that he came to *Dariena* the. xiiii. Cal. of Fe. An. 1514. The date of his letter is: From *Dariena*, the. iiii. day of march. He writeth in the same letter, that he had many fore conflictes, and that he was yet neyther wounded, or losse any of his men in the battaile. And therefore in al his large letter, there is not one leafe without thankes geuyng to almyghty god for his delyuery and preferuation from so many imminent perels. He attempted no enterpryse or tooke in hande any viage without th[e]inuocation of god and his holy faintes. Thus was *Vaschus Balboa* of a vyolente Goliath, tourned into *Helifeus*: And from *Anteus* too *Heraules* the conquerour of monsters. Beyng therefore thus tourned from a raffhe royster to a polytyke and difcreate capitayne, he was iudged woorthy to bee aduanced to greate honour. By reason whereof, he was bothe receained into the kynges fauour, and therevpon created the generall or Lieuetenaunt of the kynges army in thofe Regions. Thus much haue I gathered bothe by the letters of certeyne my faythefull frendes beinge in *Dariena*, and also by woorde of mouth of suche as came lately frome thense. If yowre holynes desyre to knowe what I thynke herein, Suerly as by suche thynges as I haue seene, I beleue these thynges to bee trewe, euen so th[e]order and agreinge of *Vaschus* and his coompanions warrelyke letters, seeme to confirme the same. The Spanyarde therefore shall not neede hereafter with vndermynyng the earth with intollerable laboure to breake the bones of owre mother, and enter many myles into her bowels, and with innumerable daungers cut in funder hole mountaynes to make a waye to the courte of infernall *Pluto*, to bryng from thense wycked golde the feede of innumerable mischeues, withoute the whiche notwithstandinge we may nowe scarfely leade a happy lyfe fithe iniquitie hath so preuayled and made vs slaues to that wherof we are lords by nature: The Spanyarde (I say) shall not neede with such trauayles and difficultie to dygge farre into the earth for gold, but shal fynde it plentifully in maner in the vpper crust of the earth, or in the sandes of ryuers dried vppe by the heate of sommer, onely washyng the earth softly frome the same: And shall with lyke facilitate gather plentie of pearles. Certenly the reuerent antiquitie (by al the Cosmographers assent) obteyned not soo greate a benefyte of nature, nor yet aspired to the knowlege hereof, bycause there came neuer man before owte of owre knowen worlde to these vnknown nations: At the leaste, with a poure of men, by force of armes, in maner of conquest: wheras otherwyse nothyng can be gotten here, forasmuch as these nations are for the most part feuere defenders of theyr patrimonies, and cruell to straungers, in no condition admitte them otherwyse then by conquest: especially the fierce Canibales or Caribes. For these wylde hunters of men, gyue them selues to none other kynde of exercyse but onely to manhuntynge and tyllage after their maner. At the comyng therefore of owre men into theyr regions, they loke as fuerly to haue them faule into their snares as if they were hartes or wylde bores: and with no lesse confydence licke their lippes secreately in hope of their praye. If they gette the vpper hande, they eat them greedely: If they mystruste them selues to bee the weaker parte, they truste to theyr feete, and flye swyfter then the wynde. Ageyne, yf the matter bee tried on the water, aswell the women as men can dyue and swimme, as though they had byn euer brought vp and fedde in the water. It is noo maruayle therefore yf the large tracte of these regions haue byn hytherto vnknown. But nowe fithe it hath pleased God to discouer the same in owre tyme, it shall become vs to shewe owre naturall loue to mankynde and dewtie to God, to endeouore owre selues to bryng them to ciuilitie and trewe religion, to th[e]increase of Christes flocke, to the confusion of Infidels and the Deuyll theyr father who delytethe in owre destruction as he hath doone frome the begynnynge. By the good successe of these fyrst frutes, owre hope is, that the Christian religion shall streache forth her armes very farre. Which thyng shulde the sooner come to passe yf all menne to theyr poure (especially Christian Princes to whom it chiefly perteyneth) wolde put theyr handes to the plowe of the lordes vineyarde. The haruest fuerly is greate, but the woorkemen are but fewe. As we haue fayde at the begynnynge, yowre holynes shall hereafter nooryshe many myriades of broodes of chekins vnder yowre wynges. But let vs nowe returne to speake of *Beragua* beinge the weste fyde

xx. pounce weyght of wrought gold

Vaschus returneth to Dariena.

The good fortune of Vaschus.

Vaschus was turned from Goliath to Eliseus.

O flateryng fortune, look his death in the booke of the Iland[s] lately founde.

The earthe is owre general mother.

The courte of infernall Pluto.

There is a better waye then this.

The Spanyardes conquestes.

Manhunters

104

The fierseesse of the Canibales.

Owre duty to god, and naturall loue to mankynde.

Th[e]offyce of Christian prynces The haruest is great. etc.

Beragua.

Nicuesa.

of *Vraba*, and fyrst founde by *Colonus* the Admirall, then vnfortunately gouerned by *Diego Nicuesa*, and nowe lefte in maner defolate: with the other large regions of those prouinces brought from theyr wylde and beastly iudenes to ciuilitie and trewe religion.

THE FOUORTH BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.



Was determyned (moſte holy father) to haue proceded no further herein, but that one fierye ſparke yet remaynyng in my mynde, wolde not ſuffer me to ceaſe. Wheras I haue therefore declared howe *Beragua* was fyrſte fownde by *Colonus*, my thincke I ſhulde commytte a heynous cryme if I ſhuld defraude the man of the due commendations of his traauayles, of his cares and troubles, and fynally of the daungeours and perels, whiche he fuſteyned in that nauigation. Therefore in the yeare of Chriſte. 1502. in the. vi. daye of the Ides of Maye, he hoiefd vppe his ſayles and departed from the Ilandes of *Gades* with. iiii. ſhyppes of fyftie or.

iii. ſcore tunne a peece, with a hundreth threſcore and tenne men, and came with prosperous wynde to the Ilandes of *Canaria* within fiue daies folowinge, from thenſe arryuinge the. xvi. day at the Ilande of *Dominica* beinge the chiefe habitation of the Canibales, he ſayled from *Dominica* to *Hiſpaniola* in fyue other daies. Thus within the ſpace of the. xxvi. daies, with prosperous wynde and by the ſwyfte ſaule of the *Ocean* from the Eaſte to the weſt, he ſayled from Spaine to *Hiſpaniola*: Which courſe is counted of the mariners to bee no leſſe then a thouſande and two hundrethe leaques. He taryed but a whyle in *Hiſpaniola*, whether it were wyllyngly, or that he were ſo admoniſhed of the viceroye. Directing therefore his vyage from thenſe towarde the weſte, leauyng the Ilandes of *Cuba* and *Jamaica* on his ryght hande towarde the northe, he wryteth that he chaunfed vppon an Ilande more ſouthewarde then *Jamaica*, whiche th[e] inhabitants caule *Guanaffa*, ſo floryſſhinge and frutefull that it myghte ſeeme an earthlye Paradyſe. Coaſtyng alonge by the ſhores of this Ilande, he mette two of the Canoas or boates of thoſe prouinces, whiche were drawne with two naked ſlaues ageynſt the ſtreame. In theſe boates, was caryed a ruler of the Ilande with his wyfe and chyldren, all naked. The ſlaues ſeeynge owre men a lande, made ſignes to them with proude countenance in their maiſters name, to ſtande owte of the waye, and threatned them if they wolde not gyue place. Their ſympelnes is ſuche that they nother feared the multitude or poure of owre men, or the greatnes and ſtraungenes of owre ſhippes. They thought that owre men wolde haue honoured their maiſter with like reuerence as they did. Owre men had intelligence at the length that this ruler was a greate marchaunte whiche came to the marte from other coaſtes of the Ilande. For they exceryſe byinge and ſellyng by exchange with their confinies. He had alſo with him good ſtoore of ſuche ware as they ſtande in neede of or take pleaſure in: as laton belles, raſers, knyues, and hatchettes made of a certeyne ſharpe yelow bryght ſtone, with handles of a ſtronge kynd of woodde. Alſo many other neceſſary instrumentes with kychen ſtuffe and veſſelles for all neceſſary vſes. Lykewiſe ſheetes of goſſampine cotton wrought of fundrye colours. Owre men tooke hym pryſoner with all his famely. But *Colonus* commaunded hym to bee loſed ſhortely after, and the greateſt parte of his goodes to bee reſtored to wyne his fryndſhippe. Beinge here inſtructed of a lande lyinge further towarde the ſouthe, he tooke his vyage thether. Therefore lytle more then tenne myles diſtant from henſe, he founde a large lande whiche th[e] inhabitants cauled *Quiriquetana*: But he named it *Ciamba*. When he wente a lande and commaunded his chaplaine to faye maſſe on the ſea bankes, a great confluence of the naked inhabitants flocked thither ſymplye and without feare, bringyng with them plenty of meate and freſhe water, marueylyng at owre men as they had byn ſumme ſtraunge miracle. When they had preſented their giftes, they went ſumwhat backwarde and made lowe curteſy after their maner bowyng their heades and bodyes reuerently. He recompensd their gentylnes rewardyng them with other of owre thynges, as counters, braſſettes and garlandes of glaſſe and counterfecte ſtoones, lookyng glaſſes, nedelles, and pynnes, with ſuche other traſhe, whiche ſeemed vnto them precious marchaundies. In this great tracte there are two regions wherof the one is cauled *Taia* and the other *Maia*. He writeth that all that lande is very fayre and holfome by reaſon of the excellent temperatneſſe of the ayer: And that it is inferiour to no lande in frutefull ground beinge partely full of montaines, and partely large playnes: Alſo replenyſhed with many goodly trees, holfome herbes, and frutes, continuyng greene and floryſhyng all the hole yeare. It beareth alſo verye many holy trees and pyne aple trees. Alſo. vii. kyndes of date trees wherof ſumme are frutefull and ſumme baren. It bringeth furth lykewyſe of it ſelfe *Pelgoras* and wilde vynes laden with grapes euen in the wooddes emonge other trees. He ſaythe furthermore that there is ſuche abundaunce of other pleaſaunte and profitable frutes, that they paſſe not of vynes. Of one of thoſe kyndes of date trees, they make certeyne longe and brode

The fourth nauigation of Colonus the Admirall.

From Spaine to Hiſpaniola a thouſande and two hundreth leaques

The floryſſhing Ilande of Guanassa.

Simple people.

A greate marchaunt.

105

The region of Quiriquetana or Ciamba.

Gentle people.

The regions of Taia and Maia.

Seuen kyndes of date trees.
Wylde vynes.

fwoordes and dartes. These regyons beare also goffampyne trees here and there commonly in the wooddes. Lykewife *Mirobalanes* of fundry kyndes, as those which the phifitians caule *Emblicos* and *Cebulos*, *Maizium* also, *Iucca*, *Ages*, and *Battatas*, lyke vnto those whiche we haue fayde before to bee founde in other regions in these coastes. The same nooryffheth also lyons, Tygers, Hartes, Roes, Goates, and dyuers other beastes. Lykewyfe fundry kyndes of byrdes and foules: Emonge the whiche they keepe onely them to franke and feede, whiche are in colour, bygnes, and taste, muche lyke vnto owre pehennes. He faith that th[e]inhabitantes are of high and goodly stature, well lymmed and proportioned both men and women: Couerynge their priuye partes with fyne breeches of goffampine cotton wrought with dyuers colours. And that they may feeme the more cumlye and bewtifull (as they take it) they paynte their bodyes redde and blacke with the iuce of certeyne apples whiche they plante in their gardens for the same purpose. Summe of them paynte their hole bodies: summe but parte: and other summe drawe the portitures, of herbes, floures, and knottes, euery one as feemeth beste to his owne phantafye. Their language differeth vtterlye from theirs of the Ilandes nere aboute them. From these regions, the waters of the sea ranne with as full course towarde the weste, as if it had byn the faule of a fwyfte riuier. Neuerthelesse he determined to searche the Easte partes of this lande, reuoluyng in his mynde that the regions of *Paria* and *Os Draconis* with other coastes founde before toward the Easte, shulde bee nere theraboute as in deede they were. Departyng therefore from the large region of *Quiriquetana* the. xiii. daye of the calendes of September, when he had failed thirtie leaques, he founde a ryuer, without the mouth wherof he drewe freshe water in the sea. Where also the shoore was so cleane withowte rockes, that he founde grounde euery where, where he myght aptely caste anker. He writeth that the swifte course of the *Ocean* was so vehement and contrarye, that in the space of fortye dayes he coulde scarcelye fayle threcore and tenne leaques, and that with muche diffycultie with many fetches and coompafynges, syndyng him felfe to bee sumtimes repulsd and dryuen farre backe by the vyolente course of the sea when he wolde haue taken lande towarde the euenyng, leaste perhappes wanderynge in vnknownen coastes in the darckenesse of the nyght, he myghte bee in daunger of shypwracke: He writeth that in the space of eyght leaques, he found three great and fayre ryuers vpon the banckes wherof, there grewe reedes bygger then a mannes thygh. In these ryuers was also greate plentye of fyfhe and great tortoyfes: Lykewife in many places, multitudes of Crocodiles lyinge in the fande, and yanyng to take the heate of the foonne: Befyde dyuers other kyndes of beastes whervnto he gaue no names. He fayth also that the foyle of that lande is very diuers and variable: beyng sumwhere stonye and full of rough and craggie promontories or poyntes reachyng into the sea. And in other places as frutfull as maye bee. They haue also diuers kynges and rulers. In summe places they caule a kyng *Cacicus*: in other places they caule hym *Quebi*, and sumwhere *Tiba*. Suche as haue behaued them felues valiantly in the warres ageynste their enemies, and haue their faces full of scarres, they caule *Cupras*, and honour them as the antiquitie dyd the goddess whiche they cauled *Heroes*, supposed to bee the foules of fuche men as in their lyfe tyme excelled in vertue and noble actes. The common people, they caule *Chiui*: and a man, they caule *Homem*. When they faye in their language, take man, they say *Hoppa home*. After this, he came to an other ryuer apte to beare great shyppes: Before the mouthe wherof, leye foure smaule Ilandes full of florifshing and frutfull trees. These Ilandes he named *Quatuor tempora*. From hense saylyng towarde the Easte for the space of. xiii. leaques styll ageynste the vyolent course of the water, he founde twelue other smaule Ilandes. In the whiche bycause he founde a newe kynde of frutes muche like vnto owre lemondess, he cauled them *Limonares*. Wanderynge yet further the same waye for the space of. xii. leaques, he founde a great hauen enteryng into the land after the maner of a goulfe the space of three leaques, and in maner as brode, into the whiche fell a great ryuer. Here was *Nicuesa* loste afterwarde when he foughte *Beragua*: By reason wherof they cauled it *Rio de los perdidos*: that is, the ryuer of the loste men. Thus *Colonus* the Admirall yet further contynuyng his course ageynste the furye of the sea, founde manye hyghe montaynes and horrible valleys, with dyuers ryuers and hauens, from all the whiche (as he faythe) proceaded sweete sauers greatly recreatyng and comforyng nature. In so muche that in all this longe tracte there was not one of his men defeafed vntyll he came to a region whiche th[e]inhabitantes caule *Quicuri*, in the whiche is the hauen cauled *Cariai*, named *Mirobalanus* by the admyrall bycause the *Mirobalane* trees are natieue in the region therabout. In this hauen of *Cariai*, there came about two hundredth of th[e]inhabitantes to the sea fyde with euerye of them three or foure dartes in their handes: Yet of condition gentell enoughe, and not refusyng straungers. Their comyng was for none other purpose then to knowe what this newe nation mente, or what they broughte with them. When owre men had gyuen them sygnes of peace, they came swymmyng to the shyppes and defyred to barter with them by exchange. The admyrall to allure them to frendshippe, gaue them many of owre thinges: But they refused them, suspectyng summe disceate thereby bycause he wolde not receyue theirs. They wroughte all by sygnes: for one vnderstoode not a worde of the others language. Suche gyftes as were sente them, they left on the shore and wolde take no part therof. They are of fuche ciuilitye and humanitye, that they esteeme it more honorable to gyue then to take. They sente owre men two younge women beinge vyrgines, of commendable fauour and goodly stature,

Mirobalanes
Byrdes and foules
People of goodly stature
They paynt their bodyes
The swyfte course of the sea from the East to the West.
Paria.
Fresshe water in the sea.
Fetches and compasinges
106
Faire ryuers.
Great reedes
Great tortoysses.
Dyuers languages
Heroes.
Quatuor tempora.
Twelue Ilandes named Limonares
Rio de los perdidos.
The region of Quicuri.
The hauen of Cariai or Mirobalanus
Ciuile and humane people

fygnifyinge vnto them that they myghte take them away with them if it were their pleasure. These women after the maner of their countrey, were covered from their ancles sumwhat aboute their priuie partes with a certeyne clothe made of goffampine cotton. But the men are al naked. The women vse to cutte their heare: But the men lette it growe on the hynder partes of their heades, and cutte it on the fore parte. Their longe heare, they binde vppe with fyllettes, and winde it in fundry rowles as owre maydes are accustomed to do. The virgins which were fente to the Admirall he decked in fayre apparell, and gaue them many gyftes, and fente them home ageyne. But lykewise all these rewardes and apparel they left vppon the shore because owre men had refused their gyftes. Yet tooke he two men away with him (and those very wyllingly) that by lernyng the Spanyshe tonge, he might afterwarde vse them for interpretours. He considered that the tractes of these coastes were not greatly troubeled with vehement motions or ouerflowynges of the sea, forasmuche as trees growe in the sea not farre frome the shore, euen as they doo vppon the bankes of ryuers. The which thyng also other doo affirme whiche haue latelyer searched thof: coastes, declaring that the sea riseth and fauleth but lyttle there aboute. He sayth furthermore, that in the prospecte of this lande, there are trees engendred euen in the sea, which after that they are growen to any height, bende downe the toppes of theyr branches into the grounde: which embrasing them causeth other branches to spryng out of the same, and take roote in the earth, bringyng fourth trees in theyr kynde successefully as dyd the fyrst roote from whense they had theyr originall, as do also the fettes of vines when onely bothe the endes therof are put into the grounde. Plinie in the twelfth booke of his natural historie maketh mention of fuche trees, describyng them to bee on the lande, but not in the sea. The Admirall wryteth also that the lyke beastes are engendered in the coastes of *Cariiai*, as in other prouinces of these regions, and such as we haue spoken of before. Yet that there is one founde here in nature much differinge from the other. This beaste is of the byggenes of a greate moonkeye, but with a tayle muche longer and bygger. It lyueth in the wooddes, and remoueth from tree to tree in this maner. Hangyng by the tayle vppon the braunche of a tree, and gatheryng strenght by swayinge her bodye twyfe or thryfe too and fro, she casteth her selfe from branche to branche and so from tree to tree as though she flew. An archer of owres hurt one of them. Who perceauinge her selfe to be wounded, leapt downe from the tree, and fiercely fet on hym which gaue her the wounde, in so muche that he was fayne to defende hym selfe with his swoorde. And thus by chaunce cuttyng of one of her armes, he tooke her, and with muche a doo brought her to the ships where within a whyle, she waxed tame. Whyle shee was thus kepte and bownde with cheynes, certeyne other of our hunters hadde chafed a wyld boore out of the maryshes nere vnto the sea fyde. For hunger and defyre of fleshe, caused them to take double pleasure in huntyng. In this meane tyme other which remayned in the shippes, goyng a lande to recreate them felues, tooke this moonkey with them. Who, as soone as shee had espied the boore, fet vp her brystels and made towarde her. The boore lykewyse shooke his bristels and whette his teethe. The moonkey furiously inuaded the boore, wrapyng her tayle about his body, and with her arme referued of her victourer, helde hym so fast aboute the throte, that he was suffocate. These people of *Cariiai*, vse to drye the deade bodyes of theyr princes vppon hurdels, and so referue them inuohed in the leaues of trees. As he went forwarde about twentie leagues from *Cariiai*, he founde a goulfe of such largenes that it conteyned. xii. leagues in compasse. In the mouth of this goulfe were foure lyttle Ilandes so nere togyther, that they made a safe hauen to enter into the goulfe. This goulfe is the hauen which we sayde before to be cauled *Cerabaro* of th[e] inhabitants. But they haue nowe lerned that only the lande of the one fyde therof, lyeing on the ryght hande at the enteryng of the goulfe, is cauled by that name. But that on the lefte fyde, is cauled *Aburema*. He saythe that all this goulfe is ful of fruteful Ilandes wel replenyfshed with goodly trees: And the grounde of the sea to bee verye cleane without rockes, and commodious to cast anker: Lykewyse the sea of the goulfe to haue greate abundance of fyfhe: and the lande of both the fydes to bee inferior to none in frutfulness. At his fyrst arryuyng, he espyed two of th[e] inhabitants hauyng cheynes about theyr neckes, made of ouches (which they caule *Guanines*), of base golde artificially wrought in the formes of Eagles, and lions, with dyuers other beastes and foules. Of the two Cariaians whiche he brought with hym from *Cariiai*, he was informed that the regions of *Cerabaro* and *Aburema* were rych in golde: And that the people of *Cariiai* haue all theyr golde frome thense for exchange of other of theyr thynges. They towlde hym also, that in the same regions there are fyue vyllages not farre from the sea fyde, whose inhabitantes apply them felues onely to the gathering of gold. The names of these vyllages are these: *Chirara*, *Puren*, *Chitaza*, *Iureche*, *Atamea*. All the men of the prouince of *Cerabaro*, go naked, and are paynted with dyuers coloures. They take greate pleasure in wearyng garlandes of floures, and crownes made of the clawes of Lions and Tygers. The women couer onely theyr priuie partes with a fyllet of goffampine cotton. Departyng from hense and coastyng stylly by the same shore for the space of. xviii. leagues, he came to another ryuer, where he espyed aboute three hundreth naked men in a company. When they sawe the shippes drawe neare the lande, they cryed out aloude, with cruell countenaunces shakynge theyr wooden swoordes and hurlyng dartes, takyng also water in theyr mouthes and

107

[Trees grow by the sea] syde.

Trees growyng in the sea after a straunge sort.

Plinie.

A straunge kynde of moonkeys.

A moonkey feyghteth with a man.

A conflict betwene a monkey and a wyld boore.

The bodyes of kynges dried and reserued.

Cerabaro.

Aburema.

Cheynes of golde.

Plentie of golde. Fiue vyllages rych in gold.

Crownes of beasts claws.

108

fpoutyng the fame ageynst our men: wherby they feemed to inſinuate that they woolde receaue no condition of peace or haue owght to doo with them. Here he commaunded certeyne pieces of ordinaunce to be ſhot of toward them: Yet ſo to ouerſhute them, that none myght be hurt therby. For he euer determyned to deale quietly and peaceably with theſe newe nations. At the noyſe therfore of the gunnes and fyght of the flyer, they fell downe to the grounde, and defyred peace. Thus enteringe into further frendſhippe, they exchanged their cheynes and ouches of golde for glaſſes and hankes belles and ſuch other marchandies. They vſe drummes or tymbrels made of the ſhelles of certeyne ſea fyffhes, wherewith they encourage theym ſelues in the warres. In this tract are theſe ſeuē ryuers, *Acateba*, *Quareba*, *Zobroba*, *Aiaguitin*, *Vrida*, *Durriba*, *Beragua*, in all the whiche, golde is founde. They defende them ſelues ageynſte rayne and heate with certeyne great leaues of trees in the ſleade of clokes. Departinge from henſe, he ſearched the coaſtes of *Ebetere* and *Embigar*, into the which faule the goodly ryuers of *Zohoran* and *Cubigar*: And here ceaſeth the plentie and fruteſulnes of golde, in the tracte of fifty leagues or there about. From henſe onely three leagues diſtant, is the rocke whiche in the vnfortunate diſcourſe of *Nicueſa* we fayde was cauled of owre men *Pignonem*. But of th[e] inhabitants the Region is cauled *Vibba*. In this tracte alſo aboute fyxe leagues frome thenſe, is the hauen which *Colonus* cauled *Portus Bellus* (wherof we haue ſpoken before) in the region whiche th[e] inhabitants caule *Xaguaguara*. This region is very peopulous: but they go all naked. The kyng is paynted with blacke colours, but all the people with redde. The kyng and ſeuē of his noble men, had euery of them a lyttle plate of golde hangyng at their noſethrilles downe vnto theyr lypes. And this they take for a cumly ornamente. The menne incloſe theyr priuie members in a ſhell: And the women couer theyrs with a fyllet of goſſampine cotton tyed about theyr loynes. In theyr gardens they nooryſſhe a frute muche lyke the nutte of a pine tree: the whiche (as we haue fayde in an other place) groweth on a ſhrubbe muche lyke vnto an archichoke: But the frute is muche ſofter, and meate for a kyng. Alſo certeyne trees whiche beare gourdes, wherof we haue ſpoken before. This tree, they caule *Hibuero*. In theſe coaſtes they mette fumtymes with Crocodiles lyeing on the ſandes, the whiche when they fled, or tooke the water, they leſte a very ſweete fauour behynde them ſweete then muſke or *Caſſoreum*. When I was ſente ambaffadour for the catholike king of Caſtile to the Soltane of Babilon or Alcayer in Egipte, th[e] inhabitants nere vnto the ryuer of *Nilus* toulde me the like of their female Crocodiles. Affyrmyng furthermore that the fatte or fewette of them is equall in ſweetnes with the pleaſaunte gummes of Arabie. But the Admirall was nowe at the length enforced of neceſſytye to departe from henſe, aſwell for that he was no longer able to abyde the contrarye and vyolente courſe of the water, as alſo that his ſhyppes were daily more and more putrified and eaten throwgh with certeyne wormes whiche are engendred of the warmeſnes of the water in all thoſe tractes nere vnto the Equinoctial line. The Venetians caule theſe woormes *Biffas*. The ſame are alſo engendred in two hauens of the cite of *Alexandria* in Egipte, and deſtroye the ſhyppes if they lye longe at anker. They are a cubet in length, and ſumwhat more: not paſſyng the quantitie of a fynger in bygneſſe. The Spanyſhe mariner cauleth this peſtilence *Broma*. *Colonus* therfore whom before the great monſters of the ſea coulde not feare, nowe fearyng this *Broma*, beyng alſo ſore vexed with the contrary faule of the ſea, directed his courſe with the *Ocean* towarde the weſt, and came firſt to the ryuer *Hiebra*, diſtant onely two leagues from the ryuer of *Beragua*, bycauſe that was commodious to harborowe great ſhippes. This region is named after the riuier, and is called *Beragua* the leſſe: Bycauſe bothe the ryuers are in the dominion of the kyng which inhabiteth the region of *Beragua*. But what chaunfed vnto hym in this vyage on the ryghte hande and on the lefte, lette vs nowe declare. Whye therfore *Colonus* the Admirall remayned yet in the ryuer *Hiebra*, he ſent *Bertholomeus Colonus* his brother and Lieuetaunaute of *Hiſpaniola*, with the ſhyppes boates and threſcore and. viii. men to the ryuer of *Beragua*, where the king of the region beinge naked and painted after the maner of the cuntry, came towarde them with a great multitude of men waytyng on hym, but all vnarmed and without weapons, gyuinge alſo fynnes of peace. When he approached nerer, and entered communication with owre men, certeyne of his gentelmen neareſte aboute his perſon, rememberinge the maieſtie of a king, and that it floode not with his honour to bargaen ſtondyng, tooke a greate ſloone owte of the ryuer, waſſhyng and rubbyng it veary decently, and ſo put it vnder hym with humble reuerence. The kyng thus fyttyng, ſeemed with fynnes and tokens to inſinuate that it ſhuld be lawful for owre men to ſearche and viewe al the ryuers within his dominion. Wherefore, the vi. day of the Ides of February, leauing his boates with certeyne of his company, he wente by lande a foote from the bankes of *Beragua* vntyl he came to the ryuer of *Duraba*, whiche he affirmeth to be richer in gold then eyther *Hiebra* or *Beragua*. For gold is engendred in al the riuers of that land. In ſo muche that amonge the rootes of the trees growyng by the bankes of the ryuers, and amonge the ſtones left of the water, and alſo where ſo euer they dygged a hole or pyt in the grounde not paſte the deapthe of a handfull and a halfe, they founde the earthe taken owte therof, myxte with golde: Where vpon he determyned to faſten his foote there and to inhabyte. Whiche thyng the people of the cuntry perceauyng and ſmellyng what inconuenyence and myſchiefe myght thereof enfewe to their cuntry if they ſhulde permitte ſtraungers to plante their habitation there, aſſembled a great army, and with horrible owte crye aſſayled owre

Spytefull people.

Guns make peace.

Seuen golden ryuers

Note, where the plentie of golde endeth

Pignonem.

Vibba.

Portus Bellus.

Paynted people.

A ſtrange ſyght.

A ſhel in the ſteede of a codpiece.

Crocodiles of ſweete ſauour. Alcayr or Babilon in Egipt

Shippes eaten with wormes.

Alexandria in Egipte.

Broma.

Hiebra.

Beragua.

109

How the king of Beragua enterteyned the lyeuetaunaute.

Their reuerence to the kyng.

Golde in the ryuer Duraba.

Great plenty of golde.

Slynges and dartes.

Liberty more esteemed then ryches.

The Spanyardes are dryuen to flight.

The Ilande of Iamaica.

A myserable case.

110

Necessytie hath no lawe howe farre lyfe is to bee esteemed.

A daungerous enterpryse.

Sanctus Dominicus.

Landes found by Colonus.

Temperate regions and holsome aier

Cerabaro.
Hiebra.
Beragua.
Experte myners.

A godly nature in golde.

Golden haruest.

men (who had nowe begoonne to buylde houses) soo desperately that they were scarcely able to abyde the fyrste brunte. These naked barbarians at their fyrst approche, vfed onely slynges and dartes: But when they came nearer to hande strookes, they foughte with their wooden swoordes whiche they caule *Machanas*, as wee haue sayd before. A man wolde not thinke what great malice and wrath was kyndeled in their hartes ageynst owre men: And with what desperate myndes they fought for the defenfe of their lybertie whiche they more esteeme then lyfe or rycheffe. For they were nowe so voyde of all feare, and contemnyng death, that they neyther feared longe bowes or crossebowes, nor yet (whiche is mooste to be marueyled) were any thyng discouraged at the terryble noyse of the gunnes shotte of from the shyppes. They retyred once. But shortly after encreasyng their noubmer, they returned more fiercely then at the fyrst. They wolde haue byn contented to haue receyued owre men frendly as straungers, but not as inhabitours. The more instante that owre men were to remaine, so muche the greater multitude of bortherers flocked togyther dayly, disturbyng them both nyght and daye sumtymes on the one syde and sumtymes on the other. The shypps lying at anker neare vnto the shore, warded them on the backe halfe. But at the length they were fayne to forsake this lande, and retourne backe the same way by the which they came. Thus with much diffyculty and danger, they came to the Ilande of *Iamaica* lyenge on the fouth syde of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*, with their shyppes as full of holes as sieues, and so eaten with wormes, as though they had byn bored through with wimbles. The water entered so faste at the ryftes and holes, that if they had not with the paynefull labour of their handes emptied the same as faste, they were lyke to haue perysshed. Where as yet by this meanes they arryued at *Iamaica*, although in maner halfe deade. But their calamitie ceased not here. For as fast as their shyppes leaked, their strengthe dimynished so that they were no longer able to keepe theym from synkyng. By reason wherof, faulynge into the handes of the barbarians, and inclosed withowte hope of departure, they led their lyues for the space of tenne monthes emong the naked people more myserably then euer dyd *Achemenides* emonge the gyantes cauled *Cidopes*: rather luyng then beinge eyther contented or satisfied with the strange meates of that Ilande: and that onely at such tymes as pleased the barbarians to giue them part of theirs. The deadly enmity and malice whiche these barbarous kinges beare one ageynst an other, made greatly with owre men. For at suche tymes as they attempted warre ageynst their bortherers they woold sumtymes gyue owre men parte of theyr breade to ayde them. But howe myserable and wretched a thyng it is to lyue onely with breade gotten by beggyng, yowre holynesse maye easlye coniecture: Especially where all other accustomed foode is lackynge, as wyne, oyle, flesshe, butter, chiefe, and milke, wherwith the stomakes of owr people of Europe haue euer byn noorished euen from their cradelles. Therfore as necessity is subiecte to no lawe, so doothe it enforce men to attempte desperate aduentures. And those the soner, which by a certeyne nobyltye of nature do no further esteeme lyfe then it is ioyned with summe felicity. *Bertholomeus Colonus* therfore, intendynge rather to proue what god wolde do with hym and his companyons in these extremities, then any longer to abide the same, commaunded *Diegus Mendez* his steward with two guydes of that Ilande whome he had hyred with promysfes of great rewardes at their retourne, to enter into one of their canoas and take their viage to *Hispaniola*. Beyng thus tossed on the sea two and fro from rocke too rocke by reason of the shortnesse and narrownes of the canoa, they arryued at the length at the laste corner of *Hispaniola*, beynge distant from *Iamaica* fortie leagues. Here his guydes departynge from hym, returned ageine to *Colonus* for the rewardes which he had promysed them. But *Diegus Mendez* wente on forward a foote vntyll he came to the citie cauled *Sanctus Dominicus* beyng the chiefe and heade citie of the Ilande. The offycers and rulers of *Hispaniola*, beinge enformed of the matter, appoynted hym two shyppes wherwith he returned to his maister and coompanions. As he founde them, soo came they to *Hispaniola*, verye feeble and in maner naked. What chaunced of them afterwarde, I knowe not as yet. Lette vs nowe therfore leaue these particulers, and speake sumwhat more of generals. In al those tractes whiche we sayde here before to haue bynne found by *Colonus* the Admyrall, bothe he hym selfe writeth, and all his coompanyons of that vyage confesse, that the trees, herbes, and frutes, are floryshing and greene all the hole yeare, and the ayer so temperate and holesome, that of all his coompanye there neuer fell one man fycke, nor yet were vexed eyther with extreme coulde or heate for the space of fyftie leagues from the great hauen of *Cerabaro* to the ryuers of *Hiebra* and *Beragua*. Th[e] inhabitants of *Cerabaro*, and the nations whiche are betwyxte that and the sayde ryuers, applye not them selues to the gatheryng of golde but onely at certeyne tymes of the yeare: And are very experte and cunnynge herein, as are owre myners of syluer and Iren. They knowe by longe experience in what places golde is mooste abundantly engendred: as by the colour of the water of the ryuers, and suche as faule from the montaynes: And also by the colour of the earthe and stoncs. They beleue a certeyne godly nature to be in golde, forasmuche as they neuer gather it excepte they vse certeyne relygious expiations or pourgyng, as to absteyn from women, and all kyndes of plesures and delicate meates and drinkes, during all the tyme that their golden haruest lasteth. They suppose that men do naturally lyue and dye as other beastes do, and therfore honour none other thyng as god. Yet doo they praye to the foonne, and honour it when it ryfeth. But lette vs nowe speake of the montaines and situation of these landes

From all the sea bankes of these regyons, exceding great and hyghe mountaynes are feene towarde the Southe, yet reachynge by a continuall tracte from the Easte into the weste. By reason wherof I suppose that the two greate seas (wherof I haue spoken larg[e]ly before) are deuided with these montaynes as it were with bulwarkes, leaste they shoulde ioyne and repugne, as Italye deuideth the sea cauled *Tirrhenum*, from the sea Adriatyke, which is nowe commonly cauled the goulfe of Venes.

For whiche waye foo euer they sayled from the poynt cauled *Promontorium*, *S. Augustini* (whiche perteyneth to the Portugales and prospecteth ageynste the sea Atlantike) euen vnto *Vraba* and the hauen *Cerabaro*, and to the furthest landes found hitherto westwarde, they had euer greate mountaynes in fyghte both nere hande and farre of, in all that longe rafe. These mountaynes were in fume place, smooth, pleasaunt and frutfull, full of goodly trees and herbes: And sumwhere, hygh, rowgh, ful of rockes, and baren, as chaunfeth in the famous mountaynes of *Taurus* in *Asia*, and also in dyuers coastes of our mountaynes of *Apennini*, and suche other of lyke byggenesse. The rydgies also of these mountaynes are diuided with goodly and fayre valleis. That part of the mountaynes which includeth the lymettes of *Beragua*, is thought to be hygher then the clowdes, in so much that (as they faye) the tops of them can feldome bee feene for the multitude of thicke clowdes which are beneath the same. *Colonus* the Admirall the fyrste fynder of these regions, affirmeth that the toppes of the mountaynes of *Beragua* are more then fiftie myles in heygth. He sayth furthermore that in the same region at the rotes of the mountaynes the way is open to the fouth sea, and compareth it as it were betwene Venice and *Genua*, or *Ianua* as the Genues wyll haue it cauled, whiche fable that theyr citie was buylded of *Ianus*. He affirmeth also that this lande reacheth fouth towarde the fouth: And that from hense it taketh the begynnyng of breadth, lyke as from the Alpes owte of the narowe thygh of Italy, we see the large and mayne landes of Fraunce, Germanye, and Pannonye, to the Sarmatians and Scythians, euen vnto the mountaynes and rockes of Riphea and the frozen sea, and embrace therwith as with a continuall bonde, all T[h]racia, and Grecia, with all that is included within the promontorie or poynt of *Malea* and *Hellepontus* southwarde, and the sea *Euxinus* and the maryfishes of *Mæotis* in *Scythia* northwarde. The Admirall supposeth, that on the lefte hande in saylynge towarde the weste, this lande is ioyned to *India* beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*: And that on the ryght hande towarde the North, it bee extended to the frofen sea, beyonde the Hyperboreans and the North pole: So that both the seas (that is to meane that fouth sea which we fayde to bee founde by *Vaschus*, and owre Ocean) shulde ioyne and meete in the corners of that lande: And that the waters of these seas doo not onely inclose and compasse the same without diuision as Europe is inclosed with the seas of *Hellepontus* and *Tanais*, with the frofen Ocean and owre sea of *Tyrrhenum* with the Spanysh seas. But in my opinion, the vehement course of the Ocean toward the weste, doth signifie and lette that the fayde two seas shulde not so ioyne together: But rather that that land is adherent to the firme landes towarde the Northe, as we haue fayde before. It shall suffice to haue fayde thus muche of the length hereof. Let vs nowe therefore speake sumwhat of the breadth of the same. We haue made mention before howe the fouth sea is diuided by narowe lymettes from owre Ocean, as it was proued by th[e] experience of *Vaschus Nunnex* and his coompanions which fyrst made open the way thither. But as dyuerly as the mountaynes of owre Alpes in Europe are sumwhere narowe and in fume place brode, euen so by the lyke prouidence of nature, this lande in fume parte reacheth farre in breadth, and is in other places coarcted with narowe limettes from sea to sea, with valleis also in fume places, wherby men maye passe from the one fyde to the other. Where we haue descrybed the regions of *Vraba* and *Beragua* to bee situate, these seas are diuided by smaule distaunce. Yet owght we to thynke the region which the great ryuer of *Maragnonus* runneth through, to bee very large if we shall graunt *Maragnonum* to bee a ryuer and no sea, as the freshe waters of the same owght to persuade vs. For in suche narowe caues of the earth, there can bee no swalowing goulfes of such byggenesse as to receaue or nooryshe so great abundance of water. The lyke is also to bee supposed of the great ryuer of *Dabaiba* which we fayde to bee from the corner of the goulfe of *Vraba* in fume place of fortie fathomes depth, and sumwhere fiftie: Also three myles in breadth, and so to faule into the sea. We must needes graunt that the earth is brode there, by the whiche the ryuer passeth from the hyghe mountaynes of *Dabaiba* from the Easte and not from the west. They say that this ryuer consisteth and taketh his increase of foure other ryuers faultyng from the mountaynes of *Dabaiba*. Owre men caule this ryuer *Flumen*. *S. Iohannis*. They say also that from hense it fauleth into the goulfe of *Vraba* by feuen mouthes as doothe the ryuer of *Nilus* into the sea of Egypte. Lykewyfe that in the same region of *Vraba* there are in fume places narowe streyghtes not passynge systene leagues: and the same to bee saluage and without any passage by reason of dyuers maryfishes and desolate wayes, which the Latines caule *Lamas*: But the Spanyardes accordynge to their varietie, caule them *Tremedales*, *Tranpales*, *Cenegales*, *Sumideros*, and *Zahondaderos*. But before we passe any further, it shall not bee greatly from owr purpose to declare from whense these mountaynes of *Dabaiba* haue theyr name accordynge vnto th[e] antiquities of th[e] inhabitants. They faye therefore that *Dabaiba* was a woman of greate magnanimitie and wyfedome emonge theyr prediceffours in owlde tyme: whom in her lyfe, all th[e] inhabitants of those prouinces did greatly reuerence, and beinge deade gaue her diuine honour and

Hyghe and greate
mountaynes.

Tyrrhenum is
nowe cauled
Tuscane
Cap. S. Augustini.
Vraba.
Cerabaro.
Frutful
mountaynes.
Apennini are
mountaynes
which diuide
Italy into. ii.
partes
Beragua
The mountaynes
of *Beragua* higher
then the clowdes.
Mountaynes of
fiftie miles heygth.
111

Ianus otherwyse
cauled *Iaphet*, the
son of *Noe*.

Italy is lyke vnto
a legge in the
sea, and the
mountaynes of the
alpes, are in the
thyghe thereof

Colonus his
opinion of the
supposed
Continent.

By this coniecture,
the way shuld be
open to *Cathay* by
the hiperboreans

Looke the
nauigation of
Cabote. deca[de].
iii. lib. vi.

The breadth of
the lande

The regions of
Vraba and
Beragua.

The greate ryuer
Maragnonus.

The greate ryuer
Dabaiba, or sancty
Iohannis.

The ryers haue
theyr increase
from the sprynges
of the montaynes.

The ryuer of *Nilus*:
in Egypte.

Marishes and
desolate wayes.
A superstitious
opinion of
th[e] originall of
mountaines of
Dabaiba.

112

Dragons and crocodiles in the marshes

The hauen Cerabaro.

Twentie golden ryuers.

Precious stones.

A precious diemond of excedyng bygnes.

Topases.

The Spanyardes contemne effeminate plesures

Sweete sauours.

A similitude prouing great plentie of golde and precious stones.

The hauen of Sancta Martha. Cariai.

The heroical factes of the Spaniardes.

named the region after her name, beleuyng that shee fendeth thunder and lyghtnyng to destroy the frutes of the earth yf shee bee angered, and to fend plentie if shee bee well pleased. This superstition hathe byn persuaded them by a craftie kynde of men vnder pretense of religion to th[e] intent that they might enioye fuche gyftes and offeringes as were brought to the place where shee was honoured. This is sufficient for this purpose. They say furthermore that the maryshes of the narowe lande wherof we haue spoken, bryng foorth great plentie of Crocodiles, dragons, battes, and gnattes beinge very hurtfull. Therefore when so euer they take any iorney towarde the fouth, they go owte of the way towarde the mountaynes, and eschewe the regions neare vnto those perelous fennes or maryshes. Some thinke that there is a valley lyinge that way that the ryuer runneth which owre men caule *Rio de los perdidos*, that is, the ryuer of the lost men (so named by the misfortune whiche there befell to *Nicuesa* and his company) and not far distant from the hauen *Cerabaro* whiche diuideth those mountaynes towarde the south. But let vs nowe fynishe this booke with a fewe other thynges woorthy to bee noted. They say therefore that on the ryght hande and lefte hande frome *Dariena*, there are twentie ryuers in all the whiche, greate plentie of golde is founde. Beinge demaunded what was the cause why they brought no greater abundance of golde from thense, they answered that they lacked myners: And that the men which they tooke with them from Spayne thither, were not accustomed to laboure, but for the moste parte brought vp in the warres. This lande seemeth also to promesse many precious stones. For besyde those which I sayde to bee founde neare vnto *Cariiai* and *Sancta Martha*, one *Andreas Moralis* a pylot (who had trauallyed those coastes with *Iohannes de la Coffa* whyle he yet lyued) had a precious diemond which he bought of a naked younge man in the region of *Cumana* in the prouince of *Paria*. This stone was as longe as two ioyntes of a mans middell fynger, and as bygge as the fyrst ioynte of the thumme: beinge also paynted on euery fyde, consistyng of eyght squares perfectly formed by nature. They say that with this they made scarres in anuilles and hammers, and brake the teethe of fyles, the stone remainyng vnperysshed. The younge man of *Cumana*, wore this stone aboute his necke emonge other ouches, and foulded it to *Andreas Moralis* for fyue of our counterfect stones made of glasse of dyuers colours wherwith the ignorant younge man was greatly deluted. They founde also certeyne topases on the shore. But th[e] estimation of golde was so farre entered into the heades of owre men, that they had no regarde to stones. Also the most part of the Spanyardes, do lawgh them to scorne which vse to weare many stones: specially such as are common: Iudginge it to bee an effeminate thyng, and more meete for women then men. The noble men onely when they celebrate solemne mariages, or set forth any triumphes, weare cheynes of gold byset with precious stones, and vse fayre apparell of fylke embrothered with golde intermixt with pearles and precious stones: And not at other tymes. They thynke it no lesse effeminate for men to smell of the sweete fauours of Arabie: And iudge hym to bee infected with sum kynde of fylthy lechery, in whom they smell the fauour of muske or *Castoreum*. But lyke as by one apple taken from a tree, we may perceyue the tree to bee frutfull, and by one fysh taken in a ryuer, we may knowe that fysh is ingendered in the same, euen so, by a lyttel gold, and by one stone, we owght to consyder that this lande bringeth forthe great plentie of golde and precious stones. What they haue found in the porte of *Sancta Martha* in the region of *Cariiai* when the hole nauye passed therby vnder the gouernaunce of *Petrus Arias* and his company with certeine other of the kynges offycers, I haue sufficiently declared in his place. To be shorte therefore, all thynges do so floryshe, growe, encrease, and prosper, that the laste are euer better then the fyrste. And surely to declare my opinion herin, what so euer hath heretofore byn discovered by the famous trauallyes of *Saturnus* and *Hercules*, with such other whom the antiquitie for their heroical factes honoured as goddes, seemeth but lyttell and obscure if it be compared to the Spanyardes victorious laboures. Thus I byd yowre holynes fare well, desyryng yowe to certisyne me howe yowe lyke these fyrst frutes of the *Ocean*, that beyng encouraged with yowre exhortations, I maye the gladlyer and with lesse tedioufnesse write fuche thynges as shal chance hereafter.

113

THE FYFT BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.



L fuche lyuyng creatures as vnder the cerle of the moone bringe forthe any thyng, are accustomed by th[e] instincte of nature as soone as they are deluyered of their byrthe, eyther to clofe vppe the matrice, or at the leaste to bee quyete for a space. But owre mooste frutefull Ocean and newe woorld, engendereth and bringeth furthe dayly newe byrthes wherby men of great wytte, and especially fuche as are studyous of newe and meruelous thynges, may haue sumwhat at hand wherwith to feede their myndes. If yowre holynes do aske to what purpose is al this, ye shal vnderstand, that I had scarcely fynysshed the historye of fuche thynges as chaunfed to *Vaschus Nunnez* and his companye in their vyage to the fouth sea, when foodenly there came

newe letters from *Petrus Arias* the newe gouernour whom the kyng had appoynted the yeare before with an army of men and a nauye of shippes to sayle to these newe landes. He sygnifyeth by his letters, that he with his nauye and company, arryued all safelye. Furthermore, *Iohannes Cabedus* (whome yowre holynes at the requeste of the moste catholyke kyng had created bysshoppe of that prouynce of *Dariena*) and three other of the chiefe offycers ioined in commission to be his assyflance, as *Alfonfus de Ponte*, *Diegus Marques*, and *Iohannes de Taura*, confirmed the same letters and subscribed them with their names. The nauyagation therfore of *Petrus Arias*, was in this maner. The daye before the Ides of Apryll, in the yeare of Christe. 1514. he hoysed vpp his sayles in the towne of saincte *Lucar de Barrameda*, fytuate in the mouthe of the ryuer *Betis*, whiche the Spaniardes nowe caule *Guadalchebir*. The seuen Ilandes of *Canaria* are about foure hundreth myles distant from the place where this riuer fauleth into the sea. Summe thinke that these are the Ilandes which the owlde writers did caule the fortunate Ilandes. But other thynke the contrary. The name of these Ilandes, are these. The two whiche appere fyrste in syght, are named *Lanzelota* and *Fortisuentura*. On the backehalfe of these, lyeth *Magna Canaria* or *Grancanaria*. Beyond that is *Tenerife*: and *Gomera* sumwhat towards the northe frome that. *Palma* and *Ferrea*, lye behynde as it were a bulwarke to all the other. *Petrus Arias* therfore, arriued at *Gomera* the eyghte daye after his departure, with a nauye of. xvii. shippes and a. M. [thousand] and fyue hundreth men, although there were onely a thousand and two hundreth assygned hym by the kynges letters. It is sayde furthermore that he lefte behynd hym more then two thoufande verye pensyue and fyghyng that they also myght not be receaued, proferyng them selues to go at their owne charges. He taried. xvi. dayes in *Gomera* to th[e]intente to make prouyfyon of fuell and freshe water: But chiefly to repayre his shippes beyng fore brofed with tempestes, and especially the gouernours shippe whiche had loste the rudder. For these Ilandes are a commodious reflyng place for all fuche as intende to attempte any nauygations in that mayne sea. Departyng from hense in the nones of Maye, he fawe no more lande vntyll the thirde daye of Iune, at the whiche he arriued at *Dominica* an Ilande of the *Canibales*, being distant from *Gomera* aboute eyght hundreth leaques. Here he remayned foure dayes, makinge newe prouision of freshe water and fuell, duryng whiche tyme he fawe no man nor yet any steppes of men: But founde plentie of sea crabbes and greate lyfartes. From hense he sayled by the Ilandes of *Matinina* (otherwyse cauled *Madanino*) *Guadalupea*, and *Galanta* (otherwyse cauled *Galana*) of all whiche, we haue spoken in the fyrste decade. He passed also through the sea of herbes or weedes, continuing a long traete. Yet nother he, nor *Colonus* the Admyrall (who fyrste founde these Ilandes and sayled through this sea of weedes) haue declared anye reason howe these weedes shoulde coome. Summe thynke the sea too be verye muddye there, and that these weedes are engendered in the bottome therof, and so beyng loofed, to ascende to the vppermoste parte of the water, as wee see oftentymes chaunce in certeyne stondyng pooles, and sumtymes also in greate ryuers. Other suppose that they are not engendered there, but to bee beaten from certeyne rockes by the vyolence of the water in tempestes. And thus they leaue the matter in dowte: Neyther haue they yet any certeyne experyence whether they flycke faste and gyue place to the shippes, or wander loofe vpon the water. But it is to bee thought that they are engendered there. For otherwyse they shulde bee dryuen togyther on heapes by th[e]ympulsyon of the shippes euen as a beafome gathereth the swepynges of a house, and shulde also lette the course of the shippes. The fourth day after that he departed frome *Dominica*, the hyghe mountaynes couered with snowe (wherof we haue spoken in the seconde decade) appered vnto hym. They saye that there the seas runne as fwyftlye towards the weste, as it were a ryuer faulyng from the toppes of hyghe montaynes: Although they sayled not directly toward the west, but inclined sumwhat to the south. From these montaynes fauleth the ryuer of *Gaira*, famous by the slaughter of owre men at such tyme as *Rodericus Colmenares* passed by those coastes as we haue sayde before. Lykewyse many other fayre ryuers haue their originall from the same montaynes. This prouynce (in the whiche is, also the regyon of *Caramairi*) hath in it two notable hauens, of the which owre men named the one *Carthago* or *Carthagena*, and the other *Sancta Martha*, the region wherof, th[e]inhabitanes caule *Saturma*. The porte of *Sancta Martha*, is nearer to the montaynes couered with snowe cauled *Montes Niuales*: for it is at the rootes of the same montaynes. But the hauen of *Carthago*, is more westewarde aboute fyftie leaques. He writeth marueylous thynges of the hauen of *Sancta Martha*, whiche they also confirme that came lately from thense: Of the which younge *Vesputius* is one to whom *Americus Vesputius* his vncler (being a Florentine borne) left the exact knowlege of the mariners facultie, as it were by inheritance after his death for he was a very expert maister in the knowledge of his carde, his compasse, and the eleuation of the pole starre with all that pertaineth therto. This younge *Vesputius* was assygned by the kyng to bee one of the maisters of the gouernours shippe, bicause he was cunninge in iudgyng the degrees of the eleuation of the pole starre by the quadrante. For the charge of gouernyng the rudder, was chieflye commytted to one *Iohannes Serranus* a Spaniarde, who had oftentymes ouer runne those coastes. *Vesputius* is my verye familiar frende, and a wyttie younge man in whose company I take great pleasure, and therefore vse hym oftentymes for my gyste. He hath also made many vyages into these coastes, and

The bysshop of Dariena.

The nauigation of Petrus Arias.

Saint Lucar.

The Iland of Canarie.

Prouision of freshe water and fuell.

The Iland of Dominica.

Guadalupea, otherwyse cauled Carucueria, or Queraquiera.

The sea of herbes.

114

These mountaynes are cauled Montes Niuales or Serra Neuata, decade ii. liber. i. and ii.

The swyfte course of the sea towards the west.

The ryuer Gaira. Caramairi. Carthago.

Saturma.

Mountaynes couered with snowe.

Americus Vesputius.

The stoutnes of
the Barbarians.

The Canibales
feyght in the
water.

The vse of gunnes.

The generacion of
thunder and
lyghtnyng.

Meteora.

Venemous arrowes

115

Plentie of fyssh.

Cunnyng
fysshers.

Theyr household
stuffe.

Tap[e]stry.

A straunge
phantasy.

This is he whom
Cardanus praiseth.

Precious stones
The Smaragde is
the trew emerde

Another kind
of amber is founde
in whales.

Gold and brasile.

Marchasites are
flowers of metals,
by the colours
wherof, the kyndes
of metals are
known.

These locustes
burne the corne
with toching and
deuoure the
residewe they are
in India of. iiii.
foote length.

diligently noted fuche thinges as he hath feene. *Petrus Arias* therfore writeth, and he confyrmeth the same, that th[e]inhabitanes of these regyons tooke their originall of the Caribes or Canibales, as appeared by the desperate fiercenes and crueltie which they oftentimes shewed to owre men when they passed by their coastes. Suche stoutenes and fortitude of mynde is naturallye engendered in these naked Barbarians, that they feared not to assaile owre hole nauy and to forbyd them to coome a land. They feyght with venemous arrowes as we haue fayde before. Perceauynge that owre men contempned their threatnynges, they ranne furiously into the sea, euen vppe to the breastes, nothyng fearinge eyther the bygnes or multitude of owre shyppes, but ceafed not continually beinge thus in the water, to cast dartes and shute their venemous arrowes as thicke as hayle: In fo much that owre men had bynne in great daunger if they had not byn defended by the cages or pauiffes of the shyppes and their targettes. Yet were two of them wounded whiche died shortly after. But this conflycte continued so sharpe, that at the length owre men were enforced to shute of their byggest pieces of ordinaunce with hayleshotte: At the slaughter and terrible noyse wherof the barbarians beyng fore difcomfited and shaken with feare, thynkynge the same to be thunder and lyghtnyng, tourned their backs and fledde amayne. They greatly feare thunder bycause these regions are oftentimes vexed with thunder and lyghtnyng by reason of the hyghe montaynes and nearenesse of the same to the region of the ayer wherin such ferie tempestes are engendered which the philosphers caule *Meteora*. And all be it that owre men had nowe dryuen their enemyes to flyght, and fawe them disparcelled and owte of order, yet dowted they and were of dyuers opinions whether they shulde pursue them or not On the one partie, shame pricked them forward, and on the other fyde feare caused them to caste many perelles, especially confyderyng the venemous arrowes whiche these barbarians canne direct so certeynely. To departe from theym with a drye foote (as faithe the prouerbe) with fo great a nauye and fuche an armye, they reputed it as a thyng greatly foundynge to their reproche and dishonour. At the length therfore shame ouercommyng feare, they pursued them and came to land with their shippe boates. The gouernoure of the nauie, and also *Vesputius* doo wryte, that the hauen is no lesse then three leagues in compasse, beinge also safe without rockes, and the water therof so clere, that a man may see pybble stoness in the bottome twentie cubettes deape. They faye lykewyse that there fauleth twoo fayre ryuers of freshe water into the hauen: but the same to bee meeter to beare the canoas of these prouinces then anye bygger vessels. It is a delectable thyng to heare what they tel of the plentie and varietie, and also of the pleafaunt taft of the fysshes afwel of these riuers as of the sea there about. By reason wherof they founde here many fyssher boates and nettes woonderfully wrought of the stalkes of certeyne herbes or weedes dried and tawed and wrethed with cordes of spunne gossampine cotton. For the people of *Caramairi*, *Gaira*, and *Saturma*, are very cunnyng in fyshynge, and vse to fell fyssh to theyr bortherers for exchange of fuche thynges as they lacke. When owre men had thus chased the Barbaryans from the sea coastes, and hadde nowe entered into theyr houfes, they assayed them with newe skyrmushes, especially when they fawe them faule to fackynge and spoylyng, and theyr wyues and chylidren taken captiue. Theyr householde stuffe was made of great reedes which growe on the sea bankes and the stalkes of certeyne herbes beaten and afterward made harde. The floures therof were strewed with herbes of fundry coloures; And the waules hanged with a kynde of tap[e]stry artificially made of gossampine cotton, and wrought with pictures of Lions, Tygers, and Eagles. The doores of theyr houfes and chambers were full of dyuers kyndes of shelles hangynge loofe by finaule cordes, that beinge shaken by the wynde they myght make a certeyne rattelyng and also a whyftelyng noyse by gatheryng the wynde in theyr holowe places. For herein they haue greate delyte, and impute this for a goodly ornamente. Dyuers haue shewed me many woonderfull thynges of these regions: Especially one *Gonzalus Fernandus Ouiedus* beinge one of the maiestrates appointed in that office which the Spanyardes caule *Veedor*, who hath also hetherto entered further into the lande then any other. He affirmeth that he chaunced vpon the fragmente of a saphire bygger then the egge of a goose. And that in certeyne hylles where he trauallyed with thirtie men, he founde many of the precious stoness cauled Smaragdes, calcidones, and Iaspers, besyde great pieces of amber of the montaines. He also with dyuers other doo affirme that in the houfes of fume of the Canibales of these regions, they founde the lyke precious stoness set in golde and inclosed in the tap[e]stry or arras (if it may soo bee cauled) wherewith they hange theyr houfes. The same lande bryngeth fourth also many wooddes of brasile trees and great plentie of golde: In fo much that in maner in al places they founde on the sea bankes and on the shoores, certeyne marchasites in token of golde: *Fernandus Ouiedus* declareth furthermore that in a certeyne region cauled *Zenu*, lylng four score and tenne myles from *Dariena* Eastwarde, they exercyse a straunge kynde of marchaundies. For in the houfes of the inhabitantes, they founde greate chestes and baskets made of the twigges and leaues of certeyne trees apte for that purpose, beinge all full of greffehoppers, grylles, crabbes, or crefysshes: fnyales also, and locustes whiche destrowe the fieldes of corne, all well dried and salted. Beinge demaunded why they referued such a multitude of these beastes, they answered that they kepte them to bee fould to theyr bortherers which dwell further within the lande: And that for the exchange of these precious byrdes and salted fysshes, they receaued of them certeyne strange thynges wherin partly they take pleasure, and partly vse them for

theyr necessary affayers. These people dwel not togyther, but scattered here and there. Th[e]inhabitan-tes of *Caramairi*, seeme to dwel in an earthly Paradife, theyr region is so fayre and frutefull, withowt owtragiou- heate or sharpe coulde, with lyttle difference of the length of day and nyght throwhowt all the yeare. After that owre men had thus dryuen the barbarians to flyght, they entered into a valley of two leagues in breadth and three in length, extendynge to certeyne frutful mountaynes ful of grasse, herbes, and trees, at the rootes wherof, lye twoo other valleys towarde the ryght hande and the left, through eyther of the which runneth a fayre ryuer, whereof the ryuer of *Gaira* is one, but vnto the other they haue yet gyuen noo name. In these valleys they founde manye fayre gardeynes and pleasaunte fyeldes watered with trenshes distrybuted in marueylous order, with no lesse arte then owre Infubrians and Heturians vse to water theyr fyeldes. Their common meate, is *Ages*, *Iucca*, *Maizium*, *Battata*, with fuche other rootes and frutes of trees, and also fuche fyfthe as they vse in the Ilandes and other regions of these prouinces. They eat mans fleshe but seldome, bycause they meete not oftentymes with strangiers, except they goo forth of theyr owne dominions with a mayne armye of purpose to hunt for men, when they rauenyng appetite pricketh them forward. For they absteyne from them felues, and eat none but fuche as they take in the warres or otherwyse by chaunce. But fuerly it is a miserabile thyng to heare howe many myriades of men these fylthy and vnnaturall deuourers of mans fleshe haue consumed, and lesse thousandes of moste fayre and frutfull Ilandes and regions defolate withowte menne: By reason wherof owre men founde so many Ilandes whiche for theyr fayrenes and frutefulnesse myght seeme to bee certeyne earthly Paradyfes, and yet were vtterly voyde of men. Hereby yowre holynesse may consider howe pernicious a kynde of men this is. We haue sayde before that the Ilande named *Sancti Iohannis* (which th[e]inhabitan-tes caule *Burichena*) is nexte to *Hispaniola*. It is sayde that onely the Canibales which dwell in the other Ilandes nere about this, as in the Ilande cauled *Hayhay* or *Santa Crucis*, and in *Guadalupea* (otherwise cauled *Queraqueiera*, or *Carucuiera*) haue in owre tyme vyolently taken owte of the sayde Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*, more then fyue thousande men to bee eaten. But let it suffice thus much to haue wandered by these monstrous bludfuckers. We wyll nowe therefore speake sumewhat of the rootes whereof they make theyr breade, forasmuch as the fame shall hereafter bee foode to Christian men in steede of breade made of wheate, and in the steade of radyfthe with fuch other rootes as they haue byn accustomed to eate in Europe. We haue oftentymes sayde before that *Iucca* is a roote whereof the beste and moste delicate breade is made bothe in the firme lande of these regions, and also in the Ilandes. But howe it is tyllid or husbanded, howe it groweth, and of howe dyuers kyndes it is, I haue not yet declared. Therefore, when they intende to plante this *Iucca*, they make a hole in the earth knee deape, and rayfe a heape of the earth taken owte of the same, fashionyng it lyke a square bedde of nyne foote breadth on euery syde, fettynge twelue trunkes of these rootes (beinge about a foote and a halfe longe a piece) in euery of the sayd beddes conteynyng three rootes of a syde, so layde a flope, that the endes of them ioyne in maner togyther in the center or myddest of the bedde within the grounde. Owt of the ioyntes of the rootes and spases betwene the same, sprynge the toppes and blades of newe rootes, which by lyttle and lyttle encrea- fyng, growe to the byggenes and length of a mans arme in the browne, and oftentymes as bygge as the thygh: So that by the tyme of theyr full rypenes, in maner all the earthe of the heape, is conuerted into rootes. But they say that these rootes are not ripe in lesse tyme then a yeare and a halfe: And that the longer they are suffered to growe euen vntyll twoo yeares complete, they are so muche the better and more perfecte to make breade therof. When they are taken forth of the earth, they scrape them and flye them with certeyne sharpe ston- es feruyng for the same purpose: And thus layinge them betwene two great stones, or puttyng them in a sacke made of the stalkes of certeyne towgh herbes and smaule reedes, they presse them (as we do cheefe or crabbes to drawe owte the iuse thereof) and so let them drye a daye before they eate them. The iuse or lyquoure, they cast away: for (as we haue sayde) it is deadly poyson in the Ilandes. Yet is the iuse of fuche as growe in the firme lande, holfome if it bee fodde, as is the whey of owre mylke. They saye that there are manye kyndes of this *Iucca*, wherof some are more pleasaunte and delycate then the other, and are therefore referued as it were to make fine manchet for the kynges owne tables. But the gentelmen eate of the meaner forte, and the common people of the basest. The fynest they caule *Cazabbi*, which they make rounde lyke cakes in certeyne presses before they feeth it or bake it. They saye furthermore that there are lykewyse dyuers kyndes of the rootes of *Ages* and *Battata*. But they vse these rather as frutes and dyfthes of feruice, then to make breade therof, as we vse rapes, radyfthes, mussheroms, nauies, perseneppes, and fuch lyke. In this case, they mooste especially esteeme the best kynde of *Battatas*, which in pleasant tast and tendernes farre exceedeth owre musheromes. It shal suffice to haue sayde thus muche of rootes. We wyll nowe speake therfore of an other kynde of theyr breade. We declared before that they haue a kynde of grayne or pulfe muche lyke vnto *Panicum*, but with sumwhat bygger graines, which they beate into meale vpon certeyne greate hollowe ston- es with the labour of their handes when they lacke *Iucca*: And of this is made the more vulgar or common breade. It is sowne thrise a yeare, so that the frutfulness of the grounde may beare it by reason of the equalitie of the tyme, whereof wee haue spoken suffyciently before. In these regyons they founde also the graine of *Maizium*,

The fayre region
of Caramairi.

Fruteful
mountaynes.

Gardens.
Insubres are
nowe cauled
Lumbardes, and
hetrusci, Tuscans
116

Many countreys
lesse desolate by
the fiercenes of
the Canibales.

One myriade is
ten thousande.

A miserable
hearyng.

Breade of rootes.

The maner of
plantinge the
roote Iucca.

Earth turned into
rootes.

How breade is
made of rootes.

A straunge
thyng.

Cazabbi.

Ages and *Battata*

Panicum is a
grayne somewhat
lyke mil The
Italians caule it
Melica.

117

He meaneth the
equall length of
day and night
which is
continually vnder
the Equinoctial
lyne.

Maizium

Earth of dyuers
colours.

Golde in ryuers.

Hartes and bores.
Foules.

Holsome ayer

Gossampine
cotton.
Fethers.

Bowes and
arrowes.
Deade bodies
reserued

Ouches of laton.
Gonzalus Quietus,
sayth that they
gilt maruelously
with the iuse of a
certeyne herbe.
Whyte marbl'e.

The great ryuer
Maragnonus.
This ioyneth with
the myghty ryuer
cauled Flumen
Amazonum, found
of late.

Clokes of fethers.

118

The swyfte course
of the water.

xl. leagues in one
nyght.

and fundry kyndes of frutes of trees diligently planted and well husbanded. The waye betwene the regions of *Caramairi* and *Saturma*, is fayre, brode, and ryghte foorthe. They founde here also fundrye kyndes of waterpottes made of earthe of dyuers colours, in the whiche they bothe fetch and keepe freshe water. Lykewise fundrye kyndes of iugges, godderdes, drynkyng cuppes, pottes, pannes, dyffhes, and platters artificially made. When the gouernour had gyuen commaundement by proclamation, that th[e]inhabitantes shulde eyther obey the Christian kynge and embrace owre religion, or elles to depart owte of their cuntry, they answered with venemous arrowes. In this skyrmysh, owre men tooke summe of theym: whereof clothynge the moſte parte in faire apparell, they sente them ageyne to their owne company: But leadyng the refydue to the shyppes to th[e]intent to shewe them the poure and magnyfycence of the christians that they myght declare the fame to their coompanions, therby to wyne their fauour, they appareled them lykewyfe and sente them after their felowes. Theye affyrme that in all the ryuers of these coastes, theye sawe great argumentes and tokens of golde: They founde here and there in their houfes good store of hartes flesshe and bores fleshe wherwith they fedde them felues dilycately. They also, haue greates plentye of fundry kyndes of byrdes and foules, wherof theye brynge vpe many in their houfes, summe for necessarye foode, and other for daynty dyffhes as we do hennes and partriches. Owre men herebye coniecture that the ayer of these regions is veary holfome, for as muche as sleapyng all nyghte vnder the firmament on the bankes of the ryuers, none of them were at any tyme offended with reumes or heade ache by reason of any noysome humoure or vapoure proceadyng from the earthe, ayer, or water. Owre men furthermore, founde there many great bothomes of gossampyne cotton ready spunne, and fardelles of dyuers kyndes of fethers wherof they make them felues crestes and plumes after the maner of owre men of armes: also certeyne clokes whiche they esteeme as moſte cumly ornamentes. They founde lykewyfe an innumerable multitude of bowes and arrowes. Th[e]inhabitantes also of these regions, in summe places vse to burne the carkefes of their prynces when theye are deade, and to referue their bones buried with spyces in certeyne hylles. In other places, they onely drye theym and imbaume them with spyces and fweete gummes, and soo referue them in sepulchers in their owne houfes. Somewhere also, they drye them, spyce them, adourne them with precyous iewells and ouches, and so reuerently place them in certeyne tabernacles made for the same purpose in their owne palayces. When owre men had many of their tabellets, braffettes, collers, and fuche other ouches (whiche they caule *Guanines*) they founde them rather to bee made of laton then of golde: wherby they suppoſe that they haue vfed to exchange their ware with summe craftie straungers whiche broughte them those counterfect ouches to defraude them of their golde. For euen owre menne perceaued not the deceate vntyll they came to the meltyng. Furthermore, certayne of owre buylders wanderyng a lyttell way from the sea coastes, chaunced to fynde certayne pyeces of white marble. Wherby they thynke that in tyme paste summe straungers haue coome too those landes, whiche haue dygged marble owte of the mountaines, and lefte those fragmentes on the plaine. There owre men learned that the ryuer *Maragnonus* descendeth from the montaynes couered with snowe cauled *Montes Niuales* or *Serra Neuata*: And the fame to bee encreafed by many other ryuers whiche faule into it throughowte all the lowe and wate[r]lye regions by the whiche it runneth with so longe a tracte from the fayde montaynes into the sea: And this to bee the cause of the greatnesse therof. These thynges beyng thus brought to passe, the gouernour commaunded the trumpitour to blowe a retraite: Whervpon they whiche were sente to lande (beyng fyue hundred in nomber) makyng a great shoute for ioye of their victory, sette them felues in order of battayle, and so keping their array, returned to the shippes laden with spoyle of those prouinces, and shynyng in souldiers clokes of fethers, with faire plumes and crestes of variable colours. In this meane tyme hauyng repaired their shyppes and furnyſhed the same with all necessaryes, they loofed anker the. xvi. daye of the Calendes of Iuly, directyng their course to the hauen of *Carthagena*, in the whiche viage they destroyed and wasted certayne Ilandes of the Canibales lyeing in the waye, accordyng as they were commaunded by the kynge. But the swifte course of the water deceaued bothe *Iohannes Serranus* the chiefe Pilot of the gouernours shyppe, and all the other, although they made their boſte that they perfectly knewe the nature therof. For they affyrme that in one night they were caried forty leagues beyonde their estimation.

THE SYXTE BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.



Ere muſte we ſumwhat digreſſe from coſmograply, and make a philoſophicall diſcourſe to ſearche the ſecrete cauſes of nature. For whereas they al affirm with one conſent, that the ſea runneth there from the Eaſte to the weſte as ſwyftly as it were a ryuer faulinge from hyghe mountaynes, I thoughte it not good to lette ſo great a matter flyppe vntouched. The whiche while I conſyder, I am drawn into no ſmaule ambyguitie and doute, whether thoſe waters haue their courſe whiche flowe with ſo continuall a tracte in circuite from the Eaſte, as thowghe they fledde to the weſt neuer to retourne, and yet neyther the weſte therby any whitte the more fylled, nor the Eaſte emptied. If we ſhall ſaye that they faule to their centre (as is the nature of heuye thynges) and aſſigne the Equinoctiall lyne to be the centre (as ſumme affirme) what centre ſhall we appointe to bee able to receaue ſo great aboundaunce of water? Or what circumference ſhal be founde weate? They whiche haue ſearched thoſe coaſtes, haue yet founde no lykely reaſon to be trewe. Manye thynke that there ſhulde bee certeyne large ſtraightes or enterances in the corner of that greate lande whiche we deſcribed to bee eyght tymes bygger then Italye, and the corner therof to be full of goulfes, wherby they ſuppoſe that ſumme ſtraightes ſhulde paſſe through the ſame lyinge on the weſte fyde of the Ilande of *Cuba*: And that the ſayde ſtraightes ſhuld ſwalowe vp thoſe waters, and ſo conuey the ſame into the weſte and from thence ageyn into owre Eaſte Ocean, or north ſeas as ſumme thynke. Other wyll, that the goulfe of that great lande bee cloſed vppe: and the lande to reach farre towarde the northe on the backe fyde of *Cuba*: ſo that it embrace the northe landes whiche the froſen ſea encompaſeth vnder the northe pole: And that all the lande of thoſe coaſtes, ſhoulde ioyne togyther as one firme lande: Wherby they coniecture that thoſe waters ſhulde bee turned aboute by the obiecte or reſyſtaunce of that lande ſo bendynge towarde the north, as we ſee the waters tourned aboute in the crooked bankes of certeyne ryuers. But this agreeth not in all poyntes. For they alſo whiche haue ſearched the frozen ſea, and ſayled from thence into the weſte, do lykewyfe affirme that thoſe northe ſeas flowe continually towarde the weſte, although nothing ſo ſwyftly. Theſe northe ſeas haue byn ſearched by one Sebastian Cabot a Venetian borne, whom beinge yet but in maner an infante, his parentes caryed with them into Englande hauyng occaſion to reforte thether for trade of marchandies, as is the maner of the Venetians too leaue no parte of the worlde vnſearched to obteyne richeſſe. He therefore furniſhed two ſhippes in Englande at his owne charges: And fyrſt with three hundreth men, directed his courſe ſo farre toward the northe pole, that euen in the mooneth of Iuly he founde monſtrous heapes of Iſe ſwimming on the ſea, and in maner continuall day lyght. Yet ſawe he the lande in that tracte, free from Iſe, whiche had byn molten by heate of the ſunne. Thus ſeyng ſuche heapes of Iſe before hym he was enforced to tourne his ſayles and folowe the weſte, ſo coaſtynge ſtyll by the ſhore, that he was thereby broughte ſo farre into the ſouthe by reaſon of the lande bendynge ſo muche ſouthward that it was there almoſte equall in latitude with the ſea cauled *Fretum Herculeum*, hauyng the north pole eleuate in maner in the ſame degree. He ſayled lykewiſe in this tracte ſo farre towarde the weſte, that he had the Ilande of *Cuba* [on] his lefte hande in maner in the ſame degree of longitude. As he traueyled by the coaſtes of this greate lande (whiche he named *Baccallaos*) he fayth that he founde the like courſe of the waters toward the weſt, but the ſame to runne more ſoftely and gentelly then the ſwifte waters whiche the Spanyardes found in their nauigations ſoutheward.

Wherefore, it is not onely more lyke to bce trewe, but ought alſo of neceſſitie to bee concluded, that betwene both the landes hether to vnknown, there ſhulde bee certeyne great open places wherby the waters ſhulde thus continually paſſe from the Eaſt into the weſte: which waters I ſuppoſe to bee dryuen about the globe of the earth by the vnceſſaunt mouyng and impulſion of the heauens: and not to bee ſwalowed vp and caſt owt ageyne by the breathynge of *Demogorgon* as ſume haue imagined bycauſe they ſee the ſeas by increaſe and decreaſe, to flowe and reflowe. Sebastian Cabot him ſelfe, named thoſe landes *Baccallaos*, bycauſe that in the ſeas therabout he founde ſo great multitudes of certeyne bigge fyſſhes much lyke vnto tunies (which th[e] inhabitants caule *Baccallaos*) that they ſumtymes ſtayed his ſhippes. He founde alſo the people of thoſe regions covered with beaſtes ſkynnes: Yet not without th[e]uſe of reaſon.

He ſaythe alſo that there is greate plentie of beares in thoſe regions, whiche vſe to eate fyſhe. For plunginge theym ſelues into the water where they perceue a multitude of theſe fyſſhes to lye, they faſten their claws in their ſcales, and ſo drawe them to lande and eate them. So that (as he faith) the beares beinge thus ſatiſſied with fyſſhe, are not noyſom to men. He declareth further, that in many places of theſe regions, he

Sundry opinions why the ſea runneth with ſo ſwyft courſe from the Eaſt into the weſt.

Th[e]equinoctiall lyne.
Why all waters moue towarde the ſouthe or Equinoctiall, reade *Cardanus de ſubtilit. liber. ii. de Elementis*.
Straightes.

As by the ſtraight of Magellanus.

The north landes.

The frozen ſea.

Sebastian. Cabot.

The Venetians.

The viage of Sebastian Cabot from Englande to the frozen ſea.
Froſt in the moneth of Iuly.

Fretum Herculeum, dimideth Spayne and the Moores and is nowe cauled the ſtraightes of Marrok.
Baccallaos, or Terra Baccallearum.

119

The mouyng of heuen cauſeth the ſea to moue.
Demogorgon is the ſpिरite of the earth.

People covered with beaſtes ſkins

Howe beares take and eate fyſſhes of the ſea.

Perhappes this laton is copper which holdeth gold. For laton hath no myne, and is an artificiaill metal and not natural.

Cabot cauled owte of Englande into Spayne. The Second vlage of Cabot.

The Ilandes of the Canybales.

The Ilande Fortis.

Salte

A straunge thyng.

Howe Petrus Arias with the kynges navy arriued at Dariena.

Howe Vaschus receaued the new gouernour.

Whye these regions are cauled prouinces.

120

Barrelles of meale.

Habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall lyne.

Where the newe gouernour planted his habitation

The viage of Iohannes Aiora The hauen of Comogrus

Sainte Mychaels goulfe

The hauen (of) Pocchorrosa.

fawe great plentie of laton amonge th[e]inhabitanes. *Cabot* is my very frende, whom I vse famylierly, and delyte to haue hym sumtymes keepe mee company in myne owne houfe. For beinge cauled owte of England by the commaundement of the catholyke kynge of Castile after the death of Henry kynge of Englande the feuenth of that name, he was made one of owre counfayle and affyflance as touchyng the affayres of the newe Indies, lookyng dayely for shippes to bee furnysshed for hym to discouer this hyd secrete of nature. This vyage is appoynted to bee begunne in March in the yeare next folowyng, beinge the yeare of Chryft M. D. XVI. What shall succede, yowre holynes shalbe aduertised by my letters if god graunte me lyfe. Sume of the Spanyardes denye that Cabot was the fyrst fynder of the lande of *Baccallaos*: And affirme that he went not so farre westwarde. But it shall suffice to haue sayde thus much of the goulfes and strayghtes, and of *Sebastian Cabot*. Let vs nowe therefore returne to the Spanyardes. At this tyme, they let passe the hauen of *Carthago* vntouched, with all the Ilandes of the Canibales there aboute, whiche they named *Insulas Sancti Bernardi*: Leauyng also behynde theyr backes, all the region of *Caramairi*. Heare by reason of a fooden tempeste, they were caste vppon the Ilande *Fortis*, beinge about fyftie leagues distante from the enterance of the goulfe of *Vraba*. In this Ilande, they founde in the houfes of th[e]inhabitanes, many baskets made of certeyne greate sea reedes, ful of falte. For this Ilande hath in it many goodly falte bayes: by reason whereof they haue greate plentie of falte which they sell to other nations for such thynges as they stande in neede of. Not farre from hense, a great curlewe as bygge as a storke came flyng to the gouernours shippe, and suffered her selfe to bee easely taken: which beinge caryed about amonge all the shippes of the nauie, dyed shortly after. They fawe also a great multytude of the same kynde of foules on the shore a farre of.

The gouernour his shyppe whiche we sayde to haue losse the rudder beinge nowe fore broofed and in maner vnprofytable, they lefte behynde to folowe at leasure. The nauie arriued at *Dariena* the twelfth day of the Calendes of Iuly, and the gouernour his shippe (beinge voyde of men) was dryuen a lande in the same coastes within foure dayes after. The Spanyardes whiche nowe inhabited *Dariena*, with theyr Capitayne and Lieutenant *Vaschus Nunnez Balboa* (of whom we haue largely made mention before) beinge certified of th[e] arriual of *Petrus Arias* and his coompanye, wente foorth the three myles to meete him, and receaued him honorably and religiously with the psalme *Te deum Laudamus*, giuing thankes to god by whose safe conducte they were brought so prosperously thether to al their confortes. They receaued them gladly into theyr houfes builded after the maner of those prouinces. I may well caule these regions, Prouinces, a *Procul victis*, (that is) such as are ouercome farre of, forasmuch as owre men doo nowe inhabite the same all the barbarous kynges and Idolatours beinge eiected. They entertheyned them with such chere as they were able to make them: as with the frutes of those regions, and newe breade bothe made of rootes and the grayne *Maizium*. Other delicates to make vp the feast, were of theyr owne store whiche they brought with theym in theyr shyppes, as powdered fleshe, salted fyssh, and breade made of wheate. For they brought with them many barrelles of wheate meale for the same purpose. Here maye yowre holynes not without iuste cause of admiracion beholde a kynges nauie and great multitude of Christians, inhabytyng not onely the regions situate vnder the circle of heauen cauled *Tropicus Cancrī*, but also in maner vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, contrary to th[e] opinion of the owlde wryters, a fewe excepted. But after that they are nowe mette togyther, let vs further declare what they determyned to doo. Therefore, the daye after that the nauie arriued, there assembled a coompany of the Spanyardes th[e]inhabitoures of *Dariena*, to the number of foure hundreth and fyftie men. *Petrus Arias* the gouernour of the nauie and his coompany, conferred with them bothe priuily and openlye of certeyne articles wherof it was the kynges pleasure he shulde enquire: And most especially as concernyng such thynges wherof *Vaschus* the fyrste fynder and Admirall of the Southe sea, made mention in his large letter sent from *Dariena* to Spayne. In this inquisition they founde all thynges to bee trewe, wherof *Vaschus* had certified the kynge by his letters: And therevppon concluded that in the dominions of *Comogra*, *Pocchorrosa*, and *Tumanama*, at th[e] assignement of *Vaschus*, certeine fortresses shuld bee erected foorthwith to th[e] intente there to plant theyr colonie or habitation. To the better accomplishmente hereof, they sent immediatly one *Iohannes Aiora* a noble younge gentelman of *Corduba* and vnder Lieutenent, with foure hundreth men and foure caruelles and one other lyttle shippe. Thus departinge, he sayled fyrst directly to the hauen of *Comogrus*, dystant from *Dariena* aboute twentie and fyue leagues, as they wryte in theyr last letters. Frome hense, he is appoynted to fende a hundreth and fyftie of his foure hundreth, towarde the South by a newe and ryghter way founde of late, by the which (as they say) it is not passe. xxvi. leagues from the palaice of kynge *Comogrus* to the enterance of the goulfe of *Sancti Michaelis*. The residewe of the foure hundreth, shall remayne there to bee an ayde and succour to all such as shall jorney to and fro. Those hundreth and fiftie which are assigned to go fouthwarde, take with them for interpretours certeine of owre men which had lerned the fotherne language of the bonde men which were gyuen to *Vaschus* when he ouerranne those regions, and also certeyne of the bondemen them felues which had nowe lerned the Spanyshe tonge. They say that the hauen of *Pocchorrosa*, is onely feuen leagues distante frome the hauen of *Comogrus*. In *Pocchorrosa*, he is assigned to leaue fyftie men with the lyghtest shyp which maye bee a

passinger betwene them: that lyke as we vse poste horses by lande, so may they by this currant shippe, in shorte space certifie the Lieuテナant and th[e]inhabitours of *Dariena* of suche thynges as shall chaunce. They entende also to buylde houfes in the region of *Tumanama*. The palaice of kyng *Tumanama*, is distant from *Pochorrofa* about twentie leaques. Of these foure hundreth men, beinge of the owide fouldiers of *Dariena* and men of good experiance, fyftie weare appoynted to bee as it were Decurians to guide and conducte the newe men from place to place to do their affaires. When they had thus sette all thynges in order, they thought it good to aduertise the king hereof, and therewith to certifie hym that in those prouinces there is a kyng named *Dabaiba* whose dominion is very riche in golde: But the fame to be yet vntouched by reason of his great power. His kingedome ioyneth to the seconde greate ryuer named *Dabaiba* after his name, whiche fauleth into the sea owt of the corner of the goulfe of *Vraba* as we haue largely declared before. The common reporte is, that all the lande of his dominions is ryche in golde. The palayce of kyng *Dabaiba* is fyfty leaques distante from *Dariena*. Th[e]inhabitantes saye that from the palaice, the golde mynes reache to the borthers on euery fyde. Albeit, owre men haue also golde mynes not to bee contempned, euen within three leaques of *Dariena*, in the which they gather golde in many places at this presente: Yet doo theye affyrme greater plentie to bee in the mynes of *Dabaiba*. In the bookes of owre fyrste frutes wrytten to yowre holyneffe, we made mention of this *Dabaiba*, wherin owre men were deceaued and mystooke the matter. For where they founde the fyfther men of kyng *Dabaiba* in the maryshes, they thought his region had byn there also. They determyned therfore to fende to kyng *Dabaiba*, three hundreth choise younge men to be chosen owte of the hole army as mozte apte to the warres, and well furnysshed with all kyndes of armoure and artillery, to th[e]intent to go vnto hym and wyl hym, eyther frendly and peaceably to permytte them to inhabyte parte of his kingdome with the fruition of the golde mynes, or elles to bydde him battayle and dryue hym owte of his countrey. In their letters, they often tymes repete this for an argument of great rycheffe to coome, that they in maner dygged the grounde in noo place, but founde the earthe myxte with sparkes and smaule graynes of golde. They haue also aduertified the kyng that it shalbe commodious to place inhabitours in the hauen of *Sancta Martha* in the region of *Saturma*, that it maye bee a place of refuge for them that sayle from the Ilande of *Dominica* from the whiche (as they saye) it is but foure or fyue dayes saylyng to that hauen of the regyon of *Saturma*: And from the hauen, but thre dayes saylyng to *Dariena*. But this is to bee vnderstode in goynge and not in returnynge. For the returnyng from thense is so laborious and difficulte by reason of the contrary course of the water, that they seeme as it were to ascende hyghe montaynes and slyue ageynste the poure of *Neptunus*. This swyfte course of the sea towarde the Weste, is not so violente to theym whiche retourne to Spayne frome the Ilandes of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*: Although they also do laboure ageynste the faule of the Ocean: The cause wherof is, that the sea is here verye large, so the waters haue their full scoope. But in the tracte of *Paria*, the waters are confrayned together by the bendynge fydes of that great lande, and by the multytude of Ilandes lyeinge ageynste it, as the lyke is feene in the straighes or narowe seas of Sicilie where the violent course of the waters cause the dangerous places of *Scylla* and *Charybdis*, by reason of those narowe seas whiche conteine *Ionium*, *Libicum*, and *Tirrhenum*. *Colonus* the fyrst fynder of these regyons, hath left in wrytyng, that saylyng from the Ilande of *Guanassa*, and the prouynces of *Iaia*, *Maia*, and *Cerabaro*, beyng regyons of the west marches of *Beragua*, he founde the course of the water so vehemente and furious ageynste the fore parte of his shippe whyle he failed from those coastes towarde the Easte, that he coulde at no tyme touche the grounde with his foundynge plummet, but that the contrary vyolence of the water woolde beare it vppe from the bottome. He affyrmeth also, that he coulde neuer in one hole daye with a meately good wynde, wynne one myle of the course of the water. And this is the cause why they are oftentimes enforced to sayle fyrste by the Ilandes of *Cuba* and *Hispaniola*, and so into the mayne sea toward the North when they retourne to Spaine, that the Northe wyndes maye further their vyage whiche they can not brynge to passe by a directe course. But of the motions of the Ocean sea to and fro, this shal suffice. Let vs now therfore reherse what they write of *Dariena*, and of their habitation there, which they caule *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, planted on the sea bankes of *Dariena*. The situation of the place, hath no natural munition or defense: And the ayer is more pestiferous then in *Sardus*. The Spanyshe inhabitours, are all pale and yelow, lyke vnto them that haue the yelow giandyes. Whiche neuerthelesse commeth not of the nature of the region as it is situate vnder the heauen. For in many regyons beyng vnder the selfe fame degree of latitude, hauyng the pole of the fame eleuation, they fynd holsome and temperate ayer, in such places where as the earth bryngeth forth sayre sprynges of water, or where holsome ryuers runne by bankes of pure earthe without mudde: but mozte especyally where they inhabyte the fydes of the hylles and not the valleyes. But that habytation whiche is on the bankes of the ryuer of *Dariena*, is situate in a deepe valley, and enuironed on euery fyde with hyghe hylles: By reason wherof, it receaueth the soonne beames at noonetyde directly perpendiculer ouer their heades, and are therefore fore vexed by reflection of the beames bothe before, behynde, and from the fydes. For it is the reflection of the soonne beames whiche causeth feruente heate, and not their acceffe or nereffe to the earth. Forasmuche as

A passynger shyppe.

Kyng Tumanama

Decurians are officers deuided into tennes. etc.

The gold mynes Kyng Dabaiba.

The pallaice of kyng Dabaiba.

The gold mynes of Dariena.

An erreure.

Expedition ageinst kyng Dabaiba.

121

Great plentie of golde.

The regyon of Saturma
The Ilande of Dominica.
Dariena.

Difficulte saylyng ageynst the course of the sea.

The dangerous straighes of Scylla and Charybdis.

Guanassa.
Iaia.
Maia.
Cerabaro.
Beragua.

The vehement course of the sea from the east to the west.

The northe wynde.

Sancta Maria Antiqua, the fyrst habitation of the spaniards in the fyrme lande.
Sardus the Ilande of Sardinia.
The variety of regyons lyeinge vnder one paralel.

By what means the sonne beames are cause of feruent heate.

The pernicious
ayer of Dariena.

122

Toades and flees
engendered of
droppes of water.

Necessytie hath
no lawe

A house sette on
fyer with
lyghtnyng.

A dogge deuoured
of a crocodile,
*Tanquam canis
e Nilo.*
The byting of
battes.

Lyons and tygers.

Beastes wex
bygger in their
kynde.

How the
gouernour
enterteined kyng
Caret.

Note.

Broma or Bissa,
are wormes whiche
destroy shippes.

123

A venomous tree.

Perhappes theyr
venomous arrows
are made of this
woodde or. &c.

they are not passible in them felues as dothe manyfestly appeare by the snowe lyinge continually vnmolten vpon certeyne hygh montaynes, as yowre holyneffe knoweth ryghte well. The soonne beames therfore faulng on the montaynes, are reflected downwarde into the valley by reason of th[e]objecte of the declynyng fydes of the hylles, as it were the faule of a greate rounde stoon rowlde frome the toppe of a montayne. The valley therfore receaueth, both those beames whiche faule directly theron, and also those whiche are reflected downwarde from euery fyde of the montaynes. Their habitation therfore in *Dariena*, is pernicious and vnhol-fome onely of the particular nature of the place, and not by the sytuacion of the regyon as it is placed vnder the heauen or nere to the soonne. The place is also contagious by the nature of the foyle, by reason it is compased aboute with muddy and slynkyng marysshes, th[e]infection wherof is not a lyttle encreased by the heate. The vyllage it selfe, is in a maryshe, and in maner a standyng puddle, where, of the droppes faulng from the handes of the bond men whyle they water the pauementes of their houses, toades are engendered immediately, as I my selfe sawe in an other place the droppes of that water turne into flees in the soomer season. Furthermore, where so euer they dygge the grounde the deapthe of a handefull and a halfe, there springeth owte vnhol-fome and corrupte water of the nature of the ryuer which runneth through the deepe and muddy chanel of the valley, and so fauleth into the sea. Now therfore they consulte of remouyng their habytation. Necessytie caused them fyrst to fasten their foote heare, bycause that they whiche fyrst arryued in those landes, were oppressed with fuche vrgente hunger, that they had no respecte to change the place although they were thus vexed by the contagion of the foyle and heate of the soonne, besyde the corrupte water and infectious ayer by reason of venomous vapours and exhalacions ryfng from the same. An other greate incommoditie was, that the place was destitute of a commodious hauen, beyng three leaques distante from the mouthe of the goulfe. The waye is also roughe and diffyculte to bryng vyttayles and other necessaries from the sea. But lette vs nowe speake sumwhat of other particular thynges whiche chaunfed. Therfore shortly after that they weare arryued, there happened many thynges wherof they had no knowledge before. A certayne well learned phisyon of Ciuile, whome partely th[e]autorytie of the bysshoppe of *Dariena*, and partely the desyre of golde had allured to those landes, was so scarred with lyghtnyng in the nyghte season lyinge in bedde with his wyfe, that the house and all the stuffe therin beyng fette on fyer and burnt, he and his wyfe bothe soore scorched, ranne soorthe cryng and almoste naked, hardely escapyng the daunger of death. At an other tyme, as certayne of them floode on the shoore, a great Crocodile fodenly caryed awaye a masty of a yeare and a halfe owlde, as a kyte shulde haue snatched vpe a chicken: And this euen in the presence of theym all, where the myserable dogge cryed in vayne for the helpe of his mayster. In the nyghte season they were tormented with the bytyng of battes whiche are there so noyfome that if they byte any man in his sleape, they putte hym in daunger of lyfe, onely with drawyng of bludde: In so muche that summe haue dyed therof, faulng as it were into a consumption through the malyciousnesse of the venomous wounde. If these battes chaunce to fynde a cocke or a henne abroad in the nyght season, they byte them by the combes and so kyll them. They also whiche wente laste into these regions, do wryte, that the lande is troubeled with Crocodyles, Lyons, and Tigers: But that they haue nowe deuised artes and ingens howe to take them. Lykewyfe that in the houses of their felowes, they founde the hydes and cafes of fuche Lyons and Tygers as they had kylled. They wryte furthermore, that by reason of the rankenesse and frutefulness of the grounde, kyne, swyne, and horses, doo maruelously increafe in these regions, and growe to a muche bygger quantitie then they whiche weare of the first broode. Of the excedyng hyghnesse of the trees with their fruites, of the garden herbes, fruites, plantes, and feedes whiche owre men broughte from Spayne and fowed and fet the same in these regyons, lykewyfe of the hertes and other soure footed beastes bothe tame and wyld, also of dyuers kyndes of foules, byrdes, and fysshes, they write euen as we haue declared in the decades before. *Caret* the kyng of the regyon of *Cioba*, was with them for the space of three dayes: whome when they had frendly enterteined and shewed hym the secrete places of their shyppes, their horses also with their trappars, bardes, and other furnimentes, besyde many other thynges whiche seemed straunge to hym, and had further delited his mynd with the harmony of their musycall instrumentes, and gyuen hym many rewardes, they dysmyssed hym halfe amased with to muche admyration. He slygnified vnto them, that their trees in that prouynce, of the planckes wherof, if shyppes were made, they shoulde bee safe from the woormes of the sea whiche they caule *Bromas*. Howe these woormes knawe and corrode the shyppes, wee haue declared before. Owre shyppes are greatly troubeled with this plage if they lye longe in the hauens of these regyons. But they affyrme that the woodde of this tree is so bytter, that the woormes wyll not taste therof. There is also an other tree peculyar to these landes: whose leaues if they onely touche the bare in any place of a mannes body, they cause greate blysters, and those so malycious that excepte the same bee soorthwith healed with salte water or fastyng spyttle, they doo incontynently engender deadely paynes. They saye lykewyfe, that the fauour of the woodde is presente poyson: And that it can noo whither bee caryed without daunger of lyfe. When th[e]inhabitauntes of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* had oftentimes attempted to shake of the yoke of feruytude, and coule neuer bryng the same to passe neyther by open warre nor yet by priuie conspiraces,

they were determyned in the nyghte feason to haue kylled owre men in their sleepe with the smoke of this woodde. But when the Christian men had knowledge hereof, they compelled the poore wretches to confesse their intente, and punysshed the chiefe autours of the deuyfe. They haue also a certayne herbe with the fauour wherof they are preferued from the hurte of this venemous woodde so that they maye beare it safely. Of these fmaule thynges it shall suffyce too haue sayde thus muche. They looke dayly for many greater thynges to certyfy vs of from the Ilandes of the fourth fea. For at suche tyme as the messenger whiche broughte owre letters departed from thense, *Petrus Arias* prepared an expedition to that ryche Ilande whiche lyeth in the mouthe of the goulfe cauled *Sinus S. Michaelis*, and reacheth into the fourth fea, beyng also lefte vntouched of *Vaschus* by reason that the fea was at that tyme of the yeare fore troubeled with tempestes, as wee haue further declared in *Vaschus* his vyage to the fourth. Wee looke therefore dayly for greater thynges then are hetherto paste. For they haue nowe taken in hand to subdue manye other prouynces, whiche wee suppose too bee eyther verye ryche, or to brynge furthe fumme straunge woorkes of nature. *Iohannes Diaz Solistus* of *Nebriſſa* (of whome we haue made mention before) is sente by the ffronte of the cape or poynte of *Sancti Augustini* (whiche reacheth feuen degrees beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne, and perteyneth to the dominion of the Portugales) to th[e]intent to ouer runne the fourth fyde from the backe halfe of *Paria*, *Cumana*, *Cuquibacoa*, with the hauens of *Carthago* and *Sancta Martha*, of *Dariena* also and *Beragua*, that more perfecte and certeyne knowledge may bee had of those tractes. Furthermore, one *Iohannes Poncius* was sente fourth with three shyppes to destroye the Canibales bothe in the lande and Ilandes there aboute: aswell that the nations of the more humane and innocente people maye at the length lyue without feare of that pestiferous generation, as also the better and more safely to searche the secretes and rycheſſe of those regions. Many other lykewife were sente dyuers and fundry wayes: as *Gasper Badaicius* too searche West partes: *Franciscus Bezerra*, to fayle by the corner of the goulfe: And *Valleius*, to passe by the mouthe or enteraunce therof to the Easte coastes of the goulfe to searche the secretes of that lande, in the whiche *Fogeda* with his companye had of late begonne to plante their habitation, and had buylded a fortresse and a vyllage. *Badaicius* departed fyrst from *Dariena* with foure score souldiours well appoynted: Whome *Lodouicus Mercado* folowed with fyfitye:

To *Bezerra* were also fourescore assygned, and three score and tenne to *Valleius*. Whether they shall arryue at safe and commodious hauens, or faule into vnfortunate stations, he onely knoweth whose prouydence ruleth all: For as for vs men wee are included within the knowledge of things after they haue chaunced. Lette vs nowe therefore coome to other matters.

THE SEVENTHE BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.



Petrus Arias the gouernour of the supposed continente, was scarcely entred into the mayne fea with his nauye onwarde on his vyage to *Dariena*. But I was aduertised that one *Andreas Moralis* a pilot who had oftentimes ouer runne the coastes of these new feas and the Ilandes of the same, was coome to the courte to sell suche marchaundies as he broughte with hym from thense. This man had dyligently searched the tracte of the supposed continente, and especyally th[e]inner regyons of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, wherunto he was appoynted by his brother *Nicolaus Ouandus* (the gouernour of the Iland and chiefe Commendatory of the

order of the knyghtes of *Alcantara*) bycause he was a wytty man and more apte to searche suche thynges then any other: So that with his owne handes he drewe faire cardes and tables of suche regyons as hee discouered. Wherin as he hath bynne founde faythfull of suche as haue sense had better tryall hereof, so is he in most credyt emongest the best forte. He therefore reforted to me as all they are accustomed to doo, whiche retourne from the Ocean. What I learned of hym and dyuers other of things heretofore vnknownen, I wyll nowe declare. The beginnyng of this narration, shalbe the particular description of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, forasmuche as it is the heade and as it weare the principall marte of all the lyberality of the Ocean, and hath a thousande and againe a thousande fayre, pleafaunt, bewtiful, and ryche *Nereides* whiche lye aboute it on euery fyde, adournyng this their ladye and moother, as it were an other *Tethis* the wyfe of *Neptunus*, enuyronyng her aboute, and attendyng vpon her as their queene and patronesse. But of these *Nereides* (that is to saye, the Ilandes placed aboute her) we wyll speake more hereafter. Lette vs in the meane tyme declare fumwhat of the Ilande whiche owre men named *Margaritea Diues* (whiche the Spanyardes caule *De las perlas*) beyng nowe well knownen, and lyinge in the fourth fea in the goulfe cauled *Sinus Sancti Michaelis* (that is) fainte Michaels goulfe. This Iland hath presently brought to owre knowledge many straunge and wonderfull thynges and promyffeth no fmaule

A preseruatiu
ageynst poyson.

The Ilands of the
south sea.
The ryche Iland
cauled Dites.

Cap[e], sancti
Augustini.
Of the euyll
successe of these
viages, reade
decade iii.
Liber. ix.
An expedition to
destroy the
Canibales.

Fogeda.

Looke. decad. iii.
Lib. ix.

The nauigations of
Andreas Moralis.

124

A particular
description of the
Ilande of
hispaniola

Nereides are
nymphes of the
sea, he meaneth
Ilandes.

Tethis the wyfe of
Neptunus and
goddesse of the
sea.

The Ilande of
Margaritea Diues.
Sainte Michaels
goulfe

Great perles hope of greater thynges in tyme to coome. In this is founde great plentie of pearles so fayre and great, that the sumptuous queene *Cleopatra* myght haue seemed to weare them in her crownes, cheynes, and brasletttes. Of the shellyfishes wherin these are engendered, wee wyll speake sumwhat more in th[e]ende of this narration. But let vs nowe returne to *Hispaniola* moste lyke vnto the earthly paradyse. In the description hereof, we wyll begynne of the imposition of dyuerse names: Then of the forme of the Ilande, temperate ayer and benefyciall heauen: And fynally of the deuifyon of the regyons. Therefore for the ryghter pronunfyation of the names, yowre hollynesse muste vnderstande that they are pronounced with th[e]accent, as yowe may know by the verge fette ouer the heddes of the vowels, as in the name of the Ilande *Matinind*, where the accent is in the last vowell, and the lyke to be vnderstoode in all other names. They saye therefore, that the fyrste inhabitours of the Iland were transported in their *Canoas* (that is boates made of one hole pyece of woodde) from the Ilande of *Matinino*, beyng lyke banysshed men dryuen from thense by reason of certayne contrary factions and diuifyons emonge them felues, lyke as wee reade howe *Dardanus* came from *Corytho*, and *Teucus* from *Creta* into Asia, and that the regyon where they placed their habitacion, was afterwarde cauled *Troianum*. The lyke wee reade howe the Tirians and Sidonians arrayed with their nauye in *Lybia* by the fabulous conduction of *Dido*. These *Matininans* in like maner beyng banysshed from their owne countrey, planted their fyrste habytation in that parte of the Iland of *Hispaniola* whiche they caule *Cahonao*, vpon the banke of the ryuer named *Bahaboni*: As is redde in the begynnyng of the Romaynes that *Eneas* of Troye aryued in the region of Italy cauled *Latium* vpon the bankes of the ryuer of Tiber. Within the mouthe of the ryuer of *Bahaboni*, lyeth an Ilande where it is fayde that th[e]inhabitauntes buylded their fyrste howse whiche they named *Camoteia*. This howse they consecrated shortly after, and honoured the same reuerently with continuall gyftes and monumentes, euen vntyl the commyng of owre men, lyke as the Christians haue euer relygyously honoured Ierusalem the fountayne and oryginall of owre faythe: As also the Turkes attribute the lyke to the cytie of *Mecha* in Araby, and th[e]inhabytantes of the fortunate Ilandes (cauled the Ilandes of Canarie) to *Tyrma* buylded vpon a hyghe rocke from the whiche many were wounte with ioyfull myndes and fonges to cast them felues downe headlonge, beyng perswaded by their priestes that the foules of all fuche as fo dyd for the loue of *Tyrma*, shulde therby enioye eternall felycity. The conquerours of the Ilandes of Canarie, founde them yet remaynyng in that superstition, euen vntyll owre tyme: Nor yet is the memory of their sacryfices vtterly worne awaye: The rocke also referueth the owlde name vnto this daye. I haue also learned of late, that there yet remayneth in the Ilande summe of the faction of *Betanchor* the Frenshe man and fyrste that broughte the Ilandes to good culture and ciuilitie beyng therto lycenced by the kynge of Castile as I haue fayde before. These doo yet (for the moste parte) obserue bothe the language and maners of the Frenshemen, although the heres and successours of *Betanchor*, had foulded the two subdued Ilandes to certeyne men of Castile. Yet th[e]inhabitours whiche succeded *Betanchor*, and buylded them houses and encreased their families there, do contynue to this daye: And lyue quietly and pleasauntly with the Spanyardes, not greued with the sharpe coulede of Fraunce. But lette vs nowe returne to th[e]inhabitauntes of *Matinino* and *Hispaniola*. The Ilande of *Hispaniola* was fyrste named by the fyrste inhabitours, *Quizqueia*, and then *Haiti*. And this not by chauce, or at the pleasure of fuche as diuifed these names, but of credulitie and belefe of summe great effecte. For *Quizqueia*, is as muche to saye as a great thinge: And that so great that none maye bee greater. They interpret also, that *Quizqueia* fignifyeth, large, vniuersall, or al, in like fignification as the Greekes named their god cauled *Pan*: Bycause that for the greatnes therof, these sypple foules supposed it to bee the hole worlde: And that the foonne beames gaue lyghte to none other worlde but onely to this Ilande with the other adiacente aboute the same: And thervpon thoughte it most woorthy to bee cauled great, as the greatest of all other knowen to them. *Haiti* is as muche to saye by interpretation, as roughe, sharpe, or craggie. But by a figuratiue speache cauled denomination (wherby the hole is named by part) they named the hole Iland *Haiti* (that is) roughe: For as muche as in many places the face of this Iland is rough by reason of the craggie montaynes, horrible thicke wooddes, and terrible darke and diepe valleys enuyroned with great and hyghe montaynes, although it bee in manye other places exceedyng bewtifull and florysshynge. Here muste wee sumwhat digresse from th[e]order we are entered into. Perhappes your hollynesse wyll maruell by what meanes these sypple men shoulde of soo longe contynuaunce beare in minde fuche principles, where as they haue no knowledge of letters. So it is therefore, that from the beginnyng, their princes haue euer byn accustomed to committe their children to the gouernaunce of their wife men whiche they caule *Boitios*, to bee instructed in knowledge, and to beare in memorie fuche thynges as they lerne. They gyue them felues chieflie to two thynges: As generally to lerne th[e]originall and successe of thynges: And particularlye to reherse the noble factes of their graundefathers great graundefathers and auncestours aswell in peace as in warre. These two thynges they haue of owlde tyme compofed in certeyne meters and ballettes in their language. These rhymes or ballettes, they caule *Areitos*. And as owre mynstrelles are accustomed too synge to the harpe or lute, so doo they in lyke maner synge these fonges and daunce to the same, playyng on tymbrelles made of shels of certen

fyfthes. These tymbrels they caule *Maguel*. They haue also fonges and ballettes of loue: And other of lamentations and moornyng: Summe alfo to encorage them to the warres, with euery of them their tewnes agreeable to the matter. They exercyse theym felues muche in daunceinge, wherin they are verye actyue and of greater agilitie then owre men, by reafon they gyue them felues to nothyng fo muche, and are not hyndered with apparell whiche is alfo the caufe of their swifteneffe of foote. In their ballettes lefte them of their auncestours, they haue prophecies of the comminge of owre men into their countrey. These they fynge with moornyng and as it were with gronyng, bewayle the losse of their lybertie and feruitude. For these prophecies make mention that there shoulde coome into the Ilande *Maguacochios*, that is, men clothed in apparell, and armed with fuch swoordes as shulde cutte a man in sunder at one stroke: vnder whose yoke their posteritie shulde bee subdued. And here I do not maruell that their prediceffours coulde prophecye of the feruitude and bondage of their successyon, if it bee trewe that is sayd of the familiaritie they haue with spirites whiche appeare to them in the night, wherof we haue largely made mention in the nynth booke of the first decade, where alfo wee haue entreated of their Zemes (that is) their Idoles and Images of diuelles whiche they honoured. But they saye that fence these Zemes were taken away by the Christians, the spirites haue no more appeared. Owre men ascribe this to the fygne of the crosse wherwith they defende theym felues from fuche spirites. For they are nowe all clenfed and sanctified by the water of bapti[f]me wherby they haue renounced the deucl and are consecrated the holy members of Christ. They are vniuerfally studyous to knowe the boundes and lymettes of their regions and kingdoms: And especially their *Mitaini* (that is) noble men. So that euen they are not vterlye ignorante in the furneyinge of their landes. The common people haue none other care then of fetyng, fowyng, and plantyng. They are mooste experte fyfshers, by reason that throughowte the hole yeare, they are accustomed daylye to ploung them felues in the ryuers, fo that in maner they lyue no lesse in the water then on the lande. They are alfo giuen to huntynge. For (as I haue sayde before) they haue two kyndes of foure footed beastes, wherof the one is lytle cunnes cauled *Vtias*, and the other Serpentes named *Iuannas*, muche lyke vnto Crocodiles, of eyght foote length, of mooste pleasaunte taste, and luyng on the lande. All the Landes noorythe innumerable byrdes and foules: As flocke doues, duckes, geefe, hearons, byfyde no lesse number of poppingiais then sparowes with vs. Euery kynge hath his subiectes diuided to fundrye affaires: As fumme to huntynge, other to fyfshyng, and other fumme to husbandrye. But let vs now returne to speake further of the names. We haue sayde that *Quizqueia* and *Haiti* were the oulde names of this Ilande. The hole Ilande was alfo cauled *Cipanga* of the region of the montaynes aboundyng with golde: Lyke as owre anciente poetes cauled all Italye *Latium* of parte therof. Therefore as they cauled *Aufonia* and *Hesperia*, Italie, euen soo by the names of *Quizqueia*, *Haiti*, and *Cipanga*, they vnderfode the hole Ilande of *Hispaniola*. Owre men dyd fyrste name it *Ifabella* of queene Helifabeth whiche in the Spanishe tongue is cauled *Ifabella*: And fo named it of the fyrst Colonie where they planted their habitation vpon the banke nere vnto the sea on the Northe fyde of the Ilande, as wee haue further declared in the fyrst decade. But of the names, this shall suffyce. Lette vs nowe therefore speake of the forme of the Ilande. They whiche fyrste ouer ranne it, described it vnto me to bee lyke the leafe of a chestnutte tree, with a goulfe towarde the west fyde, luyng open ageynst the Ilande of *Cuba*. But the experte shypp mayster *Andreas Moralis* broughte me the forme therof fumwhat differyng from that. For from bothe the corners, as from the Easte angle and the West, he described it to be indented and eaten with many great goulfes, and the corners to reache foorth the verye farre: and placeth manye large and safe hauens in the great goulfe on the East fyde. But I trust shortlye soo to trauallye further herein, that a perfecte carde of the particular description of *Hispaniola* maye bee sente vnto yowre holyneffe. For they haue nowe drawne the Geographicall description therof in cardes, euen as yowre holyneffe hath feene the forme and fytuacion of Spayne and Italye with their montaines, valleyes, ryuers, cities, and colonies. Lette vs therefore without shamfastneffe compare the Ilande of *Hispaniola* to Italie, fumtyme the heade and queene of the hole worlde. For if wee confyder the quantitie, it shalbee founde lytle leffe, and muche more frutefull. It reacheth from the Easte into the West, fyue hundreth and fortye myles accordyng to the computation of the later searchers: Althoughe the Admyrall fumwhat increased this number as wee haue sayde in the fyrst decade. It is in breadth fumme where, almoeste three hundreth myles: And in fumme places narower where the corners are extended. But it is fuerlye muche more blessed and fortunate then Italie: Beyng for the mooste parte therof fo temperate and floryfhyng, that it is neyther vexed with sharpe coule, nor afflycted with immoderate heate. It hath bothe the fleynges and conuerfions of the foonne (cauled *Solstitia*) in maner equall with the Equinoctiall, with lytle difference betwene the length of the daye and nyghte throughout all the yeare. For on the fourth fyde, the day ascendeth scarcely an houre in length aboue the nyghte, or contrary wyfe. But the dyfference is more on the northe fyde. Yet are there fumme regions in the Ilande in the whiche the coule is of fum force. But yowre holyneffe muste vnderfonde this to bee incident by reason of the obiecte or nearneffe of the mountaines, as wee wyl more largely declare hereafter. Yet is not this coule fo pearcyng and sharpe, that th[e] inhabitants are molested with snowe or bytynge froste. In other places, the Ilande enioyeth perpetuall springe tyme, and

Singing and daunceing. Soonges of loue and moornyng.

Prophecies.

Note

Theyr familiaritie wi[th] spirites

The denyll is dryuen awaye by baptisme

126

Surueyers.

They lyue as much in the water as on the lande

Serpentes

A Crocodile is much lyke to owr ewte or Lyserte Byrdes and foules Poppingayes

Cipanga.

Italy cauled Latium

Isabella

The forme of the Ilande of hispaniola

A particular carde of hispaniola.

Hispaniola compared to Italie.

The temperature of Hispaniola.

The equinoctiall.

Couldeaccidental, and not by the sytuacion of the region. Perpetuall springe and soomer.

Maruelous
fruitfulness
127

Beastes

Oxen and swyne
of exceedyng
bygnesse.

Swyne fed with
Myrobalanes

Vines

Wheate

An eare of wheate
as byg as a mans
arme in the brawne
The bread of the
Ilande.

Golde.

Great plentie of
cattayle.

Brasile.

Mastyx.

Gossampine

Electrum.

Incommodities of
intemperat regions

Holsome ayer
and water
Golde euery where

The description
of the inner partes
of the Ilande.

The cite of s.
Dominicke
The mountaynes
of Haiti

The mountaynes
of Cibaua
128

The Ilande of
Cahini
Of prouinces
diuided into
regions

Of their
aspirations

is fortunate with contynual foomer and haruest. The trees floryshe there all the hole yeare: And the medowes contynue alway greene. All thynges are exceedyng fortunate, and growe to great perfection. How wonderfully all garden herbes and frutes doo encrease, foo that within the spaoe of fyxtene dayes after the feede is sowne, al herbes of fmaule steames, as letteffe, borage, radyshe, and fuche other, coome to their full ryopenesse: And also howe herbes of the bygger forte, as gourdes, melones, cucumers, pompons, citrons, and fuche other, coome to their perfection in the space of thirtie dayes, wee haue sufficiently declared elles where. Of the beastes transported out of Spaine thether, wee haue fayde howe they growe too a muche greater kynde: In so muche that when they faule into communication of the oxen or kyne, they compare them in bignesse to elephantes, and swyne to mules: But this sumwhat by an excessyue kynde of speache. We haue also made mention how their swynes flesshe is more fauourye and farre better and more pleasaunte taste and more holfome then owres, by reason they are fedde with the frutes of Myrobalane trees, and other pleasaunte and nurysshynge fruites of that contrey, whiche growe there of them felues, as do with vs beeches, holly, and okes. Vynes wolde also prosper there with maruelous encrease, if they had any regard to the plantinge therof. The lyke encrease commeth of wheate if it be fowen vppon the mountaynes where the colde is of fume strength: but not in the playnes, by reason of to much fatnes and rankenes of the grownde. It is in maner incredible to heare, that an eare of wheate shuld bee bygger then a mans arme in the brawne, and more then a spanne in length, bearynge also more then a thoufande graynes as they all confesse with one voyce, and earnestly affirme the fame with othes. Yet they fay the bread of the Ilande (cauled) *Cazabbi* made of the roote of *Iucca*, to bee more holfome, because it is of eafyer digestion, and is cultured with lesse labour and greater increase. The residue of the tyme which they spende not in fettyng and plantyng, they bestowe in gatheringe of golde. They haue nowe fuche plentie of foure footed beasts, that horses and oxen hydes with sheepe skynnes and goate skyns and such other, are brought from thense into Spayne: So that nowe the daughter in many thynges helpeth and succurreth her mother. Of the trees of brasile, spices, the graine which coloureth scarlet in bright shinyng redde, maflix, goffampine cotton, the precious metall cauled *Electrum*, and such other commodities of this Ilande, we haue spoken sufficiently before. What therefore can chaunce more happy vnto man vpon the earth, then there to lyue where he neede not to bee dryuen to clofe chaumbers with sharpe coulde or fayntyng heate? Nor yet in wynter eyther to bee laden with heauy apparell, or to burne the shinnes with continual fyttyng at the fyer, which thynges make men oulde in short tyme by refolyng the natural heate, wherof a thoufande diseases infue. They also affirme the ayer to bee very healthfull: and the waters of the ryuers to bee no lesse holfome, as they whiche haue their continually course through the earth of the golden mynes. For there is in maner no ryuer, no mountaynes, and but fewe playnes that are vtterly without golde. But let vs nowe at the length coome to the particular description of the inner partes of this blessed Ilande. We haue before declared howe it is in maner equally diuided with foure greate ryuers descendencynge frome hygh mountaynes: wherof that which runneth towarde the East, is cauled *Iunna*, as that towarde the West is named *Attibunicus*: The thyryde is *Naiba* or *Haiba* which runneth Southwarde: The fourth is cauled *Iache*, and fauleth towarde the North. But this shippe maister, hath brought an other description obserued of th[e] inhabitants from the begynnyng. Let vs therfore diuide the hole Ilande into fye partes, caulynge the regions of euery prouince by their owlde names: and fynally make mention of fuche thynges as are woorthye memory in euery of them. The begynnyng of the Ilande on the East syde, is conteyned in the prouince named *Caizcimu*: so named for that in their language *Cimu*, signifieth the front or begynnyng of any thyng. After this, foloweth the prouince of *Huhabo*, and then *Caihabo*. The fourth is *Bainoa*. *Guaccaiaria* conteyneth the west corner. But the last faue one, *Bainoa* is of larger boundes then the three other. *Caizcimu* reacheth from the fyrst fronte of the Ilande to the ryuer *Hozama*, whiche runneth by the cite of faynt Dominicke. But towarde the North syde, it is ended at the rough mountaynes of *Haiti*. *Huhabo*, is included within the mountaynes *Haiti* and the ryuer *Iaciga*. *Cai[n]abo* the thyryde prouince, conteyneth all that lyeth betwene *Cuhabo* and *Dahatio*, euen vnto the mouth of the ryuer of *Iaccha* or *Iache* (one of the foure which diuide the Ilande equally) and ascendeth to the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, where the greateste plentie of golde is founde: Owte of the which also the ryuer *Demahus* springeth: and ioynyng with the springes of the ryuer of *Naiba*, (being an other of the foure which diuideth the Ilande towarde the fourth fea) fauleth to an other banke of the ryuer of faynt Dominicke. *Bainoa*, begynneth at the confines of *Caiabi*, and reacheth euen vnto the Ilande of *Cahini* which lieth neare vnto the fea bankes of the north syde of the Ilande where wee fayde that they erected the fyrst colonie or habitacion. The prouince of *Guaccaiaria*, occupieth the remanent towarde the west. This they named *Guaccaiaria*, bycause it is the extreme or vttermost parte of the Ilande. For *Iarima* in their language signifieth the taylor or ende of any thyng: And *Guà*, is an article whiche they vse often tymes in the names of thynges: And especially in the names of their kynges: as *Guarionexius*, and *Guaccanarillus*. In the prouince of *Caizimu*, are these regions: *Higui*, *Guanama*, *Reyre*, *Xagua*, *Aramana*, *Arabo*, *Hazoa*, *Macorix*, *Caiacoa*, *Guaiguaga*, *Baguanimaho* and the rough mountaynes of *Haiti*. Here let vs speake fume what of their aspirations which they vse otherwyse then the Latins doo.

It is to bee noted that there is no aspiration in theyr vowels, which hath not th[e]ffecte of a conforant. So that they pronounce theyr aspirations more vehemently then wee do the conforant f. Ye, all suche woordes as in their tonge are aspirate, are pronounced with lyke breath and spirite as is. f. fauing that herein the neather lyppe is not moued to th[e]uppermoſt teethe. With open mouthes and shakynge theyr brestes, they breath out these aspirations, *ha, he, hi, ho, hu*, as the Hebrewes and Arabians are accustomed to pronounce theyrs. I fynde also that the Spanyardes vse the lyke vehemence in the aspirations of those woordes whiche they haue receaued of the Moores and Arabians which possessed Spaine, and continued there many yeares: As in these woordes: *Almohadda*, whiche signifieth a pyllowe or bolster: Also *Almohaza*, that is, a horse combe: with dyuers such other woordes whiche they speake in maner with panting brestes and vehement spirite. I haue thought it good to reherse these thynges, bycause amonge the Latines it often tymes foo chaunceth that onely the accent or aspiration, chaungeth the signification of the woorde: as *hora*, for an houre, and *ora* for the plurale number of this woorde *os*, which signifieth the mouth: Also *ora*, which signifieth regions or coastes. The lyke also chaunceth in the diuersitie of the accent, as *occido* I kyll, and *occido* I faule. Euen so in the language of these simple men, there are many thynges to bee obserued. But let vs nowe returne to the description. In the prouince of *Huhabo*, are these regions: *Xamana, Canabacoa, Cuhabo*, with many other, the names wherof I haue not yet learned. The prouince of *Caihabo*, conteyneth these regions: *Magua*, and *Cacacubana*. Th[e]inhabitantes of this region, haue a peculyar language much differinge from the common language of the Iland, and are cauled *Macoryxes*. There is also an other region cauled *Cubana*, whose language differeth from the other. Lykewyse the region of *Baiohaigua*, hath a dyuers toonge. There are also other regions, as *Dahabon, Cybaho*, and *Manabaho*. *Cotoy* is in the myddle of the Ilande. By this runnethe the ryuer *Nisauis*: And the montaynes cauled *Mahaitin, Hazua*, and *Neibaymao*, confine with the same. In the prouince of *Bainoa*, are the regions of *Maguana, Iagohaiucho, Bauruco, Dabiagua*, and *Attibuni*, so named of the ryuer: Also *Caunoa, Buiacai, Dahabonici, Maiaguariti, Atiei, Maccazina, Guahabba, Anniuici, Marien, Guaricco, Amaguei, Xaragua, Yaguana, Azzuei, Iacchi, Honorucco, Diaguo, Camaie*, and *Neibaimao*. In *Guaccaierima* the last prouince, these regions are conteyned: *Mauicarao, Guahagua, Taquenazabo, Nimaca, Bainoa* the lesse, *Cahaymi, Jamaizi, Manabaxao, Zauana, Habacoa*, and *Ayqueroa*. But let vs entreate fumulwhat of the particulars of the regions. In the prouince of *Caizcimu*, within the great goulfe of the beginnyng, there is a greate caue in a hollowe rocke vnder the roote of a hygh mountayne, about twoo furlonges from the sea. The enterie of this caue is not much vnlyke the doores of a great temple, beinge very large and turnynge many wayes. *Andreas Moralis* the shyp master, at the commaundement of the gouernoure, tempted to searche the caue with the smaulest vessels. He sayth that by certeyne priuie wayes, manye ryuers haue concourse to this caue as it were to a finke or chanell. After th[e]experience hereof, they ceafed to maruaile whither other ryuers ranne whiche commynge fourescore and tenne myles, were swalowed vp, so that they appeared no more, nor yet fell into the sea by any knowen wayes. Nowe therefore they suppose that ryuers swalowed vp by the holowe places of that stony mountayne, faule into this caue. As the shipmaster entered into the caue his shippe was almost swalowed. For he faith that there are many whyrlepooles and ryfinges or boylinges of the water, which make a violent conflicte and horrible rorynge one encounteryng the other. Also many huge holes and holowe places: So that what on the one syde with the whirle pooles, and on the other side with the boyling of the water, his shyp was long in maner tossed vp and downe lyke a baule. It greatly repented hym that he had entered, yet knewe he no way how to come forth. He now wandered in darkenesse, afwel for the obscurenesse of the caue into the which he was farre entered, as also that in it were thicke cloudes engendered of the moist vapours proccading of the conflicte of the waters whiche continually faule with great violence into the caue on euery syde. He compareth the noyse of these waters, to the faule of the famous ryuer of *Nilus* from the montaines of Ethyope. They were al so deafe, that one could not here what an other said. But at the length with great daunger and feare, he came fourth of the caue as it had byn owte of hel. Aboute three score miles distante from the chiefe cite of saincte Dominicke, there are certeyne hyghe montaynes vppon the toppes wherof is a lake or standynge poole inaccessible, neuer yet seene of them whiche came latelye to the Ilande, bothe by reason of the roughnesse of the montaines, and also for that there is noo pathe or open waye to the toppes of the same. But at the length the shyppe maister beinge conducted thether by one of kynges, ascended to the toppes of the montaines and came to the poole. Hee faith that the coulede is there of fum force. And in token of wynter, hee founde ferne and bramble bushes, whiche two, growe onely in coulede regions. These montaynes, they caule *Ymizui Hibahaino*. This poole is of freshe water three myles in compasse, and wel replenyshed with diuerse kindes of fyfshes. Many smaule riuers or brookes faule into it. It hath no passage owte, bycause it is on euery syde enclosed with the toppes of montaynes. But lette vs nowe speake of an other poole whiche may well bee cauled a sea in the mydlande, and bee compared to the Caspian or Hircanian sea in the fyrme lande of *Ajia*: with certeyne other lakes and pooles of freshe water.

The pronunciation of the Hebrewes and Arabians

The Moores and Arabians possessed Spayne

Howe the aspiration chaungeth the signification of wordes

Dyuers languages in the Ilande

A greate caue in the rocke of a mountayne.

A daungerus euterprise

Riuers deuoured of caues.

129

Whirlepooles and conflicte of waters.

Cloudes in the caue.

The Cataractes of Nilus

A standynge poole in the toppes of a hygh mountayne.

Ferne and bramble bushes, growe only in coulede regions.

The Caspian and Hircanian sea.

THE EYGHTE BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.



He prouynce of *Bainoa* beyng thrife as bygge as the three fyrst, that is, *Caizcimu*, *Vhabo*, and *Caihabo*, includeth a valley named *Caiouani*, in the whiche there is a lake of falte, foure, and bytter water, as wee reade of the sea cauled *Caspium*, lyinge in the firme lande betwene *Sarmatia* and *Hircania*. We haue therfore named it *Caspium*, although it not bee in the region of *Hircania*. It hath manye swalowinge goulfes, by the whiche, bothe the water of the sea springeth into it, and also fuche as faule into it from the mountaines, are swalowed vppe.

They thyncke that the caues therof, are so large and deepe, that great fysshes of the sea passe by the fame into the lake. Emonge these fysshes, there is one cauled *Tiburonus* whiche cutteth a man in funder by the myddeft at one snappe with his teethe, and deuoueth hym. In the ryuer *Hozama*, runnyng by the chiefe citie of fayncte *Dominicke*, these *Tiburoni* do fumtymes coome from the sea and deuoure manye of th[e] inhabitants: Especially fuche as do dayly ploonge them felues in the water to th[e] intent to keepe their bodyes verie cleane. The ryuers whiche faule into the lake, are these. From the Northe fyde, *Guaninicabon*: From the Southe, *Xaccoei*: from the Easte, *Guannabo*: And from the West, *Occoa*. They faye that these ryuers are great and continuall: And that beyde these, there are. xx. other smaule ryuers whiche faule into this *Caspium*. Also on the Northe fyde within a furlonge of the lake, there are about two hundreth springes, occupyinge lykewise aboute a furlonge in circuite, the water wherof is coule in foomer, freshe also, and holfome to bee droonke. These springes make a ryuer that can not bee waded ouer, whiche neare at hande ioynynge with the other, fauleth into the lake. Here muste wee staye a whyle. The kynge of this regyon founde his wyfe praying in a chapel builded by the Christians within the precincte of his dominion, and required her coompanie to satiffye his fleshely luste. His wyfe reproued hym, and put hym in remembraunce to haue respecte to the holye place. The woordes whiche shee spake to hym, were these: *Teitoca*, *Teitoca*: whiche is as muche to faye, as, bee quyet, bee quyet: *Techeta cynato guamechyna*: That is, god wyl bee greatly angerie. *Guamechyna*, fygnifyeth god, *Techeta* greatly, *Cynato* angrie. But the husbande halynge her by the arme, fayde: *Guaibba*, that is, go: *Cynato macabuca guamechyna*: That is: what is that to me if god be angerye? And with these woordes as he profered her violence, foodenlye he became dumme and lame. Yet by this myracle beyng striken with repentaunce, he euer after ledde a relygious lyfe: In so muche that from thense foorth hee wolde neuer suffer the chappell to bee swepte or decked with any other mannes hande. By the fame myracle, manye of th[e] inhabitants and all the Christians beyng moued, reforted deuoutly to the chappell. They take it in good parte that the kynge suffered the reuenge of that reproche. Lette vs nowe retourne to *Caspium*. That falte lake is toffed with stormes and tempestes: And ofentymes drowneth smaule shyppes or fyfther boates, and swaloweth them vppe with the maryners: In so muche that it hath not byn harde of, that any man drowned by shypwrecke, euer ploonged vppe ageyne, or was caste on the shore, as commonly chaunceth of the deade bodyes of fuche as are drowned in the sea. These tempestes, are the deintie banquetes of the *Tiburones*. This *Caspium*, is cauled *Hagueigabon*. In the myddeft hereof, lyeth an Ilande named *Guarizacca*, to the whiche they resorte when they go a fysshynge: But it is not cultured. There is in the fame playne, an other lake nexte vnto this, whose water is myxte of falte and freshe: And is therefore nother apte to bee droonke, nor yet to bee refused in vrgente necessytie. This conteineth in length. xxv. miles, and in breadth eight myles: In summe places also nyne or ten. It receaueth manye ryuers whiche haue no passage owte of the fame, but are swalowed vppe as in the other. Water springeth out of the sea into this also: but in no great quantitie, whiche is the cause that it is so commyxte. In the fame prouynce towarde the Weste fyde, there is an other lake of freshe water, not farre distant from *Caspius*. This th[e] inhabitants caule *Iainagua*. The fame falte lake, hath on the North fyde therof, an other named *Guacca*. This is but lyttle: as not past three or foure myles in breadth, and one in length. The water of this, maye well bee droonke. On the southe fyde of the falte lake, there lyeth an other named *Babbareo*, of three myles in length and in maner rounde. The water of this is freshe as of the two other. This lake bycause it hath no passage owte nor yet anye swalowinge goulfes, conueyeth the superfluous waters to the sea if it be encreased with the streames whiche faule sumtymes more abundantly from the mountaines. This is in the region of *Xamana* in the prouynce of *Bainoa*. There is an other cauled *Guaniba*, lying betwene the East and the South nere vnto the fyde of *Caspius*. This is ten myles in length and almoeste rounde. There are furthermore many other smaule standyng pooles or lakes disparted here and there in the Iland, whiche I wyl lette passe lest I shulde bee tedious in remainyng to longe

A great lake of soure and salte water.

Swalowinge goulfes.

Sea fysshes in lakes of the midlande

The deuourynge fysshe cauled *Tiburonus*.

The ryuers that faule into the lake *Caspium*.

CC. [two hundred] springes within the space of a furlonge.

A myracle.

The Indian language. 130

A kyng striken dumme and lame by a myracle.

Such as are drowned in the lake are not vp ageyne.

The Ilande *Guarizacca* in the myddeft of the poole.
A lake of salt and freshe water.

A lake of freshe water

A lake of ten myles in length

in one thyng. I wyll therefore make an ende with this addition, that in all thefe, great plentie of fyfhe and foule is nouryffhed. All thefe lakes lye in a large playne, the whiche from the Eaft reacheth into the Weft a hundreth and twentie myles: beyng of breadth. xviii. myles where it is narroweft, and. xxv. where it is largeft. Looking toward the Weft, it hath collaterally on the lefte hande the montaines of *Daiguani*: And on the ryght hande, the montaines of *Caigua*, fo cauled of the name of the vale it felfe. At the rootes of the montaines of *Caigua* toward the North fyde, there lyeth an other vale much longer and larger then that before named. For it containeth in length, almoſte two hundreth myles: And in bredth. xxx. wher it is largeft, and about. xx. wher it is narroweft. This vale in fomme parte therof, is cauled *Maguana*: In an other place, *Iguamu*, and elles where, *Hathathiei*. And forafmuch as wee haue here made mention of this parte of the vale named *Hathathiei*, wee wyll fumwhat digrefle from the difcourfe of this description, and entreate of a thinge fo ſtraunge and maruelous, that the lyke hath not byn hard of. So it is therefore, that the kyng of this region named *Caramatexius*, taketh great pleafure in fyffhing. Into his nettes chanced a younge fyfhe of the kynde of thoſe huge monſters of the fea whiche th[e]inhabitours caule *Manati*, not founde I fuppoſe in owre ſeas nor known to owre men before this tyme. This fyfhe is foure footed, and in ſhape lyke vnto a tortoyfe althoughe ſhee be not couered with a ſhel, but with ſcales: And thoſe of fuch hardneffe and couched in fuche order, that no arrowe can hurte her. Her ſcales are byfet and defend with a thouſand knobbes. Her backe is playne, and her heade vtterly lyke the heade of an oxe. She lyueth both in the water and on the lande: She is flowe of mouyng: of condition meeke, gentell, affocycable and louing to mankind and of a maruelous fence or memorie as are the elephant and the delphyn. The king noriſhed this fyfhe certeine daies at home with the breade of the countrey, made of the roote of *Iucca* and *Panycke* with fuche other rootes as men are accuſtomed to eate. For when ſhee was yet but younge, he caſt her into a poole or lake neare vnto his palaice there to bee fedde with hande. This lake alfo receaueth waters and caſteth not the ſame forth ageine. It was in tyme paſte cauled *Guaurabo*: But is nowe cauled the lake of *Manati* after the name of this fyfhe whiche wandered ſafelye in the ſame for the ſpace of. xxv. yeares, and grewe excedyng byg. What ſo euer is written of the Delphines of Baian or Arion, are muche inferior to the dooinges of this fyfh: which for her gentle nature they named *Matum*, that is gentle or noble. Therefore when ſo euer any of the kynges familiers, eſpecially fuche as are known to her, reſorte to the bankes of the lake and caule *Matum*, *Matum*, then ſhe (as myndefull of fuche benefites as ſhe hath receaued of men) lyftethe vp her heade and commeth to the place whither ſhe is cauled, and there receaueth meate at the handes of fuche as feede her. If any defirous to paſſe ouer the lake, make fignes and tokens of theyr intente, ſhe boweth her felfe to them, therewith as it were gently inuitynge them to amount vppon her, and conueyeth them ſafely ouer. It hath byn ſeene that this monſtrous fyffhe hath at one tyme ſafely caryed ouer tenne men finginge and playinge. But if by chaunce when ſhe lyfteed vp her heade ſhe eſpyed any of the Chriſtian men, ſhe woolde immediatly ploonge downe ageyne into the water and refuſe to obey, bycauſe ſhe had once receaued iniury at the handes of a certeyne wanton younge man amonge the Chriſtians, who hadde caſte a ſharpe darte at her, although ſhe were not hurte by reaſon of the hardenes of her ſkynne beinge roughe and ful of ſkales and knobbes as we haue ſayde. Yet dyd ſhe beare in memorie th[e]iniurie ſhe fuſteyned, with ſo gentell a reuenge requitynge th[e]ingratitude of hym which had delte with her ſo vngentelly. From that day when ſo euer ſhe was cauled by any of her familiers, ſhe woolde fyrſt looke circumſpectly about her, leaſt any were preſent appareled after the maner of the Chriſtians. She woolde oftentimes play and wreſtle vppon the banke with the kynges chamberlens: And eſpecially with a younge man whom the kyng faouered well, beinge alfo accuſtomed to feede her. Shee woolde bee ſumetimes as pleaſaunt and full of play as it had byn a moonkey or marmafet: And was of longe tyme a great comfort and folace to the hole Ilande. For no ſmaule confluence aſwell of the Chriſtians as of th[e]inhabitantes, had dayly concourſe to beholde ſo ſtraunge a myracle of nature, the contemplation wherof was no leſſe pleaſaunt then woonderfull. They ſay that the meate of this kynde of fyffhe, is of good taſte: And that many of them are engendered in the ſeas therabout. But at the length, this pleaſaunt playfelowe was loſte, and caryed into the ſea by the great ryuer *Attibunicus*, one of the foure which diuide the Ilande. For at that tyme there chaunced ſo terrible a tempeſt of wind, and rayne, with fuch fluds enfewing that the like hath not lightly byn hard of. By reaſon of this tempeſt, the ryuer *Attibunicus* ſo ouerflowed the bankes, that it fylled the hole vale and myxt it felfe with all the other lakes. At which tyme alfo, this gentell *Matum* and pleaſaunte companyon, folowyng the vehemente courſe and faule of the fluddes, was therby reſtored to his oulde moother and natyue waters, and ſence that tyme neuer ſeene ageyne. Thus hauyng digrefled ſufficiently, let vs nowe coome to the ſituation of the vale. It hath collaterally the mountaynes of *Cibaua* and *Caiguam* which brynge it to the South ſea. There is an other vale beyonde the mountaynes of *Cibaua* towarde the North. This is cauled the vale of *Guarionexius*, bycauſe that before the memorie of man, the prediceffours and aunceſtours of kyng *Guarionexius* to whom it is deſcended by right of inheritaunce, were euer the lordes of the hole vale. Of this kyng, we haue ſpoken largely in the fyrſt narration of the Ilande in the fyrſt Decade. This vale is of length from the Eaſt to the Weſt, a hundreth and fourefcore myles: And of

A playne of a hundreth and twentie miles

A playne of two hundreth myles in length.

The maruelous fyſſhe Manati.

131

A monſter of the ſea fedde with mans hande.

Matum.

A fyſhe caryeth men ouer the lake

A maruelous thyng.

The ryuer *Attibunicus*.

The ſituation of the great vale.

The mountaynes of *Cibaua* and *Caiguam*.

The greate vale of *Guarionexius*.

132

Mountaynes.
Vales.
Hylles.
Playnes.
Ryner.
Golde in all
mountaynes, and
golde and fyssh
in all ryuers.
Salte bayes.

Howe the Ilande
is diuided with
mountaynes.
Golde.
The ryuers haue
theyr increase
from the caues of
the mountaynes
No hurtful or
raueninge beast
in the Ilande.

The autours
excuse.

By what meanes
the people of the
Iland are gretly
consumed.

The plesures of
Hispaniola.

The region of
Cotohi, situate in
the Clowdes.

A playne in the
toppes of
mountaynes

The hygher, the
coulde.

Moderate coulde
in the mountaynes.

Ferne of
maruelous bignes

Golde.

133

Th[e] inhabitants
of Hispaniola can
abide no labour
nor coulde.

The Iland of
Creta or Candie,
vnder the
dominion of the
Venetians.

breadth from the South to the North, thirtie myles wher it is narrowest, and fiftie where it is brodeste. It begynneth from the region *Canabocoa* by the prouinces of *Huhabo* and *Caiabo*: And endeth in the prouince of *Bainoa* and the region of *Mariena*. It lyeth in the myddeft betwene the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, and the mountaynes of *Cahonai* and *Cazacubuna*. There is no prouince nor any region, which is not notable by the maiestie of mountaynes, frutefulnes of vales, pleasauntnesse of hylles, and delectablenes of playnes, with abundaunce of fayre ryuers runnyng through the same. There are no sides of mountaynes or hylles, no ryuers, which abound not with golde and delycate fysshes, except only one ryuer which from th[e] originall therof, with the sprynges of the same breakyng foorth of the mountaynes, commeth owt falte and so contynueth vntyll it peryshe. This ryuer is cauled *Bahuan*: and runneth through the myddle of the region *Maguana* in the prouince of *Bainoa*. They suppoſe that this ryuer hathe made it selfe awaye vnder the grounde by fume passages of playster or falte earthe. For there are in the Ilande many notable falte bayes, wherof we wyl speake more hereafter. We haue declared howe the Ilande is diuided by foure ryuers and fyue prouinces. There is also an other particion, whiche is this. The hole Ilande confysteth of the tops of foure mountaynes which diuide it by the myddeft from the East to the weste. In all these is abundaunce of nooryshynge moysture and greate plentie of golde: of the caues also of the whiche, the waters of al the riuers (into the which the caues emptie them selues) haue theyr originall and increafe. There are lykewyse in them horryble dennes, obscure and darke vales, and myghtie rockes of stone. There was neuer any noysome beaste founde in it: Nor yet any rauenyng foure footed beaste. No lyon, no beare no fierce tygers, no craftie foxes, nor deuouring woolfes. All thynges are blessed and fortunate: And nowe more fortunate, for that so many thousandes of men are receaued to bee the sheepe of Christes flocke, all theyr Zemes and Images of deuylles being reiected and vtterly out of memorie. If I chauce nowe and then in the discourſe of this narration to repeate one thyng dyuers tymes or otherwise to make digressiō, I must desyre yowre holynes therewith not to bee offended. For whyle I see, heare, and wryte these thynges, mee seemeth that I am herewith so affected, that for verye ioy I feele my mynde stirred as it were with the spirite of Apollo as were the Sibylles, whereby I am enforced to repeate the same ageyne: Especially when I confyder howe farre the amplitude of owre religion spreadeth her wynges. Yet amonge these so many blessed and fortunate thynges, this one greueth me not a lyttle: That these simple poore men neuer brought vp in labour, do dayly peryshe with intollerable trauayle in the golde mynes: And are therby brought to fuche desperatiō, that many of them kyll them selues, hauyng no regarde to the procreation of chyl dren. In so much that women with chylde, perceauyng that they shall bryng foorth such as shalbe slaues to the Christians, vse medecines to destroy theyr conception. And albeit that by the kynges letters patentes it was decreed that they shulde bee fet at lybertie, yet are they constrained to serue more then seemeth conuenient for free men. The number of the poore wretches is woonderfully extenuate. They were once rekened to bee aboute twelue hundred thousande heades: But what they are nowe, I abhorre to rehearse. We wyl therefore let this passe: and returne to the pleasures of *Hispaniola*. In the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, which are in maner in the myddeft of the Ilande in the prouince of *Caiabo* (where we sayd to bee the greatest plentie of natyue golde) there is a region named *Cotohi*, situate in the clowdes, enuironed with the toppes of hyghe mountaynes, and well inhabited. It consisteth of a playne of xxv. myles in length, and xv. in breadth. This playne is hygher then the toppes of other mountaynes: So that these mountaynes, maye seeme to bee the chiefe and progenitours of the other. This playne suffereth alterations of the foure tymes of the yere: as the Sprynge, Soomer, Autumne, and wynter. Here the herbes waxe wythered, the trees loofe theyr leaues, and the medowes become hore: The whiche thynges (as we haue sayde) chaunce not in other places of the Ilande, where they haue only the Spring and Autumne. The foyle of this playne bryngeth foorth ferne and bramble buffhes bearyng blacke berries or wylde raspes, which two are tokens of coulde regions. Yet is it a fayre region: for the coulde therof is not very sharpe: neyther dooth it afflicte th[e] inhabitants with froste or snowe. They argue the frutefulnes of the region by the ferne, whose stalkes or steames are bygger then a spere or iauelen. The sydes of those mountaynes are ryche in golde. Yet is there none appoynted to dygge for the same, bycause it shalbe needefull to haue apparelled myners, and such as are vfed to labour. For th[e] inhabitants lyuyng contented with lyttle, are but tender: And can not therfore away with labour or abyde any coulde. There are two ryuers which runne through this region, and faule from the toppes of the present mountaynes. One of these is named *Comoiayxa*, whose course is towarde the West, and fauleth into the chanell of *Naiba*. The other is cauled *Tirecotus*: which runnyng towarde the East, ioyneth with the ryuer of *Iunna*. In the Ilande of *Creta* (nowe cauled Candie) as I passed by in my legacie to the Soldane of Alcayr or Babylon in Egypte, the Venetians toulde me that there laye fuche a region in the toppes of the mountaynes of *Ida*, whiche they affirme to bee more frutefull of wheate come then any other region of the Iland. But forasmuch as once the Cretenses rebelled agenst the Venetians, and by reafon of the streight and narowe way to the toppes therof, longe defended the region with armes against th[e] auctoritie of the Senate, and at the length beinge forweryed with warres, rendered the same, the Senate commaunded that it shulde bee lefte deserte, and the streightes of th[e] enter-

aunces to bee stopped, leste any shulde ascende to the region without their permiffyon. Yet in the yeare of Chrifte M. D. ii. lycence was graunted to the husband men to tyll and manure the region, on fuche condition that no fuche as were apte to the warres, myght enter into the fame. There is also an other region in *Hispaniola* named *Cotohy* after the fame name. This diuideth the boundes of the prouinces of *Vhabo* and *Caiabo*. It hath mountaynes, vales, and plaines. But bycause it is baren, it is not muche inhabited. Yet is it richeft in golde: For the originall of the abundaunce of gold, beginneth here: In fo muche that it is not gathered in smaule graines and sparkes as in other places: but is founde hole, massie, and pure, emonge certaine softe stoncs and in the vaines of rockes, by breakynge the stoncs wherof, they folowe the vaynes of golde. They haue founde by experience, that the vayne of golde is a lyuinge tree: And that the fame by all wayes that it spreadeth and springeth from the roote by the softe pores and passages of the yearth, putteth fourth branches euen vnto the vppermost part of the earth, and ceaseth not vntyl it discouer it selfe vnto the open ayer: At whiche time, it sheweth fourth certaine bewtiful colours in the fleede of floures, rounde stoncs of golden earth in the fleede of frutes, and thynne plates in fleede of leaues. These are they whiche are disparted throughout the hole Ilande by the course of the ryuers, eruptions of the springes owte of the montaynes, and violent faules of the fluddes. For they thincke that such graines are not engendered where they are gathered: especially on the dry land: but otherwise in the riuers. They say that the roote of the golden tree extendeth to the center of the earth and there taketh nourishment of increase. For the deaper that they dygge, they fynd the trunkes therof to be so muche the greater as farre as they maye folowe it for abundaunce of water springing in the montaynes. Of the branches of this tree, they fynde summe as smaule as a threde, and other as bygge as a mannes fynger accordynge to the largenesse or straightnesse of the ryftes and clyftes. They haue sometymes chaunced vpon hole caues susteyned and borne vp as it were with golden pylars: And this in the wayes by the whiche the branches ascende: The whiche beyng fylled with the substauce of the troncke creapyng from beneath, the branche maketh it selfe waye by whiche it maye passe owte. It is oftentimes diuided by encounterynge with sum kynde of harde stone. Yet is it in other clyftes nourished by the exhalations and vertue of the roote. But now perhappes yowe will aske me what plentie of golde is brought from thense. Yowe shall therefore vnderstande that onely owte of *Hispaniola*, the fum of foure hundredth and sumtymes fyue hundredth thousande ducates of gold is brought yearly into Spayne: as may be gathered by the fyfthe portion dewe to the kynges Exchequer, which amounteth to the fum of a hundredth and fourscore, or fourescore and ten thousande Castellanes of golde, and sumtymes more. What is to bee thought of the Ilande of *Cuba* and *Sancti Iohannis* (otherwise cauled *Burichena*) beyng both very ryche in golde, we wyll declare further hereafter. To haue sayde thus muche of golde, it shall suffice. We wyll nowe therfore speake sumwhat of falte wherwith wee may season and referue fuche thynges as are bought with golde. In a region of the prouince of *Bainoa*, in the montaynes of *Daiguo*, about twelue myles distant from the falte lake cauled *Caspius*, there are falte bayes in the montaynes in a maner as hard as stoncs, also clearer and whiter then cristall. There are lykewyse fuche falte baies whiche growe wonderfully in *Laletania* (now cauled *Catalonia*) in the territorie of the duke of *Cadona* the chiefe ruler in that region. But fuche as knowe theym bothe, affyrme that these of *Bainoa* are moste notable. They saye also that this can not be clefte without wedges and beatelles of Iron. But that of *Laletana*, maye easlye bee broken: And the other to worbe. In the prouince of *Caizimu*, in the regions of *Iguanama*, *Caiacoa*, and *Guariagua*, there are springes whose waters are of maruelous nature, beyng in the superfyial or vppermoste parte, freshe: In the myddest, myxte of falte and freshe: And in the lowest parte, falte and fower. They thincke that the falte water of the sea, issheweth owte softely, and the freshe, to springe owte of the mountaynes. The one fauleth downe and the other ryfeth: and are not therefore so vniuerfally myxt wherby the one may vtterly corrupt th[e]other. If any man laye his eare to the grounde neare to any of these springes, he shal perceau the ground there to bee so hollowe, that the reboundyng noyse of a horfeman comminge may be harde for the space of three myles, and a foote man one myle. In the laste region towarde the fourth named *Guacciarima*, in the lordshyp of *Zauana*, they say there are certeyne wyld men whiche lyue in the caues and dennes of the montaynes, contented onely with wilde fruites. These men neuer vsed the companie of any other: nor wyll by any meanes becoome tame. They lyue without any certaine dwellyng places, and with owte tyllage or culturyng of the grounde, as wee reade of them whiche in oulde tyme lyued in the golden age. They say also that these men are withoute any certaine language. They are sumtymes feene. But owre men haue yet layde handes on none of them. If at any tyme they coome to the fyght of men, and perceyue any makynge toward them, they flye swifter then a harte. Ye they affyrme them to bee swifter then grehowndes. What one of these solytarie wanderers dyd, it is worth the hearyng. So it is that owr men hauyng granges adioyning nere vnto the thicke wods, certen of them repaired thither in the mooneth of September in the yeare. M. D. xiiii. In the meane tyme, one of these wyld men came leapyng owte of the woodde. And approachynge sumwhat toward them with smylyng countenance, foodenly snatched vpe a childe of therse beyng the soonne of the owner of the graunge, whiche he begotte of a woman of the

Pure and massie golde in the region of Cotoy.
The vaine of golde, is a lyuinge tree.

These colers or floures are cauled Marchasites, Pyrites.

The roote of the golden tree.

The branches of the golden tree.

Caues susteyned with pylers of golde.

The stoncs of the golde mynes.

What gold is brought yerely from Hispaniola into Spayne.

Salte of the mountaynes, very hard and cleare.

134

Salt as hard as stoncs.

Sprynges of salt, freshe and sower water.

Hollowe caues in the grounde

Certeyne wyld men lyuing in caues and dennes

Men without a certeyne language

Men as swift as greihounds
A wyld man runneth away with a chylde

Pitche of the
rocke.

Pitche of two
kyndes of trees.
The pine tree.
The tree Copeia.

The leafe of a tree
in the steede of
paper.

They beleue that
leaues do speake.
A pretie storie.

135

Ignorance causeth
admiration.

The leafe wherin
they wryte.

A stronge colour
of the iuise of an
apple.

An Herbe whose
smoke is poyson.

Ilande. He ranne away with the childe, and made fygnes to owre men to folowe hym. Many folowed aswel of owre men as of the naked inhabytantes, but all in vayne. Thus when the pleafaunt wanderer perceaued that the Christians ceafed to purfue hym, he lefte the childe in a crosse waye by the whiche the fwyneheardes were accustomed to dryue the fwyne to their pasture. Shortly after, a fwynehearde founde the chyld and brought hym home to his father yet tormentynge hym selfe for forowe, fupposynge that wylde man to haue byn one of the kynde of the Canibales, and that his soonne was nowe deuowred. In the fame Ilande they gather pytche whiche sweateth owte of the rockes, beyng muche harder and furer then the pitche of the tree: and is therfore more commodious to calke or defende shyppes ageynste the woormes cauled *Bromas*, wherof wee haue spoken largely before. This Ilande also bryngeth forth pitche in two kyndes of trees, as in the Pyne tree and an other named *Copeia*. I neede not speake of the pyne tree, bycause it is engendered and knowen in maner euery where. Lette vs therfore speake sumwhat of the other tree cauled *Copeia*: Pitche is lykewyse gathered of it as of the pyne tree: although summe saye that it is gathered by distylling or droppynge of the woode when it is burnt. It is a fraunge thyng to here of the leafe thereof: and how necessary prouision of nature is shewed in the fame. It is to be thought that this is the tree in the leaues wherof the Chaldeans (beyng the fyrste fynders of letters) expressed their myndes before the vse of paper was knowen. This leafe is a spanne in breadth and almost round. Owre men write in them with pynnes or nedles or any fuche instrumentes made of metall or woodde, in maner as well as on paper. It is to bee lawghed at what owre men haue perfwaded the people of the Ilande as towchyng this leafe. The symple soules beleue that at the commandement of owre men, leaues do speake and disclose secretes. They were brought to this credulitie by this meanes. One of owre men dwellyng in the citie of *Dominica* the chiefe of the Ilande, delyuered to his seruauante (beyng a man borne in the Ilande) certayne rosted connies, (whiche they caule *Vtias* beyng no bygger then myse) wyllynge hym to carie the fame to his frende whiche dwelte further within the Ilande. This messenger, whether it were that he was therto constrayned through hunger, or entyfed by appetite, deuoured three of the counnies by the waye. He to whome they were sente, writ to his frynde in a leafe howe manye he receaued. When the mayster had looked a whyle on the leafe in the prefence of the seruauant, he sayde thus vnto hym. Ah soonne, where is thy saythe? Coude thy gredeye appetyte preuayle so muche with the as to cause the to eate the connies commytted to thy fydelytie? The poore wretche trembelynge and greatlye amafed, confessed his faute: And therwith desyred his mayster to tell hym howe he knewe the treweth therof. This leafe (quod he) whiche thou browghtest me, hath toulde me all. Then hee further rehearsed vnto hym the houre of his coomynge to his frende, and lykewyse of his departynge when hee retourned. And thus they meryly deceaue these feely soules and keepe them vnder obedience: In so muche that they take owre men for goddes, at whose coommaundement leaues doo disclose fuche thynges as they thyncke mooste hyd and secrete. Bothe the fydes of the leafe receaueth the formes of letters euen as dooeth owre paper. It is thycker then double parchement, and meruelous tough. While it is yet floryffhyng and newe, it sheweth the letters whyte in greene. And when it is drye, it becommeth whyte and harde lyke a table of woodde: but the letters waxe yelowe. It dooeth not corrupte or putryfe: nor yet loofeth the letters though it bee wette: nor by any other meanes excepte it bee burnt. There is an other tree named *Xagua*: the iuise of whose foure apple beyng of a darke redde coloure, slayneth and coloureth what soo euer is touched therwith: And that soo fyrmely, that noo washyng canne take it awaye for the space of twentie dayes. When the apple is full ripe, the iuise loofeth that strenght. The apple is eaten, and of good tast. There is also an herbe whose smoke (as we haue reherfed the like before of a certen woodde) is deadly poison. On a tyme when the kynges assembled together and conspired the destruction of owre men, whereas they durste not attempte th[e]nterprise by open warre, theyr diuise was, priuilye to lay many bundels of those herbes in a certeyne house, whiche shortly after they intended to fet on fyre, to th[e]intent that owre men makynge haste to quenshe the fame, myght take theyr death with the smoke therof. But theyr purposed practyse beinge bewrayed, th[e]autours of the diuise were punysshed accordyngly. Nowe (moste holy father) for as much as yowre holynesse wryteth that what soo euer we haue written of the newe worlde, dooth please yowe ryght well, wee wyll reherse certeyne thynges owte of order, but not greatly from owre purpose. Of the settyng the rootes of *Maizium*, *Agis*, *Iucca*, *Battatas*, and such other beinge theyr common foode, and of th[e]use of the fame, we haue spoken sufficiently before. But by what meanes they were fyrste applied to the commoditie of men, we haue not yet declared. We nowe therefore entende to cntreate sumwhat hereof.

THE NYNTH BOOKE OF THE THYERDE DECADE.



THEY saye that the fyrste inhabitours lyued contented with the rootes of dates, and Magueans, which is an herbe muche lyke vnto that which is commonly cauled Sengrene or Orpin. Also the rootes of Guaiegans, whiche are rounde and greate muche lyke vnto puffes of the earth or mussheromes. They did lykewise eate *Guaieros*, lyke vnto perseneppes: *Cibaiois* lyke nuttes, *Cabaioes* and Macoanes, lyke vnto onions, with dyuers other fuche rootes. They say that after many yeares, a certeyne *Boition*, that is, a wyfe oulde man, fawe vpon the bankes fyde, a bushe lyke vnto fenel: and transplantyng the roote therof, brought it from wyldenes to a better kynde, by nooryfshyng it in gardens. This was the begynnyng of *Iucca*, which at the fyrste was deadely poyson to all fuche as dyd eate therof rawe. But for as muche as they perceaued it to bee of pleasaunte taste, they determyned many wayes to proue the vse therof: And at the length founde by experience that beinge sodde or fryed, it was lesse hurtefull: by whiche meanes also, they came to the knowledge of the veneme lyeinge hyd in the iuse of the roote. Thus by dryyng, faltyng, feafonyng, and otherwyfe temperyng it, they brought it to theyr fine breade which they caule *Cazabbi*, more delectable and holfome to the stomacke of manne then breade made of wheate, bycause it is of easyer digestion. The fame is to bee vnderstoode of other rootes and the grayne of *Maizium* whiche they haue chofen for their chiefe meate amonge the feedes of nature, as we reade howe *Ceres* the daughter of *Saturnus*, gathered wheate and barley (with fuche other corne as are nowe most in vse amonge men) in Egypte of certeyne graynes taken owt of the mudde dryuen from the mountaynes of Ethiopia by th[e] increase of the ryuer *Nilus*, and lefte in the plaine at such tyme as *Nilus* reforted ageyne to his chanell. For the which facte, we reade that the antiquitie gaue diuine honour to *Ceres*, who fyrst norished and increased such chofen feedes. There are innumerable kyndes of *Ages*: the varietie wherof, is known by theyr leaues and floures. One kynde of these, is cauled *Guanaguax*. This is whyte boothe within and without. An other named *Guaragui* is of vyolet colour without and white within. The other kyndes of *Ages*, they caul *Zazaucios*. These are redde without and whyte within. *Squiuetes*, are whyte within and without. *Tunna*, is all together of vyolet coloure. *Hobos* is yelowe booth of skynne and inner substance. There is an other named *Atibunicix*: The skynne of this is of vyolet colour, and the substance whyte. *Aniguamar*, hath his skynne also of vyolet coloure, and is whyte within. *Guaccaracca*, hath a whyte skynne, and the substance of vyolet colour. There are many other which are not yet brought to vs. But I feare me least in the rehearfall of these, I shal prouoke the spurres of malicious persons ageynst me which wyll scorne these owr doinges for that we haue wrytten of many such smaule thinges to a prince occupied in fuche weyghty affayres, as vnto yowre holynes vpon whose sholders resteth the burthen of the hole Christian worlde. But I wolde aske of these malycious enuyers of other mens trauayles, whether *Plinie* and such other famous wryters, when they dyrected and dedicated such thinges to kynges and princes, entended only to profyte them to whom they consecrated the frute of theyr knowlege. They sumtymes intermyxte famous thynges with obscure thynges, lyght with heauie, and greate with smaule, that by the foortheraunce of princes, theyr vniuerfall posteritie myght enioye the fruition of the knowlege of thynges. At other tymes also, beinge intent about particular thinges, and defyrus of newe thynges, they occupied them selues iu the searching of particular tractes and coastes, with fuche thynges as nature brought foorth in the same, by this meanes to coome the better to more absolute and vniuersal knowlege. Let them therefore contemne owre doinge: And wee wyll laugh to scorne, not theyr ignoraunce and slothfulnes, but pernicious curiosnes: And therewith hauyng pitie of theyr frowarde dispositions, wyll commit them to the venemous serpentes of whom enuie tooke his fyrst originall. It shall in the meane tyme abundantly contente vs that these thynges do please yowre holynes: And that yowe doo not dispise owre simple vestures wherwith we haue only weaued together and not adorned, gathered and not described such maruelous thynges in the garnyshyng wherof, nature hath sufficiently shewed her cunnyng. Owre defyre is none other but herein for yowre sake to doo owre endeuoure that these thynges maye not peryshe. Let euery man take hereof what lyketh hym best. Of the sheepe or bullocke sould in the market, nothyng remayneth in the euenyng, bycause the shulder pleafeth one, the legge an other, and the necke an other. Ye, fume haue most phantafie to the bowels, and fume to the feete. Thus hauyng enough wandered, lette vs returne to owre purpose and declare with what wordes they salute the kynges chylde when they are fyrst borne: or howe they apply the begynnyng of theyr lyues to the end: And why their kynges are cauled by many names. Therefore when the kyng hath a sonne borne, such as dwel neare about his pallaice or vyllage, repayre to the queenes chamber, where

The kyndes of frutes wherwith the[e] inhabitants lyued fyrst.

Necessitie the mother of all artes.

136

The fine breade *Cazabbi*, made of the rootes of *Iucca*.

Howe *Ceres* fyrst founde wheate and barley in Egypte.

The rootes of ages

The autours excu^se.

Plinie.

By what names they salute the kynges chyldren when they are borne.

The names and tytles of the Romane Emperours.

137

Howe they make theyr testamentes

So dyd grea[t] Alexander

The kynges wyues and concubines are buried with hym.

They burie their iewels with them. A dreame of an other lyfe after this. Where it rayneth but seldom.

Where it rayneth much.

Variable motions of the elementes. The colonies and vyllages which the Spanyardes haue buylded

The other Ilandes about hispaniola.

The Ilande Arethusa.

A sprynge runnyng vnder the sea frome hispaniola to Arethusa.

138

The Ilande of Sancti Iohannis

The Ilande of Cuba.

one faluteth the newe borne chylde with one name, and an other with an other name. God faue the thowe shyninge lampe fayth one: An other cauleth him bryght and cleare. Sume name him the victourer of his enemies: and other fume, the puiffaunt conquerour descended of bludde royall, and bryghter then gold, with dyuers other fuche vayne names. Therefore lyke as euery of the Romane emperours was cauled *Adiabenicus*, *Parthicus*, *Armenicus Dacicus*, *Gothicus*, and *Germanicus*, accordynge to the titles of theyr parentes and auncestours, euen so by th[e] imposition of names inuented by other kynges, *Beuchicus Anaca[u]choa* the lord of the region of *Xaragua* (of whome and of the wyfe woman *Anachaona* his fyfther, we haue spoken largely in the fyrste Decade) was cauled by all these names folowynge: *Tureigua Hobin*: whiche is as muche to faye, as, a kyng shynynge as bryght as laton. *Starei*, that is, bryghte: *Huiho*, hyghnesse: *Duiheynequen*, a ryche fludde. With all these names and more then fortye other fuche, dooeth kyng *Beuchius* magnifye hym selfe as often as he commaundeth any thyng to bee doone or causeth any proclamation to bee made in his name. If the cryer by neglygence leaue owte any of these names, the king thynketh it to founde greatly to his contumely and reproche. The lyke is also of other. Howe fondely they vse them selues in makynge their testamentes, we wyll nowe declare. They leaue th[e] inheritaunce of their kyngedomes to th[e] eldest foonnes of their eldest fyfters. If shee sayle, to th[e] eldest of the seconde fyfther and fo of the thirde if the second also faile. For they are owte of doubtte that those children coome of their bludde. But the children of their owne wyues, they counte to bee not legitimate. If there remayne none of their fyfters children, they leaue th[e] inheritaunce to their broothers. And if they faile, it descendeth to their owne foonnes. Laste of all, if al these faile, they asygne it to the woorthiest, as to hym that is of greatest power in all the Ilande, that he may defende their subiectes from their auncient enemyes. They take as many wyues as them lysteth. They suffer the best beloued of the kynges wyues, and concubynes to bee buried with hym. *Anachaona* the fyfther of *Beuchius* the kyng of *Xaragua*, being a woman of fuche wisdome and cunnynge that in makynge of rhymes and balettes shee was counted a prophetisse emonge the beste, commaunded, that emonge all the wyues and concubynes of the kinge her brother, the fayrest (whose name was *Guanahattabenechina*) shulde be buried alyue with him, and two of her waytyng maydes with her. Shee wolde also haue appointed dyuers other to that offyce, if shee had not byn otherwise perwaded by the prayers of certeyne fryers of faincte Fraunces order whiche chaunced then to bee present. They faye that this *Guanahattabenechina* had none in all the Iland comparable to her in bewtie. She buried with her all her iewelless and twentie of her best ornamentes. Their custome is, to place befyde euery of them in their sepultures, a cuppe full of water and a portion of the fyne breade of *Casabbi*. In *Xaragua*, the regyon of this kyng *Beuchius*, and in *Hazua*, parte of the regyon of *Caiabo*, also in the fayre vale of falte and freshe lakes, and lykewise in the region of *Yaquino* in the prouynce of *Bainoa*, it rayneth but seldome. In al these regyons are fosses or trenches made of oulde tyme, wherby they conueye the waters in order to water their fyeldes, with no lesse arte then doo th[e] inhabitours of newe Carthage, and of the kyngedome of *Murcién* in *Spartaria* for the feldoome faule of rayne. The region of *Maguana*, deuydeth the prouynce of *Bainoa* from *Caiabo*, and *Zauana* from *Guacciarima*. In the deepe vales, they are troubled with raine more often then nedeth. Also the confynes of the chiefe citie named faincte Dominike are moister then is necessary. In other places, it rayneth moderately. There are therfore in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, dyuers and variable motions of the elementes, as we reade the lyke of manye other regions. Of their colonies or mantions which the Spaniardes haue erected in this Ilande we haue spoken suffyciently beefore. They haue fence that tyme buylded these vyllages: *Portus Plate*, *Portus Regalis*, *Lares*, *Villanoua*, *Azuam*, and *Saluaterra*. Hauynge fayde thus muche of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* the moother and ladye of the other Ilandes, and as it were *Tethys* the moeste bewtifull wyfe of *Neptunus* the god of the fea, let vs nowe entreate sumwhat of her Nymphes and faire *Nercides* whiche waite vppon her and adourne her on euery fyde. Wee wyll therfore begynne at the nearest cauled the newe *Arethusa*, soo named of the fontayne *Arethusa* in the Ilande of Sicilie. This is famous by reason of a sprynge: but otherwyse vnprofytable. Owre men named it of late, *Duas Arbores*, bycause it hath onely two trees groynge in it: nere vnto the whiche is a fontaine that commeth from the Ilande of *Hispaniola* throughe the fecreate passages of the earth vnder the fea, and breaketh foorth in this Ilande, as the ryuer *Alpheus* in *Achaia* runneth vnder the fea from the citie of *Elide*, and breaketh foorth in the Ilande of Sicilie in the fontayne *Arethusa*. That the fontayne of this newe *Arethusa* hath his original from the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, it is manifest hereby, that the water isshewynge owte of the fontayne, bryngeth with it the leaues of many trees whiche growe in *Hispaniola*, and not in this Ilande. They faye that the fontayne hath his originall from the ryuer *Yamiroa* in the region of *Guacciarima* confynynge with the land of *Zauana*. This Ilande is not paste a myle in circuite, and commodious for fyfther men. Directly towarde the Easte (as it were the porter keyynge the enterie to *Tethys*) lyeth the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis* (otherwyse cauled *Burichena*) wherof wee haue spoken largely beefore. This aboundeth with golde: and in fruitefull foile, is equall with her mother *Hispaniola*. In this are many colonies or mansions of Spaniardes, whiche applye them selues to gatherynge of golde. Towarde the west on the Northe fyde, great *Cuba* (for the longenesse therof, longe

supposed to be the continent or fyrme lande) wardeth owre *Tethys* on the backe halfe. This is muche longer then *Hispaniola*: And from the Easte to the Weste, is diuided in the myddest with the circle cauled *Tropicus Cancri*. *Hispaniola* and the other lyinge on the South fyde of this, are included almost in the mydde space betwene the sayde Tropyke and the Equinoctiall lyne, whiche many of the oulde writers supposed to bee vnhabitable and defert by reason of the feruent heate of the foonne in that clyme as they coniectured. But they were deceaued in their opinion. They affyrme that rytcher golde mynes are founde in *Cuba* then in *Hispaniola*. They faye also that euen nowe while I wryte these thynges, there is golde gathered together ready to the meltyng, amountynge to the quantitie of a hundreth and fourefcore thousande Castellans of gold, an argument furely of great rycheffe. *Iamaica* is more towarde the Southe then these: And is a pleasaunte and fruitefull Ilande, of foyle apte for corne, grasses, and fettes, it confysteth of onely one mountayne. Th[e] inhabitants are warrellyke men and of good wytte. *Colonus* compared it to Sicilie in bygnesse. They whiche of late searched it more exactly, faye that it is sumwhat lesse: but not muche. It is thought to be without gold and precious foonnes, as the like was supposed of *Cuba* at the begynnyng. The Ilande of *Guadalupea* (fyrste named *Caraquira*) lyinge on the Southe fyde of *Hispaniola*, is foure degrees nearer the Equinoctiall. It is eaten and indented with two goulfes (as wee reade of great Britanye nowe cauled Englande, and Caledonia nowe cauled Scotlande) beinge in maner two Ilandes. It hath famous portes. In this they founde that gumme whiche the Apothecaries caule *Anime Album*, whose fume is holfome ageynst reumes and heayneffe of the heade. The tree whiche engendereth this gumme, beareth a fruite muche lyke to a date, beinge a spanne in length. When it is opened, it seemeth to conteyne a certayne sweete meale. As owre husbande men are accustomed to referue chestenuttes and fuche other harde fruites all the wynter, soo do they the dates of this tree, beyng muche lyke vnto a fygge tree. They founde also in this Ilande, Pyne trees of the beste kynde, and fuche other deyntie dyshes of nature, wherof wee haue spoken largely before. Ye, they thyncke that th[e] inhabitants of other Ilandes, had their feedes of soo many pleasaunt frutes from hense. For the Canibales beinge a wyld and wanderyng people, and ouer runnyng all the countreys aboute them to hunte for mannes fleshe, they were accustomed to bryng home with them what so euer they founde straunge or profytable in any place. They are intractable, and wyll admytte no straungiers. It shall therefore bee needefull to ouercoome them with great poure. For as well the women as men, are experte archiers, and vse to inueneme their arrowes. When the men go foortie of the lande a man huntynge, the women manfully defende their coastes ageynst fuche as attempte to inuade the same. And hereby I suppose it was thought that there were Ilandes in the Ocean, inhabited onely with women, as *Colonus* the admirall hym selfe perswaded me, as I haue faye in the fyrste decade. This Ilande hath also frutefull mountaynes and playnes, and notable ryuers. It nouryssheth honye in trees, and in the caues of rockes, as in *Palma* one of the Ilandes of *Canarie*, honye is gathered among the briers and bramble bushes. Aboute. xviii. myles Easteward from this Iland, lieth an Iland which owr men named *Defiderata*, beyng. xx. myles in circuite and verye fayre. Also aboute ten myles from *Guadalupea* towarde the Southe, lyeth the Ilande of *Galanta*, beyng thirtie myles in circuite and playne. It was so named for the neateneffe and bewtifulnes therof. Nyne myles distant from *Guadalupea* toward the East, there are fyxe smaule Ilandes named *Todos Sanctos* or *Barbata*. These are full of rockes and barren: Yet necessarye to bee knowne to fuche as vse to trauayle the seas of these coastes. Ageyne, from *Guadalupea*. xxxv. myles towarde the Northe, there is an Ilande named *Monsserratus*, conteynyng in circuite fortye myles, hauyng also in it a mountayne of notable heyght. The Ilande named *Antiqua*, distante from *Guadalupea* thirtie myles, is aboute fortye myles in circuite. *Diegus Colonus* the foonne and heyre of *Christopher Colonus*, tould me that his wyfe (whome he leste in the Ilande of *Hispaniola* at his comming into Spaine to the courte) did write vnto hym, that of late emonge the Ilandes of the Canibales, there is one founde whiche aboundeth with golde. On the lefte fyde of *Hispaniola* towarde the Southe, neare vnto the hauen *Beata*, there lyeth an Ilande named *Portus Bellus*. They tell maruelous thynges of the monsters of the sea aboute this Ilande, and especially of the tortoyfes. For they faye that they are bygger then greate rounde targettes. At fuche tyme as the heate of nature moueth them too generation, they coome foortie of the sea: And makynge a deepe pytte in the fande, they laye three or foure hundreth egges therin. When they haue thus emptied their bagge of conception, they putte as muche of the fande ageyne into the pytte, as maye suffyce to couer the egges: And soo resorte ageyne to the sea, nothyng carefull of their successyon. At the daye appoynted of nature to the procreation of these bestes, there creapeth owte a multitude of tortoyfes, as it were pyffemares swarmynge owte of an ante hyll: And this onely by the heate of the foonne withowte any helpe of their parentes. They faye that their egges are in maner as bygge as geefe egges. They also compare the fleshe of these tortoyfes, to be equall with veale in taste. There are beyde these, innumerable Ilandes the whiche they haue not yet searched: nor yet is it greatly necessarye to fyfte this meale so fynely. It maye suffyce to vnderstond that there are large landes and many regyons whiche shal hereafter receaue owre nations, tounge, and maners: and therwith embrafe owre relygion. The Troyans dydde not foodenly replenyfhe Asia, the Tyrians Libia, nor the Greekes and Phoenices Spayne.

Habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall.

The ryche golde mynes of Cuba.

The Iland of Iamaica.

The Iland of Guadalupea.

England and Scotlande.

The gumme cauled Anime album.

Dates.

Pine trees.

The Canibales.

Whereby it was thought that there were Ilandes of women.

Hony in trees and rockes.

The Ilande desiderata.
The Ilande Galanta.

The Ilandes of Todos Sanctos or Barbata.

The Ilande monsserratus.

139

The Ilande Antiqua.

The Ilande Portus Bellus.
Great Tortoyfes.
The generation of Tortoyfes.

The egges of Tortoyfes.

Innumerable Ilandes.

Troians.
Tirians.
Greekes.
Phenitians

The North
Ilandes.

The Ilandes of
the south sea.
The Iland of
pearles.

Wyde beasts
must be tamed
with the rod.

As touchynge the Ilandes which lye on the north fyde of *Hispaniola*, I haue let passe to speake. For albeit they are commodious for tyllage and fysshynge, yet are they lefte of the Spanyardes as poore and of fmaule value. We wyll nowe therefore take owre leaue of this owlde *Tithis* with her moyft and watery Nymphes: And receaue to owre newe acquaintance the bewetifull ladye of the South fea rychely crowned with great pearles, the Ilande of *Dites* beinge ryche both in name and in treasure. In my epistell booke whiche I sente vnto yowre holynes this last year, I declared howe *Vaschus Nunnez Balboa* the capitayne of them whiche passed ouer the daungerous mountaynes towarde the South sea, learned by report that in the prospect of those coastes there laye an Ilande aboundynge with pearles of the greatest forte: And that the kynge therof was ryche and of great power, infestyng with warres the other kynges his bortherers, and especially *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus*. We declared further howe at that tyme it was lefte vntouched by reason of the ragynge tempestes whiche troubled that South fea three moonethes in the year. But it is nowe better knowen to owre men, who haue nowe also brought that fierce kynge to humanitie: and conuerted hym from a cruell tyger to one of the meeke sheepe of Christes flocke sanctified with the water of baptisme with all his famelic and kyngedome. It shall not therefore bee from owre purpose to declare by the gouernaunce of what capitaines or by what means these thynges were so happely atchyued.

THE TENTH BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.

An expedition to
the Ilande of
Dites in the south
sea

The Iland of
Margaritea.

Os Draconis.
Paria.

140

A conflict.



THE arryuall of *Petrus Arias* the newe gouernour of *Dariena*, he gaue commaundment that one *Gaspar Moralis* shuld take in hande th[e] expedition to the Ilande of *Dites*. He therefore tooke his vyage fyrst to *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus* kynges of the South, whom *Vaschus* beefore had concyled and left fryndes to the Christians. They frendely and magnifycally enterteined ovr men who prepared them a nauie of the kynges boates to passe ouer into this Ilande, which they caule *Dites* and not *Margarita* or *Margaritea*, although it abounde with pearles which in the latin tonge are cauled *Margaritæ*. For the fyrst cauled an other by this name, which lyeth next to the mouth of *Os Draconis* in the region of *Paria*, in the which also is founde greate plentie of pearles. *Gaspar* brought with hym onely threefcore armed men to the Ilande, for that he coude conuey ouer no greater number by reason of the fmaulenes and narrownes of theyr boates or barkes which they caule *Culchas*, made of one hole piece of tymber as we haue sayde before. The kynge of the Ilande came fourth ageynst them fiercely with cruell and threatenynge countenance, and with a great bande of armed men cryng in maner of a larome and in token of the battayle, *Guazzauara, Guazzauara*, which is as much to faye as, battayle ageynst the enemye: And is as it weare a watch worde to giue th[e] onfet, wherwith also they threwe theyr dartes. For they haue not th[e] use of bowes. They were so obstinate and desperate that they assayled owre men with foure *Guazzauaras*, that is, battayles. At the length owre men with certeyne of *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus* men (being eoulde enemies to this kynge of the Ilande) gotte the vpper hande by reason they assayled the kynge foodenly and vnwares. Yet was he determyned to assemble a greater power, and once ageyne to attempt the fortune of warre, but that he was otherwyfe persued by the kynges his bortherers which counfayled him to gyue ouer and submyt hym selfe: sumtyme by th[e] exemple of them felues and other threatenynge the destruction of his flooryshynge kyngedome: And otherwhyles declarynge vnto hym the humanitie and gentelnes of owre men, by whose frendship he might obteyne honoure and quyetnes to hym and his: wyllyng hym furthermore to consider what chaunced vnto them which the year before resysted and aduentured the hafarde of the battayle as dyd these kynges, *Poncha, Pochorrofa, Quarequa, Chiapes*, and *Tumacchus* with such other. By these persuasions, the king submytted hym selfe and came frendely to owre men whom he conducted to his palaice which they fay to be maruelously adourned and princelyke. As foone as they entered into the pallaice, he brought fourth a basket of curious woorkemanshpy and full of pearles which he gaue them. The summe of these pearles amounted to the weyght of a hundreth and ten poundes after. viii. vnces to the pounce. Beinge ageyne rewarded of owre men with such tryffles as they brought with them of purpose, as garlandes of Christall and glasse and other counterfet stonnes of dyuers colours, with lookyng glasses also and laton belles, and especially two or three Iren hatchets (which they more esteeme then great heapes of gold) he thought hym selfe abundantly recompensed. They laughe owre men to fcorne that they wyll departe with so great and necessarie a thyng for any summe of golde: affyrmyng an axe or hatchet to bee profytable for manye vses of men: and that golde serueth onely for wanton pleasures, and not to be greatly necessary. Beynge therefore ioyfull and gladd of the frendeshpye of owre men, he tooke the capitaine by the hand and brought

The kynge of the
Ilande of *Dites*
submyteth
himselfe.
The kynges
pallaice.

A hundreth and
ten pounce weight
of pearles.

him with certeine of his familiars to the highest towre of his palaice, from whence they myght prospecte the mayne fea. Then castyng his eyes about hym on euery side, and lookyng towards the East, he fayde vnto them. Beholde here lyeth open before yowe the infynite fea extended beyond the foonne beames. Then tournyng hym toward the Southe and Weste, he fygnified vnto them that the lande which laye before their eyes, the toppes of whose great montaynes they myght see, was exceedyng large. Then coomynge fumul what nearer, he fayde: Beholde these Ilandes on the ryght hande and on the lefte, whiche all obeye vnto owre empyre, and are ryche, happye, and blessed, if yowe caule those landes blessed whiche abounde with golde and perle[s]. Wee haue in this Ilande lyttle plentie of golde: But the deepe places of all the seas aboute these Ilandes, are full of perles: wherof yowe shall receaue of me as many as yow wyll requyre, so that ye persyste in the bonde of frendeshyppe whiche yowe haue begonne. I greatly desyre yowre frendeshyppe, and wolde gladly haue the fruition of yowre thynges, whiche I fette muche more by then myllyons of perles. Yowe shall therefore haue no cause to doubt of any vnfaithfulnesse or breache of frendeshyppe on my behalfe. Owre men gaue hym lyke frendly wordes: and encouraged hym with many fayre promysse to doo as he had fayde. When owre men were nowe in a redynesse to departe, they couenaunted with hym to paye yearely to the greate kynge of Castyle a hundreth pounce weyghte of perles. He gladly agreed to their request, and tooke it for no great thyng: nor yet thought hym selfe any whittle the more to becoome tributarie. With this kynge they founde fuche plentie of hartes and conies, that owre men stonyng in their houses myght kyll as manye as them lyfte with their arrowes. They lyue heare verye pleasauntly, hauyng greate plentie of al thynges necessary. This Ilande is scarsely fyxe degrees distant from the Equinoctiall lyne. They haue the same maner of breade made of rootes and the graine of *Maisium*, and wyne made of feedes and fruites, euen as they haue in the region of *Comogra* and in other places aswell in the Ilandes as in the firme lande. This kynge is nowe baptised with all his familie and subiectes. His desyre was at his baptisme, to bee named *Petrus Arias* after the name of the gouernour. When owre men departed, he accompanied them to the sea syde and furnysshed them with boates to retourne to the continent. Owre men diuided the perles emonge them, referuyng the fyfte portion to be deluyered to th[e]officers of the kynges Exchequer in those partes. They saye that these perles were maruelous precious, faire, oriente, and exceedyng bygge: In so muche that they broughte manye with theym bygger then hafell nuttes. Of what price and value they myghte bee, I confyde by one perle the which *Paulus* predicesiour to yowre holines, bowght at the second hand of a marchant of Venyce for foure and forty thousande ducates. Yet emonge those whiche were brought from this Ilande, there was one bought euen in *Dariena* for a thousande and two hundreth Castelans of golde. This was almost as bygge as a meane walnutte: And came at the length to the handes of *Petrus Arias* the gouernoure, who gaue it to that noble and faithfull woman his wyfe, of whose maner of departure with her husbande, wee haue made mention before. Wee muste then needes thinke that this was verye precious which was bowght so deare emonge fuche a multitude of perles where they were not bought by one at once, but by poundes and at the least by ounces. It is also to be thought that the Venecian marchaunte boughte his for no great sum of money in the East parts. But he fould it the dearer for that he chaunced to lyue in those lasciuious and wanton dayes when men were gyuen to fuche nyse and superfluous pleasures, and mette with a marchaunt for his purpose. But lette vs nowe speake fumul what of the shellyffhes in the whiche perles are engendered. It is not vnknown to yowre holynesse, that Aristotell, and Plinie his folower, were of dyuers opinions as concernyng the generation of perles. But these Indians and owre men, rest onely in one assertion, not assentyng to them in any other: as eyther that they wander in the sea, or that they moue at anye tyme after they are borne. They wyll therefore that there bee certayne greene places as it were medowes in the bottome of the sea, bryngyng forth an herbe muche lyke vnto thyme, and affyrme that they haue seene the same: And that they are engendered, norysshed, and growe therein, as wee see th[e]increase and succession of oysters to growe aboute them felues. Also that these fyffhes delyteth not in the conuersation or companye of the sea dogges: Nor yet to bee contented with onely one, twoo, or three, or at the moste foure pearles: Affyrmyng that in the fyffhyng places of the kynge of this Ilande, there was founde a hundreth pearles in one fyfhe, the whiche *Gaspas Moralis* the capitayne hym selfe, and his coompanions, diligently numbered. For it pleased the kynge at their beyng there and in their pefence, to commaund his diuers to go a fyffhyng for those kynde of fyffhes. They compare the matrice of these fyffhes, to the places of conception in hennes, in the whiche their egges are engendered in great multitudes and clusters: And beleue that these fyffhes bryng forth their byrth in lyke maner. For the better profe wherof, they saye that they founde certayne pearles coomynge forth of their matrecas, as beyng nowe coome to the tyme of their full rypenesse, and moued by nature to coome owte of their mootheres wombe openyng it selfe in tyme conuenient. Lykewise that within a while after, they sawe other succede in lyke maner. So that to conclude, they sawe fumul coomynge forth, and other fumul yet abyding the tyme of their perfection: whiche beyng complete, they also became loofe and opened the matrice. They perceaued the pearles to bee inclosed in the myddeft of their bellies, there to be norysshed and increase as an infante suckyng his mootheres pappes within her wombe,

The kynges wordes.

Ilandes ryche in golde and pearles.

C. (hundred) pounce weyght of perles yerely for a tribute. Plentie of hartes and cunnies.

141 Wyne of frutes and sedes The kynge is baptised.

The fyft part of perles due to the kynge. Byg perles.

A perle for a pope.

An other perle of great price.

Nise and superfluous pleasures.

Dyuers opinions of the generation of pearles.

Herbes in the bottome of the sea.

A hundreth perles in one shell fyfhe.

The matrice of the perle fyfhe.

The byrth of perles.

142

Where the byggest, meane, and least pearles are engendred

Sea crabbes

The sea muscles wherein perles are engendred.

The regions of the East syde of the goulfe of *Vraba*.

The region of *Caribana*.
The original of the *Canibales*.

The vylages of *Caribana*.

Manhunters.

143

Bookes.
Loke in the begynnyng of the booke of the landes lately founde.

before hee moue to coome forth of her priuie places. And if it chaunce any of these shellyffshes to be founde scatered in the fande of the sea (as I my selfe haue seene oysters disparcelled on the shores in diuers places of the Ocean) they affyrme that they haue byn violently dryuen thither from the bottome of the sea by force of tempestes, and not to haue wandered thither of them selues. But, that they becoome white by the clearenesse of the mornynge dewe, or waxe yelowe in troubled wether, or otherwyse that they seeme to reioyce in faire wether and cleare ayer, or contrary wyse to bee as it were astoniffhed and dymme in thunder and tempestes, with fuche other, the perfecte knowledge hereof is not to bee looked for at the handes of these vnlearned men whiche handell the matter but grossely, and enquire no further then occasyon ferueth. Yet do they affyrme by th[e]xperience and industrie of the dyuers, that the greatest pearles lye in the deepest places, they of the meane forte hygher, and the least hyghest of all and nearer to the brymme of the water. And faye therefore that the greatest do not wander: but that they are created, nourysshed, and increase in the deepest places of the sea, whether fewe, dyuers, and that but feeldome dare aduerture to diue so deepe to gather them, aswel for feare of the sea crabbes whiche wander emonge these perle fyshes to feede of them, and for feare of other monsters of the sea, as also lest their brethe shuld fayle them into long remayninge in the water. And this they faye to bee the cause why the owldest and therefore byggest sea muscles, inhabyte the deepest places from whense they are not lightly moued by tempestes. Furthermore, howe muche the bygger and oulder these fyshes are, they fay that in their larger matrices, the greater number and bygger pearles are founde: And that for this cause, there are fewer founde of the byggest forte. They thyncke also, that when they fyrste faule from their fyshes in the deepe places, they are deuoured of other fyshes, bycause they are not yet harde. Ageyne, the smaulest differ from the byggest in a certayne swellynge or impostumation whiche the Spaniardes caule a tympane. For they denye that to be a pearle which in oulder muscles cleaueth fast to the shel: But that it is a warte, whiche beyng rased from the shell with a fyle, is rounde and bryght but onely of one fyde, and not precious, beyng rather of the nature of the fysh it selfe, then of a pearle. They confesse that they haue seene certayne of these muscles cleauynge on rockes: Yet these but fewe, and nothyng woorthye. It is also to bee thought that the pearle fyshes or sea muscles whiche are founde in India, Arabie, the redde sea, or Taprobana, are ruied in fuche order as the afore named famous autours haue written. For their opinion herein is not vtterly to bee reiected, sofar as they were learned men and traauyld longe in the serchyng of these thynges. But wee haue nowe spoken suffyciently of these sea fyshes and of their egges which the fonde nyfenes and wantonneffe of men haue made dearer then the egges of hennes or geese. Lette vs therefore entreate sumwhat of other particular thynges whiche are coome to owre knowledge of late. We haue elles where largely described the mouthes of the goulfe of *Vraba*, with fundrye and variable regions diuided with the manyfolde goulfes of that sea. But as concernynge the West coastes in the whiche owre men haue buylded houses and planted their habitations on the bankes of *Dariena*, I haue no newe matter to write. Yet as touching the East partes of the goulfe, I haue learned as foloweth. They faye that the vnyuersal lande of the East region of the goulfe from the corner therof farre reachynge into the sea, and from the extreme or vter moste mouthe of the same receauynge the waters of the sea whiche faule into it, euen vnto *Os Draconis* and *Paria*, is by one generall name cauled *Caribana*, of the *Caribes* or *Canibales* whiche are founde in euery regyon in this tracte. But from whense they had their particular originall, and howe leauynge their natiue foyle, they haue spredde their generation so farre lyke a pestiferous contagion, we wyll nowe declare. Therefore from the fyrste fronte reachynge fourth into the sea (in whose tracte we said that *Fogeda* fastened his foote) toward the corner, about nyne myles distant, there lyeth a vyllage of *Caribana* named *Futeraca*. Three myles distant from this, is the vyllage of *Vraba*, of the whiche it is thoughte that the hole goulfe tooke his name, bycause this vyllage was once the heade of the kyngedome. Aboute fyxe myles from this, is *Feti*. Nyne myles from *Feti*, is *Zerema*: And about twelue myles from this, *Sorache*. Owre men founde all these vyllages full of people, all the whiche gyue them selues onely to manhuntynge. In so muche that if they lacke enemyes ageynst whom they maye keepe warre, they exerise crueltie ageynst them selues, and eyther sleye one the other, or elles dryue the vanquysshed to flyghte. Whereby it is apparante that by these their continuall warres, and dryuynge the one the other owte of their countreis, this infection hath gonne so farre not onely on the fyrme lande, but also into the Ilandes. I was also aduertised of an other thyng the whiche to my iudgement, seemeth woorthye to bee putte in memorye.

One *Corrales* a iudge in causes of lawe amonge the Spanyardes of *Dariena*, fayth that on a tyme walking abrode with his booke in his hande, he met by the waye with a fugityue which had fledde from the great landes lyng farre toward the weste, and remayned here with a Kynge wyth whom he was enterteined. When this man perceaued the lawier lookynge on his booke, marueyllynge thereat, he came runnyng vnto him, and by interpretours of the kynge whom he serued, spake thus vnto him: Haue yowe also bookes wherin yowe may referue thynges in perpetual memorye? And letters wherby yowe maye declare yowfe mynde to fuche as are absent? And herewith defyred that the booke might bee opened vnto hym, supposyng that he shulde therein haue founde the letters of his owne countrye. But when he sawe theim vnlyke, he fayde further that in his

country there were cities fortified with waules and gouerned by lawes: and that the people also vsed apparell. But of what religion they were, I dyd not learne. Yet had owre men knowlege both by the woordes and signes of this fugitiue, that they were circumcised. What nowe thinke yowe hereby (most holy father) Or what do yowe diuine may come hereof when tyme shall subdue al these vnder yowre throne? Let vs nowe entermyngle certeyne smaule thynges amonge these great matters. I haue not thought good to pretermitte that which chaunced to *Iohannes Solysius*, who, to searche the South fyde of the supposed continent, departed with three shippes from porte *Ioppa* (not farre distant from the Ilandes of *Gades* or *Cales* in the Ocean) the fourth day of the Ides of September in the yeaere. M. D. xv. Or what fucceffe *Iohannes Pontius* had, whom the newe gouernour *Petrus Arias* appoynted to vanquishe and destroy the Caribes or Canibales, deuourers of mans fleshe. Also to what ende the vyages of the other capitaynes came, whiche were sent foorth dyuers wayes at the same tyme: As *Gonzalus Badaiocius*, *Franciscus Bezerra*, and *Valleius*. *Iohannes Solicius* tooke the matter in hande in an euyll houre. He sayled beyonde the poynt of faynt Augustine, (which they caule *Cabo. S. Augustini*) toward the South fyde of the supposed continent beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne. For (as we haue sayde before) that poynt reacheth Southwarde to the feuenth degree of the South pole cauled the Antartike. He proceeded in that viage fyxe hundreth leagues: And founde the lande from the poynte to extende so farre towarde the South beyonde the Equinoctiall, that he came to the thirtie degree of the South pole. As he sayled thus forwarde, hauynge nowe on his backe halfe the starres named *Caput Draconis*, (that is, the dragons heade) and the regions of *Paria* lyinge northwarde frome hym, and prospectynge towarde the pole Artyke, he chaunced to faule into the handes of the fylthye Canibales. For these craftie foxes feemed to make signes of peace, when in their mindes they conceaued a hope of a daintie banquet: And espyng their enemies a farre of, beganne to swallowe theyr spetle as their mouthes watered for greedines of theyr pray. As vnhappye *Solysius* descended with as many of his coompanie as coulde enter into the boate of the byggest shippe, foodenly a great multytude of th[e]inhabitanes burste foorth vppon them, and flew them euery man with clubbes, euen in the fyght of theyr felowes. They caried away the boate, and in a moment broke it al to fytters. Not one man escaped. They furey not thus fatified, they cutte the slayne men in pieces euen vppon the shore where theyr felowes might beholde this horrible spectacle from the fea. But they being stryken with feare through this example, durst not coome foorth of theyr shyppes, or diuise howe to reuenge the death of theyr Capitaine and coompanyons. They departed therefore from these vnfortunate coastes: And by the waye ladyng theyr shippes with brafell returned home ageyne with losse and heauie chere. Of these thynges I was aduertysed of late by theyr owne letters. What they haue els doone, I shal haue more particular knowlege hereafter. *Iohannes Pontius* was also repulged by the Canibales in the Ilande of *Guadalupea* beinge one of the chiefe Ilandes of theyr habitacion. For when they sawe owre men a farre of on the fea, they ley in ambushe foodenly to inuade them when they shulde coome alande. Owre men sent foorth a fewe foote men and with them theyr laundresses to waffhe theyr fhertes and sheetes. For from the Ilande of *Ferrea* beinge one of the Ilandes of Canarie (euen vnto this Ilande, for the space of foure thousande and twoo hundreth myles) they had feene no lande where they myght fynde any fresshe water: for as muche as in all this large space, the Ocean is without Ilandes. At theyr commynge therfore to lande, the Canibales assayed them, caried away the women, and put the men to fuche distresse that fewe of them escaped. By reason wherof, *Pontius* being greatly discomfited, durst not inuade the Canibales, fearyng theyr venemed arrowes which these naked manhunters can direct most certenly. Thus good *Pontius* saylyng of his purpose, was fayne to gyue ouer the Canibales, whome (beinge safe and vnder the houe roufe) he threatened to vanquyshe and destroy. Whether he went from thense, or what newe thynges he founde, I haue as yet no further knowlege. By these myffortunes, *Solysius* loste his lyfe, and *Pontius* his honour. Let vs nowe speake of an other whose enterpryse came to lyke purpose the same yeaere. *Iohannes Aiora* borne in the citie of *Corduba*, a man of noble parentage, sent in sleade of the Licuetenaunt (as we haue sayde) more couetous of golde then carefull of his charge or defyrus of prayse for well deseruyng, fought occasions of querelyng ageynst the kynges and spoyled many, violently extortynge golde of them ageynst ryght and equitie: And further handeled them so extremely, that of frendes they became most cruel enemies: In so much that they ceafed not with desperat myndes by all meanes they coulde to fley owre men openly or priuily. By reason wherof it is coome to passe, that where before they bartered quyetyly exchanginge ware for ware, they are nowe fayne to doo all thynges by force of armes. When he had thus exacted a great quantitie of golde of them (as it is sayd) he fledde priuily and tooke away a shyppes with him by stelth as the common rumoure goeth: Nor yet hetherto haue we hard whyther he went or where he is arryued. Sum suspect that *Petrus Arias* the gouernour shulde consente to his departure bycause this *Iohannes Aiora* is brother to *Gonzalus Aiora* the kynges historiographer, a man booth lerned, and expert in the discipline of warre: and so much the gouernours frend, that these two amonge a fewe, may be counted exemples of rare amitie. I my selfe also am greatly bounde vnto theym bothe and haue longe enjoyed theyr frendshippe. Yet shal I defyre them bothe to pardone me in declarynge my phantasie herein, that in all the turmoyles and tragicall affayres of the Ocean,

Circumcised
people.

What chaunced to
the Capitaines
whiche the
gouernour sent
dyuers wayes.
Looke decade iii.
liber. vi.

The vyage of
Iohannes Solisius.
Cap. S. Augustini

John Solysius is
slaine of the
Canibales.
The fiercenes of
the Canibales.

Brasell

Iohannes Pontius
is repulged by the
Canibales.

144

The vyage of
Iohannes Aiora.
Looke decade iii.
liber. vi.

The lewde
behauour of *Iohn*
Aiora.

nothyng hath fo muche displeafed me as the couetoufnes of this man who hath fo disturbed the pacified myndes of the kynges. Nowe emonge thefe troubelous chaunces, let vs rehearfe the variable fortune of *Gonfalus Badaiocius* and his felowes, whose prosperous begynnynge, ended with vnfortunate fucceffe. *Gonfalus* therefore in the moneth of May in the yeare of Chrifte M. D. xv. departed from *Dariena* with fourefcore armed men, directyng his vyage towarde the Sonthe, and reftyng in no place vntyll he came to the region of *Cerabaro* which owre men named *Gratia Dei*, diftant from *Dariena* about a hundreth and fourefcore myles: for they caule it threefcore leaques. He fpente certeyne dayes here in Idelneffe: for he coulde neyther by fayre meanes nor by foule, allure the kyng of the regyon to coome to hym. While he laye thus idelly, there came to hym other fyfte men fente from *Dariena* vnder the gouernaunce of capytayne *Lodouicus Mercado* who departed from *Dariena* in the calendes of Maye, to th[e] intent to fearch th[e] inner partes of thofe regyons. When they mette together, they determyned after confultation, to paffe ouer the montaynes lyinge towarde the Southe, euen vnto the Southe fea latelye founde. Beholde nowe a wonderful thynge: That in a lande of fuche maruelous longitude in other places, they founde it here to bee onely aboute fyfte myles diftant to the Southe fea: for they counte it. xvii. leaques. as the maner of the Spanyardes is to reken, and not by myles. Yet faye they that a leaque confyfteth of three myles by lande and foure by fea as wee haue noted before. In the toppes of the mountaynes and turnyng of the waters, they founde a kyng named *Iuana*, whose kyngedome is alfo named *Coiba* as is the regyon of kyng *Careta*, of whome we haue made mention elles where. But for as muche as the regyon of this *Iuana*, is rycher in golde, they named it *Coiba Dites*, that is, *Coiba* the ryche. For, wherfoeuer they dygged the grounde, whether it were on the drye lande or in the weate chanelles of the ryuers, they founde the fande whiche they cafte foorth, myxte with golde. *Iuana* fledde at the commyng of owre men, and coulde neuer bee brought ageyne. They fpoyled all the countrey neare aboute his palayce. Yet had they but lyttle golde: for hee had caryed all his fluffe with hym. Here they founde certeyne flaues marked in the faces after a ftraunge forte. For with a sharpe prycke made eyther of bone, or elles with a thorne, they make holes in their faces: and fourthwith fprinkelyng a powder theron, they moifte the pounced place with a certeyne blacke or redde iuife, whose fubftaunce is of fuche tenacitie and clammineffe, that it wyll neuer weare awaye. They brought thefe flaues away with them. They faye that this iuife is of fuch sharpneffe and putteth them to fuche payne, that for extreeme doloure they haue no ftomacke to their meate certayne dayes after. The kynges whiche take thefe flaues in their warres, vfe their helpe in feekyng for golde and in tyllage of the grounde, euen as do owre men. From the pallaice of *Iuana*, folowyng the courfe of the water aboute tenne myles towarde the Southe, they entered into the dominion of an other kyng, whome owre men named the oulde man, bycaufe hee was oulde, not paffyng of his other name. In the regyon of this kyng alfo, they founde golde in all places bothe on the lande and in the ryuers. This region is verry fayre and frutefull: and hath in it many famous ryuers. Departyng from henfe, in fyue dayes iorneye they came to a lande lefte defolate. They fuppofe that this was destroyed by ciuile difcorde for as muche as it is for the moofte parte fruitful, and yet not inhabited. The fyfth daye, they fawe two men commyng a farre of. Thefe were laden with breade of *Maizium*, whiche they caryed on their fhulders in fackes. Owre men tooke them: and vnderftood by them that there were two kynges in that tract: The one was named *Periquete*, whose dwelte neare vnto the fea. The others name was *Totonoga*. This *Totonoga*, was blynde and dwelte in the continent. The two men whiche they mette, were the fyfthers of *Totonoga*, whome he had fente with certayne fardelles of fyfhe to *Periquete*, and had ageyne receaued breade of hym for exchaunge. For thus do they communicate their commodities one with an other by exchaunge, without th[e]ufe of wycked money. By the conducting of thefe two men, they came to kyng *Totonoga* dwellyng on the Wefte fyde of fayncte Michaelles goulfe in the Southe fea. They had of this kyng, the fum of fyxe thoufande Castellans of golde bothe rude and artifcially wrought. Emonge thofe groumes of rude or natyue golde, there was one founde of the weyghte of two Castellans, whiche argued the plentiful rychenesse of the ground. Folowing the fame coafte by the fea fyde toward the Weft, they came to a kyng whose name was *Taracuru*, of whome they had golde amountyng to the weyght of eight thoufand *Pefos*. Wee haue fayde before that *Pefus* is the weyghte of a Castellane not coyned. From henfe they wente to the dominion of this kynges brother named *Pananome*, who fledde at their commyng, and appered no more afterwarde. They faye that his kyngdome is ryche in golde. They fpoyled his pallaice in his abfence. Syxe leaques from henfe, they came to an other kyng named *Tabor*. From thenfe they came to the kyng of *Cheru*. He frendly enterteyned owre men, and gaue them foure thoufande *Pefos* of golde. He hath in his dominion many goodly falte bayes: the region alfo aboundeth with golde. About twelue myles from henfe, they came to another kyng cauled *Anata*, of whome they had. xv. thoufande *Pefos* of golde whiche he had gotten of the kinges his bortherers whom he had vanquiffed by warre. A great part of this golde was in rude forme bycaufe it was molten when he fet the kynges houfes on fyer whom he fpoyled. For they robbe and fley the one the other, fackyng and fryng their villages, and wafting their countreys. They keepe warre barbaroufly and to vtter deftruction, executinge extreeme crueltie ageynft them that haue

The variable fortune of Gonsalus Badaiocius.

Cerabaro. Decade. iii. li(b). iii

The South sea.

A leaque conteyneth foure myles by sea and but three by lande. The golden region of Coiba Dytes.

Sande myxte with golde.

Howe theyr flaues are marked in the face.

145

Golde.

A frutefull region lefte desolate by ciuile difcorde.

Kyng Periquete.

S. Michael. Kyng Totonoga.

Six thousand Castellans of golde.

Kyng Taracuru.

viii. thousand pesos of gold Kyng Pananome

Kyng Tabor.

Kyng Cheru. iii. thousand pesos of gold Salte.

Kyng Anata. xv. thousand pesos of gold

Theyr maner of warre.

the ouerthrowe. *Gonsalus Badaiocius* with his felowes, wandered at lybertie vntyll they came to this kyng: And had gathered great heapes of gold of other kinges. For, what in brafettes, collers, earinges, breste plates, helmettes, and certeine barres wherwith women beare vppe their brestes, they had gathered together in gold the fum of fourefcore thoufande Castellans, whiche they had obteyned partly by exchange for owre thinges where they founde the kinges their frendes, and otherwife by forceible meanes where they founde the contrary. They had gotten also forty flaues whose helpe they vsed both for cariage of their vitales and bagagies in the steade of moiles or other beastes of burden, and also to relieue fuche as were fycke and forweried by reason of their longe iorneyes and hunger. After these prosperous viages, they came by the dominion of kyng *Scoria*, to the palaice of a kynge named *Pariza*: where (fearyng no fuch thing) *Pariza* enclosed them with a great armye, and assayed them straggelyng and vnwares, in fuche forte that they had no leafure to put on their armure. He slewe and wounded about fyftie, and put the refydue to flyght. They made fuche hast, that they had no respect eyther to the gold they had gathered, or to their flaues: but lefte all behynde them. Those fewe that escaped, came to *Dariena*. The opinion of all wyse men as concernyng the varyable and inconstant chaunces of fortune in humane thinges, were false, if al thinges shuld haue happened vnto them prosperously. For fuch is the nature of this blynde goddesse, that she oftentimes delyteth in the ouerthrowe of them whom she hath exalted: and taketh plesure in confounding hygh thinges with lowe, and the contrary. Wee see this order to bee impermutable, that who soo wyll applye hym selfe to gather rootes, shall sumtymes meete with sweete lyqueresse, and other whiles with foure cockle. Yet wo vnto *Pariza*: for he shall not longe sleape in rest. The gouernour him selfe was of late determined with three hundreth and fyftie choise fouldiers to reuenge the death of owr men: But where as he by chance fell fycke, his poure went forward vnder the conducting of his Lieutenant *Gaspar Spinosa*, a Iudge in cafes of lawe in *Dariena*. At the same time other were sent forth to the Ilande of *Dites* to exacte the portion of pearles lymited to the king for his tribute. What shal succede, tyme will bring to owre knowlege. The other two, attempted th[e] inhabitants beyonde the goulfe, *Franciscus Bezerra* passyng ouer by the corner of the goulfe and the mouthes of the ryuer of *Dabaiba*, with two other capitaines and a hundreth and fyftie fouldiers well appointed, went to make warre vppon the Canibales euen in *Caribana* their owne chiefeft dominion, toward the vyllage of *Turufy*, wherof we haue made mention before in the comming of *Fogeda*. They brought also with them diuers engens of warre: as three pieces of ordinaunce whose shot were bygger then egges: Likewife forty archers, and. xxv. hagbutters to th[e] intent to reache the Caniballes a farre of, and to preuent their venemed arrowes. But what became of hym and his company, or where they arriued, we haue yet no perfecte knowlege. Certaine which came of late from *Dariena* to Spaine, reported that at their departure, they of *Dariena* stode in great feare least they also were toiled with fum misfortune. The other capitaine *Valleius*, obteyned the fore parte of the goulfe. But he passed ouer by an other waye then dyd *Bezerra*. For he tooke the beginning of *Caribana*, and *Bezerra* the ende. *Valleius* returned ageine. But of the three score and ten men whiche he conueighed ouer with hym, hee lefte fortye and eyght flaine emonge the Canibales. These are the newes whiche they bringe that came laste from *Dariena*.

There came to me the day before the Ides of October in this yeare. M. D. xvi. *Rodericus Colmenares* (of whom we haue made mention before) and one *Franciscus Delapunte*. This *Franciscus*, was one of the vnder capitaines of this bande, whose chiefe capitaine was *Gonsalus Badaiocius* who hardly escaped the handes of kyng *Pariza*. These twoo capitaines therfore, *Rodericus* and *Franciscus* who departed from *Dariena* immediatly after the misfortune whiche befell to *Badaiocius* and his companye, do both affirme, the one that he hath harde, the other that he hath feene, that in the Southe sea there are diuers Ilandes lying westwarde from the Iland of *Dites* and faincte Michaels goulfe, in many of the which are trees engendred and nourished which bring forth the same aromaticall fruites, as doth the region of *Collocutea*. This lande of *Collocutea*, with the regions of *Cochinus* and *Camemorus*, are the chiefe marte places from whenfe the Portugales haue their spices. And hereby do they coniecture that the land where the fruitfulnesse of spyce begynneth, shulde not be farre from thenfe. In so much that many of them whiche haue ouerrunne those coastes, do onely desyre that leaue may be graunted them to searche further, and that they wil of their owne charges frame and furnishe shippes and aduenture the viage to searche those Ilandes and regions. They thinke it best that these shippes shulde bee made and prepared, euen in faincte Michaels goulfe: And not to attempte this vyage by faincte Augustines point, which waye were both longe and diffyculte, and ful of a thoufande daungers, and is faide to reache beyonde the forty degree of the pole Antartike. The same *Franciscus*, being partener of the trauailes and daungiers of *Gonsalus*, faith that in ouer runninge those landes, he founde great heardes of hartes and wylde bores: and that he toke many of them by an arte which th[e] inhabitants taught him: whiche was to make pittes or trenches in their walkes, and to couer the same with bouwes. By this meanes also they deceaue al other kindes of wild and foure footed beastes. But they take foules after the same maner that we do: As stocke doues with an other tame stocke doue brought vp in their houfes. These they tye by a stryng, and suffer them to flye a lyttle emong the trees. To

Fourescore thousand Castellans of golde.

Kyng Scoria.
Kyng Pariza.
Gonsalus Badaiocius hath the ouerthrow and is spoyled of great ryches of golde.

146

The Inconstancie of fortune.

The expedition of Fraunces Bezerra ageynst the Canibales.

Gunnes.

Valleius repulsed of the Canibales.

The Ilandes of the south sea.
In this sea ly[e] the Ilandes of Molucca, most frutefull of spices.
Collocutea.
Cochinus and Camemorus, from whence the Portugales haue their spices.

He meaneth by the stright of Magellanus.

Howe they take hartes and wylde bores.
Stocke doues

147
Theyr maner of
foulynge.

Popingiayes are
easely taken.

A straunge kynde
of foulynge.

Fysshes and
wormes
engendered of
slime
Foules.
Gourdes of the
tree.

Later opinions of
the swift course
of the Ocean
toward the West.

The continent or
firme land.

148

The vyages of
Diegus Colonus.

The vyage from
the new landes to
Spayne.

the which as other birdes of their kind resort, they kill them with their arrowes. Otherwyse they take them with nettes in a bare place poured from trees and bushes: and scaterynge certeyne feedes rounde about that place, in the myddeste whereof they tye a tame foule or byrde of the kynde of them whiche they defyre to take. In lyke maner do they take popingiayes and other foules. But they say that popingiayes are so simple, that a great multitude of them wyll flye euen into the tree in whose bouwes the fouler fytteth: and swarme about the tame chatterynge popingiaye, sufferynge them felues to bee easely taken. For they are so without feare of the syght of the fouler, that they tary whyle he cast the snare about theyr neckes, the other beinge nothyng feared hereby, though they see hym drawe them to him with the snare, and put them in the bagge which he hath about hym for the same purpose. There is an other kynde of foulynge, heretofore neuer harde of, and pleasaunt to confyder. We haue declared before howe that in certeyne of the Ilandes, and especially in *Hispaniola*, there are dyuers lakes or standynge pooles. In sume of these (beinge no deaper then men may wade ouer them) are seene great multytudes of water foules: as wel for that in the bottome of these lakes, there growe many herbes and weedes, as also that by reason of the heate of the sonne pearceinge to the naturall place of generation and corruption, where beinge doubled in force by reflection and preferued by moyster, there are engendered of the flymines of the earth and water, and by the prouidence of the vniuersall creator, innumerable lyttle fyshes, with a thousande fundry kyndes of frogges, wormes, knattes, flies and such other. The foules which vse these lakes, are of dyuers kyndes: As duckes, geefe, swannes, feemewes, guller, and such other. We haue sayde also that in theyr orchardes they noryshe a tree which beareth a kynde of greate gourdes. Of these gourdes therefore well stopped leaste any water shulde enter in at theyr ryftes and cause them to sinke, they cast many in the shalowe pooles: where, by theyr continuall wanderynge and wauerynge with the motions of the wynde and water, they put the foules owte of suspection and feare. The fouler in the meane tyme, disguyfinge hym selfe as it were with a visour, putteth a great gourde on his head much lyke to a helmet, with two holes neare about his eyes, his face and hole heade beyde beinge couered therwith. And thus entereth he into the poole euen vnto the chynne. For beinge from theyr infancie exercisid in swymmynge and accustomed to the waters, they refuse not to continue therein a longe space. The foules thynkyng this gourde to be one of the other that swymme vpon the water, the fouler goeth softly to the place wher he seeth the greatest flocke of foules: And with waggyng his heade, counterfectinge the mouing of the wauerynge gourdes, drawethe nere to the foules: where softly puttyng foorth his ryght hande, he foodenly snatcheth one by the legges and plungeth her into the water where he putteth her into a bagge whiche he hath with hym of purpose. The other foules supposinge that this dyed into the water of her owne motion to feke for foode (as is their maner) are nothyng moued hereby, but go forwarde on their waye as before, vntyll they also faule into the same snare. I haue here for this cause entered into the declaration of theyr maner of huntynge and foulynge, that by these more pleasaunt narrations I may sumwhat mytigate and affwage the horror conceaued in yowre stomake by the former rehearfall of theyr bluddy actes and cruell maners. Lette vs nowe therefore speake sumwhat ageyne of the newe and later opinions as concernynge the swyfte course of the sea toward the west about the coastes of *Paria*: also of the maner of gathering of golde in the golde myne of *Dariena*, as I was aduertised of late. And with these two quyete and peaceable thynges, we wyl make an ende of the tragical affayres of the Ocean: and therwith byd yowre holynes fare wel. So it is therefore, that *Andreas Moralis* the pylot, and *Ouides* (of whom we haue made mention before) repayred to me, at my house in the towne of Matrite, As we met thus togyther, there arose a contention betwene them two, as concernynge this course of the Ocean. They both agree that these landes and regions perteynyng to the dominion of Castile, doo with one continuall tract and perpetuall bonde, embrase as one hole firme lande and continent al the mayne lande lyeinge on the north syde of *Cuba* and the other Ilandes, beinge also northwest both from *Cuba* and *Hispaniola*. Yet as touchynge the course of the water, they varie in opinion. For *Andreas*, wyll that this vyolent course of water bee receaued in the lappe of the supposed continente which bendeth so much and extendeth so farre toward the North, as we haue said: And that by the obiect or resistence of the lande so bendynge and crookynge, the water shulde as it were rebounde in coompasse, and by force therof be dryuen about the north syde of *Cuba* and the other Ilandes excluded without the circle cauled *Tropicus Cancræ*, where the largenes of the sea maye receane the waters faulyng frome the narowe streames, and therby repreffe that inordinate course, by reason that the sea is there very large and great. I can compare his meanyng to nothyng more aptely then to the swyfte streame commyng foorth of a mylle and faulyng into the myl poole. For in al fuche places where waters runne with a vyolent faule through narowe chanelles, and are then receaued in large pooles, they are foodenly disparclid and theyr violence broken: So that wheras before they seemed of such force as to ouerthrowe all thynges beinge in theyr waye, it can not then be perceaued which way they runne. The Admiral him selfe *Diegus Colonus*, soune and heyre to *Christophorus Colonus* the fyrst synder of these landes (who had nowe in comyng and goinge, foure tymes passed through these seas) beinge demaunded of me what he founde or perceaued in saylynge too and fro, answered that there was muche difficultie in returnynge the same way by the which they go. But wheras they fyrst take the waye by the mayne

sea towarde the North before they directe theyr course to Spayne, he faythe that in that tract, he felt the shippe sumtymes a lyttle dryuen backe by the contrary course of the water. Yet supposeth that this chaunceth onely by the ordinarie flowynge and reflowynge of the sea: And the same not to be enforced by the circumflection or course of the water reboundynge in compasse as we haue sayde. But thinketh rather, that this mayne lande or supposyd continent, shulde sumwhere bee open: And that the sayde open place, shoulde bee as it were a gate, enterie, or streight, diuynge the North partes of that lande from the South: by the which also, the Ocean runnyng towarde the West, may by the rotation or impulsion of the heauens, bee dryuen about the hole earth. *Quidus* agreeth with *Andreas Moralis* as touchynge the continuall adherence and closenes of the sayde continente. Yet neyther that the waters shulde so beate ageynst the bendynge backe of the West lande, or bee in suche forte repulsd and dryuen into the mayne sea. But faith that he hath diligently confydered, that the waters runne from the deepest and myddest of the maine sea, towarde the West. Also that saylinge nere vnto the shore with smaule vesselles, he founde the same waters to returne ageine towarde the East. So that in the same place, they runne together with contrary course, as we oftentimes see the lyke to chaunce in riuers wher by the obiecte of the bankes, diuers whirlepooles and turnynges aryse in the water. By reason wherof, if any chaffe, strawe, woodde, or any other thyng of lyght substance be caste in any suche places in ryuers, it foloweth that al such as runne with the water in the myddest of the chanell, procede well forwarde: But suche as faule into the bendynge goulfes and indented margentes of the crooked bankes, are caryed ouerthwarte the chanell, and so wander about vntyll they meete with the ful and directe course of the ryuer. Thus haue we made yowe partener of suche thynges as they haue gyuen vs, and writen their dyuers opinions. We wyl then gyue more certeyne reason, when more certeyne truth shalbe knowen. We must in the meane tyme, leane to opinions vntil the day coome appointed of god to reueale this secrete of nature, with the perfecte knowlege of the pointe of the pole starre. Hauyng sayd thus muche of the course of the Ocean, a briefe declaration of the golde mynes of *Dariena*, shall close vppe owre Decades and make an ende of owre trauayles. Wee haue sayde, that nyne myles distante from *Dariena*, are the sydes of the hylles and the drye playnes in the whiche golde is gathered bothe on the drye lande, and also on the bankes and in the chanelles of ryuers. Therefore to al such as are wyllynge to gather golde, there is of ordinarie custome appointed to euery man by the furooiers of the mynes, a square plotte of grounde conteyning twelue pafes, at the arbitrimt of the choofer, so that it bee not grounde already occupied, or lefte of other. The portion of grounde beinge thus chofen (as it were affygnd of the augures to buylde a temple) they inclose their slaues within the same, whose helpe the Christians vse in tyllynge of their grounde and gatherynge of golde, as we haue faide. These places appointed vnto them, they keepe as long as them lyst. And if they perceaue tokens of lyttle golde, they requyre an other plotte of ground of twelue pafes to be assigned them, leauyng the first in commen. And this is th[e] order which the Spaniardes inhabiting *Dariena* obserue in gatherynge of golde. I suppose also that they vse the lyke order in other places: How be it, I haue not yet enquired so farre. It hath byn proued that these twelue pafes of grounde, haue yelded to their choosers, the summe of fourescore Castellans of gold. And thus leade they theyr lyues in fulfillynge the holy hunger of golde. But the more they fyll their handes with syndynge, the more increafeth their couetous defyre. The more woodde is layde to the fyer, the more furiously rageth the flame. Vnfaciabie couetoufnesse is no more diminiffhed with increase of rychesse, then is the drineffe of the dropsye satiffyed with drinke. I lette passe manye thynges wherof I intende to write more largely in tyme conuenient, if I shall in the meane seafon vnderstande these to be acceptable vnto yowre holynesse: my dewtie and obseruance to whose autoritie, hath caused me the gladlier to take this labour in hande. The prouidence of the eternall creatour of all thynges, graunt yowre holynesse many prosperous yeares.

The contrary course of waters.

The poynnt of the pole star.

The golde mynes of *Dariena*, and the maner of gatherynge golde.

149

Owre inclosiers wolde leaue no such commens. *Aurisacra Flame s*

The dropsie of couetousnes.



THE LASTE BOOKE OF PETER MARTYR OF ANGLERIA,
OF THE LANDES AND ILANDES LATELY FOUNDE:
AND OF THE MANERS OF THE INHABITAVNTES OF THE SAME.

Loke Decade iii.
Liber. x

Cities fortified
with waules.

The Iland of Cuba
or Fernandina.



The Spaniards of
Cuba attempt new
vyages.

The west angle of
Cuba.

Note.

The Iland of
Iucatana.
A great citie well
buylded.
Temples.
Humane people.

150

Cunning
artificers.

Appareled people.

Haue partli declared before in mi decades how certeine fugitiues which came owt of the large West landes arriued in the confynes of *Dariena*: And howe that marueylinge at the bookes of owre men, they declared that they fumtyme dwelte in regions whose inhabitautes vfed fuche instrumentes and were ruled by politike lawes. Also that they had cities fortified with waules, and faire pallaces with streates well paued, and common places whyther marchautes resort as to the burse or streate. These landes, owre men haue nowe founde. Therefore who were th[e]autours hereof, or what successe they had herein, who so desireth to know with the conditions of straunge regions and the maners of the people, let hym giue diligent attendance to such thynges as folowe. Of the Iland of *Cuba* (nowe cauled *Fernandina*, llyngge nexte vnto *Hispaniola* on the west fyde, and yet fumwhat so bendynge towarde the Northe that the circle cauled *Tropicus Canceri* deuideth it in the myddeste, wher as *Hispaniola* is distante from the Tropike and declinyge certen degrees toward the Equinoctial line) we haue spoken fumwhat before. In this Iland of *Fernandina*, there are nowe syxe townes erected. Wherof, the chiefe is named *Sanctiago* of faynt Iames the patrone of the Spanyardes. In this, there is natiue golde, found both in the mountaynes and ryuers: By reason wherof they are daylye occupied in gathering and digging the same. But shortly after that I had finished my sayde bookes, thre Spanyardes that were the most auncient citizens of *Cuba*, as *Franciscus Fernandes* of *Corduba*, *Lupus Ocho*, and *Christophorus Morantes*, determined to seeke newe landes, as the myndes of the Spanyardes are euer vnquiet and geuen to attempte great enterprifes. They furnyshed at their owne charges, three of those shyppes whiche they caule Carauels. And hauynge fyrste lycence of *Diegus Velasquen* the gouernour of the Ilande, they departed with a hundreth and ten men from the West angle of *Cuba*. For this angle is moste commodious to relieue shyppes and to make prouision for freshe water and fuell. Thus they sayled continually fyxe dayes and a halfe, betwene the West and the South, contented onely with the fyght of the heauen and the water: duryng whiche tyme, they suppose that they sayled not past threecore and fyxe myles. For they ley at anker all nyght where so euer the faulyng of the soonne tooke the day light from them, leaste by wanderyng in vnknown seas, they myght chauce to be cast vppon rockes or sandes. But at the length they chaunced vppon a great Ilande named *Iucatana*, whose beginnyng th[e]inhabitautes caule *Eccampi*. Owre men went to the citie stondynge on the sea fyde, the whiche for the bygnes therof, they named *Cayrus* or *Alcair*. Th[e]inhabitautes entertained them very frendly. When they were entered into the citie, they marueyled to behold the houfes buylded lyke towres, magnificall temples, streates well paued, and great exercife of bying and sellynge by exchange of ware for ware. Their houfes are eyther bylte of stone, or of bricke and lyme, and artificially wrought. To the fyrste porches of their houfes and fyrst habitations, they ascend by ten or twelue steares. They are couered eyther with tyles, slates, reades, or stalkes of certeyne herbes. They gratified the one the other with mutuall gyftes. The barbarians gaue owre men many brooches and iewelles of golde, verrye fayre and of cunning woorkmanshyppes. Owre men recompensed them with vestures of sylke and woolle, counterfecte stones, of coloured glasse and cristall, haukes belles of laton, and fuche other rewardes whiche they greatly esteemed for the straungenes of the fame. They fette nougth by lookynge glasses, bycause they haue certeyne floones muche brighter. This nation is appareled after a thoufande fashyons with vestures made of goffampyne cotten or bombage of dyuers coloures. The women are couered from the girde to the heele hauynge dyuers fashions of vayles aboute their heades and brestes, with great cautele least any parte of their legges or feete bee seene. They resorte muche

to their temples: vnto the which the chiefe rulers haue the wayes paued from their owne houfes. They are Idolatours and circumcifed. They occupie their maner of exchaunginge, with muche fydeltie. They vse to adourne the heares of their heades. Being demanded by th[e]interpretours of whom they receaued their circumcifion, they answered that there once passed an exceedyng fayre man by their costes, who lefte them that in token to remember hym. Other faye that a manne brighter then the soone, went emonge them and executed that offyce. But there is no certentie hereof. When owre men had remayned there certeyne dayes, they seemed to bee molestous to th[e]inhabitantes accordyng to the common sayinge. The longer a geste tarieth, the woofe is his enterteynement. The whiche thyng owre men perceauyng, they made the more hast awaye. Beyng therefore prouided of all thynges necessary, they tooke their vyage directly towarde the west by the prouince whiche th[e]inhabitautes caule *Comi* and *Maiaim*. They ouer passed these regions takyng onely freshe water and fuel in the fame. The barbarians both men, women, and children flocked to the sea fyde, astroyshed greatly to behold the huge bygnesse of the shyppes. Owre men marueyled in maner no lesse to viewe their buyldynges and especially their temples fyuate neare vnto the sea, and erected after the maner of towers. Thus at the length hauyng sayled about a hundreth and ten myles, they thought it good to ley anker in a prouince named *Campechium*, whose chiefe towne confysteth of three thousande houfes. Th[e]inhabitautes came swymmyng to the shyppes: marueylyng exceedyngly at the maner of saylinge, and at the sayles and other tackelynges. But when they hard the thunder of the gunnes, sawe the fmoke, and smelte the fauour of brimstone and fyer, they supposed that thunderboultes and lyghtnynges had byn sente from god. The kyng receaued owre men honorably and broughte them into his pallyce: where he feasted them well after his maner. They are accustomed to eate fleshe, and haue great plentie of beastes and foules: as peacockes, and other whiche they francke and feede in their houfes: Also dyuers kyndes of wylde foules of the mountaines, wooddes, and waters: Likewise partriches, quails, turtle dooues, duckes, and geefe. Of beastes, they haue connies, woolues, lyons, tigers, foxes, wylde boores, hartes, and hares. After this banquet, the kyng with his traine and famylie brought owre men into a brode crosse way where many ftreates do meete. In this, they shewed them as it were a great and highe aulter buylded foure square of marble compacte together partly with the toughe cleye of Babilon cauled *Bitumen*, and partly with fmaule stoones. It had on euery fyde foure fleares. Vpon the altare was an Image of a man made of marble: and fast by it the Images of two beastes of vnknownen shape, whiche seemed as though they wolde with yanyng mouthes haue torne in funder the bealy of the mannes Image. On the other fyde stooode a great serpent compacte of the fayde toughe cleye and fmaule stoones. This serpent beyng in length. xlviij. foote, and of the bygnesse of a large oxe, seemed to deuour a lyon of marble, and was al by sparced with freshe bludde. Harde by the altare, were thre postes fastned in the ground, the which three other trauerfed and were fustained with stiones. In this place offenders were put to death: In token wherof they sawe innumerable arrowes steined with bludde, sum scatered, sum lyeinge on heapes, and sum broken: Also a great number of mennes bones lying in a court or yarde nere vnto this funestal place. Their houfes are here also builded of lime and stone. They named this king, *Lazarus*, bicause they arriued at this lande on faint *Lazarus* day. Departing from hense and directing theyr course styl toward the West for the space of. xv. myles, they came to a prouince named *Aquanil*, whose chiefe towne is cauled *Mosco*, and the kyng thereof, *Cupoton*. He behelde owre men with a frowarde countenance, and sought occasion to doo them fume priuie mischiefe whyle they fought for freshe water. For he made signes vnto them that on the further fyde of the nexte hyll, they shulde fynde sprynges of water, intendyng to haue assayed them in that narowe passage. But by the colouryng of theyr forheades (as they are accustomed in theyr warres) and by the bearyng of theyr bowes and other weapons, owre men perceaued theyr wylnes, and refused to go any further. Yet a thousande of the Barbarians assayed them vnwares and vnprepared. By reason wherof, they were put to flyght, and dyuers of them slayne in the chafe. Many that fledde towarde the shippes, were entangled in the mudde and maryshes nere vnto the shore. Twentie and two, were slayne with arrowes, and the resydewe for the most parte, wounded. *Franciscus Fernandes* the gouernour of the nauie, receaued in this conflicte three and thirtie woundes. And in maner none escaped without hurt. If they had gonne to the hylles whiche were appoynted them, they had byn slayne euery man. They therefore that escaped, returned to the Ilande of *Fernandina* frome whense they came, where they were receaued of theyr felows with heauie chere. But when *Diegus Velasquen* the gouernoure of the Ilande, had intelligence hereof, he immediatly furnyshed a newe nauie of foure Carauelles with three hundreth men. Of this nauie he appoynted Iohn Grifalua his neuie, to be the gouernour: And assigned for vnder capitaynes, Alphons[o] Auila, Frances Montegio, and Peter Aluarado. For the pylot he assigned Antonie Alamino who had the regiment of the fyrst nauie. They attempted the fame vyage ageyne, but declned sumwhat more towarde the South about threscore and tenne myles. Before they sawe any lande, they espyed a towre a farre of, by the viewe wherof, they came to an Ilande named *Cozumella*, from the whiche they smelte sweete

Circumcifed
Idolaters.

Comi.
Maiaim.

Campechium.
A towne of three
thousand howses.

Plentie of beastes
and foules.

Theyr Idoles and
Idolatory.

Houses of lyme
and stone.
151

The prouince
Aquanil.
Mosco.

The Spanyardes
are put to flyght
and many slayne

An other
expedition.

The Iland of
Cozumella.

[* Eden points out later on that William Powell, the printer, had wrongly carried the headline, *The thyerde Decade*, over this, a perfectly distinct book. —(See p. 342.) We have therefore also inserted the true headline within brackets.—E. A.]

Sweete sauours.
A frutefull Ilande.

Towres and temples.

Cozumella named Sancta Cruz.

Idoles lyke beares.
Idolatory.

Gentell people.

Iucatana but fyue myles from Cozumella.

152

The Barbarians make resistance.

A conflict.

The length of Iucatana.

The region of Caluacam, or Oloan.

The ryuer Grisalua.
Targets and brest plates of golde.

fauours procedyng with the wynde, before they approched to the lande by the space of three myles. They founde the Ilande to be fortie and fyue myles in circuite. It is playne and of maruelous frutefull foyle. There is also golde in it, but it is not engendered there, but brought thether from other regions. It aboundeth with hony, fruites, and herbes: And hath also great plentie of foules and foure footed beastes. Their order and maner of lyuyng, is in al thynges lyke unto theyrs of *Iucatana*. Lykewyse theyr howses, temples, streates, and apparell. In many of theyr houfes, are great postes of marble after the maner of owre buyldyng. They founde there, the foundations of certeyne owlde towres ruinate: And one especially with. xviii. steares ascendyng to it, after the maner of folemne temples. They marueyled greatly at owre shippes and maner of faylyng. At the fyrst, they wolde admyt no straungers: but shortly after, receaued them gentelly. Their chiefe ruler (whom owre men supposd to bee a preefte) led them vp to the toppe of the towre, where they erected a banner and addicted the Ilande to the dominion of the kynge of Castyle, namyng it *Sancta Cruz*, bycause they entered into the same in the nones of Maye beinge then the feaste of the holye crosse. They saye that it was cauled *Cozumella* of kynge *Cozumellaus*, whose auncestours were the fyrst that inhabited the Ilande. In the towre, they founde many chambers furnyshed with Images, made bothe of earthe and marble to the fimilytude of beares. These they caule vppon with a houlyng and lamentable songe, perfumyng them with sweete odours, and otherwyse honouryng them as theyr domestically goddes. They were also circumcised. The kynge was in fayre apparel made of gossampine cotton curiously wrought. He was lame on the one foote by reason that as he once exercysed hym selfe in swymmyng, a deuouryng fysh cauled *Tuberon*, byt of al the toes, of one of his feete. He entreated owre men very frendly and made them great chiere. After they had byn here thre dayes, they departed. And faylyng styll towarde the Weste, they espyed great mountaynes a farre of. But as they drewe neare, they perceaued it to bee the Ilande of *Iucatana* beinge distant from *Cozumella* onely fyue myles. Directyng therfore theyr course towarde the southe syde of *Iucatana*, they compased it on that syde which lyeth nearest to the supposd continent: Yet coulde they not fayle rounde about it by reason of the multitude of rockes, shalowe places, and shelfes of sandes. Then Alaminus the pylot turned his failes to the North syde wherof he had better knowleage. Thus at the length, they came to the towne *Campechium* and kynge *Lazarus* with whom they had bin that attempted the fyrst vyage the yere before. At the fyrst, they were gentelly receaued, and requyred to resort to the towne. But shortly after, they repented that they had bydden them: and there vpon wylled them to stay about a stonys cast from the towne, and to procede no further. When owre men defyred that they myght make prouision for freshe water before theyr departure, they assigned them to a certeyne well which they had lefte behynde them. Declaryng further, that it shulde be lawfull for them to take water there or els no wheare. Owre men rested that nyght in the fyelde adioynyng to the well. The which thyng the Barbarians suspectyng, assembled an army of three thousande men, and encamped not farre from them. Bothe partes passed awaye the nyght without sleepe. They fearyng leaste owre menne shulde breake into the towne: And owre men, leaste the Barbarians shulde inuade them foodenly, on the one parte with trumpettes, and on the other syde with the noyse of timbrels kept them styll wakyng that were disposed to sleape. At the spryng of the day, the Barbarians approched to owre mens campe and cauled for th[e]interpretours of *Cuba*, whose language is much agreable vnto theyrs. They had diuised to lyghte a torche of frankensence and to place the same betwene bothe th[e]armies to th[e]intent that if owre men dyd not depart before the torche were consumed, to stande to theyr perell. The torch was waisted and the matter came to hand strokes. They flewe onely one of owre men with an arrowe bycause his target fayled hym. But many were wounded. After this conflict, owre men resorted to theyr ordinaunce which they had planted neare vnto the well. When they had discharged certeyne peeces, the Barbarians fledde backe into the towne. Owre men were of fierce and greedy courage to haue pursued them, but that Grisalua the gouernour wolde not suffer them. From thense they proceeded to the last ende of *Iucatana*, which they founde to reache more then two hundreth myles from the East to the West. Here they founde a comodious hauen and named it *Portus desideratus*. From hense they fayled to other landes, and came to the region nexte to *Iucatana* Westwarde, whiche they doubtte whether it be an Ilande or parte of the firme lande: but thinke it rather to be annex to the continent. In this there is a goulfe which they suppose to be incompassed with bothe the landes. But of this, there is no certentie. Th[e]inhabitantes caule this region *Caluacam* or otherwise *Oloan*. They founde here also a great ryuer whiche by his violente course and faule, driueth freshe water two myles into the sea. This they cauled *Grisalua* after the name of the gouernour. The barbarians marueilyng at the huge greatnesse and mouyng of owre shippes, came swarmyng the bankes on bothe sydes the ryuer, to the number of fyxe thousande men armed with targettes and brest plates of gold, bowes and arrowes, brode swoordes of heauy woodde, and longe iauelens hardened at the endes with fyer: Thus stonyng in battayle raye to defende their coostes, and with proude countenaunces forbyddyng owre men to coome alande. Bothe parties watched al that nyght in armes. In the dawne of the day, owre men espied about a hundreth Canoas (whiche we haue faide to be their boates) full of armed men. Here also the

language of th[e]interpretours of *Cuba* agreed well enowghe with thers. When they had admitted the peace profered them by th[e]interpretours, al the Canoas staid excepte one whiche approached toward the shippes. A certeyne ruler that was in this Canoa, demaunded of owre men what they fought in other mennes landes. They answered, gold. And that, for permutation of other ware, and not of gift or vyolently. The *Canoa* returned and the ruler certified the kyng hereof, who came gladlye to the shyppes. When he had faluted the gouernour, he cauled his chamberlen vnto hym, commaundyng him to bringe his armure and other ornamentes of golde wherwith he armed *Grifalua* from the toppe of the heade to the foule of the foote: In so muche that, what so euer any man of armes armed at all partes, is emong vs accustomed to weare of Iren or steele when he commeth in to the fieelde, all fuche kynde of furnitures made of golde and wrought with woonderfull arte, the kyng gaue to the gouernour. He recompensed hym with vestures of fy[1]cke, clothe, lynyen, and other of owre thinges. In the beginning of this *Iucatana*, when they sayled to *Cozumella*, they chaunced vpon a *Canoa* of fyfther men to the number of nyne, fyfthyng with hookes of golde. They tooke them all prifoners. One of them was knownen to this kyng, who promysed the daye folowyng to fende the gouernour as muche golde for his raunfome as the man hym selfe waied. But the gouernour denyed that he could releafe hym withowte the consent of his felowes: And therefore kept hym styll to proue what he could further knowe of hym. Departing from henfe and saylyng styll westwarde, they founde a great goulfe in the which three smaule Ilandes were fytuat. Of these, they went to the byggest. But oh abhominable crueltie: oh most corrupted myndes of men, and deuelyshe impietie? Let euery godly man close the mouth of his stomake lest he be desturbed. They offer younge children of bothe kyndes to their Idoles of marble and earth. Emonge their Idoles of marble, there standeth a lyon hauyng a hole through the necke, into the whiche they poure the bludde of the miserable facrifyce, that it maye from thenfe runne downe into a fyncke of marble. Lette vs nowe declare with what ceremonies they facrifyce the bludde of these pore wretches. They cutte not their throtes, but open the very brestes of these felye foules and take owte their hartes yet pantyng, with the hotte bludde wherof, they anoynte the lypes of their Idoles, and suffer the refydue to faule into the fyncke. This doone, they burne the harte and bowels, fupfogyng the smoke therof to be acceptable to their goddes. Of their Idoles, one is made to the shape of a man, bowyng downe his heade and lookyng toward the fyncke of bludde, as it were acceptyng the offeringe of the slayne facrifyce. They ate the fleshe of the armes, thighes, and legges, especially when they facrifyce an enemy taken in the warres. They founde a streame of congeled blud as though it had runne from a bouchery. For this myscheuous purpose, they bringe these wretches from the nexte Ilandes. They sawe also innumerable heades, and trunks of bodies thus manged, befyde many other yet remaining hole and couered with certeine mattes. All the tractes of these regions abounde with golde and precious stones. One of owre men wanderyng in the Ilande, chaunced to fynde two water pottes of alabafter artificially wrought and full of lyttle stones of dyuers colours. They faye also that they founde a stone of the value of two thousand Castilans of gold, whiche they sent to the gouernour. This Ilande they named the Iland of facrifyce. Th[e]inhabitauntes are circumcised. There are also other Ilandes fytuat about this *Col[?]uacana* or *Caluacam*, the whiche are inhabited onely with women luyng without the coompanye of men after the maner of the *Amazones*. But they that ponder the matter more wifely, thinke them rather to be certeyne women whiche haue vowed chafstite and professed a folytarie lyfe as the nunnes doo with vs, or as the virgins cauled *Vestales* or *Bona Dea*, were accustomed to do amonge the gentiles in oulde tyme. At certeyne tymes of the yeare, men of the other Ilandes reforte vnto them. But not for th[e]intent of generation, but moued with pitie to helpe them to dresse their gardens and tyll their grounde. The reporte goeth lykewife that there are other Ilandes of corrupte women to whom men reforte for carnall copulation: And that they cutte of one of the pappes of their women children leaft it shuld hinder their shootyng. Also that they kepe onely the women children and fende awaye the men children. Owr men therefore drewe nere to the shore of *Colluacana* where they quyetly exercised marchaundies with th[e]inhabitauntes. The kyng gaue them a great potte of gold: Also brassettes, chaynes, brouches, with many other iewelless, and al of gold. Owre men ageyne on the other parte satisfied him with fuch stufte as they had done other before. Here wolde they gladly haue planted a newe colonie or habitation, but that the gouernour wolde not permytte them, wherat they gruged not a lyttle. The houses and other edifyes of this prouynce, are buylded like vnto towres. It hath also. xv. great townes in it. Of these they affirme that they haue feene fum consisting of more then. xx. thousande houfes, not ioynng together, but defeuered with courtes and gardens. They haue also certeyne large market places encompassed with waules, and streates well paved. Likewife fornaces and ouens made of lyme and bricke. Furthermore al fortes of handy craftes men and very cunning artificers. This kinges name was *Potanchanus*: and the region is cauled *Palmaria*. The towne where the king kepeth his court, containeth. xv. thousand houfes. When they receaue any straungiers and make a leage of frendshyppe with them, they are accustomed with a knife made of a sharpe stone, to let them felues bludde in the toonge, hande, arme, or fum other parte of the body: And this euen in the fyght of them whom they admitte to frendshyp, in token that they are ready to shedde

Armure of golde.

Experte artificers

Fyshe hokes of golde.
153

The Ilandes of Sacrifice.
Chyldren sacrificed to Idoles.
Their Idoles of marble.

Gold and precious stones.

A stone of great price.

Ilandes of women.

Golde.

Houses lyke towres.
xv. greate townes in the prouynce of Colluacana.
Townes of xx. thousande houses.

The region of Palmaria.

A token of frendshyp.

Preestes.	their bludde in their fryndes caufes. Their priestes professe a vertuous lyfe, and liue vnmarried. What it is to
154	haue to do with women, no man knoweth before he be married. Fornication and adultery (which feldome
Chastitie.	chance emonge them) they counte abhominacion. The women are of maruelous chastitie. Euery noble man
The punyshment of adulterie.	after that he haue had one wife, may haue as many concubines as hym lysteth. But a married woman taken in
Marriage is honoured.	adulterie, is foulded of her hufbande. But this onely to the prince: at whose handes it shal be lawfull for her
Fastynge.	kynsefolkes to redeeme her. It is not lawfull for fuche as are not married, to fytted at the same table with them
Kynge Ouandus.	that are married, or to eate of the same dyshe or drinke of the same cup. In the moneth of August and
Idoles, iewels, and ouches of gold.	September, they absteyne. xxxv. dayes not onely from fleshe wherof they haue great plentie, but also from fyfhe
Gold in mountaynes and ryuers	and al other thynges that lyue by bludde: And duryng these daies, lyue onely with herbes and frutes. They reken
Theyr maner of gatheryng golde.	twentie dayes to the moneth, and twentie monethes to the yere. Owre men consumed certeyne dayes here
Sweete sauours.	very pleasauntly. When they departed, coastynge styll by the same shore, they came to an other kyng whom
A stone of great price.	they named <i>Ouandus</i> . When he had intellygence that owre men desired golde, he brought forth certeyne
Other viages from Cuba or Fernandina.	plates of molten gold. But when the gouernour signified vnto him by th[e]interpretors that he desired great
Many Ilands betwene Cuba and the firme lande.	plentie of that metal, the day folowing he brought him a mannes Image of golde beinge a cubette in length:
	Also a fanne of golde, and an Idole of one of his domesticall goddes of curious woorkemanshpye. Likewyse
	garlandes of stonnes of fundry colours, with many breste plattes, brooches, and other kyndes of ornamentes, and
	all of golde. He gaue hym furthermore aboundaunce of delycate meates well salted and poudred with spices.
	When he had required owre men to coome alande, he commaunded his seruantes with all speede to prepare a
	great multitude of branches of trees and to waite vpon owre men to his pallyce. As they went thus in order,
	sum behynde and sum before on bothe sydes, they seemed so to shadowe owre men with the bouwes as though
	they had gonne in a continuall arbour. The kyng hym selfe hauynge a septer in his hand, dyd sette them in
	their arraye, and sumtyme strike fuche as were negligent in bearyng their bouwes. They shewed them felues
	obedient in all thynges, and with graue countenance, humbled them felues to receaue his stripes. When he
	was demaunded where he had fuche plentie of golde, he pointed with his fynger to the next mountaynes, and to
	the ryuers descendynge from the same. They are so accustomed to the ryuers and exercised in swymming, that it
	is al one to them to liue in the water and on the lande. When they desire to gather golde, they plunge them
	selues in the ryuers and bryng from the bottome therof, bothe their handes full of sande, whiche fytyng from
	hande to hande, they gather owte the graynes of golde. And by this meanes in the space of twoo houres, they
	fyll a reede as bygge as a mannes fynger. Of the sweete fauours of these landes, many thynges myght be spoken,
	the whiche bycause they make rather to th[e]effeminate of the myndes of men, then for any necessarye
	purpose, I haue thought best to omitte them. The kyng also gaue the gouernour a younge virgine of twelue
	yeres of age, adourned with ryche and fayre iewelles. Of the stonnes whiche he had of this kyng, one was
	valued at twoo thousande Castellans of golde. Thus at the length they departed from this kyng, laden with
	golde and precious stonnes. <i>Grifalua</i> the gouernour, sente one of the Carauelles to his vncler <i>Diego Velasquen</i>
	gouernour of the Ilande of <i>Cuba</i> , with messengers to delyuer hym the golde, iewelles, and other ornamentes.
	The refydue in the meane tyme styll folowed the tracte toward the West. One of them in the whiche <i>Frauncis</i>
	<i>Montegius</i> the vnder gouernour was caryed, sayled harde by the shore: and the other twoo kept aloofe within
	prospecte of the land. Th[e]inhabitauntes of these coastes also, no lesse marueyllynge at the shyppes then dyd
	the other, came with twelue Canoas to <i>Montegius</i> , desyringe hym by th[e]interpretours to coome alande,
	promysynge in the name of their kyng, that hee shoulde be honorably enterteined. But <i>Montegius</i> answered
	that hee coulde not assente to their request bycause his coompanions were so farre from hym. Yet dyd he gyue
	them certayne of owre thynges straunge vnto them, and thankes for their gentylnesse. Shortly after espyng a
	great towne they directed their course thither. Th[e]inhabitauntes prohibyted them to coome alande, and came
	foorth agaynst them with bowes and quyers full of arrowes, brode swoordes made of heauy woode, and
	Iauelens hardned at the ende with fier. They shotte at owre men a farre of: And owre men discharged
	certeyne pieces of ordinaunce agaynst them. The Barbarians astonysshed at the noyse of the gunnes, fledde

violently caried away three hundreth men and women which they thrust into the Carauell and returned immediatly to *Fernandina*, leauynge the brigantine with. xxv. of theyr felowes to th[e]intent to hunt for more men. The hauen where the Carauell fyrste arryued, is cauled *Carenas*, beinge distante from the angle of *Cuba* and the chiefe citie of *Sanctiago*, two hundreth and fyftie myles. For this Ilande of *Cuba*, is very longe, reachyng in length from the East to the West, and situate directly vnder the circle cauled *Tropicus Cancrri* as we haue sayde before. Now shall you heare how fortune fought the reuenge of these pore wretches. Therefore as theyr keepers went aland and few remained in the Carauel, they perceuing occasion ministred wherby they myght recouer theyr libertie, foodeynely snatched vp ovr mens weapons and flewe fyxe of them which yet remayned in the Carauel, whyle the residue lepte into the sea. And by this meanes the Barbarians possessed the Carauell which they had foone learned to rule, and thus returned to theyr owne countreys. But they sayled fyrste to the nexte Ilande where they burnt the Carauell and caried away the weapons with them. From henfe they conueyed them felues to theyr owne countreys with the Canoas of this Ilande. Heare in lyke maner they pryuilie assayled them that were lefte with the brigantyne, and flewe many of them also. The residue that escaped, fledde to the brigantine where they bewayled theyr felowes deatnes and counted theyr owne escape a victorie. On the shore not farr from the place where they suffered this misfortune, there is a tree, in the toppe wherof they set vp a crosse, and graued this inscription in the barke of the tree: *Vannuis Aldarieci*. There is a ryuer named *Darien*, on the banke wherof standeth the chiefe citie of the supposed continent. The gouernour therefore hauing intelligence herof, sent with all speede two shippes of warre well furnyshed, to the ayde of them that were lefte. But they were wyse to late. Yet folowynge the viewe of the crosse, they came to the shore and redde the letters grauen on the tree, but durste not attempte fortune. Thus with all theyr hardie souldiers departinge from henfe with despayre, they sayled to the nexte Ilande, out of the which they caried away by violence fyue hundreth men and women, supposynge lykewyse that they myght lawfully so doo bycause they were Idolaters and circumcised. But the like chaunce happened vnto them when they landed at *Fernandina*. For the Barbarians espynge oportunitie, fette vpon the Spaniardes in one of the shippes with theyr owne weapons and flewe theyr keepers. The residue that escaped, castynge them felues into the sea, swamme to the nexte carauell, and with theyr felowes assayled the carauell that was taken from them. This conflicte was so sharpe, that for the space of foure houres, it was doubtfull whether parte shulde obteyne the victorie. The Barbarians both men and women fought verve fiercely, aswell to recouer theyr libertie, as also to holde faste the praye whiche they had gotten. But in fine, the Spaniardes had the vpper hande by reason they were more experte in handelynge of theyr weapons and rulyng of theyr Carauell. The Barbarians beinge thus ouercoome, lepte into the sea: but the Spaniardes tooke theym ageyne with the shippe boates. About a hundreth of the Barbarians perished, beinge partely drowned and partly slayne with the swoorde: And but fewe of the Spaniardes. These thynges thus pacified, the refydue of the Barbarians were caried to the towne of *Sanctiago* and condemned to labour in the golde mynes. Shortly after they made owte a newe vyage to an other of the Ilandes, whiche lye there about so thicke, that they commonly caule the number of them *Archipelagus*, as they in owre sea of *Ionicum* are cauled *Symplegades*. Here owre men were cruelly handeled: and as many of them as came alande eyther slayne or wounded. This Ilande they named *Florida*, bycause they arryued there on Easter day whiche the Spaniardes caule the floryshynge day of the resurrection. They say also that in this tracte they sawe. xxvi. Ilandes which *Colonus* had ouerpasse: And the same so to lye aboute *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*, as though they warded them from the furie of the Ocean. In many of these they founde natiue golde of lyke goodnes to that which is founde in *Granatum*. Th[e]inhabitantes also weare many iewels, and haue many Images of theyr domesticall goddes made both of golde artificially wrought and also of woodde gylted. Francis Cheregatus brought one of theyr Idoles with hym, wherby may bee considered of what wytte and aptenes they are. It is a maruelous thyng to see what maner of rasers they haue, made of certeyne yelowe stoncs cleare and transparent lyke vnto Crystal. With these they shaue and carue as though they were made of fine steele. When the edges are blunte with longe exercise, they sharpen them not with a whetstone, or powder, or any other stone, but temper them onely with water. They haue also a thousande kindes of instrumentes or tooles and such other thynges of fyne deuise, which were to longe to rehearse. Let vs therefore returne from whense we haue digressed, as to *Cozumella*, *Iucatan*, *Colluacana* or *Olloa*, beinge al landes lately founde, and so rich, fruteful and pleasaunt, that they may in maner be compared to the earthly Paradyse. Therefore, after that it was knowne to owre men of howe greate momente these tractes were, the Spaniardes which inhabited the Ilande of *Cuba* Anunctus beinge the gouernour of the Ilande furnyshed a newe nauie of ten Carauelles and fyue hundreth menne, with twoo smaule brigantines, as it weare in the steade of lyght horsemen or forerunners whose ayde they myght vse as scouts to searche the wayes for daunger of rockes and shalow sandes or shelves. They shipte also certeyne horses, as fyue stoned horses and. xvi. mars apte for the warres. For their generall gouernour and Admiral of the nauy, they elected *Fernando Cortesius* who at that tyme was the chiefe ruler of the citie of *Sanctiago*. For vnder capitaines, they appointed Alfons *Portucarerius*, Francis Montegius, Alfons

Sanctiago the chiefe citie of Cuba.

The Barbarians sley the Spaniardes with theyr owne weapons.

The chiefe citie of the supposed continent.

The Spaniardes are slayne ageyne with theyr owne wepons.

The barbarians are slaine and put to flyght.

156

Another vyage. *Archipelagus*. A multitude of Ilandes.

xxvi. Ilandes about Hispaniola and Cuba.

Images of golde.

Rasers of stone.

Instrumentes and tooles.

Landes lyke vnto the earthly Paradyse.

An other vyage of x. Carauels and v. hundreth men.

Horses and mares

Fernando Cortesius

The Iland of
Cozumella.

Carpets and
sheetes.
Innumerable
bokes.

Circumcised
Idolaters.

They Sacrifice
Chyldren

157

The Ilandes of
Distam and
Sestam.
Sacrifice of dogges.

They are soone
persuaded to owre
religion.

The picture of the
blessed Virgine

An other vyage

Aquillaris, vii.
yeres captiue in
the Iland of
Iucataka.

Valdiuia.

The shipwracke of
Valdiuia.

Aula, Aluerado Spatenfe, Iohn *Velasquen* and *Diegus Ordassus*. They styll folowed the same wynde from the last angle of *Cuba* toward the west. As foone as *Frauncis Fernandes* of *Corduba*, and then *Iohn Grifalua* came within prospecte of the Ilande of *Sacrifyces* (wherof we haue made mention before) foodenly a tempest of contrary wynde prohibited theym to take lande and droue them backwarde to *Cozumella* lyinge on the East fyde of *Iucataka*. This Ilande hath onely one hauen named fainte *Iohns* porte. And hath in it, onely fyxe townes. Also none other water then in welles and cesterns, bycause it lacketh riuers and springes by reason it is plaine, conteynge onely. xlv. myles in circuite. At the coomynge of owre men, th[e]inhabitauntes fledde to the thicke woods, and forfoke their townes for feare. Owre men entered into their houfes where they founde plentie of vyttayles and many ornamentes perteynyng to the furnyshynge of their houfes, as hanginges and carpettes of dyuers colours, sheetes also of goffampine cotton (whiche they caule *Amaccas*) and muche apparell. They haue furthermore innumerable bookes, of the whiche with many other thinges sente to owre newe Emperour, we wyll speake more largely hereafter. The fouldiers wandered about the Iland and viewe[d] al thynges diligently, kepyng them selues styll in battell raye leaft they myght be fodenly inuaded. They founde but a fewe of th[e]inhabitauntes and onely one woman in their coompanie. By th[e]interpretours of *Cuba* and other whiche the Spaniardes tooke fyrst from *Iucataka*, they perfwaded the woman to caule the kynges that were absente. They came gladly and made a leage of frendshyp with owre men, wherby they were restored to their houfes and a great parte of their stuffe. They are circumcised Idolatours, and sacrifyce children of bothe kyndes to their *Zemes*, which are the Images of their familiar and domestically spirites whiche they honour as goddes. When I enquired of *Alaminus* the pilote, also of *Frances Montegius* and *Portucarerius*, from whenfe they had the children they offered in sacrifyce, they answered that they bowght them in the Ilandes thereabout by exchange for golde and other of their trafycke. For in al this fo large a space of land, the deuelyshe anxietie for the desyre of wicked money, hath not yet oppressed th[e]inhabitauntes. They faye the same also of the Ilandes lately founde, wherof two are named *Destam* and *Sestam*, whose inhabitauntes go naked: and for scarceneffe of children, sacrifice dogges whiche they nourishe, aswell for that purpose as also to eate as wee do connies. These dogges are dumme and can not barke, hauynge snowtes lyke vnto foxes. Suche as they destinate to eate, they geld while they are whelpes, wherby they waxe very fat in the space of foure monethes. They referue al the bytches for increafe, and but fewe dogges. Owre men diswadde them from these superstitions, declaryng how they were abhominable and detested of god. They were soone perfwaded and desyred a law whiche they myght folowe. Owre men therefore declared vnto them that there was onely one god which made heauen and earth, the geuer of al good thynges, beyng of one incomprehensyble substaunce vnder triplicitie of person. As foone as they harde these woordes, they broke their *Zemes*, and pared, scraped, and washed the pauementes and wauls of their temples. Owre men gaue them a painted picture of the blessed vyrgine which they placed reuerently in their temple, and aboue it a crosse to be honored in the remembraunce of god and man and the saluation of mankynde. They erected also an other great crosse of woodde in the toppe of the temple, whyther they oftentymes resorte together to honour the Image of the vyrgine. Th[e]inhabitauntes signified by th[e]interpretours that in the Iland of *Iucataka* not far from them, there were feuen Christian captiues which in tyme past were dryuen thither by tempeste. The Ilande of *Cozumella*, is onely fyue miles distant from *Iucataka*. The gouernour *Cortesus* being aduertised herof, furnyshed. ii. Carauels with fyftie men, wylyng them incontinent to direct their viage thither and to make serch for these men. They toke with them thre interpretours of *Cozumella* (whose language agreeth with theirs) with letters to the Christians if any myght be found. He further declared vnto theym howe goodly a matter they shulde bringe to passe if they coulde bringe away any of them. For he no wayes doubted but that by their information, he shuld be fully certified of the commodities of all those tractes, and the maners of th[e]inhabitauntes. Thus they departed with commaundement to retourne within the space of fyxe dayes. But when they had remayned there now. viii. days, and hard no woorde of their *Cozumellane* interpretours whome they had sent alande with the message and letters, owre men returned to *Cozumella* without them, suspecting that they were other flaine or deteyned. And where as the hole nauye was now determyned to depart from *Cozumella* but that they were hyndered by contrary wynde, they fodenly espied towarde the weste a Canoa coomynge from *Iucataka*, and in it, one of the Christian captiues (named *Hieronimus Aquillaris*) who had lyued feuen yeres in that Ilande. With what ioye they embraced the one the other, the chance may declare. They were no lesse desyrous to heare, then he to tell of the myffortune whiche befell to hym and his companions. And here it shal not bee greatly from my purpose breiefely to rehearse how the thyng chaunced. In my Decades I haue made mention of a certayne noble man named *Valdiuia*, whome the Spanyardes whiche inhabited *Daricua* in the supposed continente of the goulf of *Vraba*, sent to the Iland of *Hispaniola* to *Colonus* the Admiral and viceroy with the residue of the Senate and counfel there (to whom perteyneth the redresse and orderynge of all thinges in these newe landes) to fignifye vnto them in what extreme necessitie and penurie they lyued. Vnhappy *Valdiuia* therefore, takyng this matter in hand in an euell houre, was with a fudden and vyolent whirlewinde

dryuen vpon certayne quicksandes in the prospecte of the Ilande of *Jamaica*, lyinge in the Southe fyde of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*. These blind and swalowyng sandes, the Spaniardes caule vipers: And that by good reason, bycause in them many shyppes are entangled, as the lycertes are implicate in the tayles of the vipers. While the Carauell thus wresteled with the water, it was so brushe in funder, that *Valdiuia* with thirtie of his felowes, coude scarcely with muche difficultie descende into the shyppe boate: where, without oers, and without sayles, they were caried awaye by the vyolence of the water. For (as we haue said before in owre Decades) the seas do runne there continually with a vyolent courfe towarde the West. They wandered thus. xiii. dayes not knowyng whyther they went nor yet fyndyng any thyng to eate. Famen confumed feuen of them whiche were caste in the sea to feede the fyshes. The refydue lykewife in maner confumed by famen and faulyng from one calamitie into an other, were driuen to *Iucatana* and fell into the handes of a cruell kynge who slewe *Valdiuia* the gouernour with certayne of his felowes. And when hee had fyrft sacrifyced them to his *Zemes*, shortly after he eate them with his frindes of that conspiracie. For they eate onely their enemyes and sraungiers: And doo otherwife absteyne from mannes fleshe. In this meane tyme, while *Hieronimus Aquillaris* with fyxe of his felowes were referued to be sacrifyced the thirde daye, they brooke their bandes, escaped the handes of that cruell tyranne, and fledde to an other kynge beyng his enemye, who receaued them, yet onely as bondemen. It is a sraunge thinge to heare of the moother of this *Aquillaris*. For as soone as she harde that her soonne was faulen into the handes of the nations that eate mannes fleshe, shee fell madde incontinent: So that when so euer after, shee fawe any meate rostyng at the fyre, or onely ready spytted to laye to the fyre, shee ceafed not to crye out in this maner. O me moste wretched moother: Behold the members of my son. But to returne to owre purpofe. When *Aquillaris* had now receaued the gouernours letter sente by the Cozumellane messengers, hee declared to the kynge his mayster (whose name was *Taxmarus*) what was their erraunt thither, and wherfore they were sent: vsyng in the meane tyme many large discourses in expresseyng the great poure and magnificence of their kynge who had of late arriued in those coastes. Also of their humanitie and gentilnesse toward their frindes and fuche as subnytted them selues to them, and againe their rygour and fiercenesse ageynst fuche as stoobernly eyther contemned them or denyed their requestes. With these woordes he broughte *Taxmarus* into fuche feare, that the maister was now fayne to defyre his seruauant so to handell the matter that they myght quyetyly enter into his dominion as his freendes and not as his enemies. *Aquillaris* promised in their behalfe that they shuld not onely coome in peace, but also to ayde hym ageynst his enemyes if neede shulde so require. Whervpon hee dismissed *Aquillaris* and with hym three of his familiers and coompanions. Thus they sayled together from *Cozumella* to *Iucatana* to the ryuer whiche they had founde before in the fyrste vyage thither by the gouernance of *Alaminus* the pilot. They found the mouthe of the ryuer stopped with sande, as wee reade of the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egipte when the wyndes (cauled *Etefi*) blowe in summer and especially in the canicular dayes. Therefore where as they coude not enter into the ryuer with the biggeste vesselles (although it bee otherwise apte to receane great shyppes) the gouernour caufed two hundred men to be fette alande with the brigantynes and shyppe boates: wyllyng *Aquillaris* to offer peace to th[e] inhabitants. They demaunded what owre men required. *Aquillaris* answered, vytayles. There was a longe space of sande by the fyde of the towne, whither they wylled them to reforte, promysyng to bryng them vytayles thither the daye folowyng. Owre men wente and they came accordyng to their promisse and brought with them eyght of their hennes beyng as bygge as peacockes, of brownysh coloure, and not inferiour to peacockes in pleafaunte tast. They brought also as muche bread made of *Maizium* (whiche is a graine not muche vnlyke vnto panyke) as wolde scarcely ferue tenne hungry men: And here with defyred them to depart. But when they perceaued that owre men made no hast away, immediately there came a great coompanye of armed men towarde them demaundyng what they had to do thus to wander in other mennes landes. Owr men made answere by *Aquillaris*, that they defyred peace, vytayles, and golde for exchaunge of other thinges. They answered ageyne, that they wolde nother peace nor warre with them. But threatned them to auoyde the lande excepte they wolde bee destroyed euery manne. Owre men sayde that they woulde not departe withoute suffyciente vytayles to mayntayne their fouldyers.

They appoynted the day folowyng to bryng them more vytayles: but they brooke promesse. Yet perceauing the second day that owre men were encamped on the sande and had repofed there that nyght, they brought them as much more vytayles, and commaunded them in the name of theyr kynge to departe. Owre men sayde that they were desyrous to see the towne, and to haue yet more store of vytayles. The Barbarians denyed theyr request, and therwith departed whispyng and mutteryng amonge them selues. In the meane tyme owre men were styll so oppressed with hunger that they were enforced to seeke for meate. The gouernour therefore sent his vnder capitaynes to lande with a hundred and fyftie men. As they went disperfed in dyuers companies about the vyllages of the countrye, the Barbarians met with one of theyr bandes, and put them to great distresse. But when theyr felowes beinge not farre from them, harde the noyfe of theyr alarome,

The quicksand
cauled vipers

The course of the
sea towarde the
west.

158

Valdiuia is
sacrificed to
Idoles.

Howe Aquillaris
escaped

Kynge Taxmarus.

The mouth of a
ryuer stopped with
sande.

Turky hens

159

A conflict.

The Barbarians
are put to flight.

The great towne of
Potanchana or
Victoria.
A towne of xxv.
thousand houses.

Gunnes and horses.

The man and the
horse, thought to
be one beast.
Centaurus.

Palaces of
maruelous bygnes
and wel buylded.

They recene owre
religion.

160

A towne of a
thousand and fyue
hundred houses.

they came with all possible haste to their rescue. The gouernour on the other fyde, placing his ordinance in the brygantines and shippe boates, approached to the shore with the residue of his fouldiers. The Barbarians lykewife, beinge redy furnyshed to the battayle, came runnyng to the sea fyde to disturbe them that they shulde not coome alande: And with their arrowes, wounded manye a farre of vnprepared. The gouernoure discharged aboute. xx. pieces of ordinaunce ageynst them: With the slaughter and terrible thunder wherof, and with the flame of fyre and smel of brimstone, they were so astonished and put to such feare, that they fled and disparced lyke wyld beasts: whom owre men persuinge, entered the towne which th[e] inhabitants forooke in maner for feare of their owne men whom they sawe so dismayde. On the banke of this ryuer there is a towne of such portentous byggenes as I dare not speake. But *Alaminus* the pylot, sayth that it conteyneth in circuite fyue hundredth myles, and that it consisteth of. xxv. thousand houses. Some make it sumwhat lesse: But they all agree that it is excedyng great and notable. The houses are diuided with gardens, and are buylded of lyme and stone verry artificially and of cunningge woorkmanshippe. To their haules, chambers, parlors, or other places of habitation, they ascende by tenne or twelue steares: And haue certeyne spaces betwene euery house: so that it is not lawful for any to lade his neighbours wales with rafters or beames. Their houses are separate one from an other by the space of three houses: And are for the more parte couered with reede and thetche: And many also with slate or other stone. The barbarians them selues confessed that they were that day fortie thousand men at the battayle, which were vanquished of a fewe by reason of the newe and vnknown kynde of feyght with gunnes and horses. For the gouernour had vnbarcked. xvi. horses which were also at the battayle, and so fiercely assailed the Barbarians on the backehalfe, that they brake their array and scattered them as it had byn flockes of sheepe, ouerthrowing, woundyng, and kylling them on euery fyde. Whiche thyng the feely wretches so imputed to a miracle, that they had not the poure to occupie their wepons. For wheras before they had neuer seene any horses, they thought that the man on horsebacke and the horse, had byn all one beaste, as the antiquitie dyd fable of the monster *Centaurus*. Owr men possessed the towne. xxii. dayes where they made good chere vnder couert, whyle the owners of the houses lay vnder the firmament and durst not assaile owre men who had placed them selues in the strongest parte of the towne, where sum kepte continuall watche (least the Barbarians shulde suddenly inuade them) whyle other gaue them selues to rest and sleepe. Th[e] inhabitants caule this towne *Potanchana*: But owre men for the victorie which they obteyned here, named it *Victoria*. It is a maruelous thyng to consider the greatenes, magnificence and finenes of the buyldinge of certeyne palaces they haue in the countrey to the which they resort sumtymes for their solace and pastyme. These are curiously buylded with many pleafaunt diuises, as galleries, solars, turrets, portals, gutters with chambers boorded after the maner of owre waynscotte and well flowred. Foure of our Spanyardes went into one of them of such greatnes, that they wandered in the same for the space of foure houres before they coulde fynde the waye out. At the length by th[e] interpretours and certeyne captiues owre men sent for the kyng and sutch rulers as were nexte vnder hym in autoritie, wylling them to submyt them selues and to coome into the towne vnarmed. Gyuinge the messengers further in commaundement to certifie them that in their so doinge, they wolde commen with them as concernyng conditions of peace, and restore them their towrie. They came gladly, and entered euery man into his owne house vpon condition that they shulde euer thereafter absteyne from such ceremonies and horrible sacrifices of mans fleshe to deuils the mortal enemies to mankynd, whose Images they honoured. And to directe the eyes of their myndes to Christe owre god the maker of heauen and earth, who was borne into this world of a virgin, and suffered death on the crosse for the redemption of mankynde. And fynally to professe them selues subiectes to the great Christian kyng of Spayne. They promysed both, and were instructed as farre as the shortenes of tyme wolde permitte. Beinge thus restored, they recompensed owre men with many rewardes: Suppoyng sutch men to be sent from heauen, which being so fewe in number, durst attempte battayle ageynst so great a multitude. They gaue owre men also certeyne golde and twentie slaues. Departing therefore from hense, and coastyng styll alonge by the same shore, they came ageyne to the goulfe whiche *Alaminus* the pylot founde before vnder *Grifalua*. This they named *Bian Sancti Iohannis*, that is, Saynt Johns goulfe: For *Bian* in the Spanysh tonge signifieth a goulfe. Here th[e] inhabitants resorted to them peaceably. Aboute a myle frome the shore, was a towne of a thousand and fyue hundredth houses situate vpon a hyll. They profered owre men halfe the towne if they wolde dwel with them for euer. This perhaps they dyd the rather eyther fearyng th[e] exemple of th[e] inhabitants of *Potanchana*, the same wherof myght haue coome to their eares, or els hoppyng that vnder the shadowe of sutch valiant menne, they myght obteyne ayde and succour ageynst their enemies and bortherers. For (as I haue sayde before) they dystroye one an other with continuall warre for the desyre to enlarge their dominions. Owr men refused perpetuall habitation, and accepted their frendely profer for a tyme. As they came alande, the people folowed them on euery fyde with bowes in their handes which they helde ouer owre mens heades to defende them from the rayne as though they had walked in a continual arbour. Here they encamped. And least the residue lefte in the shippes, shulde in the meane tyme waxe slothefull with Idleness,

the gouernour gaue commaundement to *Alaminus* the pylot and Francis Montegius to searce the west partes of that lande, whyle he relieued the weried souldiers and healed fuche as were wounded. To them that went forward on this vyage, he assigned two brigantines with fiftie men. Vnto this goulfe, the course of the water was gentyl enough and moderate. But when they had fayled a lyttle further towarde the Weste, they founde the sea runnyng with so swift a course as if it were a great ryuer faulynge from the tops of hygh mountaynes: In so much that in a shorte space of tyme it caried them fiftie myles from theyr felowes. When they were now entered into this violent streame of the water, they fawe on their left hand a large playne sea which mette with the course of the other waters faulynge from the weste. And lyke as two great ryuers that runne contrary wayes, make a vehement conflycte where they meete, so feemed the waters commyng from the Southe to refyt these waters as enemyes that had entered into the ryght or possession of an other. On the contrary parte, they fawe the lande reachyng farre bothe on the lefte hande and on the ryght. In this strife betwene the waters, they were so tossed on bothe fydes and entangled with whirlepooles, that they longe wrestled with owte hope of lyfe. At the length with muche difficultie, turnyng the stemples or forpartes of their shyppes ageynst the streame from whens they came, and labouryng al that they myght with their oers and fayles, they coulede fearfully ouercoome the rage of the water: In so much that where as they thought that they had in one nyght fayled twoo myles, they founde that they were dryuen backe foure myles. Yet at the length with goddes helpe, they ouercame this daungerous conflycte. They spent. xxii. daies in this lyttle space of sea: And when they were nowe returned to their felowes, declared vnto them that that ende was the land of *Colluacana* whiche they adiudged to be parte of the supposed continent. The lande whiche they fawe a farre of before their safe, they supposed eyther to be annexed to owre continent, or to bee ioyned to the large North regions cauled *Baccalaos*, wherof we haue made mention in our Decades in the vyage of Sebastian Cabote. This matter is yet doubtfull. But wee truste it shall once bee better knowen. While *Alaminus* and Montegius searched these secreatees, the kyng of the prouince (whose name was *Multoxumam*) sent owre men by one of his chiefe offycers (beyng also his Lieutenaut of the fayde towne) many ryche and goodly presentes of golde, syluer, and precious stonnes, sette and wroughte after a marueylous straunge deuysse and with no lesse cunningge workemanshpy. Here they determined to sende messengers to owre newe Emperour to knowe his pleasure that they myght in this prouince plant a newe colonie or habitation. And this dyd they withowte th[e] aduise of *Diegus Velasquen* the gouernour of the Iland of *Cuba Fernandina*, who fyrste sente them forth with commaundement to returne ageyne after they had searched these regions and obtayned plentie of golde. While they consulted hereof, they were of dyuers opinions. But the moste part alleaged that in this case it was not requysite to make the gouernour of their counsaile. Forasmuche as the matter shulde be referred to a higher Iudge, as to the kyng of Spaine him selfe. When they were thus agreed, they receaued vyttayles of the gentle kyng of the prouince, and assigned the place of their colonie twelue myles from the sayde towne, in a fruteful and holsome foyle. For their generall gouernour, they elected *Cortefius* the gouernour of the nauye, against his wyll as sum faye. For other magistrates to gouerne the cite which they intended to build he choose *Portucarerius* and Montegius of whome we haue made mention before. They chose also certeyne messengers to sende to the kyng by the conduction of *Alaminus* the pylot. Furthermore, foure of the princes of this prouince offered them selues wyllingly to go with owre men into Spaine to th[e] intent to see owre landes and that kyng whose poure is soo great and whose auctoritie reacheth so farre. They brought lykewise two women with them, which serued and obeyed them in all thinges after the maner of theyr countrye. The people of this nation is of broune or yelowyshe colour. Bothe the men and the women haue pendauntes of gold and precious stonnes hanginge at their eares. The men also, boore their nether lypes full of holes from the vppermoste parte of the lippe euen vnto the nethermoste parte of the gumme. At these they hange certeyne rynges and plates of golde and syluer fastned to a smaule and thynne plate lyyng within betwene the lippe and the gumme. At the byggest hole in the myddest of the lip, there hangeth a rounde plate of syluer as brode as the coyne cauled a *Corolyne*, and as thicke as a mannes fynger. I do not remember that euer I fawe any thyng that seemed more fylthy in myne eye. Yet do they thynke that there is nothing more cumly vnder the circle of the moone. Wherby we may see howe vainely mankynde wandereth in his owne blyndnesse. The Ethiopian thincketh the blacke colour to be fayrer then the white: And the white man thinketh otherwise. They that are pouled, thinke that more decent then to weare a bush and they that weare beardes, iudge it a deformitie to be shauen. As appetite therfore moueth, and not as reason perswadeth, men runne after vanities: And euery prouince is ruled by their owne sense, as writeth faint Ierome. From whens they haue their golde, we haue spoken sufficiently before. But as owre men marueyled where they had their syluer, they shewed them certayne hygh mountaynes whiche are continually couered with snowe fauyng that at certeyne tymes of the yeare, the onely toppes are feene bare bicause the snow is there molten by reason of the thicke and warme cloudes. The playnes therfore, or mylde, softe, and pleasaunt mountaynes seeme to bryng forth the golde: And the rough craggye mountaynes with their coulede valleyes, are the places where syluer

An other vyage of two brigantines and fiftie men.

Where the sea runneth swyftly from the East to the West.
A conflict betwene the waters comming from the west and from the south.

A dangerous and painefull vyage.

The land of Colluacana.

The land of Baccalaos or Baccalaerum
Rych presentes of golde and precious stonnes.

161

A newe colonie.

This Cortesius hath written a booke of these thinges

They weare rynges and plates at their lypes.

The dyuers phantasies of men.

Syluer

Note where gold and syluer are engendered.

I thinke this laton to be sum kynde of pure copper, or els copper that holdeth golde. For laton is an artificial metal, and hath no naturall myna
Theyr bokes

162

Theyr letters

What is conteyned in theyr bookes.

Temples rychly adourned.

Prayer.

They sacrifice chyldren and captiues.

A wronge way to heauen

Bludly gods

Villa Ricca.

Siulla Noua.

The force of an owlde errour.

Theyr priestes lyue chast.

Faggots of bones.

is engendered. They haue also laton, wherof they make such maces and hammers as are vsed in the warres. Dyggynge mattookes also, and spades: for they haue nother Iren nor fleete. But lette vs now speake of the presentes sente into Spayne to the kyng: and fyrste of the bokes. These procuratours therfore of the newe colonie of the prouynce of *Colluacana*, among other their presentes, brought also a great number of bookes, the leaues wherof are made of the inner ryndes or barkes of trees, thinner then eyther that of the elme or of the falowe. These they smere or annoint with the pytche of molten *Bitumen*, and while they be softe, extend them to what forme them lysteth. When they be coulede and harde, they rubbe them ouer with a certeyne playster. It is to bee thoughte that they beate the playster into fine floure, and so temperynge it with sum byndynge moister, to make a cruste therwith vpon the leaues, wheron they wryte with any sharpe instrument, and blotte the same againe with a sponge or sum suche other thyng, as marchaunt men and noble mens stewards are accustomed to do with their wrytynge tables made of the woodde of fygge trees. The leaues of their bokes are not fet in order after the maner of owres, but are extended many cubettes in length. The matters whiche they wryte, are conteyned in square tables: Not loofe, but so bounde together with the toughe and flexible cley cauled *Bitumen*, that they seeme lyke wooden tables whiche had byn vnder the handes of cunning bokebynders. Which way so euer the booke lyeth open, there are two leaues feene and two fydes written, with as many lyng hyd vnder them, excepte the booke be vnfolded in length. For vnder one leafe there are many leaues ioyned together. The formes of their letters are nothyng lyke vnto owres. But are muche more crooked and entangeled, lyke vnto fyfhehookes, knottes, snares, starres, dife, fyles, and suche other muche lyke vnto the Egypcian letters, and written in lynes lyke vnto owres. Here and there betwene the lynes, are pictured the shapes of men and dyuers beastes: And especially the Images of kynges and other noble men. Wherby it is to be thought that in suche bookes, the factes of their kynges are conteyned as wee see the lyke emonge vs howe owre printers expresse the summe of histories in pictures, that men may therby be the more allured to bye suche bookes. The couerynges of their bookes are also artificially wrought and paynted. When they are shutte, they seeme to differre nothyng from owres in forme. In these bookes are furthermore comprehended their lawes, rytes of ceremonies and sacryfices, annotations of Astronomie, accomptes, computations of tymes, with the maner of graffynge, fowyng, and other thynges perteinyng to husbandry. They begynne the yeare from the goynge downe of the feuen starres cauled *Vergilia* or *Pleiades*: And counte their monethes accordyng to the moones. They name a moneth, *Tona*, of the moone. For in their language, they caule the moone *Tona*, they reken the dayes by the foonnes. Therfore as many daies as they name, they faye, so many foonnes. The foonne in their tonge, is cauled *Tonatico*. They destribute the yeare (without any reason why) into twentie monethes: And the moneth into as many dayes. The temples whiche they frequent, they adourne with golden hangynges and other ornamentes of golde and syluer with precious stones intermixte. At the sprynge of the daye, they perfume their temples with frankensence and make their praiers and they take in hande any other busynesse. But oh horrible crueltie. For th[e] inhabitants of all these tractes also, doo sacryfice children to their Idoles in lyke maner as wee haue sayde before. At suche tyme as the feedes lye in the ground, and when the corne begynneth to shewe foorth the eare, they destinate to their *Zemes* suche bondmen as they haue bought, or suche captiues as they haue taken in the warres, which they sacryfice after that they haue made them great chiere and decked them in precious apparell. Also before they sacryfice these poore wretches, they lead them about the towne whyle al the people salute them humbly and reuerently, affyrmyng that in shorte space, they shalbe receaued into the companye of the goddes. They honour their *Zemes* with an other sharp kind of deuotion: For they lette them selues bludde, eyther in the tonge, lyps, eares, legges, thyghes, or brest, which they take in their handes and hurle it vppe towarde heauen, soo that with the faule therof the pauement of the temple is all sparced with bludde, wherby they thincke that their goddes are well pleased. From the newe colonie (cauled *Villa Ricca*) nyne myles distante, there is a towne of. xv. thousande houfes, whiche th[e] inhabitants caule *Cemobal*, but owre men named it *Sybilla*. The kyng of this towne had fyue men whiche he referued to be sacryficed. Whom when owre men wold haue delyuered, the kyng made humble request to them, sayinge that if they tooke awaye suche men as he had consecrated to be offered to the goddes, they shulde brynge vtter destruction to hym and all his kyngdome. For if owre sacryfices (sayd he) do cease, owre *Zemes* wyll take suche displeasure with vs that they wyll suffer owre corne, graffes, and frutes, to bee consumed of woormes, scortched with drowth, destroyed with fluddes, or blasted with lyghtnyng. Owre men perceauynge his earnestnesse herein, thought it beste to chofe the least euell, perceauynge that it was yet no tyme to disquyet their myndes, and therfore suffered them to exercise their accustomed ceremonies. And although the priestes promysse them immortal glorie, eternall felicitye, and perpetuall conuerfation with the goddes after the stormy dayes of this lyfe, yet do they with heauy countenances giue eare to their promisses, and had rather be sette at lybertie. Their priestes are named *Quines* in the plurell number, and *Quin* in the syngular. They leade a pure and chaste lyfe: And are honoured of the people with feare and reuerence. They make faggots of the bones of their enemies which they haue taken in the warres,

and hange vppe the fame at the feete of their *Zemes*, as tokens of the victories. obteyned by their fauour. To thefe they adde certayne titles and fuperfcriptions as testimonies of the fame. This is ftraunge and woorthy to be noted, that when their children are a yeare oulde, the priestes in their temples with deuoute ceremonies and murmurynge woordes, poure water in forme of a croffe vpon their heades with a cruet, wherby they feeme to baptife them. Neyther do they as the Iewes and Turkes, thinke their temples polluted if any of a ftraunge religion bee prefent at their facrifyces and other folemnyties. Wee haue nowe fspoken fuffycientely of their bookes, temples, and fuperftitions. Lette vs nowe therfore coome to the other prefentes which were brought to the kyng. Emonge thefe, there were two broode and rounde plates (whiche fumme haue named the Images of the foonne and moone) the one of filuer and the other of gold in largeneffe and roundneffe muche lyke to the ftones of hand mylles: yet but thynne, and in maner bothe of one of circumference, that is. xxviii. fpannes in circuite.

That of golde is of the weyght of three thoufande and. viii. hundreth Castellans, where as wee haue fayde before that a Castellane is a coyne of golde which weyeth more than a Ducate by a trient, that is the thyrde parte of a pounce. In the center of this, was the Image of a kyng of halfe a cubette longe, fyttinge in a t[h]rone and appareled to the knee, lyke vnto a maumette, with fuch countenance as owre paynters are wonte to paynte fayries or fprites. About the Image, were the fshapes of trees and floures, fo that it feemed to fytt as though it had byn in a field. The other of fyluer, was made to the fame fimilitude, beinge alfo in maner of the fame weyght, and both of pure metall. They brought lykewyfe certeyne graynes of rude golde (that is, fuche as was neuer molten) about the byggenes of fytches or the pulfe cauled lintels in token of plentie of natiue golde. Alfo two cheynes of golde, wherof the one conteyned. viii. lynkes in the whiche were fet two hundreth threescore and two fayre and cleare redde ftones, and yet no rubyes: furthermore, a hundrethe fourefcore and three greene ftones, and yet no emerodes. Neuertheleffe, thefe are in lyke eftimation with them as the other are with vs. At the edge of this cheine, there hange. xxvii. golden belles, hauynge betwene euery of them, foure iewels of precious ftones inclofed in golde, at euery of the which in lyke maner hange certeyne fpangels of golde. The other cheyne confisteth onely of foure golden lynkes, befet rounde about with a hundreth and two redde ftones, and a hundreth threescore and twelue greene ftones, with. xxvi. golden belles curiously wrought and placed in comely order. In the verye myddest of the cheyne, are ten great precious ftones inclofed in golde, at the whiche alfo hange a hundrethe golden pendauntes of cunnyng woorkemanfhippe. They brought furthermore twelue paire of lether bufkynnes of diuers colours, fumme imbrothered with gold and fumme with fyluer, with plates and ieweltes of golde and precious ftones inclofed, and at euery of them certayne golden belles. Alfo certeyne myters befette with precious ftoones of dyuerfe colours, emonge the whiche fume are blewe like vnto faphires. Of creftes, gerdles, and fannes made of fethers, I wotte not what I fhulde faye. But fuerly if euer the wyttes and inuentions of men haue deferued honoure or commendacion in fuche artes, thefe feeme moft woorthy to bee had in admiration. I do not maruaile at golde and precious ftones. But am in maner aftonyfhed to fee the woorkemanfhippe excell the fubftance. For I haue with woonderynge eyes behelde a thoufande formes and fimilitudes, of the which I am not able to wryte. And in my iudgement, I neuer fawe any thing whofe bewtie myght fo allure the eyes of men. As they marueyled at the naturall bewtie of the fethers of owre peacockes and pheafantes, fo dyd we no leffe maruel at the artificial bewtie of fuche thinges as they make of fethers and quilles impaled with golde. For I fawe in manye of their woorkes, all maner of natiue colours euen in the quilles wherof they make fuche instrumentes. They brought alfo two helmettes garnyffhed with precious ftones of a whitte blewe colour. One of thefe is edged with belles and plates of golde, and vnder euery bell two knobbes of golde. The other, befylde the ftones wherwith it is covered, is lykewyfe edged with. xxv. golden belles and knobbes: and hath on the creft, a greene bird with the feete, bylle, and eyes, of golde. Alfo foure fpeares muche lyke vnto troute fpeares or yele fpeares, the woodde wherof is all covered with quilles of diuers colours marueiloufly wrethed with golden wyers and plates intermyxte. Euery of thefe fpeares haue three pikes, whofe edges or teeth are all of precious ftones made fafte with wyers of golde. Of like woorkmanfhip they brought a great fcepter byfet with precious ftoones and belles of gold, alfo a brafflet of gold, and fhowes made of a hartes fkyne, fowed and imbrothered with golden wyers, with a white fole beneth. Furthermore a glaffe of a bryght blewe ftone, and an other of white, both enclofed in golde. Likewife a precious ftone of the kynde of them that are cauled *Sphinges*, inclofed in golde. Furthermore the heade of a great lyfarde, two great fhelles, two duckes, the fshapes of diuers other byrdes, foules, and fyfhes, and all of mafsie golde. Furthermore. xxiii. rounde and square targettes, fhieldes, and buckelers of golde, and fyue of fyluer. Alfo a triple crowne of plates and wyers of golde marueyloufly wrethed with quilles and fethers of diuers colours, hauing on the fronte a plate of golde on the whiche is grauen the Image of the Idole *Zemes*. About this Image, hange foure other plates like croffes of gold in the whiche are grauen the heades of diuers beaftes, as lyons, tygers, woulues, and fuch other. They brought alfo the fimilitudes of certeyne beaftes made fumme of roddes or twygges, and fum of woodde with the beaftes owne

163

A fygure of baptisme.

The presentes sent into Spayne to the kyng.

Two Images of gold and fyluer.

Two cheines of gold marueiloufly byset with precious ftones and iewels.

Buskyns.

Myters.

How can we then caul them beaftly or Barbarous.

If they had changed their gold for owre Iren, they had not so soone bynsudued.

Quylles.

Helmets.

A byrde.

Speares.

A fcepter.

A brafflet.

Shooes.

164

Glasses.

Byrdes, foules, and fyfshes of gold.

Targettes, etc. of gold.

A crowne of golde

Crosses.

Images of beastes.
Shietes.

Cloth of arras.
A souldyers clooke.

Registers of the
th[e]affayres of
India.

Th[e]autoritie of
the Lieuetenaut.

The Spanyardes
of Dariena.

*Sancta Maria
Antiqua.*

Petrus Arias
whom the
Spanyardes name
Pedrarias.
This sea the
spanyardes caule
Mar del sur.

165

Contention
betwene Vaschus
and Petrus Arias.

Petrus Arias
commandeth that
Vaschus be put
to death.

Vaschus is
accused.

Vaschus is put
to death.

skynnes theron, and garnysshed with collers of laton belles. Lykewife diuers shietes weaued of goffampyne cotton of fundry colours, wherof two are rychely frynged with golde and precious stones, and three other with quilles and fethers intermyxte with goffampine cotton of fundrye colours and chekered lyke the panes of a chefle borde. Sum are on the one fyde, of blacke, white, and redde colours: and on the other fyde, plaine without any varietie. Other sum, are wrought in lyke maner with variable colours with a wheele or circle of blacke in the myddeft intermyxte with shynyng fethers and sparkes of golde lyke starres. They brought also cloth of Aras or Verdure of marueylous workmanshpype. Likewise a souldiers cloke fuche as their prynces weare in the warres, with certeyne priuie coates of fence, and fundrye timentes perteynyng to their heades, with also many fuche other thynges more bewtfull to the eye then ryche or precious, wherof to entreate particularly, it shoulde be more tedious then profyttable. I lette passe here also to speake of many particular nauigations and of the trauailes and daungers whiche they fusteyned in the fame, with the monstres and fecreates of nature they sawe: whiche are all conteyned in the registers of owre Senate of th[e]affayres of India, owte of the whiche I haue selected these fewe annotations, fuche as seemed to me mooste meete to bee published. Notwithstandyng these ryche and goodly presentes, yet were they that brought them, and also *Cortefius* the gouernour of the nauye and autour of erectinge their newe colonie in those remote regions, adjudged by the Senate to haue doon ageynst ryght and equitie, in that they attempted the same withoute th[e]advice of the gouernour of the Ilande of *Cuba* who sente them foorth by the kynges auctoritie, where as they dyd other thinges besyde their commysyon, ye althoughe they wente to the kyng, not fyrst knowyng his pleafure whom the kyng had sublitute his Lieuetenaut in that Ilande. In so muche that by his procuratour, he accused them before the Senate as fugitiue theeues and traytours. They on the other parte alleaged that they had doon the kyng better seruyce then he: And that they had shewed suffycient obedience in appealyng to the kyng as the hygher Iudge. But the gouernour required by the vertue of his commissiion and the kinges letters pattendes that they myght be headed for their difobedience ageynst hym whom they knewe to be autorised by the kyng. They ageine replied that they had not offended the kyng, but rather deserued rewarde for their great dangiers and trauails. Bothe the rewarde and punishment were deferred, and a daye appointed when bothe parties shoulde bee harde. Leete vs nowe therefore coome to the Spaniardes of *Dariena*, th[e]inhabitours of the goulfe of *Vraba* in the supposed Continent. We haue fayde before that *Dariena* is a ryuer runnyng towarde the Weste fyde of the goulfe of *Vraba*. On the banke of this ryuer, the Spaniardes planted theyr fyrst colonie or halitation after they had vanquished kyng *Chemaccus*. This colonie they named *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, by reason of a vowe whiche they made to the virgine Marie in the tyme of the battaile ageynst *Chemaccus*. To these (as wee haue made mention in the ende of owre decades) was *Petrus Arias* sente with a thousande and two hundreth men at the request of *Vaschus Nunnez Balboa*, who was then the gouernour of *Dariena*, and the fyrst that found and discouered the large South sea heretofore vnknown. Wee haue also declared how at the arriual of *Petrus Arias* the newe gouernour, he deuided his armye into Centurions, that is, capitaines ouer hundreth, whom hee sent foorth dyuers waies. What tragedies folowed hereof, I wyll abfolue in fewe woordes, bycause all are horrible and vnpleasaunte. For fence we sfinyshed owre Decades, there hath byn none other then kyllyng, fleyng, murtheryng and accusinge. The kyng made *Vaschus* gouernoure but duryng his pleafure. His courage was such, and his factes so notorious, that he coulde not longe abyde the hautynes of *Petrus Arias*. To bee breefe, theyr faulyng owte and discord confounded al thynges. Iohn Cacedus the pulpitte fryer of the order of faynt Frances, dyd his vttermoste endeour to make them frendes, promysyng vnto *Vaschus* the dowghter of *Petrus Arias* to wyfe. But no meanes coulde be founde howe these two which bore the chiefe rule, myght bee brought to agreement. At the length the matter grewe to such extremitie, that *Petrus Arias* fyndyng occasion of querelyng ageynst *Vaschus*, sent proceffe to the maiestrates of the towne, wherby he commaunded them to strangle *Vaschus*, and fyue other which were chiefe capitaynes vnder hym: Alleagyng that they and their confetherates conspired to rebel in the South sea: And that *Vaschus* hym selfe for that intente, had buylded and furnished foure shippes to searce the south coastes of the supposed continent: Also that to his three hundreth souldiers and companions which he had with hym, he shulde speake woordes of this effecte as foloweth. My frendes, and felowes of my longe peynes and trauayles: Howe longe shall we be subiecte to the commaundement of other, fythe wee haue bydden the brunt and ouercumme th[e]enterprife for the whiche this newe gouernour was sente with so great a multitude? Who can any longer abyde his pryde and infolencie? Lette vs therefore folowe these coastes whyther so euer fortune shall dryue vs: And among these so many pleasaunt and fruteful prouinces of this large lande, let us chose one in the whiche wee maye with libertie spende that portion of owre lyues which yet remayneth. Who can fynde vs, or shalbe able to profer vs vyolence? When these or the lyke woordes were declared to *Petrus Arias*, he sente to the Southe partes for *Vaschus*, wylyng hym by the vertue of his commissiion to repayre to him foorthwith. *Vaschus* obeyed, and at his commyng was caste in pryson: yet constantly denyng that euer he entended any fuche thyng. Wytnesses were brought ageynst hym, and his wordes rehearfed from the begynnynge. To conclude, he was iudged woorthy death, and was put to

execution. And this is the rewarde wherwith the blynde goddesse oftentimes recompenseth such as haue fusteyned great traunyles and daungions to bee hyghly in her fauoure. *Petrus Arias* leauynge his wyfe in *Dariena*, embarked hym selfe in the shippes left of *Vaschus*, to th[e]intent to searche those coastes. But whether he be returned or not, we haue yet no certeyne knoweledge. He hath also his fortune. Yet is there an other gouernour assigned, whose name is *Lupus Sofa*, the viceroye of the Ilandes of *Canarie*. What stomake *Petrus Arias* may haue yf he returne, let good men iudge. There was nothyng doone vnder hym worthy glorie. Some thynke that he was at the begynnyng so slacke and negligent in his office, and not feure in correctyng errors and misorders. But we wyll leaue him and rehearse sumwhat wherof we haue byn lately informed as touchyng the great and diepe ryuer of *Dabaiba*, the whiche for the greatnes and largenes therof, owre men named *Grandis*, that is, great, as we haue noted in owre Decades. This riuier fauleth into the furthest corner of the goulfe of *Vraba* by feuen portes or mowthes as dooth the ryuer of *Nilus* into the Egyptian sea, whose large description yowe may also reade in owre Decades. That the mountaynes on euery syde about this ryuer, are ryche in golde, we haue learned by th[e]information of th[e]inhabitauntes, of whom we made diligent inquisition. *Vaschus*, and befyde hym other gouernoures and Lieutenanthes, haue foure tymes entered into this ryuer with their armyes in battayle array, and with dyuers kyndes of shippes fyrste for the space of fortie myles, then fytie, and at the last fourescore, at an other tyme also ouerthwarte the ryuer. Oh shamefull chaunce and detestable couwardenes of owre men. A naked nation encounteryng with them that had apparell, the armed ageynste the vnarmed, had the ouerthrowe in maner in all conflictes, and were other all slayne or wounded. They vse inuenemed arrowes, and are fuche experte archers, that if they espye any place of theyr enemye bare or vnarmed, they wyll not lyghtly fayle to stryke him there. They vse also many dartes, which in the tyme of the battayle they hurle so thicke a farre of, that they take the lyght of the sonne from theyr enemies as it werewith a clowde. They haue lykewise brode and longe fwoordes made of a heauie and harde kinde of woodde, wherewith they feyght fiercely neare at hande. *Vaschus* hym selfe receaued many woundes in encounteryng with them. And thus by reason of the fiercenes of these barbarians, the ryuer of *Dabaiba* is yet leste vnsearched. We wil nowe speake sumwhat more of the Iland of *Hispaniola* (which the Spanyardes caule *Spagnuola*) the moother and chiefe of al other landes or Ilandes wherof we entended to wryte. In it the Senate is now restored, and fyue Iudges assigned to giue lawes to all the inhabitauntes of those tractes. But in shorte tyme, they shall cease gatheryng of golde although there bee greates plentie: by reason they shall lacke labourers and myners, forasmuch as th[e]inhabitauntes whose helpe they vsed herein, are brought to a smaule number, consumed partly by warre, and many more by famen that yere that they dygged vp the rootes wherof they made theyr beste breade, and leste of fowyng theyr grayne of *Maizium* which is theyr common foode, supposyng hereby to haue dryuen owre men owte of the Ilande, who had vytayles sente them from Spayne. A great number of them also, dyed of newe and straunge diseases which in the yere of Christe a thousande fyue hundreth and. xviii. consumed theym lyke rotton sheepe.

And (to faye the truth) owre mens vnfacible desyre of gold, so oppressed these poore wretches with extreme labour and toyle, where as before they lyued pleasauntly and at lybertie, gyuen onely to playes and pastymes as daunsyng, fyffhinge, foullyng, and huntynge of lyttle connies, that many of them perished euen for verye anguythe of mynde, the whiche (with their vnaccustomed labour) are thynges of them felues suffycient to engender many newe diseases. But the kynge and the Senate haue nowe determyned that they be reduced to a people, and to gyue them felues onely to increafe, and tyllage of the ground: And that onely such as are bought or taken owte of other regions, bee appointed to labour in the golde mynes. But it shall suffice to haue fayde thus muche of the pestiferous hunger of golde. Therefore to speake of other matters: It is a marueylous thyng to consyder howe all thynges increafe and prosper in this Ilande. There are nowe. xxviii. fuger presses wherwith great plentie of fuger is made. The canes or reedes wherin the fuger groweth, are bygger and hygher then in any other place: And are as bygge as a mans arme in the brawne, and higher then the stature of a man, by the halfe. This is more wonderfull, that where as in *Valentia* in Spaine (where a great quanty of fuger is made yearly) where so euer they applye them felues to the great increafe therof, yet doth euery roote bring forth the not paste fyue, or fyxe, or at the moste feuen of those reedes: wheras in *Hispaniola* one roote beareth twentie, and oftentimes thirtie. Foure footed beastes and cattayle, are marueylously increased in this Ilande. And albeit that the rauenyng hunger of golde hath hitherto greatly hyndered owre men from tyllage of the ground, yet is there great plentye of wheate, whiche prospereth so wel that it yealdeth sumtyme a hundreth fould: And this especially on the hylles or rydges of the mountaynes prospectyng toward the North. Vines do also increafe here with no lesse frutefulnesse. What shuld I speake of the trees that beare *Cassia fistula*, brought first into this Iland from the other Ilandes neare vnto the supposed Continent, as we haue noted in our decades? There is nowe fuche plentie hereof, that after a fewe yeres we shall haue a pounce of the price that wee paye nowe for an ounce. Of the bresyle and mirobalane trees, with other innumerable prerogatiues and benefites whiche nature hath plentifully giuen to this blessed Iland, we haue spoken suffyciently

*Petrus Arias.**Lupus Sofa.*The great ryuer of
Dabaiba or
*Grandis*The goulfe of
Vraba.The ryche
mountaynes of
Dabaiba.Fierce and warlyke
people.*Dartes.*Swoordes of
heauie wood.

166

*Hispaniola.*Quiedus wryteth
that ther are nowe
v. monasteries.Newe and strange
diseases.The suger of
Hispaniola.Suger of *Valentia*.A token of
maruelous
frutfulness.

Cattayle.

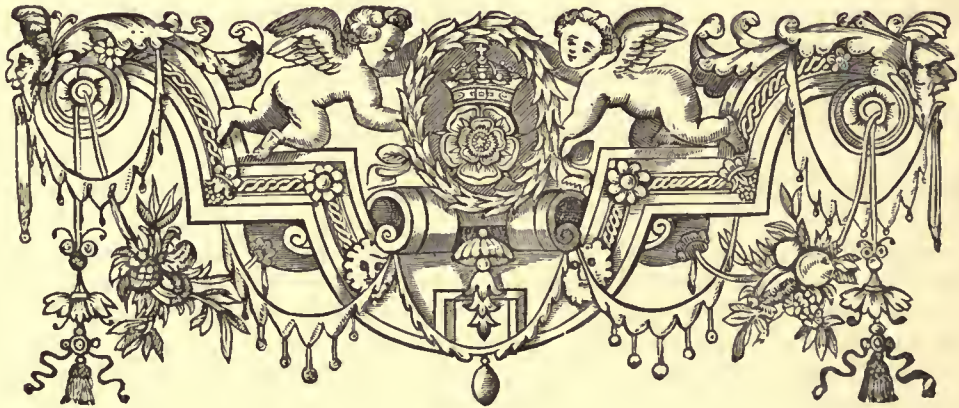
Wheate.

Vines.

Cassia fistula.*Bresyle*.
Mirobalanes

in ovr decades. Yet haue I thought good to repeate part of the same, bycause I think that the wittes of many readers haue diuerted from the weyght of great affaires, to the recordation of such pleasaunt thynges. And yet do not sutch thynges as are fauery, engender tedy-oufnesse, soc that a precious matter bee adourned with a precious vesture.

FINIS.



167 EXEMPLAR BVLLAE SEV
DONATIONIS, AVTORITATE
CVIVS, EPISCOPVS ROMANVS

Alexander eius nominis sextus, con-
cessit et donavit Castellæ regibus
et suis successoribus, regiones
et Insulas noui orbis in
Oceano occidentali Hif-
panorum nauigationi-
bus repertas. :



ALEXANDER EPISCOPVS, feruus
feruorum Dei, Charissimo in Christo
filio Ferdinando Regi, et Charissi-
mæ in Christo filiae Elizabeth Re-
ginae Castellæ, Legionis, Aragonum,
Siciliæ, et Granatæ, illustribus, salu-
tem et Apostolicam benedictionem.

Inter cætera Diuinæ maiestati beneplacita opera
et cordis nostri desiderabilia, illud profecto potissimum
existit vt fides catholica et Christiana religio nostris
præsertim temporibus exaltetur ac vbilibet amplietur
ac dilatetur, animarumque salus procuretur, ac barbaræ
nationes deprimantur et ad fidem ipsam reducantur.
Vnde cum ad hanc sacram Petri sedem Diuina fauente
clementia (meritis licet imparibus) euocati fueremus,
cognoscentes vos tanquam veros catholicos reges et
principes: quales semper fuisse nouimus, et a vobis
præclare gesta, toti pene orbi notissima demonstrant,
nedum id exoptare, sed omni conatu, studio, et dili-
gentia, nullis laboribus, nullis impensis, nullisque par-
cendo periculis, etiam proprium sanguinem effundendo
efficere, ac omnem animum vestrum, omnesque conatus
ad hoc iam dudum dedicasse, quemadmodum recuper-
ato regni Granatæ a tyrannis de Sarracenorum hodie-
nis temporibus per vos, cum tanta Diuini nominis
gloria facta, testatur. Digne ducimur non immerito,
et debemus illa vobis etiam sponte, ac fauorabiliter
concedere, per quæ huiusmodi sanctum ac laudabile
ab immortali deo acceptum propositum, indes feruen-
tiori animo ad ipsius dei honorem et Imperij Chris-
tiani propagationem, profequi valeatis. Sane accepimus
quod vos qui dudum animum propofueratis aliquas

171 THE COPPIE OF THE BULL
OR DONATION, BY TH[E]AU-
TORITIE WHEROF, POPE

Alexander the fyxte of that name,
gaue and graunted to the kynges of
Castyle and theyr succeffours the
Regions and Ilandes founde in
the Weste Ocean sea by
the nauigations of the
Spanyardes.



Alexander byshoppe, the feruaunte of
the feruantes of God: To owre moste
deare beloued sonne in Christ Kyng
Ferdinande, And to owre deare be-
loued doughter in Chryste Elyzabeth
Queene of Castyle, Legion, Aragon,
Sicilie, and Granata, most noble
Princes, Grettyng and Apostolical benediction.

Amonge other woorkes acceptable to the diuine
maiestie and accordyng to owre hartes desyre, this
certeinly is the chiefe, that the Catholyke fayth and
Christian religion, specially in this owre tyme may in
all places bee exalted, amplified, and enlarged, wherby
the health of foules may be procured, and the Barbarous
nations subdued and brought to the fayth. And there-
fore wheras by the fauoure of gods clemencie (although
not with equal defertes) we are cauled to this holy
feate of Peter, and vnderstandyng you to bee trewe
Catholyke Princes as we haue euer knowen you, and
as youre noble and woorthy factes haue declared in
maner to the hole worlde in that with all your studie,
diligence, and industrye, you haue spared no trauayles,
charges, or perels, aduenturyng euen the shedyng of
your owne bludde, with applyng yowre hole myndes
and endeouours here vnto, as your noble expeditions
achyued in recoueryng the kyngdome of Granata from
the tyrannie of the Sarracens in these our dayes, doo
playnely declare your factes with so great glorye of the
diuine name. For the whiche as we thinke you woort-
hy, so owght we of owre owne free wyl fauorably to
graunt all thynges whereby you maye dayely with more
feruent myndes to the honoure of god and enlargyng
the Christian empire, profecute your deuoute and laud-

infulas et terras firmas remotas et incognitas, ac per alios hætenus non repertas, quærere et inuenire, vt illarum incolas et habitatores ad colendum redemptorem nostrum et fidem catholicam profitendum reduceretis, hætenus in expugnatione et recuperatione ipsius regni Granatæ plurimum occupati, huiusmodi sanctum et laudabile propositum vestrum ad optatum finem perducere nequiuistis: Sed tamen sicut Domino placuit, regno predicto recuperato, volentes desiderium vestrum adimplere, dilectum filium Christophorum Colonom virum vtique dignum et plurimum commendatum ac tanto negotio aptum, cum nauigijs et hominibus ad familia instructis, non sine maximis laboribus, ac periculis, et expensis destinastis vt terras firmas et Infulas remotas et incognitas, huiusmodi per mare vbi hætenus nauigatum non fuerat, diligenter inquireret. Qui tandem (Diuino auxilio facta extrema diligentia in mari Oceano nauigantes) certas infulas remotissimas et etiam terras firmas quæ per alios hætenus repertæ non fuerant, inuenerunt. In quibus plurimæ gentes pacifice viuentes, et (vt asseritur) nudi incedentes, nec carnibus vescentes, inhabitant: Et vt præfati nuncij vestri posunt opinari, gentes ipsæ in Infulis et terris prædictis habitantes, credunt vnum deum creatorem in Cœlis esse, ac ad fidem catholicam amplexandum et bonis moribus imbuendum, satis apti videntur: Spesque habetur, quod si erudirentur, nomen Saluatoris Domini nostri Iesu Christi in terris et infulis prædictis facile induceretur. Ac præfatus Christophorus in vna ex principalibus Infulis prædictis, iam vnam turrim satis munitam, in qua certos Christianos qui secum iuerant, in custodiam et vt alias Infulas ac terras firmas remotas et incognitas inquirerent posuit, construi et ædificari fecit. In quibus quidem Infulis et terris iam repertis, aurum, aromata, et aliæ quamplurimæ res præciosæ diuersi generis et diuersæ qualitatis reperiuntur. Vnde omnibus diligenter, et præfertim fidei catholicæ exaltatione et dilatatione (prout decet Catholicos Reges et Principes) consideratis, more progenitorum vestrorum claræ memoriæ Regum, terras firmas et infulas prædictas, illarumque incolas et habitatores, vobis diuina fauente clementia subiicere et ad fidem Catholicam reducere propofuistis.

Nos itaque huiusmodi vestrum sanctum et laudabile propositum plurimum in domino commendantes, ac cupientes vt illud ad debitum finem perducatur, et ipsum nomen saluatoris nostri in partibus illis inducatur, hortamur vos quamplurimum in domino, et per

able purpose most acceptable to the immortall God. We are credably informed that wheras of late you were determyned to seeke and fynde certeyne Ilandes and firme landes farre remote and vnknown (and not heretofore found by any other) to th[e]intent to bringe th[e]inhabitautes of the same to honoure owre redemer and to professe the catholyke sayth, you haue hetherto byn much occupied in th[e]expugnation and recouerie of the kyngedome of Granata, by reason whereof yowe coule not brynge yowre fayde laudable purpose to th[e]ende defyred. Neuerthelesse as it hath pleased almyghty god, the foresayde kyngedome beinge recouered, wylling t[o]accomplyshe your fayde desyre, you haue, not without great laboure, perelles, and charges, appoynted owre welbeloued sonne Christopher Colonus (a man certes wel commended as moste worthy and apte for so great a matter) well furnyshed with men and shippes and other necessaries, to seeke (by the sea where hetherto no manne hath sayled) fuche firme landes and Ilandes farre remote and hitherto vnknown. Who (by gods helpe) makynge diligente searche in the Ocean sea, haue founde certeyne remote Ilandes and firme landes whiche were not heretofore founde by any other. In the which (as is fayde) many nations inhabite lyuinge peaceably and goinge naked, not accustomed to eate fleshe. And as farre as yowre messengers can coniecture, the nations inhabitynge the foresayde landes and Ilandes, beleue that there is one god creatoure in heauen: and seeme apte to be brought to th[e]imbracinge of the catholyke saythe and to be imbued with good maners: by reason whereof, we may hope that if they well be instructed, they may easely bee induced to receaue the name of owre fauour Iesu Christ. We are further aduertised that the forenamed Christopher hathe nowe builded and erected a fortresse with good munition in one of the foresayde principall Ilandes in the which he hath placed a garrison of certeyne of the Christian men that wente thyther with him: aswell to th[e]intent to defende the same, as also to searche other Ilandes and firme landes farre remote and yet vnknown. We also vnderstande, that in these landes and Ilandes lately founde, is great plentie of golde and spices, with dyuers and many other precious thynges of fundry kyndes and qualities. Therefore al thynges diligently considered (especialy th[e]amplifyng and enlargyng of the catholyke sayth, as it behoueth catholyke Princes folowyng th[e]examples of yowre noble progenitours of famous memorie) wheras yowe are determyned by the fauour of almighty god to subdue and brynge to the catholyke sayth th[e]inhabitautes of the foresayde landes and Ilandes.

Wee greatly commendynge this yowre godly and laudable purpose in owr lorde, and desirous to haue the same brought to a dewe ende, and the name of owre fauoure to be known in those partes, doo exhorte yowe in owre Lorde and by the receaynge of yowre holy baptysme wherby yowe are bounde to

facri lauari fufceptionem, qua mandatis Apoftolicis obligati eftis, et per viscera mifericordiæ Domini noſtri Iefu Chriſti attente requirimus, vt cum expeditionem huiusmodi omnino proſequi et aſſumere prona mente orthodoxæ fidei zelo intendatis, populos in huiusmodi Infulis et terris degentes, ad Chriſtianam religionem fuſcipiendum inducere velitis et debeatis, nec pericula nec labores vlllo vnquam tempore vos deterreant, firma ſpe fiduciaque conceptis quod Deus omnipotens conatus veſtros foeliciter proſequetur. Et vt tanti negotij prouintiam Apoftolicæ gratiæ largitate donati, liberius et audacius aſſumatis, motu proprio non ad veſtram vel
 169 alterius pro vobis ſuper hoc nobis oblata petitionis inſtantiam, ſed de noſtra mera liberalitate, et ex certa ſcientia, ac de Apoftolicæ poteſtatis plenitudine, omnes Infulas et terras firmas inuentas et inueniendas, detectas et detegendas verſus Occidentem et Meridiem, fabricando et conſtruendo vnam lineam a polo Arctico, ſcilicet Septemtrione, ad polum Antarcticum, ſcilicet Meridiem, ſiue terræ firmæ et infulæ inuentæ et inueniendæ ſint verſus Indiam aut verſus aliam quamcunque partem quæ linea diſtet a qualibet Infularum quæ vulgariter nuncupantur de los Azores et Cabo verde centum leucis verſus Occidentem et Meridiem.

Itaque omnes Infulæ et terræ firmæ repertæ et repertiendæ, detectæ et detegendæ a præfata linea verſus Occidentem et Meridiem, quæ per alium Regem aut Principem Chriſtianum non fuerint actualiter poſſeſſæ vſque ad diem natiuitatis Domini noſtri Iefu Chriſti proxime præteritum, a quo incipit annus præſens Milleſimus Quadringentefimus Nonogefimus tercius, quando fuerunt per nuncios et capitaneos veſtros inuentæ aliquæ prædictarum Infularum, Autoritate omnipotentis Dei nobis in beato Petro conceſſa, ac vicariatus Iefu Chriſti qua fungimur in terris, cum omnibus illatum dominijs, ciuitatibus, caſtris, locis, et villis, iuribusque et iuriſdictionibus ac pertinentijs vniuerſis, vobis hereditibusque et ſucceſſoribus veſtris (Caſtellæ et Legionis regibus) in perpetuum tenore præſentium donamus, concedimus, et assignamus: Voſque et hæredes ac ſucceſſores præſatos illarum Dominos, cum plena, libera, et omnimoda poteſtate, autoritate, et iuriſdictione, facimus, conſtituimus, et deputamus. Decernentes nihilo minus per huiusmodi donationem, conceſſionem, et assignationem noſtram, nullo Chriſtiano Principi quia actualiter præſatas Infulas et terras firmas poſſederit vſque ad prædictum diem natiuitatis Domini noſtri Iefu Chriſti ius quæſitum, ſublaturum intelligi poſſe aut auferri debere.

Et inſuper mandamus vobis in virtutæ ſanctæ obedi-

Apſtolicall obedience, and ernestely require yowe by the bowels of mercy of owre Lorde Iefu Chriſt, that when yowe intende for the zeale of the Catholyke faythe to proſecute the ſayde expedition to reduce the people of the foreſayde landes and Ilandes to the Chriſtian religion, yowe ſhall ſpare no labours at any tyme, or bee deterred with any perels, conceauynge firme hope and confidence that the omnipotent godde wyll gyue good ſucceſſe to yowre godly attemptes. And that beinge autoryſed by the priuilege of the Apſtolycall grace, yowe may the more freely and boldly take vpon yowe th[e]nterpryſe of ſo greate a matter, we of owre owne motion, and not eyther at yowre requeſt or at the inſtant petition of any other perſon, but of owre owne mere liberalitie and certeyne ſcience, and by the fulneſſe of Apſtolycall power, doo gyue, graunt, and aſſigne to yowe, yowre heyres and ſucceſſours, al the firme landes and Ilandes found or to be found, diſcouered or to be diſcouered toward the Weſt and South, drawyng a line from the pole Artike to the pole Antartike (that is) from the north to the Southe: Conteynyng in this donation, what ſo euer firme landes or Ilandes are founde or to bee founde towarde *India*, or towarde any other parte what ſo euer it bee, beinge diſtant from, or without the foreſayd lyne drawn a hundreth leaques towarde the Weſte and South from any of the Ilandes which are commonly cauled *De los Azores* and *Cabo Verde*.

All the Ilandes therfore and firme landes, founde and to be founde, diſcouered and to be diſcouered from the ſayde lyne towarde the Weſt and South, ſuch as haue not actually bin heretofore poſſeſſed by any other Chriſtian kyng or prynce vntyll the daye of the natiuitie of owre Lorde Iefu Chryſte laſte paſte, from the which begynneth this preſent yeare beinge the yeare of owre Lorde. M. CCCC. lxxxiii. when ſo euer any ſuch ſhalbe founde by your meſſingers and capytaines, Wee by the autoritie of almyghtie God graunted vnto vs in faynt Peter, and by the office which we beare on the earth in the ſtede of Iefu Chriſte, doo for euer by the tenoure of theſe preſentes, gyue, graunte, aſſigne, vnto yowe, yowre heyres, and ſucceſſoures (the kynges of Caſtyle and Legion) all thoſe landes and Ilandes, with theyr dominions, territories, cities, caſtels, towres, places, and vyllages, with all the ryght, and iuriſdictions therunto perteynyng: conſtitutyng, aſſignyng, and deputyng, yowe, yowre heyres, and ſucceſſours the lordes thereof, with full and free poure, autoritie, and iuriſdiction. Decreeinge neuertheleſſe by this owre donation, graunt, and assignation, that from no Chriſtian Prince whiche actually hath poſſeſſed the foreſayde Ilandes and firme landes vnto the daye of the natiuitie of owre lorde beforeſayde theyr ryght obteyned to bee vnderſtoode hereby to be taken away, or that it ought to be taken away.

Furthermore wee commaunde yowe in the vertue

entiæ (vt sicut pollicemini et non dubitamus pro vestra maxima deuotione et regia magnanimitate vos esse facturos) ad terras firmas et Insulas prædictas, viros probos et Deum timentes, doctos, peritos, et expertos ad instruendum incolas et habitatores præfatos in fide Catholica et bonis moribus imbuendum, desinere debeatis, omnem debitam diligentiam in præmissis adhibentes.

A quibuscumque personis, cuiuscunque dignitatis, etiam imperialis et regalis status, gradus, ordinis vel conditionis, sub excommunicationis læ sententiæ poena quam eo ipso si contra fecerint incurrant, districtius inhibemus ne ad Insulas et terras firmas inuentas et inueniendas, detectas et detegendas versus Occidentem et Meridiem, fabricando et construendo lineam a polo Arctico ad polum Antarcticum, siuæ terræ firmæ et Insulæ inuentæ et inueniendæ sint versus Indiam aut versus aliam quamcunque partem quæ linea distet a qualibet Insularum quæ vulgariter nuncupantur de los Azores et Cabo verde centum leucis versus Occidentem et Meridiem vt præfertur, pro mercibus habendis vel quauis alia causa accedere præsumat absque vestra ac hæredum et successorum vestrorum prædictorum licentia speciali: Non obstantibus constitutionibus et ordinationibus Apostolicis, cæterisque quibuscunque, in illo in quo imperia et dominationes et bona cuncta procedunt: Confidentes quod dirigente Domino actus vestros, si huiusmodi sanctum ac laudabile propositum prosequamini, breui tempore cum felicitate et gloria totius populi Christiani, vestri labores et conatus exitum felicissimum consequentur. Verum quia difficile foret præfentes literas ad singula quæque loca in quibus expediens fuerit deferri, volumus ac motu et scientia similibus decernimus, quod illarum transumptis manu publici notarij inderogati subscriptis, et sigillo alicuius personæ in ecclesiastica dignitate constitutæ, seu curiæ ecclesiasticæ munitis, ea prorsus fides in iudicio et extra ac alias vbilibet adhibeatur, quæ præfentibus adhiberetur si essent adhibitæ vel ostensæ.

Nulli ergo omnino hominum liceat hanc paginam nostræ commendationis, hortationis, requisitionis, donationis, concessionis, assignationis, constitutionis, deputationis, decreti, mandati, inhibitionis, et voluntatis infringere vel ei ausu temerario contraire. Si quis autem hoc attentare præsumperit, indignationem omnipotentis Dei, ac beatorum Petri et Pauli Apostolorum eius, se nouerit incursum.

Datum Romæ apud sanctum Petrum: Anno incarnationis Dominicæ. 1493. quarto nonas Maij: Pontificatus nostri anno primo.

of holy obedience (as yowe haue promysed, and as wee doubt not you wyll doo vppon mere deuotion and princely magnanimitie) to fende to the sayde firme landes and Ilandes, honeste, vertuous, and lerned men, siche as feare God, and are able to instructe th[e] inhabitants in the Catholyke fayth and good maners, applyinge all theyr possible diligence in the premisses.

We furthermore strenghtly inhibite all maner of persons, of what state, degre, order, or condition so euer they bee, although of Imperiall and regall dignitie, vnder the peyne of the sentence of excommunication whiche they shall incurre yf they doo to the contrary, that they in no case presume without speciall lycence of yowe, yowre heyres, and successours, to trauallye for marchaundies or for any other cause, to the sayde landes or Ilandes, founde or to bee found, discovered, or to bee discovered, toward the west and south, drawing a line from the pole Artyke to the pole Antartike, whether the firme lands and Ilandes found and to be found, be situate toward *India* or towarde any other parte beinge distant from the lyne drawn a hundreth leagues towarde the west from any of the Ilandes commonly cauled *De los Azores* and *Cabo Verde*: Notwithstandyng constitutions, decrees, and Apostolycall ordinaunces what so euer they are to the contrary: In him from whom Empyres, dominions, and all good thynges doo procede: Trustyng that almyghtie god directyng yowre enterprises, yf yowe folowe yowre godly and laudable attemptes, yowre laboures and traualles herein, shall in shorte tyme obteyne a happy ende with felicitie and glorie of all Christian people. But soasmuch as it shulde bee a thyng of great difficultie these letters to bee caryed to all siche places as shuld bee expedient, we wyll, and of lyke motion and knowlege doo decree that whyther so euer the same shalbe sent, or wher so euer they shalbe receaued with the subscription of a common notarie therunto requyred, with the seale of any person constitute in ecclesiasticall dignitie, or siche as are autoryfed by the ecclesiasticall courte, the same fayth and credite to bee gyuen thereunto in iudgement or els where, as shulde bee exhibyted to these presentes.

It shall therefore bee lawefull for no man to infringe or rashely to contrarie this letter of owre commendation, exhortacion, requeste, donation, graunt, assignation, constitution, deputation, decree, commaundement, inhibition, and determination. And yf any shall presume to attempte the same, he owght to knowe that he shall thereby incurre the indignation of almyghtie God and his holye Apostles Peter and Paule. (·) (·) (·)

¶ Gyuen at Rome at faynt Peters: In the yeare of th[e] incarnation of owre Lord M. CCCC. LXXXIII. The fourth day of the nones of Maye, the fyrste yeare of owre seate. () () ()

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

SECTION II.

Gonzalo Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés.

The Natural History of the West Indies.

First printed in 1526.]

TO THE READER.



Although amonge dyuers which haue wrytten of the Ocean and Weste Indies, there is none to be compared to Peter Martyr of Angleria, in declarynge by philosophical discourfes the secrete causes of naturall affectes bothe as touchyng the lande, the sea, the starres, and other straunge woorkes of nature, yet forasmuche as of later dayes those countreys haue byn better knowen and searched, and dyuers suche particular and notable thynges founde as are conteyned in the hystories of later wryters, emonge the number of whom *Gonzalus Ferdinandus Ouiedus*,

(whom lerned *Cardanus* compareth to the ancient writers) is doubtles the chiefe, I haue therfore thought good to ioyne to the Decades of Peter Martyr certeyne notable thynges which I haue gathered owte of his booke intituled the Summarie or abbrigement of his generall hystorie of the West Indies wrytten in the firme lande of the same in the citie of *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena* (where he dwelte and was gouernoure many yeares) And dedicated to Th[e]mperou[r]s maiestie, as maye appeare by the epystell folowyng.

TO THE MOST HYGH AND MYGHTIE
PRINCE CHARLES THE FYFTE OF THAT NAME:

EMPEROUR OF ROME, KYNGE OF SPAYNE, AND OF THE TWOO SICILIES,

of bothe the fydes of the streyght of *Faro*, Kyng of Hierufalem

and Hungarie, Duke of Burgonie and Earle of Flaunders,

Lord and inheritoure of the firme lande and Ilandes

of the Weste Ocean, etc. *Gonzalus Ferdinan-*

dus Ouiedus his most humble seruant

wyfheth health and per-

petual felicitie.



174

He thynges whiche principally preferue and mayntayne the woorkes of nature in the memories of men, are hystories and bookes composed of the fame. Amonge the whiche certes those are esteemed moſte trewe and autentyke which haue byn wrytten by wyttie and expert men well trauayled in the worlde, as faythfull wytnesses of fuche thynges as they haue partely ſeene and byn partely informed by credible perſons. Of this mynde and opinion was Plinie, who better then any other autoure hathe wrytten in xxxvii. bookes al that perteyneth to the naturall hystorie, conteyned al in one volume dedicated to Veſpaſian Th[e]mperour. Wherein, as a prudente hystoriographer, he declareth fuche thynges as he had harde: Attributyng the ſeconde autoritie to fuche as he had redde in autoures that wrote before hym: And thyrdeley ioynded to the ſame hystorie, fuch thynges as he hym ſelfe had ſeene as moſte certeyne teſtimonie. Whoſe exemple I ſollowyng, wyl in this my breefe ſummarie reduce and repreſent to yowr maiesties memorie fuche thynges as I haue ſeene in yowre Empyre of the Weſt Indies aſwell in the Ilandes as in the firme lande of the Ocean ſea, where I haue ſerued nowe more then twelue yeares in the place of ſuruoyer of the golde mynes by the commaundemente of the Catholyke kyng *Don Fernando* the fyfte of that name and graundfather vnto yowre maiestie, to whom god gaue great fame and glorie. Senſe whoſe death alſo I haue lykwies ſerued and truſt whyle the reſt of my lyfe yet remayneth, to ſerue yowre maiestie as ſhall pleaſe yowe to commaunde. As touchyng which thynges and fuch other lyke, I haue more largely wrytten in a hystorie begunne as ſone as my age was ripe to take fuche matters in hande. Wherein furthermore I haue made mention of fuche thynges

as haue chaunced in Spaine, from the yeare. 1494. vnto this tyme. Addynge also thereunto suche thynges woorthy memorie as I haue obserued in other realmes and prouinces where I haue trauallyed. And haue likewise particularly wrytten the lyues and woorthy actes of the catholyke Princes of famous memorie *Don Ferdinando* and lady Elizabeth his wyfe to theyr last dayes. After whose fruition of heauenly Paradyse, I haue noted suche thynges as haue chaunced in yowre most fortunate succession. Not omittinge particularly to wryte a large booke of such thynges as haue seemed moste woorthy to bee noted as touchynge yowre maiesties Indies. But for asmuche as that volume remaineth in the cite of *San. Dominico* in the Ilande of *Hispaniola* where I dwell and am placed in houfholde with wyfe, chylde, and famelie, I haue brought no more with me of that my wrytynge then I beare in memorie. Determyninge notwithstandinge for yowre maiesties recreation to make a breefe rehearfall of certeyne notable thynges wherof I haue more largely entreated in my sayde general historie, and such as may seeme moste woorthy to bee redde of yowre maiestie. Of the which, although a great parte haue byn wrytten by other who haue also seene the same, yet perhappes they are not so exactly and particularly described as of me, forasmuche as in maner all that trauallye into these Indies haue greater respecte to luke and gaynes then diligently to searche the woorkes of nature wherunto I haue byn euer naturally inclyned, and haue therefore with all possible endeouour applyed myne eyes and intelligence to fynde the same. And this presente Summarie shall not bee contrary or dyuers from my larger historie wherein (as I haue sayde) I haue more amplye declared these thynges: but shal onely more breiefely expresse th[e] effect therof vntyl such tyme as Godde shal restore me to myne owne house, where I may accomplyshe and fynishe my sayd general hytorie. Wherevnto to gyue the fyrst principle, I say that Don Christopher Colonus (as it is well knowen) beinge the fyrste Admyrall of this India, discovered the same in the dayes of the Catholyke kynge Don Ferdinando and the lady Elyzabeth his wyfe, graundfather and graundmother vnto yowre maiestie: In the yeare. 1491. And came to *Barzalona* in the yeare 1492. with the fyrst Indians and other shewes and profes of the great ryche and notice of this west Empire. The whiche gyfte and benefyte was suche, that it is vnto this daye, one of the greatest that euer any subiect or seruant hath done for his prince or countrey, as is manifeste to the hole worlde. And to faye the trewth, this shall doubtlesse bee so commodious and profytable vnto the hole realme of Spayne, that I repute hym no good Castilian or Spanyarde that doothe not recognise the same. And (as I haue sayde before) forasmuch as in my sayde generall historie I haue more largely intreated of these thynges, I intend at this present only briefely to rehearse certeyne especiall thynges, the whiche fuerly are verye fewe in respecte of the thousandes that myght bee sayde in this behalfe. Fyrst therefore I wyl speake sumwhat of the nauigation into these parties. Then of the generation of the nations whiche are founde in the same, with their rytes, customes, and cerimonies. Also of beastes, foules, byrdes, woormes, fysshes, fea, ryuers, sprynges, trees, plantes, herbes, and dyuers other thynges which are engendered bothe on the lande and in the water. And forasmuche as I am one of th[e] order and company of them that are appointed to returne into these regions to serue yowre maiestie, yf therefore the thynges conteyned in this booke shall not bee distincte in such order as I promised to performe in my greater woork, I desyre yowre maiestie to haue no respecte herevnto, but rather to confyder the noueltie of suche straunge thynges as I haue herein declared, whiche is the chiefe ende that moued me to wryte. Protefying that in this Summarie I haue wrytten the trewth of suche thynges as coome to my remembrance: wherof not onely I my selfe can testifye, but also diuers other woorthy and credible men which haue bin in those regions, and are nowe presente in yowre maiesties courte. And thus it shal suffice to haue faide thus much vnto yowre maiestie in maner of a proheme vnto this present worke which I most humbly desyre yowre maiestie as thankfully t[o] accept, as I haue wrytten it faythfully.

175

¶ Of the ordinary nauyigation from Spayne to the Weste Indies.



The nauyigation whiche is commonly made from Spayne to the Weste India, is from Siuile, where yowre maiestie haue yowre houfe of contraction for those partes, with also yowre officers thervnto perteynyng, of whom the capitaines take their passeporte and lycence. The patrones of fuche shyppes as are appoynted to these vyages, imbarke theym selues at *San Luca di Barameda*, where the ryuer *Cuadachiber* entereth into the Ocean sea. And from hense they folowe their courfe toward the Ilandes of Canarie. Of these feuen Ilandes, they commonly touche two, that is, eyther *Grancanaria* or *Gomera*. And here the shyppes are furnysshed with freshe water, fuell, cheefe, biese, and fuche other thynges whiche may seeme requifyte to be added to fuche as they brynge with them owte of Spayne. From Spayne to these Ilandes, is commonly eyght dayes saylinge, or lyttle more or lesse. And when they are arryued there, they haue sayled two hundereth and fyfytie leaques, whiche make a thousande myles, accomptyng foure myles to a leaque as is their maner to reckon by sea. Departynge

from the fayde Ilandes to folowe their courfe, the shippes tary. xxv. dayes, or a lyttle more or lesse, before they see the fyrste lande of the Ilandes that lye before that whiche they caule *La Spagnuola* or *Hispaniola*. And the lande that is commonly fyrste seene, is one of these Ilandes whiche they caule *Ogni sancti Marigalante* (or *Galanta*) *La Desseada* (otherwise cauled *Desyderata*) *Matanino*, *Dominica*, *Guadalupe*, *San. Christoual*, or summe other of the Ilandes wherof there are a great multitude lyinge aboute these aforefaide. Yet it sumtymes so chaunceth that the shippes passe withoute the fyght of any of the fayde Ilandes, or any other that are within that courfe vntyll they coome to the Iland of *Sancti Iohannis* or *Hispaniola*, or *Jamaica*, or *Cuba*, whiche are before the other. It may also chaunce that they ouerpasse all these likewyfe, vntyll they faule vppon the coastes of the fyrme lande. But this chaunceth when the pylote is not well practised in this nauigation or not perfecte in the trewe carde. But makyng this viage with. experte maryners (wherof there is nowe great plentie) one of the fayde fyrste Ilandes shall euer bee knowen. And from the Ilandes of Canarie to one of the fyrste of these, the distaunce is nyne hundreth leaques by saylinge, or more. And from hense to the cite of saynte Dominike which is in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, is a hundreth and fyfytie leaques: So that from Spayne hitherto, is a thousand and three hundreth leaques. Yet forasmuche as sumtymes the nauigation procedeth not so directly, but that it chaunceth to wander on the one fyde or on the other, wee may well faye that they haue nowe sayled a thousande and fyue hundreth leaques and more. And if the nauigation be slowe by reason of summe hynderaunce, it commonly chaunceth to be fynished in. xxxv. or. xl. dayes. And this happeneth for the moste parte, not accomptyng the extremes: that is, eyther of them that haue slowe passage, or of them that arryue in verye shorte tyme. For wee owghte to confyder that which chaunceth most commonly. The returne from those partes to Spayne, is not fynished without longer tyme, as in the space of. l. [fifty] dayes, or a lyttle more or lesse. Neuerthelesse in this present year of. 1525. there came foure shypps from the Iland of *San Dominico* to faint *Luca* in Spaine, in. xxv. dayes. But (as I haue sayd) we ought not to iudge of that whiche chaunceth feldome, but of that which happeneth most ordinarily. This nauigation is verye safe and much vsed, euen vnto the fayd Ilande. And from this to the fyrme land, the shyppes trauerse diuers wayes for the space of fife, fyxe, or seuen dayes saylynge, or more, accordyng to the partes or coastes whither they directe their vyages, forasmuche as the fayde fyrme lande is verye great and large, and many nauigations and vyages are directed to dyuers partes of the same. Yet to the fyrme land whiche is nearest to this Iland, and lyeth directly ageynst *San Dominico*, the passage is fynished in the tyme aforefayde. But it shalbe muche better to remytte all this to the carde of these nauigations and the new Cosmographie, of the whiche no parte was knowen to Ptolomie or any other of the owlde wrytters.

¶ Of twoo notable thynges as touchyng the West Indies: And of the great rycheffe brought from thense into Spayne.



After my vniuerfall description of the historie of the Indies, there commeth to my remembrance two thynges chiefly to be noted as touchyng the th[e] empire of this West Indies perteynyng to the dominion of yowre maiestye. And these beyde the other particulars wherof I haue suffyciently spoken, are to be confydered as thynges of great importaunce. Wherof, the one is the shorteneffe of the way and with what expedition yowr maiesties shyppes maye passe beyonde the mayne fyrme lande of these Indies into the newe Southe sea cauled *Mare del Sur* llynge beyond the same. And this to th[e] intent to coome to the

Ilandes where the spices growe, beyde the other innumerable rycheffe of the kingedomes and signiorities whiche confine with the fayde sea where are so many people and nations of dyuers toonges and maners. The other thyng, is to confyder howe innumerable treasures are entered into Spayne by these Indies, aswell that whiche commeth dayly from thense as also that is continually to bee looked for, bothe of golde and perle and other marchaunties which are first brought into this yowre realme of Spaine before they are seene of other nations or traded into other realmes. Wherby not onely this yowre realme is greatly inriched, but also the benefyte therof redoundeth to the great profyte of other countreys which are neare thervnto. A testimonye of this, are the double ducades whiche yowre maiestie haue caused to bee coyned, and are disparfed throughowte the hole worlde. But after they are once passed owt of this yowre realme, they neuer returne agein bycause they are the best curraunt money of the world. And therefore if after they haue byn in the hands of straungers they chaunce to be returned ageyne into Spaine, they coome disguised in an other habite, and are diminished of the goodnesse of their golde, with the stampe of yowre maiestye chaunged: So that if it were not for their fuche defacynges in other realmes for the cause aforefayde, there shulde not bee founde so great quantitie of fyne golde of the coyne of any prynce in the worlde as of yowre maiesties. And the cause of all this, are yowre Indies.

¶ Of the mynes of golde, and the maner of woorkyng in theym.



This particular of the mynes of gold, is a thing greatly to bee noted: And I maye muche better speake hereof then any other man, forasmuche as there are nowe twelue yeares passe sence I serued in the place of the surueier of the meltyng shoppes perteynyng to the golde mynes of the firme lande, and was the gouernour of the mynes of the Catholyke kyng *Don Ferdinando*, after whose departure from this lyfe, I serued longe in the same roome in the name of yowr maiestie: By reason wherof, I haue had great occasion to knowe howe golde is founde and wrought owte of the mynes: And do knowe ryght well that this

lande is exceedyng ryche: hauyng by my accompte and by the labour of my Indians and slaues, gathered and fyned a great portion of the same: and may therefore the better affyrme this by testimonye of fyght. For I am well assured that in no part of *Castilia del oro*, that is, golden Castile (otherwise cauled *Beragua*) no man coulede aske me of the mynes of golde, but that I durste haue bounde my selfe to haue discovered them in the space of ten leagues of the country where it shulde haue byn demaunded me, and the same to bee verye ryche. For I was allowed all maner of charges to make searche for the same. And although golde be founde in maner euery where in these regions of golden Castile, yet owght wee not in euery place to bestowe the trauell, and charge to get it owte, bycause it is of lesse quantitie and goodnesse in sum place then in sum. And the myne or veyne whiche owght to be folowed, ought to bee in a place whiche may stande to saue muche of the charges of the labourers, and for the administracion of other necessary thynges that the charges may bee recompensed with gaynes. For there is no doubt but that golde shalbe founde more or lesse in euery place. And the golde whiche is founde in golden Castile, is verye good, and of xxii. caractes or better in fyneffe. Furthermore, beyde this great quantitie of golde whiche I haue fayde to be founde in the mynes, there is also from day to day found or otherwise gotten, great treasure of fuche wrought gold as hath byn in the custodie of the subdued Indians and their kynges, aswell of fuche as they haue gyuen for their fyne and raunfome, or otherwise as frendes to the Christians, beyde that whiche hath byn vyolently taken from the rebelles. But the greatest parte of the wrought gold whiche the Indians haue, is base and holdeth sumwhat of

copper. Of this they make braffettes and chaines and in the fame they clofe their iewels whiche their women are accustomed to weare and esteeme more then all the richeffe of the worlde. The maner howe golde is gathered, is this, eyther of fuche as is founde in *Zauana*, that is to faye in the plaines and riuers of the champian cuntry being without trees, whether the earth be with graffe or without. Or of fuche as is fumtymes founde on the land without the riuers in places where trees growe, so that to coome by the fame, it shalbe requisite to cutte downe many and great trees. But after whiche so euer of these two maners it be founde, eyther in the riuers or ruptures or breaches of water, or elles in the earth, I wyll shewe howe it is founde in bothe these places, and howe it is seperate and purged. Therefore when the myne or veine is discouered, this chaunceth by ferchyng and prouyng in fuche places as by certeyne sygnes and tooke do appeare to skylfull men apte for the generation of golde and to holde golde. And when they haue founde it, they folowe the myne and labour it, whether it be in the ryuer or in the plaine as I haue sayde. And if it bee founde on the plaine, fyrst they make the place verye cleane where they intende to dygge. Then they dygge eyght or ten foote in length and as muche in breadth: but they goo no deeper then a spanne or two, or more as shall seeme best to the maister of the myne, dyggyng equally. Then they washe all the earthe whiche they haue taken owte of the fayde place. And if herein they fynde any golde, they folowe it. And if not, they dygge a spanne deeper, and washe the earth as they dyd before. And if then also, they fynde nothyng, they continue in dyggyng and washyng the earth as before vntill they come to the hard rocke or stone. And if in syne they fynd no golde there, they folowe no further to seeke golde in that place, but go to an other parte. And it is to be vnderstode, that when they haue founde the myne, they folowe it in digginge in the fame meafure in leuell and deapth vntill they haue made an ende of all the myne which that place conteyneth, if it appere to be riche. This myne ought to confyst of certen feete or pases in length or breadth accordyng to certeyne orders determined. And within that compasse of earth, it is not lawfull for any other to dygge for golde. And where as endeth the myne of hym that fyrst founde the gold, immediatly it is lawfull for any other man that wyl, with a staffe to assygne hym selfe a place by the fyde of the fame, inclosyng it with stakes or pales as his owne. These mynes of *Zauana* (that is such as are found in the playne) ought euer to bee foughte nere to sum ryuer or brooke or springe of water, or dyke, or standyng poole, to th[e]nde that the golde maye be waffhed, for the whiche purpose they vse the labour of certeyne Indians as they doo other in dygginge of the myne. And when they haue dygged owte the myne, they fyl certeine traies with that earth, whiche other Indians haue the charge immediatly to receaue at their handes, and to carye those trayes of earth to the water where it maye bee waffhed. Yet do not they that bryng it, washe it, but delyuer it to other, puttyng it owte of their owne trayes into theirs which they haue ready in their handes to receaue it. These waffhers for the moste parte, are the Indian women, bycause this woork is of lesse paine and trauayle then any other. These women when they washe, are accustomed to fyte by the waters fyde, with their legges in the water euen vppe to the knees or lesse as the place serueth their purpose. And thus holdyng the trays with earth in their handes by the handles therof, and puttyng the fame into the water, they moue them rownde aboute after the maner of sftyng, with a certeyne aptenesse in fuche forte that there entreth no more water into the trais then serueth their turne: And with the selfe fame apte mouyng of their trais in the water, they euer auoyd the foule water with the earth owte of the one fyde of the vessell, and receaue in cleane water on the other fide therof. So that by this meanes by little and lyttle, the water waffheth the earth as the lyghter substaunce owte of the trais, and the golde as the heauier matter resteth in the bottome of the fame, beyng rounde and holowe in the myddeft lyke vnto a barbars bafen. And when all the earth is auoyded, and the golde gathered together in the bottome of the traye, they putte it aparte, and returne to take more earth, whiche they washe continually as before. And thus they that labour in this woork, do gather dayly fuche portion of golde as shal please god to graunt to the patrones of these Indians and fuche other as trauaile in the fame. Furthermore, it is to bee noted that for euery two Indians that washe, it is requisite that two other serue them to bryng earth from the myne, and other two to breake the fame smaule and fylle their trais therwith. Also beyde these labourers, it is necessarye that there bee other people in the place where they woork and reste in the nyghte. These are fuche as make their breade, and prouyde for vyttayles and other necessaryes. So that to conclude, there are in all, fyue persons ordinarily assigned to euery traye of waffhers.

There is an other maner of woorkyng the mynes in riuers or brookes of runnyng waters. And this is, that in auoydyng the water of his courfe, after that the beddes of the ryuers are drye and vtterly emptied, they fynde golde emonge the breaches, cliftes, and ryftes of stoncs, and among all that is in the bottome of the chanell, and where naturally the riuier runneth of greatest force. So that it chaunceth sum tyme, that when the bedde of the ryuer is good and ryche, they fynde in it great quantitie of golde. And therefore your maiestie ought to vnderstande for a generail rule, as it appereth in facte, that all golde is engendered in the toppes and hyghest places of the montaynes: And in continuance of time is by lyttle and lyttle brought downe to the vales and plaines by showres of rayne, and the faules of sprynges, ryuers, and brookes hauyng their originall in the mountaynes and descendyng from the fame, notwithstanding it bee oftentimes founde in the plaines farre

from the mountaynes. But when it chaunceth to be founde in great quantitie, it is for the moſte parte amonge the mountaynes and in the riuers, or their branches, more then in any other parte of the plaine. And in theſe two maners is it commonly founde moſte abundantly. And for the better profe that golde is engendered on hyghe, and is brought downe into the lowe places, I haue one great tooke therof whiche cauſeth me to beleue it for certeine. And this is to conſyder that coles neuer putriſe nor corrupt vnder the ground, if they be made of ſtrongee woodde. Wherby it chaunceth that diggyng the earth by the ſouldes or indented places of the mountaynes, or on the fydes, and breakyng a myne in the earthe where it had not byn broken before, and hauyng nowe dygged one or two or three poles in meaſure, the myners founde certeyne coles of wood vnder the ſame leuel where they found gold. And this I ſaye in the earth whiche was taken for a vyrgine: that is to ſaye, ſuch as had not before byn opened for any myne. The which coles coulde not naturally bee engendred there, or enter in by any meanes. But when the ſuperficial part of the earth was equal with the leuel where the coles were founde, it is lyke that the coles were left there by ſum occaſion of fyre, and that they faſtned there in tyme, and that afterwarde in longe continuance of tyme, they were by lyttle and lyttle couered with the earth which the often ſhowers of rayne waſhed from the mountaynes, ſo that by the courſe of yeares the earth ouergrew the coles vnto the ſayde leuell and meaſure whiche had before tyme byn the ſuperficiall parte of the earthe where the coles and golde were founde togyther: wherby it maye appeare that the golde was no more engendered there then were the coles, but brought thither from the mountaynes by the faules of waters as we haue ſayde: forasmuche as the mountaynes are the matrices and bowels of all ryche metals. Further and beſyde this, I ſay that in how much more the gold is gonne farre from the naturall place of his generation to the place where it is founde, it is ſo muche the more purified and fyned and of a better caracte. And the nearer that it is founde to his proper myne or vaine where it is engendered, it is ſo muche the baſer, fouler, and more crude, and of a baſer alay and caracte, and dothe waſt ſo much the more in meltyng, and remayneth more bricke. Sumetyme there are founde graynes of golde of greate quantitie and of greate weyght aboute the earth and ſuntymes alſo vnder the earth. And the greateſte of all other that was founde to this daye in the Indies, was that which was loſte in the ſea aboute the Ilande *Beata*, whiche weyed three thouſande and two hundreth Caſtellans of golde, which are in value foure thouſand a hundreth, thirtie and eyght ducades of golde, which waye one *Arroua* and ſeuene pounde, or. xxxii. pounde. after. xii. ounces to the pounde, whiche make threſcore and foure markes of golde. And I ſawe in the yeare. 1515. in the handes of Mychel Paſſamonte treaſurer to yowre maieſtie, two graines of the which one wayde ſeuene poundes, which are. xiiii. markes, and are in value aboute threſcore and fyue ducades of golde euery marke. The other was of. x. markes, which are fyue poundes of lyke value, and of very good golde of. xxii. caractes and better. There are alſo founde many other greate graynes, although not equall vnto theſe in byggenes. And forasmuche as I haue ſpoken of golde, I haue thought good to declare ſumewhat howe the Indians can very excellently gylte ſuch veſſelles of copper and baſe golde as they make. For they can gyue them ſo fayre and floryſhyng a coloure, that all the maſſe whiche they gylte, appeareth as though it were golde of. xxii. caractes and better. This coloure they gyue with a certeyne herbe as though it were wrought by the arte of any goldeſmyth of Spayne or Italie, and wold of them bee eſteemed as a thyng of greate ryches, and a ſecrete maner of gyldyng. And for as muche as I haue ſpoken ſufficiently of the myne of golde, I wyll nowe ſpeake ſumwhat of copper bycauſe I haue made mention thereof. This metall is founde in many of the Ilandes of the Indies and alſo in the firme lande: And is founde dayely in greate quantitie holdyng ſumwhat of golde. But for the deſyre that owre men haue to golde, they nothyng eſteeme the copper, although there myght great commoditie and profitte be had therby, and alſo by other metals whiche they nothyng regarde excepte ſyluer whiche is founde abundantly in that parte of the firme lande which is cauled *newe Spayne*. But of this it ſhall ſuffice to haue ſayde thus muche, bycauſe I haue more particularly entreated of theſe thynges in my generall hystorie of India.

179

A marke, is a pounde of viii. ounces: summa. xlii. li. [forty-two pounds] weyght viii. ounces, after xii. ounces to the li. [pound].

¶ Of the maner of fyſhyng for perles.



The Indians exerciſe this kynde of fyſhyng for the moſte parte in the coaſtes of the North in *Cubagua* and *Cumana*. And manye of theym which dwell in the houſes of certeyne particular lordes in the Ilandes of *San Dominico* and *Sancti Iohannis*, reſort to the Ilande of *Cubagua* for this purpoſe. Their cuſtome is to go fyue, fyxe, or ſeuene, or more in one of their *Canoas* or barkes erly in the mornyng to ſome place in the ſea there about where it appeareth vnto them that there ſhulde bee greate plentie of thoſe ſhell fyſhes (which ſume caule muſcles and ſume oyſters) wherin perles are engendered. And there they plunge

180

them felues vnder the water, euen vnto the bottome, fauynge one that remayneth in the Canoa or boate which he keepeth styll in one place as neare as he can, lookynge for theyr returne owte of the water. And when one of them hath byn a good whyle vnder the water, he ryfeth vp and commeth fwymmynge to the boate, enterynge into the fame, and leauynge there all the oysters whiche he hath taken and brought with hym. For in these, are the perles founde. And when he hathe therē rested hym selfe a whyle, and eaten parte of the oysters, he returneth ageyne to the water, where he remayneth as longe as he can endure, and then ryfeth ageyne, and swimmeth to the boate with his pray, where he resteth hym as before, and thus continueth course by course, as doo all the other in lyke maner, being all moſte experte fwymmers and dyuers. And when the nyght draweth neare, they returne to the Ilande to theyr houſes, and presente all the oysters to the maſter or ſtewarde of the houſe of theyr lorde who hath the charge of the fayde Indians. And when he hath gyuen them ſumwhat to eate, he layeth vp the oysters in ſafe cuſtodie vntyll he haue a great quantitie therof. Then hee cauſeth the ſame fyſher men to open them. And they fynde in euery of theym pearles other great or ſmaul, two or three or foure, and ſumtymes fiue and fyxe, and many ſmaule graines accordyng to the lyberalitie of nature. They faue the pearles bothe ſmaule and great whiche they haue founde: And eyther eate the oysters if they wyl, or caſte them away, hauynge ſo great quantitie therof that they in maner abhorre them. Theſe oysters are of hard fleſhe, and not ſo pleaſant in eatyng as are owres of Spayne. This Ilande of *Cubagua* where this maner of fyſhing is exerciſed, is in the Northe coaſte, and is no bygger then the Iland of Zelande. Oftentymes the ſea encreaſeth greatly, and muche more then the fyſhers for pearles woid, bycauſe where as the place is very depe, a man can not naturally reſt at the bottome by reaſon of the aboundaunce of aery ſubſtaunce whiche is in hym, as I haue oftentymes proued. For although he may by vyolence and force deſcende to the bottome, yet are his feete lyſted vp ageyne ſo that he can continue no tyme there. And therefore where the ſea is verry deepe, theſe Indian fyſhers vſe to tye two great ſtoones aboute them with a corde, on euery ſyde one, by the weyght wherof they deſcend to the bottome and remayne there vntyl them lyſteth to ryſe ageine: At which tyme they vnloſe the ſtones, and ryſe vppe at their pleaſure. But this their apteneſſe and agilitie in ſwimming, is not the thyng that cauſeth men moſte to maraule: But rather to conſyder how many of them can ſtande in the bottome of the water for the ſpace of one hole houre, and ſumme more or leſſe, accordyng as one is more apte hereunto then an other. An other thyng there is whiche ſeemeth to me verry ſtraunge. And this is, that where as I haue oftentymes demaunded of ſumme of theſe lordes of the Indians, if the place where they accuſtomed to fyſhe for pearles beyng but lytle and narrowe, wyl not in ſhorte tyme bee vtterly without oysters if they conſume them ſo faſte, they al answered me, that although they bee conſumed in one parte, yet if they go a fyſhyng in an other parte or an other coaſte of the Ilande, or at an other contrary wynd, and continue fyſhing there alſo vntyll the oysters be lykewyſe conſumed, and then returne ageyne to the fyrſte place, or any other place where they fyſhed before and emptied the ſame in lyke maner, they find them ageine as ful of oysters as though they had neuer bin fyſhed. Wherby we may iudge that theſe oysters eyther remoue from one place to an other as do other fyſhes, or elles that they are engendered and encreaſe in certeyne ordinarie places. This Ilande of *Cumana* and *Cubagua* where they fyſhe for theſe perles, is in the twelſe degree of the part of the ſaid coaſte which inclineth toward the North. Lykewiſe pearles are founde and gathered in the South ſea cauled *Mare del Sur*. And the pearles of this ſea are verry bygge. Yet not ſo bigge as they of the Ilande of pearles cauled *de las perlas*, or *Margaritea*, whiche the Indians caule *Terarequi*, lying in the goulfe of ſaincte Michael, where greater pearles are founde and of greater price then in any other coaſte of the Northe ſea, in *Cumana*, or any other parte. I ſpeake this as a trewe teſtimonie of fyght, hauynge byn longe in that South ſea, and makyng curious inquisition to bee certenly informed of al that perteyneth to the fyſhyng of pearles. From this Ilande of *Tararequi*, there was brought a pearle of the faſhyon of a peare, waynge. xxxi. carattes, whiche *Petrus Arias* had amonge a thouſande and ſoo many poundes weight of other pearles whiche hee had when capitayne Gaſpar Morales (before *Petrus Arias*) paſſed to the ſaide Ilande in the yeare. 1515. whiche pearle was of great priſe. From the ſaide Ilande alſo, came a great and verry rounde pearle, whiche I brought owte of the ſea. This was as bygge as a ſmaule pellet of a ſtone bowe, and of the weight of. xxvi. carattes. I boughte it in the cite of *Panama* in the ſea of *Sur*: And paide for it fyxe hundreth and fyftie tymes the weyght therof of good gold, and had it thre yeares in my cuſtodie: and after my returne into Spaine, ſoulde it to th[e]rle of *Nanfao*, Marqueſſe of Zenete, great chamberleyne to yowre maieſtie, who gaue it to the Marqueſſe his wyſe, the ladye *Mentia* of *Mendoza*. I thyncke verely that this pearle was the greateſt, ſayreſt, and roundeſt that hath byn ſeene in thoſe partes. For yowre maieſtie ought to vnderſtande that in the coaſte of the ſea of *Sur*, there are founde a hundreth great pearles rounde after the faſhyon of a peare, to one that is perfectly rounde and greate. This Ilande of *Terarequi*, which the Chriſtians caule the Ilande of pearles, and other caule it the Ilande of floures, is founde in the eyght degree on the fouthe ſyde of the firme lande in the prouynce of golden Caſtyle or *Beragua*. And theſe are the coaſtes of the firme lande where pearles are founde euen vnto this day. I vnderſtande alſo that there are perles founde in the prouynce and Ilandes of *Cartagenia*. And fence yowr maieſtie appoynted me a gouernour and

Of this reade more largely in the decadēs.

By the computation of venice. liii. graines make a carette.

181

capytayne, I haue made further searche, and am aduertifed that pearles are founde in dyuers other places as about the Iland of *Codego* which lyeth ageynst the mouth of that porte of the Ilande of *Cartagenia* which the Indians caule *Coro*. The which Iland and porte, are on the North fyde in the tenth degree of the coastes of the firme lande.

¶ *Of the familiaritie which certeyne of the Indians haue with the deuyll, and howe they receaue answere of hym of thynges to coome.*



When the Indians begynne theyr battayle, or go to any combat or attempte any other greate matter, they haue certeyne electe menne whom they reuerendely esteeme and caule them *Tequinas*, whiche in theyr tonge is as muche to saye as maisters. Notwithstandyng that they caule every man that is cunnynge in any sciencie, by the same name, as fyffhers, foulers, hunters, or makers of nettes. These *Tequinas* therefore, they caule the maisters of theyr aunsweres bycause they speake with *Tuyra*, that is the deuyll, and bryng them aunswere what he saythe, eyther as touchyng suche thynges as they haue to doo or shall chaunce to them the day folowyng, or many dayes to coome. For the deuyll beinge so auncient an Astronomer, knowethe the tymes of thynges and feeth howe they are naturally directed and inclined. And makethe theym beleue that they come so to passe by his ordynance, as though he were the lorde and mouer of all that is and shalbe: And that he gyueth the day lyght and rayne: causeth tempest and ruleth the flations of tymes, gyuyng lyfe or takyng away lyfe at his pleasure. By reason wherof, the Indians beinge deceaued of hym, and feing also such effectes to coome certeynely to passe as he hath tolde them before, beleue hym in all other thynges and honoure hym in many places with sacryfices of the bludde and liues of men and odoriferous spices. And when god disposeth the contrary to that whiche the deuell hath spoken in oracle wherby he is proued a lyer, he causeth the *Tequinas* to perswade the people that he hath chaunged his mynde and sentence for fumme of their synnes, or deuifeth fumme suche lye as lyketh hym beste, beyng a skylfull maister in suche subtil and craftie deuises to deceyue the symple and ignorant people whiche hath smaule defence againt so mighty and craftie an aduerfarie. And as they caule the deuell *Tuyra*, so doo they in many places caule the Christians by the same name, thynkyng that they greatly honoure them therby, as in deede it is a name very feete and agreable to many of them, hauyng layde aparte all honestie and vertue, lyuyng more lyke dragons then men amonge these symple people.

Before th[e] inhabitants of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* had receaued the Christian faith there was amonge them a secte of men whiche liued solytarily in the desertes and wooddes and ledde their lyfe in sylence and abstinence more straightly then euer dyd the phylosophers of Pythagoras secte, absteinyng in lyke maner from the eatyng of al thynges that liue by bludde contented onely with suche frutes, herbes, and rootes as the desertes and wooddes mynistred vnto them to eate. The professours of this secte were cauled *Piacas*. They gaue them selues to the knowlege of naturall thynges, and vsed certeyne secrete magicall operations and superstitions wherby they had familiaritie with spirites whiche they allured into theyr owne bodyes at suche tymes as they wolde take vppon them to tell of thynges to coome, whiche they dyd in maner as foloweth. When any of the kynges had occasyon to caule any of them owte of the desertes for this purpose, their custome was to fende them a portion of their syne breade of *Cazabbi* or *Maizium*, and with humble requeste and sute to desyre them to tell them of suche thynges as they wolde demaunde. After the request graunted and the place and daye appoynted, the *Piacas* cometh with two of his disciples waytyng on hym, wherof the one bryngeth with hym a vessell of a secrete water, and the other a lytle syluer bell. When he commeth to the place, he sitteth downe on a rounde seate made for hym of purpose. Where hauyng his disciples the one standyng on the one hande and the other on the other euen in the presence of the kyng and certeyne of his nobles (for the common people are not admytted to these misteries) and turnyng his face toward the deserte, he begynneth his inchauntment and cauleth the spirit with loude voyce by certeyne names which no man vnderstandeth but he and his disciples. After he hath dooen thus a while, if the spirite yet deferre his coomynge, he drinketh of the sayde water, and therwith waxeth hotte and furious, and inuerteth and turneth his inchauntment, and letteth hym selfe bludde with a thorne, marueilously turmoilyng hym selfe as wee reade of the furious Sybilles not ceasyng vntyl the spirite bee coome: who at his coomynge entereth into hym and ouerthroweth hym as it weare a grehounde shulde ouerturne a squerell. Then for a space, he seemeth to lye as though he were in great payne or in a rapte, wonderfully tormentyng hym selfe, duryng whiche agonie, the other disciple shaketh the syluer bell

continually. Thus when the agonie is paste and he lyeth quietly (yet withowt any fence or feelyng) the kynge or summe other in his sleade, demaundeth of hym what he desyreth to knowe, and the spirite answereth by the mouth of the rapte *Piaces* with a directe and perfecte answer to all poyntes. In so muche that on a tyme certeyne Spanyardes beyng present at these mysteries with one of the kinges, and in the Spanyshe tounge demaundyng the *Piaces* of their shyppes whiche they looked for owte of Spayne, the spirite answered in the India tounge, and toulde them what daye and houre the shyppes departed from Spayne, how many they were, and what they brought withowt faylynge in any poynte. If he be also demaunded of the eclipse of the foonne or moone (whiche they greatly feare and abhorre) he geueth a perfecte answer, and the lyke of tempestes, famen, plentie, warre or peace, and suche other thinges. When all the demaundes are fynysht, his disciples caule hym aloud, rynging the fyluer bell at his eare and blowyng a certeyne pouder into his nofethrilles wherby he is rayfed as it weare from a deade sleape beinge yet fumewhat heauy headed and faynt a good whyle after. Thus beinge ageyne rewarded of the kynge with more breade, he departeth ageyne to the desertes with his disciples. But fence the Christian fayth hath byn disparted throwghe owte the Ilande, these deuyllysh practises haue ceased, and they of the members of the deuyl, are made the members of Chryste by baptysme forsakyng the deuyl and his workes, with the vaine curiositie of desyre of knowlege of thynges to coome, wherof for the most part it is better to be ignorant then with vexation to knowe that which can not be auoyded.

Furthermore, in many places of the firme lande, when any of the kynges dye, all his houfholde seruantes, aswell women as men which haue continually serued hym, kyl them selues, beleauynge as they are taught by the deuyl *Tuyra*, that they which kyl them selues when the kynge dyeth, go with hym to heauen and serue hym in the same place and office as they dyd before on the earth whyle he lyued. And that all that refuse so to doo, when after they dye by theyr naturall death or otherwyse, theyr soules to dye with theyr bodyes and to bee dissolued into ayer and become nothyng as do the soules of hogges, byrdes, or fyshes or other brute beastes. And that only the other may enioy the priuilege of immortalitie for euer to serue the kynge in heauen. And of this false opinion commeth it that they which sowe come or set rootes for the kynges breade, and gather the same, are accustomed to kyl them selues that they may enioy this priuilege in heauen. And for the same purpose, cause a portion of the graine of *Maizium* and a bundle of *Iucca* (wherof theyr breade is made) to be buried with them in theyr graues that the same maye serue them in heauen if perhappes there shuld lacke feedes to sowe. And therefore they take this with them to begyn with all, vntyl *Tuyra* (who maketh them all these fayre promisses) proude them of greater quantitie. This haue I my selfe sene in the toppe of the mountaynes of *Guaturo*, where hauynge in pryson the kynge of that prouince (who rebelled from th[e] obedience of yowre maiestie) and demaundyng of hym to whom perteyned those sepulchres or graues whiche I sawe in his house, he answered that they were of certeyne Indians whiche slewe them selues at the death of his father. And bycause they are oftentimes accustomed to burye greate quantities of wrought golde with them, I caused two graues to bee opened, wherein was nothyng founde but a vessell full of the grayne of *Maizium*, and a bundell of *Iucca* as I haue sayde. And demaunding the cause hereof of the kinge and the other Indians, they answered that they that were buried there, were the labourers of the grounde, and men skylful in sowyng of feedes and makynge of breade, and seruantes to the kynges father. And to th[e] ende that theyr soules shoulde not dye with theyr bodyes, they slewe them selues at the deathe of the kynge theyr master to lyue with hym in heauen. And to th[e] intent that they myght serue him there in the same office they referued that *Maizium* and *Iucca* to sowe it in heauen. Whereunto I answered them in this maner. Beholde howe your *Tuyra* deceaueth yowe? And howe all that he teacheth yow is false? Yowe see how in so long a tyme fence they are deade, they haue not yet taken awaye this *Maizium* and *Iucca* which is nowe putrified and woorth nothyng, and not lyke to bee sown in heauen. To this the kynge replied, sayng. In that they haue not yet taken it away nor sown it in heauen, the cause is that they chaunced to synde enowgh there, by reason wherof they had no neade of this. To this erreure manye thynges were sayde which seemed of lyttle force to remoue hym from his false opinion, and especially any such as at that age are occupyed of the deuyl, whom they paynt of the selfe same forme and coloure as he appereth vnto theym in dyuers shapes and formes. They make also Images of golde, copper, and woodde, to the same similitudes in terrible shapes and so variable as the paynters are accustomed to paynt them at the feete of saynte Mychaell th[e] archangell or in anye other place where they paynt them of most horrible port[r]iture. Lykewyse when the deuyl greatly intendeth to feare them, he threteneth to sende them great tempestes which they caule *Furacanas* or *Haurachanas*, and are so vehement that they ouerthrowe many howses and great trees. And I haue sene in montaynes full of many and greate trees, that for the space of three quarters of a league the mountayne hathe byn subuerted and the trees ouerthrowen and plucked owte of the earthe with the rootes: a thyng doubtlesse so fearefull and terrible to behold, that it may verely appere to be doen by the hand of the deuell. And in this case the Christian men ought to consider with good reason, that in al places where the holy sacrament is referued, the sayd tempestes are no more so outrageous, or so perelous as they were wonte to bee.

¶ *Of the temperature of the regions vnder or neare to the burnt lyne cauled
Torrida zona or the Equinoctiall: and of the dyuers seasons
of the yeare.*



Thes landes and regions that are neare about the clymes of the Equinoctiall lyne, are naturally hotte, althowghe they bee otherwyfe temperate by the diuine prouidence. And therefore suche fleshe or fysh as is taken and kylled in these regions, can not bee preferued from putrefaction except it be roasted, sodden, or perboylde, the same daye that it is kylde. And wheras I haue sayde that such regions are naturally hot, and yet temperate by the prouidence of god, it is so in deede. And therefore not without cause the auncient autours were of opinion that the burnt lyne or *Torrida zona* where passeth the lyne of the Equinoctiall, shulde be vnhabitable by reason the soonne hath greater dominion in that place then in any other of the sphere, remaynyng continually betwene the two tropykes of Cancer and Capricorne. For when in these regions the earth is opened or dygged from the superficiall parte therof to the depth of a mans heyght, it is founde temperate. And within this space, the trees and plantes fasten and spreade their rootes, and no dieper. Extendinge the same as farre in breadth in the ground as do their braunches in the ayer: And enter no dieper into the grounde then I haue sayde, bycause that beneth the depth of the said space of a mans heyght, the earth is verye hotte, the vpper parte beinge temperate and verye moyste aswell by reason of th[e]aboundaunce of water whiche fauleth from heauen vppon that earth at certeyne ordinarie seasons of the yeare, as also for the multitude of great ryuers, brokes, sprynges and maryshes, wherby the myghtie and supreme lorde which made these landes, hath moste prudently prouyded for the perferuation of the same.

R. E. As touchyng this poynt whiche was vnknown to the owlde wryters, and without consideration wherof reason can not perfectly conceaue howe temperate regions shulde be vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, I haue thought good for the better manifestyng of this secrete worke of nature, to note owte of Cardanus his booke de Elementis, howe all waters haue their course toward the South as to the lowest part of the earth. He wryteth therefore as foloweth. The water was made of lesse quantitie then the earth and only in maner in the superficiall parte therof, that place might bee lefte for the habitation of beastes, and that water by his couldnesse myght temperate and not destroy the lyfe of beastes. And bicause this generation of luyng creatures, was only necessary on the superficiall partes of the earth in comparison to the hole, therfore was the water made to occupie only the superficiall parte, in the which, metals, plantes, beastes, and fyshes shulde bee nuryshed. And bycause there was great perell least it shulde be to much consumed by the ayer and heate of the soonne, continuall mouinge was ioyned to it, wherby it gathereth coldnes and is preferued from soodeyne resolution. For suche waters as do not moue, doo soone putrifie, and are easely resolued into ayer. By reason wherof nature prouyded for the generation of water in coulde places, as vnder the poles and mountaynes. And whereas the earth vnder the Equinoctiall shulde otherwise for lacke of moyster haue bin to much burned and scorched, nature also prouyded that that parte of the earth shulde bee lowest, by reason wherof all waters haue their course toward the South to mitigate with moyster th[e]extremite of heate which otherwise shulde haue byn intollerable in that clyme. And by this reason, the famous ryuer of Nilus in Egypte. albeit it haue his originall and sprynge, owt of the mountaynes of the mone cauled Montes Lunae nere vnto the cyrcle of Capricorne, yet runnyng with all his braunches vnder and beyonde the Equinoctiall cyrcle, it disparfeth through owt the burnt line of *Torrida zona*, and by the same vyolent course fauleth into owre sea nere vnto the cite of Alexandria. It was necessary therefore that the greatest parte of the coulde and moyst element shulde haue recourse thither and confyst there, whereas was the greatest necessitie therof to temper the heate of the soonne by moystynge and coolynge the earthe and the ayer, as vnder the Equinoctiall. And herewith also hath most prudent nature prouyded for the securitie and preferuation of the places lyinge betwene bothe th[e]extremities of heate and colde, as betwene the poles and the Equinoctiall. For the waters flowynge euer one wayes and keyng one course, no regions can be drowned by fluddes: which thynge they well obserue that delyuer fields from inundations or ouerflowynges, and that take in hande to drye vp maryshes. If therefore waters had not their course and faul toward places lowe or declynyng, the hole earth shulde bee ouerflowne as a marryshe. And that the most declynyng parte shulde bee toward the South, and sumwhat hygher about the poles, the cause is aswell the consumyng heate of the soonne in the Southe partes, as the prefernyng coulde of the hygh mountaynes nere to the poles. For we haue els where proued that heate consumeth and wasteth as coulde gathereth and preferneth. And for this cause that parte of the earthe that is nearest the poles, is, was, and euer shalbe highest, and likewise lowest in the middest furthest from the poles. And therefore it was not conuenient that the sonne shuld haue his course on euery fyde, neither to the poles. For if it were caryed alyke to euery parte throughout the worlde, it is necessary that the earth bee equall: and by that reason shulde it euer bee altogether dryed, or elles all ouerflowed with water. But where as this coulde not suffice to the free course of ryuers for the often intercourse of higher places lyinge in the waye, wherby ouerflowynges and stayes of waters and their corruption myght ensue, mooste prouydent nature hath gyven this priuilege to water that it maye so muche ascende as it hath descended: that by this meanes passyng ouer mountaynes and hylles, it maye at the length bee caryed into the sea. etc. Hytherto Cardanus, lette vs nowe returne to the historie.

There are also many roughe and hygh mountaynes with temperate ayer and pleasaunt, cleare and moderate nightes. Of the whiche particularitie the auncient writers hauyng no certeyne knowlege, affirmed

184

185

the said burnte lyne or *Torrída zona*, or Equinoctial to be naturally vnhabitable. As touching which thing I am able to witnesse the contrary by testimonie of fyght and feelyng as by most certeine fenfes, hauyng liued many yeares in these regions, by reason wherof better credit ought to be giuen to me then to fuche as haue grounded their opinion onely vpon coniectures. And to speake further of the fyтуation of these regyons, yowe shall vnderstande that the coaste of the Northe sea, beyng in the goulfe of *Vraba* and in the porte of *Dariena*, where the shyppes arryue whiche coome owte of Spayne, is in the fyxte degree and a halfe, and in the feuenth, and from fyxe and a halfe vnto eyght, excepte a smaule pointe which entereth into the sea toward the North. That pointe which of this land and new parte of the worlde lieth moste towarde the East, is the cape of faincte Auguſtine which is in the eight degree. So that the said goulfe of *Vraba* is distant from the Equinoctiall lyne, from a hundreth and twentie to a hundreth and thirtie leaques and three quarters of a leaque after th[e] accompte of. xvii. leaques and a halfe for euerye degree from pole to pole. And thus for a lyttle more or lesse, goeth all the coaste. By reason wherof, in the citie of *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, and in all that course of the forſayde goulfe of *Vraba*, at all tymes of the yeare the dayes and nyghtes are in maner of equall length. And if there bee any dyfference betwene them by reason of this smaule distance from the Equinoctial, it is so lyttle, that in. xxiii. houres makyng a naturall daye, it canne not bee perceaued but by the iudgement of ſpeculatiue men and fuche as vnderstande the ſphere. From henſe the North ſtarre is ſcene very lowe And when the ſtarres which are cauled the wardens of the north ſtarre, are vnder the chariotte, it can not bee ſcene, bycauſe it is vnder the horiſontal. And whereas I haue ſayde beefore that it rayneth in these regions at certeyne ordinarie tymes, it is ſo in deede. For it is wynter and ſummer there at contrary tymes to that whiche is in Spayne, where the greateſte coulde of froſte and rayne is in December and Ianuary: And the greateſt heate of ſommer aboute ſaynt Iohannes daye at mydſommer or in the moneth of Iuly. But in golden Caſtile or *Beragua*, it is contrary. For the ſommer and tyme of greateſt drowght and withowt rayne, is at Chryſtmas and a moneth before and a moneth after. And the tyme when it rayneth moſt, is about midſommer and a moneth before and a moneth after. And this ſeaſon whiche they caule wynter, is not for that it is any coulder then, then at any other tyme of the yeare, or hotter at Chryſtmas then at other ſeaſons, the tyme in these regions being euer after one maner, but for that that in this tyme which they caule wynter, the ſonne is hyd from theyr fyghtes by reason of cloudes and rayne more then at other tymes. Yet ſoſmuch as for the moſte parte of the yeare they lyue in a cleare, open, and temperate ayer, they ſumwhat ſhrynke and feele a lyttle coulde duryng the tyme of the ſaid moiſt and cloudy ayer, althowgh it bee not coulde in deede, or at the leaſt fuche coulde as hath any ſenſible ſharpenes.

¶ *Of dyuers particular thynges, as woormes, ſerpentes, beaſtes, foules, trees. etc.*



Any other thynges myght be ſayde, and much differing from these wherof I haue ſpoken. But to lette paſſe the multitude of thynges whiche are as variable as the power of nature is infinite, and to ſpeake of fuche thynges as coome chiefly to my remembraunce as mooste woorthy to be noted, I wyll fyrſte ſpeake of certeyne lyttle and troubelous beaſtes whiche maye ſeeme to bee engendered of nature to moleſt and vexe menne, to ſhewe them and gyue them to vnderſtand howe smaule and vyle a thyng maye offende and diſquiete them, to th[e]nde that they maye remember the pryncipall ende for the whiche they were created, that is, to knowe theyr maker and procurer of theyr ſaluation by the waye whiche is open to all Chriſtian men and all other whiche wyll open the eyes of theyr vnderſtandyng. And although the thynges wherof wee entende nowe to ſpeake may ſeeme vyle and lyttle to bee eſteemed, yet are they woorthy to bee noted and conſydered to vnderſtand the difference and variable woorkes of nature. So it is therefore, that whereas in many partes of the firme lande by the which aſwell the Chriſtians as Indians doo trauel, there are ſuch maryſhes and waters in the way that they are fayne to go withowt breeches amonge the herbes and weedes, by reason wherof, certeyne smaule beaſtes or woormes (whiche they caule *Garapates*) much lyke vnto tykes, cleaue faſt to theyr legges. Theſe wormes are as little as the pouder of beaten falt: And cleaue ſo faſt that they can by no meanes be taken away except the place bee noynted with oyle. And after that the legges bee noynted awhyle with oyle, or the other partes where theſe lyttle tykes are faſtened, they ſcrape the place with a knyfe and ſo take them away. But the Indians whiche haue no oyle, ſmoke them and burne them with fyer, and abyde great peynes in takyng them away by this meanes. Of other lyttle beaſtes which trouble men and are

engende[red] in theyr heades or other partes of theyr bodies, I faye that the Christian men which trauell into these partes, haue them but feldome tymes, and that not past one or two, and this also very feldome. For passynge by the lyne of the Diameter where the compasse makethe difference of saylynge by the wynde cauled *Greco*, (that is North East) and *Magistral*, (that is fouth west) which is in the course of the Ilandes of *Azori*, they sayle but a lyttle way folowing owre vyage by the west, but that all the lyfe which the Christians cary with them, or are engendered in theyr heades or other places of theyr bodies, dye and vterlye confume by lyttle and lyttle, and are not engendered in India excepte in the heades of lyttle chyldren in those partes aswel amonge the chyldren of the Christians which are borne there, as also amonge the natural Indians who haue them commonly in theyr heades and sumetymes in other partes of theyr bodyes, and especially they of the prouince of *Cucua*, which is a region conteynynge more then a hundreth leaques in length, and embraseth the one and the other coast of the North sea and of the East. When these Indians are infected with this fylthynesse, they dresse and clesse one an other. And they that exercise this, are for the moste parte women who eate all that they take: And haue herein such dexteritie by reason of theyr exercise, that owre men can not lightly atteyne therunto. There is also another thyng greatly to bee consydered. And this is how the Christian men beinge there cleane frome this fylthynes of India, aswell in theyr heades as the reste of theyr bodyes, yet when they returne to coomme ageyne into Europe and begyn to arryue in that place of the Ocean sea where wee fayde before that the lyfe dyed and forfoke them, suddenly in theyr repassynge by the same clyme (as though the lyfe had taryed for them in that place) they can by no meanes auoyde them for the space of certeyne dayes although they change theyr fhertes two or three tymes in a day. These lyfe are at the fyrste as lyttle as nyttes, and growe by lyttle and lyttle vntyl they bee of the byggenesse that they are in Spayne. This haue I often tymes proued, hauynge nowe foure tymes passed the Ocean sea by this vyage.

186

Befyde these woormes and vermyn wherof we haue spoken, there is another lyttle mischeuous woorme, whiche we may number amonge the kyndes of fleas. This pestilence the Indians caule *Nigua*: And is much lesse then a flea. It perfeth the fleshe of a man, and so launfeth or cutteth the same (while in the meane tyme it can nother bee seene nor taken) that frome fume it hath cutte of theyr handes, and frome other theyr fiete vntyll the remedy was founde to annoynte the place with oyle and scrape it with a rafoure.

Nigua.

In the firme lande in golden Castyle or *Beragua*, there are many vipers lyke vnto them of Spayne. They that are bytten of them, dye in short space. For fewe lyue to the fourthe daye except present remedy. Of these, fume are of a lesse kind then other: And haue theyr tayle sumwhat rounde, and leape in the ayer to affayle men. And for this cause, fume caule this kynde of vipers *Zyro*. Theyr bytyng is most venemous, and for the moste parte incurable. One of them chanced to byte an Indian mayde whiche serued me in my house, to whome I caused the furgians to mynister theyr ordinarye cure, but they coulde doo her no good, nor yet get one droppe of bludde owt of her, but only a yelow water, so that shee died the thyrd day for lacke of remedy as the like hath chanced to dyuers other. This mayde was of th[e]age of. xiiii. yeares and spoke the Spanysh toonge as yf shee had byn borne in Castyle. Shee sayde that the vyper whiche bytte her on the foote, was two spannes longe or lyttle lesse. And that to byte her shee lepte in the ayer for the space of more then syxe spaces, as I haue harde the lyke of other credible persons.

Vipers.

I haue also seene in the firme lande, a kynde of adders very fmaule and of seuen or eyght foote longe. These are so redde that in the nyght they appeare lyke burnynge cooles, and in the day seeme as redde as bludde. These are also venemous, but not so much as the vipers. There are other much lesse and shorter and blacker. These coome owt of the ryuers and wander sumtymes farre on the lande, and are lykwyse venemous. There are also other adders of a ruffet coloure. These are sumwhat bygger then the vipers, and are hurtful and venemous. There are lykewyse an other forte of manye coloures and very longe. Of these I sawe one in the yeare of Christ 1515. in the Iland of *Hispaniola* nere vnto the sea costes at the foote of the mountaynes cauled *Pedernales*. When this adder was slayne, I measured her and founde her to be more then. xx. foote longe, and sumwhat more then a mans fyft in byggenes. And although she hadde three or foure deadely woundes with a swoorde, yet dyed shee not nor stoonke the same daye, in so much that her bludde continued warme all that tyme. There are also in the maryshes and desertes of the firme lande many other kyndes of lyfertes, dragons, and other dyuers kyndes of serpentis wherof I entende not here to speake much, bycause I haue more particularly entreated of these thynges in my generall historie of the Weste Indies.

Adders.

There are also spiders of marueylous bygneffe. And I haue seene fomme with the body and legges, bygger then a mannes hande extended euery waye. And I ones sawe one of suche bygneffe, that onely her bodye was as bygge as a sparowe, and full of that laune wherof they make their webbes. This was of a darke ruffette coloure, with eyes greater then the eies of a sparow. They are venemous and of terrible shape to beholde. There are also scorpions and dyuers other suche venemous wormes. Wherby we maye see, that where as natural causes and influence of the planettes are of strongest actiuitie, they cease not to engender and brynge foorthe bothe good and badde accordynge to the dispoftyon of the matter, whiche they also doo partely dispoise as the phylosophers affyrme.

Dragons.

Spiders.

187

Furthermore in the fyrme lande, there are manye toades beyng very noyous and hurteful by reason of their great multitude. They are not venemous. They are seene in greate aboundance in *Dariena* where they are so bygge that when they dye in the time of drouth, the bones of fum of them (and especially the rybbs) are of fuche greatnesse that they appere too bee the bones of cattes or of fumme other beastes of the same byggenesse. But as the waters dyminishe and the moysture consumeth in the tyme of drouth (as I haue sayde) they also consume therwith vntyll the yeare nexte folowing when the rayne and moysture increase, at whiche tyme they are seene ageyne. Neuerthelesse, at this present, there is no fuch quantitie of them as was wonte to bee, by reason that as the land is better cultured by the Christians, as well by the fellynge of wooddes and shrubbes as also by the pasture of kine, horges, and other beastes, so is it apparent that this poyson diminisheth dayly, wherby that regyon becometh more holsome and pleasaunt. These toades fyng after three or foure fortes. For fumme of them fyng pleasauntly: other, lyke owres of Spayne. Summe also whistle: and other fumme make an other maner of noyse. They are lykewyse of dyuers colours: as fumme greene, fumme ruffette or grey, and fumme almost blacke. But of all fortes, they are great, and fylthye, and noyous by reason of their great multitude: yet are they not venemous as I haue sayde.

Crabbes.

There are also a straunge kynde of crabbes, whiche coome fourth of certeyne holes of the earth that they them selues make. The head and bodye of these, make one rounde thing muche lyke vnto the hooche of a fawkon: hauynge foure feete commyng owt of the one syde and as many owt of the other. They haue also two mouthes like vnto a paire of smaule pinfers, the one bygger then the other, wherwith they byte, but do no great hurte bycause they are not venemous. Their skyn and bodye is smoothe and thynne as is the skynne of a man; sauynge that it is sumwhat harder. Their colour is ruffette or white, or blewe, and walke fydelonge. They are very good to bee eaten: In so muche that the Christians trauayling by the fyrme lande, haue byn greatly nuryshed by them bycause they are founde in maner euery where. In shape and forme, they are muche lyke vnto the crabbe which we paynte for the fyng Cancer, and like vnto those which are found in Spaine in *Andalusia* in the ryuer *Guadalchiber* where it entereth into the sea, and in the sea coastes therabout, sauynge that these are of the water and the other of the lande. They are sumtymes hurtfull, so that they that eate of them dye. But this chaunceth onely when they haue eaten any venemous thyng, or of the venemous apples wherwith the Canibale archers poyson their arrowes wherof I wyll speake hereafter. And for this cause the Christians take hede howe they eate of these crabbes if they fynde them neare vnto the sayd apple trees.

Serpentes cauled
Iuanni.

Furthermore in these Indies, aswell in the fyrme lande as in the Ilandes, there is founde a kynde of serpentes, which they caule. Y. V. *anas*, which fumme caule *Iuannas*. These are terrible and fearefull to fyght, and yet not hurtfull. They are very delicate to bee eaten, and it is not yet knowen whether they be beastes of the lande or fyshes, bycause they lyue in the water, and wander in the woddes and on the lande. They haue foure feete, and are commonly bigger then connies and in fumme places bygger then otters, with tayles lyke lifantes or eutes. Their skynne is spotted, and of the same kynd of smothnesse or barenesse, although of dyuers colours. Vpon the ridge of their backs, they haue many long prickes. Their teethe are very sharpe, and especially their fanges or dogge teeth. Their throtes are longe and large, reachynge from their beardes to their brestes, of the lyke skynne to the resydewe of their bodies. They are dumme, and haue no voyce or make any noyse or crye although they bee kept tyde to the foote of a cheste or any other thyng for the space of. xx. or. xxv. dayes without any thyng to eate or drynke, excepte they gyue them nowe and then a lyltle of the breade of *Cazabbi*, or fumme fuch other thyng. They haue foure feete, and their fore feete as longe as a mans fynger with clawes lyke the clawes of a byrde, but weaker, and fuche as can not grafle or take holde of any thyng. They are muche better to bee eaten then to beholde. For fewe that see them, wyll haue desyre to eate of them, by reason of their horrible shap excepte fuche as haue byn accustomed to the beastes of these regyons, whiche are more horrible and fearefull, as this is not but onely in apparence. Their fleshe is of much better taste then the fleshe of connyes and more holsome. For it hurteth none but onely fuch as haue had the frenshe poxe. In so much that if they haue onely byn touched of that infyrmitie, although they haue byn hole of longe tyme, neuerthelesse they feele hurte and complayne of the eatynge of these *Iuannas*, as hath byn often tymes proued by experience.

188

Byrdes.

A very lyltle
byrde.

There are founde in the fyrme lande certeyne byrdes so lyltle that the hole body of one of theym is no bygger then the toppe of the byggest fynger of a mans hande: and yet is the bare body without the fethers not paste halfe so bygge. This byrde, besyde her lyltlenes, is of fuch velocitie and swyftnes in flying that who so seeth her fleing in the ayer, can not se her flap or beate her winges after any other fort then do the dorres or humble bees or betels: so that there is no man that seeth her flie, that wold think her to be any other then a dorre. They make their nestes accordyng to the proportion of their bignes. And I haue seene that one of these byrdes with her nest put in a paire of gold weights, altogether hath waid no more then. ii. *Tomini*, which are in poise. 24. grains, with the fethers with out the which she shulde haue wayed sumwhat lesse. And doubt lesse when I consider the fynnesse of the clawes and feete of these birdes, I knowe not whervnto I may

better liken them then to the lyttle byrdes whiche the lymmers of bookes are accustomed to paynte on the margentes of churche bookes and other bookes of deuine seruice. Their fethers are of many faire colours as golden yelowe and greene befide other variable colours. Their beake is verye longe for the proportion of theyr bodies: and as fyne and subtile as a fowyng nedle. They are verye hardye: so that when they see a man clyme the tree where they haue theyr nestes, they flye at hys face and stryke hym in the eyes, commyng, goyng, and retournyng with such swyftnes, that no man wolde lightly beleue it that hath not seene it. And certainly these byrdes are so lyttle, that I durst not haue made mention hereof if it were not that diuers other which haue seene them as wel as I, can beare witness of my saying. They make their nestes of flockes and heare of cotten wherof there is great plentie in these regions, and serueth wel for theyr purpose. But as touchyng the byrdes, foules, and beastes of these Indies, bycause they are innumerable bothe lyttle and greate, I intende not to speake muche heare, bycause I haue spoken more largely hereof in my generall hystorie of the Indyas.

There is an other kynde of beastes seene in the firme land which seemed verye straunge and marueilous to the Chrystian men to beholde, and muche differyng from all other beastes which haue byn seene in other partes of the worlde. These beastes are cauled *Bardati*: And are foure footed, hauing their taile and al the rest of theyr bodies couered onely with a skyn lyke the coperture of a barbed horse or the chekered skynne of a lyfarte or Crocodile, of coloure betwene whyte and ruffet, inclynyng somewhat more to whyte. This beast, is of forme and shape much lyke to a barbed horse with his barbes and flankettes in all poyntes. And from vnder that which is the barbe and coperture, the tayle commeth forth, and the feete in theyr place, the necke also and the eares in theyr partes, and in fyne all thynges in lyke sorte as in a barbed courser. They are of the bygnes of one of these common dogges. They are not hurtfull. They are fylthy, and haue theyr habitation in certen hillockes of earthe where digginge with there feete they make their dens verye deepe and the holes therof in like maner as do connyes. They are verye excellent to be eaten, and are taken with nettes and sum also killed with crosbowes. They are lykewise taken often tymes when the husband men burne the stubble in fowyng time, or to renewe the herbage for kyne and other beastes. I haue often times eaten of their fleshe which semeth to me of better tast then kyddes fleshe, and holfome to be eaten. And if these beastes had euer byn seene in these partes of the woorld where the first barbed horses had their original, no man wold iudge but that the forme and fasshion of the coperture of horses furnished for the warres was fyrste deuysed by the fyght of these beastes.

There is also in the firme lande an other beaste cauled *Orso Formigaro*, that is, the Ante beare. This beaste in heare and coloure, is much lyke to the beare of Spayne, and in maner of the same makyng faue that he hath a much longer snout and is of euyll fyght. They are often tymes taken only with staues without any other weapon, and are not hurtfull. They are also taken with dogges bycause they are not naturally armed although they byte somewhat. They are founde for the moste parte about and neare to the hyllockes where are great abudaunce of antes. For in these regions is engendered a certeyne kynde of antes very lyttle and blacke, in the fyeldes and playnes where as growe no trees, where by th[e] instinct of nature these antes separate them selues to engender far from the wooddes for feare of these beares: The whiche bycause they are fearefull, vyle, and vnarmed (as I haue sayde) they keepe euer in places full of trees vntyll verye famen and necessitie, or the great desire that they haue to fiede of these antes, cause them to coomme owt of the wooddes to hunte for them. These antes make a hyllocke of earth to the heyght of a man, or somewhat more or lesse, and as bygge as a great chest, and sumtymes as bygge as a butte or a hogges head, and as hard as a stone: So that they seeme as thoughte they were stones fet vp to lymytte th[e] endes and confines of certeyne landes. Within these hyllockes made of most harde earth, are innumerable and infinite lyttle antes, the which may bee gathered by bushelles when the hyllocke is broken. The which when it is sumtymes moysted by rayne and then dried ageyne by the heate of the foonne, it breaketh and hath certeyne smaull ryftes as lyttle and subtile as the edge of a knyfe. And it semeth that nature hath gyuen sence to these Antes to fynde such a matter of earth wherwith they may make the sayde hyllocke of fuche hardenes that it may seeme a stronge pauement made of lyme and stone. And wheras I haue proued and caused sum of them to bee broken, I haue founde them of fuche hardenes as if I had not seene I coude not haue beleued: In so muche that they coude scarcely bee broken with pykes of Iren: So stronge fortresses doo these lyttle beastes make for theyr sauegarde ageynst theyr aduersarie the beare, who is chieflye nurysshed by them, and gyuen them as an enemye, accordyng to the common prouerbe which sayth, *Non e alcuna persona si libera, a chimanchi il suo Bargello*: That is, there is no man so free that hath not his persecutour or pryue enemye. And here when I confyder the marueilous prouidence which nature hath gyuen to these lyttle boddies, I caule to remembraunce the wittie sentence of Plinie, where speakyng of such lyttle beastes, he sayth thus. Why doo we maruayle at the towrebearyng shouldres of Elephantes, and not rather where nature hath placed so many fences and fuche industry in fuche lyttle boddies? where is hearyng, smellyng, seeinge, and feelyng, ye, where are the vaynes and arteries (without which no beaste can lyue or moue) in these so lyttle boddies whereof sume are so smaule that theyr hole boddies can scarcely be sene of owr

Beastes

Bardati

189
Beares

Antes

eyes, what shall we then saye of the partes of the fame? Yet euen amonge these are there many of such sagacitie and industry as the lyke is not seene in beastes of greater quantitie, no nor yet in man, etc. But to returne to the hystorie. This enimie which nature hath gyuen to these lyttle beastes, vseth this maner to assayle them. When he resorteth to the hyllocke where the antes lye hid as in theyr fortresse, he putteth his tooonge to one of the ryftes wherof we haue spoken being as subtyle as the edge of a swoorde, and there with continuall lyckynge, maketh the place moyst, the fume and froth of his mouth beinge of such propertie that by continuall lycking the place, it enlargeth the ryfte in such sort by lyttle and lyttle, that at the length he easely putteth in his tooonge whiche he hath very longe and thynne, and much disproportionate to his bodye. And when he hath thus made free passage for his tooonge into the hyllocke to put it easely in and owt at his pleasure, then he thrusteth it into the hole as farre as he can reache, and so letteth it reste a good space vntyl a great quantitie of the antes (whose nature reioyseth in heate and moyster) haue laden his tonge and as many as he can conteyne in the holownesse thereof: at which tyme he suddely draweth it into his mouth and eateth them, and returneth ageyne to the fame practise immediatly vntyl he haue eaten as manye as hym lysteth, or as longe as he can reache any with his tonge. The fleshe of this beaste, is fylthy and vnfaury. But by reason of th[e] extreme shyftes and necessitie that the Christian men were put to at theyr fyrst commynge into these partes, they were inforced to proue all thynges and so fel to th[e] eatyng of these beastes. But when they had founde more delycate meates, they fell into hatred with this. These antes haue th[e] apperaunce of the place of their enteraunce into the hyllocke, vnder the grounde. And this at so lyttle a hole that it could hardly be founde yf certeyne of them were not seene to passe in and owt. But by this way the beares coude haue no such poure to hurte them as aboute at the fayde ryftes as I haue sayde. There is an other strange beaste whiche by a name of contrary effecte, the Spanyardes caule *Cagnuolo leggiero*, that is the lyght dogge, wheras it is one of the sloweste beastes in the worlde, and so heauy and dull in mouynge that it canne scarcely go fyftie pases in a hole day. These beastes are in the firme lande, and are very straunge to beholde for the disproportion that they haue to all other beastes. They are abowte two spannes in length when they are growne to theyr full byggenesse. But when they are very younge, they are sumewhat more grosse then longe. They haue foure subtyle fiete, and in euery of them foure clawes lyke vnto byrdes, and ioyned togyther. Yet are nother theyr clawes or theyr fiete able to susteyne theyr bodyes from the grounde. By reason wherof and by the heauynesse of theyr boddies, they drawe theyr bellyes on the grounde. Theyr neckes are hygh and streyght and all equall lyke the pestle of a mortar, which is altogyther equall euen vnto the toppe without makynge any proportion or similitude of a headde, or any dyfference excepte in the noddle. And in the toppes of theyr neckes, they haue verye rounde faces much lyke vnto owles: And haue a marke of theyr owne heare after the maner of a cyrcle whiche makethe theyr faces seeme sumwhat more longe then large. They haue smaule eyes and rounde: And nostrylles lyke vnto monkeys. They haue lyttle mouthes, and moue theyr neckes frome one syde to an other as though they were astonysshed. Theyr chiefe desyre and delyte is to cleaue and stycke faste vnto trees or fume other thyng whereby they may clyme alofte. And therefore for the moste parte, these beastes are founde vppon trees whervnto cleauynge fast, they mounte vp by lyttle and lyttle, sleynge them selues by theyr longe clawes. The coloure of theyr heare, is betwene ruffet and whyte, and of the proper coloure of the heare of a wesell. They haue no tayles, and theyr voyce is much dyfferynge frome other beastes: for they synge onely in the nyght: And that continually frome tyme to tyme synge euer syxe notes one hygher then an other, so faulynge with the fame that the fyrste note is the hyghest and the other in a baser tewne as yf a man shuld say *La, sol, fa, mi, re, vt*. So this beaft sayth, *Ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha*. And doubteleffe, it seemeth vnto me, that as I haue sayde in the chapter of the beaste cauled *Bardati*, that those beastes might bee th[e] originall and document to imbarbe hordes, euen so the fyrste inuenture of musycke myght seeme by the hearynge of this beaft to haue the fyrst principles of that scyence rather then by any other thyng in the worlde. But nowe to returne to the hystorie: I say that in a shorte space after this beaste hath sounge and hath paused a whyle, she returneth ageyne to the selfe same sounge, and doth this only in the nyght and not in the day. By reason wherof and also bycause of her euyl fyght, I thynke her to bee a nyght beaste and the frende of darkenesse. Sumtymes the Christian menne fynde these beastes and brynge theym home to theyr houses, where also they creepe all abowte with theyr naturall slowenesse, in so much that nother for threatenynge or pryckynge they wyll moue any faster then theyr naturall and accustomed pace. And yf they fynde any trees, they creepe thyther immediatly, and mounte to the toppe of the hyghest braunche thereof, where they remayne continually for the space of eyght, or tenne, or twentie dayes without eatynge of any thinge as farre as any man can iudge. And wheras I my selfe haue kepte theym in my houe, I coude neuer perceaue other but that they lyue onely of ayer. And of the same opinion are in maner all men of those regions, bycause they haue neuer seene them eate any thyng, but euer turne theyr heades and mouthes towarde that parte where the wynde bloweth most: whereby may bee considered that they take moste pleasure in the ayer. They bite not, nor yet can bite, hauynge very lyttle mouthes. They are not venomous or noyous any way: but altogyther brutishe and vtterly vnprofytable and without commoditie yet knowen to

190

A strange beast
whiche seemeth a
kynd of
Chameleon.

men, sauynge onely to moue theyr myndes to contemplate th[e] infinite poure of god, who delyteth in the varietie of creatures, wherby appeareth the poure of his incomprehensible wifedome and maiestie so farre to excede the capacitie of mans vnderstandynge.

In these regions there are likewise found certeyne foules or byrdes which the Indians caule *Alcatraz*. These are much bygger then geefe. The greatest parte of theyr fethers are of ruffet coloure, and in some partes yelow. Their bylles or beakes are of two spannes in length and verye large neare to the heade, and growynge smaule towarde the poynte. They haue greate and large throtes: And are much lyke to a foule which I sawe in Flaunders in Brusselles in yowre maiesties pallaice which the Flemynge caule Haina. And I remember that when yowr maiestie dyned one day in yowre great haule there was brought to yowre maiesties presence a chauderne of water with certeyne fysshes alyue, which the sayde foule did eate vp hole. And I thinke verely that that foule was a foule of the sea bycause shee had fiete lyke foules of the water as haue also these *Alcatrazi*, which are likewise foules of the sea: and of such greatnesse that I haue seene a hole cote of a man put into the throates of one of them in *Panama* in the yeare 1521. And forasmuch as in that coaste of *Panama*, there passeth and flyeth a greate multitude of these *Alcatrazi* beinge a thyng very notable, I wyll declare the maner hereof as not onely I, but also dyuers other nowe presente in yowre maiesties courte haue often tymes seene. Yowre maiestie shall therefore vnderstande that in this place (as I haue sayde before) the sea of *Sur* ryfeth and fauleth two leagues and more from fyxe houres to fyxe houres: so that when it increafeth, the water of the sea arryueth so neare to the houses of *Panama* as doth owre sea (cauled *Mare Mediteraneum*) in Barzalona or in Naples. And when the sayd increafynge of the sea commeth, there commeth also therewith such a multitude of the smaule fysshes cauled fardynes, that it is so marueylous a thyng to beholde, that no man wolde beleue it that hath not seene it. In so much that the *Cacique*, (that is) the kynge of that land at such tyme as I dwelt there, was bounde dayly as he was commaunded by yowre maiesties gouernour, to brynge ordynarily three canoas or barkes full of the sayde fardynes and to vnlade the same in the markette place, whiche were afterwarde by the ruler of the cite diuyded amonge the Christian men without any coste or charge to any of them. In so much that yf the people had bin a much greater multitude then they were, and as many as are at this presente in *Toledo* or more, and had none other thyng to lyue by, they myght haue byn sufficiently susteyned by these fardynes, byfyde th[e]ouerplus which shulde haue remayned. But to returne to the foules wherof we haue spoken. As the sea commeth, and the fardynes with the same, euen so lykewyse coome the sayde *Alcatrazzi* therewith: and flye continually ouer it in suche a multytude, that they appeare to couer th[e]upper parte or floure of the water. And thus continue in mountynge and faulyng from the ayer to the water, and from the water to the ayer duryng all the tyme of theyr fysshynge. And as soone as they haue taken any of these fardynes, they flye aboute the water and eate them incontynently, and suddeynly returne ageyne to the water for more, continuing thus course by course without ceafynge. In lyke maner when the sea fauleth, they folowe there fysshynge as I haue sayde. There goethe also in the company of these foules, an other kynde of foules cauled *Coda inforcata*, (that is) the forked tayle, whereof I haue made mention before. And as soone as the *Alcatraz* mounteth from the water with her pray of the fardynes, suddeynly this *Coda inforcata* gyueth her so many strokes, and so persecuteth her, that shee caufeth her to let faule the fardynes which shee hath in her mouth. The which as soone as they are faulne, and before they yet touch the water, the *Coda inforcata* catcheth them euen in the faule, in suche sorte that it is a great pleasure to beholde the combatte betwene them all the daye longe. The number of these *Alcatrazzi* is such, that the Chrystian menne are accustomed to send to certeyne Ilandes and rockes which are neare abowte *Panama*, with theyr boates or barkes to take these *Alcatrazzi* whyle they are yet younge and can not flye: and kyll as many of them with staues as they wyll, vntyll they haue therewith laden theyr barkes or canoas. These younge ones are so fatte and wel fedde that they can not bee eaten. And are taken for none other intent but only to make greafe for candels to burne in the nyght, for the whiche purpose it serueth very well: and gyueth a cleare lyght, and burneth easely. After this maner and for this purpose, innumerable of them are kylde. And yet it seemeth that the number of them that fyssh for fardynes doo dayly increafe

There are other foules cauled *Paffere sempie*: that is, simple sparowes. These are somewhat lesse then femewes: and haue theyr fiete lyke vnto great malardes: And stande in the water sumtymes. And when the shyppes sayle fyftie or a hundreth leaques abowte the Ilandes, these foules beholdynge the shyppes commynge towarde them, breake theyr flyght and faule downe vpon the sayle yarde, mastes, and cables therof. And are so simple and folysh that they tary vntyll they maye easely be taken with mens handes, and were therefore cauled of the maryners simple sparowes. They are blacke, and vppon their blacke, haue theyr heade and shoulders of fethers of a darke ruffet coloure. They are not good to bee eaten, although the mariners haue sumtymes bin enforced to eate them.

There is an other kynde of byrdes in the fyrme lande, which the Christians caule *Picuti*, bycause they haue very great beakes in respecte of the lyttlenesse of theyr boddies: For theyr beakes are very heauy and waye

191
Foules, and byrdes.
Alcatraz.

Panama.

Passere sempie.
192

Picuti.

more then theyr hole boddies byfyde. These byrdes are no bygger then quayles, but haue a much greater busfement of fethers, in fo much that theyr fethers are more then theyr boddies. Their fethers are very fayre and of many variable coloures. Their beakes are a quarter of a yarde in length or more, and bendyng downe towarde the earthe, and three fyngers brode neare vnto the heade. Their tonges are very quilles, wherwith they make a great hyffynge. They make holes in trees with theyr beakes, in the which they make theyr nestes. And surely these byrdes are maruelous to beholde for the great difference whiche they haue from all other byrdes that I haue feene, afwel for theyr toonges (which are quilles as I haue fayde) as also for the strangeness of theyr fyght and disproportion of their greate beakes in respect of the rest of theyr boddies. There are no byrdes founde that proude better for the safegarde of theyr younge in the tyme of theyr breedynge to bee withoute daunger of wyld cattes that they enter not into theyr nestes to destroye theyr egges or younge. And this afwell by the strange maner of buyldyng theyr nestes, as also by theyr owne defence. And therefore when they perceau that the cattes approche towarde them, they enter into theyr nestes: and holdyng theyr beakes towarde th[e]nterance of the fame, flande at theyr defence, and so vex the cattes that they caufe them to leaue theyr enterpryse.

There are also other byrdes or sparowes, whiche the Christians by contrary effect caule *Matti*, that is fooles. Wheras neuerthelesse there is no byrde that sheweth more wyt and crafte in defendyng her younge from perell. These byrdes are lyttle and in maner blacke, and sumewhat bygger then owre thruffhes. They haue certeyne whyte fethers in theyr neckes, and the lyke sagacitie or sharpenes of fenfe as haue the byrdes or pyes cauled *Gazzuole*. They seldome tymes light vpon the earth. They make theyr nestes in trees separated from other, bycaufe the wyld cattes (cauled *Mammoni*) are accustomed to leape frome tree to tree, not descendyng to the grounde for feare of other beastes, excepte when they are enforced by thyrste to coome downe to drynke at fuche tymes as they are sure not to bee molested. And for this caufe doo not these byrdes make theyr nestes but in trees farre diuyded from other. They make them of a cubette in length or more, after the maner of bagges or lytle sackes, large at the bottome, and growyng narrower and narrower towarde the mouth wherby they are fastened: hauynge the hole wherent they enter into the sacke, of such byggenes as may onely suffice to receaue them. And to th[e]nde that the cattes maye not deuoure theyr younge yf they chaunce to mounte vpon the trees where they haue theyr nestes, they vse an other crafte, which is, to make theyr nestes in thycke braunches of trees, and to defende the fame with sharpe and stronge thorns implicate and fet in such order that no man is able to make the lyke. So that the cattes can by no meanes put theyr legges into the hole of the neste to take owte younge byrdes, afwel for the sharpenes of the thornes as also for the depth of the nestes, in the bottome wherof, the younge birdes rest without daunger of theyr enemye. For sum of theyr nestes beyng three or foure spannes in lengthe, the legge of the catte can not reache to the bottome therof. They vse also an other pollicie: which is, to make many of theyr nestes in one tree. The which they doo for one of these two causes: that is, that eyther of theyr owne naturall disposition they are accustomed to go in great multitudes, and reioyse in the company of theyr owne generation as do the byrdes which we caule stares, or elles to th[e]ntent that yf it shoulde so chaunce that the cattes shulde clyme the trees where they make theyr nestes, they might bee a greater company to resyste and molest the cattes, at whose approach they make a feareful and terrible cry, wherby the cattes are put to flyght.

Furthermore, in the firme land, and in the Ilandes, there are certeyne byrdes cauled *Piche* or *Gazzuole*, sumewhat lyke vnto those which we caule woodwaules, or woodpeckes, beinge lesse then owrs of Spayne. These are altogether blacke, and go hoppyng and leapyng. Their beakes are also blacke and of the same fashyon as are the poppingiays beakes. They haue longe tayles, and are sumwhat bygger then stares.

There are other byrdes cauled *Pintadelli*, whiche are lyke vnto certeyne greene byrdes whiche the Italyans caule *Fringuelli*: and are of feuen coloures. These byrdes for feare of the cattes, are euer woonte to make theyr nestes ouer the bankes of ryuers or the sea, where the braunches of trees so reache ouer the water that with a lyttle weyght they maye bowe downe to the water. Their nestes are made so neare the toppes of the braunches that when the cattes coome theron, the braunches bende towarde the water, and the cattes turne backe ageyne for feare of faultyng. For althoughe no beaste in the worlde bee more malicious then this, yet whereas the moste parte of beastes are naturally inclyned to swimme, this catte hath no maner of aptenesse thereunto, and is therefore soone drowned or strangeled in the water, and by a pryue fenfe of nature feareth the daunger which he can not escape. These byrdes make theyr nestes in fuche forte, that althoughe they bee weete and fylled with water, yet doo they so suddenly ryfe vp ageyne, that the younge byrdes are not thereby hurte or drowned.

There are also many nyghtyngales and other byrdes whiche synge maruelously with great melodie and difference in synyng. These byrdes are of maruelous dyuers coloures the one from the other. Sum are altogether yelow, and sum other of so excellent, delectable, and hyghe a coloure as it weare a ruby. Other are also of dyuers and variable coloures: sum of fewe coloures, and other sume all of one coloure: beinge all fo

Folyshe
sparowes.

193

Gazzuole.

Pintadelli

fayre and bewtiful, that in bryghtnesse and shynynge they excell all that are seene in Spayne, or Italy or other prouinces of Europe. Many of these are taken with nettes, lyme twygges, and sprynges of dyuers fortes.

Dyuers other fortes of greate foules lyke vnto Eagles, and fuche other as lyue of pray, are founde in the firme lande of fuche diuersitie, that it is in maner impossible to descrybe them all particularly. And forasmuche as I haue more largely intreated hereof in my generall hystorie of the Indies, I thinke it not requysite to make any further mention of the fame.

¶ Of trees, fruites, and plantes.



Here is bothe in the firme lande and the Ilandes a certeyne tree cauled *Cocus*, beinge a kynd of date trees and hauynge theyr leaues of the self same greatnesse as haue the date trees which beare dates, but dyffer much in their growynge. For the leaues of this *Cocus* grow owte of the trunkes of the tree as doo the fyngers owte of the hande, wreathynge them selues one within an other and so spreadynge abroad. These trees are hygh: and are founde in great plentie in the coaste of the sea of *Sur*, in the prouince of *Cacique Chimán*. These date trees brynge furth a frute after this sorte. Beinge altogethyer vnite as it groweth on the tree, it is of greater circumference then the heade of a man. And from the superficiall parte to the myddest which is the frute, it is inuolued and couered with many webbes much lyke vnto those hyrdes of towne whiche they vse in *Andalusia*. Of this towne or webbe, the East Indians make a certeyne kynde of clothe of three or foure fortes, and cordes for the sayles of shyppes. But in these Indies of your maiestie, they passe not for these cordes or this clothe that may be made of the frute of *Cocus*, by reason of the great plentie that they haue of the bombage or cotton of the goffampine trees. The frute which is in the myddest of the fayde towne, is (as I haue sayde) as bygge as a mans fyfte, and sumtymes twyfe as bygge and more. It is in forme, lyke vnto a walnutte, or sum other rounde thyng somewhat more longe then large, and very harde. The rynde or barke herof, is as thicke as the cyrcle of letters of a riale of plate. And within, there cleaueth faste to the rynde of the nutte a carnositie or substaunce of coornel, of the thyckenesse of halfe a fynger or of the least fynger of the hande: And is verye whyte, lyke vnto a fayre Almonde, and of better taste and more pleasaunt. When this fruite is chewed, there remayne certeyne crummes as do the lyke of almondes. Yet if it bee swalowed downe, it is not vnpleasaunt. For althowgh that after the ieuwe or moyflure bee gonne downe the throte before the fayde crummes bee swalowed, the reste whiche is eaten seeme somewhat sharpe or fower, yet doth it not so greatly offende the taste so as to bee caste away. Whyle this *Cocus* is yet freshe and newly taken from the tree, they vse not to eate of the fayde carnositie and frute: But fyrste beatynge it very much, and then straynyng it, they drawe a mylke thereof, much better and sweeter then is the mylke of beastes, and of much substaunce: The which the Christian men of those regions put in the tortes or cakes which they make of the grayne of *Maizium* wherof they make theyr breade, or in other breade as we put breade in porrage: So that by reason of the fayde mylke of *Cocus*, the tortes are more excellent to be eaten without offence to the stomake. They are so pleasaunte to the taste, and leaue it aswell satisfyed as thowghe it had byn delyted with many delycate dyffhes. But to proceade further, your maiestie shall vnderstand, that in the place of the stone or coornel, there is in the myddest of the fayde carnositie, a voyde place, which neuerthelesse is full of a moste cleare and excellent water, in such quantitie as maye fyll a greate egge shell, or more or lesse accordynge to the byggenesse of the *Cocus*. The which water fuerly, is the moste substantial, excellent and precious to be droonke, that maye bee founde in the worlde. In so much that in the momente when it passeth the palate of the mouth and begynneth to goo downe the throte it seemeth that frome the sole of the foote to the crowne of the headde, there is no parte of the boddye but that feelethe great comfort therby: as it is doutlesse one of the most excellent thynges that may be tasted vpon the earth, and fuche as I am not able by wrytynge or toonge to expresse. And to proceade yet further, I say that when the meate of this frute is taken from the vessell therof, the vessell remaineth as fayre and nette as though it were pullyshed: and is without, of colour inclynynge toward blacke, and shyneth or glystereth very fayre. And is within of no lesse dilicatenesse. Suche as haue accustomed to drynke in these vesselles, and haue bynne trowbeled with the diseafe cauled the fretinge of the guttes, say that they haue by experience founde it a maruelous remedie ageynst that diseafe: And that it breakethe the stone and prouoketh vrine. This frute was cauled *Cocus* for this cause, that when it is taken from the place where it cleaueth faste to the tree, there are seene two holes, and aboue them two other naturall holes, which altogethyer, doo represente the giesture and fygure of the cattes cauled *Mammone*, that is, munkeys, when they crye: whiche crye the Indians caule *Coca*: But in very deede, this tree is a kynd of date trees: and hath the same effecte to heale fretyng of the guttes, that Plinie descrybeth all kyndes of date trees to haue.

Great foules.

Cocus.

194

I haue seene one of these fruites opened, the whiche when it was hole, yf it were shaken the water was harde shogge therein as it were in a bottle: but in tyme it consumed and was partly congeled into a salte substaunce.

Great trees.

There are furthermore in the firme lande, trees of fuche byggenesse that I dare not speake therof but in place where I haue so many wytnesses which haue seene the same as wel as I. I say therefore, that a leaque from *Dariena* or the cite of *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, there passeth a ryuer very large and diepe, which is cauled *Cuti*: ouer the which the Indians had layde a greate tree so trauerfinge the same that it was in the sleade of a brydge, the which I my selfe with dyuers other that are at this present in yowre maiesties courte, haue often tymes passed ouer. And forasmuch as the sayde tree had lyne longe there, and by the great weight therof was so shronke downewarde and partely couered with water that none could passe ouer it but were weete to the knee, I being then in the yeare 1522. th[e] official of Iustice in that cite at yowre maiesties appoyntemente, caused an other greate tree to bee layde in that place whiche in lyke maner trauerfed the ryuer and reached more then fyfytie foote ouer the further fyde. This tree was exceedynge greate, and rested aboute the water more then two cubytes. In the faule, it cast downe all fuche other trees as were within the reache therof: And discouered certeyne vynes whiche were so laden with blacke grapes of pleasaunte taste, that they satysfied more then fyfytie persons whiche ate theyr fylle therof. This tree in the thyckest parte therof, was more then syxtene spannes thicke: And was neuerthelesse but lyttle in respect of many other trees which are founde in this prouince. For the Indians of the coaste and prouince of *Cartagenia*, make barkes or boates therof (which they caule *Canoas*,) of such byggenesse, beinge all of one hole tree, that fume conteyne a hundreth men, fume a hundreth and thirtie, and fume more, hauynge neuerthelesse fuche voyde space within the same, that there is lefte sufficiente roome to passe to and fro through owte all the *Canaa*. Sum of these are so large byfyde the length, that they conteyne more then tenne or twelue spannes in breadth, and fayle with twoo fayles as with the master fayle and the trinkette which they make of verye good cotton. The greatest trees that I haue seene in these partes or in anye other regions, was in the prouince of *Guaturo*, the kynge wherof rebellynge from th[e] obedience of yowre maiestie, was persued by me and taken prysoner: At whiche tyme I with my company, passed ouer a very hygh mountayne ful of great trees, in the toppe wherof we founde one tree whiche had three rootes or rather diuisions of the roote aboute the earth in forme of a tryangle or triuette: so that betwene euery foote of this triangle or three feete, there was a space of twentie foote betwene euery foote. And this of such heyght aboute the earthe, that a laden carte of those wherewith they are accustomed to brynge home corne in the tyme of haruest in the kyngedome of *Toledo* in Spayne, myght easely haue passed through euery of those particions or wyndowes whiche were betwene the three feete of the sayd tree. From the earth vpwarde to the trunk of the tree, the open places of the dyuisions betwene these three feete, were of fuche heyght from the grounde, that a footeman with a iaelyn was not able to reache to the place where the sayde feete ioyned togyther in the trunk or body of the tree which grewe of great height in one piece and one hole body, or euer it sprede in braunches, which it did not before it exceeded in heyght the towre of faynt Romane in the cite of *Toledo*: from whiche heyght and vpwarde, it sprede very greate and stronge braunches. Amonge certeyne Spanyardes which clymed this tree, I my selfe was one. And when I was ascended to the place where it begunne to sprede the branches, it was a maruelous thing to beholde a greate cuntrye of fuche trees towarde the prouince of *Abrayme*. This tree was easy to clyme, by reason of certeyne *Befuchi* (wherof I haue spoken before) which grewe wreathed aboute the tree in fuche forte that they seemed to make a scalyng ladder. Euery of the foresayde three feete which bore the boddie of the tree, was twentie spannes in thickenesse. And where they ioyned al togyther aboute in the trunk or boddie of the tree, the principall trunk was more then fortie and fyue spannes in circuite. I named the mountayne where these trees grow, the mountayne of three footed trees. And this which I haue now declared, was seene of all the companye that was there with me when (as I haue sayde before) I tooke kynge *Guaturo* prysoner in the yeare 1522. Many thynges more myght here bee spoken as touchynge this matter, as also howe there are many other excellent trees founde of dyuers fortes and dyfference, as sweete Ceder trees, blacke date trees, and many other: of the which sum are so heauy that they can not flote aboute the water but synke immediatly to the bottome. And other ageyne as light as a corke. As touchynge all whiche thynges I haue wrytten more largely in my generall hystorie of the Indies.

And forasmuch as at this present I haue entered to intreate of trees, before I passe any further to other thynges, I wyl declare the maner howe the Indians kyndle fyre, only with woodde, and without fyre, the maner wherof is this. They take a piece of woodde of two spannes in lengthe, as bygge as the leaste fynger of a mans hande, or as an arrowe well pullyshed, and of a stronge kynde of woodde whiche they keepe onely for this purpose. And where they intende to kyndle any fyre, they take two other pieces of woodde of the dryest and lyghtest that they can fynde, and bynde them fast togyther one with an other as close as two fyngers ioyned. In the myddeft or betwene these, they put the poynt of the fyrste lyttle staffe made of harde and stronge wood which they hold in theyr handes by the toppe thereof, and turne or rubbe it rounde aboute continually in one place betwene the two pieces of woodde which lye bounde togyther vppon the earthe, which by that vncessant rubbinge and chafynge, are in short space kyndeled and take fyre.

I haue also thought good here to speake sumwhat of such thynges as coomme to my remembraunce of

195

A maruelous tree.

Kyndlyng of fyre without fyre.

certeyne trees which are founde in this lande, and fumetyme also the lyke haue bynne feene in Spayne. These are certeyne putrified troonkes which haue lyne fo longe rottyng on the earth that they are verye whyte and shyne in the nyght lyke burnyng fyre brandes. And when the Spanyardes fynde any of this woodde, and intende priuily in the nyght to make warre and inuade any prouince when cafe fo requyreth that it shalbe necessary to go in the nyght in fuche places where they knowe not the way, the formost Christian man whiche gudgethe the waye, associate with an Indian to directe hym therein, taketh a lyttle starre of the fayde woodde, which he putteth in his cappe hangyng behynde on his shoulders, by the lyght wherof he that foloweth nexte to him, directeth his iourney, who also in lyke maner beareth an other starre behynde hym, by the shynyng whereof the thyrd foloweth the same waye, and in lyke maner do al the rest, fo that by this meanes none are losfe or fragile owte of the way. And forasmuche as this lyght is not feene very farre, it is the better pollicie for the Chrystians bycause they are not thereby disclofed before they inuade theyr enemies.

Furthermore as touchyng the natures of trees, one particular thyng seemeth woorthy to bee noted, wherof Plinie maketh mention in his natural hystorie where he saythe that there are certeyne trees which contynewe euer greene and neuer lose theyr leaues, as the baye tree, the Ceder, the orange tree, and the olyue tree with fuch other, of the whiche in all togyther he nameth not paste fyue or fyxe. To this purpofe, I faye, that in the Ilandes of these Indies, and also in the firme lande, it is a thyng of muche difficultie to fynde twoo trees that lose or cast theyr leaues at any tyme. For althowgh I haue diligently searched to knowe the trewth hereof, yet haue I not feene any that lose theyr leaues, eyther of theym which we haue browght owt of Spayne into these regions, as Orange trees, Limons, Ceders, Palmes, or date trees and Pomegranate trees, or of any other in these regions excepte onely *Cassia*, which loseth his leaues and hath a greater thyng appropriate to it selfe onely: which is, that whereas all other trees and plantes of India spreade theyr rootes no dieper in the earthe then the depth of a mans heyght or fumewhat more, not descendyng any further into the ground by reason of the greate heate which is found beneth that depth, yet dooth *Cassia* pearce further into the grounde vntyl it fynd water: whiche by the Phylosophers opinion shoulde be the cause of a thynne and watery radycall moyster to fuche thynges as drawe theyr nuryshment therof, as fat and vnctuous groundes with temperate heate, yelde a fast and firme moysture to fuche thynges as growe in them, whiche is the cause that fuche trees lose not theyr leaues, as the fayde thynne and wateryshe moysture is cause of the contrarie, as appeareth by the fayde effecte which is feene onely in *Cassia*, and none other tree or plante in all these parties.

¶ Of Reedes or Canes.



Haue not thought it conuenient in the chapiture before to speake of that whereof I intende nowe to entreate of, reedes or canes, to th[e]intente that I wolde not mengle theym with plantes or trees, beinge thynges of them selues woorthy to bee particularly obserued. So it is therefore, that in the firme land there are many fortes of reedes, fo that in many places they make theyr howses therof, coueryng them with the toppes of the same, and makyng their waules of them in lyke maner, as I haue fayde before. And amonge these kyndes of reedes, there is one fo greate, that the canes therof are as bygge as a mans legge in the knee, and three spannes in length frome ioynt to ioynt or more: in fo much that euery of them is of capacitie to conteyne a lyttle bucket of water. In this kynde, there are founde sum greater and sum lesse, of the which sum they vse to make quyuers for arrowes. There is founde an other kynde which fuerly is marueylous, beyng lyttle bygger then a Iaelen, the canes whereof are longer then twoo spannes. These reedes growe one farre from an other, as sum tymes twentie or thirtie pafes, and fumetymes also twoo or three leaques. They growe in maner in all prouinces in the Indies: And growe nere to very hygh trees wherunto they leane, and creepe vp to the toppes of theyr braunches, which they imbrafe and descende ageyne downe to the earth. Theyr canes are full of mozte cleare water without any maner of tast or faouere eyther of the canes or of any other thyng: And fuche as yf it were taken owte of the fresheste spryng in the worlde. Nor yet is it known that euer it hurte any that droonke therof. For it hath oftentimes fo chaunced that as the Chrysten men haue traunyled in these regions in defolate wayes where for lacke of water they haue byn in great daunger to dye for thyrste, they haue escaped that perell by reason that they founde the fayde reedes, of the water of whose canes they haue droonke a great quantitie without any hurte thereof enfewyng. Therefore when they fynde these in any place, they make water vesselles of the canes therof, and cary as many of them ful of water as may suffice for one dayes iornay. And fumtyme they cary fo many, that they take for euery man two or three quartes of water which may ferue them for many dayes bycause it doth not corrupte, but remainethe styll freshe and good.

Putrified woodde shynyng in the nyght.

196

Plinie.

Trees which continue euer greene.

Cassia.

A secrete thyng

Radycall moysture.

197

Platani.

There are also certaine plantes which the Christians call *Platani*. These are as high as trees, and become as bygge in the trunk as the knee of a man or more. From the foote to the toppe, they beare certeyne longe and large leaues, beinge more then three spannes in largenes, and about ten or twelue in length: The whiche when they are broken of the wynde, the stalke remaineth hole in the myddeft. In the myddefte of this plant in the hyghest parte thereof, there groweth a cluster with fortie or fyftie Platans about it, euery of them beinge a fpanne and a halfe in length, and as bygge as a mans arme in the fmaule, or more or lesse accordynge to the goodnesse of the foyle where they growe. They haue a rynde not very thicke, and easy to bee broken: being within altogether full of a substauce lyke vnto the marye of the bone of an oxe as it appeareth when the rynde or barke is taken frome the fame. This cluster owght to bee taken from the plant, when any one of the Platans begynne to appere yelow. At which tyme they take it and hange it in theyr houfes where all the cluster waxeth ripe with his Platans. This cluster is a very good frute: And when it is opened and the rynde taken of, there are founde within it many good drye fygges which beyng roasted or stewed in an ouen in a clofe pot or fum fuche other thyng, are of pleasaunte taste muche lyke the conferue of hony. They putrifie not on the fea fo foone as fume other frutes do: but continue fyfteene dayes and more yf they bee gathered fumulwhat greene. They feeme more delycate on the fea then on the lande, not for that they any thinge increafe in goodnesse on the fea, but bycause that whereas on the fea other thynges are lackyng wherof is plentie on the land, those meates feeme of beste taste which fatiffie presente necessitie. This troonke or sprygge whiche bryngeth fourth the fayde cluster is a hole yeare in growyng and bryngyng fourth frute. In whiche tyme it hath put fourth rounde abowte it tenne or twelue sprynges as bygge as the fyrst or principall, and multiplieth no lesse then the princypall in bryngyng fourth of clusters with frutes lykewyse at their tyme, and also in bryngyng fourth other and many sprynges as is fayde beefore. From the which sprynges or trunkes, as foone as the cluster of the frute is taken away, the plante begynneth to drye and wyther, which then they take owt of the grounde bycause it doth none other then occupie it in vayne and without profyt. They are so many and doo so marueloufly increafe and multiplie, that it is a thyng in maner incredible. They are exceedyng moyste. In so much that when they are plucked vp from the place wher they grow, there issheweth forth a great quantitie of water as well owte of the plante as owte of the place where it grewe: In fuch forte that all the moysture of the earth farre abowte, myght feeme to bee gathered togyther abowte the trunk or blocke of the fayde plante: with the frutes whereof, the antes are so farre in loue, that they are feene in great multitudes in the branches of the plantes. So that for the multitude thereof it fumetyme fo chaunceth that men are inforced to take away the Platans frome theyr possession. These frutes are founde at all tymes of the yeare.

Figges.

Tunas.

There is also an other kynd of wyld plantes that groweth in the fyeldes: which I haue not feene but in the Ilande of Hispaniola, although they be founde in other Ilandes of the Indies. These they caule *Tunas*. They growe of a thistle full of thornes, and bryng fourth a frute muche lyke vnto great fygges, which haue a crowne lyke medlers, and are within of a hyghe coloure, with graynes and the rynde lyke vnto a fygge. They are of good taste: And growe abundantly in the fyeldes in many places. They woorke a straunge effecte in fuche as eate them. For if a manne eate two or three or more, they cause his vrine to bee of the very coloure of bludde, which thyng chaunced once to my selfe. At whiche tyme as I made water and sawe the colour of my vrine, I entered into a great suspition of my lyfe, beinge so astonysht for feare, that I thought the fame had chaunced to me vpon fumul other cause. In so muche that surely my imagination myght haue doone me hurte, but that they whiche were with me dyd comforte me immediatly, declaryng the cause therof as they knewe by experience beinge auncient inhabitours in those regions.

198

Bihaos.

Hauas.

There groweth also an other plante whiche the people of the countrey caule *Bihaos*. This putteth forth certeyne streight braunches and very brode leaues which the Indians vse for dyuers purposes. For in fumul places they couer theyr houfes with the leaues therof cowched and layde after the maner of thetche, wherunto it ferueth very well. Sumtymes also when it rayneth, they cast these ouer theyr heades to defende them from the water. They make also certeyne chestes whiche they caule *Hauas*, weaved after a straunge forte and intermixt with the leaues of this *Bihaos*. These chestes are wrought in fuch fort, that although it rayne vpon them, or they chaunce to faule into the water, yet are not fuch thynges wette as are within them. They are made of the braunches of the fayde *Bihaos* with the leaues weaved togyther therwith. In these they keepe salte and other subtyle thynges. They vse theym also for an other purpose, which is this: That findyng them in the fieldes at fuch tyme as they haue scarfenesse of vyttayles, they dygge vp the rootes of these plantes whyle they are yet younge, or eate the plante it selfe in that parte where it is moste tender, which is from a foote vnder the grounde, where it is as tender and whyte as a reede or bulruffhe.

Dying of cotton.

And forasmuch as wee are nowe coomme to th[e] end of this narration, it commeth to my remembraunce to make mention of an other thyng which is not farre from my purpose. And this is howe the Indians do slayne or dye cloth of bombage cotton, or any other thyng which they intende to dye of dyuers coloures: as blacke, tawny, greene, blew, yelow, and redde, whiche they doo with the barkes or ryndes, and leaues of certeyne trees,

whiche they knowe by experience to bee good for this practife. And by this arte they make colours in such perfection and excellencie that no better can bee diuysed. But this seemeth a straunge thyng, that they doo all this in one selfe same vessell: So that when they haue caused the fayde ryndes and leaues to boyle togyther, they make in the same vessell without any chaunge (as I haue sayde) as many colours as them lysteth. Whiche thyng I suppose to coomme to passe by the disposition of the coloure whiche they haue fyrste gyuen to the thyng that they intende to drye or colour, whether it bee threed, webbe, or clothe, or any thyng that they intende to colour.

A straunge thyng.

¶ Of venemous apples wherwith they poyson theyr arrowes.



He apples wherwith the Indian Canibales inueneme theyr arrowes, growe on certeyne trees couered with many branches and leaues beinge very greene and growyng thicke. They are laden with abundaunce of these euill frutes, and haue theyr leanes lyke the leanes of a peare tree, but that they are lesse and rounder. The frute is much lyke the muscadell peares of the Ilande of Sicilie or Naples in forme and byggenesse: And are in sum partes steyned with redde spottes, and of very sweete fauoure. These trees for the moste parte, growe euer by the sea coastes and neare vnto the water: And are so fayre and of pleasaunte fauour, that there is no man that feethe theym but wyll desyre to eate therof.

In so much that if it may bee spoken of any frute yet growyng on the earth, I wolde faye that this was the vnhappy frute wherof owre fyrste parentes Adam and Eue tasted, wherby they both lost theyr felicitie and procured death to them and theyr posteritie. Of these frutes, and of the greate antes whose bytyng causeth swellynge (whereof I haue spoken els where) and of the eutes or lyfartes, and vipers, and such other venemous thynges, the Canibales which are the chyefe archers amonge the Indians, are accustomed to poyson theyr arrowes wherwith they kyll all that they wounde.

Note.

Canibales archiers.

These venemes they mengle togyther and make thereof a blacke maffe or composition which appeareth lyke vnto very blacke pytche. Of this poyson I caused a great quantitie to be burnt in *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in a place two leaques and more within the lande, with a greate multitude of theyr inuenemed arrowes and other munition, with also the houe wherein they were referued. This was in the yeare. 1514. at fuche tyme as th[e] army arriued there with capitayne *Pedrarias da villa* at the commaundement of the Catholyke kynge *Don Ferdinando*. But to returne to the hystory. These apples (as I haue said) growe neare vnto the sea. And wheras the Christians which serue your maiestie in these parties, suppose that there is no remedy so profytable for fuche as are wounded with these arrowes, as is the water of the sea if the wounde be much wasshed therwith, by which means sum haue escaped although but fewe, yet to faye the trewth, albeit the water of the sea haue a certeyne caustike qualitie ageynst poyson, it is not a sufficient remedy in this case: nor yet to this day haue the Christians perceaued that of fiftie that haue byn wounded, three haue recouered. But that your maiestie may the better confyder the force of the veneme of these trees, yowe shall further vnderstande that yf a man doo but repose hym selfe to sleepe a lyttle whyle vnder the shadow of the same, he hath his head and eyes so swolne when he ryfeth, that the eye lyddes are ioyned with the chekes. And if it chaunce one droppe or more of the dewe of the fayde tree to faule into the eye, it vtterly destroyeth the syght. The pestilent nature of this tree is such that it can not bee declared in fewe woordes. Of these there groweth greate plentie in the goulfe of *Vraba* towarde the North coast on the Weste and Easte syde. The wood of these trees when it burneth, maketh so greate a flynke that noo man is able to abyde it, by reason it causeth so great a peyne in the headde.

Wherwith they inuenym thei[r] arrowes

199
Petrus Arias.

The water of the sea.

The goulfe of Vraba.

Amonge other trees which are in these Indies as well in the Ilandes as in the firme lande, there is an other kynde which they caule *Xagua*, wherof there is great plentie. They are very hygh and freyght, and fayre to beholde. Of these they vse to make pykes and iaelyns of dyuers lengthes and byggenesse. They are of a fayre colour betwene ruffette and whyte. This tree bryngeth forth a greate frute as bygge as Papauer or poppie and much lyke therunto. It is very good to be eaten when it is ripe. Owte of this they gette a very cleare water wherwith they wasshe theyr legges and sumetymes all theyr boddies when they feele theyr flesshe werye, faynt, or loofe. The which water, bysyde that it hath a byndynge qualitie, it hath also this propertie, that what so euer it toucheth, it steyneth it blacke by lyttle and lyttle vntyll it bee as blacke as giette, which coloure can not be taken away in lesse space then tenne or twelue dayes. And if the nayle bee but touched therwith, it is so steyned that it can by no meanes bee taken away vntyll it eyther faule of, or growe owte and bee clypped away by lyttle and lyttle, as I my selfe haue oftentimes seene by experience.

Xagua.

There is another kynde of trees which they call *Hobi*. These are very great and fayre, and cause holfome ayer where they growe and a pleasaunt shadow, and are founde in great abundaunce. Theyr frute is very good,

Hobi.
Sum thynke these to be mirobalanes.

and of good tast and faouere, and much lyke vnto certeyne damsons or prunes beinge lyttle and yelowe. But theyr stone is very great: by reason wherof they haue but lyttle meate. Theyr barke or rynde boyled in water, maketh a holsome bathe for the legges, bycause it bindeth and steyeth the looseneffe of the fleshe so fencibly that it is a marueyle to confyder. It is fuerly a holsome and excellent bathe ageynst such fayntnesse: And is the beste tree that may bee founde in those parties to sleepe vnder. For it causeth no heauinesse of the headde as doo dyuers other trees. Whiche thyng I speake bycause the Christians are muche accustomed in those regions to lye in the fyeldes. It is therefore a common practise amonge them, that where so euer they fynd these trees, there they spreade theyr mattresses and beddes wherin they sleepe.

Date trees.

There are also a kynde of hyghe date trees and full of thornes. The woodde of these is moste excellent: beinge very blacke, and shynynge, and so heauy that no parte thereof can swimme aboute the water, but synketh immediatly to the bottome. Of this woodde they make theyr arrowes and dartes: Also ianelyns, speares, and pykes. And I faye pykes, bycause that in the coastes of the sea of *Sur*, beyonde *Esquegua* and *Vracha*, the Indians vse great and longe pykes made of the woodde of these date trees. Of the same lykewyfe they make clubbes and fwoordes and dyuers other weapons. Also vesselles and houholde stuffe of dyuers fortes very fayre and commodious. Furthermore of this woodde the Christians vse to make dyuers muscalle instrumentes, as clarifimbals, lutes, gyterns, and suche other, the whiche bysyde theyr fayre shynynge coloure lyke vnto giete, are also of a good founde and very durable by reason of the hardnesse of the woodde.

The inhabitants of the sea of Sur.

200

An herb that beareth the cordes.

After that I haue fayde thus much of trees and plantes, I haue thought good also to speake sumwhat of herbes. You shall therefore vnderstande that in these Indies there is an herbe much lyke vnto a yelowe lylie, abowte whose leaues there growe and creepe certeyne cordes or laces, as the lyke is partly feene in the herbe which we caule lased fanery. But these of the Indies are muche bygger, and longer: and so stronge that they tye theyr hangynge beddes thereby whiche they caule *Hamacas* wherof we haue spoken elswhere. These cordes, they caule *Cabuia* and *Henequen*, which are al one thing fauyng that *Henequen* is lesse and of a syner substauce as it were line: And the other is grosser lyke the wycke or twyfe of hempe, and is imperfecte in comparison to the other. They are of coloure betwene whyte and yelowe lyke vnto abarne, and sum also whyte. With *Henequen* whiche is the moste subtyle and fyne threede, the Indians fawe in sunder fetters, cheynes, or barres of Iren in this maner. They moue the threede of *Henequen* vppon the iren which they intende to saw or cutte, drawynge the one hande after the other as doo they that sawe, puttyng euer nowe and then a portion of fyne sawe vppon the threede, or on the place or parte of the Iren where they continue rubbyng the sawe threede. So that yf the threede be worne, they take an other, and continewe in theyr worke as before vntyl they haue cutte in sunder the iren although it bee neuer so bygge: and cut it as yf it were a tender thyng and easye to bee sawne.

Cabuia and *Henequen*.

A straung[e] thinge.

Leaues.

And for asmuch as the leaues of trees may bee counted amonge herbes, I wyll here speake sumwhat of the qualitie of the leaues of certeyne trees which are founde in the Iland of *Hyspaniola*. These trees are so full of thornes, that there is no tree or plante that seemeth more wylde and deformed: so that I can not well determyne whether they bee trees or plantes. They haue certeyne braunches full of large and deformed leaues, which braunches were fyrste leaues lyke vnto the other. As the braunches made of these leaues growe foorth in length, there commeth other leaues of them. So that in fine it is a dyfficult thyng to descrybe the forme of these trees except the same shulde bee doone by a paynter wherby the eye myght conceaue that wherein the tooonge fayleth in this behalfe. The leaues of this tree are of such vertue, that being well beaten and spreadde vppon a cloth after the maner of a playster, and so layde to a legge or arme that is broken in many pieces, it healeth it in fyftene dayes, and maketh it as hole as though it had neuer byn broken. Duryng the tyme of this operation, it cleaueth so fast to the fleshe that it can not without much difficultie bee taken away. But as soone as it hath healed the fore and wrought his operation, it loofeth it selfe from the place where it was layde, as I my selfe and dyuers other which haue proued it, knowe by experience.

A leafe of great vertue.

¶ Of fysshes and of the maner of fysshynge.



In the sea coastes of the firme lande, there are dyuers and fundry kyndes of fysshes muche differynge in shape and forme. And although it be impossible to speake of all, yet wyll I make mention of sum. And fyrst to begynne at fardynes, yowe shall vnderstande that there is founde a kynde of these fysshes very large and with redde tayles, beinge a very delicate fyfhe. The beste kyndes of other fysshes are these: *Moxarre*, *Diahace*, *Brettes*, *Dahaas*, *Thornbackes*, and *Salmons*. All these and dyuers other which I do not now remember, are taken in great quantitie in ryuers. There are lykewyfe taken very good creuyffhes. There

are also founde in the sea, certeyne other fysshes: as soles, mackerelles, turbuttes, *Palamite, Lizze, Polpi, Chieppe, Xaibas, Locustes, Oysters*, exceedynge great Tortoyfes, and Tiburoni of maruelous byggenesse: Also Manates, and Murene, and manye other fysshes which haue no names in oure language. And these of such diuerfitie and quantitie as can not bee expressed without large wrytynge and longe tyme. But to let passe to intreate particularly of the multitude of fysshes, I intende to speake chiefly and sumwhat largely of three fortes of mooste notable fysshes: wherof the fyrst is, the great Tortoyfes, the seconde is cauled Tiburon, and the thyrde Manate. And to begynne at the fyrste, I saye that in the Ilande of *Cuba*, are founde great Tortoyfes (which are certeyne shell fysshes) of such byggenesse that tenne or fysteene men are scarcely able to lyfte one of them owt of the water, as I haue byn informed of credible persons dwellynge in the same Ilande. But of that which I my selfe haue seene, I can testifie that in the firme lande in the vyllage of Acla there are of this forte sum taken and kylled of suche byggenes that fixe men with much difficultie coulede scarcely drawe them owt of the water. And commonly the least fort of them are as much as two men may cary at a burden. That which I sawe lifted vp by fyxe men, had her shell a yarde and a quarter in length, and in breadth more then fyue yardes. The maner of takynge them, is this. It sumtymes chaunceth that in theyr greate nettes (whiche they caule shoote nettes) there are founde certeyne Tortoyfes of the common forte in great quantities. And when they coome owt of the sea and bringe forth theyr egges and go togyther by coompanies from the sea to feade on the lande, the Christians or Indians folowe theyr steppes whiche they fynde in the sande, and soone ouertake them bycause they are very heauy and slowe in goynge, although they make all the haste they can to returne to the sea as soone as they espie any boddie. When they that pursuwe them haue ouertaken them, they put a stake or staffe vnder theyr legges and ouerturne them on theyr backes as they are yet runnyng, so that they can go no further nor yet ryse ageyne or turne. And thus they suffer them to lye styll whyle they folowe after the reste which they ouerturne in lyke maner: And by this meanes take very manye at suche tymes as they coome furth of the sea as I haue sayde. This fyfthe is very excellent and holsome to be eaten, and of good taste. The seconde of the three fysshes wherof I haue spoken, is the Tiburon. This is a very greate fyfthe and very quicke and swifte in the water, and a cruell deuourer. These are often tymes taken, aswell when the shippes are vnder sayle in the Ocean, as also when they lye at anker, or at any other time, and especially the leaste kynd of these fysshes. When the shippes are vnder sayle, the biggest forte are taken after this maner. When the Tiburon feeth the shippe sailinge he foloweth it swymmyng behynde. The which thinge the mariners seeinge, caste furthe all the fylthe of the shippe into the sea for the fyfthe to eate, who neuerthelesse foloweth them with equal pafe although they make neuer such haste wyth full wynd and failes, and waloweth on euery fyde and about the shyppe: And thus foloweth it sumtyme for the space of a hundreth and fyftie leaques and more. And when the mariners are disposed to take them, they cast downe by the sterne of the shippe, a hoke of yren as bigge as the biggest finger of a mans hande of three spannes in lengthe and crooked like a fyftheooke with beardes accordinge to the bignesse thereof, and fastened to an iren chayne of fyue or fyxe linkes neare vnto th[e]nde, and from thense tyed with a greate rope, fastening also on the hooke for a bayte, a piece of sum fyfthe, or hogges flessh, or sum other fleshe, or the bouelles and intralles of an other Tiburon whiche they haue taken before, whiche may easely bee doone, for I haue seene nyne taken in one day. And if they wolde haue taken more, they myght also. Thus when the Tiburon hath pleasauntly folowed the ship a longe viage, at the lengthe he swaloweth the baite with the hooke. And aswell by his stryuinge to flye or escape, as also by the swifte passage of the shyppe, the hooke ouerthwarteth and catcheth hold of his chappes. The which fyfthe when it is taken, it is of suche huge byggenesse that twelue or fyfeteene men are scarcely able to drawe it owt of the water and lifte it into the shyppe: Where one of the mariners gyueth it many knockes on the headde with a clubbe or beetle vntil he haue slaine it. They are sumtymes founde of tenne or twelue foote long, and of fyue, fyxe, or feuen spannes in breadth where they are broadest. They haue very greate and wyde mouthes to the proportion of the reste of theyr boddies, and haue two rowes of teethe the one sumewhat separate from the other, of cruell shape and standing very thicke. When they haue slayne this fyfthe, they cutte the boddy therof in smaule piefes, and put it to drye, hangynge it three or four dayes at the cordes of the sayle clothes to drye in the wynde, and then eate it. It is doubtlesse a good fyfthe and of great commoditie to serue the shippes for vitalles for many dayes. The leaste of these fysshes are mooste holsome and tender. It hath a skinne much like to the skynne of a sole, whervnto the sayde Tuberon is lyke in shape. Which I saye bycause Plinie hath made mention of none of these three fysshes among the number of them whereof he wryteth in his natural hystorie. These Tiburons coomme furth of the sea and enter into the ryuers, where they are no lesse perelous then greate lifartes or Crocodiles wherof I haue spoken largely before. For they deuoure men, kine, and hores, euen as doo the Crocodiles. They are very daungerous in certeyne waffhyng places or pooles by the ryuers fydes, and where they haue deuoured at other tymes. Dyuers other fysshes both greate and smaule, of fundry fortes and kyndes are accustomed to folowe the shippes goynge vnder sayle, of the which I wyl speake sumwhat when I haue wrytten of Manate which is the thyrde of the three whereof I haue promysed to entreate. Manate therefore, is a fyfthe of the sea, of the byggest forte,

Tiburons.
Manates

Great Tortoyfes.

201

Tiburons.

Plinie.

Crocodyles.

202

Manates.

and muche greater then the Tiburon in length and breadth: And is very brutyshe and vyle, fo that it appeareth in forme lyke vnto one of thofe great vesselles made of goates skynnes wherin they vse to cary newe wyne in *Medina de Campo* or in *Areualo*. The headde of this beaft is lyke the head of an oxe, with also lyke eyes. And hath in the place of armes, two great stumpes wherwith he swymmeth. It is a very gentle and tame beaste: And commeth oftentimes owt of the water to the next shore: where if he find [a]ny herbes or grasse, he feedeth therof. Owre men are accustomed to kyl many of these and dyuers other good fysshes with their crossebowes, purfuinge them in barkes or Canoas, bycause they swimme in maner aboute the water. The whiche thyng when they see, they drawe them with a hooke tyde at a smaule corde, but sumwhat stronge. As the fyfthe flyeth away, the archer letteth go and prolongeth the corde by lyttle and lyttle vntyll he haue lette it go many fathams. At the ende of the corde, there is tyde a corke or a piece of lyght woodde. And when the fyfthe is goone a lyttle way, and hath coloured the water with his bludde, and feeleth hym felfe to faynt and drawe towarde th[e]nde of his lyfe, he resorteth to the shore, and the archer foloweth gatherynge vp his corde: wherof whyle there yet remaine fixe or eyght fathams or sum what more or lesse, he draweth it towarde the lande, and draweth the fyfthe therwith by little and lyttle as the waues of the fea helpe hym to doo it the more easely. Then with the helpe of the reste of his companie he lysteth this greate beaft owt of the water to the lande, beinge of such bygnesse that to conuey it from thense to the citie, it shalbe requisite to haue a carte with a good yoke of oxen, and sumtymes more, accordyng as these fysshes are of byggenesse, sum being much greater then other sum in the same kynde as is seene of other beastes. Sumtymes they lyst these fysshes into the Canoa or barke, without drawynge them to the lande as before. For as soone as they are slayne, they flote aboute the water. And I beleue verely that this fyfthe is one of the best in the world to the taste, and the lykkest vnto fleshe. Especially fo lyke vnto biese, that who fo hath not seene it hole, can iudge it to bee none other when he seeeth it in piieces then verye biese or veale. And is certeynly fo lyke vnto fleshe, that all the men in the worlde may herin bee deceaued. The taste lykewyfe, is lyke vnto the tast of very good veale, and lasteth longe yf it bee poudered. So that in fine, the base of these parties, is by no meanes lyke vnto this. This Manate, hath a certeine stone or rather bone in his headde within the brayne, which is of qualitie greatly appropriate ageynste the disease of the stone, if it bee burnt and grounde into smaule pouder, and taken fastynge in the mornynge when the payne is felte, in such quantitie as maye lye vppon a peny with a drawght of good whyte wyne. For beyng thus taken three or foure mornynge, it acquieth the grefe as dyuers haue toulde me whiche haue proued it trewe. And I my felfe by testimonie of fight, doo wytnesse that I haue seene this stone fought of dyuers for this effecte.

The fysshe
Manate.
A remedy ageynst
the stone.

There are also dyuers other fysshes as bygge as this Manate: Emonge the which there is one cauled *Vihuella*. This fyfthe beareth in the toppe of his headde, a swoorde beinge on euery syde full of many sharpe teeth. This swoorde is naturally very harde and stronge, of foure or fyue spannes in length and of proportion accordyng to the same byggenes. And for this cause is this fyfthe cauled *Spada*: that is the swoord fyfthe. Of this kynde sum are found as sardines: and other fo greate, that two yokes of oxen are scarcely able to drawe them on a carte. But whereas before, I haue promysed to speake of other fysshes which are taken in these seas whyle the shippes are vnder sayle, I wyl not forget to speake of the Tunnye which is a great and good fyfthe, and is oftentimes taken and kylde with troute speares and hookes caste in the water when they play and swimme aboute the shippes. In lyke maner also are taken many turbutts which are very good fysshes as are lyghtly in all the fea.

The swoorde
fysshe.

Tunnye.

Turbut.

And here is to bee noted, that in the greate Ocean fea, there is a straunge thyng to bee considered, whiche all that haue byn in the Indies affirme to bee trewe. And this is, that lyke as on the lande there are sum prouinces fertile and frutfull, and sum barren, euen so dooth the lyke chaunce in the fea: So that at sum wyndes the shippes sayle fiftie or a hundreth, or two hundreth leaques and more, without takyng or seinge of one fyfthe. And ageyne in the felfe same Ocean, in sum places, all the water is seene tremble by the mouynge of the fysshes, where they are taken abundantly.

203

Note.

It commeth further to my remembraunce to speake sumwhat of the flyinge of fysshes, which is doubtlesse a straunge thyng to beholde, and is after this maner. When the shippes sayle by the greate Ocean folowynge theyr vyage, there ryfeth sumtymes on the one syde or on the other, many companies of certeyne lyttle fysshes, of the which the byggest is no greater then a sardyne: and soo diminiſſhe lesse and lesse from that quantitie that sum of them are very lyttle. These are cauled *Volatori*: that is, flyinge fysshes. They ryfe by great companies and flockes in such multitudes that it is an astonysment to beholde them. Sumtymes they ryfe but lyttle from the water: and (as it chaunceth) continew one flyght for the space of a hundreth pases and sumtymes more or lesse before they faule ageyne into the fea. Sumtymes also they faule into the shippes. And I remember that on an euenyng when all the company in the shippe were on theyr knees fyngyng *Salue regina* in the highest parte of the Castel of the poope, and sayled with a full wynde, there passed by vs a flocke of these flyinge fysshes: and came fo neare vs that many of them fell into the shippe, amonge the which, two or three fell hard

Flyinge fysshes.

by me which I tooke alyue in my hande: fo that I myght well perceauē that they were as bigge as fardynes and of the same quantitie, hauynge two wynges or quyles growyng owt of theyr fynnes, lyke vnto those wherwith all the fyfshes fwymme in ryuers. These wynges are as longe as the fyfshes theym felues. As longe as theyr wynges are moyste, they beare them vp in the ayer. But as soone as they are drye, they can continewe theyr flyght no further then as I haue fayde before, but faule immediatly into the sea, and so ryfe ageyne, and flye as before from place to place.

In the yere. A thousand fyue hundreth fiftene. when I came fyrst to informe your maiestye of the state of the thynges in Indya, and was the yere folowynge in Flanders in the tyme of youre moste fortunate successe in these youre kyngedomes of Aragonie and Castyle, wheras at that vyage I fayled aboute the Iland *Bermuda* otherwyse cauled *Garza*, beyng the furthest of all the Ilandes that are founde at thys daye in the worlde, and arruyng there at the deapthe of eight yeades of water, and dystant from the land as farre as the shotte of a piece of ordynaunce, I determined to fende fume of the shyppes to lande as well to make searche of fuche thynges as were there, as also to leaue in the Ilande certayne hogges for increase. But the tyme not feruyng my purpose by reason of contrarye wynde, I could bryng my shyppes no nearer the Ilande beinge twelue leaques in lengthe and fyxe in breadth and about thyrty in circuite, lying in the thyrtye and thre degre of the northe fyde. Whyle I remayned here, I sawe a stryfe and combatte betwene these flyinge fyshes and the fyshes named gylte heades, and the foules cauled seamewes and cormorauntes, whych fuerlye seemed vnto me a thyng of as greate pleasure and solace as coulede bee deuysed, whyle the gylte heades fwamme on the brymme of the water and fymtymes lysted theyr shulders aboute the same to rayse the fwymmyng fyfshes owt of the water to dryue them to flyght, and folowe them fwymming to the place where they faule to take and eate them sodaynlye. Agayne on the other fyde, the seamewes and cormorantes, take manye of these flyinge fyfshes: fo that by thys meanes theye are nother safe in the ayre nor in the water. In the selfe same perrell and daunger doo men lyue in thys mortall lyfe wherin is no certayne securytye nether in hygh estate nor in lowe. Which thyng fuerlye ought to put vs in remembraunce of that blessed and safe restyng place whych god hath prepared for such as loue hym, who shall acquyete and fynyshe the trauayles of thys troubelous worlde wherin are so manye daungyours, and bryngē them to that eternall lyfe where they shall fynde eternall securytye and reste. But to returne to the hystorye: these byrdes and foules whych I sawe, were of the Ilande of *Bermuda* nere vnto the whych I sawe these flyinge fyfshes. For they coulede bee of no other lande, forasmuche as they are not accustomed to wander farre from the coastes where they are bredde.

The Iland of Bermuda.

Not to hie for the pye, nor to lowe for the crowe.

204

¶ Of th[e]increase and decrease, (that is) rysyng and faullyng of our Ocean sea and Southe sea cauled the sea of Sur.



Wyll nowe speake of certayne thynges whiche are seene in the Prouynce, or at the leaste in the cite of golden Castyle otherwyse cauled *Beragua*, and in the coastes of the North sea and of the South sea cauled the sea of *Sur*. Not omitting to note one synguler and meruelous thyng which I haue confydered of the Ocean sea, wherof hytherto no cofmographer, pylote or maryner or any other haue fatysfyed me.

Beragua.

I say therefore as it is well knownen to your maiestye and all such as haue knowlege of the Ocean sea, that this greate Ocean casteth from it selfe the sea *Mediterraneum* by the mouthe of the strayght of *Gibilterra*: in the which the water from th[e]end and furthest parte of that sea, euen vnto the mouth of the sayde strayght, eyther in the East towarde the coaste commonlye cauled *Leuante*, or in any other parte of the sayde sea *Mediterraneum*, the sea doothe not so faule nor increase as reason wolde iudge for so greate a sea. But incresethe verye lyttle and a fynaule space. Neuerthelesse, withoute the mouthe of the strayght in the mayne Ocean, it increaseth and fauleth verye muche and a great space of grounde from fyxe houres to fyxe houres, as in all the coastes of Spayne, Britannye, Flanders, Germanye, and England. The selfe same Ocean sea in the fyrme lande newlye founde, in the coastes of the same lynnge towarde the Northe, dothe neyther ryse nor faule, nor lykewise in the Ilandes of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba* and all the other Ilandes of the same sea lyinge towarde the northe, for the space of thre thousande leaques, but onelye in lyke maner as doothe the sea *Mediterraneum* in Italye: whiche is in maner nothyng in respecte to that increase and decrease whiche the sayde Ocean hath in the coastes of Spayne and Flaunders. But this is yet a greater thyng, that also the selfe same Ocean in the coastes of the sayde fyrme lande lyinge towarde the Southe in the cite of *Panama*, and also in the coaste of that lande whiche lyethe towarde the Easte and Weste frome that cite, as in the Ilande of pearles or *Margaritea* whiche the Indians caule *Tarrarequi*, and also in *Taboga* and *Otoque*, and

The west Ocean.

The sea Mediteraneum.

Hispaniola.
Cuba.

The South sea.

The power and
wisdome of god is
sene in his
creatures.

in all other Ilandes of the fouth sea of *Sur*, the water ryfeth and fauleth so much, that when it fauleth it go[e]th in maner owt of fyghte, which thyng I my selfe haue feene oftentimes.

And here youre maieslie may note an other thyng, that from the northe sea to the fouth sea beyng of fuche dyfference the one from the other in ryfyng and faulyng, yet is the lande that deuydeth theym not paste eyghtene or twentye leaques in breadthe frome coaste to coaste. So that bothe the fayde seas beyng all one Ocean this straunge effecte is a thyng worthy greatly to bee considered of al fuche as haue inclination and defyre to knowe the secrete woorkes of nature wherin the infinite powre and wyfedome of god is feene to bee such as may allure all good natures to reuerence and loue so diuine a maieslie. And wheras by the demonstrations of lerned men I am not satisfyed of the natural cause hereof, I content my selfe to knowe and beleue that he which hath made these thynges, dooth knowe this and many other whiche he hath not granted to the reason of man to comprehend, much lesse to so base a wyt as myne is. They therefore that are of greater vnderstandyng, shall searche the cause hereof, for them and for me, forasfinch as I haue onely put the matter in question as a wytnesse that haue feene th[e] experience of the thyng.

¶ *Of the strayght or narrowe passage of the lande lyinge betwene the North and South sea, by the whiche spyces may much sooner and easlyer be brought from the Ilandes of Molucca into Spayne by the West Ocean then by that way wherby the Portugales sayle into East India.*



I hath byn an opinion amonge the Cosmographers and Pylottes of late tyme, and other which haue had practife in thynges touchyng the sea, that there shulde bee a strayght of water passyng from the North sea of the firme, into the South sea of *Sur*, whiche neuerthelesse hath not byn feene nor founde to this daye. And fuerlye yf there be any fuche strayght, we that inhabite those partes do thynke the same shulde bee rather of lande then of water. For the fyrme lande in sum partes therof is so strayght and narrowe that the Indyans saye that frome the mountaynes of the prouynce of *Esquegua* or *Vrraca*, (whych are betwene the one sea and the other) If a man assend to the toppe of the mountaynes and looke towarde the Northe, he maye see the water of the North sea of the Prouynce of *Beragua*. And ageyne lookyng the contrarye waye, may on the other fyde towarde the Southe, see the sea of *Sur* and the prouynces whyche confyne with it, as doo the territoryes of the two Lordes or kynges of the sayde prouynces of *Vrraca* and *Esquegua*. And I beleue that if it bee as the Indyans saye, of al that is hetherto knowen, this is the narrowest strayght of the fyrme lande, whiche sume affyrme to bee full of rough mountaynes. Yet doo I not take it for a better waye, or so shorte as is that whyche is made from the porte cauled *Nomen dei* (whiche is in the Northe sea) vnto the newe citey of *Panama* beyng in the coaste and on the banke of the sea of *Sur*. Whiche waye is likewyse very rough ful of thicke wods, mountaines, ryuers, valleys, and verye diffyculte to passe through, and can not bee doone without greate laboure and traually. Sum meafure this waye in this part, to bee from sea to sea. xviii. leaques, whych I suppose to bee rather. xx. not for that it is any more by meafure, but bicause it is rough and dyffyculte as I haue fayde, and as I haue founde it by experyence hauyng nowe twyfe passed that way by foote: countyng from the porte and vyllage of *Nomen Dei* vnto the dominion of the *Cacique* of *Iuanaga* otherwyse cauled *Capira*. viii. leaques: And frome thense to the ryuer of *Chagre*, other. viii. leaques. So that at this ryuer beinge. xvi. leaques from the fayde porte, endeth the roughnesse of the way. Then from hense to the maruelous brydge are two leaques: And beyonde that, other two vnto the port of *Panama*: So that all togyther in my iudgmente, make xx. leaques. And if therefore this nauigation may bee founde in the South sea for the trade of spyces (as we trust in God) to bee brought from thense to the fayde porte of *Panama* (as is possible enough) they may afterwarde easly passe to the Northe sea notwithstandinge the difficultie of the waye of the. xx. leaques aforefayde. Whiche thyng I affirme as a man well trauallyed in these regions, hauyng twyfe on my feate passed ouer this strayght in the yeare. 1521. as I haue fayde. It is furthermore to bee vnderstode, that it is a maruelous facilitie to bryng spyces by this way which I wil now declare. From *Panama* to the ryuer of *Chagre*, are foure leaques of good and fayre way by the which cartes may passe at pleasure by reason that the mountaynes are but fewe and lyttle, and that the greateste parte of these foure leaques is a playne grounde voyde of trees. And when the cartes are coomme to the fayde ryuer, the spyces may be caryed in barkes and pinneses. For this ryuer entereth into the

205

Esquegua and
Vrraca.*Nomen Dei*.
Panama.The ryuer of
Chagre.

North sea fyue or. vi leaques lower then the port of *Nomen dei*, and emptieth it felfe in the sea nere vnto an Ilande cauled *Bastimento*, where is a very good and safe port. Yowr maiestie may now therfore confyder howe great a thyng and what commoditie it may bee to conuey spices this way, forasmuch as the ryuer of *Chagre* hauyng his originall only two leaques from the South sea, contineweth his courfe and emptieth it felfe into the other North sea. This ryuer runneth fast and is very greate, and so commodious for this purpose as may be thought or desyred. The marueilous bridge made by the worke of nature, being two leaques beyonde the fayd ryuer, and other two leaques on this syde the porte of *Panama*, so lyinge in the mydde way betwene them both, is framed naturally in such fort that none which passe by this viage see any such bridge or thynke that there is any such buyldyng in that place vntyll they bee in the toppe therof in the way toward *Panama*. But as soone as they are on the brydge, lookyng towards the ryght hande, they see a lyttle ryuer vnder them which hath his chanell distante from the feete of them that walke ouer it, the space of two speares length or more. The water of this ryuer is very shalowe, not passyng the depth of a mans legge to the knee: and is in breadth betwene thyrty and fortie pases: and faulethe into the ryuer of *Chagre*. Towarde the ryght hand standyng on this brydge, there is nothyng seene but great trees. The largenesse of the brydge, conteyneth. xv. pases: and the length thereof about threescore or fourescore pases. The arche is so made of mosse harde stone, that no man can beholde it without admiration, beinge made by the hyghe and omnipotent creatour of all thynges. But to returne to speake sumwhat more of the conueying of spices, I say that when it shal please almyghty god that this nauigation aforesayde shal bee founde by the good fortune of yowre maiestie, and that the spices of the Ilandes of the South sea (which may also bee otherwyse cauled the Ocean of the East India in the whiche are the Ilandes of *Molucca*) shalbe brought to the fayd coaste and the porte of *Panama*, and bee conueyed from thense (as we haue sayde) by the firme lande with cartes vnto the ryuer of *Chagre*, and from thense into this owr other sea of the North, from whense they may afterward bee brought into Spayne, I say that by this meanes the vyage shall bee shortened more then feuen thousande leaques, with muche lesse daunger then is by the viage nowe vsed by the way of Commendator of Aysa capitayne vnder yowre maiestie, who this present yeare attempted a vyage to the place of the sayde spyses. And not only the way is thus much shortened, but also a thyrde parte of the tyme is abbreviate. To conclude therfore, if any had hetherto attempted this vyage by the sea of *Sur*, to seeke the Ilandes of spyses, I am of firme opinion that they shuld haue byn founde longe fence, as doubtlesse they maye bee by the reasons of Cosmographie.

The Ilande Bastimento.

The maruelous bridge.

206

The Ilandes of Molucca. The commoditie of this viage.

¶ *Howe thynges that are of one kynde, dyffer in forme and qualitie, accordyng to the nature of the place where they are engendred or growe. And of the beastes cauled Tygers.*



In the firme lande are fownde many terryble beastes which sum thinke to be Tygers. Which thyng neuerthelesse, I dare not affirme, confyderinge what auctoures doo wryte of the lyghtnes and agilitie of the Tyger, whereas this beast beyng other wyfe in shape very like vnto a Tyger, is notwithstandinge very slowe. Yet trewe it is, that accordyng to the maruayles of the worlde and differences which naturall thynges haue in dyuers regions vnder heauen and dyuers constellations of the same vnder the whiche they are created, we see that sum suche plantes and herbes as are hurtfull in one countrey, are harmelesse and holosome in other regions. And byrdes which in one prouince are of good taste, are in other so vnfaury that they may not bee eaten. Men likewyse which in sum countreys are blacke, are in other places whyte: and yet are both these and they men.

Tigers.

Plantes and herbes. Birdes. Men.

Euen so may it bee that Tygers are lyght in sum region as they wryte, and maye neuerthelesse bee slowe and heauy in these Indies of yowr maiestie wherof we speake. The sheepe of Arabie drawe theyr tayles longe and bigge on the ground, and the bulles of Egypt haue theyr heare growyng towards theyr headdes: yet are those sheepe and these bulles. Men in sum countreys are hardy and of good courage, and in other naturally fearefull and brutyshe. All these thynges and many more which may bee sayde to this purpose, are easy to be proued and woorthy to bee beleued of suche as haue redde of the lyke in autours or trauayled the worlde, whereby theyr owne fyght may teache theym th[e] experience of these thynges wherof I speake. It is also manifest, that *Iucca* wherof they make theyr breade in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, is deadely poyson yf it bee eaten greene with the iuse: And yet hathe it no suche propertie in the firme land where I haue eaten it many times and found it to bee a good frute. The bats of Spayne although they bite, yet are they not venomous.

Sheepe. Bulles.

Iucca.

Battes.

Plinie.

The Tiger.

207

The hunting of tigers.

A reward for kyllynge of tigers.

Colonus compared to Hercules.
The pillers of Hercules.The straightes of Gibilterra.
Note.

PLVS VLTRA.

Howe farre Th[e]mperours maiestie excelleth Hercules.

A tiger made tame.

208

But in the firme lande many dye that are bytten of them. And in this fourme may so many thynges bee sayde that tyme shall not suffice to wryte, wheras my intent is only to proue that this beaſt may be a Tiger or of the kind of Tigers although it be not of ſuch lyghtneſſe and ſwiftneſſe as are they wherof Plinie and other autours ſpeake, diſcrybynge it to bee one of the ſwyfteſte beaſtes of the lande, and that the ryuer of *Tigris* for the ſwift courſe thereof was cauled by that name. The firſt Spaniardes which ſawe this Tyger in the firme lande, dyd ſo name it. Of the kynde of theſe was that which Don Diego Columbo the Admirall ſent yowre maieſtie owte of newe Spayne to Toledo. Theyr heades are lyke to the heades of Lyons or Lioneſſes, but greater. The reſte of all theyr boddies and theyr legges, are full of blacke ſpottes one nere vnto an other and diuided with a circumference or frynge of redde colour ſhewing as it were a fayre woorke and correſpondent picture. About theyr croopes or hynder partes, they haue theſe ſpots byggeſt: and leſſe and leſſe towarde theyr bellies, legges, and headdes. That which was brought to Toledo, was younge and but lyttle, and by my eſtimation, of th[e]age of three yeares. But in the firme lande there are many founde of greater quantitie. For I haue ſeene ſum of three ſpannes in heyght, and more then fyue in length. They are beaſtes of greate force, with ſtronge legges, and well armed with nayles and fanges which we caule dogge teeth. They are ſo fierce that in my iudgement no reall lyon of the byggeſt forte is ſo ſtronge or fierce. Of theſe, there are many founde in the firme lande whiche deuour many of the Indians and do much hurte otherwyſe. But fyns the comming of the Chriſtians, many haue byn kyld with Croſſebowes after this maner. As ſoone as the archer hath knowledge of the haunt of any of theſe Tygers, he goeth ſearchyng theyr traſe with his croſſebowe and with a lyttle hounde or bewgle and not with a greehounde, bycauſe this beaſt wolde ſoone kyll any dogge that wolde venter on hym. When the hounde hath founde the Tyger, he runneth about hym bayinge continually, and approacheth ſo neare hym ſnappynge and grynnyng with ſo quicke flyinge and returnyng, that he hereby ſo moleſteth this fierce beaſt that he dryueth hym to take the next tree, at the foote whereof he remayneth ſtyl bayinge and the Tyger grynnyng and ſhewyng his teeth, whyle in the meane tyme the archer commeth neare, and. xii. or. xiiii. pafes of, ſtryketh hym with the querel of his croſſebowe in the breſte, and flyeth incontinent, leauyng the Tyger in his trauayle for lyfe and death, bytyng the tree and eatyng earth for fierceneſſe. Then within the ſpace of twoo or three houres or the day folowyng, the archer returneth thither, and with his dogge ſyndeth the place where he lyethe deade.

In the yeare. 1522. I with the other rulers and magiſtrates of the cite of *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, toke order in owr counſayle, A rewarde of foure or fyue pieces of golde to bee giuen to euery man that kylde any of theſe Tygers: by reaſon wherof many were kyld in ſhorthe ſpace both with croſſebowes and alſo with dyuers ſnares and ingens. But to conclude, I wyll not obſynately ſtand in opinyon whether theſe beaſtes bee Tygers or Panthers, or of the number of any other ſuch beaſtes of ſpotted heare, or alſo peraduenture ſum other newe beaſt vnknown to the owlde wryters as were many other wherof I haue ſpoken in this booke. Of which thyng, I doo not greatly meruayle, For aſmuche as vnto owre tyme thys greate parte of the worlde was vnknown to the antiquitie: In ſo muche that none of the wryters of that age, nor yet Ptolomie in his *Cofmographie*, or any other ſence hym, haue made any mention herof, vntill the fyrſt Admyrall Don Chryſtopher Colonus diſcouered the ſame. A thyng douteleſſe without comparyſon muche greater then that whyche is ſayd of Hercules, that he fyrſte gaue th[e]nterance of the ſea *Mediterraneum* into the Ocean, whiche the Grekes coulde neuer doo before hym. And herof ryſethe the fable that the mountaynes of Calpe and Abila (which are directly one agaynſt an other in the ſtraight of *Gibilterra*, the one beyng in Spayne and the other in Affryke) were ioyned together before they were opened by Hercules, who erected thoſe hys pyllers whiche your maieſtye gyue in token of prehemynence and lyke enterpryſes with lykewyſe theſe hys wordes *PLVS VLTRA*: wordes douteleſſe worthy for ſo greate an[d] vnyuerſall an Emperoure, and not conuenient for any other Prynce. For aſmuche as your holy Catholyke Maieſtye haue ſpredde them in ſo ſtraunge and remote regyons, ſo manye thouſande leaques further then euer dyd Hercules. And certeynlye fyr, If there had byn an Image of golde made in the prayſe and fame of *Colonus*, He had as well deſerued it as any of thoſe men to whom for theyr noble enterpryſe the antiquytie gaue deuyne honoure, if he had byn in their tyme. But to returne to the matter whereof I began to ſpeake: I neede ſay no more of the forme of thys beaſt, for as muche as your Maieſtye haue ſeene that whych is yet alyue in Tolloedo. And fuerly the keeper of your Maieſties Lyons, who hath taken vpon hym the charge to tame this beaſt, myght better haue beſtowed his paynes in an other thyng that myght haue bynne more profitable for the ſafegarde of his lyfe bycauſe this Tyger beinge yet but younge, wyl dayly bee ſtronger and fiercer and increaſe in malice. The Indians (and eſpecially they of the firme lande in the prouince whiche the Catholyke Kyng Don Ferdinando commaunded to bee cauled golden Caſtyle) caule this beaſt *Ochi*. This thinge is ſtraunge that chaunced of late: that wheras the Tiger wherof we haue made mention before, wolde haue kyld his keeper that then kept hym in a cage, was in fewe dayes after made ſo tame that he ledde her tyed only with a ſmaule corde and playde with her ſo familiarly that I maruayled greatly to ſee it, yet not without certeyne belefe that this frendſhyp wyll not laſte longe without daunger of lyfe to the keeper, for aſmuch as fuerly theſe beaſtes are not meete to bee amonge men for theyr fiercenes and cruell nature that can not bee tamed.

Of the maners and customes of the Indians of the firme lande,
and of theyr women.



He maners and customes of these Indians, are dyuers in diuers prouinces. Sum of them take as many wyues as them lyst, and other lyue with one wyfe whome they forsake not without consent of both parties, which chauncethe especially when they haue no chylde. The nobilitie aswel men as women, repute it infamous to ioyne with any of base parentage or frangers, except Christians, whom they count noble men by reason of theyr valientnes, although they put a difference betwene the common forte and the other to whom they shewe obedience, countynge it for a great matter and an honorable thyng yf they be beloued of any of them. In so much that yf they knowe any Christian man carnally, they keepe theyr fayth to hym, so that he bee not longe absent farre from them. For theyr intent is not to bee widowes or to lyue chaft lyke religious women. Many of theym haue this custome, that when they perceauē that they are with chylde, they take an herbe wherwith they destroy that is conceaued. For they say that only wel aged women shulde beare chylde, and that they wyl not forbearē theyr pleasures and deforme theyr boddies with bearynge of chylde, wherby theyr teates becomē loofe and hangynge which thyng they greatly disprayse. When they are deliuered of theyr chylde they go to the ryuer and washe them. Whiche doone, theyr bludde and purgation ceafeth immediatly. And when after this they haue a few days absteyned from the company of men, they becomē so strayght as they say which haue had carnall familiaritie with them, that such as vse them, can not without much difficultie satisfie theyr appetite. They also whiche neuer had chylde, are euer as vyrgins. In sum partes they weare certeyne lyttle apernes rounde about them before and behynde as lowe as to theyr knees and hammes, wherwith they couer theyr priuie partes, and are naked all theyr boddie byfyde. The principall men beare theyr priuities in a holowe pype of golde: but the common forte haue them inclosed in the shelles of certeyne great welkes, and are byfyde vtterly naked. For they thynke it no more shame to haue theyr coddēs seene then any other parte of theyr boddies. And in many prouinces bothe the men and women go vtterly naked without any such couerture at al. In the prouince of *Cueua* they caul a man *Chuy*, and a woman *Ira*: which name is not greatly disagreeable to many both of theyr women and of owres.

These Indians gyue great honour and reuerence to theyr *Cacique* (that is) theyr kynges and rulers. The principall *Cacique*, hath twelue of his most stronge Indians appoynted to beare hym when he remoueth to any place, or gothe abrod for his pleasure. Two of them cary hym fyttyng vppon a longe piece of woodde which is naturally as lyght as they can fynd. The other tenne folowe nexte vnto hym as foote men. They keepe continually a trottyngē pafe with hym on theyr shulders. When the twoo that cary hym are wery, other twoo coomme in theyr places without any disturbance or stey. And thus if the way bee playne, they cary hym in this maner for the space of. xv. or. xx. leaques in one day. The Indians that are assigned to this office, are for the moste parte slaues or *Naboriti*, that is, such as are bounde to continuall seruice.

I haue also noted that when the Indians perceauē them selues to bee troubled with to much bludde, they lette them selues blud in the calves of theyr legges and brawnes of theyr armes. This doo they with a very sharpe flone, and sumtymes with the smaule toothe of a vyper, or with a sharpe reede or thorne.

All the Indians are commonly without beardes: In so much that it is in maner a maruayle to see any of them eyther men or women to haue any downe or heare on theyr faces or other partes of theyr boddies. Albeit, I sawe the *Cacique* of the prouince of *Catarapa* who had heare on his face and other partes of his boddie, as had also his wyfe in suche places as women are accustomed to haue. This *Cacique* had a great part of his body paynted with a blacke colour which neuer fadeth: And is much lyke vnto that wherwith the Mores paynt them selues in Barberie in token of nobilitie. But the Moores are paynted specially on theyr vyfage and throte and certeyne other partes. Likewyse the principall Indians vse these payntynges on theyr armes and brestes, but not on theyr vyfages, bycause amonge them the slaues are so marked. When the Indians of certeyne prouinces go to the battayle (especially the Caniball archers) they cary certeyne shelles of greate welkes of the sea which they blowe and make therwith great founde muche lyke the noyse of hornes. They carye also certeyne tymbrels which they vse in the steade of drummes. Also very fayre plumes of fethers, and certeyne armure of golde: especially great and rounde pieces on theyr brestes, and splintes on there armes. Lykewyse other pieces whiche they put on theyr heades and other partes of theyr bodyes. For they esteeme nothyngē so much as to appeare galante in the war[re]s, and to go in most coomely order that they can deuyse, glysterynge with precious stones, icwelles, golde, and fethers. Of the leaste of these welkes or perewincles, they make certeyne lyttle

The Indian women.

The men of India.

The kyng is borne on mens backs.

Lettinge of bludde.

They haue no beardes.

Their payote theyr bodies.

209

The Canibates.

Armure of golde.

Their galantnes in the warres.

Their luells

beades of diuers fortes and colours. They make also little brasselets whiche they mengle with gaudies of golde. These they rowle about there armes frome the elbowe to the wrestle of the hande. The lyke also doo they on theyr legges from the knee to the soles of theyr feete in token of nobilitie. Especially theyr noble women in dyuers prouinces are accustomed to weare such Iewelles, and haue theyr neckes in maner laden therewith. These beades and Iewels and such other trynkettes, they caule *Caquiras*. Bifyde these also, they weare certeyne rynges of golde at theyr eares and nostrelles which they bore ful of holes on both sides, so that the ringes hange vpon theyr lippes. Sum of these Indians, are poulde and rounded. Albeit, commonly both the men and women take it for a decent thyng to weare longe heare, which the women weare to the mydde of theyr sholders and cut it equally, especially about theyr browes. This doo they with certeyne harde stones which they keepe for the same purpose. The principall women when theyr teates faule or becoome loofe, beare them vp with barres of golde of the length of a spanne and a halfe, wel wrought, and of such byggenesse that sum of them way more then two hundreth Castilians or ducades of golde. These barres haue holes at both th[e]ndes, whereat they tye two smaule cordes made of cotton at euery ende of the barres. One of these cordes go[e]th ouer the shulder, and the other vnder the arme holes where they tye togyther, so that by this meanes the barre beareth vp theyr teates. Sum of these chiefe women go to the battayle with theyr husbands, or when they them selues are regentes in any prouinces, in the which they haue all thynges at commaundement and execute th[e] office of generall capitaynes, and cause them selues to bee caryed on mens backs in lyke maner as doo the Caciques of whom I haue spoken before.

Howe the women beare vp their teates, wyth barres of golde.

The stature and coloure of the Indians.

The Indians cauled Coronati. The Ilande of gigantes. *Iucatos*.

These Indians of the firme lande are muche of the same stature and coloure as are they of the Ilandes. They are for the most part of the colour of an olyue. If there bee any other difference, it is more in byggenesse then otherwyse. And especially they that are cauled *Coronati*, are stronger and bygger then any other that I haue seene in these parties, except those of the Ilande of gigantes whiche are on the fourth fyde of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* nere vnto the coastes of the firme lande: And lykewyse certeyne other which they caule *Yucatos* which are on the north fyde. All which chiefly, although they bee no gigantes, yet are they doubtlesse the byggeste of the Indyans that are knowen to this day, and commonly bygger then the Flemynghes: and especially many of them aswell women as men, are of very hyghe stature, and are all archiers bothe men and women. These *Coronati* inhabite thirtie leaques in length by these coastes from the poynt of *Canoa* to the greate ryuer which they caule *Guadalchibir* nere vnto *Santa Maria de gratia*. As I trauesed by those coastes, I fylled a butte of freshe water of that ryuer syxe leaques in the sea frome the mouthe therof where it fauleth into the sea. They are cauled *Coronati* (that is crowned) bycause theyr heare is cutte round by theyr eares, and poulde lower a great compasse abowte the crowne much lyke the fryers of faynt Augustines order. And bycause I haue spoken of theyr maner of wearynge theyr heare, here commeth to my remembraunce a thyng which I haue oftentimes noted in these Indians. And this is, that they haue the bones of the sculles of theyr heades foure tymes thycker and much stronger then owres. So that in comyng to hand strokes with them, it shalbe requisite not to strike them on the heades with swordes. For so haue many swordes bynne broken on theyr heades with litle hurt doone. And to haue sayde thus much of theyr customes and maners, it shal suffice for this tyme, bycause I haue more largely intreated herof in my generall hyflorie of the Indies. Yet haue I nother there nor here spoken much of that parte of the firme lande whiche is cauled *Noua Hispania* (that is, newe Spayne wherof the Ilande of *Iucatana* is part) forasmuche as Ferdinando Cortese hath wrytten a large booke thereof.

The sculles of the Indians heades.

210

New Spaine.

The houses of the Christians in India

Of the houfes of these Indians, I haue spoken sufficiently elsewhere. Yet haue I thought good to informe your maiestie of the buyldyng and houfes which the Christians haue made in dyuers places in the firme lande. They buylde them nowe therefore with two solars or lofes, and with loopes and wyndowes to open and shutte. Also with stronge tymber and very fayre bordes. In fuche forte that any noble man maye wel and pleasauntly bee lodged in sum of them. And amonge other, I my selfe caused one to bee builded in the cite of *Santa Maria Antigua* in *Dariena* whiche coste me more then a thousande and fyue hundreth Castilians: being of such fort that I may well interteyne and commodiously lodge any Lorde or noble man, referuyng also a parte for my selfe and my famelie. For in this may many householdes bee kepte both aboue and benethe. It hath also a fayre garden with many orange trees bothe sweete and fowre: Ceders also, and Lemondes, of the which there is nowe great plentie in the houfes of the Chrystians. On one fyde of the gardeyne, there runneth a fayre ryuer. The situation is very pleasaunte, with a good and holfome ayer, and a fayre prospecte abowte the ryuer. In fine, owre truste is that in fewe yeares al thynges in these regions shall growe to a better state accordyng to the holy intention of your maiestie.

Dariena.

Gardens.

Of the chiefe Ilandes Hispaniola and Cuba.



The Indians which at this present inhabite the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, are but fewe in number, and the Chrystyans not so many as they ought to bee forasmuche as many of them that were in this Ilande, are gonne to other Ilandes and to the fyrme lande. For beyng for the moste parte younge men vnmarried, and desirous dayly to see newe thyngs wherin mans nature deliteth, they were not willinge to continewe longe in on[e] place: especially seeinge daillie other newe landes discovered where they thought they might sooner fylle there purfes by beinge present at the firste spoyle. Wherin neuerthelesse their hope deceaued many of them, and especially fuche as had houses and habitations in thys Ilande. For I certheynly beleue, confyrmyng my selfe herein with the Iudgement of many other, that if any one Prynce had no more signiores then only this Ilande, it shuld in shorte tyme bee fuche as not to giue place eyther to Sicilie or Englande: whereas euen at this present there is nothyng wherefore it shulde malice their prosperitie not beinge inferioure to them in any filicite that in maner the heauens can graunte to any lande: beinge furthermore fuche as maye inriche many prouinces and kyngedomes by reason of manye riche golde mines that are in it of the beste golde that is founde to this day in the worlde, and in greate quantitie. In this Ilande, nature of her selfe bringeth furthe fuche abundance of cotton that if it were wrought and maynteyned there shuld be more and better then in any parte of the world. There is fo greate plentie of excellent *Cassia* that a greate quantitie is brought from thense into Spayne: from whense it is caried to dyuers partes of the worlde. It increafeth so muche that it is a meruelous thyng to consider. In this are many ryche shoppes wher fuger is wrought: and that of such perfectenes and goodnes, and in fuche quantitie that shippes come laden therwith yearly into Spayne. All fuche fedes, fettes, or plantes, as are brought out of Spayne and planted in this Ilande, becommme muche better, bygger, and of greater increase then they are in any parte of owre Europe. And if it chaunce otherwyse that fumetymes they prosper not so well, the cause is that they whiche shulde tyll and husband the grounde, and sowe and plant in dewe seasons, haue no respect hereunto, being impacient whyle the wheate and vynes waxe rype, being gyuen to wanderynge and other affayres of present gaynes (as I haue sayde) as searchoyng the gold mines, fysshynge for pearles, and occupyng marchaundies, with such other trades, for the greedy folowyng wherof, they neglecte and contempne both fowynge and plantynge. Suche frutes as are brought owt of Spayne, into this Ilande, prosper maruelously and waxe rype all tymes of the yeare: as herbes of all fortes very good and pleasaunt to bee eaten. Also many pomegranates of the best kynde, and oranges bothe sweete and fower. Lykewyse many fayre Lymones and ceders: and a greate quantitie of all such as are of sharpe, fowre, and bytter taste. There are also many fygge trees whiche brynge furth theyr frute all the hole yeare. Lykewyse those kynd of date trees that beare dates: and dyuers other trees and plantes which were brought owt of Spayne thither.

Beastes doo also increase in lyke abundance: and especially the heardes of kyne are so augmented both in quantitie and number, that there are nowe many patrones of cattayle that haue more then two thousand heades of neate: and sum three or foure thousande, and sum more. Byfyde these, there are very many that haue heardes of foure or fyue hundrethe. And trewth it is, that this Iland hath better pasture for such cattayle then any other countrey in the worlde: also holsome and cleare water and temperate ayer, by reason whereof the heardes of such beastes are much bygger, fatter, and also of better taste then owres in Spayne bycause of the ranke pasture whose moysture is better digested in the herbe or grasse by the continuall and temperate heate of the foonne, wherby being made more fatte and vnctuous, it is of better and more stedfast nuryshment. For continuall and temperate heate, dooth not only drawe muche moysture owt of the earth to the nuryshment of such thynges as growe and are engendered in that clyme, but dooth also by moderation preferue the same from resolution and putrefaction, digestyng also and condensatyng or thickenyng the sayde moyste nuryshmente into a gummie and vnctuous substaunce as is seene in all fuche things as growe in those regions. And this is the only naturall cause aswell that certeyne great beastes and of longe lyfe (as the Elephante and Rhinoceros with such other) are engendered only in regions nere vnto the Equinoctiall, as also that the leaues of such trees as growe there, do not wyther or faule, vntyll they bee thruste owt by other, accordyng to the verse of the poete which sayth: *Et nata pira piris, et ficus in ficubus extant.* That is in effecte: peares growyng vpon peares, and fygges vpon fygges. Plinie also wryteth, that fuche trees are neuer infected with the disease of trees that the Latines caule *Caries*, which we may caule the worme or canker, being but a certeyne putrifaction by reason of a wateryshe nuryshment not well consolidate. The same thyng hath bynne the cause that certeyne Phylofophers consideryng aswell that man is the hottest and moyfeste beast that is (which is the best complexion) as also that men lyue longeste in certeyne partes of India nere the Equinoctiall (where

Men are desirous of newe thynges.

The commodities of Hispaniola

Englande and Sicilie.

Golde mines.
Cotton.

Cassia.

Suger.

Plantes and herbes

Great thynges hindered by respecte of presente gaynes.

211

Orangies.
Pomegranates.
Figges at the yeare.
Dates.

Beastes.

Great heardes of cattail.

Good pasture.

The effecte of continual and moderate heate.

The cause of fatte nuryshmente.

Beastes of longe lyfe in regions abowte the Equinoctiall line
Trees whos leaues doo not wyther

The cancar of the tree

Longe lyuide men
in India.
Paradise neare the
equinoctial line

yet to this daye summe liue to th[e]age of a hundreth and fiftie yeares) were of opinion that yf mankynde had any begynnyng on the earthe, that place owght by good reason to be vnder or not farre from the Equinoctiall lyne for the causes aforefayde. Sum of the diuines also vppon lyke confideration haue thought it agreable that theyr Paradyse shulde bee about the fame within the precincte of those ryuers which are named in the booke of Genesis. But to lette passe these thynges and to returne to the hystorie.

Shepe and hogges

In this Ilande furthermore, are many sheepe and a great number of hogges: of the which (as also of the kyne) manye are becoome wyld: And lykewyse many dogges and cattes of those which were brought owt of Spayne. These (and especially the dogges) doo much hurte amonge the cattayle by reason of the negligence of the hearde men.

Dogges and cattes
becom[e] wyld

There are also many horfes, mares, and mules, and fuche other beastes as ferue th[e] use of men in Spayne, and are much greater then they of the fyrste brode brought thether owt of Spayne. Sum places of the Ilande are inhabyted, although not so many as were requisite: Of the whiche I wyll saye no more but that all the regions of the Ilande are so well situate that in the course of tyme all thynges shall coomme to greater perfection by reason of the rychnesse and pleasauntnesse of the cuntrye and fertilitie of the foile.

The situation of
Hispaniola.

But nowe to speake sumwhat of the principall and chiefe place of the Ilande, which is the cite of *San Domenico*: I saye that as touchyng the buildynges, there is no cite in Spaine so muche for so muche (no not *Barfalona* whiche I haue oftentymes seene) that is to bee preferred before this generallye. For the houses of *San Domenico*, are for the moste parte of stone as are they of *Barfalona*: or of so stronge and well wrought earth that it maketh a singuler and stronge byndyng. The situation is muche better then that of *Barfalona* by reason that the streates are much larger and playner, and without comparyson more directe and streyght furth.

The cite of
san Domenico

212

For beinge buylded nowe in our tyme, bysyde the commoditie of the place of the foundation, the streates were also directed with corde, compasse and measure, wherin it excelleth al the cities that I haue seene. It hath the sea so nere, that of one syde there is no more space between the sea and the cite then the waules. And this is about fyftie pases where it is furthest of. On this syde, the waters of the sea beate vppon the naturall stones and fayre coaste. On the other parte, harde by the syde and at the foote of the houses, passeth the ryuer *Ozama* whiche is a marueylous porte wherin laden shyppes ryse very nere to the lande and in maner vnder the house wyndowes, and no further from the mouth of the ryuer where it entereth into the sea, then is from the foote of the hyll of *Monyuye* to the monastery of saynt Frances or to the lodge of *Barfalona*. In the myddest of this space in the cite, is the fortresse and castle, vnder the which and twentie pases distant from the same, passe the shippes to aryse sumwhat further in the same ryuer. From the enteraunce of the shyppes vntyll they cast anker, they sayle no further from the houses of the cite then thyrtye or fortie pases, bicause of this syde of the cite the habitacion is nere to the ryuer. The port or hauen also, is so fayre and commodious to defraight or vnlade shyppes, as the lyke is founde but in fewe places of the worlde. The chymineis that are in this cite, are about fyxe hundreth in number, and such houses as I haue spoken of before: Of the which sum are so fayre and large that they maye well receaue and lodge any lorde or noble manne of Spayne with his trayne and famelie. And especially that which Don Diego Colon viceroy vnder your maiestie hath in this cite, is fuche that I knowe no man in Spayne that hath the lyke by a quarter in goodnesse confyderynge all the commodities of the fame. Lykewyse the situation thereof, as beinge aboute the fayde porte and altogyther of stone and hauynge many faire and large roomes with as goodly a prospect of the lande and sea as maye be deuysed, seemeth vnto me so magnificall and princely that your maiestie maye bee as well lodged therein as in any of the mooste exquisite builded houses of Spayne. There is also a Cathedrall church buylded of late where aswell the byshop accordyng to his dignitie, as also the canones are wel indued. This church is wel buylded of stone and lyme, and of good woorkemanshyppes. There are furthermore three monasteries bearyng the name of faynt Dominike, faynt Frances, and faynt Marie of Mercedes: The whiche are all well buylded although not so curiouslye as they of Spayne. But speakyng without preiudice of any other religious monasterie, your maiestie maye bee well assured that in these three monasteries, god is as well serued as in any other religious house with men of holy luyng and vertuous exemple. There is also a very good hospitall for the ayde and succour of pore people, whiche was founde by Michaell Passament threafurer to your maiestie. To conclude, this cite from day to day increafeth in welth and good order, aswel for that the sayde Admyrall and viceroy with the lorde Chaunceloure and counsaile appoynted there by your maiestie, haue theyr continuall abydyng here, as also that the ryche men of the Ilande refort hyther for theyr moste commodious habitacion and trade of such marchaundies as are eyther brought owt of Spayne or sent thither from this Iland which nowe so abundeth in many thynges that it ferueth Spayne with many commodities, as it were with vsury requityng such benefites as it fyrst receaued from thenfe.

The riuer Ozama

The hauen

A cathedrall
churche and
monasteris in
Hispaniola.

An hospitale.

The people

The people of this Ilande are commonlye of sumewhat lesse stature then are the Spanyardes, and of a shynyng or cleare browne coloure. They haue wyues of theyr owne, and absteyne from theyr dowghters, systers, and mothers. They haue large foreheades, longe blacke heare, and no beardes or heare in any other

parts of theyr bodies aswel men as women, excepte very fewe as perhaps scarfely one amonge a thousand. They go as naked as they were borne, excepte that on the partes which may not with honestie bee seene, they weare a certeyne leafe as brode as a mans hande, which neuerthelesse is not kepte clofe with fuche diligence but that sumtymes a man may see that they thynke sufficiently hydde.

In this Ilande are certeyne glo woormes that shyne in the nyght as doo owres. But are muche bygger and gyue a greater lyght: In so much that when the men of the Ilande goo any iorneyes in the nyght, they beare fumme of these woormes made fast about theyr fiete and beade, in fuche forte that he that shulde see them a farre and ignorant of the thinge, wolde bee greatly astonysht therat. By the lyght of these also, the women woork in their houfes in the night. These woormes they caule *Cicuas*. Their lyght lasteth for the space of three dayes, and diminisheth as they begynne to drye vp.

There is also a kynde of crows whose breath flynketh in the mornyng and is sweete at after noone. The excremente which they auoyde, is a lyuyng worme.

As touchyng other thynges of this Ilande whereof Peter Martyr hath more largely intreated in his Decades, I haue thought it superfluous to repeate the same ageyne owte of this hystorie of *Gonzalus Ferdinandus*: but haue here gathered only fuche thynges as eyther are not touched of Peter Martyr or not so largely declared: as I haue doone the lyke in all other notable thynges which I haue collected owt of this Summarie of *Gonzalus*.

¶ Of the Ilande of Cuba and other.



Of the Ilande of Cuba and the other, as the Ilandes of *Sancti Iohannis* and *Jamaica*, the same maye be sayde in maner in all thynges as before of *Hispaniola* although not so largely. Yet in lesse quantitie doo they bryng forth the lyke thynges: as gold, copper, cattayle, trees, plantes, fyshes, and such other of the which wee haue spoken there.

In Cuba, is a certeyne kynde of Partyches beinge verye little, with theyr fethers much of the colour of turtle doones: but are of muche better taste to bee eaten. They are taken in great number. And beinge brought wyld into the houfes, they becomm as tame within the space of three or foure dayes as though they had byn hatched there. They becomm excedyng fatte in short space, and are doubtlesse the most delicate and pleasaunt meate that euer I haue eaten. But to let passe many other thynges that myght here bee sayde, and to speake of two maruelous thynges which are in this Iland of Cuba: wherof the one is, that a valley conteynyng two or three leaques in length betwene two mountaynes, is full of a kynde of very harde stoness of fuche perfecte roundenesse and lyke vnto pelletes of gunnes that no arte can make better or more exactly pollyshed. Of these, sum are as smaule as pelletes for handegunnes: and other so increasyng bygger and bygger from that quantitie, that they may serue for all fortes of artyllerie although they bee of byggenesse to receaue one or two or more quintales of pouder, every quintale conteynyng one hundreth weyght: or of what other quantitie so euer they bee. These pelletes are founde through owte al the valley within the earth as in a myne, which they digge and take owte such as they neede of all fortes.

The other marueylous thinge of this Iland is this: That farre from the sea, there issheweth owte of a mountayne a certeyne lycour much lyke the cley of Babilon cauled *Bitumen* or lyke vnto pytche in great quantitie and such as is very commodious for the calkyng of shyppes. This fauleth continually from the rocke and runneth into the sea in fuche abundaunce that it is seene flotyng aboute the water on euery side of the sea there about as it is dryuen frome place to place by the wynde or course of the water.

Quintus Curtius wryteth in his hystorie, that great Alexander came to the cite of *Memi* where is a great cane or denne in the which is a spryng or fountayne that continually auoydethe a great quantitie of *Bitumen* in such fort that it is an easy thing to beleue that the stoness of the walles of Babilon myght bee layde therwith accordyng as the sayde auctoure wryteth. I haue seene this myne of *Bitumen*, not only in the Iland of Cuba, but also such an other in newe Spayne, which was found of late in the prouince of *Panuco* where it is much better then the other of Cuba, as I haue seene by experience in calkyng of shyppes.

Glo woormes

213

Crows stynkyng and sweete.

Saynt Iohn his Ilande. *Jamaica*.

Partiches.

Pelletes for gunnes wrought by nature.

A fountayne of the pytche of *Bitumen*.

Quintus Curtius
Bitumen of Babilon.

Panuco.

¶ Of the lande of Bacoaleos cauled Terra Baccalearum, situate on the North syde of the firme lande.



Shortly after that your Maiestie came to the cite of Toledo, there arryued in the moneth of Nouember, Steuen Gomes the pylot who the year before of 1524. by the commaundement of your maiestie sayled to the Northe partes and founde a greate parte of lande continuate from that which is cauled *Baccaleos* discourfyng towards the West to the xl. and. xli. degree, from whense he brought certeyne Iudians (for so caule wee all the nations of the new founde landes) of the whiche he brought sum with hym from thense who are yet in Toledo at this present, and of greater stature then other of the firme lande as they are commonlye. Theyr colour is much lyke th[e]other of the firme lande. They are great archers, and go couered with the skinnes of dyuers beastes both wylde and tame. In this lande are many excellent fures, as martens, fables, and such other rych fures of the which the fayde pilote brought summe with hym into Spayne. They haue syluer and copper, and certeyne other metalles. They are Idolaters and honoure the foonne and moone, and are seduced with fuche superstitions and errors as are they of the firme.

And to haue wrytten thus muche, it maye suffice of fuche thinges as haue semed to me most woorthy to be noted in the Summarie of *Gonzalus Ferdinandus* wrytten to Th[e]emperours maiestie

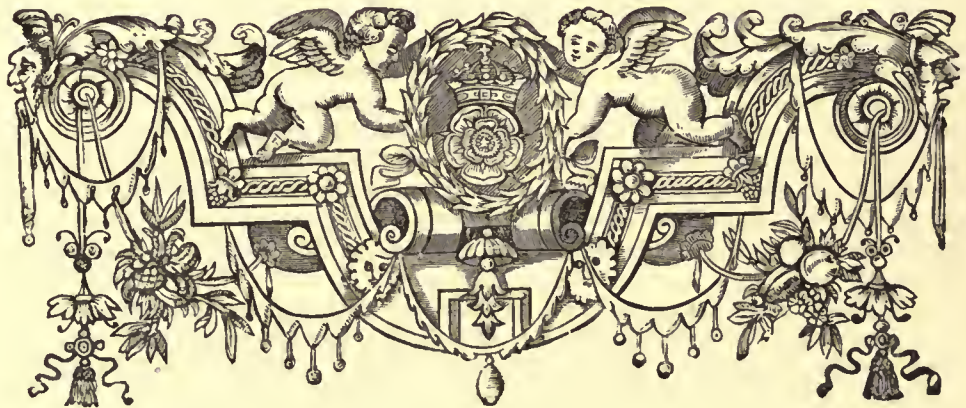
Baccaleos.

214

Indians.

Ryche fures and syluer.

Idolaters.



[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

—o—

SECTION III.

Antonio Pigafetta.

*The first Circumnavigation of the Globe, by Fernam de
Magalhaens's Expedition, in 1519-22.*

First printed in 1526.]

OF OTHER NOTABLE THYNGES GATHERED OWTE OF DYUERS AUTOURS:

AND FYRSTE OF THE VNIVERSAL CARDE AND NEWE WORLDE.



The hole globe or compase of the earth was dyuyded by the auncient wryters into three partes, as *Europa*, *Affrica*, and *Asia*: whiche partes conteyne in longitude. 180. degrees, begynnyng the fyrst degree at the Ilandes of Canarie. And conteyne in latitude towarde the North. 63. degrees, begynnyng the fyrste degree frome the Equinoctiall: And. 10. degrees towarde the South. All the reste of the longitude which conteyneth other. 180. degrees, is discovered of late tyme, as the West India cauled the newe worlde, bycause none of the owlde autoures had any knowelege or made any mention therof. All that

therefore is cauled newe which is Westwarde from the Ilandes of Canarie. And thus accomptyng these. 180. degrees towarde the East discovered in owlde tyme, with the other. 180. degrees discovered of late dayes, they make, 360. degrees, which is al the circle of the Equinoctiall in the sphere. Also the part about the. 63. degrees of the North latitude, was founde by men of late tyme, as Norway and Grutlande with many other prouinces. Lykewise the part more south then. 10. degrees of latitude, was discovered of late dayes, although Ariane and Plinie fay that it was knowen in owlde tyme: whiche yf it were, yet had they no suche particular description thereof as we haue in these dayes.

West India the
newe worlde.

The circumference
of the Equinoctiall
lyne.

The North
regions.

The South
regions.

A DISCOVRSE OF THE VYAGE
MADE BY THE SPANYARDES
ROVNDE ABOWTE THE WORLDE.



Don Peter Martyr.

Rome sacked

A day lost in three
yeares and one
moneth.

215

Antonie Pigafetta.

Jacobus Faber.

He vyage made by the Spanyardes rownde about the worlde is one of the greatest and moſte marueylous thynges that hath bynne knowen to owre tyme. And although in many thynges we excell owre aunciente prediceſſours, in this eſpeciallye wee ſo farre exceade all theyr inuentions, that the lyke hath not heretofore byn knowen to this day. This viage was written particularly by Don Peter Martyr of Angleria being one of the counſayle of Th[e]mperours Indies, to whom alſo was commytted the wrytyng of the hystorie and examination of al ſuche as returned from theſe into Spayne to the citie of Siuile, in the yeare. M. D. xxii. But ſendynge it to Rome to bee prynted in that miſerable tyme when the citie was ſacked it was loſte and not founde to this day or any memory remaynyng therof, ſauynge ſuche as ſum that redde the ſame haue borne in mynde. And amonge other notable thynges by hym wrytten as touchynge that vyage, this is one, that the Spanyardes hauynge ſayled about three yeares and one moneth, and the moſt of them notynge the dayes, day by day (as is the maner of all them that ſayle by the Ocean) they founde when they were returned to Spayne, that they had loſte one daye: So that at theyr arryuall at the porte of Siuile beinge the ſeuenth day of September, was by theyr accompt but the fixth day. And where as Don Peter Martyr declared the ſtrange effecte of this thyng to a certeyne excellent man who for his ſinguler lernynge was greatly aduanced to honoure in his common welthe and made Th[e]mperours ambafadoure, this woorthy gentelman who was alſo a greate Philoſopher and Aſtronomer, anſwered that it coulde not otherwyſe chaunce vnto them hauynge ſayled three yeares continually, euer ſolowynge the ſoonne towarde the Weſt. And ſayde furthermore that they of owlde tyme obſerued that all ſuche as ſayled behinde the ſoonne towarde the Weſt, dyd greatly lengthen the day. And albeit that the ſayde booke of Peter Martyr is peryſhed, yet hath not fortune permitted that the memorie of ſo woorthy and marueylous an enterpryſe ſhulde vtterly bee extincte: forasmuch as a certeyne noble gentleman of the cytie of Vincenza in Italie, cauled maſter Antonie Pigafetta (who beinge one of the companye of that vyage and after his returne into Spayne in the ſhypp Victoria, was made knyght of the Rhodes) wrote a particular and large booke therof which he gaue to Th[e]mperours Maieſtie, and ſente a coppie of the ſame into Fraunce to the lady Regente moother vnto the frenche kynge, who committed it to an excellent philoſopher cauled maſter *Jacobus Faber*, hauynge longe ſtudyed in Italy, wyllynge him to translate it

into the Frenche toonge. This booke therefore was printed fyrst in the frenche toonge and then in the Italien, with also an epistle to the Cardinall of Salfepurge as touchynge the same viage, written by Maximiliane Transiluane secretarie to Th[e]emperours Maiestie, in the yeare. 1522. And doubtlesse amonge al the cities of Italie, the cite of Vicenza may herein much glorie, that beside the ancient nobilitie and many excellent and rare wyttes whiche it hath browght furth aswell in learnynge as discipline of warre, it hath also had so woorthy and valiaunt a gentleman as was the fayde master Antonie Pigafetta, who hauing compafed abowte the ball or globe of the worlde, hath lykewyse described that vyage particularly. For the whiche his so noble and woonderfull an enterprife so happily atchiued, if the same had byn doone in the owlde tyme when th[e]empyre of the Grekes and Romans florysshed, he shulde doubtlesse haue byn rewarded with an Image of marble or golde erected in a place of honoure in perpetuall memorie and for a singlar exemple of his vertue to the posteritie. In fine, this may we bouldly affirme, that the antiquitie had neuer such knowlege of the worlde whiche the soonne coompaseth abowte in. xxiiii. houres, as we haue at this presente by th[e]industrye of men of this owre age. But before I speake any thyng of the viage, I haue thought it good fyrst to adde hereunto, the Epistle of Maximilian Transiluane which he wrote to the Cardinall of Salfepurge as a preface to his fayde booke.

Maximilian
Transiluane

The rewarde of
noble enterpryses.

The antiquitie had
no suche knowlege
of the worlde as
we haue.

¶ THE EPISTLE OF MAXIMILIAN TRANSILVANE,

SECRETARIE TO THE EMPEROVRS MAIESTIE:

wrytten to the ryght honorable and reuerende lorde,

the lorde Cardinall of Salfepurge, of the maruey-

lous and woonderfull nauigation made by the

Spanyardes rounde abowt the worlde in

the yeare of Christ. M. D. xix.



IN these daies my most honorable and reuerend lorde, returned one of those fiue shippes which the yeare before Th[e]emperours beinge at Saragofa in Spayne, were at his maiesties commaundement sent to the newe worlde heretofore vnknown vnto vs, to seeke the Ilandes of spices. For albeit the Portugales brynge vs great quantitie of spyces from that parte of Easte India whiche in owlde tyme was cauled *Aurea Chersonesus* (where is nowe thought to bee the greate and ryche cite of *Malaccha*) yet in Easte India growe none of those spices excepte pepper. For other spices, as Sinamome, cloues, nutmegges, and mase, (whiche is the huske that couereth the shell of the nutte) are brought frome other farre con-

The Ilandes of
Molucca.

*Aurea
Chersonesus.
Malaccha.*

Spices.

treys and from Ilandes scarcely knowne by theyr names. From the whiche Ilandes they are brought in shyps or barkes made without any iren tooles, and tyed together with

cordes of date trees: with rounde fayles lykewise made of the fmaule twigges of the branches of date trees weaued togyther. These barkes they caule *Giunche*: with the whiche barkes and fayles they make theyr vyages with onely one wynde in the stearne or contrarywyfe.

Neyther yet is it a thyng greatly to bee marueyled at that these Ilandes where the spyces growe haue byn vnknownen so many worldes past vnto owre tyme, forasmuch as all such thynges as vnto this day haue byn wrytten of owld autours of the places where spices growe, are all fabulous and false: In so muche that the countreys where they affirme theym to growe, are nowe certeynely founde to bee further frome the place where they growe in deede, then we are from them. For lettynge passe many other thynges that are wrytten, I wyll speake only of this which *Herodotus* (otherwise a famous auctour) affirmeth that Sinamome, is founde in the toppes of the nestes of certeyne byrdes and foules that brynge it frome farre countreys, and especially the Phenyx, the which I knowe no man that euer hath seene. But Plinie who myght more certeynely affirme thynges by reason that before his tyme many thynges were knownen and discouered by the nauigations of great Alexander and other, sayth that Sinamome groweth in that parte of Ethiope whiche the people inhabite cauled *Trogloditi*. Neuerthelesse it is nowe founde that Sinamome groweth very farre from all Ethiope and muche further frome the *Trogloditi* whiche dwell in caues vnder the grounde. But to owre men which are nowe returned from those partes and the Ilandes of spices, hauynge also good knowlege of Ethiope, it was necessarie to passe farre beyonde Ethiope beefore they coome to these Ilandes, and to compasse abowte the whole worlde, and many tymes vnder the greateft circumference of heauen. The which nauigation made by them, being the most marueylous thyng that euer was doone by man vpon the earth fence the fyrst creation of the worlde, and neuer founde before, or knownen, or attempted by any other, I haue deliberated faythfully to wryte to yowre honorable lordshippe and to declare the hole successe therof. As touchynge which matter, I haue with all diligence made inquisition to knowe the trewth aswell by relation of the Capitayne of that shyppe as also by conference with euery of the maryners that returned with hym. All which, gaue the self same information both to Th[e]mperours maiestie and dyuers other: And this with such faythfulnesse and sinceritie, that not only they are iudged of all men to haue declared the trewth in all thynges, but haue thereby also gyuen vs certeyne knowlege that all that hath hytherto byn fayde or written of owld autours as touchynge these thynges, are false and fabulous. For who wyll beleue that men are found with only one legge. Or with such fiete whose shadowe couereth theyr bodyes? Or men of a cubite heyght, and other such lyke, beinge rather monsters then men? Of the which, neyther the Spanyardes who in owre tyme faylyng by the Ocean sea, haue discouered al the coastes of the lande toward the West both vnder and aboue the Equinoctiall, nor the Portugales who compassyng abowt al Affryke haue passed by all the Easte and lykewyse discouered all those coastes vnto the great goulfe cauled *Sinus Magnus*, nor yet the Spanyardes in this theyr laste nauigation, in the which they compased abowt the hole earth, dyd neuer in any of their vyages wryte of such monsters: which doubtlesse they wold not haue omittted if they myght haue had certeyne knowlege therof. But nowe intendynge to speake of the whole world, I wyll not bee longe in my preface, but begynne my narration as foloweth.

The Ilandes of
Spices vnknownen
in owld tyme.

216

Herodotus.
Sinamome.
The Phenyx.

Plinie

The nauigations of
greate Alexander.
Ethiope.

Trogloditi.

The nauigation
abowte the worlde.

The owld
autours reprinted.

Monsters.
The vyages of the
Spanyardes and
Portugales.

Sinus Magnus.

A BRIEFE DECLARATION OF THE VYAGE OR NAVIGATION MADE ABOWTE THE WORLDE.

GATHERED OWT OF A LARGE BOOKE WRYTTEN HEREOF BY

MASTER ANTONIE PYGAFETTA VINCENTINE, KNYGHT OF THE RHODES

and one of the coompanye of that vyage in the which,

Ferdinando Magalianes a Portugale (whom

fum caule *Magellanus*) was generall

Capitayne of the nauie.



Although Sebastian Munster in his vniuerfall Cosmographie in the fyfthe booke of the landes of the greater Asia (which I translated into Englyshe abowte two yeares fence) hath wrytten of the vyage of *Magellanus*, declarynge therein howe the Spanyardes by the West, and the Portugales by the Easte, saylyng to the Ilandes of *Molucca*, compased the hole globe of the worlde betwene them, yet haue I here thought it good to make a breefe repeticion of thys vyage, addyng hereunto dyuers notable thynges which were not touched of Munster, as I haue gathered them owt of the bookes of Antonie Pigafetta and Transiluanus wrytten of the same vyage. For albeit in deede it was a fraunge

and woonderful thyng that the Spanyardes and Portugales compased the hole circumference of the worlde betwene them, yet is it more marueylous that the same was doone with one shippe and one coompanye of men as dyd the Spanyardes in this vyage, who keepyng their continuall course by the Weste, returned into Spayne by the Easte. A thyng doubtlesse so much more woonderfull and strange then yf they had returned from the halfe circumference by the same way they went. In howe muche they were ignorante in the vyage neuer attempted beefore, befyde the thousande daungiors and perylles whiche they were daylye lyke to faule into, aswell by wanderyng in vnknown coastes as also by faulyng into the handes of the Portugales by whose dominions in the Easte, they shulde needes passe of necessitie, not trustyng to theyr gentelnesse for the controuersie which had byn longe betwene them for the Ilandes of *Molucca*. I wyll therefore (as I haue fayde) make a briefe rehearfall of thys vyage from the begynnyng to the endyng: Omyttyng neuerthelesse many notable thynges whiche are more largely described in the bookes of *Maximilianus Transiluanus* and *Antonius Pigafetta*.

Sebastian Munster.

The Ilandes of
Molucca.

217

Controuersie
betwene the
Spanyardes and
Portugales.

Ferdinando Magalianes. The tenth day of August, in the yeare of owre lorde M. D. xix. Ferdinando Magalianes departed from the porte of Siuile in Spayne with a nauie of fyue shippes and two hundreth thirtie and feuen men, wel furnysshed with all thynge necessarie. And faylinge fyrste downe by the ryuer of *Guadalchiber* which runneth from the fayde porte into the sea, they came fyrste to a place named *Giouan Duffaraz* where are manye vyllages of the Moores: And from thenfe arryued at a castel of the Duke of *Medina Sidonia*, where is the porte from whiche they enter into the sea and to the cape faynte Vincent beinge distant from the Equinoctiall. xxxvii. degrees, and frome the fayde port. x. leaques, and is from thenfe to Siuile betwene xvii. and. xx. leaques. Here they remayned certeyne dayes to make newe prouision of such thynge as they lacked.

The Cape of saynt Vincent

The Ilandes of Canarie. Water engendered of a clowde.

Departynge from henfe the. xx. daye of September, they arryued the. xxvi. day of the same moneth at one of the Ilandes Canarie cauled *Tenerife*, beinge. xxv. degrees about the Equinoctiall. In one of these Ilandes is none other water but that is continually engendered of a clowde which appeareth dayly at noone tyde as though it descended from heauen and compaseth about a certeyne great tree from whose branches distilleth greate abundaunce of water, and faulethe in streames from the roote of the same into certeyne trenches and cesternes made and placed to receaue it. This water serueth sufficiently all th[e] inhabitants and cattayle of the Ilande. The lyke thynge is also feene in the Iland of faynt Thomas, lyinge directly vnder the Equinoctiall lyne.

The Iland of saynt Thomas.

Capo verde.

The thyrde day of October about mydnyght, the capytayne commaunded theym to lyght fyrebrandes and to hoyste vp theyr sayles directynge theyr course towarde the South, faylinge betwene *Capo Verde* of Affryke and the Ilandes lyinge about the same, beinge from the Equinoctiall. xiii. degrees and a halfe. They sayled thus, manye dayes in the fyght of the coaste of *Guinea*, of Ethiope, where is the mountayne cauled *Serra Liona* beinge. viii. degrees about the Equinoctiall. In this coast they had no maner of contrary wynds but a great calme and fayre wether for the space of threecore and tenne dayes, in the which they came vnder the Equinoctiall lyne. In this vyage they sawe many straunge fysshes and monsters of the sea beyde an other straunge thynge whiche appeared vnto them. For there appeared in theyr shippes certeyne flames of fyre burnynge verry cleare, which they caul faynt Helen and faynt Nicolas. These appeared as though they had byn vpon the mast of the shippes, in such clearnesse that they tooke away theyr fyght for the space of a quarter of an houre: by reason wherof, they so wandered owte of theyr course and were disparfed in funder, that they in maner dispayred to meete ageyne. But as God wolde, the sea and tempest beinge quieted, they came safely to theyr determyned course.

Guinea in Ethyope. *Serralliona.*

Fysshes and monsters of the sea.

The fyers of saynts Helene and S. Nicolas. A tempest.

The naturall cause of such fyers as faule in the shypes.

And before I speake any further of the vyage, I haue here thought good to faye fumewhat of these straunge fyers, which sum ignorant folkes thynke to bee spirites or suche other phantasies wheras they are but natural thynge procedynge of natural causes and engendered of certeyne exhalations. Of these therefore, the greate Philosopher of owre tyme *Hieronimus Cardanus* in his seconde booke *de Subtilitate*, wryteth in this maner.

Cardanus.

Two kyndes of fyers engendered of exhalations.

Trewe fyer and false fyer.

There are two maner of fyers engendered of exhalations wherof the one is hurtfull and the other without hurte. That which is hurtful, is fyer in deede, engendered of malicious and venomous vapours which in successe of time take fyre as apt matters to be kyndeled. The other kynd, is no trewe fyre, but lyke the matter that is in such owld putrifid wod as giueth the shynynge of fyre without the substauce or qualitie therof. Of the kynde of trewe fyre, is the fyre baule or starre commonly cauled faynt Helen which is sumtyme feene about the mastes of shippes, beinge of fuche fyery nature that it sumtyme melteth brafen vesselles, and is a token of drownynge, forasmuch as this chaunceth only in great tempestes. For the vapoure or exhalation whereof this fyre is engendered, can not bee dryuen togyther or compacte in forme of fyre, but of a grose vapoure and by a great poure of wynde, and is therefore a token of imminent perell: As on the contrary parte, the lyke fyers cauled in owlde tyme *Castor* and *Pollux* and nowe named the two lyghtes of faynt Peter and faynt Nycolas whiche for the most parte faule on the cables of the shippes, leapyng from one to an other with a certeyne flutterynge noyse lyke byrdes, are a token of securitie and of the tempeste ouerpasse. For they are but vapoures cleaunge to the cables: which in successe of tyme, the fyre passynge from one to an other, appere in the similitude of a lyght candell. They are a token of securitie bycause they are lyttle, nor floue or groffe, wherby they myght haue ioyned altogyther in one, and byn thereby more malicious and lasted longer, wheras beinge many and but lyttle, they are the sooner consumed.

218

Castor and Pollux. The lyghtes of saynt Peter and saynte Nycolas.

Hetherto *Cardanus*. But let vs nowe returne to the vyage.

They lost the syght of the North starre.

The lande of Bresile.

The South pole.

Sugau.

When they had sayled paste the Equinoctiall lyne, they lost the fyght of the north starre, and sayled by southweste vntyll they came to a lande named the lande of *Bressil* whiche sum caule *Brasilis*, beinge. xxii. degrees and a halfe toward the south pole or pole Antartyke. This lande is continuat and one firme lande with the cape of faynte Augustine whiche is. viii. degrees from the Equinoctiall. In this lande they were refreshd with many good frutes of innumerable kindes, and founde here also very good fugar canes and diuers kyndes of beastes and other thynge which I omitte for breuitie. They entered into this hauen on faynt Lucies

day: where the sonne beinge there *Zenith* (that is the poynt of heauen directly ouer theyr heades) they felte greater heate that daye then when they were vnder the Equinoctiall line. This lande of Brasile is very large and great: and bygger then all Spayne, Portugale, Fraunce, and Italie: and is moſte abundaunte in all thynges. The people of this cuntry praye to noo maner of thinge: but liue by th[e] instincte of nature, and to th[e] iage of. C. xx. [one hundred and twenty] and. C. xl. [one hundred and forty] yeares. Bothe the men and women go naked, and dwell in certeyne longe houſes. They are very docible, and foone allured to the Chryſtian fayth.

Therteene dayes after that they arryued at the ſayd port, they departed from this lande and ſayled to the xxxiiii. degree and a halfe toward the pole Antartike where they found a great ryuer of freſſhe water and certeyne Canibales. Of theſe they ſawe one owt of theyr ſhyppes, of ſtature as bigge as a giante, hauynge a voyce lyke a bul. Owre men purſued them, but they were ſo ſwyfte of foote that they coulde not ouertake them. About the mouth of this ryuer, are ſeuē Ilandes, in the byggeſt wherof, they founde certeyne precious ſtones, and cauled it the cape of faynt Marie. The Spanyardes thought that by this ryuer they might haue paſſed into the ſouth ſea. But they were deceaued in theyr opinion. For there was none other paſſage then by the ryuer which is. xvii. leaques large in the mouth.

Thus folowyng this coaſte by the tracte of the lande toward the pole Antartyke, they came to a place where were two Ilandes replenyſhed with giſſe and woolues of the ſea which ſum thynke to bee thoſe fyſſhes that wee caule pikes. Theſe were in ſuch number that in an houre all the fyue ſhippes myght haue byn lade with giſſe beinge all of blacke coloure, and ſuch as can not flye. They lyue of fyſſhe and are ſo fatte that they coulde ſcarſely ſte them. They haue noo fethers but a certeyne downe: and theyr byls like rauens byls. Theſe woolues of the ſea are of dyuers coloures, and of the byggenesse of calues, with theyr heades of golden coloure. Here were they in great daungour by tempeſt. But as ſoone as the three fyers cauled faynte Helen, faynte Nycolas, and faynt Clare, appered vpon the cabels of the ſhyppes, ſuddeynely the tempeſte and furye of the wyndes ceaſed.

Departynge frome henſe, they ſayled to the. 49. degree and a halfe vnder the pole Antartyke: where beinge wyntered, they were inforced to remayne there for the ſpace of two monethes, all which tyme they ſawe no man except that one daye by chaunce they eſpyed a man of the ſtature of a giante, who came to the hauen daunſyng and ſyngynge, and ſhortly after ſeemed to caſt duſt ouer his heade. The capitayne ſente one of his men to the ſhore with the ſhyppes boate, who made the lyke ſigne of peace. The which thyng the giante ſeinge, was owt of feare and came with the capitaynes ſeruaunte to his preſence into a lyttle Ilande. When he ſawe the capitayne with certeyne of his company abowte hym, he was greatly amaſed and made ſignes holdynge vpe his hande to heauen, ſignifyng therby that owre men came from thenſe. This giante was ſo bygge, that the heade of one of our men of a meane ſtature, came but to his waſte. He was of good corporature and well made in all the partes of his bodie, with a large vyſage paynted with dyuers coloures, but for the moſt parte yelow. Vpon his cheekes were paynted two hartes, and redde circles about his eyes. The heare of his headde was coloured whyte, and his apparell was the ſkynne of a beaſte ſowde togyther. This beaſte (as ſeemed vnto them) had a large heade and great eares lyke vnto a mule, with the body of a camel and tayle of a horſe. The feete of the giant were ſouled in the ſkynne after the maner of ſhoos. He had in his hande, a bygge and ſhorte bowe, the ſtrynge whereof was made of a ſynewe of that beaſte. He had alſo a bundell of longe arrowes made of reedes fethered after the maner of owrs, typte with ſharpe ſtones in the ſtede of iren heades. The Capitayne cauled him to eate and drynke, and gaue him many thynges, and amonge other a greate lookynge glaſſe: In the which as ſoone as he ſawe his owne likeneſſe, was ſuddeynly afrayde and ſtarted backe with ſuch violence that he ouerthrewe two that ſtoode neareſt abowte hym. When the Capitayne had thus gyuen hym certeyne haukes belles and other great belles, with alſo a lookynge glaſſe, a combe, and a payre of beades of glaſſe, he ſente hym to lande with foure of his owne men well armed.

Shortely after, they ſawe an other giante of ſumewhat greater ſtature, with his bowe and arrowes in his hande, As he drewe neare vnto owre menne, he layde his hande on his heade and poynted vp toward heauen, and our men dyd the lyke. The Capitayne ſente his ſhyppes boate to bryng him to a lyttle Ilande beinge in the hauen. This giante was very tractable and pleaſaunt. He ſoonge and daunſed: and in his daunſyng leſte the printe of his feete on the grownde. He remayned longe with owre men who named hym *Iohan*. He coulde wel ſpeake and playnely pronounce theſe wordes: *Ieſus: Aue Maria, Iohannes*, euen as we doo, but with a bygger voyce. The capitayne gaue hym a ſhirt of linnen clothe, and a coate of whyte woollen clothe: Alſo a cappe, a combe, a lookynge glaſſe, with dyuers fuche other thynges, and ſo ſente hym to his company. The day folowyng, he reforted ageyne to the ſhyppes, and brought with hym one of thoſe greate beaſtes, which he gaue the capitayne. But after that daye they neuer ſawe hym more, ſuppofynge hym to bee ſlayne of his owne company for the conuerſation he had with owre men.

After other. xv. dayes were paſte, there came foure other gigantes without any weapons, but had hydde theyr bowes and arrowes in certeyne buſſhes. The capitayne retheyned two of theſe whiche were youngeſt and

The greateneſſe of the land of Brasile.

Canibales.
Giantes.

Insula gemmarum.
Cap[e] S. Marie.

The pole
Antartike.
Geese.
Sea woolues

The. xlix. degree
of the ſouth pole.

Giantes

219
The bygnes of the
giants.

An other giante.

Foure other
giantes.

Two gigantes are taken by a pollicie.

The deuyl Setebos.

Deuyls appere to the gigantes when they dye.

Patagoni. 220

The gigantes feedyng.

They conspire ageynst theyr Capitayne.

Confession.

The straight of Magellanus.
The South sea.

Mare pacificum.

The gigantes died for heat.

Capo Desiderato

Short nighte in the moneth of October.

Flying fyshes

The gigantes language.

The gyant is baptised.

Three monethes saylyng without the syght of lande.
Extreme famen.

beste made. He tooke them by a deceyte in this maner, that gyuynge them knyues, sheares, lookynge glaffes, belles, beades of cryfall, and fuche other tryfels, he so fylled theyr handes that they coulde hold no more. Then caufed two payre of shackels of iren to bee put on theyr legges, makynge signes that he wold also gyue them those chaynes: which they lyked very wel by caufe they were made of bryght and shynynge metal. And wheras they could not cary them bycaufe theyr handes were full, the other gyantes wolde haue caryed them: but the Capitayne wolde not fuffer them. When they felte the shackels faste abowte theyr legges, they begunne to doubt: but the Capitayne dyd put them in comferte and badde them stande styll. In fine when they sawe how they were deceaued they rored lyke bulles and cryed vppon theyr greate deuyl *Setebos* to helpe them. Being thus taken, they were immediatly seperate and put in fundry shyppes. They coulde neuer bynde the handes of the other two. Yet was one of them with much difficulte ouerthrowne by nyne of owre men, and his handes bownde: but he suddely loofed hym selfe and fledde, as dyd also the other that came with them. In theyr flying, they shot of theyr arrowes and slewe one of owre men. They say that when any of them dye, there appere. x. or. xii. deuyls leapyng and daunfynge about the bodye of the deade, and seeme to haue theyr boddyes paynted with dyuers colours. And that amonge other, there is one feene bygger then the residue, who maketh great mirth and reioyfynge. This greate deuyl they caule *Setebos*, and caule the lesse *Chelcule*. One of these gigantes which they toke, declared by signes that he had feene deuyls with two hornes about theyr heades, with longe heare downe to theyr feete: And that they cast furth fyre at theyr throtes both before and behynde. The Capitayne named these people *Patagoni*. The most part of them weare the skynnes of fuche beastes wherof I haue spoken before: And haue no houfes of continuaunce, but maketh certeyne cotages whiche they couer with the fayde skynnes, and cary them from place to place. They lyue of raw flesshe and a certeyne sweete roote whiche they caule *Capar*. One of these which they had in theyr shippes, dyd eate at one meale a basket of byskette, and drunke a bowle of water at a draughte.

They remayned fyue monethes in this porte of faint Iulian, where certeyne of the vnder capitaynes conspyrynge the death of theyr general, were hanged and quartered: Amonge whom the treafurer Luigo of Mendoza was one. Certeyne of the other conspiratours, he left in the fayd land of *Patagoni*

Departyng from hense to the. 52. degree toward the pole Antartike lackynge a thyrde parte, where they founde a ryuer of fresshe water and good fyssh. Theyr shyppes were here in great daungour. They remayned twoo monethes in this porte where they made newe prouision of fresshe water, fuell, and fyssh. Here the Capitayne caufed all his men to bee confessed.

Approchynge to the. 52. degrees, they founde the straight nowe cauled the fraight of Magellanus, beinge in fum place. C. x. [one hundred and ten] leaques in length: and in breadth fumwhere very large and in other places lyttle more then halfe a leaque in bredth. On both the fydes of this strayght, are great and hygh mountaynes couered with snowe, beyonde the whiche is the enteraunce into the fea of *Sur*. This enteraunce the Capitayne named *Mare Pacificum*. Here one of the shyppes stole away priuillie and returned into Spaine. In this was one of the gigantes who dyed as foone as he felt the heate that is abowte the Equinoctiall lyne.

When the Capitayne *Magalianes* was past the fraight and sawe the way open to the other mayne fea, he was so gladd therof that for ioy the teares fell from his eyes, and named the poynt of the lande from whense he fyrst sawe that fea, *Capo Desiderato*.

Supposing that the shyp which stole away had byn losse, they erected a crosse vppon the top of a hyghe hyll to directe their course in the straight yf it were their chauce to coome that way. They founde that in this strayght in the moneth of October the nyght was not past foure houres longe. They found in this strayght at euery three myles, a safe hauen and excellent water to drynke: woodde also and fyssh, and greate plentie of good herbes. They thynke that there is not a fayrer strayght in the worlde. Here also they sawe certeyne flyinge fyshes.

The other gigante which remayned with them in the shyp, named breade *Capar*: water, Oli: redde clothe, *Cherecai*: red colour, *Cheiche*: blacke colour, *Amel*: And spoke al his wordes in the throte. On a tyme, as one made a crosse before him and kyffed it, shewynge it vnto hym, he suddely cryed *Setebos*, and declared by signes that if they made any more crosses, *Setebos* wold enter into his body and make him brust. But when in fine he sawe no hurte coome thereof, he tooke the crosse and imbrased and kyffed it ostentymes, desyryng that he myght bee a Chrystian before his death. He was therefore baptyfed and named Paule.

Departynge owt of this strayght into the fea cauled *Mare Pacificum* the. xxviii. day of Nouember in the yeare. 1520. they sayled three moonethes and. xx. dayes before they sawe any lande. And hauynge in this tyme consumed all theyr bysket and other vyttayles, they fell into fuche necessitie that they were inforced to eate the poudre that remayned therof beinge nowe full of woormes and flynkynge lyke pyffe by reason of the falte water. Theyr fresshe water was also putryfied and become yelowe. They dyd eate skynnes and pieces of lether which were fouled about certeyne great ropes of the shyps. But these skynnes beinge made verye harde by reason of the foonne, rayne and wynde, they hunge them by a corde in the fea for the space of foure

or fūe dayes to mollife them, and fodde them and eate them. By reason of this famen and vnclene feedynge, fumme of theyr gummes grewe fo ouer theyr teethe, that they dyed miserably for hunger. And by this occasion dyed. xix. men, and also the gigante with an Indian of the lande of Brasile otherwyfe cauled *Terra de papagalli*, that is, the lande of popingiayes. Befyde these that dyed. xxv. or. xxx. were fo sicke that they were not able to doo any feruice with theyr handes or armes for febleness: So that there was in maner none without sum disefafe. In these three monethes and. xx. dayes, they sayled foure thousande leaques in one goulfe by the sayde sea cauled *Pacificum* (that is) peaceable, whiche may well bee fo cauled forasmuch as in all this tyme hauyng no fyght of any lande, they had no misfortune of wynde or any other tempest. Duryng this tyme also, they discouered only two little Ilandes vnhabited, where they sawe nothing but birdes and trees, and therefore named theym infortunate Ilandes, beinge one from the other abowte two hundred leaques distante. The firste of these Ilandes is from the Equinoctial toward the pole Antartike. xv. degrees, and the other fyue. Their failinge was in suche forte that they failed daily betweene. l. [fifty] lx. [sixty] to. lxx. [seuenty] leaques. So that in fine, if god of his mercy had not gyuen them good wether, it was necessary that in this soo greate a sea they shuld all haue dyed for hunger. Whiche neuertheless they escaped soo hardely, that it may bee doubted whether euer the like viage may be attempted with fo good successe.

They confydered in this nauigation that the pole Antartike hath no notable starre after the forte of the pole Artike. But they sawe many starres gathered togyther, whyche are like two clowdes one separate a little from an other, and sum what darke in the myddest. Betweene these, are two starres not very bigge, nor muche shynninge, whiche moue a little: And these two are the pole Antartike. The needell of theyr compasse varied sumwhat, and turned euer towarde the pole Artike. Neuertheless, had no suche force as when it is in these partes of the pole Artike. In so muche that it was necessarye to helpe the needle with the lode ston (commonly cauled the adamant) before they could faile therwith, bycause it moued not as it doothe when it is in these owre partes. When they were in the myddest of the goulfe, they sawe a crosse of fyue cleare starres directly toward the Weste, and of equall distance the one from the other.

The order of the starres about the pole Antartike, fumme haue figured in this maner.



A. The pole Antartike.

B. The Crosse.

In these dayes they sayled betwene the West and South fo farre that they approached to the Equinoctiall line, and were in longitude from the place from whence they fyrst departed, a hundred and twentie degrees. In this courfe they sayled by two Ilandes of exceedynge height, wherof the one named *Cipanghu*, is. xx. degrees from the pole Antartike: And the other named *Sumbdit*. xv. degrees. When they were past the Equinoctiall line, they sayled betwene the West and Southwest at the quarter of the West towarde the Southwest more then a hundred leaques, changinge theyr sayles to the quarter of the Southwest vntyll they came to the. xiii. degrees aboue the Equinoctial towarde the pole Artyke, intending as much as were possible, to approche to the cape cauled of the owlde wryters *Cattigara*: The whiche is not founde as the owlde Cosmographers haue described it, but is towarde the north about. xii. degrees as they afterwarde vnderstode.

When they had thus sayled. lxx. [seuenty] leaques of this

Diseases of famen.

221

Unfortunate Ilandes.

What they sayled dayly

The starres about the south pole.

The needle of the compasse.

The lode ston.

222

The Equinoctial line.

The Ilandes of Cipanghu and Sumbdit

vyage in the. xii. degree about the Equinoctial, and. C.xlvi. [one hundred and forty-fix] degrees of longitude (as I haue fayde) the fyxte day of March they difcouered a lyttle Ilande towarde the northwefte, and two other towarde the fouthwefte: but the one was hygher and bygger then the two other. In the byggest of thefe, the generall capitayne wolde haue refteed hym felfe a whyle: but he coulde not by reafon the people of thefe Ilands reforted continually to the fhippes with theyr canoas, and stole nowe one thyng and nowe an other, in fuch forte that ovr men could take no refte, and therefore demaunded of the capitayne that they myght ftryke theyr fayles to brynge the fhyppes to land. But the Capitayne beinge prouoked to anger, wente alande with fortie armed men, and burnt about fiftie of theyr houfes with many of theyr Canoas: And flew alfo about feuen men, and recouered a fhyppe boate whiche the Barbarians had stolne, and fo departed folowynge his vyage. The Capitayne named thefe Ilands *Infule Latronum*, that is, the Ilands of theeues. When ovr men had fo wounded fumme of theym with arrowes that they were ftryken throughe bothe fydes, they pulled furth the arrowes not ceafyng to marueyle at them tyll they fell downe deade: And yet coulde not the other fo depart, but ftyll folowed the fhyppes with more then two hundreth of theyr boates, approchyng as nere to the fhyppes as they coulde, and proferyng owre men certeyne fyffhes. As the fhyppes paffed with full fayle in the myddefte of theyr boates, they fawe in fum of them certeyne women lamenting and tearyng theyr heare, which owre men thought they did for the death of theyr husbandes. As farre as they could perceauce, thefe people lyue at theyr owne libertie without anye ruler or gouernour. They go naked and haue blacke bearded and blacke heare on theyr heades whiche they weare longe downe to theyr wafes. They are of the fame stature that we are, and well made, of coloure lyke vnto an olyue. Their women are well fauored with blacke and thicke heare on theyr heades reachyng to the grownde. The menne coloure theyr teeth redde and blacke, which they efteeme a comely thyng. They annoynt theyr bodies and heare with the oyle of *Cocus*. Their boates are fum all blacke, fum whyte, and fum redde, and haue fayles made of the broade leaues of date trees fowd togyther. In the fleade of a rudder, they vse a certeyne brode boorde with a staffe in the toppe, and maye when they wyll, make the fterne the forecastell, or the forecastell the fterne. They fayle fo fwyftely that they feeme a farre of, lyke Delphyns fwymmyng about the water.

The tenth day of March, in the yeare. 1521. they wente alande vpon a lyttle Ilande named *Zamal*. xxx. leaques dyftant from the Ilande of theeues. Bycaufe this Ilande was not inhabyted, they refteed here a whyle, where the capitayne caufed a paulion to bee pyched for the ficke and crafed men, and a hogge to bee kyld.

The. xviii. day of Marche, they fawe a boate with nyne men comyng towarde them shewyng them felues ioyfull and reioysyng of theyr comyng. They brought many prefentes with them, and feemed to bee people of much humanitie. They gaue the capitayne a great fyfhe, and a great vefel of the wyne of thofe date trees whiche beare the frute *Cocus*. They made alfo fignes that within the fpace of foure dayes, they wolde bryng ryffe and dyuers foules and beafes as they dyd in deede.

This *Cocus* is a frute of certeyne date trees whereof they make breade, wyne, oyle, and vineger. They make wyne in this maner. They cutte a bygge braunche of the tree, and hange therat a reede as bigge as a mans legge, into the which droppeth a sweete licour from the tree lyke vnto newe whyte wine fumwhat tart, and let the reede continewe there from mornyng tyll euenyng, and from euenyng to mornyng. The frute of this tree cauled *Cocus*, is as bygge as the head of a man or more. The fyrfte rynde of this, is greene and of the thickenesse of two fyngers, hauyng in it certeyne threedes wherof they make cordes with the which they tye theyr boates. Vnder this rynde, there is a thicke fhell whiche they burne and make poudre therof and vse it as a remedie for certeyne difeafes. Vnder this fhell, is a whyte fubftance lyke the carnell of a nutte being a fynger in thickenesse, which they eate with flefthe and fyfhe as wee doo breade. It hath the taste of an almonde, and is vfed in the fleade of breade when it is dried. In the myddeft of this carnell, is a cleare and fweete water, beinge very holfome and cordiale. This water fumtyme congeleth and lyeth within the fhell lyke an egge. When they intende to make oyle hereof, they ley it to putrifie in water, and boyle it vntyll it bee lyke oyle or liquide butter. When they intende to make vineger, they fuffer only the water to putrifie and then fet it to the foonne where it becommeth vineger lyke vnto that which is made of whyte wyne. And when they mengle the carnell with the water which is in the myddeft of the frute, and ftrayne it thorowe a cloth, they make a mylke therof lyke vnto goates mylke. Thefe date trees are lyke vnto them that beare dates, but are not fo full of knottes. With the iuife of two of thefe date trees, a hole famelle of tenne perfons may bee maynteyned with wyne vfyng one. viii. dayes, and the other, other. viii. dayes: for they fhulde els bee dried and wythered. Thefe trees continue for the fpace of a hundreth yeares. This Ilande where they founde this humane and gentell people, is cauled *Zuluan*, and is not verye bygge. About this Ilande they founde manye other Ilandes, and therefore named this fea *Archipelago di San Lazaro*, that is, the great fea of faynte Lazarus, beinge tenne degrees about the Equinoctiall towarde owre pole, and. C. lxi. [one hundred and sixty-one] frome the place from whence they departed. The people of this Ilande are *Caphranita* that is gentyles. They go naked fauyng that they couer theyr priue partes with a clothe made of the rynde of a certeyne tree. The

Insule Latronum

People with longe heare

They coloure theyr teethe.

The Ilande of Zamal.

Wyne of date trees.

The maruelous frute *Cocus*.

223

The Iland of Zuluan.
The sea cauled Archipelago di san Lazaro.
Gentyles.

chiefest men, haue abowte theyr heades a fylken cloth of needle woorke. They are groffe and brode fet and of the coloure of an oliue. They annoynte theyr bodies with the oyle of *Cocus* to defend them ageynst the heate of the soonne and drynesse of the wynde. The xxv. day of Marche, they departed from henfe and directed theyr course betwene the Weste and southwest, and fayled betwene foure Ilandes named *Cenalo*, *Huinanghan*, *Hibuffon*, and *Abarien*. etc.

The xxviii. daye of Marche, they came to the Ilande of *Buthuan* where they were honorably interteyned of the Kyng and the Prince his soonne who gaue them muche golde and spices. The capitayne gaue the kyng a vesture of red clothe and an other of yelow made after the Turkysshe fasshyon, and also a red cappe. And gaue likewise to other that came with hym, certeyne knyues, glasses, and beades of cristalle: After that, the capitayne had shewed the Kyng the secretes of his shippe and fuche marchaundies as he had therin, he caused a piece of ordinaunce suddenly to bee shote of, whereat the kyng was greatly amafed vntil the capitayne comforted hym. Then the Capitayne commaunded one of his men to be armed from the heade to the foote, and caused three other to strike hym with theyr swoordes, whereat the Kyng maruayled greatly, and sayde to th[e]interpretoure (who was a slaue borne in Malacha) that one of those armed men was able to encounter with a hundreth of his men. But he maruayled muche more when the capitaine tould hym by th[e]interpretoure howe he founde the straight by the compasse and lode stone, and howe many dayes they were without fight of any lande. Then askyng licence to departe, the capitayne sente two of his men with him, of the whiche *Antonie Pigafetta* was one. When the kyng sawe *Antonie Pigafetta* write the names of many thinges, and afterwarde rehearse them ageyne, he maruayled yet more, makyng fynges that fuche men descended from heauen. The Kyng brought them firste to his pallaice where he interteyned them honorably and gaue them manye gyftes, as dyd also the Prince in his pallaice beyng in an other Ilande named *Caleghan*.

As they fyfte a certeyne myne of earthe in the Kynges Ilande, they founde pieces of golde, sum as bigge as nuttes and other as bigge as egges. All the kynges vesselles were of golde, and his houfe well furnysshed. In all the hole nation there was no man of coomlier perfonage then the kinge. He had his heare long downe to his sholders, and very blake, with a vaile of filke rowled abowte his head, and two greate ringes of golde hanginge at his eares. He had abowte hys myddle, a clothe wroughte of cotton and filke impaled wyth golde, and reacheinge downe to his knees. On his one fyde, he had a long dager with a haste of golde, and the shethe of a fayre kynde of carued woodde. He had on euery finger, three ringes of golde, and had his bodie annoynted with oyle of storax and Benjamin. The natural coloure of his face was like vnto the coloure of an oliue: And all his bodye byfyde paynted with diuers colours. The kynges name was *Raia Colambu*, and the Prince was cauled *Raia Siagu*.

The laste day of Marche neare vnto Easter, the capitaine caused his preefte to fay masse, and sente to the kinge by th[e]interpretoure, that his comyng a lande at that tyme was not to dyne with hym, but only to heare masse. The Capitayne came alande with fyftie of his men in theyr best apparel withoute weapons or harnesse, and all the resydue well armed. Before the boates came to lande, he caused fixe pieces of ordinaunce to be shotte of in token of peace, and so came aland, where the two kinges embraced hym, and accompanied hym to the place appoynted for masse to be sayde not farre frome the sea fyde. Sumwhat before the beginnyng of masse, the Capitayne sprinkeled the Kynges with damaske water. When the preefte was at mid masse at the offitorie, the kings profered them selues to go to kyffe the crosse with the capytayne, but offered nothyng. At the tyme of sacringe when the preefte lifted vppe the bodie of Christ, and the Christians kneeled downe and helde vppe their handes ioyned together, the kynges dyd the like also wyth greate reuerence. In the meane tyme, whyle certeyne of the Christians were at the communion, a handegunne was shotte of to signifie vnto theym that were in the shyppes, to discharge all theyr ordinaunce. When masse was fynysshed, the Capitaine caused certeyne of his men to put on theyr harnesse and to make a combat with theyr naked swoordes, wherat the kynges tooke great pleasure. This doone, the Capitaine caused a crosse to be brought furth, with nayles and a crowne of thornes, gyuynge commaundement to all his men to gyue reuerence therunto, and signifyinge to the kynges by th[e]interpretoure that that banner was gyuen hym by Th[e]emperoure his lorde and mafter, with commaundement to leaue the same in al places where he came to the great commoditie and profite of all such as wolde reuerendly receaue it as an assured token of frendship: And that he wold therefore leaue it there aswell to accomplyshe his lords commaundement, as also that if at any tyme any shyppes of Christians shulde chaunce to coome that way, shulde by feing that crosse perceaue that owre men had byn well enterteined there, and wolde therefore not onely absteyne from doing them any hurte or displeasure, but also helpe to ayde them ageynste theyr enemies. And that therefore it shulde bee requisite to erecte that crosse vppon the toppe of the hygheste mountayne that myght bee seene from the sea on euery fyde. Also to pray vnto it reuerently. And that in so doinge, they shulde not bee hurte with thunder, lyghtnyng, or tempestes. When the kynges harde these wordes, they gaue the Capitayne great thankes, promysinge gladly to obserue and fulfill all fuche thynges as he required. Then the Capitayne demaunded whether they were Moores or gentyles. They answered that

Foure Ilandes

The Iland of Buthuan.

The Iland of Caleghan.

Plentie of golde

224

The kyng of Buthuan.

Masse.

A combatte.
The Crosse and
crowne of thornesMoores and
gentyles.

they had none other kynde of religion, but that lyftyng vppe theyr handes ioyned togyther and theyr faces toward heauen, they cauled vppon theyr god *Abba*, whiche anfwere lyked the Capitayne very well, bycaufe the gentyles are fooner perfuaded to owre fayth then the Moores. etc.

Many Ilands

The Iland of
Messana.

Battes as bygge as
Eagles.
Fowles with
hornes.

225

Egges hatched in
sand.

The Ilande of
Zubut.

The kyng of
Zubut.

A shyp laden with
gold and slaues.

Calicut.
Malaca.

Departynge from hense, they came to the Ilandes of *Zeilon*, *Zubuth*, *Messana*, and *Calaghan*, by the conducte of certeyne pylottes of the fayde kynges. Of these, *Zubuth* is the beste, and hath the trade of beste trafique. In the Ilande of *Messana*, they founde dogges, cattes, hogges, hennes, goates, ryfe, ginger, Cocus, mylle, panyke, barleye, fygges, oranges, waxe, and golde in greate quantitie. This Ilande is aboute the Equinoctiall towarde owre pole. ix. degrees twoo thyrde partes: and. 162. degrees frome the place frome whense they departed. They remayned in this Iland for the space of. viii. dayes, and then directed theyr vyage towarde the northwest, and passed betwene these fyue Ilandes, *Zeilon*, *Bohol*, *Canghu*, *Barbai*, and *Catighan*. In this Ilande of *Catighan*, are certeyne great battes as bygge as Eagles, of the which they toke one. They are good to bee eaten, and of taste muche lyke a henne. There are also flocke dooues, turtle dooues, popping-ayes, and certeyne foules as bygge as hennes. These foules haue lyttle hornes, and lay great egges, which they couer a cubet depthe in the sande, by the heate whereof and vertue of the foonne, they are hatched, and the younge byrdes creepe owte of the sande by them selues. From the Ilande of *Messana* to *Catighan* are. xx. leaques faylynge towarde the West. And bycaufe the kyng of *Messana* coulde not folowe the shyppes, they taryed for him about the Ilandes of *Polo*, *Ticobon*, and *Pozon*, where the Capitayne tooke hym into his shippe with certeyne of his principall men, and so folowed theyr vyage towarde the Ilande of *Zubut*, whiche is abowte fiftie leaques distante from *Catighan*.

The. vii. day of Apryll abowte noone, they entered into the porte of *Zubut*: And passynge by many vyllages and habitacions in trees, they came to the citie, where the Capitayne gaue commaundement to the maryners to slyrke theyr sayles and to fet them selues in order in maner of battayle ray, causing all the ordinaunce to bee shotte of, wherewith all the people were put in greate feare. After this, the Capitayne sent an ambassadoure with th[e]interpretoure to the kyng of *Zubut*. When they approached nere to the citie, they founde the kyng with a great company of men fore astonyshed at the noyse of the gunnes. But th[e]interpretour aduertised them that it was the custome of owre men in al suche places where they coome, to discharge theyr ordinaunce in token of frendeshyppe and to honour the lorde of the citie. With which woordes the kyng and his coompany were well quieted. After this, th[e]interpretour declared that his master was the Capitayne of the ships of the greatest Prince in the worlde, and that they wente to discouer the Ilandes of Molucca: And further, that hearyng of his good name and fame by the reporte of the kyng of *Messana*, they determyned to visite hym and to haue vyttayles for exchange of theyr marchaundies. The kyng answered that he was well contented therewith, and that they were hartely welcoome. Neuerthelesse, that it was a custome in that place, that all such shyppes as entered into that haven, shuld pay tribute: And that there were not many dayes paste, fence a shyppe laden with golde and slaues dyd so paye. In token wherof, he caused to coome before hym certeyne marchauntes of that coompany whiche yet remayned with hym. To this th[e]interpretour answered, that forasmuch as his lorde was the Capitayne of so myghtie a Prince, he neuer payde tribute to any kyng in the worlde, and wolde not nowe begynne. Wyllynge hym to take this for a resolute anfwere, that if he wolde accepte the peace that was profered hym, he shulde enioy it, And if he rather desyred warre, he shoulde haue his handes full. When th[e]interpretour had sayde these woordes, one of the fayde marchauntes (who was a Moore) spake to the kyng in this maner. *CATACAIA Chita*: that is. Take hede syr. For these men are they that haue conquered Calicut, Malaca, and all the greater India: and are of suche poure that yf yowe intreate them otherwyse then well, yowe may to late knowe what they are able to doo more then they haue doone at Calicut and Malaca. When th[e]interpretoure harde these woordes, he sayde that the kyng his lorde was of much greater puissaunce and more dominions, and lorde of more shyppes then was the kyng of Portugale: declarynge further that he was kyng of Spayne and Emperour of all Christendome. Addynge hereunto that yf he wolde not bee his frende, he wolde hereafter sende thither suche a poure of armed men as shulde destroy his contrey. The Moore conferred all these woordes with the kyng, who sayde that he wolde further deliberate with his counsaile, and gyue them a full anfwere the daye folowyng. In the meane tyme he fente them certeyne vyttayles and wyne. When all these thynges were declared to the kyng of *Messana* who was the chiefe there abowt nexte vnto hym, and lorde of many Ilandes, he wente alande and repayed to the kyng of *Zubut* and declared vnto hym the great humanitie and curtesie of the generall Capitayne. Shortely after, the Capitayne fente certeyne of his men with th[e]interpretour to the kyng of *Zubut* to knowe his pleafure and what aunfwere he wolde make them. As they wente towarde the courte, they mette the kyng commynge in the streete accompanied with many of his chiefe men. He caused owr men to sit downe by him, and demaunded of them if there were any more then one Capitayne in theyr coompanie: And whether it were theyr requeste that he shulde pay tribute to Th[e]emperour. They answered that they desyred none other thyng but that they myght exercise marchaundies with them, and to barter ware for ware. The kyng

made anfwere that he was well content therwith: wyllynge the Capitayne in token of frendfhippe to fende him a little of the blud of his ryght arme, affirmyng that he wold do the lyke. etc.

After this the kynge of Messana with the kynge of *Zubut* his neuie (who was the prince) and certeyne other of his gentylnen, came to the shypes and brought the Capitayne many goodly presentes. They entered into greate amitie, and had large communication of many thynges. The Capitayne perswaded them to the Christian fayth, which they gladly embraced, and tooke suche pleasure in hearynge the articles of owre beliefe, that the teares fell from their eyes for ioye. They were baptifed, and shortly after all the people of the Ilande. They esteeme nothyng more precious then drynkyng glaffes of Venice woork.

When they came to the citie, they founde the kyng in his pallaice sittynge vppon a floure or fluorie made of the leaues of date trees wrought after a curious diuise lyke a certeyne kynde of mattes. He had vppon his body, none other apparell but only a cloth of bombasine cotton hangyng before his priuie partes. On his heade, he had a vayle of needle worke: and abowte his necke a chaine of greate price. At his eares, hunge two rynges of golde wherein were inclosed many precious stoncs. He was but of smaule stature, but fume what grosse, and had the residue of his body paynted with dyuers coloures wherof fume were lyke vnto flamyng fyre. Before hym, he had two vesselles made of the fine earth cauled *Porcellana*, with foddren egges. Also four vessels of *Porcellana* full of wyne made of date trees, and couered with many odoriferous herbes. The prince brought them to his house, where he had foure daughters verie well faoured and whyte lyke owres. He caused them to daunce all naked, and therwith to synge, and play on certeyne tymbrelles made of metall.

At this tyme it so chaunced that one of the Spanyardes dyed in one of the shypes. And when certeyne of theyr companye desyred the kynge to gyue them leaue to burie hym on the land, he answered that forasmuch as he and all his, were at the commaundement of theyr kynge and master, how much more ought the grounde so to be.

They greatly marueyled at the cerimonies perteynyng to the maner of owre funeralles, and honoured the crosse which were set at bothe th[e]ndes [of] the graue.

They lyue with iustice, and vse waights and measures. Their houses are made of Timber and sawne boordes: and are so buylded aboute the grownde vppon proppes and pyles, that they ascende to the fame by certeyne staires. Vnder theyr houses, they keepe theyr hogges and hennes.

When they came to barteryng, they gaue golde, ryffe, hogges, hennes, and dyuers other thynges for fume of owre tryfels of smaule value. They gaue tenne *Pesos* of golde for. xvi. poundes weyght of iren. One *pesus* is in value a ducate and a halfe. The funday folowynge, the kynge was baptysed with great solemnitie. At which tyme, the Capitayne admonysed him before not to bee afrayde at the shootyng of of the ordinaunce, bycause it was theyr custome so to doo at such solemne feastes. After this, the Capitayne caused theym to breake all theyr Idoles, and to fet vppe the crosse in dyuers places, prayyng to the same bothe mornynge and euenynge kneelyng on theyr knees and holdyng vp theyr handes ioyned togyther. The kinge in his baptifme, was named Charles after the Emperours name, and the Prince, Ferdinando after the name of his maiesties brother. The kynge of Messana was named Iohn, and the Moore Christopher. To all other they gaue such names as are commonly vsed in Christendome. And thus beefore masse was begonne, were fye hundreth men baptifed. When masse was fynnyshed, the Capitayne inuited the kynge to dyne with him in his shyppe, and at his commynge, caused the ordinaunce to bee discharged.

The queene was also baptifed with fortie of her gentlewomen, and her daughter the Princes wife. The queene was very younge and sayre, hauynge her body couered with a white cloth. Her lypes were redde, and she had on her head a hat, on the toppe wherof was a triple crowne much lyke the popes. This crowne and the hat, were made of the leues of dates trees.

Within the space of. viii. dayes, th[e] inhabitants of the Ilande were baptifed excepte one vyllage of Idolaters who wolde not herein obey the kynges commaundement. Whervppon the Capitayne sent certeyne of his men thither, who burnt the towne and erected a crosse in that place bycause the people of the vyllage were gentyles (that is) Idolaters. But if they had byn Moores (that is Machumetistes) they wold haue erected a pyllar of stone, bycause the Moores are more stouberne and harder to bee conuerted then are the gentyles.

When the queene came to the place where shee shuld heare masse, shee came furth with great pompe and solemnitie, hauynge goyng before her three younge damoselles and three men with theyr cappes in theyr handes, whom shee folowed apparellled in whyte and blacke, with a great vayle of fylke vppon her heade fringed abowte with golde, whiche couered her hatte and hunge downe to her shoulders. Shee had also a great trayne of women folowynge her, beinge all barefooted and naked, excepte that vppon theyr heades and priuie partes, they wore certeyne vayles of filke, and hadde theyr heare spered.

Before the kynge of *Zubut* was baptifed, he was named Raia Humabuon. When the Capitayne demaunded of hym why all the Idoles in the Ilande were not burnt accordyng to his promesse, he answered that they esteemed them no more as goddes, but only made sacrifice to them for the Princes brother who was very fycke,

Sheddyng of bludde is a token of frendshyppe

226

The kynge of Zubut is baptised

The kynge of Zubut his apparell

Well faoured women.

Barteryng Pesus what.

They breake theyr Idoles and erecte the crosse.

Fye hundreth men baptised.

The queene of Zubut.

227

The queenes apparell.

and as noble and wyttie a man as was in the Ilande. The Capitayne answered that if he wolde burne al his Idoles and beleue faythfully in Christ, and bee baptised, he shulde be immediatly restored to health, and that he wolde els gyeue them leaue to sryke of his heade. By these woordes and perswasions of the Capitayne, he conceaued such hope of health, that after he was baptised he felt no more greefe of his disease. And this was a manifest myracle wrought in owre tyme wherby dyuers infidels were conuerted to owr fayth, and theyr Idoles destroyed, and also theyr altares ouerthrowen on the whiche they were accustomed to eate the sacrificed fleshe. The people of the Ilande pay the kynge a portion of vittayles for theyr tribute by all theyr cities and vyllages.

Not farre from this Ilande of *Zubut*, is the Iland of *Mathan*, whose inhabitauntes vse maruelous ceremonies in theyr sacrifices to the foonne and burying the deade. They were rynges of golde about theyr priuie members. The Ilande is gouerned by two Princes wherof the one is named *Zula*, and the other *Cilapulapu*. And wheras this *Cilapulapu* refused to pay tribute to the kynge of Spayne, the Capitayne went ageynst hym in his owne person with. lx. of his menne armed with coates of mayle and helmettes. *Cilapulapu* diuided his army into three battayles, hauynge in euery battaile two thousand and fiftie men armed with bowes, arrowes, dartes and iauelins hardened at the poyntes with fyer. This continued longe and sharpe. But the Capitayne beinge a valient man and presynge hym selfe in the brunte of the battayle, was fore wounded and slayne, forasmuch as the moste of the Barbarians directed all theyr force ageynst hym. Befyde the Capitayne, were slayne of owre men about. viii. or. ix. Of the Barbarians, were. xv. slayne and many fore wounded. After the death of the Capitayne, they chose two other in his place, of the which one was *Odoardo Barbesia* a Portugale, and the other *Iohn Serrano* who was shortly after betrayde by th[e]interpretour and taken prifoner with dyuers other.

Certeine dayes before the Capitaynes death, they hadde knowledge of the Ilandes of *Molucca* whiche they chiefly fought. Departynge therfore from the Ilande of *Mathan*, they sayled farre and came to the cape of an other Iland named *Bohol*. In the myddeft of this mayne sea (whiche they named *Archipelagus*) they consulted to burne the shyppe named *Conception*, bycause they were nowe fewe in number, and to furnyshe the other two shyppes with th[e]artillerie therof. Thus directynge theyr course towarde Southewest, they came to an other Ilande named *Pauiloghon*, where they founde blacke men lyke vnto the *Sarafins*. Shortly after, they arriued at an other great Iland, whose kyng named *Raia Calauar*, intreated them very frendly in all thynges as dyd the kyng of *Messana*. This Ilande is ryche in golde, and hath plentie of ryffe, gynger, hogges, goates, hennes, and dyuers other thynges. It is named *Chippit*, and is. viii. degrees aboute the Equinoctiall line towarde owr pole: And in longitude from the place from whene they first departed. 170. degrees: And about. 50. leaques from *Zubut*.

Departinge frome hente they came to an other Iland named *Caghaian* being. 40. leaques from *Chippit* as they sayled betwene the weste and Southe weste. This Ilande is very greate, and in maner vnhabited. The people are moores, and were banysshed owt of the Ilande of *Burnei* whiche sum caule *Porne*.

Frome this Ilande aboute. xxv. leaques betwene the west and northeweste, they founde a maruelous frute-full Ilande named *Pulaoan*, beinge towarde owr pole aboute the Equinoctiall. ix. degrees and a thirde parte: And C.lxxix. [one hundred and sefenty-nine] degrees and a third parte in longitude frome the place of theyr departing.

Frome this Ilande. x. leaques towarde the South weste, they sawe an other Ilande whiche seemed to them sumtymes to mounte as they sayled by the coastes therof. As they were enteringe into the porte, there arose a boystious and darke tempeste which ceased as soone as the fiers of the three sayntes (wherof we haue spoken before) appeared vppon the cabells. Frome the beginninge of this Ilande to the porte, are fyue leaques. This Ilande is greate and riche: and the chiefe citie therof conteyneth. xxv. thousande houses. The kynge interteyned owre men very frendlye, and sent them bysyde many other presentes, two elephantes trapped with filke to bring them to his pallaice that brought the presentes which the Capytaynes sent hym. He hath a magnyfycalle courte and a greate garde. Also a multitude of concubynes. He is a moore, and is named *Raia Siripada*. He is a kynge of greate poure, and hath vnder hym many other kynges, Ilandes, and cities. This Ilande of *Burnei* is aboute the Equinoctiall towarde owre pole fyue degrees and a quarter. And in longitude frome the place of theyr departyng. C. lxxvi. [one hundred and sefenty-six] degrees and two thirde partes.

Departinge frome *Burnei*, they came to an Ilande cauled *Cimbubon*, beinge. viii. degrees aboute the Equinoctiall lyne Here they remayned. xl. days to calke theyr shyppes and furnyshe them with fresshe water and fuell whiche was to them great payne and trauayle because they were in maner all bare footed, theyr shooes and in maner theyr other apparell beinge worne by reason of the longe vyage. In the wooddes of this Ilande, they founde a tree whose leaues as soone as they faule on the grounde, doo flurre and remoue frome place to place as though they were alyue. They are muche lyke the leaues of a mulbery tree: And haue on euery fyde as it were two short and blunt fiete. When they are cut or broken, there is no bludde feene come furth of them. Yet when any of them are touched, they suddely moue and starte away. *Antonie Pigafetta* kepte one of them in a platter for the space of. viii. dayes. And euer when he touched it, it ranne rounde about the platter. He supposeth that they liue only by ayer.

Departynge from henfe, they directed theyr courfe by the Weſte quarter towarde the Southeaſte, to fynde the Ilandes of Molucca, and ſayled not farre from certeyne mountaynes where they founde the ſea full of great weedes and herbes.

From henfe, they came to the Ilandes of *Zolo* and *Taghima*, in the which are founde perles of exceadyng biggenefſe.

Folowyng theyr courfe toward the north Eaſt, they came to a great citie named *Mangdando*, lyinge aboute the Ilandes of *Buthuan* and *Calaghan*, where they tooke a canoa of certeyne of th[e] inhabitants: by whome being informed of the Ilandes of *Molucca*, they lefte theyr courfe towarde the north Eaſte, and folowed the South eaſte nere vnto a cape of the Iland of *Buthuan*, they were aduertified for certentie that on the bankes of a certeyne ryuer, there dwelte men ouergrown with heare, and of high ſtature.

Folowyng ſtill theyr courfe by the ſouth eaſte, and paſſyng by many ſmaule Ilandes, they came to the Ilandes of *Molucca* the fyxte daye of Nouember and the. xxvii. monethe after theyr departure owt of Spayne. Beinge therfore ioyfull and gyyng thankes vnto god, they diſcharged all theyr ordynaunce. In the coaſte of all theſe Ilandes, euen vnto the Ilandes of Molucca, foundyng with theyr plummet, they founde the deapthe of the ſea to bee no leſſe then a hundreth and two yardes, which is contrary to the ſaying of the Portugales who affyrme that no ſhypp can paſſe that way without great daungiore by reaſon of the ſhalownes and rockes or ſhelues: and for the darkeneſſe which the clowdes cauſe in the heauen. All which thyngs they fayned to th[e] intent that none other ſhulde haue knoweledge of theyr vyages.

The. viii. day of Nouember in the yere. 1521. before the ryfinge of the ſonne, they entered into the porte of the Ilande of *Tidore*, being one of the chiefe Ilandes of Molucca, where they were honorably interteyned of the kynge who declared that he had longe before ſeene a ſygne in heauen that certeyne ſhyppes ſhuld comme from a farre contrey to the Ilandes of Molucca: And that wheras for the better certificat therof he conſydered the ſtations of the moone, he ſawe therein the commyng of owre ſhyppes, and that we were the men whome he ſeemed to ſee in the ſame. Wherupon he profered hym ſelfe to enter into leaque of frendſhypp with the kynge of Spayne, and to accepte owre men as his brotherne and chyl dren: wyllyng them to come alande as into theyr owne houſes. Alſo that for theyr commyng, that Ilande ſhulde no more bee cauled *Tidore*, but Caſtile for the greate loue whiche he bore to theyr kynge whom he reputed as his lorde and maſter. This kynge is a Moore, and is named Raia Sultan Mauzor.

The Ilandes of Molucca are fiue in number, and are thus named: *Tarenate*, *Tidore*, *Mutir*, *Macchian*, and *Bacchian*. Of theſe, *Tarenate* is the chiefeſt.

Directly ageynſte the Ilande of *Tidore*, there is an other great Ilande named *Gilolo*, inhabited of Moores and Gentyles. The Moores haue two kynges, of the which one hath fyxe hundreth chyl dren, and the other fixe hundreth and fiftie. The Gentyles kepe not ſo many women as doo the Moores nor yet lye in fuche ſuperſtitious. They praye to the fyrſte thyng that they meete in the mornynge when they go furth of theyr houſes, and honoure that as theyr god for that day. The kynge of the gentyles is very ryche in golde. In the ſayde Ilande of *Gilolo*, are reedes as bygge as a mans legge, and full of cleare water holfome to bee drunke.

The. xii. daye of Nouember, the kynge of *Tidore* appoynted owre men a ware houſe in the citie where they might ſell theyr marchaundies. Theyr maner of exchange was in this fort. For tenne yardes of good redde cloth, they had one Bahar of cloues, whiche amounteth to foure Cantari and fyxe pounce weight: And one Cantar is a hundreth pounce weight. For. xv. yardes of cloth ſumwhat woofe then the other, they receaved in Cambie, one Bahar. For. xxxv. drynkynge cuppes of glaſſe, they had one Bahar. For. xvii. Cathyls of quicke fyluer, one Bahar. They came dayly to the ſhyppes with many of theyr barkes full of goates, hennes, fygges of a ſpanne longe, alſo the frute cauled *Cocus*, with dyuers other kyndes of vyttayles in ſuch quantitie that it was a marueylous thyng to beholde. They furnyſhed alſo theyr ſhyppes with freſſhe water which is hotte as it iſſheweth owt of the ſprynge, but is very coulde when it hath ſtoode a while in an other place. It ſpryngeth from the mountaynes on the which the cloue trees growe. They ſawe a cloude ryſe in maner dayly, which compafeth about the ſayde mountaynes.

The kynge of the Ilande of *Bacchian*, ſente the kynge of Spayne two deade byrdes of ſtraunge forme. They were of the byggenes of turtle dooues, with lyttle heades and longe bylles: alſo longe and ſmaule legges and no wynges, but in the ſleade therof certeyne longe fethers of diuers colours, and tayles lyke turtle dooues. All the other fethers are of one coloure much lyke vnto tawny, except thoſe of the wynges. They flye not but when the wynde bloweth. Theſe Moores are of opinion that theſe byrdes comme from the heauenlye Paradyſe, and therefore caule them *Manuccodiata*, that is the byrdes of god.

When they were determynd to depart from the Ilandes of Molucca, certeyne kynges of the Ilandes accompanied them with theyr canoas, and conducted them to an Ilande cauled *Mare* where they reſreſhed theyr ſhyppes with freſhe water and fuell. The kynges ſent Th[e] emperours maieſtie many preſentes: and embraſynge owre menne, departed with the teares in theyr eyes: And owre men for theyr laſte farewell, ſhotte

A ſea full of weedes.

Perles.

Men ouergrown with heare.

The Ilandes of Molucca.

The Portugales are reproved.

Tidore one of the Ilandes of Molucca.

A viſion in the planettes

229

The fyve Ilandes of molucca. *Tarenate*. The Iland of *Gilolo*. Moores and gentyles.

Golde.

Water in reedes.

Theyr maner of bartering.

Water of a ſtraunge qualitie

Byrdes of a ſtraunge forme

They leaue one of
theyr shyppes
behynd them.

The Ilandes of
Molucca.
Hony of flyes.

Popingiayes.

The Iland of
Tidore.

Terenate.
Mutir.
Macchian.

230

Bacchian.

Many Ilands

The Iland of
Mallua.
Pepper.

Lyttle men with
longe eares.

The Iland of
Timor.
Whyte sanders
and ginger.

The deuyll
appeareth.
Saynt Iob his
disease.

Cinamome
The Ilandes of
Giaua.
Malaccha.

The greate goulfe
of China.

The cape of
Malaccha.

The names of
many regions.

Reubarbe.

The greate kynge
of China.

of all theyr ordinaunce. When in the Ilande of *Mare*, they perceaued that one of theyr shyppes leaked and toke water very fore: wherby they were inforced to tary there three dayes. But feinge that they coulede fynde no remedie for the same but in longe tyme, they determined to leaue it, gyuyng order that if afterwarde it coulede bee repayred, they fluid returne into Spayne as well as they coulede.

In all the Ilandes of Molucca is founde cloues, ginger, breade of the roote of Sagu, ryfe, goates, sheepe, hennes, fygges, almondes, sweete pomegranates and fowre, oranges, lemondess, and hony which is made of certeyne flyes lesse then antes: Also canes of fuger, oyle of Cocus, mellons, gourdes, and a marueilous coulede frute which they name *Camulicai* and dyuers other frutes. Furthermore whyte and redde popingiayes, and other of variable coloures. It is not paste fiftie yeares fence the moores fyrste inlabited anye of these Ilands, which were before inhabited only with gentyles.

The Ilande of Tidore, is aboute the Equinoctiall line towarde owre pole, abowt. 27. minutes: And in longitude from the place from whense they departed. 171. degrees. And from the *Archipelagus* in the which is the Iland of *Zamal* which our men named the Iland of theeues. ix. degrees and a halfe, and runneth to the quarter of fouth southwest, and north northeaft. *Terenate*, is vnder the Equinoctiall line foure minutes vnder the pole Antartike. *Mutir*, is directly vnder the Equinoctiall line. *Macchian* is. xv. minutes toward the pole Antartike, and *Bacchian* one degree. These Ilandes are lyke foure sharpe mountaynes, except *Macchian* which is not sharpe. The byggest of all these, is *Bacchian*.

Departyng from the Iland of *Mare* and directyng their courfe towarde the southwest, with onely. xvi. men in theyr shyppe and. xiii. Indians, they passed by the Ilandes of Chacouan, Lagoma, Sico, Gioghi, Caphi, Sulacho, Lumatola, Tenetum, Buru, Ambon, Budia, Celaruri, Benaia, Ambalao, Bandan, Zorobua, Zolot, Noceumor, Galian, and Mallua, with dyuers other Ilandes both great and smaule, of Moores, Gentyles, and Canibales. Owre men remainyd xv. dayes in the Ilande of Mallua to repayre theyr shyppe in certeyne places where it tooke water. All the flydes of this Ilande is full of longe and rounde pepper, and is situate towarde the pole Antartike vnder the Equinoctiall line. viii. degrees and a halfe, and is in the longitude of. 169. degrees and. 40. minutes.

The pilote which owre men brought owt of the Ilandes of Molucca, toulde them that not farre from thense, was an Iland named Arucetto in the which are men and women not past a cubite in height, hauyng eares of such byggenesse that they lye vppon one and couer them with the other. But owr men wolde not fayle thyther, bothe bycause the wynde and courfe of the sea was ageynste theym, and also for that they gaue no credite to his reporte.

The. xxv. day of January in the yeare. 1522. they departed from Mallua, and the day folowyng, arryued at a greate Iland named *Timor*, beinge fife leaques distante from Mallua betwene the fouth and southwest. In this Ilande is founde the woodde of whyte sanders and ginger, and dyuers kindes of frutes. Also fundry kyndes of beastes, and plentie of vyttayle and golde. They of the Ilandes of *Giaua*, *Molucca*, and *Lozon*, resort to this Ilande for sanders. Th[e] inhabitants are gentyles. They say that when they go to cut the woodde of sanders, the deuyll appeareth to them in dyuers formes and asketh theym what they haue neede of: And that after this vifion, many of them are longe sicke. In al the Ilandes of this Archipelagus, rayneth the difeafe of faynt Iob (whiche wee caule the frenche poxe) more then in any other place in the worlde.

Farre from this Ilande betwene the west and northwest they came to an Ilande named *Eude*, in the whiche growethe great plentie of Sinamome. In this tracte are founde manye Ilandes lying in order as it were one directly behynde an other, euen vnto the Ilande of the greater *Giaua*, named *Giaua maior*, and vnto the cape of *Malaccha*, beinge in East India. *Giaua* the lesse, is as bygge as the Ilande of *Madera*, and is but halfe a leaque distante from *Giaua maior*. Here they were informed that aboute *Giaua maior* toward the north, is a great goulfe cauled the goulfe of *China*, in the which are trees of exceedyng byggenesse, inhabyted with foules of suche greatenes that they cary great beastes in the ayer. The frutes of these trees are as bygge as cucummers.

The cape of *Malaccha* is one degree and a halfe aboute the Equinoctiall line towarde the pole Artike. On the East side of this cape, runneth a very longe coaste in the which are many regions and cities wherof sum are cauled by these names, *Cingaporta* which is the cape. Also *Pahan*, *Calantan*, *Patani*, *Braalin*, *Benuu*, *Longon*, and *Odia* wherin is the cite in the which dwelleth the kynge of *Sian* named *Zacabedera*. Their cities are builded as owres are, and subiecte to the kynge of *Sian*. After the realme of *Sian*, are the regions of *Iamgoma* and *Campaa* where Reubarbe groweth, of the which are dyuers opinions, fume supposyng it to bee a roote, and other a putryfied tree, affirmyng that yf it were not putryfied, it shulde not haue so great a fauour. They caule it *Calama*. Next vnto this, is found the great *China*, whose kyng is thought to bee the greatest prince in the worlde, and is named *Santoa Raia*. Furthermore, al that is written hereafter of this kyng and these regions, they lerned by th[e] information of a Moore that was in the Ilande of *Timor*. He affirmed that the fayde kyng hath threescore and tenne crowned kynges vnder his empyre, and hath a porte in the sea named *Canthan*: And two principal cities named *Nauchin* and *Connulaha* where he remaineth hym selfe, and hath euer foure of

his chiefe princes lying about his pallaice on euery fyde, towarde the Easte, Weste, Northe, and South giuinge dylygente attendaunce what is doone in euerye of theyr quarters. All the prynces of the greater India (cauled *India Maior*;) and of that wherof I haue spoken before, are obedient to this kynge. And in token that they are trewe subiectes, they keepe in theyr pallaices which are in the middest of theyr cities, the beste cauled *Linx*, being fayrer then a lyon, And is the great kynges signette, whiche all fuche as intende to go to *China*, beare with them sealed in waxe or on a piece of Iuerye for theyr safe conducte, without the which they may not enter into the hauen.

When any of his kyngs rebell or are disobediēt, he caufeth them to be flene, and falted and dryed at the foone: Then to bee stuffed with chaffe, and fette vppe on fum hygh thyng in the myddest of the chiefe streete of the citie where al the people may see it. He neuer suffereth his owne perfon to bee openly seene to any man. But when his noble men of the courte are defyrours to see hym, he commeth downe frome hys pallaice into a ryche paulyon accompanied with fyxe of hys principall concubynes appareyled with lyke vesture as is he hym selfe. All thys way he is not seene by reafon of the paulyon. When he hath passed through the paulyon, he entereth into a serpent named *Nagha*, being the most marueylous and ryche woorke of the worlde, and placed in the greatest courte of the pallaice. When the kynge entereth into this with the women, to th[e] intent that he may not be knowen among them, he caufeth the fayd noble men only to looke in at a glasse which is in the breste of the serpente, where they see the kynge amonge the women, but can not dicerne which is he. He ioyneth in mariage with hys syfter that the blud royall bee not myxt with any other. His pallaice is enuironed with feuen large walles, the one being farre dyflante from the other. And hath in euery fuch circuite tenne thowfande men for the garryfon of hys pallaice, who haue theyr waytinge dayes appoynted them course by course with freshe men in theyr places, and thus keepe theyr watch continually both daye and nyght. In this pallaice are lxxix. haules, in the which is an infinite number of women that serue the kynge hauyng euer lyght torches in theyr handes for the greater magnyfycence. He that wolde see all the pallaice, shulde spend a hole day therin. Amonge other, there are foure principal haules where sumtymes the kynge gyueth audience to hys noble men. Of these, one is couered both aboue and beneth with metall, an other all ouer with fyluer, the thyrde with gold, and the fourth with pearles and precious stoncs. These people of *China*, are whyte menne, appareled as we are, and eate theyr meate on tables as wee doo. They haue the croffe in fum estimation, but knowe not the cause whye. Beyonde the coaste of *China*, are dyuers other nations and people as *Chenchii* where pearles and cynamon are founde. Also the people named *Lichii*, where reyneth the great kynge of Mien, hauyng vnder hym. xxii. kynges, and is subiecte to the kyng of *China*. Here is also founde the great citie of CATHAY in the East, and dyuers other nations in the fayd firme land, of the which sum are brutyssh and bestiall which vse to kyll and eate theyr parentes when they are owld, thinking therby that they shall reuyue in them. All these people are gentyles.

The. xi. day of February in the yeaere. 1522. they departed from the Iland of *Timor* and were ingulfed by chance in the great sea cauled *Lantchidol*, and tooke theyr course betwene the weste and fouth weste, leauyng the northe coastes on theyr ryght hand, fearyng least if they shuld fayle toward the firme land, they myght bee seene of the portugales who are of great power in *Malaccha*: and therefore dyrected theyr cours without the Iland of *Sumatra* cauled in owld tyme *Taprobana*: Leauyng also on theyr ryght hand vpon the firme land, the prouinces and regions of *Pegu*, *Bengala*, *Calicut*, *Canonor*, *Goa*, *Cambaia*, the goulfe of the Ilande of *Ormus*, and all the coastes of the greater India. And more safely to passe the cape of *Buona Speranza* being aboute Affrike, they fayled about. xlii. degrees toward the pole Antartike, and remayned feuen weekes aboute that cape with many fetches compassyng the wynd with theyr fayles contynually alofte, because they had a west and north weste wynd in the proos of theyr shyppes which wolde not suffer them to passe. The cape of *Buona Speranza*, is toward the pole Antartik beneth the Equinoctiall line. xxxiiii. degrees and a halfe: and. 1600. leaques from the cape of *Malaccha*: And is the greateste and moste daungyerous cape that is founde at thys day in al the worlde.

When they had by these perels ouerpasse thys cape, certeyne of them aswell for lacke of vytayles as also by reason of syckenesse, were mynded to fayle to a hauen of the Portugales named *Mouzambique* aboute Affryke. But the other answered that they wold rather dye then go to any other place then directly to Spayne. They folowed theyr course therefore saylyng towarde the Southwest two monethes continually without touchyng at any porte: In whiche tyme there dyed aboute. xxi. of theyr company, whom they cast into the sea. And fuerly if god of his infinite mercie had not preferued the residue in tyme, they hadde all dyed of famen.

In fine, beinge inforced of necessitie, and halfe of theyr companye deade, they fayled to one of the Ilandes of *Capo verde* cauled *Infula Sancti Iacobi*, that is, saynte Iames Ilande, parteyning to the kyng of Portugale. Where, as soone as they arryued, they sent certeyne alande in the shippe boate for vyttayles, declaryng to the Portugales with all loue and fauour what necessitie they were dryuen to and what miseris and traunyailes they had susteyned, informyng them further of theyr marueylous viage and fuche thynges as they

The greater India

231

The beast cauled linx.

The punishment of rebelles.

The kynge is not seene but at a glasse.
A thyng of strange workmanshyppes.

The kynge maryeth his syster
His pallaice.
A marueilous garde.

Women serue the kynge.

Foure maruelous haules

The people of China.
The Crose.

The greate kyng of mien
CATHAY.

The sea of Lantchidol.

Malaccha.

The Iland of Sumetra.

Pegu.

Bengala.

Calicut.

Canonor.

Goa.

Cambaia.

Ormus.

East India.

Cap[e] de Buona Speranza.

The port of Mouzambique.

232

Famen.

Capo Verde.
S. Iames Ilande.

The ingrati[t]ude
of the Portugales.

The port of saynt
Lucar nere vnto
Siuile.

What became of
the other shyppe.

Dariena

The cape of
Cattigara.
Ptolome.

The vyage hardly
performed.

They bye slaues
for lacke of helpe

Maryners woorthy
immortal fame.
Argonauti.

The vyage of Iason
to wyn the golden
fleese.

The shyppe more
woorthy fame then
owld Argo of
Grecia.

The vyage

hadde feene in both the East and West India, with such other gentel woordes wherby they obteyned certeyne measures of rife. But when afterwarde. xiii. of theym returned for more ryfe, they were deteyned: Whereuppon the reste whiche remayned in the shippe, fearynge the lyke chaunce, departed with full fayles, and the. vii. day of September with the helpe of god entered into the hauen of *San Lucar* nere vnto Siuile, where dischargynge all theyr ordinaunce for ioy, they wente immediatly to the greate churche in theyr shertes and barefooted with a torche before them to gyue thanks to almyghtie god who had brought them safe to theyr owne cuntry, and restored them to theyr wyues and chyldren.

As touchynge th[e]nde of this viage, Transiluanus wryteth sumwhat more largely as foloweth.

The other shyppe which they lefte behynde them to bee repayred, returned afterwarde by the Archipelagus aforefayde and by the great sea to the coastes of the firme of the west India, and arryued at a region of the fame being ageynst *Dariena*, where the South sea of *Sur* is separate but by a lyttle space of lande from the Weste Ocean in the which are the Ilandes of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*, and other Ilandes of the Spanyardes. The other shyppe which returned into Spayne by compasing about the whole bowle of the worlde by the coastes of East India and Affrike, departynge from the Iland of *Tidore*, and saylynge euer on this fyde the Equinoctiall, dyd not fynde the cape of *Cattigara* beinge aboute Asia, and (by the description of Ptolome) rechyng many degrees beyonde the Equinoctial. But hauynge sayled many dayes by the mayne sea, they came to the cape of *Buona Speranza* and frome thense to the Ilandes of *Capo verde*, where their shyppe beinge soore broofed by reason of the longe viage, leaked and tooke water, in suche forte that the mariners beinge nowe but fewe in number, and those also weake and feeble by reason of longe sickenesse and hunger, were not able both to drye the poope continually and otherwyse gouerne the shippe: and were therfore of necessitie inforced to goo alande at the Ilande of saynte Iames to bye theym certeyne slaues to helpe them. But beinge destitute of mony, according to the custome of the mariners, they profered them cloues for theyr slaues. The which thyng when it came to the eares of the Portugale that was Capitayne of that Ilande, he cast. xiii. of them in prifon. Wherby the residue that remayned in the shippe (beinge nowe but. xviii. in number) were put in such feare that they departed immediatly without rescuing theyr felowes, and sayled continually both by daye and by nyght by the coastes of Affrike, and came in fine to Spayne the. vi. day of September in the yeare. 1522. and arryued at the porte nere vnto Siuile the. xvi. moneth after they departed from the Ilande of *Tidore*. Mariners doubtleffe more woorthy to bee celebrate with eternal memorie then they whiche in owld tyme were cauled *Argonauti* that sayled with Iason to win the golden fleese in the region of *Cholchis* and the riuer of Phafis in the greate sea of *Pontus*. And the shyppe it selfe, more woorthye to bee placed amonge the starres then that owld Argo which departynge owt of Grecia, sayled to th[e]nde of that great sea. For this owre marueylous shyppe, takynge her vyage from the straights of Gibilterra and saylynge by the greate Ocean towarde the South and pole Antartike, and turnynge from thense to the Weste, folowed that course so farre that passynge vnder the great circumference of the worlde, shee came into the Easte, and frome thense ageyne into the Weste, not by returnynge backwarde, but styll saylynge forwarde, so compasyng about the baule of the world vnder the hole circumference of heauen vntyll shee were myraculouly restored to her natiue region of Spayne and houfe of Siuile.



OF THE PRICES OF PRECIOVS STONES AND SPICES,
WITH THEYR WEIGHTES AND MEASVRES

233

as they are accustomed to bee foulde bothe of the
Moores and the gentyles: And of the
places where they growe.



Orasmuch as in dyuers places of this historie, mention is made of precious stones, I haue thought good to declare sumewhat aswell of theyr prices as of the places of theyr generation, that wee may not vtterly bee ignorant of the thinges which we fo grately esteeme and bye so deare.

Of the Rubie.



He Rubies growe in India: and are founde for the most parte in a ryuer named Pegu. These are of the beste kind and fineste, whiche they of the lande of Malabor caule Nunpu clo, and are well foulde if they bee fayre and cleane without spottes. The Indians to knowe theyr finenessse, put them

vpon theyr toonges, coumptynge that to bee best that is couldest and most harde. And to see theyr finenessse, they take them vp with a piece of waxe by the sharpest poynt: and lookynge ageynst the lyght, espie in them euery smaule spot or flake. They are also founde in certeyne diepe fosses or pittes which are made in mountaynes that are beyonde the said ryuer. They are scoured and made cleane in the countrye of Pegu. Yet can they not square and polyshe them. But for this purpose fende them to dyuers other contreys, and especially to Paleacate, Narsinga, Calicut, and the region of Malabar, where are many cunnynge Lapidaries.

And to gye yow intelligence of the value of these stones, ye shall vnderstande that this woorde Fanan, signifieth a weight sumwhat more then two of owre carattes: And. xi. Fanans and a quarter, is one Mitigal: And. vi. Mitigales and a halfe, make one vnce. This Fanan, is also a kynde of money which is in value, one ryale of fyluer. And therefore after this accompte I fay that

One caratte is iiiii graines

Eight fine rubies of the weyght of one Fanan (which are in all, abowt two carattes) are in value.	Fanan *x.	One that weyht two fanans and thre quarters	Fanan cccl.
Fourre Rubies that wey one fanan, are worth	Fanan xx.	Of three fanans	Fanan cccc.
Two that wey one fanan	Fanan xl.	Of three and a quarter	Fanan D.
One that weyht three quarters of one fanan	Fanan xxx.	Of three and a halfe	Fanan D l.
One that weyht one fanan	Fanan l.	Of three and three quarters	Fanan D c.
One that weyht one fanan and a quarter.	Fanan lxxv.	Of three and three quarters and a halfe	Fanan D cxxx.
One that weyht one fanan and a halfe	Fanan C.	Of foure fanans	Fanan D clx.
One that weyht one fanan and three quarters	Fanan C l.	Of foure and a quarter	Fanan D cc.
One that weyht two fanans.	Fanan CC.	Of foure and a halfe	Fanan D cccc.
One that weyht two fanans and a quarter	Fanan CC l.	Of fyue fanans	Fanan M.
One that weyht two fanans and a halfe	Fanan. ccc.	Of fyue and a halfe	Fanan M cc.
		Of fyxe fanans, which are about. xii. carattes. Fanan M D. which make. 150. crownes of golde.	

{*Which is one crown of golde

And these are commonly the prices of perfecte Rubies. But suche as are not perfecte, and haue any spottes in them, or are not of good coloure, are of lesse prise accordynge to the arbitrimt and estimation of the byer.

¶ Of the Rubies which growe in the Ilande of Zeilam.



IN the Ilande of Zeilam, beinge in the seconde India, are founde many Rubies which the Indians name *Manecas*, the greatest parte wherof do not arriue to the perfection of the other aforefayde in coloure, bycause they are redde as though they were wasshed, and of a fleshye colour. Yet are they very coulede and harde. The perfecteste of theym are greatly esteemed amonge the people of the Ilande, and referued only for the kynge hym selfe if they bee of any great quantitie. When his iewelers fynde any bygge piece of this rocke of the beste kynde, they put it in fyer for the space of certeyne houres. Which if it coomme owt of the fyer vncorrupte, it becommeth of the coloure of a burnyng cole, and was therefore cauled of the Greekes, *Anthrax*, which signifieth a burnyng cole. The same that the Greekes caule *Anthrax*, the Latines caule *Carbunculus*. These they greatly esteeme. When the kyng of Narsinga can get any of theym, he causeth a fine hole to bee boored in the vndermost part of them to the myddeft: And suffereth none of them to passe owt of his realme: especially if they haue byn tryed by the fayde prof. These are of greater value then the other of Pegu, if they bee in theyr naturall perfection and cleaneffe.

234

Of these, one that weith a caratte
(whiche is halfe a fanan) is woorth
in Calecut.

One of two carattes	Fanan	*xxx.
Of three carattes.	Fanan	lxv.
Of three carattes and a halfe	Fanan	cl.
Of foure carattes	Fanan	cc.
Of foure carattes and a halfe	Fanan	cccl.
Of fyue carattes	Fanan	cccc.
Of fyue carattes and a halfe	Fanan	cccccl.
Of fyxe carattes	Fanan	Dxxx.

Of fixe carattes and a halfe	Fanan	Dlx.
Of feuen carattes	Fanan	Dcxxx.
Of feuen carattes and a halfe	Fanan	Dclx.
One of. viii. carattes that hath bynne wel proued in the fier, is woorth	Fanan	Dccc.
Of. viii. carattes and a halfe	Fanan	Dcccc.
One fuch of tenne carattes	Fanan	Mccc.
One of. x. carattes and a halfe	Fanan	MDC.
Of. xii. carattes	Fanan	MM.
Of. xiiii. carattes	Fanan	MMM.
Of. xvi. carattes	Fanan	6000.

*Which are iii. }
crow[n]es of golde }

¶ Of the kynde of Rubies cauled *Spinelle*.



Here is also founde an other kynde of Rubies which wee caule *Spinelle* and the Indians, *Caropus*. They growe in the selfe same countrey of Pegu where as are the fine Rubies: And are found in the mountaynes in the vpper cruft or floure of the earth. These are not so fine nor of good colour as are the trewe Rubies: But haue sumwhat the colour of a granate which we commonly caule a garnet. Yet of these fuche as are perfecte in theyr coloure, are of value halfe lesse then trewe Rubies.

¶ Of the Rubies cauled *Balassi*.



Balassi, are of the kyndes of Rubies, but are not so harde. Theyr colour is sumwhat lyke a rose, and sum are in maner whyte. They growe in *Balassia*, whiche is a region within the firme lande aboute Pegu and Bengala: And are brought from thense by marchauntes of the Moores to Calecut where they are wrought and polyfshed: And are fould of the same price that are *Spinelle*.

¶ Of the *Diamundes* of the owlde myne.



These *Diamundes* are founde in the fyrste India in a kyngdome of the Moores named *Decan*, from whense they are brought to other regions. There are also founde other *Diamundes* whiche are not so good, but sumewhat whyte, and are cauled *Diamundes* of the newe myne which is in the kyngdome of Narsinga. They of the owlde myne, are not polyfshed in India, but in other places. There are made lykewyse in India, other false *Diamundes* of Rubies, *Topases*, and whyte *Saphires*, whiche appere to bee fine: and are also founde in the Ilande of Zeilam. These stones differ in none other, sauyng that they haue losfe theyr

naturall colour. Of these, fumme are founde that haue halfe the coloure of Rubies, and other of Saphires: other also of the coloure of a Topafe. Other haue all these coloures mengled together. They bore a fine hole in these through the myddest, wherby they appere lyke the eyes of a catte. Of the whyteft, they make many fmaule diamundes whiche can not bee knowen from the trewe, sauynge by touchinge of such as are skylfull in that practife. They are foulded by a poyste or weight which they caule Mangiar, which wayeth two Tarre, and two thyrdes, which amount to two thyrdes or thirde partes of one caratte. For foure Tarres, wey one fanan whiche is about two carattes.

Viii. Diamundes that wey one mangiar (which is two third partes of a caratte) are in value.	Fanan xxx.	Of two mangiars and a quarter	Fanan ccclx.
which are three crownes of golde.		Of two mangiars and a halfe	Fanan ccclxxx
235 vi. Diamundes that wey one mangiar	Fanan xl.	Of two mangiars and three quarters ful perfect	Fanan 420
Foure that wey one mangiar	Fanan lx.	Of three mangiars of lyke perfection	Fanan cccl.
Two that wey one mangiar	Fanan lxxx.	Of three mangiars and a halfe	Fanan ccclxxx.
One that weith one mangiar	Fanan C.	Of foure mangiars	Fanan Dl.
One of one mangiar and a quarter	Fanan clxv.	Of fyue mangiars	Fanan Dccl.
One of one mangiar and a halfe	Fanan clxxx.	Of fyxe mangiars	Fanan Dccc.
Of one mangiar and three quarters	Fanan ccxx.	Of feuen mangiars.	Fanan Mcc.
Of two mangiars	Fanan cccxx.	Of eyght mangiars	Fanan Mcccc.

And thus they proccade, increafynge the price as they increase in weight.

¶ Of Saphires.



IN the Ilande of Zeilam are founde the beste and moste trewe Saphires, beinge very harde and fine, and of the coloure of azure. They are of price as foloweth.

One that weith one caratte is of value	Fanan ii.	which are about two marcells of syluer.
One of the weight of two carattes	Fanan v.	
Of three carattes	Fanan x.	
Of foure carattes	Fanan xv.	
Of fyue carattes	Fanan xviii.	
Of fyxe carattes	Fanan xxviii.	Of. xiiii. carattes
Of feuen carattes	Fanan xxxv.	Of. xv. carattes
Of eyght carattes	Fanan l.	Of. xvi. carattes
Of nine carattes	Fanan lxv.	Of. xviii. carattes
Of tenne carattes	Fanan l.	One that weith a mitigal, which is. vi.
Of xi. carattes	Fanan lxv.	fanans and a quarter that is about
Of. xii. carattes	Fanan lxxv.	xxiii. carattes
Of. xiii. carattes in all perfection of coloure	Fanan Cxv.	Fanan CCCl.

A marcell, is a syluer coine of Venice, of xi. vnces. iii. d. with fine, wherof ten make an vn[c]e

Lykewyfe in the Ilande of Zeilam, is founde an other forte of Saphires which they caule *Quinigelinam*. These are not so stronge, of darker colour and of much lesse value then are the other of the best kynde, wherof one is worth. xiii. of these of equall poife. Also in the kyngedome of Narfinga, in a mountayne about Bacanor and Mangalar, is founde an other fort of Saphires more tender and of woorse colour, whiche they caule Cinganolam. These are fumwhat whyte and of fmaule value: So that the most perfect of this kynde, weyinge. xx. carattes, is not worth one ducate. Their colour is inclynynge fumwhat to yelowe. There is lykewyfe found an other kynde of Saphires vpon the sea coastes of the kyngedome of Calicut, in a place named Capucar. These the Indians caule *Carahatonilam*. They are of a darke afure coloure not shynynge but in the cleare ayer. They are also tender and brickle, and of fmaule estimation amonge the Indians. They seeme on the one fyde lyke glasse.

¶ Of Topasies.



THE natural Topasies, growe in the Ilande of Zeilam, and are named of the Indians *Purceragua*. It is a harde and fine stone: and of equall estimation with the Rubie and the Saphire, bycause all these three are of one kynd. The perfecte colour of this, is yelowe lyke vnto fine beaten golde. And if it bee perfect and cleane, whether it bee greate or lyttle, it is worth in Calicut as much fine gold as it weyeth. But if it bee not perfect, it is worth the weight of gold the fanan, which is lesse by the halfe. And if it bee in maner whyte, it is worth much lesse. And of these, are fmaule diamundes counterfecte.

¶ Of Turqueffes.

236



Turqueffes are founde in Exer a place of Siech Ifmael. Theyr mine is a drye earth that is founde vpon a blacke flone, which the Moores take of in smaule pieces, and carye them to the Iland of Ormus, from whence they are brought to dyuers partes of the worlde by sea and by lande. The Indians caule them *Perose*. They are soft stones, of smaule weight and not much coulde. And to knowe that they are good and trewe, in the day they shall appere of the verye colour of the Turqueffe: and in the nyght by the lyght, they shall appere greene. They that are not so perfect, do not so change their colour to the fight. If these flones bee cleane and of fine colour, they haue vnderneath in the bottome, a blacke flone, vpon the which they growe. And if any lyttle vayne ryse vpon the sayde flone, it shalbe the better. And to knowe more certeynely that they are trewe Turqueffes, they put on the toppes of them a lyttle quicke lime tempered with water after the maner of an oyntment. So that if the quicke lime appere coloured, they are iudged perfecte, and are of value as foloweth.

One that weith one caratte, is worth in

Malabar.

One of two carattes

Of foure carattes

Of vi. carattes

Fanan. xv.

Fanan xl.

Fanan xc.

Fanan Cl.

Of. viii. carattes

Of x. carattes

Of. xii. carattes

Of. xiiii. carattes

Fanan CC.

Fanan CCC.

Fanan CCCCL.

Fanan DL.

Of greater then these they make none accompte bycause they are lyghter pieces and of greater circuite. These of the byggest forte the Moores carie into the kyngedome of Guzerath.

¶ Of Iacincthes.



Iacincthes growe in the Ilande of Zeilam. They are tender stones and yelowe. They are best that are of diepeste colour. The greatest part of these, haue in them certeine pimples or burbuls, whiche diminishe theyr fayrenesse. And they that are in theyr perfection cleane from this deformitie, are neuerthelesse of smaule value. For in Calicut where they are polysshed, they that wey one fanan are woorth no more then halfe a fanan. And they of xviii. fanans, are not worth. xvi. fanans.

There are also founde other stones lyke vnto cattes eyes, as *Chrisolites*, and *Amethistes*, whiche they doo not muche esteeme bycause they are of smaule value, as also the stones cauled *Giagonze*.


¶ Of Smaragdes or Emeraldes.



Smaragdes growe in the countrey of Babilon, where the Indians caule the sea *Dieguan*. They grow also in other partes of India. They are stones of fayre greene colour, and are lyght and tender. Of these flones, many are conterfecte. But looking on them curiously towarde the lyght, the conterfectes shewe certeyne burbuls, as dooth glasse. But in the trewe, there is no such feene. But rather there appeareth to the eye a certeyne verdour shynynge lyke the beames of the soonne. And beinge rubbed vpon the touche flone, they leaue the coloure of copper. And the Smaragde of this forte is the best and most trewe: And is in value in Calicut, as muche as a diamunde and sumwhat more: And this not by weyght, but by greatenesse, bycause the diamunde quantitie for quantitie, is of greater weyght then the Smaragde. Ther is lykewyse founde an other kynde of Smaragdes, whiche are greene stones, but not so much esteemed. Neuerthelesse, the Indians referue these to set them forth with other precious stones. They leaue not any greene coloure vpon the touche.

¶ OF DYVERS KYNDES OF SPICES, WHERE THEY GROW,
WHAT THEY ARE WOORTH IN CALICUT, AND WHITHER
THEY ARE CARIED FROM THENSE.


¶ *Of Pepper.*

 Yrste in all the kyngedome of Malabor and Calicut pepper groweth: and is fould in Calicut by euery. CC. [two hundred] Bahars, fine, for. CCxxx. [two hundred and thirty] fanans, euery fanan (as I haue sayde) beinge in value, one ryall of plate of Spayne: which is as muche as one marcell of fyluer in Venice. Bahar, weith foure cantares of the owld weight of Portugale, by the whiche they fell all spices in Lisbona. Cantar, is in Venece. Cxii. [one hundred and twelue] ponde weyght of the grofe ponde (beinge. xviii. vnces) and of the subtyl ponde. C. lxxviii. [one hundred and feenty-eight] So that the sayde. 712. poundes of Venece subtyl, wyl cost abowt. xx. frenche crownes of golde: which amount to abowt two *Marchetti* (whiche make one peny) the ponde. They pay also to the kyng of Calicut for custome. xii. fanans euery Bahar by the lode. They that bye them, are accustomed to brynge them to Cambaia, Persia, Aden, and Mecha, and from thense to Alcayre and Alexandria. Nowe they pay custome to the kyng of Portugale after the rate of. 6562. Maruedies the Bahar, which are. 193. fanans. Maruedies are Spanyfhe coynes wherof. vi. go to a peny. This doo they partly bycaufe there arryueh no more fo greate diuerfite of marchantes to bye them, and partly by the agreement which the sayde kyng of Portugale made with those kynges, and the Moores, and marchauntes of the cuntry of Malabar.


237

Much pepper groweth lykewyse in the Ilande of Sumatra nere vnto Malaca, which is fayrer and bygger then that of Malabar, but not fo good and stronge. This is brought from Bengala to China, and fumme parte to Mecha, priullie and by stleth, vnwares to the Portugales which wolde not otherwyse fuffer them to passe. It is woorth in Sumatra, from. iiii. C. [four hundred] vnto. vii. C. [feuen hundred] marauedis the cantar of Portugale, of the newe weight. And frome the newe to the owld weight in Portugale, the difference is, twoo vnces in the ponde weight. For the owld ponde consisteth of. xiiii. vnces, and the newe ponde of. xvi. vnces.

¶ *Of Cloues.*

 Loues growe in the Ilandes of Molucca, from whense they are brought to Malacha, and then to Calicut and the cuntry of Malabar. They are woorth in Calicut euery bahar (which is. 712. poundes of the subtyl ponde of Venece) from. 500. to. 600. fanans (which are abowte fyfte frenche crownes,) which are in value abowte. xii. marchetti the ponde weight. And beinge cleane from stalkes and huskes are in value 700 fanans. To cary theym frome thense into other regions, they paye for pasporte. xviii. fanans the bahar, which is woorth in Malacca from. x. to. xiiii. ducades accordynge to the rate and custome of the marchauntes.

¶ *Of Cinamome.*

 Inamome of the best fort, groweth in the Ilande of Zeilam: and in the cuntry of Malabar, growethe the woorst. That of the beste kynde, is of fmaule price in Zeilam. But in Calicut (if it bee choife and freshe), it is woorth CCC. [three hundred] fanans the bahar, whiche are abowte fiue marchetti the ponde.

¶ *Of Ginger cauled Beledi.*



Ginger Beledi, groweth on euery fyde abowte Calicut from fyxe to nine myles : And is worth the bahar. xl. fanans, and fumtymes fiftie, whiche is lesse then one marchetto the pounce.

They brynge it from the mountaynes and owt of the contrey to the citie, where they sell it by retayle to the Indian marchauntes, who gather it together in greate quantitie and kepe it to fuch tyme as the Moores shyppes arryue there, to whom they sell it, by the price of. xc. [ninety] fanans, to Cx. [one hundred and ten] whiche is lesse then two marchetti the pound, bycaufe the weight is greater.

¶ *Of Ginger Mechino.*



Ginger Mechino groweth, begynnynge from the mountayne of Deli, vnto Canonor. It is fmaule, and not so whyte nor so good as the other. It is woorth the bahar in Cananor, abowt. lx. fanans whiche is abowte one marchetto the pounce. They pay for the bahar fyxe fanans in money for the custome. It is fould vnclenfed or vnpurged.

¶ *Of greene Ginger in conferues.*



N Bengala is founde greate plentie of Ginger Beledi, of the whiche they make muche Ginger in conferues with fuger, and carie it in stone pots from Martabani to bee fould in the countrey of Malabar. And is worth the farazuola (whiche is. xxii. poundes and fyxe vneces) after the rate of. xiiii. xv. or. xvi. fanans.

That that is freshe and made in conferues, is worth in Calicut. xxv. fanans the farazuola, bycaufe fuger is dere there. Greene ginger to put in conferues, is worth in Calicut three quarters of one fanan the farazuola, which is abowte twoo poundes for one marchetto.

¶ *Of the Apothecaries drugges : And of what price they are in Calicut and Malabar.*



Acca of Martabani, if it bee of the beste, is worth the farazuola, which is. xxii. pounce weyght and fyxe vneces of Portugale after. xvi. vneces the pounce (whiche is abowte. xl. pounce weyght of the subtyle pounce of Venece) And is in value. xviii. fanans : whiche are. xviii. marcells of filuer. For one fanan, is in value abowte one marcell of fyluer.

Lacca of the contrey, is worth the farazuola	Fanan	xii.
Borace that is good and in great pieces is woorth the farazuola.	Fanan.	xxx. to. xl. and l.
Camphire that is grosse in cakes, is worth the farazuola	Fanan.	lxx. to. lxxx

Camphire to annoynt Idoles,	* * *	
Camphire for theyr chyldren to eate, is worth the mytigal.	Fanan	iii.
Aguila is worth the farazuola	Fanan.	ccc. to. cccc.
Lignum aloe, blacke, heauy, and fine, is worth	Fanan.	M.
Mufke of the best is worth the vnce	Fanan	xxxvi.
Beniamin of the beste, is worth the farazuola	Fanan	lxv.
Tamarindi being newe, are worth the farazuola	Fanan.	iiii.
Calamus aromaticus, the farazuola	Fanan	xii.
Endego to dye filke, trewe and good, the farazuola	Fanan.	xxx
Mirre, the farazuola.	Fanan	xviii. to. xx.
Frankenfence good and in graynes, is worth the farazuola	Fanan	xv.
Frankenfence in pafte of the bafest forte, the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	iii.
Ambracan or amber greefe that is good. is woorth the metical	Fanan	ii. to. iiii.

Mirabolanes in conferue of fuger, the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	xvi. to. xxv
Cassia, freshe and good, the farazuola.	Fanan	one and a halfe
Redde Sanders, the farazuola	Fanan.	v. to. vi.
Whyte Sanders and citrine, whiche growe in the Ilande of <i>Timor</i> , the farazuola	Fanan.	xl. to. lx
Spikenarde, freshe and good, the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	xxx. to. xl.
Nutte megges, whiche coome frome the Ilande of Bandan where the bahar is woorth from. viii. to. x. fanans, (which importe. vi. poundes weight to the marchetto) are woorth in Calicut, the faraz[uola].	Fanan	x. to. xii.
Mace which is brought from the Ilande of Bandan where the Bahar is woorth fiftie fanans (which import about one marchetto the pounce) are woorth in Calicut the farazuola.	Fanan	xxv. to. xxx.
Turbithes, are woorth the farazuola	Fanan	xiii.
Woorme feede of the best kynde, cauled <i>Semenzina</i> , is woorth the farazuola.	Fanan	xv.
Zerumba, the farazuola	Fanan	ii.
Zedoaria, the farazuola	Fanan	i.
Gumme Serapine, the farazuola	Fanan	xx.
Aloe cicotrine, the farazuola	Fanan	xviii
Cardamome in graynes, the farazuola	Fanan	xx.
Reubarbe groweth abundantly in the countrey of Malabar: And that which commeth from China by Malacha, is worth the farazuola	Fanan	xl. to. l.
Mirabolani emblici, the farazuola	Fanan	ii.
Mirabolani belirici, the farazuola	Fanan	one and a halfe.
Mirabolani citrini and chebuli, which are al of one fort.	Fa[nan]	ii.
Mirabolani Indi, which are of the fame citrine trees	Fa[nan]	iii.
Tutia, the farazuola	Fanan	xxx.
Cububes which growe in the Ilande of Iaua or Giaua, are there of fmaule price, and fould by measure without weight.		
Opium which is brought from the citie of Aden where it is made, is woorth in Calicut the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	cclxxx. to. cccxx
Opium of an other fort which is made in Cambaia is woorth the farazuola,	Fanan	cc. to. ccl.

Seedes that kylly lyse.

¶ Of the weyghtes of Portugale and India: And howe they agree.



The pound of the owld weight, conteyneth. xiiii. vneces. The pound of the newe weight conteyneth. xvi. vneces. viii. cantares of the owld weyght, make. vii. of the newe. And euery newe cantare, is of. C. xxviii. [one hundred and twenty-eight] poundes after. xvi. vneces to the pounce

Euery owld cantare, conteyneth three quarters and a halfe of the newe cantar: And is of. C. xxviii. [one hundred and twenty-eight] poundes, after. xiiii. vneces the pounce.


One farazuola, is. xxii. poundes of. xiiii. vneces, and vi. vneces more, with two fiftie partes.

Twentie farazuoles, are one Bahar.

One bahar is. iiii. cantares of the owld weight of Portugale. All the Spices and drugges, and all fuche other thinges as coome from India, are fould in Portugale by the owld weight and all the reste by the newe weyght.


¶ Hereby may we well confider that as we owght to reioyfe and gyue god thankes for the abundaunce of al these thynges which he causeth the earth fo plentifully to brynge forth to owre vfe, io may we lament th[e] abuse of men whose couetoufnesse causeth great dearth and scarfenesse in the myddest of abundance: herein no leffe offendyng the lawe of nature then doo such as by wychcrafte intermingle poyson with thynges created for the health of man, or by inchauntment corrupt the feedes in the ground: ye rather as the vnnatural mother who deftroyeth the chylde whom she hath longe nuryshed.

[TWO NOTES ADDED BY EDEN, APPARENTLY TO FILL UP THE LEAF.]

 *Of the Doones of the Ilande of Madera.*



Adamustus wryteth, that before the Portugales came to this Ilande, it was ouergrown with trees and vnhabited. Yet were there many beastes, and great plentie of doones which were vtterly without feare of men bycause they had neuer seene any men before, nor yet were accustomed to bee put in feare. In so much that they stode styl while snares were put abowte theyr neckes with longe rods and poles. The which thyng he sayth he hath also seene in other Ilandes. There are many ryche men in this Ilande, and great abundance of fleshe, bycause the hole Ilande is in maner one gardeyne.

 *Of the Ilande of saynt Thomas vnder the Equinoctiall line*



He chieft occupacion and linyng of th[e] inhabitants of this Ilande, is the makynge of fuger, which they sell yearely to the shyppes that coomme for it owt of Spayne and Portugale laden with buttes of meale and floure, also wyne, oyle, cheefe, lether, swoordes, cuppes of glasse, beades, certeyne scaruels of the fine whyte earthe cauled Porcellana, of the which are made the earthen dyffhes of the woorke of Maiolica. And if it were not that such vyttayles and prouisions were brought them owt of Spaine and Portugale, the whyte marchantes which dwell in that Ilande (pertenynge to the dominion of the kinge of Portugale) shulde not bee able to lyue there, forasmuch as they are not accustomed to eate such meates as doo the Ethiopians or Negros. And therefore the Portugales whiche inhabite this Ilande, haue certeyne blacke slaues of Guinea, Benin, and Manicongo, which they fet to tyll and labour the grounde and make fuger. Amonge these whyte inhabitants, there are many ryche men which haue. 150. or. 200. and sum. 300. blacke slaues of men and women to tyll the grounde and doo other laborious woorkes. This Ilande was discovered foure score yeares fence by the navigations of the Portugales and was vnknown to the owlde wryters. It lyeth in the greate goulfe of Affrike in the. 30. degree of longitude from the West to the East, and is in maner rounde. It is of largeness from side to fyde. lx. Italian myles, (that is to say) one degree. The horizontal line of the Iland, passeth by the two poles, Artike and Antartyke: and hath euer the day equall with the nyght without any sensible difference, whether the son bee in Cancer or in Capricorne. The starre of the pole Artike, is there inuisible: But the wardens are seene sumwhat to moue about: And the starres cauled the Croffe, are seene very hyghe. Of this Ilande with the other landes and Ilandes lyinge betwene Portugale and the same, a certeyne pylotte of Portugale hath wrytten a goodly vyage to Conte Rimondo.



THE DEBATE AND STRYFE BETWENE THE SPANYARDES AND PORTUGALES,

*for the diuision of the Indies and the trade of Spices: and
also for the Ilands of Molucca, which sum caule
Malucas. Wrytten in the Spanyshe toonge by*

FRANCISCO LOPEZ DE GOMARA.



He[m]perours maiestie was verye gladde that the Malucas and Ilands of the spicery were discovered: and that he myght passe vnto them through his owne countreys without any preiudice or hurte to the Portugales: And bycause also that Almanzor, Lutz, and Corala which were the lordes of the spicerie, shewed them felues to bee his frendes and became tributaries to hym. He also gaue certeyne gyftes and rewardes to Iohn Sebastian for his great paynes and good seruice, forasmuch as he craued a rewarde for the good newes that the Ilandes of the Malucas and other Ilandes rycher and greater then they, were found to bee in his part of those countreys which perteyned vnto hym accordyng to the popes bull. And hereby it came to passe that there was great contention and strife betwene the Spanyardes and the Portugales abowte the spicerie and the diuision of the Indies by reason of the returne of Iohn Sebastian and th[e] information whiche he gaue therof. Who also affirmed that the Portugales had neuer any enteraunce before that tyme

into those Ilandes. Here vpon, the counfayle for the Indies, aduertised Th[e]mperoure to maynteine his fletee for those partes, and to take the trade of spices into his owne hand, forasmuch as it was his owne of dewtie, aswell for that those Ilandes fell on his parte, as also that he had nowe founde passage and waye through his west Indies into those regions. And finally to consyder that he shulde thereby obteyne and gette to him selfe greate reuenues besyde th[e] inrychynge of his subiectes and realmes, and that with smaule coaste and charge. Th[e]mperoure beinge thus aduertised of the truth, tooke it for good counfayle, and commaunded all thynges hereunto apperteynyng to bee furnysshed accordyngely. In this meane tyme, when kynge Iohn of Portugale had knowledge what th[e]mperour determyned to doo, and the speedy hast his counfayle made for the performance herof, and of the commynge home of Iohn Sebastian of Cane, with th[e] information he made, what of stoutnesse of mynde and what for greefe, was puffed vp with anger as were also the reste of the Portugales, stormyng as though they wolde haue plucked downe the skye with their handes, not a lyttle fearyng leaste they shulde lose the trade of spices, if the Spanyardes shulde once put in theyr foote. Whervpon the kynge immediatly made supplication to Th[e]mperoure, not to set forward any shyppes vntyll it were determyned to whether of them those Ilandes shulde belonge: And that he wolde not so muche endamage hym as to cause him to lise the trade of spices which was so commodious and profitable to hym. And finally to auoyde th[e] occasion of murther and bludshed whiche were lyke to ensue thereof, yf the Spanyardes and Portugales shyppes shulde meete together. Th[e]mperoure althowghe he knewe that all this was but to make delays and prolongyng of tyme, yet was he gladde to haue it tryed by iustice for the better iustification of his cause and ryght. In fine, both parties were agreed to appoynt lerned men, Cosmographers and Pylots which shulde determine the controuersie betwene, them: promyfyng on bothe parties to abyde and stande to the sentence and determination made by those persons appoynted and sworne to iudge indifferently.

240

Iohn Sebastian.

The cause of
contencion.The trade of spice
perteyneth to
Th[e]mperoure.Iohn kynge of
Portugale.The trade of
Spices.The controuersie
determined by
Cosmographers
and Pylots.

¶ *The reparticion and diuision of the Indies and newe worlde betwene the Spanyardes and the Portugales.*



This matter concernyng the trade of spices and the newe worlde of the Indies, by reason of the greate ryches therof was of greate importaunce and very difficultie to bee limited and and drawn forth by lines. By reason wherof, it was necessarie and conuenient to seeke wyfe and woorthypful men expert in nauigations, in Cosmographie, and the mathematicall sciences. Th[e]mperour for his fyde, chose and named for iudges of the possession, the licentiate Acuna, one of the kynges confayle. Also the licentiate Barrientos of the counfayle of the orders: The licentiate Petro Manuel auditour of the courte of the Chauncerie in

Valladolid. For iudges of the propertie, he chose Don Fernando Colono the foonne of Christopher Colonus: Also doctor Sancho Salaya, Peter Ruiz of Villegas, fryre Thomas Duran, Simon of Alcazaua, and Iohn Sebastian of Cano. His aduocate and attorney, he made the licentiate Iohn Rodriguez of Pifa: and for his fyscal doctor Ribera, and his secretarie, Barthalome Ruiz of Castaneda. He also apoynted that Sebastian Cabote, Steuen Gomes, Nunnio Garcia, Diego Riuro, being al expert pilots and cunning in making cardes for the sea, shuld be presnt, and brynge forth theyr globes and mappes with other instrumentes necessarie to declare the situation of the Ilandes of the Malucas about the which was al the contention and stryfe. But order was taken that they shulde shewe theyr myndes on neyther fyde, nor enter into the coompany of the other but when they were cauled. Al these and diuers other, wente togyther to a towne cauled Badaioz: and as many Portugales came to Elbes, or rather more. For they browght with them two fyscals and two aduocates. The principall of theym, was the licentiate Antonie de Affuedo, Diego Lopes of Sequeyra the clarke of the weightes and receptes, who had before byn gouernour in India. Also Peralfonso of Melo, clerke: Simon of Taura, with dyuers other whose names I knowe not. Before they mette togyther, the one parte remaynyng at Badaioz and the other in Elbes, there was much doo amonge them beefore they coulde agree vpon the place where they shulde mete and who shuld speke fyrste. For the Portugales doo greatly weighe suche circumfances. At the last, they concluded to meete togyther at Caya a lyttle ryuer which diuideth Castile from Portugale, standyng in the mydde way betwene Badaioz and Elbes. And when they were assembled togyther one day at Badaioz and an other daye at Elbes and saluted the one the other, bothe parties were sworne that they shulde proceade and speake accordyng to truth, iustice, and equitie. The Portugales refused Simon de Alcazaua because he was a Portugale: and fryer Thomas Duran bycause he had fumetyme byn preacher to theyr kyng: So that Simon was by consent put owte of the coompany, in whose roome was placed master Antonie of Alcaraz. Yet fell they not to reafonyng the matter vntyll the fryer was put owt. They were manye dayes in beholdyng globes, mappes, and cardes of the sea, and hearyng what myght bee sayde, both fydes alleagyng for the right which they pretended. But the Portugales standyng in vayne contention, sayde very angerly the Ilandes of Maluca whereuppon they meetyng and refonyng was at that presente, sell of theyr parte and was of theyr conquest. And that they both had byn there, and had them in theyr possession before Iohn Sebastian had euer feene them. Lykewyse that the line shulde bee drawn from the Ilande of Bonauista, or the Iland cauled de la Sal, which are the most Easterly Ilandes from Cabouerde, and not from the Ilande of Santanton or faynt Antonie, which lyeth towarde the West, and are. lxxxx. leaques the one from the other. Al this was no more but to contend: and the other of the Malucas, is vntrewe. But they that haue a nawghtie matter must set it forth with woordes and brabelyng. Here they founde howe greatly they were deceaued in that they demaunded that the line shulde bee drawn three hundreth. lxx. leaques more to the West from the Ilandes of Cabouerde (as appeareth hereafter) and not one hundreth accordyng to th[e] assignement of the popes bul. The Spanyardes on the contrary parte affirmed and made demonstration, that not only the Ilandes of Burney, Gilolo, Zubut, and Tidore, with the other Ilandes of the Malucas. But aswell Samatra, Malacha, and a great parte of China, shuld belonge to the Castilians: and that those countreys fell on theyr fyde and on the parte of theyr conquest: Also that Magallanes and Iohn Sebastian were the fyrste Christian men that founde them and obteyned them for Th[e]mperour, as the letters and presentes of Almanzor doo testifie. And although the Portugales had byn there fyrste, yet wente they thither after the donation of the pope: neyther got they any ryght of iuste tittle thereby. For although they shulde drawe the line by Buena Vista, what inconuenience shulde folowe thereof, sith aswell by the one way as the other, the Ilandes of the Malucas must perteyne to the Castilians: yea and moreouer, the Ilandes of Cabo verde shulde also perteyne to the Castilians, forsomuch as drawyng the line by Buena Vista, the Ilandes of the Malucas doo remayne within the line on the Emperours fyde. They continued in these controuerfies for the space of two moonethes without anye resolution or ende

The arbytrers on the Emp[er]ours syde.

241

Sebastian Cabote.

Instruments of Cosmographie. The Ilandes of Maluca.

The arbiters on the Portugales syde.

The place where they mette.

Th[e] order of theyr proces.

The Portugales. Contencion for drawyng the line of the diuision.

Howe the Portugales were deceaued.

The Spanyardes allegations. Samatra. Malacha. China. Magallanes.

Buena Vista.

The Ilandes of Cabo Verde.

242

made. For the Portugales prolonged and put of the matter, flying from the sentence with caullations and could reasons to th[e]nde that they myght diffolue that affemble without any conclusion or determination : for so it floode them vppon. The Castilians which were the Iudges of the propertie, drewe a line in the great globe three hundreth and. lxx. [seuenty] leaques from faynt Antonies Ilande, lyinge by Weste Cabo Verde accordynge to the intreatie and determination whiche was agreed vppon betwene the Catholike princes and the kynge of Portugale. These iudges gaue sentence vppon this matter, caulynge the contrary parte before them vpon the bridge of Caya in the yere. 1524. The Portugales coulde neyther disturbe or deferre the sentence, nor yet wolde they allowe it to bee iust and accordynge to ryght: Sayinge that there was not sufficient proceffe made that they shulde passe to the gyunge of sentence. And so departed threatenynge to fley the Castilians as many as they shulde fynde in the Ilandes of the Malucas. For they knewe ryght well that heyr contreyemen the Portugales had already taken the shyppe cauled the Trinitie and had also taken the Castilians in Tidore. Then also departed owre men, takynge theyr iorney to the courte gyunge vp to Th[e]mperour all theyr wrytynges and declaration what they had doone. And accordynge to this declaration must bee signe and marked all globes and mappes which good Cofnographers and masters doo make. The line alfe of the reparticion and last diuision of the newe world of the Indies, ought to passe (lyttle more or lesse) by the poyntes of Humos and Buen Abrigo, as I haue fayde in an other place. And thus shall it appeare euidently that the Ilandes of Spices, and also the greate Ilande of Zamotra, do perteyne to Castile. But the lande of Brasile perteyneth to the kynge of Portugale where the cape of faynt Augustine is, beinge. viii. degrees beneth the Equinoctiall. This lande reacheth from the poynte of Humos to the poynte of Buen Abrigo: and is in lengthe North and South. viii. hundreth leaques. Beinge also fum way two hundreth leaques East and West.

And hereafter these ferious matters, wee wyll rehearse one mery thyng, which was this. It so chaunced that as Frances de Melo, Diego Lopes of Sequeyra, and other of those Portugales of this affemble, walked by the ryuer syde of Guadiana, a lyttle boy who floode keepeynge his mothers clothes which she had washed, demanded of them whether they were those men that parted the world with Th[e]mperour. And as they answered, yea: he tooke vp his shert and shewed them his bare arse, sayinge: Coomme and drawe yowre line here through the myddest. Which sayinge was afterwarde in euery mans mouth and laughed at in the towne of Badaioz: yea euen amonge the commissiouners them felues, of whom fum were angry, and fumme maruayled at the sayinge of the chylde.

¶ *The cause and autoritie wherby they diuided the Indies.*



He Castilians and Portugales had longe debated and reasoned abowt the golde myne of Guinea which was found in the yere of owre lorde 1471, in the tyme of the reigne of Don Alonso Kynge of Portugale the firste of that name. This was a matter of greate importaunce. For the negros or blacke Moores, for thynges of no value, gaue golde by hole handefuls whyche was at that tyme when the fayde Kynge of Portugale pretended title and clayme to the kingedome of Castile in the right of his wyfe Queene Iohn (cauled the excellent) ageynste the Catholike princes Isabel and Don Fernando whose it was in deede. But that stryfe was ended as sone as Don Fernando had vanquished Don Alonso at a place cauled Temulos not farre from Toro, which place* Don Fernando chose rather to make warre ageynst the Moores of Granada, then to bye and fell with the blacke Moores of Guinea. And thus the Portugales remained with the conquest of Affryke from the streightes forwarde: whiche began where the infante of Portugale Don Henrique (sonne to kynge Iohn the bastarde and master of Anis) dyd begynne to enlarge it. When pope Alexander the. vi. (beinge a valentinian borne) had knowlege hereof, he mynded to gyue the Indies to the kinges of Castile withowt any preiudice to the Portugales who had conquered the fea coastes of Affryke. These Indies, the pope gaue of his owne mynde withoute the motion of anye other, with this burden and charge that they shulde conuert the Idolatours to the faythe of Chryste: And commaunded a line or meridian to bee drawn Northe and south from one hundreth leaques Westwarde beyond one of the Ilandes of Cabo Verde towarde the Weste, bycause the Spanyardes shulde not meddle in Affryke perteynyng to the conquest of the Portugales, to th[e]auoydyng of all stryfe betwene them. Kynge Iohn of Portugale, the seconde of that name, was greatly offended when he redde the bull and donation of the pope, althowgh his owne ambassadours had made the felse same request vnto his holynesse. He also found hym felse agreed with the Catholyke princes Isabel and Fernando, that they had shortened the course of the landes he had discovered, depriuyng hym of the rycheffe which belonged to hym. And therefore refused to stande to the popes bull in this case: desyryng the Catholyke princes Isabel and Fernando to graunt him three hundreth leaques more to the Weste, besyde the one hundreth which they had graunted before: and therewith sent his shyppes to kepe the coastes of Affryke. The princes Catholyke were content to satisfie his

The Portugales caullations.

The line of diuision.

The sentence.

The Portugales threaten death to the Castilians.

The line of the last diuision.

The great Iland of Samotra. The lande of Brasile, perteineth to the Portugales.

A mery tale.

The golde myne of Guinea. Alonso kynge of Portugale.

Gold for thynges of smaull value. Contention for the kyngdome of Castile.

Warre agenst the Moores of Granada.

The conquestes of the Portugales in Affrike.

Pope Alexander.

243

The Pope maketh the diuision.

The kynge of Portugale refuseth to stande to the Popes bull.

The agreement of
the last diuision

Wherein the
Portugales were
deceaued.

mynde and to please hym accordynge to theyr gentle nature and for the aliance that was betwene them: And in fine, with the consent and agreement of the pope, graunted twoo hundreth. lxx. [seuenty] leaques more then the bull made mention of: At Tordefillas the. vii. day of Iune, in the yeare of our lord 1494. And wheras our kynges thought that they shulde haue lost grounde in grauntyng so many leaques that way, they woonne by that meanes the Ilandes of the Malucas with many other ryche Ilandes. The kyng of Portugale also, herein deceaued him selfe or was deceaued of his whom he put in trust, haynynge no certeyne knowlege of the situation of the Ilandes of the riche Spicery in demaundyng that which the kyng dyd demaunde. For it hadde byn better for hym to haue requested the three hundreth and. lxx. leaques rather Eastwarde from the Ilandes of Cabo Verde then towarde the west. And yet for all that, I doubt whether the Malucas shulde haue faulen within his conquest accordynge to the ordinarie accounte and dimension which the pylotes and Cosmographers doo make. And after this maner they diuided the Indies betwene them by th[e] autoritie of the pope for the auoydng of further stryfe and contention.

☛ *Howe and by what occasion Th[e]emperoure layde the Ilandes of
the Malucas to pledge to the kyng of Portugale.*



Sebastian Cabote.

Th[e]emperour
and the kyng of
Portugale ioyned
in aliance by
marriage.

The Portugales
robbe the
Castilians

The coronation of
Th[e]emperour.

244

The gageing of the
Ilands of Malucas,
zamatra and
Malaca.

When the kyng of Portugale Don Iuan the thyrd of that name, had knowlege that the Cosmographers and pylottes of Castile hadde drawn the line from the place before named, and that he could not denye the truth, fearing also therby to liewe the trade of Spices, made sute and request to Th[e]emperoure that he shulde not fend furth Loaisa nor Sebastian Cabote to the Malucas, and that the Castilians shulde not attempte the trade of spices nor see such euyls and miseries as his capitaynes had shewed in those Ilandes to them that aduentured that viage with Magalanes. Which thyng he greatly couered, although he payde all the charges of those two flectes, and made other great bargens. In the meane tyme, Th[e]emperoure maryed the Lady Isabell syster to kyng Iohn: and kyng Iohn maryed the lady Catharine syster to Th[e]emperour: whereby this matter waxed coulede although the kyng ceased not to speake hereof, euer mouynge the particion. Th[e]emperour by the meanes of a certeine Biscaine that was with Magallanes in the gouernours shyppe, had knowlege what the Portugales had doone to the Castilians in the Iland of Tidore, wherof he took great displeasure, and brought the fayde maryner face to face before th[e] ambassadours of Portugale, who denyed all that he fayde, one of them beinge the chiefe capitayne and gouernour of India when the Portugales tooke the Castilians in Tidore and robbed them of theyr Cloues and Cinamome and such other thynges as they had in the shyppe named the Trinitie. But as the kyng of Portugales trade was greate, and owre necessitie greater, in the meane tyme Th[e]emperoure (who was now goinge into Italie to bee crowned in the yeare. 1529) gagied the Malucas and the spicerie to the kyng of Portugale for three hundreth and fiftie thousande ducades without any tyme determyned otherwyse then the controuersie was defined vppon the brydge of the ryuer of Caya: for the which thyng, kyng Iohn punyshed the licentiate Azeuedo bycause he payde the money without declaration of the time. The couenaut of the pledge was blyndely made and greatly ageynst the myndes of the Castilians, as men that wel vnderstode the profite, commoditie, and rychesse of that trade: Affirmyng that the trade of spices myght haue byn rented for one yeare or for two, for fyxe tymes as much as the kyng gaue for it. Peter Ruiz of Villegas who was twyfe cauled to the bargeyne, as once at Granada and an other tyme at Madrid, fayde that it had byn muche better to haue pledged Estremadura or Serena, or other greater landes and cities, rather then the Malucas, Zamatra, or Malaca, or other riche landes and ryuers in the Easte not yet well knowen: forasmuche as it maye so chaunce, that eyther by continuance of tyme, or aliance, the pledge myght bee forgotten as though it perteyned to the ryght of Portugale. In fine, Th[e]emperour considered not the iewel that he pledged, nor the kyng what he receaued. Th[e]emperour was often tymes counfayled to release the pledge of those Ilandes in consideration of the great vantage he myght haue therby in fewe yeares. Furthermore, in the yeare. 1548. the procuratoures of Cortes being in Valladolid, made petition to Th[e]emperour to furrender the spicerie to the kyngedome of Castile for. vi. yeares, and that they wold repay to the kyng of Portugale his. 350. thousand crownes, and after those yeares, restore the trade to the crowne, that his maiestie myght inioye the same as was agreed at the begynnyng. But Th[e]emperour beinge then in Flaunders, sente woorde to the counfayle that they shulde not assent to Cortes his request, nor speake any more hereof. Wherat, fum marueyled, other were fory, and all held theyr peace.

[Amerigo Vespucci,
and
Andreas de Corsali.]

*Of the Pole Antarctic, and the stars
about the same.]*

OF THE POLE ANTARTIKE AND THE
 STARRES ABOUT THE SAME AND OF THE
 QUALITIE OF THE REGIONS AND DISPOSITION OF
 the Elementes about the Equinoctiall line.

Alfo certeyne secretes touchyng
 the arte of faylynge.



Mericus Vesputius in the Summarie of his vyages,
 wryteth in this maner as foloweth.

Departynge from Lisbona (commonlye cauled Lusheburne) the. viii. day of May, in the yere. 1501. we sayled fyrst to the Ilandes of Canarie and from thense to Capouerde which the Ethiopians or blacke Moores caule *Bifneghe*, beinge. xiiii. degrees on this syde the Equinoctiall line. From whense directynge owre course towarde the South pole by the South-west, we sawe no more land for the space of three moonethes and three dayes. Of whiche tyme duryng. xl. [forty] dayes, we had cruell fortune: In so muche that for that space, the heauen in maner neuer ceased thunderyng, rorynge, and lyghtenyng with terrible noyse, and fearefull fyghtes of fyery exhalations flyng about in the ayer, and in maner continuall showers of rayne with darke clowdes coueryng the heauen in such sorte that aswell in the day as in the nyght we coulede see none

otherwyse but as when the moone giueth no lyght by reason of thicke and darke clowds. The sea was in lyke case vnquieted with furies and monstres. After these greuous and cruel days, it pleased god to haue compassion on our liues. For we suddenly espied land wherby we recouered our spirites and strength. This land which we founde, is from Capo Verde. 700. leaques, although I suppose that we sayled more then. 800. by reason of the cruel tempest and ignorance of the Pylottes and mariners whereby we were lyke to haue byn cast away. For we were in such dangerous places wanderyng in vnknown coastes, that if I had not byn skylfull in the science of Cosmographie we had fuerly perished, forasmuch as there was not one pylot that knewe where we were by the space of fiftie leaques. In so much that if I had not in tyme prouyded for the safegarde of myne owne lyfe and them that were with me, with my quadrant and Astrolabie instrumentes of Astronomie, we had styl wandered lyke blynde men. But when in fine I had perswaded the pylots by demonstrations perteynyng to that arte, they gaue me great honour and confessed that the ordinarie pilottes and mariners ignorant in Cosmographi, are not to bee compared to men of speculatiue knowlege. etc.

Wee sayled by the coaste of the sayde lande. 600. leaques And went ostentymes alande where we were frendely and honorably interteyned of th[e] inhabitants: In so much that confideryng theyr innocent nature, we sumtymes remayned with them. xv. or. xx. dayes. This firme lande begynneth beyonde the Equinoctiall line. viii. degrees towarde the pole Antartike. Wee sayled so farre by the sayde coaste that we passed the wynter Tropyke towarde the pole Antartike by xvii. degrees and a halfe, where we had the Horizontal line eleuate fiftie degrees. Such thynges as I sawe there, are not yet known to men of owre tyme: as the people, theyr customes and maners, the fertilitie of the lande, the goodnes of the ayer, the fauourable influence of heauen and the planettes, and especially the order of the starres of the eyght spher in the inferioure hemispherie or lower halfe circle of heauen towarde and about the South pole, wherof neyther the owlede or newe wryters haue made any mention to this daye.

Cabouerde.
Besenegha.

A tempest.

The ignorance of
 Pylots and
 mariners.
 The vse of
 Cosmographie.
 The vse of the
 quadrant and
 Astrolabie.

245

The pole
 Antartike.

The starres about
 the south pole.

Most pleasant and
fruitful regions.

The earthly
Paradyse.
Continual
temperatnesse

Moyst dewes

Starres vnknown
to vs

The vse of
Geometri.
Notable stars in
the inferiour
hemispherie.

To wryte particularly of the commodities and felicities of these regions, it wolde requyre rather a hole volume then a booke: And that such, as if Plinie had had knowlege of these thynges, he myght greatly haue increased his bookes of naturall histories. The trees gye from them continually such sweete fauours as can scarcely bee imagined: And on euery part put furth such gummes, liquours, and iufes, that yf we knewe theyr vertues, I suppose we myght fynde in them marueylous medicins ageynst difeases and to mainteyne health. And fuerly in my opinion, yf there bee any earthely Paradyse in the worlde, it can not bee farre from these regions of the south, where the heauen is so beneficiall and the elementes so temperate that they are neyther bytten with coulde in wynter, nor molested with heate in summer. The ayer also and the heauen is seldome darkened with clowdes, so that the dayes and nyghtes are euer cleare. Yet haue they sumtymes moyst dewes in the mornynge and euenyng for the space of three houres, whereby the grounde is marueylously refreshed. Lyke wyse the firmament is marueylously adourned with certeyne starres which are not known to vs, wherof I noted abowt. xx. to bee of fuche clearenesse as are the starres of Venus and Iupiter when they are nere vnto vs. And wheras hauynge the knowlege of Geometrie, I considered theyr circuite and dyuers motions, and also measured theyr circumference and diameter, I am well assured that they are much greater then men thynke them to bee. Amonge other, I sawe three starres cauled Canopi, wherof two were exceedynge cleare, and the thyrde sumwhat darke. The pole Antartike hath nother the greate beare nor the lyttle as is seene abowte owre pole. But hath foure starres whiche compasse it abowt in forme of a quadrangle.

* * .

* *

¶ When these are hydden, there is seene on the lefte syde a bryght Canopus of three starres of notable greatnesse, whiche beinge in the myddeft of heauen, representeth this figure.

*

* *

Most bright and
shynynge starres.

After these, succede three other shynynge starres, wherof that which is in the myddeft, is of measure. xii. degrees and a halfe in circumference. And in the myddeft of these, is seene an other bryght Canopus. After this, folowe. vi. other shynynge starres which in bryghtnesse passe al other that are in the eyght spherie. Of these, that that is in the middest in the superficiall part of the fayde spherie, hath the measure of his circumference. xxxii. degrees. After these foloweth an other great Canopus, but sumwhat darke. All these are seene in the parte of heauen cauled *Via Lactea*, that is the mylke waye: And beinge ioyned to the meridiene line, shewe this figure here folowynge.

Lactea via.

246

* * * *

*

*

The inferiour
hemispherie.

The raynebowe.

Aristotle his
opinion of the
raynebowe.

A strange opinion.

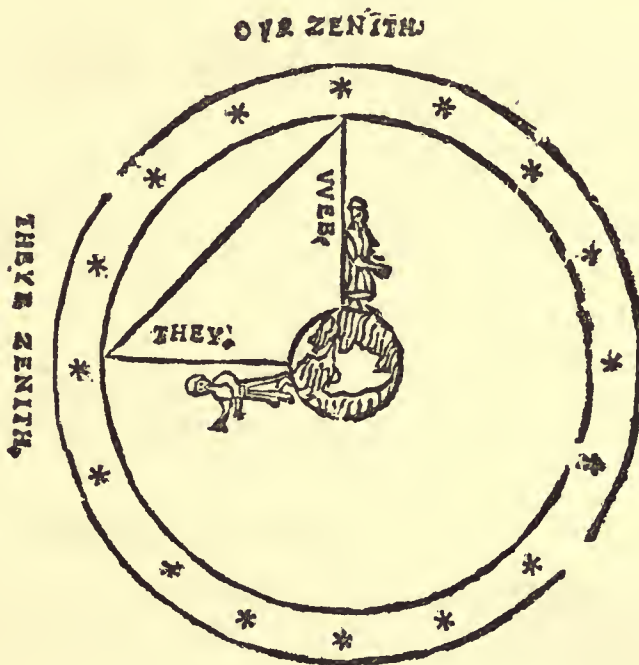


I sawe also there manye other starres, the dyuers motions wherof diligently obserued, I made a particular booke of the same, wherin I made mention of al such notable thynges as I sawe and had knowlege of, in this nauigation. The whiche booke I deliuered to the kynges maicstie, trustynge that he wyll shortly restore it me ageyne. In this hemispherie or halfe coompasse of the heauen, I diligently considered many thinges which are contrarie to th[e] oppinions of philosophers. And amonge other thynges, I sawe a whyte raynebowe abowt mydnyght, wheras other affirme that it hath foure colours of the foure elementes, as redde of the fyre, greene of the earth, whyte of the ayer, and blew of the water. But Aristotle in his booke intituled *Meteora*, is of an other opinion. For he sayth that the raynebowe is a reflection of the beames of the soonne in the vapoure of a clowde directly ageynste the soonne, as the shynyng of the same on the water, is reflected on a waule: And that the fayde clowde or vapoure tempereth the heate of the soonne: and beinge refolued into rayne, maketh the grounde fertile, and pourgeth the ayer. Also that is a token of abundaunt moysture. By reason wherof, sum are of opinion that it shall not appeare. xl. [forty] yeares before th[e] ende of the worlde, which shall be a token of the drynesse of the elementes approchyng to the tyme of theyr conflagration or consumyng by fyre. It is a pledge of peace betwene god and men, and is euer directly ouer ageynst the soonne. It is therfore neuer seene in the South, bycause the soonne is neuer [seene?] in the North. Neuerthelesse, Plinie sayth,

that after the Equinoctial in Autumne, it is feene at al houres. And thus much haue I gathered owte of the commentaries of Landinus vpon the fourth boke of Virgyl his Eneades, bycaufe I wold defraude no man of his trauayle. I sawe the sayd raynebowe twoo or three tymes. And not I onely, but also many other which were in my coompany. Lykewyse wee sawe the newe moone the felfe fame day that shee ioyned with the foonne. Wee sawe furthermore vapours and burnynge flames flyng about heauen euery nyght. A lyttle before, I cauled this countrey by the name of Hemispherium (that is) the halfe sphere. Which neuerthelesse can not bee so named but by spekyng improperly in comparyson of owres. Yet forasmuche as it seemeth to represente fuche a forme, I haue improperlye so named it.

Departynge therefore from Lisboa (as I haue sayde) beinge from the Equinoctiall line towarde the North about. xl. [forty] degrees, wee sayled to this countrey whiche is beyonde the Equinoctiall. l. [fifty] degrees: All which summe, maketh the number of. lxxx. [ninety] beinge the fourth part of the greatest circle accordynge to the trewe reason of the number taught by the owlde autours. And by this demonstration it is manifest

that wee measured the fourth parte of the worlde: Forasmuch as we that dwell in Lisboa on this syde the Equinoctial line about. xl. [forty] degrees towarde the Northe, sayled from thence. lxxx. [ninety] degrees in lengthe meridionale angularly by an ouerthwart line, to th[e] inhabitants. l. [fifty] degrees beyonde the Equinoctiall. And that the thyng may bee more playnely vnderstode, imagine a perpendicular line to faule from the poyntes of heauen which are Zenith (that is the pricke over the head) to vs both standynge vpryght in the places of owre owne habitacions: and another ryght line to bee drawne from owre Zenith to theirs: Then grauntynge vs to bee in the ryght line in comparyson to them, it must of necessitie folowe that they are in the ouerthwart line as halfe Antipodes in comparyson to vs: In fuche sorte that the figure of the sayde lines make a triangle which is the quarter or fourth parte of the hole circle, as appeareth more playnely by the fygure here folowyng.



The newe moone.
Fyery exhalations.
Hemispherium.

Lisbona.

The fourth part of
the worlde.

247

Zenith.



As touchyng the starres and reasons of Cosmographie, I haue gathered thus much owt of the vyage of Americus Vesputius. And haue thought good to ioyne hereunto that whiche Andreas de Corsali writeth in his vyage to East India as concernynge the same matter.

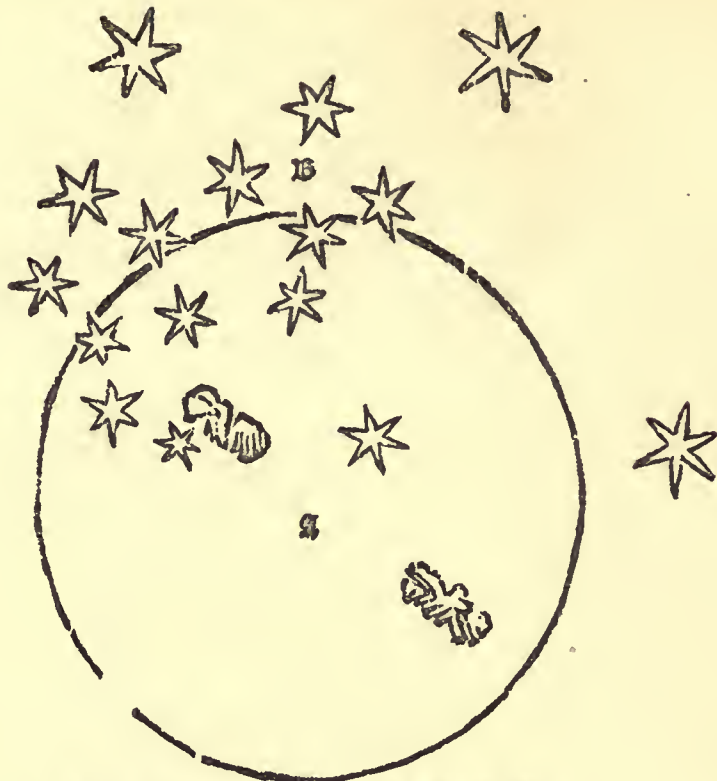
After that we departed from Lisboa, wee sayled euer with prosperous wynde, not passynge owt of the Southeast and Southwest. And passyng beyonde the Equinoctial line, we were in the heyght of. 37. degrees of the other halfe circle of the earth. And trauersynge the cape of Bona Speranza a coulede and wyndy clime bycaufe at that tyme the foonne was in the north signes, wee founde the nyght of. xiiii. houres. Here we sawe a marueylous order of starres, so that in the parte of heauen contrary to owre northe pole, to knowe in what place and degree the fouth pole was, we tooke the day with the foonne, and obserued the nyght with the Astrolabie, and sawe manifestly twoo clowdes of reasonable bygnesse mouynge about the place of the pole continually nowe rysynge and nowe faulynge, so keepynge their continuall course in circular mouynge, with a starre euer in the myddeft which is turned about with them about. xi. degrees from the pole. About these appeareth a marueylous crosse in the myddeft of fyue notable starres which compasse it about (as doth charles wayne the northe pole) with other starres whiche moue with them about. xxx. [thirty] degrees distant from the pole, and make their course in. xxiiii. [twenty-four] houres. This crosse is so fayre and bewtiful, that none other heuenly gne may be compared to it as may appear by this fygure.

The vyage of
Andreas de
Corsali.
The Equinoctial
line.
Cap. de Speranza.
The starres of the
vnder hemispherie.

Clowdes about the
south pole.

A crosse of fyue
starres.

248



A. The pole Antartike. B. The Crosse.

Pertho Andreas de Corsali.

The coastes of Ethiopie. Golde in Ethiopie.

The vyage of Aloisius Cadamustus.

The chariote of the south pole.



Ef the lyke matters, and of the straunge ryfyng of the soonne in the mornynge, and of the dyuers seasons of the yeare and motions of the Elementes in the coaste of Ethiopie abowt the ryuer of Senega, and the riche region of Gambra where plentie of golde is founde, sumewhat beyonde Capo Verde, Aloisius Cadamustus wryteth in this effecte.

Duryng the tyme that wee remayned vpon the mouth of the ryuer, we sawe the north starre but once: which appered very lowe aboue the sea the height of a iauelen. We saw also fyxe cleare, bryght, and great starres very lowe aboue the sea. And confideryng theyr stations with owre coompasse, we founde them to stande ryght south, figured in this maner.



The wynter abowt the Equinoctiall. Raine and clowdes.

Thunder and lyghtnyng.

Hot showres of rayne. The day, and ryfyng of the soonne.



Ejudged them to bee the chariote or wayne of the south: But we sawe not the principall starre, as we coulde not by good reafon, except we shuld first lose the syght of the north pole. In this place wee founde the nyght of the length of a. xi. houres and a halfe: And the day of. xii. houres and a halfe at the begynnyng of Iuly. This countrey is euer hotte al times of the yeare. Yet is there a certeyne varietie which they caule wynter. For from the moneth of Iuly to October, it rayneth continually in maner dayly abowt none after this forte. There ryse continually certeyne clowdes aboue the lande betwene the northeast and the south east, or from the east and southeast with greate thunderyng and lyghtnyng and exceedyng great showers of raine. At this tyme the Ethiopians begynne to fowe theyr feedes. They lyue commonly with hony, herbes, rootes, fleshe, and mylke. I had also intelligence that in this region by reafon of the great heate of the ayer, the water that raineth is hotte: And that the soonne ryfyng in the mornynge, makethe no cleare daylyght as it dooth with vs: But that halfe an houre after the ryfyng, it appeareth troubeled, dynime and smoky. The whiche thyng, I knowe not to proceade of any other caufe then of the loweness of the grounde in this contrey beinge without mountaynes.

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

—o—

SECTION IV.

*Of Moscovy, Cathay, and
the North Regions.*

1500-1555.]

■ A DISCOURSE OF DYVERS VYAGES AND WAYES BY THE WHICHE

SPICES, PRECIOUS STONES, AND GOLDE WERE BROUGHT IN OWLDE
tyme from India into Europe and other partes of the world.

ALSO OF THE VYAGE TO CATHAY AND EAST INDIA
by the north sea: And of certeyne secretes touchyng the same vyage,
declared by the duke of Moscouie his ambassadoure to an excellent
lerned gentelman of Italie, named Galeatius Butrigarius.

Lykewyse of the vyages of that worthy owlde man
Sebastian Cabote, yet liuyng in Englande, and at this
present the gouernour of the company of the
marchantes of Cathay in the cite of London.



Tis doubtlesse a marueylous thyng to confyder what chaunges and alterations were caused in all the Romane Empire by the comynge of the Gothes and Vandales, and other Barbarians into Italy. For by their inuasions were extinguyshed all artes and sciences, and all trades of Marchaundies that were vsed in dyuers partes of the worlde. The defolation and ignoraunce which insued hereof, continued as it were a clowde of perpetuall darkenesse amonge men for the space of foure hundreth yeares and more, in so much that none durst aduenture to go any whyther owt of their owne natiue countreys: whereas before th[e] incurSIONS of the sayde Barbarians when the Romane Empire floryshed, they might safely passe the seas to al partes of East India which was at that time as wel known and frequented as it is nowe by the nauigations of the Portugales. And that this is trewe, it is manifested by that which Strabo wryteth, who was in the tyme of Augustus and Tiberius. For speakyng of the 'greatnesse and ryches of the cite of Alexandria in Egypte (gouerned then as a

prouince of the Romanes) he wryteth thus. This only place of Egypte, is apte to receaue all thynges that coome by sea, by reason of the commoditie of the hauen: And lykewyse all such thynges as are brought by lande, by reason of the ryuer of Nilus wherby they may bee easely conueyde to Alexandria, beynge by these commodities the rycheest cite of marchauntes that is in the worlde.

The reuenues of Egypt are so great, that Marcus Tullius sayth in one of his orations, that kyng Tolomeus furnamed Auleta, the father of queene Cleopatra, had of reuenues twelue thousande and fyue hundreth talentes, which are feuen millions and a halfe in golde. If therefore this kyng had so great reuenues when Egypt was gouerned of so fewe and so negligently, what myght it then bee worth to the Romanes by whom it was gouerned with great diligence, and theyr trade of marchandies greatly increased by the traffike of Trogloditica and India? wheras in tyme paste there could hardly bee founde. xx. shyppes togyther that durste enter into the goulfe of

249

The romaine
empyre.

iiii. hundreth
yeares of
ignoraunce.

Easte India well
known in owld
time.

Strabo.
The great rychesse
of Egypte.

The cite of
Alexandria.

Marueylous
rychesse.

The gouernaunce
and reuenues of
the Romanes.

Trogloditica
and India.

The goulfe of Arabie.

Ethiope.

Rich customs

The rychesse which were brought in owld tyme from India, and the red sea.

The commission of The[m]perours Marcus and Commodus.

Arabie, or shewe theyr proos without the mouth of the fame. But at this present, great nauies fayle together in to India and to the furthest partes of Ethiope from whence are brought many rych and precious marchandies into Egypt and are caryed from thence into other countreys. And by this meanes are the customes redoubled awell by fuche thynges as are brought thither, as also by fuche as are caryed from thence, forasmuche as greate customes arryse of thynges of great value. And that by this vyage, infinite and precious marchaundies were brought from the redde sea and India, and those of dyuers other fortes then are knowen in owre tyme, it appeareth by the fourth volume of the ciuile lawe wherin is described the commission of Th[e]mperours Marcus and Commodus, with the rehearfall of all fuche stufte and marchandies wherof custome shuld bee payde in the redde sea by fuch as had the fame in fee ferme, as were payde the customes of all other prouinces perteynyng to the Romane Empyre: and they are these folowyng.

Cinamome.	Mir.	Xilocinamome.	Iewels of Sardonica.	Dyed cloth and fylke
Longe pepper.	Amome.	Carpefio.	Ceraunia.	Carbafei.
Whyte pepper.	Ginger.	Sylkes of dyuers fortes.	Calamus Aromaticus.	Sylke threeded.
Cloues.	Malabatum.	Linnen cloth.	Berille.	Gelded men.
Costus.	Ammoniac.	Skynnes and fures of Cilindro.		Popingiayes.
Cancamo.	Galbane.	Parthia and Babilon.	Slauces.	Lions of India.
Spikenarde.	Laffer.	Iuery.	Cloth of Sarmatia.	Leopardes.
Cassia.	Agarike.	Wodde of Heben.	The fylke cauled	Panthers.
Sweete perfumes.	Gumme of Arabie.	Precious stones.	Metaxa.	Purple.
Xilocassia.	Cardamome.	Perles.	Vestures of fylke.	

Also that iuife or liquour which is gathered of wolle and of the heare of the Indians.

By these wordes it dooth appeare that in owld tyme the fayde nauigation by the way of the redde sea, was wel known and much frequented, and perhappes more then it is at this present. In so much that the auncient kynges of Egypt confideryng the great profyte of the customes they had by the viages of the red sea, and wyllyng to make the same more easy and commodious, attempted to make a fosse or chanel which shulde begynne in the laste parte of the fayde sea, where was a cite named Arfinoe (which perhappes is that that is now cauled Sues) and shulde haue reached to a branche of the ryuer of Nilus named Pelusio, which emptieth it selfe in owre sea toward the East about the cite of Damiatia. They determyned also to make three caueis or hyghe wayes by lande, which shulde passe from the fayde braunche to the cite of Arfinoe: but they founde this to difficulte to bryng to passe. In fine, kyng Tolomeus furnamed Philadelphus, ordeyned an other way: as to fayle vpon Nilus ageynst the course of the ryuer vnto the cite of Copto, and from thence to passe by a deferte country vntyll they coome about the redde sea to a cite named Berenice or Mioformo, where they imbarcked all their marchaundies and wares for India, Ethiope, and Arabie, as appeareth by the wrytyng fyrst of Strabo (who wryteth that he was in Egypte) and then by Plinie who was in the tyme of Domitian. Strabo also speaking of the fayd fosse or trench which was made toward the red sea, wryteth thus.

There is a trenche that goth toward the red sea and the goulfe of Arabie, and to the cite of Arfinoe, which fum caul Cleopatrida: and passeth by the lakes named Amari (that is) bitter, because in deede they were fyrst bytter. But after that this trenche was made and the ryuer entered in, they became sweete, and are at this present full of foules of the water by reason of theyr pleasauntnesse. This trenche was fyrst begun by kyng Sefostre, before the battayle of Troy. Sum faye that it was begunne by kyng Pfammiticus whyle he was a chyld: And that by reason of his death, it was lefte imperfect: Also that afterwarde, kyng Darius succeded in the same enterpryse, who wold haue finifhed it, but yet brought it not to th[e]nde because he was informed that the redde sea was hygher then Egypt: And that if this lande diuidyng bothe the seas, were opened, all Egypte shulde bee drowned thereby. Kyng Tolomeus wold in deede haue finifhed it: but yet left it shut at the hed that he myght when he wolde, fayle to the other sea and returne without perell. Here is the cite of Arfinoe: And nere vnto that, the cite cauled Heroum in the vtermost part of the goulfe of Arabie toward Egypt with many portes and habitacions. Plinie likewyse speakyng of this trench, sayth. In the furthest part of the goulfe of Arabie, is a porte cauled Daneo, from whence they determyned to bryng a nauigable trench vnto the ryuer of Nilus, where as is the fyrst Delta. Betwene the fayde sea and Nilus, there is a streight of lande of the length of lxxii. [sixty-two] myles. The first that attempted this thyng, was Sefostre kyng of Egypte: and after hym Darius kyng of the Perfians, whome Tolomeus folowed, who made a trenche a hundreth foote large, and. xxx. [thirty] foote diepe, beinge three hundreth myles in lengthe vnto the lakes named Amari, and durste proceade no further for feare of inundation, hauyng knoweledge that the redde sea was hygher by three cubites then al the country of Egypt. Other say that this was not the cause: but that he doubted that yf he shulde haue let the sea coome any further, all the water of Nilus shulde haue byn therby corrupted, which onely mynyfeth drynke to all Egypte. But notwithstandinge all these thynges aforesayde, all this vyage is frequented by lande from Egypte to the redde sea, in which passage are three caueis or hyghe wayes. The fyrst begynneth at the

The great riches the kynges of Egypte had by customes.

The noble enterpryses of the kynges of Egypte.

Arsinoe.

Damiatia.

Pelusio.

Nilus.

Copto.

Berenice.

A nauigable trench made from Egypte to the red sea

Lacus Amari.

Kyng Sefostre

Kyng Psammiticus.

Kyng Darius

Kyng Ptolomeus.

The cite Heroum.

What Plynie wryth of the nauigable trenche

The largenesse and lengthe of the trenche.

250

251

mouth of Nilus named Pelusio. All which way is by the sandes: In so much that if there were not certeyne hyghe reedes fyxt in the earth to shewe the ryght way, the causei could not be founde by reason the wynde euer couereth it with sande. The second causei is two myles from the mountayne Cassius. And this also in th[e]-ende of lx. [sixty] myles, commeth vppon the way or causey of Pelusius, inhabited with certeyne Arabians cauled Antei. The thyrde begynneth at Gerro, named Adipson: and passeth by the same Arabians, for the space of lx. [sixty] myles sumwhat shorter, but full of rowgh mountaynes and great scarseness of water. All these causeis, leade the way to the cite of Arsinoe, buylded by Tolomeus Philadelphus in the goulfe Carandra by the red sea. This Ptolomeus was the fyrst that searched al that parte of the red sea which is cauled Trogloditica. Of this trenche described of Strabo and Plinie, there are feene certeyne tokens remaynyng at this present as they affirme which haue byn at Sues beyonde the cite of Alcayr otherwyse cauled Babylon in Egypte. But the marchauntes that of later dayes traunyle this viage by lande, ryde through the dry and baren desertes on camels both by day and by nyght: directyng the way by the starres and compase as do maryners on the sea, and caryng with them water sufficient for many dayes iorneyes. The places of Arabie and India named of Strabo and Plinie, are the selfe same where the Portugales practyse theyr trade at this daye, as the maners and customes of the Indians doo yet declare. For euen at this presente theyr women vse to burne theym selues alyue with the deade bodies of theyr husbandes. Which thyng (as wryteth Strabo in his. xv. booke) they dyd in owlde tyme by a lawe, for this consideration that sumtyme being in loue with other they forfooke or poysoned theyr husbandes. And forasmuch as accordyng to this custome, the owlde poete Propertius (who lyued about a hundreth yeares before th[e] incarnation of Chryst) hath in his booke made mention of the contention that was amonge the Indian women which of them shuld bee burned alieue with theyr husbandes, I haue thought good to subscribe his verses, which are these.

*Felix Fois lex funeris una maritis,
Quos aurora suis rubra colorat equis.
Mamque ubi mortifero iacta est sax ultima lecto,
Vxorum suis stat pia turba comis,
Et certamen habent lethi, quæ viua sequatur
Coniugium, pudor est non licuisse mori.
Ardent victrices, et flammæ pectora præbent,
Imponuntque suis ora perusta viris.*

As touchyng these vyages both by sea and by lande to East India and Cathay, many thynges are wrytten very largely by dyuers autours which I omitte bycause they perteyne not so much vnto vs as doth the viage attempted to CATHAY by the north seas and the coastes of Moscouia discovered in owre tyme by the viage of that excellent yonge man Rychard Chaunceler no lesse lerned in all mathematicall sciences then an expert pylotte, in the yeare of owre lorde. 1554.

As concernyng this vyage, I haue thought good to declare the communication which was betwene the fayde lerned man Galeatius Butrigarius, and that great philosopher and noble gentelman of Italie named Hieronimus Fracastor as I fynde wrytten in the Italian histories of nauigations. As they were therefore conferryng in matters of learnyng, and reasonyng of the science of Cosmographi, the fayde lerned man hauyng in his hande an instrument of Astronomie, declared with a large oration howe muche the worlde was bounde to the kynges of Portugale, rehearsyng the noble factes doone by them in India, and what landes and Ilandes they had discovered, and how by theyr nauigations they made the whole worlde hange in the ayer. He further declared what parts of the baul of the earth remained yet vndiscovered. And fayde that of the landes of the inferior hemispherie or halfe compase of the baule towarde the pole Antartike, there was nothyng knowne but that lyttle of the coaste of Brasilia vnto the streight of Magellanus. Also a part of Peru: And a lyttle about Affrike towarde the cape of Bona Speranza. Also that he marueyled withoute measure that this thyng was no better considered of Christian Princes to whom god had deputed this charge, hauyng euer on theyr counsaile men of great lernyng which may informe them of this thing beinge so marueylous and noble whereby they maye obteyne glorie and fame by vertue, and bee imputed amonge men as goddes, by better demerites then euer were Hercules and great Alexander who traunyled only into India: and that by makyng the men of this owre hemispherie knowne to theym of the other halfe compase of the baule beneth vs, they might by the tytle of this enterpryse, without comparyson farre excell all the noble factes that euer were doone by Iulius Cesar or any other of the Romane Emperours. Which thyng they myght easely bryng to passe by assignyng colonies to inhabite dyuers places of that hemispherie, in lyke maner as dyd the Romanes in prouinces newly subdued. Whereby they myght not only obteyne great ryches, but also enlarge the Christian fayth and Empire to the glory of god and confusion of infidels. After this, he spake of the Ilande of faynt Laurence, cauled in owlde

The viage bi lande from Egypte to the red sea.

What kyng Ptolomeus discovered.

Alcayre. The viage to Easte India frequented in owlde tyme. The customes and maners of the Indyans.

The vyage to Cathay.

Rychard Chaunceler.

Pan
I 373

A lerned discourse of dyuers vyages The vyages of the Portugales. The worlde hangyng on the ayer. What is knowne of the lower hemispherie. The lande of Brasile. Peru. The charge and dewtie of Christian princes. Note.

252 Hercules and Alexander.

The colonies of the Romans in regions subdued. The great Iland of saynt Laurence or Madagascar.

The Ilandes of Taprobana or Giava.

Plinie.

The historie of Cornelius Nepos.

Shyps of India driuen into the sea of Germanie.

An enterprise wherby Princes may obtayne trewe fame and glory. Cathay discovered bi Marcus Paulus.

The citie of Lubyke.

The kyng of Polonie.

The duke of Moscouia.

An ambassadour from the duke of Moscouia.

253

The woordes of the ambassadour of Moscouia.

The way from Moscouia to the north Ocean and Cathay.

Volochda.

Vstiug.

Succana.

Duina.

Colmogor.

The north Ocean.

Greate wooddes.

Gothlande.

The Moscouites haue knowledge of the greate cane Cathay.

Permia.

Plescora.

Catena mundi.

tyme Madagafcar, which is greater then the realme of Castile and Portugale, and reachethe from the. xii. degree towarde the pole Antartike, vnto the. xxvi. degree and a halfe, lying Northeaste frome the cape of Bona Speranza and partly vnder the line of Tropicus Capricorni: beinge well inhabited and of temperate ayer, with abundaunce of all thynges necessarie for the lyfe of man, and one of the most excellent Ilandes that is founde this daye in the worlde: And that neuerthelesse there is nothyng knowne therof, except only a fewe smaule hauens by the sea side, as the lyke ignorance remayneth of the greatest part of the Ilandes of Taprobana, Giava the more and the lesse, and infinite other. Then begynninge to speake of the partes of owre pole, he caused the bookes of plinie to bee brought him where diligently ponderynge the. lxxvii. chapture of the seconde booke, he founde where he reherfeth the historie of Cornelius Nepos, by these woordes: That in his tyme, one Eudoxus escapyng the handes of kynge Lathyro, departed from the goulfe of Arabie and came by sea to the Ilande of Calefe. Declarynge further, that whereas this narration was many yeares reputed for a fable, was nowe in owre tyme by the vertue of the Portugales, knowne to bee trewe: And that lykewyse the same Cornelius Nepos recitethe that at the tyme when Quintus Metellus Celer was proconful or lieutenant for the Romans in Fraunce, the kynge of Sueuia gaue hym certeyne Indians which saylinge owt of India for marchandies, were by tempest dryuen to the coastes of Germanie. When he had redde these woordes, he proceeded, sayinge that the same thyng myght bee verified nowe in owr tyme if the princes which confine vppon that sea wolde endeuoure theyr industry and diligence to bryng it to passe. And that there coulde not any nauigation bee imagined so commodious and profitable to all Christendoome as this myght bee yf by this way the vyage shulde bee founde open to India to come to the ryche contrey of CATHAY which was discovered now two hundredth yeares fence by Marcus Paulus. Then taking the globe in his hande, he made demonstration that this vyage shulde bee very shorte in respect of that which the Portugales nowe folowe, and also of that which the Spanyardes may attempte to the Ilandes of Moluca. He declared furthermore that the citie of Lubyke beinge ryche and of great poure, and situate vppon the sea of Germanie, and also accustomed with continuall nauigations to trauallye the sea of Norwaye and Gothlande, and lykewyse the ryght noble kynge of Polonie whose dominions with his realme of Lituania, extend to the sayde sea, shulde be apte to discover this secrete: But that aboue all other, the duke of Moscouia, shulde performe the same with greater commoditie and more facilitie then any other Prince. And here steyinge a whyle, he began to speake ageyne and sayde. Nowe forasmuch as we are coome to this passe, mee thynke it shulde seeme a great discourtesie if I shuld not shewe yowe all that I knowe as touchynge this vyage, wherof I greatly mused with my selfe many yeares by occasion of the woordes of Plinie. Whereas therefore beinge a younge man, I was in Germanie in the citie of Augusta, it so chaunced that in those dayes there came thither an ambafadour of the duke of Moscouia, a man singularly learned both in the Greeke toonge and the Latine, and of good experience in worldely thynges, hauyng byn sent to dyuers places by the sayde Prince, and one of his counsaile. Of whose learnyng beinge aduertised, I fought his acquayntaunce. And talkynge with hym one day of these Indians dryuen by fortune to the coastes of Germanie, and of the vyage that myght bee discovered by the North sea to the Ilandes of spices, I perceaued that at the fyrste he marueyled exceedyngely, as at a thyng that he coulde neuer haue imagined. But restynge a whyle in maner astonysht in his secrete phantasie, he toke great pleasure therein, and sayde. Forasmuch as the Portugales haue nowe compased aboutt all the south partes suffoped in owlde tyme to bee inaccessible by reason of great heate, why shulde wee not certainly thynke that the lyke maye bee done aboutt this parte of the north without feare of coulde, especially to men borne and brought vp in that clime? Yet procedyng further, he said, that if his Prince and master, had men that wolde animate hym to discover this vyage, there was no Prince in Christendome that myght do it with more facilitie. Then caulynge for a mappe in which was the description of Moscouia and the prouinces subiecte to the same, he declared that from the citie of Moscouia or Mosca going towarde the northeast for the space of. lx. [sixty] myles, they come to the ryuer of Volochda and afterwarde by that, and folowyng the course therof, to the citie of Vstiug, so cauled bycause the ryuer of Iug fauleth into the ryuer of Succana, where they lose theyr owne names and make the great ryuer Duina: And by that, leauyng on the ryght hande the citie of Colmogor, they sayle vnto the north Ocean. The which waye, although it bee a longe tracte, as more then. 800. myles, neuerthelesse he sayde that in sommer it myght commodiously bee sayled: And that whereas it fauleth into the sea, there are infinite woods of goodly trees apte to make shyppes. And the place so conuenient for this purpose, that shipwryghtes and other skylful workemen for all thynges hereunto apperteynyng, may easely coome owt of Germanie. Also that the men which are vsed to trauallye the sea of Germanie abowte the coastes of Gothlande, shulde bee best and most apte to attempte this enterpryse, bycause they are indurate to abyde coulde, hunger, and labour. He sayde furthermore, that in the court of his Prince, they haue much knowlege of the great cane of Cathay, by reason of the continuall warres they haue with the Tartars, of whom the greatest part gyue obedience to the said great Cane as to theyr chiefe Emperoure. He made also demonstration in the sayde carde by the northeaste, that beinge paste the prouince of Permia and the ryuer Pescora (whiche fauleth into the north sea) and certeyne mountaynes named *Catena Mundi*, there is

th[e]nterance into the prouince of obdora, whereas is Vecchiadoro and the ryuer Obo, whiche also fauleth into the fayd fea, and is the furthest borther of Th[e]mperie of the Prince of Moscouia. The fayde ryuer hath his originall in a great lake cauled Chethai, which is the fyrste habitacion of the Tartars that paye tribute to the greate Cane. And from this lake for the space of two monethes vyage (as they were credably informed by certeine Tartares taken in the warres) is the most noble citie of Cambalu, beinge one of the chiefest in the dominion of the greate Cane, whom sum caule the great Cham. He also affirmed, that if shippes shulde bee made on the coastes of the fayde fea, and fayle on the backe halfe of the coast therof (which he knewe by many relations made to his Prince, to reach infinitely toward the northeast) they shulde doubtlesse in folowynge the fame, easely discouer that countrey. Vnto these woordes he added, that although there were greates difficultie in Moscouia, by reason that the waye to the fayde fea is full of thicke wooddes and waters which in the sommer make great maryfshes and impossible to bee trauallyed, aswell for lacke of vyttayles whiche can not there bee founde, nor for certeyne dayes, but for the space of certeyne monethes, the place beinge desolate without inhabitauntes, neuerthelesse he fayde that yf there were with his Prince, only two Spanyardes or Portugales to whome the charge of this vyage shulde bee commytted, he no wayes doubted but that they wolde folowe it and fynde it, forasmuch as with great ingenioufnesse and inestimable pacience, these nations haue ouercome much greater difficulties then are these which are but lyttle in comparison to those that they haue ouerpasse and doo ouerpasse in all theyr viages to India. He proceeded declarynge that not many yeares fence, there came to the courte of his Prince, an ambassadour frome pope Leo, named master Paulo Centurione a Genuese vnder dyuers pretenfes. But the principall occasion of his commynge, was, bycause he hadde conceaued greates indignation and hatred ageynst the Portugales: And therefore intended to proue yf he coulde open anye vyage by lande whereby spices myght bee brought from India by the lande of Tartaria, or by the sea Caspium (otherwyse cauled Hircanum) to Moscouia: And from thense to bee brought in shippes by the ryuer Riga, whiche runnyng by the countrey of Liuania, fauleth into the fea of Germanie. And that his Prince gaue care vnto hym: and caused the fayde viage to bee attempted by certeine noble men of Lordo, of the Tartars confynge nexte vnto hym. But the warres whiche were then betwene them, and the greates desertes which they shulde of necessitie ouerpasse, made them leaue of theyr enterpryse: which if it had bin purposed by the coastes of this owre north fea, it myght haue byn easely fynnyshed. The fayde Ambassadour continued his narration, sayinge that no man ought to doute of that fea but that it may bee fayled syxe monethes in the yeare, forasmuch as the days are then very longe in that clime, and hot by reason of contynuall reuerberation of the beames of the soonne and shorte nyghtes. And that this thyng were as well woorthy to bee proued, as any other nauigation wherby many partes of the worlde heretofore vnknowen, haue byn discouered and brought to ciuilitie. And here makynge an ende of this talke, he said: Let vs nowe omytte this parte of Moscouia with his coulde, and speake sumwhat of that parte of the newe worlde in whiche is the lande of Brytons cauled *Terra Britonum*, and Baccalos or *Terra Baccalearum*, where in the yeare. 1534. and. 1535. Iaques Cartiar in two vyages made with three great French gallies, founde the great and large countreys named Canada, Ochelaga, and Sanguenai: which reach from the. xlv. [forty-fifth] to the. li. [fifty-first] degree, beinge well inhabited and pleasaunte countreys, and named by hym Noua Francia. And here steyng a while and lyftyng vppon his handes, he fayde: Oh what doo the Christian Princes meane that in such landes discouered they do not assigne certeine colonies to inhabite the same to bringe those people (whom god hath so blessed with natural gyftes) to better ciuilitie and to embrace owre religion, then the whiche, nothyng can bee more acceptable to god? The fayd regions also, beinge so fayre and frutefull, with plentie of all fortes of corne, herbes, frutes, woodde, fyfshes, beastes, metals, and ryuers of fuche greatnesse that shyppes maye fayle more then. 180. myles vppon one of theym, beinge on bothe fydes infinitely inhabited: And to cause the gouernoures of the fayde colonies to searche whether that lande toward the northe named *Terra de Laborador*, doo ioyne as one firme lande with Norwaye: Or whether there bee any freight or open place of fea as is moste lyke there shulde bee, forasmuch as it is to bee thought that the fayde Indians dryuen by fortune abowte the coastes of Norway, came by that streight or fea, to the coastes of Germanie: And by the fayde streight to faile northwest to discouer the landes and countreys of CATHAY, and from thense to fayle to the Ilandes of Molucca. And these surely shulde be enterpryses able to make men immortal. The whiche thyng, that ryght woorthy gentleman master Antony di Mendoza confideryng by the singular vertue and magnanimitie that is in hym, attempted to put this thyng in practyse. For beinge viceroy of the countrey of Mexico (so named of the great citie Mexico otherwise cauled Temistitan, nowe cauled newe Spayne, being in the. xx. [twentieth] degree aboue the Equinoctiall, and parte of the fayde firme lande), he sent certeyne of his capitaynes by lande, and also a nauie of shyppes by fea, to searche this secrete. And I remember that when I was in Flaunders in Th[e]mperours courte, I sawe his letter wrytten in the yeare. 1541. and dated from Mexico: wherin was declared howe toward the northwest, he had found the kyngedome of *Sette Citta* (that is) Seuen Cities, whereas is that cauled Ciuala by the reuerend father Marco da Niza: and howe beyonde the fayde kyngedome yet further toward the Northwest, Capitayne Francefco Vafques of Coronado, hauynge ouerpasse great desertes, came to the fea fyde where

Obdora.
Vecchiadoro.
Obo.
The lake Chethay.
The Tartars.
The citie of Cambalu.
Note this secrete.

Difficilt
trauaylynge io
Moscouia.

Commendation of
the Spaniardes
and Portugales.

The hystorie of
Paulus Centurio.
Of this reade more
at large in the
ooke of Paulus
Iouius.

Malice may do
more with sun
then vertue.
The Caspian sea.
Riga.
Liuania.

254
The Tartars of
Lordo.
Desertes.
The viage by the
north sea.

The woorthynesse
of this vyage.

The viages of the
Frenchmen to the
land of Baccalos.

Pleasantt
countreys.
New France.
Apostrophe to the
Christian princes.

Great ryuers.

A thyng woorthy
to be searched.

The way to
Cathay and the
Ilandes of Maluca
by the northwest
A notable
enterpryse.

The noble
enterpryse of
Antoni di Mendoza,
Viceroy of Mexico.

The disconeryng
of the northwest
partes.

Remiss
7 374

Shyps saylynge from Cathay by the north hyperborean sea to the coastes of the northwest part of the lande of Baecaleos. Cathay.

The sea from new Fraunce or Terra Britonum to Cathay.
A notable booke.

255

A great and glorious enterprise.

Sebastian Cabote the grand pylot of the west Indies.

Commendation of Sebastian Cabote.

Sebastian Cabote tould me that he was borne in Brystowe, and that at. iiii. yeare owld he was caried with his father to Venice and so returned ageyne into England with his father after certeyne yeares: wherby he was thought to haue bin born in Venice.

The fyrst vyage of Sebastian Cabote.

The lande of Florida.

The seconde vyage of Cabote to the land of Brasile, and Rio della Plata.

Cabote tould me that in a region within this ryuer he sowed l. [fifty] graynes of weate in September, and gathered therof. l. 256 [fifty] thousand in December as wryteth also Francisco Lopes.

he found certeyne shyppes which fayled by that fea with marchaundies, and had in theyr baner vppon the proos of theyr shyppes, certeyne foules made of golde and fyluer which they of Mexico caule Alcatrazzi: And that theyr mariners shewed by signes that they were. xxx. [thirty] dayes faylynge in comynge to that hauen: wherby he vnderstode that these shippes could bee of none other countrey then of Cathay, forasmuch as it is situate on the contrary parte of the fayde lande discouered. The fayde maister Antonie wrote furthermore, that by the opinion of men well practised, there was discouered so greate a space of that countrey vnto the fayd fea, that it passed. 950. leaques, which make. 2850. myles. And doubtlesse yf the Frenche men in this theyr newe Fraunce, wolde haue passed by lande toward the fayd northwest and by north, they shuld also haue founde the fea wherby they myght haue fayled to Cathay. But aboute all thynges, this seemed vnto me mooste woorthy of commendation, that the fayde maister Antonie wrote in his letter that he had made a booke of al the natural and marueylous thynges whiche they founde in searchoyng those countreys, with also the measures of landes and altitudes of degrees: A worke doubtlesse which sheweth a princely and magnificall mynde, wherby wee may conceaue that yf god had gyuen hym the charge of the other hemispherie, he wolde or nowe haue made it better knowen to vs. The which thyng, I suppose no man doth greatly esteeme at this time: beinge neuerthelesse the greatest and most glorious enterprife that may bee imagined. "

And here makynge a certeyne pause, and turnynge hym selfe toward vs, he fayde: Doo yow not vnderstande to this purpose howe to passe to India toward the northwest wind, as dyd of late a citizen of Venef, so valiente a man, and so well practysed in all thynges perteynyng to nauigations and the science of Cosmographie, that at this present he hath not his lyke in Spayne, in so much that for his vertues he is preferred aboute all other pylottes that fayle to the west Indies, who may not passe thither without his licence, and is therefore cauled *Piloto Maggiore* (that is) the graunde pylote. And when wee fayde that wee knewe him not, he proceeded, fayng, that beinge certeyne yeares in the cite of Siuile, and desyrous to haue sum knowlege of the nauigations of the Spanyardes, it was toulde hym that there was in the cite a valient man, a Venecian borne, named Sebastian Cabote, who had the charge of those thynges, being an expert man in that science, and one that coulde make cardes for the fea with his owne hande. And that by this reporte, feekynge his acquaintance, he founde hym a very gentell person, who enterteyned hym frendly and shewed him many thynges, and amonge other a large mappe of the worlde with certeyne particular nauigations aswell of the Portugales as of the Spanyardes. And that he spake further vnto hym, in this effecte. When my father departed from Venef many yeares fence to dwell in Englande to folowe the trade of marchaundies, he tooke me with him to the cite of London whyle I was very yonge, yet hauynge neuerthelesse sum knowlege of letters of humanitie and of the spher. And when my father dyed in that tyme when newes were brought that Don Christopher Colonus Genuese, had discouered the coastes of India, whereof was great talke in all the courte of kynge Henry the feuenth who then reigned: In so much that all men with great admiration affirmed it to bee a thyng more diuine then humane, to sayle by the Weste into the East where spices growe, by a way that was neuer known before. By which fame and reporte, there increased in my harte a greate flame of desyre to attempte sum notable thyng. And vnderstandyng by reason of the spher, that if I shulde sayle by the way of the northwest wynde, I shulde by a shorter tracte coomme to India, I thereuppon caused the kynge to bee aduertified of my diuise, who immediatly commaunded two carauels to bee furnysshed with all thynges apperteynyng to the vyage, which was as farre as I remember, in the yeare. 1496. in the begynnyng of sommer. Begynnyng therefore to faile toward Northwest, not thynkyng to fynde any other lande then that of CATHAY, and from thenfe to turne toward India. But after certeyne dayes, I founde that the lande ranne toward the Northe, which was to me a great displeasure. Neuerthelesse, sayling alonge by the coast to see if I could fynde any goulfe that turned, I founde the lande styllyl continent to the. 56. degree vnder owre pole. And feinge that there the coast turned toward the East, dispaynng to fynd the passage, I turned backe ageyne, and fayled downe by the coast of that lande toward the Equinoctiall (euer with intent to fynde the fayde passage to India) and came to that parte of this firme lande whiche is nowe cauled FLORIDA. Where, my vyttayles sayling, I departed from thenfe and returned into England, where I founde great tumultes amonge the people, and preparaunce for warres in Scotlande: by reason whereof, there was no more consideration had to this vyage. Wheruppon I wente into Spayne to the Catholyke kynge, and queene Elizabeth: who beinge aduertified what I had doone, interteyned me, and at theyr charges furnysshed certeyne shyppes wherwith they caused me to sayle to discouer the coastes of Brasile, where I founde an exceedyng great and large ryuer, named at this present *Rio della Plata* (that is) the ryuer of fyluer, into the which I fayled, and folowed it into the firme lande more then fyxe hundrethe leaques, syndynge it euery where very fayre and inhabited with infinite people, which with admyration came runnyng dayly to owre shyppes. Into this ryuer, runne so many other riuers, that it is in maner incredible. After this, I made many other vyages, which I now pretermitte. And wexynge owld, I gyue my selfe to rest from such traуayles bycause there are nowe many younge and lusty pylotes and mariners of good experience, by whose forwardnesse I doo reioyse in the frutes of my labours, and rest with the charge of this office as yowe see.

And this is as much as I haue vnderstoode of master Sebastian Cabote, as I haue gathered owte of dyuers nauigations wrytten in the Italian toonge.

And whereas I haue before made mention howe Mofcouia was in owr tyme discovered by Richard Chanceler in his viage toward Cathai by the direction and information of the sayde master Sebastian who longe before had this fecreate in his mynde, I shall not neede here to describe that viage, forasmuche as the fame is largely and faythfully written in the Laten tonge by that lerned young man Clement Adams scole mayster to the Queens henfhemmen, as he receaued it at the mouthe of the sayde Richard Chanceler. Neuertheleffe I haue thought good here to speake sumwhat of Mofcouia as I haue redde in the booke of Iohn Faber written in the Latin toonge to the ryght noble Prynce Ferdinando Archeduke of Austria and Infant of Spaine, of the maners and religion of the Mofcouites, as he was partely instructed by the ambafadours of the duke of Mofcouie sent into Spayne to Th[e]mperours maiestie in the yere. M.D.XX.V. He wryteth therfore as foloweth.

I thynke it fyrste conueniente to speake sumewhat of the name of this region wherby it is cauled at this day, and how it was cauled in owlde tyme. Conferrynge therfore the moste ancient of the Greeke and latine monumentes with the histories of later tyme, I perceaued it to bee a thynge which requireth no smaule iudgement of wytte and lernynge. For we see in howe shorte tyme the names of thynges are chaunged, as are also the maners of men. I fynde therfore that those people whom at this day wee commonly caule Mofcouites, were in tyme past (as wytnesseth Plinie) cauled *Roxolani*, whom neuertheleffe by chaungynge one letter, Ptolomie in his eyght table of Europe, cauleth *Rofolanos* as dooth also Strabo. They were also many yeares cauled *Rutheni*: And are that people which sumtyme fought manfully ageynst the Capitaynes of Methridates as Strabo wryteth. They were cauled Mofcouites of the chiefe citie of al the prouince named Mofcouia or Mosca: or (as Volaterane faith) of the riuer Mosco. They were sumtyme gouerned by duke Iohan, whose wyfe was Helena of the lynage of Th[e]mperours of Constanflinople of the noble famelie of the Paleologi. Beyond these Roxolanos, Strabo fayth there is no lande inhabited. These Ruthenians therfore or Mofcouites, are people of the northeaste parte of the worlde from vs: And are determined with the limettes of the great ryuer Boristhenes of Scithia, on the one syde with the Lituaniens and Polonians, and on the other syde with the Tartars who cease not to vex them with continuall warres and incursions. Especially the great Emperour Cham of Cathay the chiefe Prince of the Tartars, residente by the sea syde in Taurico Cheroneso, molesteth them with fore warres. They are towarde the north syde inclosed with the frofen sea, the lande of whose coastes beinge verye large, perteyneth in maner all to the dominion of the duke of Mofcouie. This sea is it which the owlde wryters caule *Lacus Cronicus*, so named of the Greeke word *Cronos*, which the Latines caule *Saturnus* whom they fayne to bee an owlde man, of complexion coulde and flowe, and thereby name all such thynges as are coulde and flowe, *Cronica*, as by lyke reason they dyd this northe sea which beinge in maner euer frofen, is flowe and coulde and in maner immouable. And for lyke consideration (as faythe Plinie) Hethens nameth it in the Scythian toonge, Amaltheum, whiche woorde signifieth as muche as congeled or frofen. But that I wander not farre frome my purpose: Th[e]mperour and dominion of the duke of Mofcouie recheth so farre that it comprehendeth certeyne partes of Asia and also of Europe. The citie of Mofcouia or Mosca, is counted twyfe as bygge as Colonia Agrippina as they faythfully reporte which knowe bothe. Vnto this they haue also an other not vnequal in byggenesse cauled Fladimer. Also Blefcouia, Nouogradia, Smolne, and Otifer, al which, their ambafadours affirme to bee of princely and magnificall buyldynges, and strongly defended with waules bothe of brycke and square stone. Of these, Blefcouia is strongest and enuironed with three waules. Other which they haue innumerable are not so famous as are these wherof this duke of Mofcouie and Emperoure of Russia taketh th[e] inscription of his title. For euen at this present, when so euer eyther by his ambafadours or his letters, he dooth signifie hym selfe to bee Emperoure of Mofcouie, he is accustomed to vse this title. Basilius by the grace of God Emperoure of all Russia and greate Duke of Fladamer, Mofcouie, Nouigrade, Blefcouia, Smolne, and Otifer. etc. And this is the tytyle whereby the sayde ambafadours saluted yowre maiestie in the name of great Basilius when they began theyr oration. This prince of Mofcouie hath vnder hym princes of many prouinces and those of great poure: Of the which, that owlde whyte bearded man whom this Emperour of the Ruthians sente for his ambafadoure to Th[e]mperours maiestie into Spayne, is not one of the least. For euen he when necessitie of warre requyreth, is accustomed to make for his Emperour a bande of. xxx. [thirty] thousande horfemen. But this is to theyr singular commendation that they are so obedient to theyr prince in al thynges, that beinge sommoned by hym by neuer fo meane an herald, they obey incontinent as if it were to god,

The vyage to Moscouia.

The hystorye of Moscouia.

The dyuers names of Moscouia.

Roxolani.
Rosolani.
Rutheni.

The ryuer Mosco.

The ryuer Boristhenes.

Th[e]mperour of Cathay.

The frofen sea.

Lacus Cronicus.

Saturnus.

Amaltheum.
The dominion of the duke of Moscouia.
The citie of Moscouia.

The chiefe cities of Moscouia.

257

The duke of Moscouia and Emperour of Russia.
The duke of Moscouia his tytyle.

Duke Basilius.

Their poure.

Theyr obedience to theyr prince.

Theyr wars and conquestes.

thynkyng nothyng more glorious then to dye in the quarell of theyr prince. By reafon of which obedience, they are able in fhort tyme, to affemble an army of two or three hundreth thoufande men ageynft theyr enemies eyther the Tartars or the greate Cham: And haue hereby obteyned great victories and triumphes afwell ageynft the Turkes as the Tartars by the exceedyng multitude of theyr horfemen and continual experience in warres. At fuch time as Th[e]mperour Maximilian made a league with them, they kept warre ageynft the kynge of Polonie. They vfe not only bowes and dartes after the maner of the Parthians, but haue alfo the vfe of gunnes as we haue. And to bee briefe, onely the Mofcouites maye feeme that nation whiche hath not felte the commodities of peace: In fo muche that yf theyr region were not ftrongely defended by the nature of the place beinge impregnable, it had or nowe byn often tymes conquered. Theyr language agreeth much with the tooenge of the Bohemians, Croatians, and Sclauons: fo that the Sclauon dooth playnly vnderfande the Mofcouite, although the Mofcouian tooenge be a more rude and harde phrafe of fpeach. The historiographers wryte that the Sclauons tooenge the name of the confufion whiche was in Babell in the tyme of that flowt hunter Nemroth of whome mention is made in the Genefis. But I can not enowgh marueyle at this thing, that wheras betwene Dalmatia (now cauled Sclanonia) and Mofcouia, both the Pannonies are fuitate, yet this notwithstandinge, the Hungarians tooenge nothyng agreeth with the Mofcouites. Wherby wee may coniecture that thefe nations were fومتymes diuided by legions, and that they came owt of Dalmatia thither: whiche thyng alfo Volateranus affirmeth, fayinge that the language of the Ruthenians (whiche are the Mofcouites) is *Semidalmatica* (that is) halfe Sclauone. Howe fo euer it bee, this is certeyne that the Bohemians, Croatians, Sclauons, and Mofcouites, agree in language as wee perceaued by th[e]interpretours which yowre maieftie had then in yowre courte. For wheras the fayde interpretours were borne amonge the Croatians and Sclauons and none of them had euer byn in Mofcouia, or beefore that tyme had any conuerfation with them, yet dyd they well vnderfande the ambaffadours woordes.

There are in Mofcouia, wooddes of exceedyng byggeneffe, in the which blacke woolues and whyte beares are hunted. The caufe wherof may bee th[e]extreme cold of the north, which dooth greatly alter the complexions of beastes, and is the mother of whytenesse as the Philofophers affirme. They haue alfo great plentie of bees, wherby they haue fuch abundaunce of hony and waxe that it is with them of fmaul price. When the commoditie of theyr countrey is neglected by reafon of longe warres, theyr chiefe aduantage whereby they haue all thynges neceffarie towarde theyr lyuynge, is the gaires which they haue by theyr rych fures, as Sables, Marternes, Luzernes, moft whyte armyns, and fuch other which they fell to marchauntes of dyuers countreys. They bye and fell with fimple faythe of woordes exchaungynge ware for ware without any curious bondes or cantels. And albeit they haue the vfe of both golde and fyluer monyes, yet doo they for the moft part exchange theyr fures for frutes and other thynges neceffarie to mainteine theyr lyfe. There are alfo fume people vnder the dominion of this Emperour, which haue neither wyne nor wheate, but lyue only by fleffhe and mylke as doo the wylde Tartars theyr bortherers which dwel in wods by the coaftes of the frofen fea. Thefe people are brutyffhe, and lyue in maner lyke wylde beastes. But they of the citie of Mofca and Nouigrade, and other cities, are ciuile people: and agree with vs in eatynge of fyffhe and fleffhe although theyr maner of coquerie is in manye thynges differynge frome owres. Volaterane wryteth that the Ruthenians vfe money vncoynded. And inquiryng further, I was informed that the money of Hungary is much currant with them. But this is chiefly to bee confydered, that they imbrafe the Christian fayth which they affirme to haue byn preached to them fyrfte by faynt Andrew th[e]apofle and broother to Simon Peter. Such doctrine alfo as vnder Conftantine the greate, in the yeare. CCC. xviii. [three hundred and eighteen] was concluded in the fyrft generall counfaile holden in the citie of Nicene in Bithynia, and there determyned by. CCC. xviii. [three hundred and eighteen] byffhoppes, and alfo fuch as hath byn wrytten and tawght by the Greeke doctoures Basilius Magnus and Chriftofomus, they beleue to bee fo holy, firme and fyncere, that they thinke it no more lawfull one heare to tranfgrefse or go backe from the fame, then from the gofpell of Chrif. For theyr conflancie and modeftie is fuch, that no man dare caule thofe thynges into queffion which haue once byn decifed by holy fathers in theyr general counfailes. They doo therfore with a more conffante mynde perfeuer in theyr fyrft fayth which they receaued of faynt Andrew th[e]apofle and his fuccelfours and holy fathers, than doo manye of vs beinge diuided into fcifmes and fectes whiche thyng neuer chaunceth amonge them. But if any difficultie chaunce to rife as touchyng the fayth or custome of religion, all is referred to the archbyffhoppe and other byffhoppes as to bee defined by theyr fpirite: not permyttinge any iudgemente to the inconstant and ignorant people. Theyr archebyffhoppe is refidente in the citie of Mofca, where alfo Th[e]emperoure keepethe his courte. They haue lykewyfe dyuers other byffhops: as one in Nouigradia, where alfo Ifodorus was byffhop vnder pope Eugenius. They haue an other in Rofciua, an other in Suftali, an other in Otiferi: alfo in Smolne, in Refan, in Colmum, and in Volut, all which haue theyr dioces. They acknowledge theyr Archebyffhop as the chiefe. Before the patriarke of Conftantinople was oppreffed by the Tiranni of the Turkes, this Archebyffhoppe recognifed hym as his fuperioure. In fo much that this duke of Mofcouia and Emperour of Ruffia, not vnmyndefull hereof but a diligente obferuer of his accuftomed religion, dooth at this daye yearly

Gunnes.
Only the
moscouites haue
not felt the
commodities of
peace.
Theyr language.

Dalmatia.
Pannonia.
Hungarie.
Theyr original.
The Sclauon
tooenge reacheth
farre.

Great woods
white beares and
blacke woolues.

Abundance of
hony and waxe.

Rych fures.

Theyr maner of
bargenyng

Rude and wylde
people.
Tartares.

258

Ciuile people in
cities.

Theyr money

They embrace the
Christian fayth
whiche they
receaued of the
Apostles.
The counsaile of
Nicene.

Basilius Magnus.
Chriftofomus

Theyr conffancie
in theyr religion.

The byffhoppes
define
controuersies in
religion.
Theyr byffhops.

The
Archebyffhoppe.
The patriarke of
Conftantinople.
A notable exemple
of a Christian
prync.

fende a certeyne stypende in maner of almes to the patriarche of Constantinople, that he may with more quiete mynd looke for th[e]nde of this his Egiptian feruitude vntyll it shal please almyghty god to restore hym to his former church and autoritie. For he iudgeth it much impietie, if he shulde nowe forsake hym whose prediceffoures haue ruled and gouerned fo many churches, and of whom the fayth and religion of fo many regions and prouinces haue depended.

But to speake briefly of theyr religion, they agree in many thynges with vs, and in sum thynges folow the Greekes. They haue munkes and religious men. Not farre from the cite of Mosca, they haue a great monasterie in the whiche are three hundreth munkes lyuyng vnder the rule of Basilius Magnus in the which is also the fepulcher of S. Sergius the abbot. They obserue theyr vowe of chafitie which none may breake that haue once professed. Yet such as haue married virgins of good fame, may bee admitted to th[e] order of presthod, but may neuer bee a munke. The prestes and bysshops whiche are admitted to orders vnmarried, may neuer after bee married: nor yet such as haue wiues, mary ageine when they are dead, but lie in perpetual chafitie. Such as committe adulterie or fornication, are greeuously punysshed by the bysshoppes and deprived of the benefices. They celebrate masse after the maner of the Greekes which differeth from owres in dyuers thynges, as in fermented breade after the maner of the Greekes. They put in the chalesse as much water as redde wine, which water they vse to heate, bycause (not without a great mysterie) there isshewed furth of the syde of owre lorde, both blud and water, which wee ought by good reason to thynke was not without heate: for els shulde it fcarfely haue byn iudged for a miracle. In fine, they affirme that all theyr customes and rytes are accordyng to th[e] institutions of the primatyue church and the doctrine of Basilius Magnus, and Chriftostomus. In this thyng they dyffer greatly from vs, that they minister the communion to younge children of three yeares of age, which they doo with fermented breade dipte in a sponefull of wyne, and gyue it them for the bodye and bludde of Chryfte.

Theyr religion.
A monasterie of
ccc. [three
hundred] monkes

Prestes.

Masse.

A mysterie.

The primatyue
church.
A straunge
custome.

☛ *A briefe description of Moscouia after the later wryters, as Sebastian Munster and Iacobus Gastaldus.*

259



The prouince of Moscouia, is so named by the ryuer Mosco which passeth by the metropolitane cite of Moscouia cauled Mosca by the name of the ryuer Mosco. This prouince was cauled of the owlde wryters, Sarmatia Asiatica. The bortherers or confines to the Moscouians on the one syde towarde the East, are the Tartars cauled Nogai, and the Scianbanians, with the Zagatians. Towarde the West, the prouinces of Liuania and Lituania. Towarde the South, the ryuer of Tanais and the people confinyng with the ryuer Volga, cauled of the owld wryters Rha. And towarde the North, the Ocean sea cauled the Scythian sea, and the region of Lapponia. Moscouia is in maner all playne and full of marysshes, wooddes, and many very great ryuers wherof the ryuer of Volga is the principal. Sum caul this Ledy, as the owld autours named it Rha. It beginneth at the great lake cauled Lacus Albus (that is) the white lake and runneth into the sea of Bachau, named of the aunciente wryters, the sea Caspium or Hircanum. Vnder the dominion of Moscouia, are certeyne regions and dukedoomes: as Alba Ruffia (that is) whyte Ruffia. Also Colmogora, Plefcouia, Bafrida, Nouogardia, with also manye places of the Tartars which are subiecte to the duke of Moscouia. The chiefe cities of Moscouia, are Mosca, Plefcouia, Nouogardia, Colmogora, Otogeria, Viatra, Smolenser, Percaflauia, Cologna, Volodemaria, Rostauia, and Caffam. The people of Moscouia are Christians, and haue greate abundaunce of hony and waxe: also ryche fures, as Sabels, Marternes, Foynes, Calaber, and dyuers other. All the Tartars which inhabite towarde the East beyonde the ryuer of Volga, haue no dwellyng places, nor yet cities or castels. But cary about with theym certeyne cartes or wagens couered with beastes hydes, vnder the whiche they reffe, as wee do in owre houfes.

Sarmatia asiatica.

The Scythian
Ocean.

The ryuer of
Volga.
Lacus albus.

The Caspian sea.

Theyr chiefe cities.

The wyld Tartars

They remoue togyther in great companies whiche they caule Hordas. They are warlike people and good horsemen, and are all Macometistes.

Hordas.

Sebastian Munster in his booke of Vniuersall Cosmographie, wryteth that the cite of Mosca or Moscouia containeth in circuite. xiiii. [fourteen] myles, and that it is twyfe as bygge as the cite of Praga in Bohemie. Of the countrye of Moscouia, bisyde other prouinces subiecte to the same, he wryteth thus. It extendeth in largeness foure hundreth myles, and is rich in syluer. It is lawfull for no man to go owt of the realme or coome in without the dukes letters. It is playne without mountaynes, and ful of wooddes and marysshes. The beastes there by reason of the coule, are lesse then in other countreis more fouthwarde. In the myddest of the cite

The bygnes of the
cite of Moscouia.

Syluer.
The region of
Moscouia.
Beastes

A fayre and
stronge castel in
the cite of Mosca.

The dukes
pallaice.
Theyr drynke.

They are gyuen to
drunkennesse.

Corne and grayne.

Stoues.

The famous ryuer
of Tanais.

260

The marysshes of
Meotis.

Volga.

Ocha.

The sea Euxinum.

The forest of
hircania.

Vri.

Alces.

They trauayl in
wynter on sledes.

Causeys of tymber.

Trees and frutes.

Corne and grayne.

Hony in wode and
trees.

Lakes or pooles of
hony.

A man almost
drowned in hony.

A marueilous
chaunce.

Beares feede of
hony and bees.

Beares innade
bulles.

The beares byrth.

of Mosca beinge situate in a playne, there is a castell with. xvii. towres and three bulwarkes so stronge and fayre, that the lyke are scarcely feene in any other place. There are also in the castell xvi. churches, and three very large courtes in the which the noble men of the courte haue theyr lodgynges. The dukes pallaice is buylded after the maner of the Italian buyldyng, and very fayre, but not great. Theyr drynke is mede and beere as is the maner of the moſte parte of the people that inhabite the North partes of the worlde. They are exceedyngely gyuen to droonkenneſſe. Yet (as fume faye) the princes of the lande are prohibite in peine of death to abſteine from ſuch ſtronge drinckes as are of force to inebriate, except at certeyne tymes when licence is graunted theym, as twyfe or thryfe in the yere. They plowe the grownde with horſes and plowes of woodde. Theyr corne and other grayne by reaſon of longe coulde, doo ſeldome waxe rype on the ground by reaſon wherof they are ſumtimes inforced to rype and dry them in theyr ſtooues and hottes houſes, and then grynd them. They lacke wyne and oyle. Moscouia is extended vnto Iurham and Corelia which are in Scythia. The famous ryuer of Tanais, the Moscouites caule Don, hauyng his ſprynges and originall in Moscouia in the dukedome of Rezenſe. It ryfeth owt of a grownde that is playne, baren, muddy, full of maryſſhes and wooddes. And where it proceadeth toward the Eaſt to the mountaynes of Scithia and Tartarie, it bendeth to the ſouth: and comyng to the maryſſhes of Meotis it fauleth into them. The ryuer of Volga (ſumetyme cauled Rha, and nowe cauled of the Tartars Edel) runneth toward the north certeyne myles, to whom is ioyned the ryuer Occa or Ocha, flowyng owt of Moscouia, and then bendyng into the South and increaſed with many other ryuers, fauleth into the ſea Euxinum, which diuideth Europe and Aſia. The woodde or foreſt cauled Hircania ſylua, occupieth a ſmal portion of Moscouia. Yet is it ſumwhere inhabited, and by the longe labour of men made thinner and barer of trees. In that parte that lyeth toward Pruffia, is a kynde of greate and fierce bulles cauled Vri or Biſomes, as wryteth Paulus Iouinus. There are alſo Alces muche lyke vnto hartes, with longe ſnoutes of fleſſhe and longe legges without any bowinge of theyr houx or paſternes. Theſe beaſtes, the Moscouites caule Lozzi, and the Almaynes Helenes. The iornaye that is betwene Vlva of Lituania by Smolenſe to Moſca, is trauayled in wynter on sledes by the ſnowe congeled by longe froſte, and made very ſlypperye and compacte lyke Iſe by reaſon of much wearyng and treadyng, by meanes wherof this vyage is performed with incredible celeritie. But in the ſommer, the playne countreys can not bee ouercome without difficulte labour. For when the ſnowe begynneth to bee diſſolued by continuall heate, it cauſeth maryſſhes and quamyres inextricable and daungerous both for horſe and man, were it not for certeyne cauſeyes made of tymber with in maner infinite labour. The region of Moscouia (as I haue ſaid) beareth neyther vynes nor olyue trees, nor yet any other trees that bere any apples or frutes of very pefant or ſwete fauour or taſte except chery trees, for as much as al tender frutes and trees are burnt of the coulde blaſtes of the North wynde. Yet doo the fieldes beare all kyndes of corne, as wheate and the grayne cauled Siligo, wherof the ſyneſt kynde of breade is made: alſo mylle and panyke, whiche the Italians caule Melica: Likewyſe all kyndes of pulſe, as beanes, peafon, tares, and ſuche other. But theyr chife harueſt conſiſteth of hony and waxe, forasmuch as the hole region is replenyſhed with frutefull bees which make moſt ſweete hony, not in the huſbande mens hyues, but euen in holowe trees. And hereby commeth it to paſſe that both in the wooddes and ſhalowed launes, are feene many ſwarms of bees hangyng on the bowes of trees, ſo that it ſhall not bee neceſſarie to caule them togyther or charme theym with the founde of baſens. There are oftentymes founde greate maſſes of hony combs, conſerued in trees of the owlde hony forſaken of bees, forasmuch as the huſband men can not ſeeke euery tree in ſo great and large wooddes: In ſo much that in the flockes or bodies of exceedyng great and holowe trees, are ſumtimes founde great pooles or lakes of hony. Demetrius th[e]ambaffadour of the duke of Moscouia whom he ſent to the byſhop of Rome not many yeaes ſence, made relation that a huſbande man of the contrey not farre from the place where he remayned, ſeekyng in the wooddes for hony, deſcended into a greate holowe tree full of hony into the which he ſlypte vp to the breſt, and lyued there only with hony for the ſpace of two dayes, caulynge in vayne for helpe in that deſerte of wooddes. And that in ſine diſpayryng of helpe, he eſcaped by a marueilous chaunce, beinge drawn owt by a great beare that deſcended into the tree, with her loynes downward after the maner of men. For when the man (as preſent neceſſitie and oportunitie ſerued) perceaned the beare to bee within his reache, he ſuddeinly claſped her about the loynes with his armes, and with a terrible crye prouoked the beaſt to inforce her ſtrength to leape owt of the tree, and therewith to drawe hym owt, as it chaunced in deede.

Theſe regions abounde with beares whiche euery where ſeeke both hony and bees, not only herewith to fyl theyr bellies, but alſo to heipe theyr fyght. For theyr eyes are oftentymes dulled, and theyr mouthes wounded of the bees: both which greefes are eaſed by eatyng of hony. They haue weakeſt heades, as lions haue ſtrongeſt. In ſo muche that when (beinge therto inforced) they caſte them ſelues downe headlonge from any rockes, they couer theyr heades with theyr fiete, and lye for a tyme aſtoonyſhed and halfe deade with knockes. They walke ſumtyme on two fiete, and ſpoyle trees backwarde. Sumtyme alſo they innade bulles, and ſo hange on them with al theyr fiete, that they wery them with weight. The beare (as fayth Plinie)

bryngeth furth her byrth the. xxx. [thirtieth] day and oftentimes two. Their byrth is a certeyne whyte masse of flesshe without forme and little bigger then a moufe without eyes, and without heare, with onely the nayles or clawes commynge fourth. But the damme with continuall lyckynge, by lyttle and lyttle figurethe the informe byrthe. When shee entereth into the denne whiche shee hath chofen, shee creepeth thither with her belly vpwarde leste the place shulde bee founde by the steeppes of her fiete. And being there deliuered of her byrthe, remayneth in the same place for the space of. xiiii. dayes immoueable as wryteth Aristoteles. They lyue without meate fortie dayes, and for that tyme susteyne them selues only by lyckynge and fuckyng their ryght foote. At the lengthe chaunfyng to fynde meate, they fyll theym selues so full, that they remedy that furfecte by vomyte whiche they prouoke by eatynge of antes. Their byrthe is oppressed with so heauy a sleape for the space of. xiiii. dayes, that it can not bee rayfed eyther with prickinge or woundes, and in the meane tyme growe exceedynge fat. After. xiiii. dayes they wake from sleepe, and begyn to licke and fucke the soles of theyr fore fiete and lyue thereby for a space: Nor yet is it apparent that they liue by any other meate vntyll the sprynge tyme of the year. At whiche tyme begynnynge to runne abrode, they feede of the tender buds and younge sprigges or braunches of trees, and other herbes correspondent to theyr lypes.

Before fise hundreth yeares, the Moscouites honoured the goddesses of the gentyles: And then fyrste receaued the Christian faith when the byffhoppes of Grecia began to discent from the churche of the Latines: and therefore receaued the rites of the Greekes. They minister the sacrament with fermented breade vnder both kyndes: And thinke that the foules of deade menne are not helped with the suffragies of preestes, nor yet by the deuotion of theyr frendes or kinffolkes: Also that the place of Purgatorie is a fable. In the tyme of the diuine seruice, the hyftorie of the miracles of Christe and the Epistels of saynt Paule are rehearfed owt of the pulpitte. Beyonde Moscouia, are manye people whiche they caule Scythians, and are partely subiecte to the Prince of Moscouia. These are they which duke Iuan subdued, as are the people of Perm, Baskird, Czriremiffa, Iuhra, Corela, and Permska. These people were Idolatours before the duke compelled theym to baptisfme, and appoynted a byffhop ouer them named Steuen, whom the Barbarians after the departure of the duke, fleyde alyue and slewe. But the duke returnyng shortly after, afflicted them fore and assigned them a newe byffhoppe.

It is here also to bee noted that the owlde Cosmographers fayned that in these regions towarde the Northe pole, there shuld bee certeyne great mountaynes which they cauled Ripheos and Hyperboreos, which neuerthelesse are not founde in nature. It is also a fable that the ryuers of Tanais and Volham doo sprynge owt of hygh mountaynes, wheras it is apparent that both these ryuers and many other, haue their originall in the playnes.

Nexste to Moscouia, is the frutefull region of Colmogora through the whiche runneth the ryuer of Diuidna beinge the greatest that is knowen in the north partes of the world. This ryuer increafeth at certeyne tymes of the yeare as dooth the ryuer of Nilus in Egypte, ouerfloweth the fyeldes round abowt, and with abundaunce of fatte moysture, resisteth the couldnesse of the ayer. Wheate sowne in the grounde, groweth abundantly without plowynge: and fearynge the newe iniurie of the proude ryuer, spryngeth, groweth, and rypeth with woonderfull celeritie of haftyng nature.

Into the ryuer of Diuidna runneth the ryuer of Iuga: And in the very angle or corner where they meete, is a famous marte towne named Vstiuga, beinge a hundreth and fyftie myles distant from the chiefe citie of Mosca. To this mart towne from the hygher countreys, are sent the precious furies of marternes, fables, woolues and such other whiche are exchanged for dyuers other kyndes of wares and marchaundies.

Hytherto Munsterus.

And forasmuche as many doo maruaile that fuche plentie of hony shuld bee in so coole a contrey, I haue thought good to declare the reason and naturall cause hereof. It is therefore to be considered that lyke as spices, gums, and odoriferous frutes are engendered in hot regions by continuall heate duryng al the hole yeare without impressiō of the mortifying qualitie of could wherby al thynges are constryned as they are dilated by heate, euen so in could and moyst regions (whose moysture is thinner and more wateryslike then in hot regions) are flowres engendered more abundantly as caused by impressiō of lesse and faynter heate woorkynge in thynne matter of wateryslike moysture lesse concocte then the matter of gummess and spices and other vinctuous frutes and trees growing in hotte regions. For althoughe (as Munster faithe here before) the region of Moscouia beareth nother vines or oliues, or any other frutes of sweete fauoure by reason of the couldnesse therof, neuerthelesse forasmuch as floures (wherof hony is chiefly gathered) may in fommer feason growe abundantly in the playnes, marysshes, and wooddes, not onely on the grownde but also on trees in coulde regions, it is agreeable to good reason that great plentie of honye shulde bee in fuche regions as abounde with floures, which are brought furthe with the fyrst degree of heate and fyrst approach of the sonne, as appeareth in the sprynge tyme not onely by the springinge of floures in fyeldes and gardeynes, but also of blossomes of trees sprynge before the leaues or frute, as the lyghter and thynner matter fyrste drawne owte with the lowest and leaste degree of heate, as the

261
The beares denne.

Beares lyue without meate. xl. [forty] dayes.
The sleape of beares.

The religion of the Moscouites.

The Scythians subiecte to the duke of Moscouia.

It was then an opinion that al ryuers spronge owte of mountaines

The frutefull region of Colmogora.
The great riuer Diuidna.
Wheate without plowing

The ryuer of Iuga.
Vstiuga.
Furies.

The naturall cause of much hony in could regions.
Gummess and spices in hot countreys.

Floures in coulde regions
262

Floures of trees.

Blossomes of trees.

An exemple of the degrees of heate.

The generation of floures by moderate heate.

Longe dayes and shorte nyghtes. Eranble and ferne. Spices.

The sauoure of floures.

What Plinie wryteth of hony.

Serius is otherwyse cauled Canicula, this is the dogge, of whom the canicular dayes haue theyr name.

What is hony

Howe hony is corrupted.

Hony of great quantitie in North regions

263

Hot nyghtes in coulde regions.

A simillitude.

Natural heat dooth subtyle and digest all thynges.

Subtyle vapours digested by heate.

Could regions

Ziglerus.

lyke is seene in the arte of flyllynge wherby all thinne and lyght moystures are lyfted vp by the fyrste degree of the fyre: and the heuyest and thickest moystures are drawne owt with more vehement fyre. As we may therefore in this case compare the generation of floures to the heate of May, the generation of gummess to the heate of Iune and spices to the heate of Iuly. Euen so in fuche coulde regions whose foommer agreeth rather with the temperate heate and moysture of May then with th[e]xtreeme heate of the other monethes, that heate is more apt to brynge forth abundance of floures as thynges caused by moderate heate, as playnely appeareth by theyr taft and faoure in which is no sharpe qualitie of heate eyther bytyng the tooonge or offending the head as is in spices, gummess, and frutes of hotte regions. And as in could and playne regions, moderate heate with abundance of moifure, are causes of the generation of floures (as I haue sayde) so lykewyse the length of the dayes and shortheffe and warmenesse of the nyghtes in foommer feason in fuche coulde regions, is a greate helpe herunto. Cardanus wryteth in his booke *De Plantis*, that bramble and fearne growe not but in could regions, as dooth wheate in temperate regions. And that spices and hotte feedes, can not growe in could regions, forasmuch as beinge of thinne substaunce, they shulde soone be mortified and extinct by excessiue could. For (as he sayth) nothing can concocte, rype, and attenuate the substance of frutes without the helpe of ayer agreable to the natures of such thynges as are brought forth in the same, althowgh it may doo this in rootes. But in maner all floures are of sweete faouour, forasmuch as the moysture that is in them, being thinne and but lyttle, is by meane heate soone and easely concocte or made rype. Such also as are soone rype, are soone rotten according to the prouerbe.

Plinie, althowgh in the. xi. booke of his naturall hy storie, Cap. viii. he wryteth that hony is gathered of the floures of all trees and fets of plantes, except forell and the herbe cauled *Chenopode* (which fume caule goofe foote) yet he affirmeth that it descendeth from the ayer: for in the. xii. chapyture of the same booke, he wryteth thus.

This commeth from the ayer at the ryfynge of certeyne starres, and especially at the ryfynge of *Sirius*, and not before the ryfynge of *Vergiliae* (which are the feuen starres cauled *Pleiades*) in the sprynge of the day. For then at the mornynge sprynge, the leaues of trees are founde moist with a fat dewe: In so much that such as haue bynne abrode vnder the firmamente at that tyme, haue theyr apparell annoynted with lyquoure and the heare of theyr headde clammy. And whether this bee the swette of heauen, or as it were a certeyne spettyl of the starres, eyther the iuife of the ayer pouryng it selfe, I wolde it were pure, liquide, and simple of his owne nature as it fyrste fauleth from aboue. But nowe descendyng so far, and infected not only with such vnclane vapoures and exhalations, as it meteth with by the way, but afterward also corrupted by the leaues of trees, herbes, and floures of fundrye tastes and qualities, and lykewyse aswel in stomackes of the bees (for they vomite it at their mouthes) as also by longe referuyng the same in hiues, it neuerthelesse reteyneth a great parte of the heauenly nature. &c. Ageyne in the. xiiii. chapyture of the same booke, he wryteth that in certeyne regions toward the north, as in sum places of Germanie, hony is found in such quantitie that there haue bynne seene hony combes of eyght foote longe, and blacke in the holowe parte. By the whiche woordes of Plinie, and by the principles of naturall philosphie, it dooth appere that abundaunce of hony shulde chiefly bee engendered in such regions where the heate of foommer is temperate and continuall aswell by nyght as by day as it is not in hotte regions where the nyghtes be longe and coulde as is declared in the Decades. For lyke as fuche thynges as are fynyed by continuall heate, mouynge, and circulation, are hyndered by refrigeration or coulde (as appereth in the art of flyllynge and hatchynge of egges) euen so by the action of temperate and continuall heate without interposition of contrarie and mortifyng qualitie, crude thynges are in shorte tyme made rype, fower made sweete, thicke made thinne, heauie made lyght, grosse made subtyle, harde made softe, deade made lyuyng, and in fine bodies made spirites, as manifestly appeareth in the marueylous woorke of dygestion of lyuyng beastes, wherby the finest part of theyr nurishment is turned into bludde, and the finest of that bludde conuerted into spirites, as the like is also seene in the nurishment of trees, plantes, and herbes, and all other thynges that growe on the grounde, all whiche are moued, digested, subtiliate, attenuate, ryped, and made sweete by the action of this continuall heate wherof I haue spoken. To conclude therefore, if hony bee eyther the swette of the starres, or the iuife of the ayer pouryng it selfe (as plinie writeth) or other wyse engendered of subtyle and fine vapoures ryfynge from the earth, and concocte or digested in the ayer by the sayd continuall and moderate heate, it may seeme by good reason that the same shulde bee engendered in foommer feason more abundantly in could regions then in hot, for the causes afore sayde. And that it may by autoritie and reason more manifestly appere bothe that the heate of foommer in could regions is continual (as I haue sayd) and also that the coulde in wynter is not there so intollerable to th[e] inhabitants of those regions as other doo thinke, I haue thought good for the better declaration hereof to adde hereunto what I haue gathered owt of the booke of Ziglerus wrytten of the north regions.

OF THE NORTH REGIONS AND OF THE MODERATE AND CONTINVALL HEATE

in coulde regions atwell in the nyght as in the day in
foommer feason: Also howe those regions are
habitable to th[e]inhabitauntes of the
fame, contrary to th[e]oppinion
of the owlde wryters.



F this matter, Ziglerus in his booke of the Northe regions in the description of Scandia wryteth as foloweth.

Wee wyll intreate of this matter, not as puttyng the fame in question as dyd the owld wryters, nor gatherynge iudgement deducted of reasons in way of argument, forasmuch as wee are already more certeyne by hystorie that these coulde regions are inhabited. Wee wyll fyrst therfore shewe by naturall reason and by consideration of the spher, declare how by the helpe of man and arte, coulde regions are inhabited withoutt damage or destruction of luyng beastes: And wyll fyrste speake of the qualitie of sommer, declarynge howe it is there augmented. Yet intende I not to comprehende all that maye bee fayde in this matter, but only rehearse such reasons and similitudes as are most apparet and easy to bee vnderfloode.

In such regions therfore, as are extended from the burnte line or Equinoctiall towarde the north, as much as the sonne ryfethe hygher ouer them, so muche are they the more burnte with heate, as Affrica, bycause it ryfeth hyghest ouer them as they are nearest to the Equinoctiall: and taryng with them so much the shorter time causeth shorter days, with longer and colder nyghtes to restore the damage of the day past by reason of the moifure consumed by vapour. But in such regions ouer the which the sonne ryfeth lower (as in Sarmatia) it remayneth there the longer in the day, and causeth so much the shorter and warmer nyghtes, as reteynyng warme vapoures of the day past, which vapours helpe the woorke of the day. I speake as I haue founde by experience, saythe Vp[s]alien[s]is. For I haue felt the sommer nyghtes scarsely tollerable for heate in Gothlande, wheras I felte them coulde in Rome. This benefite of th[e]-increase of the day, doth augment so much the more in coulde regions as they are nearer the poles: and ceaceth not vntyll it coome directly ouer the center or poynte of the axes or axceltree of the worlde, where the sonne beinge at the hyghest in sommer, is eleuate abowt. xxiiii. degrees: In which regions, one continual day consisteth of vi. monethes from the spryng tyme by the standyng of the soonne (cauled Solstitium) in the signe of Cancer to Autumne. The soonne therfore, withoutt any offence of the night, gyueth his influence vpon those landes with heate that neuer ceafethe duryng that tyme which maketh to the great increase of foommer by reason of continuance. We haue now therfore thought good to gather by a certeyne coniecture howe greatly wee thinke the foommer to bee increased hereby.

Wee haue before declared howe hyghe the soonne is eleuate ouer the regions that are vnder the poles at the slaye of the soonne: And so manye partes is it eleuate in Rome at the slay of the soonne in wynter (that is) at the shortest day in the yeare. But here, in the mydde wynter, the soonne at noone tyde is beneficiall, and bryngeth fourth floures, rofes, and ielefloures. I haue gathered sum in wynter in the moneth of December, not procured at home by humane arte, but growinge in open gardenes in maner in euery bedde vnder the bare heauen, browght fourth only by the soonne. But this benignite of the soonne, continueth not past fiew houres

Ziglerus.

The qualitie of
soomer in coulde
regions.The course of the
sonne.Vapours.
Short and Warne
nyghtes.

Gothlande

264
One day of. vi
monethes.Howe the sommer
is increased in
coulde regions.

Rome.

Could nights in hot regions.

The Romane wynter.

One nyght of vi. monethes Obiections.

The twylyghtes. The lyght of the moone.

The nyght vnder the pole.

A demonstration.

265

The Moone.

Remedies of nature and arte.

The owlde wryters perswaded by coniecture.

A brasen pot broken with frost.

in the naturall day, forasmuch as th[e]operation therof is extinct by the couldeneffe of the nyght folowyng. But if this benefite myght bee receaued without hindaunce of the nyght, as it is vnder the poles, and so continue many monethes in hot regions vnto wynter, it shulde fuerlye brynge forth the manye woonderfull thynges, if moysture sayled not. And by this condition thus propounded, wee may well conceaue that the Romane winter, although it be not hotte, yet to be equal in heate to the full spryng tyme in the same cite duryng the tyme of the fayde five houres. And thus by a similitude of the height of the foonne vnder bothe places, and of the knowen qualitie of the Romane heauen, and by th[e]accesse of the foonne to such places where the longest day continueth certeyne monethes, wee maye gather that sommer in places vnder the pole, is lyke vnto and equall with the full Romane spryng.

But the more difficulte question, is of the tyme of the. vi. moonethes in the whiche the foonne leaueth those regions, and go[e]th by the contrarye or ouerthwarte circle towarde the fourth in wynter. For they say that at that tyme, those regions are deformed with horrible darkeneffe and nyghtes not increased, which may be the cause that beastes can not feke theyr foode. And that also the could shulde then bee intollerable: by which double euyls all thynges constrained shulde dye, so that no beaste were able to abyde th[e]iniuries of wynter and famen insuinge therof: but that all beastes shulde perysshe before the sommer folowyng, when they shulde bringe furth theyr broode or succession: And that for these causes, the fayde could clime shulde bee perpetually defolate and vnhabitable. To al which obiections, we answere in this maner

As touchyng the nyghtes not increased, I faye, that it was not conuenient to assume that for any reason. For not as the foonne fauleth, so suddely commeth the darke night but that the euenyng dooth substitute and prolonge the day longe after, as also the day spryng or dawyng of the daye gyueth a certeyne lyght before the ryfinge of the foonne: After the whiche, the residue of the nyght that receaueth no light by the fayde euenyng and mornyng twilightes, is accompysshed by the lyght of the moone, so that the nyghtes are seldome vnaugmented. Let this bee an exemple proued by owre temperate regions, wherby we may vnderstande the condition of the nyght vnder the pole. Therefore euen there also the twilightes helpe the nyght a longe tyme, as we wyl more presently demonstrate. It is approued by the Astronomers, that the foonne descendencyng from the highest halfe spher by. xviii. paralels of the vnder horizon, makethe an ende of the twilight, so that at the lengthe the darke nyght succedeth: And that the foonne approachyng, and ryfynge aboute the the highest halfe spher by as many paralels, dooth dimynyshe the nyght and increase the twylyght. Ageyne, by the position or placeinge of the spher vnder the pole, the same is the horizontall that is the Equinoctiall. Those paralels therefore that are paralels to the horizontal line, are also paralels to the Equinoctiall. So that the foonne descendencyng there vnder the horizon, dooth not bryng darke nyghtes to those regions vntyll it coomme to the paralele distant. xviii. partes from the Equinoctiall.

Other demonstrations hereof are made by certeyne figures of Astronomie, whiche I wolde haue added hereunto but that I could not gette the same grauen or cutte.

Duryng the tyme of these fayde fyxe moonethes of darkeneffe vnder the pole, the nyght is destitute of the benefite of the foonne and the fayde twylyghtes, onely for the space of three moonethes, in the whiche the foonne goeth and returneth by the portion of the ouerthwart circle. But yet neyther this tyme of three moonethes is without remedye frome heauen. For the moone with her full globe increased in lyghte, hath accesse at that tyme, and illuminateth the moonethes lackyng lyght, euery one by them selues, halfe the course of the moonethe: by whose benefite it coommeth to passe that the night, named as vnaugmented, possesseth those regions no longer then one mooneth and a halfe, neyther that continually or al at one tyme: but this also diuided into three sorts of shorter nyghtes, of the whiche euery one endureth for the space of twoo weekes, and are illuminate of the moone accordyngly. And this is the reason conceaued of the poure of the spher wherby we testifie that the sommers and nyghtes vnder the pole, are tollerable to luyng beastes.

But wee wyl nowe declare by other remedies of nature and arte, that this could so greatly feared, is more remisse and tollerable then owre opinion: so that compared to the nature of such beastes as liue there, it may bee abydden. And there is no doubt but there are autours of more antiquitie then that age in the which any thyng was exactly knowen or discouered of the north regions. The owlde wryters therefore perswaded onely by naked coniecture, dydde gather what they myght determine of those places: Or rather by the estimation of heauen, the which, bycause they felte it to be hardely tollerable to them selues, and lesse to men borne in the clyme of Egypte and Grecia, tooke therby an argument of the hole habitable earth. The hystorie of Strabo is knowen, that a potte of brasse which was broken in sunder with frosen water, was brought from Pontus and shewed in Delphis in token of a greuous wynter. Here therefore, they that so greatly feared the winter (such as chaunceth to the earth vnder the. xlvi. [forty-eighth] paralele) and therefore consecrated that broken pot to the temple of Apollo, what could such men trewly define vpon regions so farre without that paralele, whether they were inhabited or not? But such as folowed these, being contented with th[e]inuentions of the owlde autours,

and borne in maner vnder the same qualitie of heauen, perfisted wyllngly in the same opinion, with more confidence then consideration of the thynges whereof wee nowe intreate: so lightly was that opinion receaved as touching the vnhabitable clime vnder the poles. But we with better confidence and faithe (forasmuch as we are not instructed with coniectures) intend to flande ageynst the sentence of the owld autours: Affirming the north regions within the coulde clime to bee inhabyted with hearynges, coddess, haddockes, and brettes, tunnyes, and other great fysshes, with th[e] infinite number wherof, tables are furnysshed through a great parte of Europe: Al whiche are taken in the north sea extended beyonde our knoweledge. This sea at certeyne tymes of the yeare, poureth furth his plentifulnesse, or rather dryueth furth his increase to feke newe mansions, and are here taken in theyr passage. Furthermore also, euen the mouthes of the riuier of Tyber receaue a fyssh as a newe gest sent from the north sea. This swamme twyfe through Fraunce and twife through Spayne: Ouerpassed the Ligurian and Tufcan sea to communicate her selfe to the citie of Rome. The lakes also and ryuers of those regions are replenysshed with fyssh: In so much that no poure of coulde is able to extinguyssh the th[e] increase of the yeare folowinge, and the succession reparable fo many hundreth yeares. And I playnely thinke, that yf it shulde of necessitie folowe, that one of these two elementes, the earthe and the water, shulde be destructiue to luyng creatures, the water shulde chiefly haue wrought this effecte. But this is founde so tractable, that in the diepe wynter, both that increase is brought furth, and fysshynge is also exercised. The lande is lykewise inhabited with lyke plentifulnesse. But that we wander not to farre: Let the fayth hereof rest in th[e] exposition folowynge, wherin we intend to declare howe by the poure of nature and industry of man, this commoditie may coomme to passe. Therefore as touchynge nature, wee suppose that the diuine prouidence hath made nothyng vncommunicable, but to haue gyuen such order to all thynges wherby euery thyng maye bee tollerable to the nexte. The extremities of the elementes consent with theyr next. The ayer is grosse about the earth and water: But thinne and hotte about the fyre. By this prouidence of nature, the vttermost sea is very falte. And falte (as wytnesseth Plinie) yeldeth the fatnesse of oyle. But oyle, by a certeyne natiue heate, is of propertie agreable to fyre. The sea then, beinge all of such qualitie, poureth furth it selfe far vpon th[e] extreme landes, whereby by reason of the falteneffe therof, it moueth and stereth vp generatiue heate, as by fatnesse it noryssheth the fecunditie of thynges generate. It gyueth this frutfulness to the earth at certeyne fluds, although the earth also it selfe, haue in his inner bowels the same liuely and nurysshynge heate, wherby not only the dennes, caues and holowe places, but also sprynges of water are made warme: And this so much the more, in howe muche the wynter is more vehement. This thyng dooth more appere by this exemple, that the mountaynes of Norway and Suethlande are fruteful of metals, in the which, syluer and copper are concocte and molten into veynes, which can scarcely bee doonne in furnaces. By this reason also, the vapours and hotte exhalations perceinge the earthe and the waters, and throwge both those natures breathynge furth into the ayer, tempereth the qualitie of heauen and maketh it tollerable to beastes, as wytnesseth the huge byggenesse of the whales in those seas, with the strength of bodye and longe lyfe of suche beastes as liue on the lande: whiche thyng coulde not bee, excepte all thynges were there commodiously nurysshed by the benefite of the heauen and the ayer. For nothyng that in the tyme of increase is hyndered by any iniurie, or that is euyll fedde all the tyme it lyueth, can prosper well. Neyther are such thynges as lyue there, offended with theyr naturall wynter as though an Egiptian or Ethiopian were suddeynly conueyed into those coulde regions. For they were in longe tyme by lyttle and lyttle brought fyrst acquaynted with the nature of that heauen, as may be proued both by the lyfe of man and by the historie of holy scripture. They that were led from Mesopotania, and that famous towre of Babilon towarde the north partes of the worlde in the fyrst dispartion of nations, dyd not immediatly passe to th[e] extreme boundes, but planted theyr habitations fyrst vnder a myddle heauen betwene both, as in Thracia and Pontus, where theyr posteritie was accustomed the better to susteyne the rygoure of Scythia and Tanais, as he that commeth from winter to sommer, maye the better after abyde the heat and snowe beinge fyrst hardened therto by the frostes of Autumne. In lyke maner mortall men, accustomed to beare the hardenesse of places nexte vnto theym, were therby at the length more confirmed to susteyne the extremes. And here also, if any sharpenesse remayne that maye seeme intollerable, nature hathe prouyded for the same with other remedies. For the lande and sea, hathe gyuen vnto beastes, diepe and large caues, dennes, and other holowe places and secrete corners in mountaynes and rockes, bothe on the lande and by the sea bankes, in the which are euer conteyned warme vapoures so much the more intent and vehement, in howe much they are the more constraigned by extreme coulde. Nature hath also gyuen valleys diuerted and defended from the north wyndes. Shee hath lykewise couered beastes with heare so much the thicker in howe muche the vehemencie of coulde is greater: by reason wherof the best and rycheest fures are brought from those regions, as Sables whose price is growne to great excesse nexte vnto gold and precious stoness, and are esteemed princely ornamentes. The beastes that beare these fures, are hunted chiefly in wynter (which thyng is more straunge) bycause theyr heare is thenne thicker and cleaueth faster to the skyn. Howe greuous then shall we thinke the winter to bee there where this lyttle beast lyueth so well, and where the hunters may search

Fysshes of the North seas.

The North sea.

The qualitie of water.

The lande

The diuine prouidence in moderatyng the elementes

266

The nature of the sea.
Salte.
Generatiue heate.

Owtwarde coulde is cause of inward heate.

Metals.

Vapours and exhalations.
Whales.

Beastes.

Hereby maye bee considered the cause of the deathe of our men that sayle directly to Guinea.

No passage from one extremitie to another but by a meane.

Caues and dennes.

Valleys.

The best fures.
Sables.

Beastes that lye
hyd in wynter.

All beastes haue
the nature of the
place where they
are engendered.

267

What exercise
may doo.

Vse maketh
masteryes.

Scandia.

Scone. is fayre in
the duch toongue.

The fertilitie of
Scandia.

He meaneth
Diodorus Siculus.

Th[e]invasions of
the Gothes

Transilvania

268

the dennes and hauntes of fuch beastes throwghe the wooddes and snowe? But fuche beastes the condition of whose bodies is so tender that they are not able to abyde th[e]iniurie of coulde, eyther lye hydde in wynter, or chaunge theyr habitation, as do certeyne beastes also in owre clime. Nature hath furthermore gyuen remedie to man bothe by arte and industry to defende him selfe both abrode and at home. Abrode, with a thicke vesture, and the same well dowbeled. At home, with large fyers on harthes, chymyneys, and in flooues for the day, with clofe chambers, and couches, softe and warme beddes for the nyght: by whiche remedies they mitigate the winters which seeme rigorous to straungers, althowghe they are to th[e]inhabitauntes more tollerable then owre opinion, as in deede by the fyrst natural mixture or composition of theyr bodies, fuch thinges are agreeable to them as seeme very harde to other. The lion in Affrike and the beare in Sarmatia, are fierce as in theyr present strength and vigoure: but translated into a contrary heauen, are of lesse strength and courage. The foule cauled *Ciconia* (which sum thinke to bee the storke) dooth not tary the winter: yet doo the cranes coomme at that tyme. The Scythian wyll accuse the Romane heauen as induceinge feuers, wheras neuerthelesse there is none more holfoome. Such as haue byn tenderly brought vp, if they coomme suddely in to the campe, can not away with hunger, watchyng, heate, passages through ryuers, battayles, sieges, and assaultes. But the owld souldier exercised in the warres, vseth these as meditations of the field, as hardened therto by longe experience. He that hath byn accustomed to the shadowe of the cite, and wyll attempte the fayinge of the poet Virgil, *Nudus ara, fere nudus*, that is, naked and bare without house and home, shall to his perell make an ende of the verbe, *Habebis frigora febrem* (that is) he shall haue the coulde ague. Suche thynges therefore as seeme harde vnto vs, beinge accustomed by litle and litle, become more tollerable: In so much that this exercise of sufferaunce by fuch degrees, dooth oftentimes grow to prodigious effectes farre beyonde owre expectation. And thus wee seeme to haue made sufficient demonstration, by heauen, nature, and arte, whereby it may appere that no part of the lande or sea is denyed to luyng creatures. The reader may also perceau how large matter of reasons and exemples may bee opened for the declaryng of owre opinion wherein wee rest. Let therefore th[e] autoritie of the ancient autours gyue place, and the content of the newe wryters agree to this hystory, not as nowe at the length comprehended (whereas before many hundreth yeares Germanie and Scandia had entercourse of marchaundies not feuered by the large goulfe of Gothia) but as nowe by our commentaries brought to light. And hauyng sayde thus much in maner of a preface, we wyll nowe procede to wryte of the north regions.

SCHONDIA.



Chondia, Schondania, or Schondenmarchia, is as much to say as fayre Dania or fayre Denmarke.

Plinie in one place, nameth it Scandia, and in an other, Scandinavia if there bee no faute in th[e]exemplers. It was named Schondia, by reason of the fayrenesse and fruitfulnesse therof. And this aswell for that in beneficiall heauen, fertilitie of grounde, commoditie of hauens and marte townes, abudaunce of ryuers of fyfhe, plentie of beastes, great quantitie of metall, as golde, syluer, copper, and leade, diligent culturyng the grounde, with townes and cities wel inhabited and governed by ciuile lawes, it gyue the place to none other fortunate region.

This was in maner vnknown to the owld Greekes and Latins as may appere by this argumente that with one consente they affirmed that in these north regions the cold zone or clime, was condemned to perpetuall snowe intollerable to all luyng creatures. For few of them haue made mention hereof as to be inhabited. Amonge whom Plinie as one of the chiefe, sayth in his fourth booke, that Schondania is of vnknown byggenesse: and only that portion therof to be known which is inhabited with the nation of the Hilleuiones in fiftie vyllages. Neyther yet is Eningia lesse in opinion. Other more auncient then Plinie, haue placed most fortunate regions, with men of longe lyfe (whiche the Greekes caule *Macrobios*) and of moste innocente behaour vnder the tracte of those landes: and that there came from thence to Delphos, certeyne religious virgines with voves and gyftes consecrated to Apollo: And furthermore that that nation obserued this institution vntyll the fayde virgins were violated of them of whome they were receaued as straungers. These are most cleare testimonies of Antiquitie, both of the greatnesse of Schondia, and the people that inhabite the same, althowgh they were fence vnknown, as lykewyse the Gothes departyng from these north landes althowghe they obteyned Th[e] empire of the regions abowte the marisshes of Meotis and the coastes of the sea Euxinus, with the realme of Denmarke (wherof that is thought to bee a portion which is nowe cauled Transilvania) and the bankes of the ryuer of Danubius, and in fine inuaded the Romane Empire, yet were not the regions wel known from whene they tooke theyr originall. Therefore lyke as parte of the owld wryters are vn sufficient wytnesses to testifie of owre narrations as touchyng these landes vnknown to them, Euen so the other parte which excluded the same as vnhabitable, are to bee conuincd leaste theyr autoritie beinge admitted, shuld engender opinions not agreeable or conuenient to the nature of places. Sigismundus Liberus, in his commentaries of Mofcouia, wryteth thus. Scandia or

Scandia, is no Iland (as fume haue thought) but parte of the continete or firme lande of Suetia, which by a longe tracte reacheth to Gothlande: And that nowe the kynge of Denmarke poffesseth a great parte therof. But wheras the wryters of these things haue made Scandia greater then Suetia, and that the Gothes and Lumbardes came frome thense, they seeme in my opinion to comprehend these three kyngedomes as it were in one body, only vnder the name of Scandia, forasmuch as then, that parte of lande that lyeth betwene the fea Baltheum (whiche floweth by the coastes of Finlandia) and the frofen sea, was vnknown: And that by reason of fo many mariffhes, innumerable ryuers, and intemperatnesse of heauen, it is yet rude vncultured, and lyttle known. Which thyng hath byn the cause that summe iudged all that was cauled by the name of Scandia, to bee one great Ilande.

GRONLANDE.



Ronlande is interpreted greene lande: so cauled for the great increase and frutefulnesse of pasture. By reason wherof, what great plentie of cattayle there is, it may hereby appere that at such tyme as shippes may passe thither they set furth great heapes of cheefe and butter to bee fould, wherby wee coniecture that the lande is not rowgh with barren mountaynes. It hath two Cathedrall Churches vnder th[e]ordination of Nidrosia. To one of these, was of late yeares a byshop appoynted onely by the tittle of a suffragane in consideration that while the metropolitane dooth neglect the direction of religion for the distance of the place and difficult nauigation, the people is in maner faulne to gentilitie, beinge of them selfe of mouable wyttes and gyuen to magical artes. For it is fayde that they (as also the people of Laponia) doo rayfe tempestes on the fea with magical inchauntmentes, and brynge fuch shippes into daungeour as they intende to spoile. They vse lyttle shippes made of lether, and safe ageynste the brufynge of the fea and rockes, and with them affayle other shippes. Peter Martyr of Angleria, writeth in his Decades of the Spanishe nauigations, that Sebastian Cabote sayling from Englande continually towarde the north, folowed that course so farre that he chaunfed vpon greate flakes of Ise in the mooneth of Iuly: and that diuertynge from thense, he folowed the coaste by the shore bendynge towarde the South vntyl he came to the clime of the Ilande of Hifpaniola aboue Cuba, an Iland of the Canibales. Which narration hath giuen me occasion to extende Gronlande beyonde the promontory or cape of Huitfarch to the continete or firme lande of Lapponia aboue the castell of Wardhus: which thyng I did the rather for that the reuerende Archebyshoppe of Nidrosia, constantly affirmed that the fea bendethe there into the forme of a crooked elbowe. It agreeth herewith also, that the Lapones consent with them in the lyke magical practises and doo neyther imbrafe the Christian religion nor refuse it: wherby I haue thought this lykenezse of customes to bee betwene them bycause they ioyne togyther in one continent. The distance lykewyse, seemeth not to difagree. For betwene both these people, the distance is not full twoo hundreth Schoeni, euery one being a space of grounde conteinyng. lx. [sixty] furlonges, which make. vii. [seven] myles and a halfe. It furthermore agreeth with this coniecture that Cabote chaunfed into fuch Ise. And albeit as touchynge the mooneth of Iuly, I wyll contend it is not well reherfed, no althowghe he had sayled vnder the pole, for fuch reasons as wee haue declared before to the contrary, neuerthelesse, that at sum tyme he sayled by Ise, this testifieth in that he sayled not by the mayne fea, but in places nere vnto the lande comprehendynge and imbrasyng the fea in forme of a goulfe, wheras for the fame cause, the goulfe of Gothland is frofen bycause it is streyght and narrow, in the whiche also the lyttle quantitie of falt water is ouercoome by the abundance of freshe water of many and greate ryuers that faule into the goulfe. But betwene Norway and Ilande, the fea is not frofen for the contrary cause, forasmuch as the poure of freshe water is there ouercomme of th[e]abundance of the falte water. There is a fame (but of vncerteine autoritie) that the Spanyardes sayle at this presente to Gronlande, and to an other lande which they caule *Terra viridis*, that is, the greene lande, bringynge from thense fuche wares as are founde in Gronlande. Towarde the north, it reacheth to the vnknown lande vnder the pole, from whenfe also the theues and robbers of the Pigmei coomme into this lande. Whiche is an argument that the regions vnder the pole are inhabited and almost enuironed with the fea, as are they whiche the Cofmographers caule Cherfonnesi or Peninsulæ (that is) almost Ilandes:

The description of Gronlande.

The description of the East syde whiche lyeth towarde Norway.

	[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]		[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]
*Wardhus castell.	54 [degrees] [0']	70. 30'	The seconde extention.	28. [0']	72. [0']
Towarde the North.	53. 30'	71. 30'	Huitfarch. promont.	22. [0']	67. [0']
The fyrst extention.	40. [0']	71. 40'	The extention.	5. [0']	61. 45'
				*356. [0']	60. [0']

It is continued from thense by the coastes of the lande of Baccallaos. Towarde the west and north, it is terminated with an vnknown ende of landes and feas.

[* Wardoehuus is the chief village of Wardoe, an island on the N.E. coast of Norway, beyond the North Cape and near Waranger Fiord. Its true N. Lat. is 70° 23', and E. Long. 31° 7'. Therefore Ziegler's meridian in all the following dates (being 54 degrees west of Wardoehuus) is really 23 degrees W. Long., and that therefore he places Baccallos 4 degrees still further west—fixes it in 27° W. Long., which is, in high latitudes, the longitude of a part of Greenland.—E. A.]

The Gothes and Lumbardes.

Frutefull pasture.

Religion neglected.

Inchaunters

The vyage of Sebastian Cabote to the frofen sea.

Gronlande. Wardhus.

Lapponia and Gronlande.

Schoeni.

Cabote tould me that this Ise is of freshe water, and not of the sea.

A commixtion of salt water and freshe.

The sea betwene Norway and Ilande.

Terra Viridis.

269

Pigmei.

Baccalaos.

ISLANDE.



Islande is interpreted the land of Ise, and is cauled of the owlde wryters Thyle. It is extended betwene the south and the north almost two hundredth schoenes in longitude. It is for the most part full of mountaynes and vncultured. But in the playnes it hath fuche frutefull pastures, that they are fayne sumetymes to dryue the beastes from their feedyng least they shulde bee suffocate with to much fatnes. This Ilande is famous by the strange miracles of nature, of the which Saxo Grammaticus in his hystorie of Denmarke, and Olanus Gothus in his description of the north landes, doo make mention. There are in it three mountaynes of marueylous height, the toppes whereof are covered with perpetuall snowe. But the nether partes of them, are of lyke nature to the mountayne Etna in the Ilande of Sicilie boyling with continuall flames of fyre and castyng furth brymstone. One of these is named Helga, and the other *Mons Crucis* (that is) the mounte of the crosse. The thyrde is named Hecla: whose flames neyther consume flaxe or towe, matters moste apte to take fyre, nor yet are quenched with water. And with lyke force as the shotte of great artillerie is driuen furth by violence of fyre, euen so by the commixtion and repugnaunce of fyre, coulde, and brymstone, greate stones are here throwne into the ayer. Nere vnto these mountaynes are three chynkes or open places in the earthe of houghe byggenesse and fuche depth (especially at the mounte Hecla) that no fyght can attayne therto. But to such as looke into them, there fyrst appeare men as though they were drowned and yet breathyng furth theyr fowles: who beinge exhorted by theyr frendes to reforte to theyr owne, they aunswere with moornyng voyce and greuous fyghes, that they must departe frome thense to the mount Hecla, and therewith suddelyny varyshe owte of fyght. Ise floweth abowt the Ilande for the space of feuen or eyght moonethes, makyng by runnyng together a certeyne miserabile waylinge and gronyng noyse not vnlyke the voyce of man. Th[e] inhabitants thynke, that in this Ise and the mounte Hecla, are the places where the euyl foules of theyr people are tormented. If any man take a greate portion of this Ise, and kepe it as diligently as may bee in a close vessell or cofer, the same dooth so varyshe at the tyme when the other Ise abowt the Ilande dissolueth, that not so much as one droppe of water or Ise can therof bee founde.

Not farre from these mountaynes reachyng toward the fea coastes, are foure sprynges of water of moste diuers and contrary nature. The fyrste, by reason of his perpetuall and feruente heate, suddelyny turneth all bodies that are caste therin, into stones, referuyng neuerthelesse theyr fyrst forme and shape. The seconde, is of intollerable coldnesse. The thyrde is sweeter then hony, and most pleasaunte to quenche theyr thirst. The fourth is playne payson, pestilent, and deadly. There is furthermore in these sprynges fuche abundaunce of brymstone, that a thousand pounde weight therof is bought for lyttle, as for the tenth parte of a ducate. Theyr chiefe wares, are dryed fyssh, as foles, maydens, playces, falpas, flockefysshes, and such other which they exchange for wheat and such other thynges as are browght thyther from Lubeck, Hamborowe, and Amsterdame. For they haue oftentimes such scarcenesse of corne, that they vse dryed fyssh in the steade of breade, although theyr beastes from pasture leaste they shulde suffocate for to much fattenesse, as I haue sayde before. They make very good butter, and apte to bee vsed in matters of phisicke. There are founde dyuers kindes of good haukes, as falcons, gersfalcons, lanners, and sperhaukes. Also rauens, crows, beares, hares, and foxes, both whyte and blacke. They haue most swyfte horses: and such as runne. xxx. [thirty] myles continually without rest or bayte. They haue many churches: and houses buylded of the bones of whales and other greate fysshes. The nauigation is not open to this Ilande but in sommer season: and that only for the space of foure moonethes, by reason of the coulde and Ise whereby the passage is stopped. If any stryfe or debate aryse on the fea amonge the mariners for the commoditie of the hauen, the gouernour of the place although he haue knowlege therof, yet dooth he not punyssh them, forasmuch as it apperteyneth not to his office to decerne such thynges as are doonne on the fea, but only on the lande. Shippes are there often tymes in great perell by reason of whales and such other monsters of the fea, excepte the mariners take good heede and keepe them farre frome the shyppes with the noyse of droommes, and emptie barrells cast into the fea. There are many mynstrels and other that play on instrumentes, with the sweete noyse whereof, they vse to allure foules and fysshes to theyr nettes and snares. Many also, lye lurkyng in caues and dennes to auoyde the sharpenesse of coulde, as the Affricanes doo the lyke to defend them selues from the heate. On the toppe of a certeyne mountayne cauled Weyfzarch, (lyyng betwene Ilande and Gruntland or Gronlande) is erected a shypmans quadrant of marueylous byggenesse, made by two pirates named Pinnigt and Pothorst in fauour of such as fayle by those coastes that they may thereby auoyde the dangerous places lyyng toward Gronland.

The myddeft of the Ilande. 7 0' [Long.] 65 30' [Lat.] The citie Harfol. etc. 7 40' [Long.] 60 42' [Lat.]

Island cauled
Thyle.
Schoeni is lx.
[sixty] furlonges.

Miracles of nature
in Islande.

Three maruelous
mountaynes.

Helgate.
Hecla.

Strange visions.

Ise.

Purgatory.

A strange thyng.

Four springs of
contrary nature.

Abundaunce of
brimstone.

Dryed fyssh.

Scarsenes of corne.
270

Haukes.

White rauens.

Houses of whales
bones.

The nauigation to
Island.

Whales.

One thyng
seruyng for
contrary vses.
A shippmans
quadrant.

LAPONIA.



The region of Laponia, was so named of the people that inhabite it. For the Germainys, caule all fuche Lapones, as are simple or vnapte to thynges. This people is of fmaule stature, and of fuch agilitie of bodie, that hauynge their quyuers of arrowes gerte to them and their bowes in theyr handes, they can with a leape, caste theym felues through a circle or hope of the diameter of a cubite. They feyght on foote, armed with bowes and arrowes after the maner of the Tartars. They are exercifed in hurlynge the darte and shootynge from theyr youth: in fo muche that they giue their chyldren no meate vntyll they hit the marke they shoote at, as dyd in owlde tyme th[e] inhabitants of the Ilandes cauled Baleares. They vse to make theyr apparell streight and close to theyr boddies that it hynder not theyr worke. Theyr winter vestures are made of the hole skinnes of feales or beares artificially wrought and made supple. These they tye with a knotte aboute theyr heades, leauynge onely two holes open to looke through, and haue all the residue of theyr bodies couered as thoughe they were fowed in fackes, but that this beinge adapted to all partes of theyr bodies, is fo made for commoditie and not for a puniffement as the Romans were accustomed to fowe paricides in fackes of lether with a cocke, an ape, and a serpent, and fo to hurle them alyue all togyther into the ryuer of Tyber. And hereby I thinke it came to passe that in owlde tyme it was raffhely beleued that in these regions there were men with rowgh and hery bodies, wilde beastes, as parte made relation throughe ignorance, parte also takynge pleafure in rehearfall of fuche thynges as are fraunge to the hearers. The Lapones defended by this arte and industry, go abrode and withstande the sharpenes of wynter and the north wyndes, with all the iniuries of heauen. They haue no houfes, but certeyne tabernacles like tentes or haies wherwith they passe from place to place and change theyr mansions. Sum of them liue after the maner of the people of Sarmatia cauled in owlde tyme Amaxobii, which vsed waynes in the steade of houfes. They are much gyuen to huntynge: and haue fuch plentie of wyld beastes that they kyll them in maner in euery place. It is not lawfull for a woman to go furth of the tente at that doore by the whiche her husbände wente owte on huntynge the same daye: nor yet to touche with her hande any parte of the beaste that is taken vntyll her husbände reache her on the spitte fuche a portion of flefhe as he thinketh good. They tyll not the grounde. The region nuryssheth no kynde of serpentes: yet are there greate and noyfoome gnattes. They take fyfhe in greate plentie: by the commoditie wherof, they lyue after the maner of the Ethiopians cauled Ichthiophagi. For as these drie theyr fyfhe with feruent heate, fo doo they drye them with coulede, and grynde or flampe them to powder as fmaule as meale or floure. They haue fuch abundaunce of these fyfshes, that they hound great plentie therof in certeyne flore houfes to cary them vnto other landes nere abowt them, as Northbothnia and Whyte Russia. Theyr shyppes are not made with nayles, but are tide togyther and made fast with cordes and wyththes. With these they sayle by the swyft ryuers betwene the mountaines of Laponia, beinge naked in fommer that they may the better swimme in the tyme of perell, and gather together fuch wares as are in daunger to bee lost by shipwracke. Part of them exercife handie craftes, as imbrotherynge and weauynge of cloth interlaced with golde and fyluer. Suche as haue diuifed any necessary arte, or doo increafe and amende th[e] inuentions of other, are openlye honoured, and rewarded with a vesture, in the which is imbrothered an argument or token of the thyng they deuifed. And this remayneth to the posteritie of theyr famelie in token of theyr desertes. They frame shippes, buylde houfes, and make diuers fortes of housholde stufte artificially, and transporte them to other places neare abowte. They bye and sell bothe for exchange of wares and for money. And this only by consent of both parties without communication: yet not for lacke of wytte or for rudenesse of maners, but bycaufe they haue a peculiar language vnknown to theyr bortherers. It is a valiant nation, and lyued longe free, and fusteyned the warres of Norwaye and Suecia vntyll at the length they submitted them felues, and payde ryche fures for theyr tribute. They chose them felues a gouernour whom they caule a kyng: But the kyng of Suetia gyueth hym autoritie and administration. Neuerthelesse, the people in theyr futes and doubtfull causes, reforte to Suecia to haue theyr matters decided.

In theyr iorneyes, they go not to any Inne, nor yet enter into any houfe, but lye all nyght vnder the firmament. They haue no horses: but in the steade of them, they tame certeyne wyld beastes which they caule Reen, beinge of the iusle byggeneffe of a mule, with rowgh heare lyke an Ass, clouen feete, and branched hornes lyke a harte, but lower and with fewer antlettes. They wyll not abyde to bee rydden. But when theyr peitrels or drawynge collers are put on them, and they fo ioyned to the chariotte or sleade, they runne in the space of. xxiii. [twenty-four] houres, a hundreth and fiftie myles, or. xxx. [thirty] schoenos: The whiche space they affirme to chaunge the horizon thryfe: that is thryfe to coome to the furthest signe or marke that they see a farre of. Which doubtlesse is a token both of the marueylous swiftnesse and great strenght of these beastes beinge able to con-

People of great agilitie.

A straunge apparell.

The cause of an owide erreure.

So doo the Tartars.

Plentie of wyld beastes.

271

No serpents.
Great gnats.

Abundaunce of fyfsh.

Ships without nayles.

Science honoured.

Bargeinyng without wordes.

No horses.
A beast of marueylous strength and swyffnesse.

What Schoenus is. Loke in Gronland. The change of the horizon.

The owld outours
cauled all the
north people
Scythians.

Erasmuslamenteh
this in his fyrste
booke de ratine
concionandi,
where he speaketh
of the peop^e.
cauled pilapii

272

Idolatrie.

A misterie of
marriage in fyre
and flint.

Experte
inchaunters.

Magical dartes.

The canker.

One nyght of
three moonethes.

Rich fures.

tinewe runnyng for so great a space, in the meane whyle also spendyng sumtyme in feedyng. I suppose that this thyng was sumwhat knowen to the owld wryters, although receaued in manner by an obscure and doubtful fame. For they also wryte that certeyne Scythians doo ryde on hartes.

They neyther folowe the Christian religion, nor yet refuse it or are offended therewith as are the Iuues: but do sumtymes receau it fauorably to gratifie the princes to whome they obey. And that no more of theym imbrafe the Christian fayth, the faute is sumwhat to bee imputed to the bysshoppes and prelates that haue eyther reiected this cure and charge of instructyng the nation, or suffered the faith of Christ to be suffocate euen in the fyrst spryng. For vnder the pretense of religion, they woulde haue aduanced theyr owne reuenues and ouerburthened the people by an intollerable exemple, none otherwyse here then in all Christendome, which thyng is doubtlesse the cause of moste greuous defections. I harde Iohn a bysshoppe of Gothlande say thus: We that gouerne the church of Vpsalia, and haue vnder owre diocesse a great parte of that nation, lyke as it is not conueniente to declare many thynges of owre vigilance and attendaunce ouer the flocke committed to owre charge, euen so absteynyng frome myscheuous couetoufnesse wherby religion is abused for laker, we doo in all places owre diligent endeour that we minister none occasion wherby this nation as offended by owre finnes, maye bee the lesse wyllyng to embrace the Christian fayth. This is the state of the religion amonge the Lapones: Althowgh of theyr owne institution and custome receaued of theyr predicesours, they are Idolatours, honouryng that luyng thyng that they meete fyrst in the mornyng, for the god of that daye, and diuinyng thereby theyr good lucke or euyl. They also erecte images of stoness vpon the mountaines which they esteeme as goddesses, attributing to them diuine honour. They solemne marriages, and begynne the same with fyre and flynte, as with a mysterie so aptely applyed to the image of stone as if it had byn receaued frome the myddeste of Grecia. For in that they adhibite a mysterie to fyre, as they doo not this alone (forasmuche as the Romanes obserued the same custome) euen so are they herein partly to be commended in that they vse the ceremonies of so noble a people. The mysterie of the flinte is no lesse to bee prayfed, both forasmuche as this is domesticall philosophie, and hath also a nere affinitie and signification to these solemnitie. For as the flynt hath in it fyre luyng hidde whiche appeareth not but by mouyng and force, so is there a secrete lyfe in both kyndes of man and woman whiche by mutuall coniunction coommethe furth to a luyng byrth. They are furthermore experte inchaunters. They tye three knottes on a stryng hangyng at a whypp. When they lose one of these, they rayse tollerable wyndes, When they lose an other, the wynde is more vehement. But by losyng the thyrde, they rayse playne tempestes as in owld tyme they were accustomed to rayse thunder and lyghtnyng. This arte doo they vse ageynst such as fayle by theyr coastes, and stave or moue the ryuers and seas more or lesse as they lyst to shewe fauoure or displeasure. They make also of leade certeyne shorte magicall dartes of the quantitie and length of a fynger. These they throwe ageynst suche of whome they desyre to bee reuenged, to places neuer so farre distant. They are sumtimes so vexed with the canker on their armes or legges that in the space of three dayes they dye through the vehemencie of the payne. The sonne fauleth very lowe in these regions: and prolongeth one continuall nyghte for the space of thre moonethes in wynter, duryng whiche tyme they haue none other lyght but lyke vnto the twylyght of euenynges and mornynges. This is very cleare, but continueth but fewe houres, and is lyke the bryght shynyng of the moone. Therefore that day that the sonne returneth to the hemispherie, they keepe holy shay and make great myrth with solemne festiuitie. And these are the maners of this nation, not so brutyshe or saluage as woorthy therfore to bee cauled Lapones for theyr vnaptnesse or simplicitie as when they lyued vnder theyr owne Empire and vsed no familiaritie or entercourse with other nations and knewe not the commoditie of theyr owne thynges, neyther the pryce and estimation of theyr fures in owre regions, by reason whereof they fould great plentie of them for sum of owre wares of smaule value.

The boundes or limittes of Laponia (beinge th[e] extreme lande of Scandia knowen towarde the north pole) are extended towarde this parte of the North, to the worlde yet vnknown to vs: And furthermore towarde the same parte of the vttermost sea, accordyng to this description.

	[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]
The fyrst coaste,	70 [o']	72. [o']
The coaste folowyng,	80 [o']	7. [o']
That that yet foloweth,	90 [o']	70. [o']

Frome the fysshynge places and store houses of this sea, they cary forth to Nordbothnia and whyte Ruffia, landes confynyng to them, great plentie of fyssh. Wherby we may coniecture that this sea is extended on euery fyde toward the North. Towarde the weste, it is limited with the moste inwarde goulfe of at the Castell of Wardhus at the degree. 54 [o'] [Long.] 70 30. [Lat.]

Towarde the Southe, it is limited by a line drawn from thense vnto the degree. 90 [o' Long.] 69. [o' Lat.]

Plentie of sea
fyssh.

Wardhus.

NORWEGIA OR NORWAY.



Ordway, is as muche to say as the Northwaye. This was sumtyme a florysshynge kyngedome, whose dominion comprehended Denmarke, Frifelande and the Ilandes farre about, vntyll the domestical Empire was gouerned by the succession of inheritaunce. In the meane tyme while this gouernaunce ceafed for lacke of dewe issue, it was instituted by consent of the nobilitie that the kynges shuld be admitted by election: supposinge that they wolde with more equitie execute that office forasmuche as they were placed in the fame by such autoritie, and not by obteynynge the kyngedome by fortune and newe aduancement. But it came fo to

passe, that as euery of them excelled in richeffe, ambition and fauour by confanginitie, so were they in greater hope to obteyne the kyngedome: And were by this meanes diuided into factions, attemptyng also occasions t[o]inuade foraigne realmes wherby they might strengthen theyr parties. It is therefore at this present vnder the dominion of the Danes: who doo not only exact intollerable tributes, but also brynge all theyr ryches and commodities into Denmarke, constitutyng the continuance of theyr gouernaunce in th[e] infirmitie and pouertie of the subiectes: which exemple, sum other princes doo folowe at this day in the Christian Empire. For after that the princes had forsaken suche vertues as shulde haue shyned in them, as to bee *Patres patriæ* (that is) the fathers of theyr countreys, and that in the place hereof, onely the proud countenance of dominion remayned, which opened licentiousnesse to th[e] iniurie of the subiectes, this folowed therof, that wheras the Danes by this occasion had no further trust or ayde in the loue of the people, they prouided for th[e] indempnitie of theyr owne estate by forcible extenuatinge the gooddes and pouere of them whom they desired to kepe in subiection. This is the fortune of Norway, whose edefi[c]es, townes, and cities can not defende theyr auncient amplitude and dignitie: neyther is there any hope of repayrynge theyr state. For there are no consultations admitted for the redresse of the commonwelth: No man dare shewe his aduice or attempte any thing, vncerteine of the myndes and consent of other. To this difficultie, is added the qualitie of the place. For the Danes haue in theyr pouere all the nauigations of Norway, wherby it may exercise no trade by sea, neyther cary furthe wares to other places. So that in fine it may seeme most vnfortunate, as lackynge the fauoure of heauen, the sea, and the lande. From hense is brought into all Europe a fyfthe of the kindes of them whiche we caule haddockes or hakes indurate and dried with coule, and beaten with clubbes or flockes, by reason whereof the Germainys caule them stockefyfthe. The takinge of these, is most commended in Ianuarie that they may bee sufficiently dried and hardened with coule. For such as are taken in the more temperate monethes, doo corrupte and putrifie: And are not meete to be caried furth.

The description of the west coaste, with the parte thereof lying most toward the north.

Wardhus (that is) the watche house, or watche towre,	[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]
It is a stronge castell or fortresse appoynted to the Lapones.	54 [0]	70 30'
The coaste folowynge,		
Matthkur. etc.	48 50'	70. [0]

All the coast from hense, and the places neare about vnto the degree, being sumtyme lefte desolate by the feditions and destruction of Norway, the Lapones chose for theyr habitations, as commynge to a more beneficiall heauen.

From the Castel of Wardhus, vnto the degree,	40 30' [Long.]	64 10' [Lat.]
----------------------------------------------	----------------	---------------

all the coaste in the sprynge tyme is daungerous to passe, by reason of whales of such huge byggenesse that sum of theym growe to a hundreth cubites. For these fyfthes at that tyme of the yeare refort together for generation. Such shyppes as chaunce to faule eyther vpon theyr bodies, or into suche whyrlepooles as they make by theyr vehement motions, are in great perell. The remedie to auoyde this daungiour, is to pouere into the sea Castoreum (that is) oyle made of the stones of the beaste cauled the Beuer, mengeled with water. For with this, the hole hearde of whales vanyfsheth suddeynely to the bottome of the sea: They make a terrible rorynge: and haue two breathynge places in the hyghest parte of theyr forheades, standynge furth right a cubite in length, and are as brode at the endes, beinge couered with a skynne, through the which they blow waters lyke showers or stormes of raine. The prickes of theyr backes, are founde conteynynge three els in circuite, and euery knotte betweene theym, of one elle: They are at the least of lx. [fixty] cubites in length: And are salted and kept in store houses. The greatest are vnprofitable to bee eaten by reason of theyr ranke and vnfaury tasle which can not bee qualified.

Nidrosia standing vpon the south fyde of the sea banke, was the chiefe and metropolitane church through owt all Norway, Ifelande, Gronlande, and the Ilandes thereabout. This cite was noble at the fyrst vnder the florysshing Empire of Norway, conteinyng in circuite. xxiii. paryfshes, but it is nowe brought in maner to a

273

Kyngdomes destroyed by factions.

The Danes.

The default of princes.

An exemple of tyranoi.

The myserable state of Norway

Stockfys[h]e.

The Lapones

Shippes in daungiour by reason of whales.

Castoreum.

The rorynge of whales.

Whales salted and reserued.

The cite of Nidrosia.

274

A magnificall
cbuiche.

village and is cauled in the Germayne toonge Trutham, as the houfe of the Dryides. There remaineth at this daye a Cathedrall church in token of the ancient felicitie, beinge fuche that in byggenesse and workemanship of wrought stone, the lyke is not in all Christendome. The greefes or compasse about the altare, was destroyed by fire, and was repaired at the same tyme that wee write this historie. The charge of the reparafion, was esteemed to bee feuen thousande crownes: by which smaule portion, an estimate maye bee made of the excellencie of the hole Church.

Noysome beastes
of vnknown
generation.

The tracte of all the sea coastes Norwaye, is very quyete and meeke. The sea is not frofen. The snowes indure not longe. This lande hath also a peculiar pestilence which they caule Leem or Lemmer. This is a lyttle foure footed beaste abowte the byggenesse of a ratte with a spotted skynne. These faule vpon the grounde at certeyne tempestes and suddeyne showers, not yet knownen from whence they comme, as whyther they are brought by the wyndes from remote Ilandes, or otherwise engendered of thicke and feculent cloudes. But this is well knownen, that as soone as they faule downe, greene grasse and herbes are founde in their bowels not yet digested. They consume all greene thynges as doo locustes: And such as they only byte, wyther and dye. This pestilence lyueth as longe as it dooth not taste of the grasse newelye sproonge. They come togyther by flockes as do swalowes: And at an ordinarie tyme, eyther dye by heapes with great infection of the lande (as by whose corruption the ayer is made pestiferous and molesteth the Norwegians with swymmyng in the headde and the iaundies) or are consumed of other beastes named Lefrat. Towarde the East, it is included within the line that is drawn by the mountaynes whose endes or vtermoost boundes they are that lye towarde the south about the mouthes of the ryuer Trolhetta. But that parte that lyeth towarde the north, passeth by the castel of Wardhus, and is extended to the vnknowne lande of the Laponas. [Longitude.] [Latitude.]

Wardhus.
The vnknowne
lande of the
Laponas.
A serpent of
houge biggenesse.

The lake cauled Mos, and the Ilande of Hoffuen in the myddeft therof, is in the degree. 45 30' 61. [o']
In this lake appeareth a straunge monster: which is, a serpent of houge byggenesse. And as to all other places of the worlde, blafynge starres doo portende th[e] alteration and change of thynges, so dooth this to Norway. It was seene of late (in the yeare of Christ. M. D. xxii.) apperynge farre about the water rowlyng lyke a greate pyller: And was by coniecture farre of, esteemed to bee of fiftie cubites in length. Shortly after folowed the reiectyng of Christiernus kynge of Denmarke. Suche other monstrous thynges are sayde to bee seene in dyuers places of the worlde. And doubtlesse excepte wee shulde thinke that the diuine prouidence hauynge mercie vpon mortall men, and hereby warnynge them of their offences, dooth sende fuche straunge thynges (as also blafynge starres and armies feyghtyng in the ayer, with fuche other portentous monsters wherof no causes can bee founde by naturall thynges) we might els suspecte that such fyghtes were but imaginations of the fence of man deceaued.

God warneth vs
by signes of
thynges to come.

On the East side, are exceading rowgh montaynes which admit no passage to Suecia. The sea betwene Norway and the Ilandes, is cauled Tiallestund, Euripus, or the streightes.

The Ilande of Lofoth, whose myddeft.

[Longitude.] [Latitude.]

42 [o'] 67 10'.

Langanas, whose myddeft,

41 [o'] 67 [o']

Vastral, whose myddeft.

41 34' 67 30'.

The streightes or
boylng sea.

The sea betwene these three Ilandes, is cauled Muscostrom (that is) boylng. At the flowynge of the sea, it is swalowed into the caues, and is blowne owt ageyne at the reflowynge, with no lesse violence then the streames of ryuers faule from mountaynes. This sea is nauigable vntyll it bee lower then the mouthes of the rockes. Such as chaunce into it owt of dewe tyme, are caried headlonge into whyrlepooles. The fragmentes of the lost ships, are feldome cast vp ageyne. But when they are caste vp, they are so brused and freted ageynste the rockes, that they seeme to bee ouergrowne with hore. This is the poure of nature, passyng the fabulous Simplegades and the fearefull Malea, with the daungerous places of Silla and Caribdis, and all other miracles that nature hath wrought in any other sea hytherto knownen to man.

Dangerous
places in the sea.

The Ilandes about Norway, are of such frutfull pasture, that they brynge not theyr beastes into the stables before the moneth of Nouember: And do many places winter them abroad.

Frutfull Ilandes
about Norway.

SVECIA, OR SVETHLANDE.



Svecia, is a kyngedome ryche in golde, syluer, copper, leade, Iren, fruyte, cattayle, and exceedynge increafe of fyfshes of the ryuers, lakes, and the fea. And hath no leffe plentie of fuche wyld beastes as are taken with huntinge. Towarde the West, it is ended with the mountaynes of Norway from the Castel of Wardhus vnto th[e]nd, 51 [o' Long.] 63 40' [Lat.] Towarde the South, with the line from this ende vnto the degrees. 53. 30'. 61. [o'] And from thense vnto the degrees. 61. [o'] 60. 30'. Aboute the goulfe of Suecia, toward the north, with the fouth ende of Lapponia from the Castel of Wardhus vnto th[e]nde. 62. [o'] 70. [o'] Towarde the Easte, it is ended with the line frome this ende vnto the degree. 63. [o'] 69. [o'] etc. Stockholme the chiefe cite. 64. [o'] 61. [o'] This is the chiefe mart towne of Suecia, and is strongly defended by arte and nature. It is situate in mariffhes after the maner of Venyce: and was therefore cauled Stokholme, forasmuche as beinge placed in the water, the fundation is fortified with stockes or piles. The fea entereth into it with two armes or branches of such largenes and depth that ships of great burden and with mayne sayles may enter by the same with theyr full freight. This suffered of late yeares greuous spoyle and destruction to the singular exemple of cruel hostilitie: And such, as the like hath not bin lightly shewed to any other cite receaved by league and composition.

In al the tract from Stokholme to the lake aboute the riuer of Dalekarle, which is in the degree. 56. 30' 63. 50' are mountaines fruitful of good siluer, copper, and leade. They gette great ryches by the falmons and plentie of other fyfshes whiche they take in certeyne greate lakes.

The dukedome of Agermannia, occupieth the north fyde to the confines of Laponia. This tract is ful of wods in the whiche they hunt the beastes cauled Vros or Bifontes, which in theyr toonge they caule Elg, (that is) wilde asses. These are of such height, that the highest part of their backes are equal with the measure of a man holdynge vp his armes as hyghe as he may reach. etc. Vpfsalia the chiefe cite. 62. 63'. 30. [o'] here is buried the body of faynt Hericus kyng and martyr.

Copperdalia (that is) the copper valley, is a dukedome fouthwarde from the dukedome of Iemptia. Vnder this, is the valient nation of the people cauled Dalekarly.

Oplandia, is a dukedome and the nauil or middest of Scandia.

The cite of Pircho, on the north fyde of the lake of Meler, was once a great cite and able to arme. xiiii. thousande men to the warres: but is nowe brought to a vyllage.

All the tracte of Oplandia, hath mynes of syluer, copper, and steele.

Of the Ilandes and rockes that lye abowte Suecia, the myddest is. 67 30' [Long.] 61 30'. [Lat.] These were cauled of the owlde wryters Oone, the reason of which name remayneth to this day. For there are in these innumerable multitudes of byrdes: In so muche that th[e] inhabitants of the nexte coaste, sayle thither in the mooneth of May whyle the byrdes fyt on theyr egges: which they steale and referue them in salte for a longe tyme.

BOTHNIA.



Bothnia is so named of the precious furies of all fortes that are caried from thense into foraigne regions. For by these and theyr fyfshynge, they haue greate commoditie. Salmones of the best fort are taken in these seas and are great ryches amonge these nations. Bothnia is diuided into two partes, as Nordbothnia, and South Bothnia, cauled Ostrobothnia. Nordbothnia, is terminated with the fouth ende of the Laponies vnto the ende. 78 30' [Long.] 69. [o'] [Lat.] Towarde the East, it is terminated with this end and vnto the degree. 78 30' 68 20'. Towarde the West, with the line terminynge the East fyde of Suecia: And towarde the

Southe, with the residue of the goulfe of Suecia from th[e]nde that hath degrees. 63 [o'] 69. [o']

Ostrobothnia, towarde the East is terminated from the said ende of the most East coaste. And towarde the South, with a line extended by the mountaynes frome this ende vnto the degree. 71 [o'] 66 [o']

Towarde the north and weste, with part of the goulfe of Suecia. etc.

275
Golde and syluer.

Wardhus castell.

The goulfe of Suecia.

The cite of Stockholme.

Gold in cold regions.
Fysshe.

The beaste cauled Vros or Elg.

Vpsalia.

Copperdalia.

Oplandia.

Byrdes.

Egges reserued in salte.

Precious furies.

Fysshe.

GOTHIA OR GOTHLANDE.



OTHIA, is by interpretation good. For the holye name of God, is in the Germaine tongue Goth (that is) Good. At what tyme the Gothes vppon a general consent, sent furth theyr offsprynge or succcession to seeke newe seates or countreys to inhabite, and when they possessed the coastes of Meotis and Asia, none of the owlde wryters haue made mention as farre as I knowe. But they haue byn knowen sence the tyme that the Romanes dilated theyr Empryre by Illirium (nowe cauled Slauonie) vnto the ryuer of Danubius. And were also famous from the tyme of Cesar Dictator and Octavianus Augustus by reason of theyr greate warres at Danubius beinge th[e]vtermost bounde of Th[e]mperire. Neuerthelesse, in that renoume, what Gothia was, vnder what parte of heauen it was situate, or of whom the Gothes toke theyr original, it hath byn vnknown almost to this age. This is termined towarde the north, with the south ende of Suecia: And towarde the weste, with the other mountaynes of Norway, which continewe from the boundes of Suecia to the mouthes of the ryuers of Trolheta. etc.

It hath many goodly townes, cities, castels, mines. etc. The citie of Visba, being in the degree. 61 30' 54 15.' was an ancient and famous marie towne as is Genua in Italie at this day. But afterwarde beinge afflicted by th[e]incursions of the pirates of the Danes and Muscouites, it was left defolate. There remayne to this day certeyne ruines whiche testifie the ancient nobilitie. In this place were the fyrste stacions of the Gothes that possessed Meotis. It is at this daye of frutfull foyle, and famous by many goodly and stronge castels and monasteries. There is amonge other, a monasterie of th[e]order of faynt Benedicte, in the which is a librarie of abowt two thousande bookes of owlde autours.

Abowt the yeare of Christ fourscore and. viii. the Gothes, vnto whom reforted a great multitude of other people of these northe partes of the worlde, as from Linonia, Prusia, Ruffia and Tartaria with diuers other countreys, makyng them dyuers Kynges and capitaynes, dyd depopulate and bryng in subiection the more parte of Europe, invaded Italie, destroyd Rome, inhabited that part of Italia now cauled Lumbardie, and lykewyse subdued the roialmes of Castile and Aragonie. Theyr warres contynewed aboue three hundredth yeares.

FINLAND, AND ENINGIA.



Inlandia, is as much to say as a fayre lande or fine land, so named for the fertilitie of the grownde. Plinie semeth to caule it Finnonia. For he saith that abowte the coastes of Finlande, are many Ilandes without names. Of the which there lyeth one before Scithia cauled Pannonia. The goulfe cauled *Sinus Finnonicus*, is so named at this day of the lande of Finnonia. Finnonia confineth with Scithia, and runneth without all Tanais (that is to say) withoute the limetes of Europe to the confines or Asia. But that the name of Finlande seemeth not to agree hereunto, the cause is that this place of Plinie is corrupted as are many other in this autour: So that from the name of Finnonia, or Phinnonia, it was a likely erreure to caule it Pannonia sofarre as these woordes doo not greatly differ in wrytyng and founde: so that the counterfecte name was foone put in the place of the trew name by hym that knewe Pannonia and redde that name before, beinge also ignorant of Phinnonia.

Eningia had in owlde tyme the tytyle of a kingedome, it is of such largeness. But hath nowe only the tytyle of an inferiour gouernoure, beinge vnder the dominion of the Slauons and vsyng the same tongue. In religion, it obserued the rites of the Greekes of late yeares, when it was vnder the gouernance of the Muscouites. But it is at this present vnder the kyng of Suecia and obserueth th[e]institutions of the Occidentall church. Spanysshe wyne are brought thither in great plentie which the people vse merely and cherefully. It is termined on the north fyde, by the southe line of Ostobothnia, and is extended by the mountaynes. Towarde the west, it is termined with the sea of Finnonia accordyng to this description: and hath degrees. 71. [o' Long.] 66. [o' Lat.] etc.

276

Th[e]invasions of the Gothes.

The warres of the gothes ageynst the Romans.

The boundes of Gothland.

The citie of Visba.

Danes and Muscouites.

A librarie of two thousand bookes. The Gothes invaded Europe and destroyd Rome.

Pannonia falsely taken for Finnonia.

Eningia.

Spanyshe wyne.

OF THE DIFFERENCE OF REGIONS AND
CAUSES OF GREATE CITIES, AFTER THE DESCRIP-
TION OF HIERONIMUS CARDANUS,
LIBER. XI. *de Subtilitate.*



Here is an other difference of regions caufed of coulede and heate. For fuche as are neare vnto the poles, are vexed with to much coulede: And fuch as are vnder the line where the foonne is of greatefte force, are oppreffed with heate. Such as are in the myddeft betwene both, are neareft vnto temperatneffe. Vnder the pole, it is impossible that there fhulde bee populous cities bycaufe the lande is baren, and the cariage or conueyaunce of frutes, vyttayles, and other neceffaries, is incommodious. By reafon wherof, it is neceffarie that th[e]inhabitauntes of fuche regions lyue euer in continuall wanderynge from place to place, or els in fmaule vyllages. Suche as inhabite temperate regions, haue meane cities, afwell for that they haue more commodious conueyaunce for neceffaries, as alfo that they may dwell better and more fafely togyther then in vyllages by reafon of fortifying theyr townes with walles, and exercifynge of artes and occupations whereby the one maye the better helpe the other. Yet that owlde Rome (beinge in a temperate region) was of fuch incredible byggenesse, the caufe was that it obteyned Th[e]mpire of the worlde, by reafon wherof, all nations had confluence thither, and not the greatneffe of the walles. But it is neceffarie that the greateft cities bee in hotte regions: fyrfte, for that in fuch regions, parte of the foile is eyther barren yf it lacke water, or els moft frutefull if it abounde with water. And for this inequalitye, when they fynde any place meete to fufleyne a multitude, it foloweth of neceffitie that greate cities bee buylded in fuch places by reafon of great concourfe of people refortyng to the fame. An other greate caufe is, that wheras in fuch regions, marchauntes come very farre to fuch commodious places, they paffe through many deferte and perelous regions: So that it fhall be neceffary for theyr better securitie, to coome in great companies as it were great armies. And therefore whereas fuch a focietie is once knytte togyther in a commodious place, it fhulde bee great hinderance afwell to th[e]inhabitanes as to marchauntes if they fhulde wander in incommodious places. And by this confluence, both of fuche as dwell neare to fuche places, and alfo of ftraungers and fuch as dwell farre of, it is neceffarie that in continuance of tyme, fmaule townes becoome great cities, as are thefe: Quinfai, Singui, Cambalu, Memphis, Cairus, or Alcair, otherwife cauled Babilon in Egipte. But if here any wyll obiecte Constantinople (in owlde tyme cauled Bizantium) being in a temperate region, althrough it bee not to bee compared to fuch cities as are more then. lx. [fixty] myles in circuite, yet doo we aunfwere hereunto, that the Turkes Empire is the caufe of the greatneffe hereof, as wee fayde before of Rome.

277

THE HISTORIE WRITTEN IN THE LATIN
TOONGE BY PAVLVS IOVIVS BYSSHOPPE OF NVCERIA
IN ITALIE, OF THE LEGATION OR AMBASSADE OF GREATE
Bafilius Prince of Moscouia, to pope Clement the. vii. of
that name: In which is conteyned the description
of Moscouia with the regions confininge abowte
the fame euen vnto the great and ryche
Empire of Cathay.



Intende fyrste briefly to describe the situation of the region which we plainly see to haue bin little knowne to Strabo and Ptolome, and then to procede in rehearsinge the maners, customes and religion of the people. And this in maner in the lyke simple style and phraze of speache as the same was declared vnto vs by Demetrius the ambassadoure, a man not ignoraunt in the Latin toonge, as from his youth brought vp in Liuonia, where he learned the fyrst rudimentes of letters. And beinge growne to mans age, executed th[e] office of an ambassadour into dyuers Christian prouinces. For wheras by reason of his approued faithfulness and industrie, he had before byn sent as oratoure to the kynges of Suecia and Denmarke, and the great master of Prussia, he was at the last sente to Th[e]mperoure Maximilian, in whose courte (beinge replenysshed with all fortes of menne) whyle he was conuerfant, yf any thing of barbarous maners yet remained in so docible and quiet a nature, the same was put away by framyng

Demetrius the
ambassadour of
Moscouia.

Paulus Centurio.

Spices brought
from India to
Moscovia.
The ryuer Indus.

278

Oxus or Horina a
ryuer of Asia
runneth through
the desertes of
Sythia.

The sea Hircanum,
is now cauled
mare Abacuk or
mare de Sala.
Citrachan or
Astracan.

Sarmatia is that
greate country
wherein is
conteyned Russin
Liuania and
Tartaria, and the
north and East
part of Polonia.

Ageynst the
Portugales.

hym felse to better ciuilitie. The cause of his legacie or ambassade, was gyuen by Paulus Centurio a Genuese, who when he had receaued letters commendatori of pope Leo the tenth, and came to Moscouia for the trade of marchaundies, of his owne mynde conferred with the familiers of Duke Bafilus as touchyng the conformation of the rites of both churches. He furthermore of great magnanimitie and in maner owtrageous desire, fowght howe by a newe and incredible viage, spices myght bee brought from India. For whyle before he had exercised the trade of marchaundies in Syria, Egypte, and Pontus, he knewe by fame that spices myght bee conueighed from the further India vp the riuer Indus ageynst the course of the fame, and from thence by a smal vyage by lande passinge ouer the mountaynes of Paropanifus, to bee caried to the riuer Oxus in Bactria, which hauing his original almost from the fame mountaynes from whence Indus dooth springe, and violently caryinge with it manye other ryuers, fauleth into the sea Hircanum or Caspium at the porte cauled Straua. And he earnestly affirmed that frome Straua, is an easy and safe nauigation vnto the marte towne of Citrachan or Astrachan and the mouth of the ryuer Volga and from thence euer ageynst the course of the ryuers, as Volga, Occha, and Moscho, vnto the citie Moscha, and frome thence by lande to Riga and into the sea of Sarmatia and all the west regions. For he was vehemently and more then of equitie accensed and prouoked by the iniuries of the Portugales, who hauyng by force of armes subdued a great parte of India, and possessed all the marte townes, takyng holy into theyr handes all the trade of spices to bryng the fame into Spayne, and neuerthelesse to sell them at a more greuous and intollerable price to the people of Europe then euer was hard of before: And furthermore kepte the coastes of the Indian sea so straightly with continuall nauies, that those trades are thereby lefte of, which were before exercised by the goulfe of Persia and towarde the ryuer of Euphrates, and also by the

streights of the sea of Arabia and the ryuer Nilus, and in fine by owre sea: by which trade all Asia and Europe was abundantly fatified and better cheape then hathe byn sence the Portugales had the trade in theyr handes with so manye incommodities of such longe viages wherby the spices are so corrupted by th[e]infection of the poompe and other fylthynesse of the shippes, that theyr naturall fauour, taste, and qualitie aswell hereby as by theyr longe referuyng in the shoppes, sellers, and warehoufes in Luffsheburne, varyfsheth and resolueth, so that referuyng euer the fresshest and neweste, they fel only the woorst and most corrupted. But Paulus, although in all places he earnestly and vehemently argued of these thinges, and styrred great malice and hatred ageynst the Portugales, affirmyng that not only therby the customes and reuenues of princes shulde bee much greater if that vyage might bee discovered, but also that spices myght bee better cheepe bowght at the handes of the Moscoutes, yet coulde he nothinge auayle in this fute, forasmuche as Duke Bafilus thowght it not good to make open or disclose vnto a straunger and vnknowne man, those regions which giue enterance to the sea Caspium and the kyngedomes of Persia. Paulus therefore excludyng all hope of further trauayle, and become nowe of a marchaunte an Ambassadoure, browght Bafilus letters (pope Leo beinge nowe departed) to Adriane his successeure, in the whiche he declared with honorable and reuerende woordes his good wyll and fauorable mynde towarde the bysshop of Rome. For a fewe years before, Bafilus (then keepyng warres ageynste the Polones at fuche tyme as the generall counfayle was celebrate at Laterane) requyred by Iohn, kynge of Denmarke (the father of Christierne who was of late expulsed from his kyngedome) that safe passage myght bee graunted to th[e]ambassadours of Moscovia to go to Rome. But wheras it so chaunced, that kynge Iohn and pope Iulius dyed both in one day, wherby he lacked a conuenient sequester or sollicitoure, he omitted his consultation as touchyng that legacie. After this, the warre waxed hot betwene him and Sigismunde the kynge of Polonie: who obtaynyng the victorie ageynst the Moscoutes at Boristhene, supplications were decreed in Rome for the ouerthrowe and vanquyfyng the enemies of the Christian faith, whiche thinge greatly alienated both kynge Bafilus him selfe and all that nation from the bysshop of Rome. But when Adriane the. vi. departed from this lyfe, and lefte Paulus nowe redie to his seconde vyage, his successeur Clemente the. vii. perceauyng that Paulus styll furiously reuolued and tossed in his vnquiet mynde that vyage towarde the Easte, sente hym ageyne with letters to Moscovia, by the which with propense and frendly persuasions, he exhorted Bafilus to acknowledge the maiestie of the Romane church, and to make a perpetuall leage and agreement in matters of religion, which thyng shuld be not only for the health of his soule, but also greatly to th[e]increase of his honour: And further promysed, that by the holy autoritie of his office he wolde make hym a kynge and gyue hym kyngely ornamentes, if reiectyng the doctrine of the Greekes, he wolde conforme hym selfe to th[e]autoritie of the Romane church. For Bafilus defyred the name and tittle of a kynge by th[e]assignation of the bysshoppe of Rome, forasmuch as he iudged that to apperteyne to the catholyke right and the bysshoppes maiestie, of whome (as he knewe ryght well) euen Th[e]emperours them selues by an auncient custome haue receaued there insignes of honoure with the Diademe and scepter of the Romane Empire: althowghe it is sayde that he required the same of Th[e]emperour Maximiliane by many ambassades. Paulus therefore who with more prosperous iorneyes then great vantage, had from his youth trauayled a greate parte of the world, althowghe he were nowe aged and fore vexed with the strangurie, came with a prosperous and spedy iornay to Moscovia, where he was gently receaued of Bafilus, and remayned in his courte for the space of twoo monethes. But in fine, mistrustyng his owne strength, and deterred by the difficultie of so greate a iorneye, when he had vtterly put away all his imaginations and hope of this trade to India, returned to Rome with Demetrius th[e]ambassadour of Bafilus, before we yet thought that he had byn in Moscovia. The bysshoppe commaunded that Demetrius shuld bee lodged in the most magnificent and princely part of the houses of Vaticane, the rouffes of whose edifices are gylted and embowed, and the chambers rychly furnysshed with fylken beddes and cloth of Arresse. Wyllyng furthermore that he shuld bee honorably receaued and vested with silke. He also assigned Franciscus Cheregatus the bysshoppe of Aprutium (a man that had often tymes byn ambassadoure to diuers regyons) to accompanye hym and shewe hym th[e]order and rites of owre religion with the monumentes and maners of the citie. Furthermore, when Demetrius had certeyne dayes rested and recreate him selfe, wasshyng away the fylth he had gathered by reason of the longe vyage, then apparelled with a fayre vesture after the maner of his countrey, he was browght to the bysshoppes presence, whom he honoured kneelyng with great humilitie and reuerence (as is the maner) and therwith presented vnto his holynes certeyne fures of Sables in his owne name and in the name of his prince, and also deluyered the letters of Bafilus, which they before, and then the Illyrian or Slauon interpretoure Nicolaus Siccensis translated into the Latine toonge in this effecte as foloweth.

To pope Clemente sheparde and teacher of the Romane church, greate Bafilus by the grace of God, lorde, Emperour and dominatour of al Ruffia, and great duke of Volodemaria, Moscovia, Nouogrodia, Plescouia, Smolenia, Ifferia, Iugoria, Permnia, Vetcha, Bolgaria. etc. Dominator and great prince of Nouogrodia in the lower contrei: Alfo of Cernigouia, Razauia, Volotchia, Rezenia, Belchia, Rostouia, Iaroflauia, Belozeria,

The trade of spices in owld tyme.
Spices corrupted.

The Caspian sea.

Bafilus wrot to Pope Adriane.

Warre betwene the Polones and Moscoutes.

The seconde vyage of Paulus to Moscovia.
The Pope persuadeth Bafilus to acknowledge the Romane church.

279

The Emperours receaued there diademe of the bysshoppes of Rome.

Demetrius interteynment at Rome.

Demetrius is brought to the popes presence.

Bafilus letters to Pope Clement.

Vdoria, Obdoria, and Condiuia. etc. Yow sent vnto vs Paulus Centurio a citizen of Genua with letters wherby yowe do exhorte vs to ioine in poure and counsayle with yowe and other Princes of Christendome ageynst the enemies of the christian faith: and that a free passage and redy way may bee opened for bothe yowe ambassadours and owres to coome and go to and fro, whereby by mutuall dewtie and indeuoure on both parties, we may haue knowlege of the state of thinges perteynyng to the welth of vs both. Wee certes as we haue hetherto happely by the ayde and helpe of almyghty god constantly and ernestly resisted the cruell and wycked enemies of the Christian faith, so are we determined to doo hereafter. And are likewise redy to consente with other Christian Princes, and to graunt free passage into owre dominions. In consideration wherof, we haue sente vnto yowe owre faithfull feruaunt Demetrius Erasmus with these owre letters: and with hym haue remitted Paulus Centurio: defyring yowe also shortly to difmisse Demetrius with safegarde and indemnitie vnto the borthers of owre dominions. And we wyl likewyse doo the same if yowe sende yowre ambassadoure with Demetrius, wherby both by communication and letters, wee may bee better certified of th[e] order and administration of such thynges as yowe require: so that beinge aduertised of the mindes and intent of al other Christian princes, we may also consult what is best to be done herein. Thus fare ye wel. Giuen in our dominion in our cite of Moscovia, in the yeare from the creation of the worlde, feuen thousande and three hundredth, the thyrde day of Aprell.

But Demetrius, as he is experte in diuine and humane thynges, and especially of holy scripture, seemed to haue secrete commaundement of greater matters whiche we thinke he wyl shortly declare to the senate in priuate consultations. For he is nowe deliuered of the feuer into the whiche he fell by chaunge of ayer, and hath so recouered his strengthe and natie colour, that beinge a man of threecore yeares of age, he was not only presente at the popes masse celebrated with great solemnitie in the honour of faynt Cosmus and Damian but came also into the Senate at such tyme as Cardinal Campegius commynge fyrst from the legacie of Pannonia, was receaued of the pope and all the nobilitie of the courte: And furthermore also vewed the temples of the holye cite with the ruines of the Romane magnificence, and with woonderynge eyes behelde the lamentable decay of the auncient buildinges. So that we thinke that shortly after he hath declared his message, he shall returne to Moscovia with the bysshop of Scarense the popes legate, not vnrecompensed with iust rewards at the handes of his holyneffe.

The name of the Moscouites is nowe newe, althrough the poete Lucane maketh mention of the Moschos confynge with the Sarmatians, and Plinie also placeth the Moschos at the sprynges of the great ryuer of Phafis in the region of Colchos about the sea Euxinus towarde the East. Their region hath very large boundes, and is extended from the altars of great Alexander about the springes of Tanais, to the extreme landes and north Ocean in maner vnder the Northe starres cauled charles wayne or the greate beare, beinge for the most parte playne and of frutfull pasture, but in somer in many places full of marisshes. For whereas all that lande is replenyfshed with many and great ryuers which are greatly increased by the winter snow and ife resolued by the heate of the soonne, the playnes and fyeldes are therby ouerflown with marisshes, and all iorneyes incumbered with continuall waters and myrie slabbynes vntyl by the benefite of the new wynter the ryuers and marisshes bee frofen ageyne, and giue safe passage to the sleades that are accustomed to iorney by the same. The woodde or forest of Hercynia (and not Hyrcania as is redde in sum falsse copies) occupieth a great parte of Moscovia, and is here and there inhabited, with houses buylded therein and so made thinner by the longe labour of men that it dooth not nowe shewe that horrour of thicke and impenetrable woods and laundes as many thinke it to haue. But beinge replenyfshed with many wylde beastes, is so farre extended through Moscovia with a continual tracte betwene the East and the North towarde the Scythian Ocean, that by the infinite greatnesse therof it hath deluded the hope of such as haue curiously searched th[e] ende of the same. In that parte that reacheth towarde Prussia, are founde the greate and fierce beastes cauled Vri, or Bisontes, of the kynde of bulles: Also Alces lyke vnto hartes, whiche the Moscouites caule Lozzi, and are cauled of the Germaines Helenes. On the East syde of Moscovia, are the Scythians which are at this day cauled Tartars, a wanderinge nation, and at all ages famous in warres. In the stede of houses they vse wagons couered with beastes hydes, wherby they were in owlde tyme cauled Amaxouii. For cities and townes, they vse greate tentes and paulions, not defended with trenches or waules of tymber or stone, but inclosed with an innumerable multitude of archers on horsebacke. The Tartares are diuided by companies which they caule Hordas, which word in theyr toonge signifieth a confentyng companye of people gathered together in forme of a cite. Euery Horda is gouerned by an Emperour whom eyther his parentage or warlyke prowes hath promoted to that dignitie. For they oftentimes keepe warre with theyr bortherers and contende ambiciouly and fiercely for dominion. It dooth hereby appeare that they consiste of innumerable Hordas, in that the Tartars possesse the most large desertes euen vnto the famous cite of Cathay in the furthest Ocean in the East. They also that are neareste to the Moscouites, are knownen by theyr trade of marchaundies and often incursions. In Europe nere vnto the place cauled Dromon Achillis in Taurica Cherfonefo, are the Tartars cauled Precopites, the dowghter of whose prince,

280

Cardinall
Campegius.The ruines of
Rome.The description
of Moscovia.The altares of
great alexander.Marisshes in
sommer.The forest of
Hercynia.Wylde beastes
The Scythian
Ocean.The beastes
cauled Vri or
Bisontes.Helenes.
Of the Scythians
and Tartars.
Amaxouii.

Horda.

The large
dominion of the
Tartars.
Cathay.
The Tartars of
Europe.

Selymus Th[e]mperour of the Turkes tooke to wyfe. These are most infest to the Polones, and waite the regions on euery syde betwene the ryuers of Boristhenes and Tanais. They that in the same Taurica possesse Caffam a colonie of the Ligurians (cauled in owlde tyme Theodosia) doo bothe in religion and al other thynges agree with the Turkes. But the Tartars that inhabite regions of Asia betwene Tanais and Volga, are subiecte to Basilius the kynge of the Moscouites, and chuse them a gouernour at his assignement. Amonge these, the Cremii afflicted with ciuile feditions, where as heretofore they were riche and of great poure, haue of late yeares loste their dominion and dignitie. The Tartars that are beyonde the ryuer of Volga, do religiously obserue the frendship of the Moscouites and professe them selues to be their subiectes. Beyond the Caffanites towarde the Northe, are the Sciambani, rich in hearde of cattaille and consistyng of a great multitude of men. After these, are Nogai, whiche obteyne at this daye the chiefe fame of ryches and warly affayres. Their Horda, although it bee most ample, yet hath it no emperoure, but is gouerned by the wysdome and vertue of the most ancient and valient men after the maner of the common wealthe of Venyce. Beyonde the Nogais sumwhat towarde the south and the Caspian sea, the noblest nation of the Tartars cauled Zagathai, inhabite townes buylded of stone, and haue an exceedyng greate and fayre citie cauled Samarcanda, which Iaxartes the greate ryuer of Sogdiana runneth through, and passyng from thence about a hundreth myles, fauleth into the Caspian sea. With these people in owre dayes, Ismael the Sophi and kynge of Persia hathe often tymes kepte war with doubtfull successe: In so muche that fearyng the greatnesse of their poure which he resysted with all that he myght, he lefte Armenia and Taurisum the chiefe citie of the kyngedome, for a pray to Selimus the vycourer of one wyng of the battayle. From the citie of Samarcanda, descended Tamburlanes the myghty Emperoure of the Tartars whome sum caule Tanberlanis. But Demetrius sayth he shulde bee cauled Themircuthlu. Thys is he that abowte the yeare of Chryste. M. CCC. lxxxviii. [1398, A.D.] subdued almost all the Easte partes of the worlde: And lastly with an innumerable multytude of men inuaded the Turkes dominions, with whom Baiafetes Ottomanus their kynge, (and father to the greate grandefather of this Solymán that nowe lyueth) metyng at Ancyra in the confines or marches of Galatia and Bythinia, gaue hym a fore battaile, in the whiche selle on the Turkes parte. 20000. men, and Baiafetes hym selfe was taken prifoner, whom Tamburlanes cauled to bee locked in an iren cage and so caried hym abowte with hym through all Asia which he also conquered with a terrible army. He conquered al the landes betwene Tanais and Nilus, and in fine vanquished in battayle the great Soltane of Egypte, whom he chased beyonde Nilus, and tooke also the citie of Damascus.

Frome the region of these Tartars cauled Zagathe, is brought great plentie of filken apparel to the Moscouites. But the Tartars that inhabite the midland or inner regions, bringe none other wares then truckes or droues of swyfte runnyng horses and clokes made of whyte feltes: also haies or tentes to withstande th[e] iniuries of coule and rayne. These they make very artificially and apte for the purpose. They receaue agayne of the Moscouites, coates of cloth, and fyluer monye, conteynyng all other bodely ornamentes, and the furnytur of superfluous housfolde stuffe. For beyng defended ageynst the violence of wether and tempestes only with fuche apparell and couerture whereof wee haue spoken, they trust only to theyr arrowes which they shoote aswell backwarde flyyng as when they assaile theyr enemies face to face: Albeit, when they determined to inuad Europ, theyr princes and capitaynes had helmetts, coates of fense, and hooked swoordes which they bought of the Persians. Towarde the southe, the boundes of Moscouia are terminated by the same Tartars which possesse the playn regyons nere vnto the Caspian sea aboute the marysshes of Meotis in Asia, and aboute the ryuers of Borysthenes and Tanais in parte of Europe. The people cauled Roxolani, Gete, and Bastarne, inhabited these regions in oulde tyme, of whom I thynke the name of Russia tooke originall. For they caule parte of Lituania, Russia the lower, wheras Moscouia it selfe, is cauled whyte Russia. Lituania therefore, lyeth on the Northwest syde of Moscouia. But towarde the full west the mayne landes of Prussia and Liuania are ioyned to the confines or marches of Moscouia, where the Sarmatian sea breakyng furth of the streights of Cimbrica Chersonesus (nowe cauled Denmarke) is bended with a crooked goulfe towarde the northe. But in the furthest bankes of that Ocean where the large kyngedomes of Norway and Suecia are ioyned to the continent and almoste enuiored with the sea, are the people cauled Laponas, A nation exceedyng rude, suspicyous, and fearefull, flyyng and astonysht at the syght of al straungiers and shyppes. They knowe neyther frutes nor apples, nor yet any benignitie eyther of heauen or earth. They proude them meate onely with shootyng, and are appareled with the skynnes of wild beastes. They dwell in caues fylled with drye leaues, and in holow trees consumed within eyther by fyre or rotten for age. Suche as dwell neare the sea syde, fyssh the more luckily then cunnynghly, and in the stead of frutes, referue in store fysshes dryded with smoke. They are of smaule stature of body, with flatte vifagies, pale and wannye coloure, and very swyfte of foote. Their wittes or dispositions, are not knowen to the Moscouites theyr bortherers, who thynke it therefore a madnesse to assaile them with a smaule poure, and iudge it neyther profitable nor glorious, with greate armies to inuade a poore and beggerly nation. They exchange the most whyte fures which wee caule Armelines for other wares of dyuers fortes: Yet so, that they flie the fyght and companie of all marchauntes. For com-

The Tartars of Asia are subiecte to the Duke of Moscouia.

281

The Tartars beyonde the ryuer of Volga.

Nogai. Sigismundus cauleth them Nagaysri.

The noblest nation of the Tartars. The ryuer of Iaxartes.

Ismael the Sophi, kynge of Persia.

The citie of Samarcanda. Tamburlanes, the myghtie Emperour of the Tartars. The conquestes of Tamburlanes.

Baiasetes.

This apparel they haue of the Persians.

The Tartars trafficke with the Moscouites.

The tartars of the South syde of Moscouia. Gete and Roxolani.

Russia. Moscouia cauled white Russia. Lituania. Prussia. Liuania. Denmarke. Norway. Suecia. The people of Laponia.

282

Armeline fures.

Bargeninge
without wordes.
The darke region
by this darke
region, and the
Pigmei, is the way
to Cathay by the
Northe sea.

The scythian
Ocean.

The region of
Colmogora.
The ryuer of
diuidna.

The ryuer of Iuga
or Iug.
Vstiuga.

The ryuer of
Diuidna or Dwina.

The ryuer
Suchana.

The frozen sea.

283

Dwina and
Suchana.

Gronland or
Engrouland.

Vnderstand myles
of Germany, that
is leagues.

Rych furies.
Lupi Ceruarii.

Sables.

parynge and layinge theyr wares together, and leauynge theyr furies in a mydde place, they bargeyne with simple fayth, with abfente and vnknown men. Sum men of great credite and autoritie, doo testifie that in a region beyond the Lappones, betwene the west and the north oppressed with perpetuall darkenes, is the nation of the people cauled Pigmei, who beinge growen to theyr ful grought, doo scarfely excede the stature of owre chyldren of ten yeares of age. It is a fearefull kynde of menne, and expresse theyr wordes in such chattering fort that they seeme to be so much the more lyke vnto apes, in howe muche they dyffer in fence and stature from men of iust heyght.

Towarde the North, innumerable people are subiecte to th[e]mpire of the Moscouites. Theyr regions extende to the Scythian Ocean for the space of almoste three moonethes iorney.

Next vnto Moscouia, is the region of Colmogora, aboundyng with frutes. Through this runneth the ryuer of Diuidna beinge one of the greateste that is knowen in the Northe partes, and gaue the name to an other lesse ryuer which breaketh furthe into the sea Baltheum. This increasyng at certeyne tymes of the yeare as dooth the ryuer Nilus, ouerfloweth the fyeldes and playnes, and with his fat and nurishinge moysture, dooth maruelously refist the iniuries of heauen and the sharpe blastes of the North wynde. When it ryfeth by reason of molten snowe and greate shoures of rayne, it fauleth into the Ocean by vnknown nations, and with so large a trenche lyke vnto a greate sea, that it can not bee fayled ouer in one day with a prosperous wynde. But when the waters are faulen, they leaue here and there large and fruitful Ilandes. For corne there cast on the grounde, groweth without any helpe of the plowe, and with maruelous celeritie of hastynge nature fearynge the newe iniurie of the proude ryuer, dooth both sprynge and rype in short space.

Into the ryuer Diuidna, runneth the ryuer Iuga: And in the corner where they ioyn together, is the famous marte towne cauled Vstiuga distant from the chiefe citie Mosca. vi. hundreth myles.

Note that wheras Paulus Ionius wryteth here that the ryuer of Diuidna, otherwyse cauled Dwina, runneth through the region of Colmogor, it is to bee vnderstode that there are two ryuers of that name, the one on the Northeast fyde of Moscouia towarde the frofen sea, and the other on the south west fyde faulng into the sea Baltheum, or the goulfe of Finnonia by the citie of Riga in Liuania. And forasmuch as the trewe knowlege of these and certeine other is very necessary for all such as shall trade into Moscouia or other regions in those coastes by the northe sea, I haue thought good to make further declaration hereof as I haue founde in the hystorie of Moscouia, most faythfully and largely wrytten by Sigismundus Liberus who was twyfe sent ambassadour into Moscouia, as fyrst by Maximilian Th[e]mperour, and then ageyne by Ferdinando kyng of Hungary and Boheme. This haue I doone the rather, for that in all the mapes that I haue seene of Moscouia, there is no mention made of the ryuer of Dwina that runneth through the region of Colmogor and by the citie of the same name, although the pronunce of Dwina bee in all cardes placed Northwarde from the ryuer of Vstiug or Succana, whiche is the same Dwina whereof we nowe speake, and wherof Paulus Ionius wryteth, although it bee not so named but from the angle or corner where ioynynge with the ryuer of Iug and Suchana, it runneth Northwarde towarde the citie of Colmogor, and from thence fauleth into the north or frofen sea, as shall hereafter more playnly appeare by the wordes of Sigismundus, that the one of these bee not taken for the other being so farre distant that great error myght ensue by mistakyng the same, especially because this wherof Paulus Ionius wryteth is not by name expresse in the cardes, but only the other, wherby the error myght bee the greater. Of that therefore that runneth by the confines of Liuania and the citie of Riga, Sigismundus wryteth in this manner.

The lake of Dwina, is distante from the sprynge of Boristhenes, almost tenne myles, and as many from the maryshe of Fronowo. From it, a ryuer of the same name towarde the west, distante from Vuilna. xx. [twenty] myles, runneth from thence towarde the Northe, where by Riga the chiefe citie of Liuania, it fauleth into the Germaine sea which the Moscouites caule Vuareczkote morie. It runneth by Vuitepsko, Polotzko, and Dunenburg, and not by Plefconia as one hath wrytten. This ryuer beinge for the moste part nanygale, the Lynons caule Duna.

Of the other Dwina wherof Paulus Ionius speaketh, he wryteth as foloweth.

The prouince of Dwina and the ryuer of the same name, is so named from the place where the ryuers of Suchana and Iug meatynge together, make one ryuer so cauled. For Dwina in the Moscouites toungue, signifieth two. This ryuer by the course of a hundred myles, entereth into the North Ocean on that part where the sayde sea runneth by the coastes of Swecia and Norwaye, and diuideth the Engronlande from the vnknown lande. This prouince situate in the ful north, pertained in tyme past to the fegniorie of Nouogorode. From Moscouia to the mouthes of Dwina, are numbered. CCC. [three hundred] myles: Albeit as I haue sayde, in the regions that are beyond Volga, the accompte of the iorney can not bee well obserued by reason of many maryshes, ryuers, and very greate wooddes that lye in the way. Yet are we led by coniecture to thinke it to bee scarfely two hundreth myles: forasmuch as from Moscouia to Vuolochda, from Vuolochda to Vstyug sumwhat into the East: and laste of all from Vstyug by the ryuer Dwina, is the ryght passage to the northe sea. This region, beyde the castel of Colmogor and citie of Dwina, situate almost in the mydde way betwene the sprynge and mouthes of the ryuer, and the castell of Pienea standynge in the very mouthes of Dwina, is vtterly without townes and castels: yet hath it many vyllages whiche are farre in funder by reason of the barrenesse of the soyle. etc.

In an other place he wryteth, that Suchana and Iug, after they are ioyned together in one, loofe theyr fyrste names and make the ryuer Dwina. etc. But lette vs nowe returne to the hystorie of Paulus Ionius.

Vnto Vstiuga, from the Permians, Pecerrians, Inugrians, Vgolicans, and Pinnegians, people inhabytynge the north and northeast prouinces, are brought the precious furies of Marterns and Sables: Also the cafes of woulfes and foxes both whyte and blacke: And lykewyse the skynnes of the beastes cauled Ceruarii Lupi (that is) harte woulfes, beinge engendered eyther of a wolfe and a hynde, or a harte and a bytch wolfe. These furies and skyns, they exchange for dyuers other wares. The best kynde of fables and of the finest heare wherwith nowe the vestures of princes are lyned, and the tender neckes of delicate dames are couered with the

expresse similitude of the luyng beaste, are brought by the Permians and Pecerrians, whiche they them felues also receaue at the handes of other that inhabite the regions neare vnto the north Ocean. The Permians and Pecerrians, a lITTLE before owre tyme, dyd sacrifice to Idols after the maner of the Gentyles: but doo nowe acknowledge Chryste theyr God. The passage to the Inugrians, and Vgolicans, is by certeyne rowgh mountaynes, which perhappes are they that in owlde tyme were cauled Hyperborei. In the toppes of these, are founde the beste kyndes of Falcons: whereof one kynde (cauled Herodium) is whyte with spotted fethers. There are also ierfalcons, fakers, and peregrines, whiche were vnknownen to the ancient princes in theyr exceffiue and nife pleasures.

Beyonde those people whom I last named (beinge all tributaries to the kinges of Moscouia) are other nations the last of men, not knownen by any viages of the Moscouites, forasmuche as none of theym haue passed to the Ocean, and are therefore knownen onely by the fabulous narrations of marchauntes. Yet is it apparenthe that the ryuer of Diuidna or Dwina, drawyng with it innumerable other ryuers, runneth with a vehement course towarde the northe: and that the sea is there excedyng large: so that faylyng by the coast of the ryght hande, shippes may haue passage from thense to Cathay as is thought by most lykely coniecture, excepte there lye sum lande in the waye. For the region of Cathay perteyneth to th[e] extreme and furthest partes of the Easte, situate almost in the paralell of Thracia, and knownen to the Portugales in India when they fayled neare thereunto by the regions of Sinara and Malacha to Aurea Cherfonefus, and brought from thense certeyne vestures made of Sables skynnes, by which only argument it is apparenthe that the cite of Cathay is not farre from the coastes of Scythia.

But when Demetrius was demaunded whether eyther by the monumentes of letters or by fame lefte theym of theyr predicesours, they hadde any knowlege of the gothes who nowe more then a thousand yeares fence subuerted Th[e] empire of the Romane Emperours, and defaced the cite of Rome, he answered, that both the nation of the Gothes of the name of kynge Totilas theyr chiefe capitayne, was of famous memorie amonge them: And that dyuers nations of the north regions conspired to that expedition, and especialye the Moscouites: Also that that armie increased of the confluence of the Barbarous Linons and wanderynge Tartars: But that they were all cauled Gothes forasmuch as the Gothes that inhabited Scandia and Ielande, were the auctoures of that inuasion.

And with these boundes are the Moscouites inclosed on euery side, whom we thinke to be those people that Ptolome cauled Modocas: but haue doubtelesse at this day their name of the riuer Mosco whiche runneth through the chiefe cite Mosca named also after the same. This is the most famous cite in Moscouia, aswell for the situation thereof beinge in maner in the mydde of the region, as also for the commodious oportunitie of ryuers, multitude of houses, and stronge fence of so fayre and goodly a castell. For the cite is extended with a longe tracte of buyldynges by the bankes of the ryuer for the space of fyue myles. The houses are made all of tymber, and are diuided into parlors, chambers, and kichins of large roomes: yet neyther of vnseemely height or to lowe, but of decent measure and proportion. For they haue greate trees apte for the purpose brought from the foreste of Hercinia? of the which, made perfectly rounde like the mastes of shippes, and so layde one vpon an other that they ioyne at the endes in right angles, where being made very faste and sure, they frame theyr houses thereof of maruelous strength with smaule charges and in verry short tyme. In maner all the houses haue priuate gardens aswell for pleasure as commoditie of herbes, wherby the circuite of the disperfed cite appeareth very greate. All the wardes or quarters of the cite, haue their peculiar chappels. But in the chiefe and highest place therof, is the Church of owre ladi of ample and goodly workemanshype, whiche Aristoteles of Bononie, a man of singular knowlege and experience in architecture, buylded more then lx. [sixty] yeares fence. At the very head of the cite, a little ryuer cauled Neglina which dryueth many corne mylles, entereth into the ryuer Moscus, and maketh almost an Iland, in whose end is the castell with many strong towrs and bullwarkes, buylded very fayre by the diuise of Italian architecturs that are the masters of the kinges workes. In the felde about the cite, is an incredible multitud of hares and roe buckes, the which it is lawefull for no man to chafe or persee with dogges or nettes excepte only certeyne of the kinges familiars and straunge ambassadours to whom he giueth licence by speciall commaundement. Almost three partes of the cite is inuironed with two ryuers, and the refydue with a large mote that receaueth plentie of water frome the fayde ryuers. The cite is also defended on the other syde with an other ryuer named Iansa, whiche fauleth also into Moscus a little beneath the cite. Furthermore Moscus runnyng towarde the South, fauleth into the ryuer Ocha or Occa muche greater then it felse at the towne Columna, and not very farre from thense Ocha it felse increased with other riuers, vnladeth his streames in the famous riuer Volgo, wher at the place where they ioyne, is situate the cite of Nouogrodia the lesse, so named in respecte of the greater cite of that name from whense was brought the firste colonie of the lesse cite. Volga cauled in owlde tyme Rha, hath his originall of the greate marysshes named the white lakes. These are about Moscouia betwene the Northe and the West, and fende furthe from them almost all the ryuers that are disperfed

The mountaines cauled Hiperborei Haukes of diuers kyndes.

The passage from Moscouia to cathay.

Cathay.

Master Eliot cauleth Cathay the region of sinarus.

The Gothes subuerted the Romane Empire.

The north regions conspired against the Romans.

Moscouia

284

The cite of Mosca.

Richard chaunceler toulde me that these mastes are sumwhat holowe on the one syde, and that the hole syde of the next entereth into the same wherby they lye very close.

The castell of Mosca.

White hares and roe buckes.

The ryuer Ocha.

Volga.

Nouogrodia.

Rha.

The whyte lakes.

The Ryphean and
hyperborean
mountaynes.
Tanais and
Borysthenes.
The sea Euxinus.

The Caspian sea.
Astrachan.
Media.
Armenia.
Persia.
Casan.

285

Sura.
Surcium.

Nouogrodia.

The temple of
Sancta Sophia.

The eleuation of
the pole at
Nouogrodia and
Moscovia.
Heate by reason
of short nyghtes.

The citie of
Volodemaria.

The citie of
Moscha.

Ottoferia.

Volga.

Riga.

The citie of
Piescouia.

The citie of
Lubeke.

From Rome to
Moscovia.

Wynter trauayle
by ice and snowe.

Marysshes in
sommer.

into dyuers regions on euery syde, as wee see of the Alpes from whose toppes and sprynges descend the waters of whose concourse the ryuers of Rhene, Po, and Rodanum, haue theyr increafe. For these marysshes in the sleade of mountaynes ful of sprynges, minister abundant moysture, forasmuch as no mountaynes are yet founde in that region by the longe trauayles of men, in so much that manye that haue byn studious of the owlde Cosnographie, suppose the Ryphean and Hyperborean mountaynes so often mentioned of the ancient writers, to bee fabulous. From these marysshes therfore, the ryuers of Dwinā, Ocha, Moschus, Volga, Tanais, and Borysthenes, haue theyr originall. The Tartars caule Volga Edel: Tanais they caule Don: And Borysthenes is at this day cauled Neper. This, a lyttle beneathe Taurica, runneth into the sea Euxinus. Tanais is receaued of the marysshes of Meotis at the noble marte towne Azoum. But Volga leauynge the citie of Moscha towarde the south, and runnyng with a large circuite and greate wyndynges and creekes first towarde the Easte, then to the West, and lastly to the south, fauleth with a full streame into the Caspian or Hyrcan sea. About the mouth of this, is a citie of the Tartars cauled Cyttrachan, which sum caule Afrachan, where martes are kepte by the marchauntes of Media, Armenia, and Persia. On the further banke of Volga, there is a towne of the Tartars cauled Cafan, of the which the Horda of the Cafanite Tartars tooke theyr name. It is distante from the mouth of Volga and the Caspian sea fyue hundreth myles. About Cafan. C l. [one hundred and fifty] myles at the enterance of the ryuer Sura, Basilius that now reigneth, buylded a towne cauled Surcium, to th[e]intente that in those desertes, the marchauntes and trauailers which certifie the gouernours of the marches of the doinges of the Tartars and the maners of that vnquiet nation, may haue a safe mansion amonge theyr customers.

Th[e]emperours of Moscovia at dyuers tymes, eyther moued therto by occasion of thynges presente, or for the defyre they had to nobilitate newe and obscure places, haue kepte the seate of theyr courte and Empire in dyuers cities. For Nouogrodia whiche lyeth towarde the Weste and the Lyuon sea, not many yeares paste, was the headde citie of Moscovia, and obteyned euer the chiefe dignitie by reason of the incredible number of houfes and edif[c]es, with the oportunitie of the large lake replenyfshed with fyfhe, and also for the fame of the moste auncient and venerable temple whiche more then foure hundreth yeres fence was dedicated to Sancta Sophia Chryste the foonne of God, accordyng to the custome of the Emprours of Bizantium nowe cauled Constantinople. Nouogrodia is oppressed in maner with continuall wynter and darkeness of longe nyghtes. For it hath the pole Artike eleuate above the Horizon threescore and foure degrees: and is further from the Equinoctiall then Moscovia by almoste. vi. degrees. By whiche dyfference of heauen, it is sayde that at the sommer stepe of the foonne, it is burnte with continuall heate by reason of the shorte nyghtes.

The citie also of Volodemaria, beinge more then twoo hundreth myles distant from Mosca towarde the Easte, had the name of the chiefe citie and kynges towne, whyther the seate of Th[e]empire was translated by the valiant Emperours for necessarie considerations, that such ayde, furniture, and requisites as apperteyne to the warres myght bee neare at hande at suche tyme as they kepte continuall warre ageynste the Tartars theyr bortherers. For it is situate without Volga, on the bankes of the ryuer Clefma, whiche fauleth into Volga. But Moscha, aswell for those gyftes and commodities whereof we haue spoken, as also that it is situate in the mydde of the most frequented place of all the region and Empire, and defended with the ryuer and Castel, hath in comparyson to other cities byn thought moste woorthy to bee esteemed for the chiefe. Moscha is distant from Nouogrodia fyue hundreth myles: and almost in the mydde way is the citie of Ottoferia (otherwyse cauled Otwer or Tuwer) vppon the ryuer of Volga. This ryuer neare vnto the fountaynes and sprynges of the same, not yet increased by receauyng so many other ryuers, runneth but slowly and gentelly: And passeth from thense to Nouogrodia through many wooddes and defolate playnes. Furthermore from Nouogrodia to Riga the nexte porte of the Sarmatian sea, is the iornay of a thousand myles lyttle more or lesse. This tracte is thought to bee more commodious then the other, bycause it hath manye townes and the citie of Piescouia in the waye, beinge imbraced with two ryuers. From Riga (perteynyng to the dominion of the greate master of the warres of the Liouns) to the citie of Lubeke a porte of Germanie in the goulfe of Cymbrica Cherfonefus (nowe cauled Denmarke) are numbered aboute a thousande myles of daungerous faylyng.

From Rome to the citie of Moscha, the distance is knownen to bee two thousande and fyxe hundreth miles by the nearest way passyng by Rauenna, Taruifium, the Alpes of Carnica: Also Villacum, Noricum, and Vienna of Pannonie: and from thense (passyng ouer the ryuer of Danubius) to Olmutium of the Marouians and to Cracouia the chiefe citie of Polonie, are coumpted. xi. hundreth myles. From Cracouia to Vilna the headde citie of Lithuania, are coumpted fyue hundreth myles: and as many from that citie to Smolenzko situate beyonde Borysthenes, from whense to Moscha are coumpted fyxe hundreth myles. The iorney from Vilna by Smolenzko to Moscha, is trauayled in wynter with expedite sleades and incredible celeritie vppon the snowes hardened with longe froste and compacte lyke Ice by reason of muche wearyng. But in sommer, the playnes can not bee ouerpassed but by difficulte and laborious trauayle. For when the snowes by the continuall heate of the foonne begyn to melte and diffolue, they caufe great marysshes and quamyres able to intangle bothe horse

and man, were it not that wayes are made through the same with brydges and causeys of wood, and almost infinite labour.

In all the region of Moscouia, there is no wayne or mine of golde or syluer, or any other common metall excepte iren: neyther yet is there any token of precious stones. And therefore they bye all those thynges of straungers. Neuerthelesse, this iniurie of nature is recompensed with abundaunce of rich furies, whose price by the wanton nicenesse of men is growne to such excesse that the furies perteynyng to one forte of apparell, are nowe fouldre for a thousande crownes. But the tyme hath byn that these haue byn bought better chepe when the furthest nations of the north beinge ignorant of our nyse finenesse and breathyng desyre toward effeminate and superfluous pleasures, exchanged the same with muche simplicitie often tymes for tryfles and thynges of smaule value: In so muche that commonly the Peremians and Pecerrians, were accustomed to gyue so many skynnes of Sables for an Iren axe or hatchet as beinge tyed harde togyther, the marchauntes of Moscouia coule drawe through the hole where the hafte or handyll entereth into the same. But the Moscouites fende into all partes of Europe the best kynde of flaxe to make linnen clothe, and hempe for ropes: Also many oxen hydys, and excedyng great masses of waxe.

They proudly denye that the Romane church obteyneth the principate and preeminent autoritie of all other.

They so abhorre the nation of the Iewes, that they detest the memorie of them, and wyll in no condition admitte them to dwell within theyr dominions: esteemyng them as wycked and mischeuous people that haue of late tawght the Turkes to make gunnes. Besyde the booke that they haue of the ancient Greeke doctours, they haue also the commentaries and homelies of faynt Ambrose, Augustine, Ierome, and Gregorie, translated into the Illirian or Slaun tounge which agreeth with theirs. For they vse bothe the Slaun tounge and letters, as doo also the Sclauons, Dalmates, Bohemes, Pollones, and Lithuanes. This tounge is spredde further then any other at this day. For it is familiar at Constantinople in the courte of the Emperours of the Turkes: and was of late harde in Egypte amonge the Mamalukes in the courte of the Soltane of Alcaire otherwyse cauled Memphis or Babilon in Egypte. A greate number of booke of holy scripture are translated into this tounge by the industrie of faynte Ierome and Cyrillus. Furthermore, besyde the histories of theyr owne countreys, they haue also booke conteynyng the factes of great Alexander and the Romane Emperours, and lykewyfe of Marcus Antonius and Cleopatra. They haue no maner of knowlege of philosophie, Astronomie, or speculatiue phisicke with other liberall sciences: But such are taken for phisitians as professe that they haue often times obserued the vertue and qualitie of sum vnknown herbe.

They number the yeares, not from the byrth of Chryste, but from the begynnynge of the worlde. And this they begin to accompte, not frome the monethe of Ianuary, but from September.

They haue fewe and simple lawes throwghe owte all the kyngedome, made by the equite and conscience of theyr princes, and approued by the consent of wyse and good men: and are therfore greatly for the welthe and quyetnesse of the people forasmuch as it is not lawfull to peruerter them with any interpretations or cauillations of lawyers or attorneys. They punyssh theues, rouers, priuie pyckers, and murtherers. When they examine malefactours, they poure a great quantitie of coulede water vpon fuche as they suspecte, whiche they say to bee an intollerable kynde of tormente. But sumtymes they manacle fuche as are sloborne, and wyll not confesse apparent crimes.

Theyr youth is exercised in dyuers kyndes of games and plays resembling the warres, wherby they both practise pollicie and increase theyr strength. They vse runnyng both on horsebacke and afoote. Also runnyng at the tylte, wrestlyng, and especially shootyng. For they gyue rewardes to fuche as excell therein.

The Moscouites are vniuersally of meane stature, yet very square fet and myghty brawned. They haue all grey eyes, longe bearded, shorte legges, and bygge bellies. They ryde very shorte, and shoote backwarde very cunningly euen as they flye. At home in theyr houses, theyr fare is rather plentifull then deyntie. For theyr tables are furnysshed for a smaule price with all fuche kyndes of meates as may bee desired of such as are gyuen to most excessiue gluttony. Hennes and duckes are bought for lyttle syluer penne the piece. There is incredible plentie of beastes and cattayle bothe greate and smaule. The fleshe of biese that is kylled in the myydest of wynter, is so congeled and frofen, that it putrifiethe not for the space of two moonethes. Theyr beste and moste delicate dysshes, are gotten by huntynge and haukyng as with vs. For they take all fortes of wylde beastes with houndes and dyuers kyndes of nettes. And with falcons and erens or eagles of a marucylous kynde whiche the region of Pecerra bryngeth furth vnto them, they take not onely fefantes and wylde duckes, but also cranes and wylde swannes. They take also a foule of darke coloure abowte the byggenes of a goose with redde ouerbrowes, whose fleshe in taste passeth the pleasauntnesse of Pheafauntes. These in the Moscouites tounge are cauled *Titrao*, whiche I suppose to bee the same that Plinie cauleth *Erythrao*, knowne to the people of the Alpes, and especially to the Rhetians whiche inhabite the laundes abowte the sprynges of the ryuer Abdua. The ryuer of Volga ministreth vnto them great fysshes and of pleasaunte taste: especially sturgions or

Other wyrters deny this.

286

Riche furies.

The price of furies.

How many sables skynnes for an axe.

Flax.
Oxe hydys.
Waxe.

They abhorre the Iewes.

Their boke and religion.

The Sclauon tounge spred further then any other.

Saynte Ierome was borne in Dalmatia nowe cauled Sclauonia.

How they number the yeares.

Fewe and simple lawes

The exercise of youth.

Shootyng.

The corporature of the Moscouites.

Theyr fare.

287

Fleshe preserved longe by reason of coulede.

Haukyng and huntynge.

Plentie of fysshes.

Fyshe longe
reserued in Ise.

Wyne.

Maluasia.

All the north
parte of the firme
lande was called
Scythia and the
people Scythians.
Drynke cooled
with Ise.

Wyne of cherries.

Their women.

Thomas
Paleologus.
The conquest of
the turkes in
Grecia.

How the princes
chuse their wyues.

288

Duke Basilius.

War betwene the
Polones and
Moschonites.

War betwene the
Moschouites and
Tartars.

The Mosconites
army.
Their banner.

Their horses and
hors[e]men.

rather a kynde of fyfthe lyke vnto sturgions: whiche in the wynter seafon beinge inclofed in Ice, are longe referued fresshe and vncorrupte. Of other kindes of fyfthes, they take in maner an incredible multitude in the whyte lakes whereof wee haue spoken before. And wheras they vtterly lacke natiue wynes, they vse suche as are brought from other places. And this only in certeine feastes and holy misteries. Especially the pleasaunte Maluafies of the Iland of Creta nowe cauled Candy, are had in moste honoure: and vsed eyther as medicens or for a shewe of excessiue aboundaunce, forasmuche as it is in maner a miracle that wynes brought frome Candy by the streyghtes of Hercules pillars and the Ilandes of Gades, and tossed with such fluddes of the inclofed Ocean, shulde be droonke amonge the Scythyan snowes in theyr natiue puritie and pleasauntneffe.

The common people drinke mede made of hony and hoppes foddren together, whiche they keepe longe in pytched barrells where the goodnes increaseth with age. They vse also beere and ale as doo the Germanes and Polones. They are accustomed for delycatenes in sommer to coole theyr beere and mede with puttynge Ice therin, whiche the noble men referue in theyr fellars in great quantitie for the same purpose. Summe there are that delyte greatly in the iuse that is pressed owte of cherries before they bee full ripe: whiche they affyrme to haue the coloure of cleare and ruddy wyne with a verye pleasaunte taste.

Their wyues and women, are not with them in suche honoure as they are in other nations. For they vse them in maner in the place of seruantes. The noble men and gentelmen, doo diligently obserue theyr walkes and haue an eye to their chastitie. They are feldom bydden furth to any feastes: nether are permytted to reforte to churches farre of, or to walke abroad without sum greate confyderation. But the common sorte of women, are easely and for a smaule price allured to lecherye euen of straungers: by reason wherof, the gentelmen doo lyttle or nothyng esteeme them.

Iohn the father of kynge Basilius dyed more then. xx. [twenty] yeares sence. He maryed Sophia the daughter of Thomas Paleologus who reigned farre in Peloponnese (now cauled Morea) and was brother to Th[e]mperoure of constantinople. Shee was then at Rome when Thomas her father was dryuen owte of Grecia by the Turckes. Of her were fyue chyldren borne, as Basilius hym selfe, George, Demetrius, Symeon, and Andreas. Basilius tooke to wyfe Salomonias the daughter of George Soborouius a man of synguler fidelitie and wysdome and one of hys counsaile. The excellent vertues of which woman, only barenneffe obscured.

When the prynces of Moscovia delyberat to marie, theyr custome is to haue choysse of all the vyrgynes in the realme, and to cause suche as are of most fayre and bewtyfull vyfage and perfonage with maners and vertues accordyng, to bee brought before them. Which afterwarde they committe to certayne faythful men and graue matrones to bee furder vewed, in so muche that they leaue no parte of them vnserched. Of these, shee whome the prynce most lyketh, is pronounced woorthy to bee hys wyfe, not without greate and carefull expectation of theyr parentes, luyng for that tyme betwene hope and feare. The other vyrgynes also which floode in election and contended in bewty and integritie of maners, are often times the same day to gratyfye the prynce, maryed to hys noble men, gentelmen, and capytaynes: wherby it sumtymes commeth to passe that whyle the princes contemne the lynage of roiall descende, suche as are borne of humble parentage, are exalted to the degree of princely estate. In lyke maner as Th[e]mperours of the turckes were accustomed to bee chosen by cumlynesse of perfonage and warly prowes.

Basilius was vnder th[e] age of forty and feuen yeares, of cumly perfonage, singuler vertue, and princely qualities, by all meanes studious for the prosperitie and commodities of hys subiectes. Furthermore in beneuolence, lyberalitie and good successe in hys doynge, to bee preferred before his progenitours. For when he hadde. vi. yeares kepte warre with the Lyuons that moued. lxxii. [seventy-two] confetherate cities to the cause of that warre, he obteyned the victorie and departed with fewe conditions of peace rather gyuen then accepted. Also at the begynnyng of his reigne, he put the Polones to flight and took prisoner Constantine the capitayne of the Ruthens whom he brought to Moscovia tyed in chaynes. But shortly after at the ryuer Boristhenes aboue the cite of Orfa, he hym selfe was ouercomme in a great battayle by the fame Constantine whom he hadde dismissed: Yet so, that the towne of Smolenzko whiche the Moscouites possessed before and was now woonne by the Polons, shulde styll pertaine to the dominions of Basilius. But ageynste the Tartars, and especially the Tartars of Europe cauled the Precopites, the Moscouites haue often tymes kepte warre with good successe, in reuenge of th[e] iniuries doone to them by theyr incursions.

Basilius is accustomed to bryng to the fildes more then a hundreth and fiftie thousande horfemen deuided into three bandes and folowynge the banners or enseignes of theyr capitaynes in order of battayle. On the banner of the kynges wyng, is figured the image of Iofue the capitaine of the Hebrewes at whose prayer the soone prolonged the daye and steyde his course as wytnesse the histories of holye scripture. Armies of foote-men are in maner to no vse in those great wyldernes, aswel for theyr apparel beinge loose and longe, as also for the custome of theyr enemies, who in theyr warres truste rather to the swyftnesse of theyr lyght horfes then to trye the matter in a pyght fyelde.

Their horfes are of lesse then meane stature: but verye stronge and swyfte. Their horfemen are armed

with pykes, ryuettes, mafes of Iren and arrowes. Fewe haue hooked fwoordes. Their bodies are defended with rounde Targets after the maner of the Turkes of Asia : or with bendyng and cornarde targettes after the maner of the Greekes : Also with coates of mayle, brygantynes, and sharpe helmettes. Bafilus dyd furthermore instytute a band of hargabusiers on horsbacke : and caused many greate brafen pieces to bee made by the woorkemanshype of certeyne Italyans : and the same with theyr stockes and wheeles to bee placed in the castell of Mosca.

The kynge hym selfe with pryncely magnyfycence and singlar familiaritie (wherwith neuerthelesse no parte of the maiestie of a kyng is vyolate) is accustomed to dyne openly with hys noble men and straunge ambassadours in hys owne chamber of preface where is feene A meruelous quantitye of syluer and gylte plate standyng vppon two great and high cubbardes in the same chamber. He hath not abowte hym any other garde for the custody of hys perfon sauynge only hys accustomed famylye. For watche and warde is dylygently kepte of the faythfull multytude of the citifens : In so muche that euery warde or quarter of the cite is inclofed with gates rayles, and barres : neyther is it lawfull for any man raffhely to walke in the cite in the nyght, or without lyght. All the courte confysteth of noble men, gentelmen, and choyse fouldyers which are cauled owte of euery regyon by theyre townes and vylлагies, and commaunded to wayte course by course at certeyne moonethes appoynted. Furthermore when warre is proclaymed, all the armye is collected bothe of the owlde fouldiers and by musterynge of newe in all prouynces. For the lieuetenantes and capytaynes of the armye, are accustomed in all cities to muster the youth, and to admytte to th[e] order of fouldyers such as they thynke able to ferue the turne. Theyre wages is payde them of the common treasurie of euery prouynce which is gathered and partely payde also in the tyme of peace although it bee but lyttle. But such as are assigned to the warres, are free frome all tributes, and inioye certein other priuilegies wherby they may the more gladly and cherfully ferue theyr kynge and defend theyr contrey. For in the tyme of warre, occacyon is mynstred to shewe trewe vertue and manhodde, where in so greate and necessarie an institution, euery man accordyng to hys approued actiuitie and ingenious forwardnesse, may obteyne the fortune eyther of perpetuall honoure or ignominie.

Theire armure.

Hargabusiers.
Gunnnes.

The Prince dyneth
openly.

Sigismundus sayth
that much of this
is golde.

The custodie of
the cite.

The dukes courte.

Souldyers wages
of the common
treasury.

*Vix olim vlla fides referentibus horrida regna
Moschorum, et Ponti, res glacialis erat.
Nunc Iouio autore, illa oculis lustramus, et vrbet.
Et nemora, et montes cernimus et fluuios.
Moschouiam, monumenta Ioui, tua culta reuoluens.
Cæpi alios mundos credere Democriti.*

289



OTHER NOTABLE THYNGES
AS CONCERNYNGE MOSCOVIA: GATHERED OWT OF
THE BOOKES OF SIGISMVNDVS LIBERVS.

Note that when he sayth myles, he meaneth leagues.

Russia.

The browne colour
of the Russes.

Rosscia.

The Slaun tounge
spreadeth farre.



From whene Ruffia had the name, there are dyuers opinions. Some thynke that it was so named of one Ruffus the foonne or neuie of Lech the kynge of the Polons. Other affirme that it was so cauled of a certeyne owlde towne named Ruffus not farre frome Nouogoroda or Nouogardia the more. Sum also thynke that it was so cauled of the browne coloure of the nation. But the Moscouians confute al these opinions as vntrewe: Affirmynge that this nation was in owld tyme cauled Rosscia as a nation disperfed, as the name it selfe dooth declare. For Rosscia in the Ruthens tounge, doothe signifie disperfed or fcattered. The which thyng to be trew, dyuers prouinces lyng here and there betwene dyuers partes of Ruffia doo playnely declare. But whene so euer they tooke theyr name, doubtlesse all the people that vse the Slaun tounge, and professe the fayth of Chryst after the maner of the Greekes, (cauled in theyr common language Ruffi, and in the Latin tounge Rutheni) are increased to fuche

a multytude that they haue eyther expulfed all the nations that lye betwene them, or drawne them to theyr maner of luyng, infomuche that they are nowe cauled all Rutheni by one common name.

Furthermore the Slaun tounge (whiche at this daye is sumwhat corruptly cauled Sclauon) runneth exceedyng far, as vsed of the Dalmates, Bosfuenser, Croatians, Istrians, and by a longe tracte of the sea Adriatike vnto Forum Iulii: Of the Caruians also whome the Venetians caule Charfos: and lykewyse of the Carniolans and Carinthians vnto the ryuer Draus: Furthermore of the Stirians within Gretzium and by Muera vnto Danubius and from thense of the Myfians, Seruians, Bulgarians, and other inhabityng euen vnto Constantinople: Furthermore of the Bohemians, Lufacians, Silesians, Morauians, and th[e]inhabitauntes neare vnto the ryuer Vagus in the kyngedome of Hungarie: The Polons also and the Ruthenians whose Empire reacheth very farre: lykewyse the Circasians and Quinquemontanians vnto Pontus: and is from thense vsed in the north partes of Germanie amonge the remanent of the Vandales inhabityng here and there. All whiche nations althrough they acknowledge them selues to bee Sclauons, yet the Germainys taking the denomination only of the Vandales, caule al them that vse the Slaun tounge, Vuenden, Vuinden, or Vuindysh.

Vandales.

The Princes of
Russia.

Of the Princes that nowe reigne in Ruffia, the chiefe is the great Duke of Moscouia who possesseth the greatest part therof. The seconde is the great duke of Lithuania: and the thyrde the kynge of Polonie, who nowe obteyneth the dominion of Polonie and Lithuania.

The duke of
Moscouia.

In autoritie and dominion ouer his subiectes, the prince of Moscouie passeth all the monarkes of the worlde. For he depriueth all his noble men and gentelmen of al theyr holdes and munitions at his pleasure. He trusteth not his owne brotherne, but oppreffeth all with lyke feruitude. In so muche that whome so euer he commaundeth eyther to remayne with hym in the courte, or to goo to the warres, or fendeth on an ambassage, they are compelled to bee at theyr owne charges, excepte the younge gentelmen the foonnes of the Boiarons, that is, the noble men of the lowest degree. He vsurpeth this autoritie aswell ouer the spiritaltie as the temporaltie: constitutyng what him lysteth of the goods and lyfe of al men. Of his counsilers there is not one that dare diffente from hym in any thyng. They openly confesse that the wyl of the prince is the wyl of god: and therefore caule hym the key bearer and chamberlen of god, and beleue him to bee the executor of gods wyl.

By reason wherof, the prince hym selfe when any petition is made to hym for the deliuerie of any captiue, is accustomed to aunfwere: When god commaundeth he shalbe deliuered. Lykewyfe when any asketh a question of an vncerteyne or doubtfull thyng, theyr custome is to answere thus: God knoweth and the greate prince. It is vncerteyne whether the crueltie and fiercenes of the nation doo requyre so tyrannous a prince, or whether by the tyranny of the prince, the nation is made so fierce and cruell.

Bafilus the soonne of Iohn, was the fyrst that tooke vppon hym the name and title of a kynge in this maner: The great lorde Bafilus, by the grace of god kynge and lorde of all Ruffia and the greate duke of Vuolodimaria, Moscouia, Nouogardia, etc.

Furthermore, wheras nowe this prince is cauled an Emperour, I haue thought good to shewe the tytles and cause of this error. Note therfore that Czar in the Ruthens tounge signifieth a kynge, wheras in the language of the Slauians, Pollons, Bohemes, and other, the same woorde Czar, signifieth Cefar by whiche name Th[e]emperours haue byn commonly cauled. For bothe they and the Slauians that are vnder the kyngdome of Hungarie, caule a kynge by an other name: as sum Crall, other Kyrall, and sum Koroll: but thinke that only an Emperoure is cauled Czar. Whereby it came to passe that the Ruthene or Moscouite interpretours hearynge theyr prince to bee so cauled of straunge nations, began them selues also to name hym an Emperour, and thinke the name of Czar to bee more worthy then the name of a kynge, althowgh they signifie all one thyng. But who so wyl reade all theyr hystories and bookes of holy scripture, shall fynde that a kynge is cauled Czar, and an Emperour Kessar. By the lyke erreure Th[e]emperour of the Turkes is cauled Czar, who neuerthelesse of antiquitie vsed no hygher tytles then the name of a kynge, expressed by this woorde Czar. And hereof the Turkes of Europe that vse the Slauian tounge, caule the cite of Constantinople Czargrad, (that is) the kynges cite.

Sum caule the prince of Moscouie the whyte kynge, whiche I thinke to proceade of the whyte cappes, or other tyrements they weare on theyr heades, lyke as they caule the kynge of Percia Kifilpassa (that is) redde headde. He vseth the tytles of a kynge when he writeth or sendeth to Rome, the Emperour, the pope, the kynge of Suetia and Denmarke, the greate master of Prussia and Liuania, and also to the greate Turke as I haue byn credably informed: but he is not cauled kynge of any of them, excepte perhappes of the Liuians. Yet by reason of his later conquestes, sum haue thought hym worthy the name of a kynge or rather of an Emperour bycause he hath kynges vnder his Empire.

To the kynge of Polone he vseth this tytles: The great lorde Bafilus by the grace of god, lorde of all Ruffia, and greate duke of Vuolodimaria, Moscouia, Nouogardia. etc. leauynge owt the tytles of a kyng. For none of them vouchsafeth to receaue the letters of the other augmented with any newe tytles, as I knewe by experience at my being in Moscouia, at which tyme Sigismundus the kynge of Polone sente hym his letters augmented with the tytles of the Duke of Masouia, wherwith he was not a lyttle offended.

They glorie in theyr hystories that before Vuolodimaria and Olha, the lande of Ruffia was baptised and blessed of saynt Andrewe th[e]apostle of Chryst, affirmyng that he came from Grecia to the mouthes of the ryuer Borysthenes: and that he sayled vppon the ryuer to the mountaynes where as is nowe Chiouia: and that there he blessed all the lande and placed his crosse, prophesyng also that the grace of god shulde bee greate there, and that there shulde bee many churches of Chrystian men: Lykewyfe that he afterwarde came to the sprynges of Borysthenes vnto the great lake Vuolok, and by the ryuer Louat descended into the lake Ilmer: from whense by the ryuer Vuolcon whiche runneth owte of the same lake, he came to Nouogardia: and passed frome thense by the same ryuer to the lake Ladoga and the ryuer Heua, and so vnto the sea whiche they caule Vuaretzkoia, beinge the same that we caule the Germaine sea, betwene Vuinlandia or Finlandia and Liuania, by the whiche he sayled to Rome, and was at the laste crucified for Chryste his gospell in Peloponnesus by the tyranny of Agus Antipater, as theyr crownacles make mention.

The prynce euery seconde or thyrde yeare, causeth a muster to bee taken of the soones of the Boiarons, and taketh an accompte bothe of theyr number and howe many horses and men euery of them is able to make: and then appoynteth a certeyne slypente to fuche as are able further to beare theyr owne charges in the warres. They haue seldome any rest or quyetenesse. For they eyther keepe warre with the Lithuanians, Liuians, Suetians, or Tartars of Casan. Or yf it so chaunce that the prynce keepe no warre, yet dooth he yearly appoynte garrysons of. xx. [twenty] thousande menne in places abowt Tanais and Occa to repreffe the incurfions and robberyes of the European Tartars cauled Precopites.

As in other matters, euen so in th[e]order of warrefare ther is great diuerfite amonge men. For the Moscouian as soone as he begynneth to flye, thinketh of none other succoure but putteth all his confidence therein. Beinge pursued or taken of his enemye, he neyther defendeth himselfe nor desirethe pardon.

The Tartar cast of from his horse, spoyled of al his armure and weapons, and also fore wounded, defendeth hym selfe with handes, feete, and teethe, and by all meanes he may, vntyll his strength and spirite fayle hym.

The Turke, when he seeth hym selfe desitute of all helpe and hope to escape, doth humbly desyre pardon,

290

Why the duke of Moscouia was cauled an Emperour

The greate Turke.

The whyte kynge.

The duke of Moscouia his tytles.

Russia baptised by saynt Andrewe the Apostle.

The Moscouites warres

291

Dyuers maners of dyuers people in the wars.

casting away his weapons and armure, and reching furth to the victourer his hands ioyned together to be bounde, hopynge by captiuitie to faue his lyfe.

The Moscouytes
army.

The Moscouites in placeinge their armye chuse them a large playne where the best of them pytch their tentes and the other make them certen arbours of bouwes fyxt in the grounde, bendyng together the toppes therof, whiche they couer with theyr clokes to defende themselues, theyr bowes, arrowes, faddyles, and other theyr necessaries from rayne. They put furth theyr horses to pasture, and for that cause haue theyr tentes so farre in funder, which they fortifye neyther with cartes or trenches or any other impedymment, excepte perhappes the place bee defended by nature as with wooddes, ryuers and marysshes.

Howe he
maynteyneth his
army.

It may perhappes seeme straunge howe he maynteyneth hym and hys so longe with so smaule an army as I haue sayde. I wyll nowe therfore brefely declare theyre sparynge and frugalitie. He that hath fyxe or sumtymes more horses, vseth one of them as A packe horse to beare all theyr necessaryes. He hath also in a bagge of two or three spanes longe, the floure or meale of the grayne cauled mylle: and. viii. or x. poundes weyghte of swynes fleshe powdered. He hathe lykewyse A bagge of salte, myxte with pepper if he bee ryche. Furthermore euery man caryeth with hym A hatchet, A fyre boxe, and a brafen potte: so that if they chauce to coomme to any place where they can fynde no frutes, garlyke, onyons or fleshe, they kyndle a fyre and fylle theyr pottes with water wherunto they put a spoonefull of meale with a quantitie of salte, and make pottage therof, wherwith the master and ail hys seruantes lyue contented. But if the master bee very hungary he eateth all alone, and the seruantes are sumtymes inforced to faste for the space of two or three dayes. And yf the master intende to fare sumwhat more delycately, then he addeth therto a lyttle portion of swynes fleshe. I speake not thys of the best of them, but of fuche as are of the meane forte. The gouernours and capytaynes of th[e] armye, doo sum tymes bydde the poorer forte to theyre tables: where theye feede them selues so wel, that they faste two or three dayes after. When they haue frutes, garlyke, and onyons, theye can well forbear all other meates. Procedyng forwarde to the battayle, they put more confydence in theyr multitude, and with what great armyes they assaile theyr enemyes, then eyther in the strengthe and valyantenesse of theyr souldyers, or in well instructyng their armye: and fyght better afarre of, then at hande: and therfore study howe to circumuent or inclose theyr enemyes and to assaile them on the backe halfe.

Instruments of
warre.

They haue many trumpiters: The which whyle they blow all at once after theyr maner, make A meruelous straunge noyfe. They haue also an other kynde of instrumentes which they caule Szurna. These they blowe withowte seafyng for the space of an houre together, so temperyng the same and holdyng in the wynd whyle they drawe more, that the noyfe seemeth continuall withoute intermyssion.

The Moscouites
and Tartars
apparell.

They vse all one maner of appareyle: as longe coates withowte pleyghtes and with narrowe sleaues after the maner of the Hungaryans. These the Christians vse to batten on the right fyde: and the Tartars (vsinge the lyke) batten them on the lefte fyde. They weare redde and shorte buskyns that reache not to theyr knees: and haue the foules therof defended with plates of Iren. In maner all theyr shyrtes are wroughte with dyuers colours aboute the necke: and haue the collars and ruffes byfette with lyttle rounde baules lyke beades, of syluer or gylted copper, and sumtyme perles also. They gyrde them selues beneth the bellye euen as lowe as theyr priuy members, that they may seme more boorely which they greatly esteeme, as doo at thys day the Spanyardes, Italyans, and Almaynes.

292

The prouince of
Moscovia.
Extreme coulde.

The prouince of Moscouia is neyther very large nor frutfull, forasmuche as the fertylytye is hyndered with sandye grounde which eyther with to muche drynesse or moyster kylleth the corne. Furthermore the immoderate and sharpe vntemperatenesse of the ayre while the coulde of the wynter ouercommethe the heate of the soonne, sumtymes dothe not suffer the corne to rype. For the coulde is there sumtyme so extreame, that lyke as with vs in sommer by reafon of heate, euen so there by extreame coulde the yearth hath many great chynkes or breaches. Water also cast into the ayre, and spettle faulyng from on[e]s mouthe, are frofen before they touche the grounde. I my selfe, when I came thether in the yeare 1526. sawe the branches of frutefull trees wythyred by the coulde of the wynter before, which was so extreame that many of theyr wagoners or caries (whom they caule Gonecz) were founde frofen to deathe in theyr sleades. There were sum that at the same tyme leadyng and dryuyng theyr cattayle from the nexte villagies to Moscouia, dyed by the way with theyr beastes through th[e] extremitye of the coulde. Furthermore, the same yeare many players that were accustomed to wander aboute the contrey with daunfyng beares, were founde dead in the high wayes. Wylde beares also inforced thereto by famyn, lefte the wooddes and ranne here and there into dyuers villagies and houses: At whose comyng while the men of the countrey forfooke theyr houses and fledd into the fieldes, manye of them perysshed through the vehemencie of the coulde. Agayne, it sumtymes so chaunceth that in sommer the heate is as extreame: as in the yeare 1525. in the which almost all kynds of pulse and grayne were scorched and burnt: and such a derth of corne folowed that drought, that that which before was bowght for three dengas, was afterwarde sould for. xx. [twenty] or. xxx. [thirty.] Furthermore also, manye villagies, wooddes, and flackes of corne, were sette on fyre by th[e] extreame heate: The fmoke wherof so fylled the regyon, that the eyes of many were forc hurte therby.

Extreme heate in
cold regions.

There arose also as it were a darke and thicke myst without smoke which so molested the ey[e]s, that many loste theyr sight therby.

They fowe and naryfhe the feades of melons with greate diligence in certeyne rayfed beddes myxte with doonge: wherby they fynde a remedy both ageynst extreame cold and heat. For if the heate exceade, they make certeyne ryftes in the beddes as it were breathyng places leaft the feades shulde be suffocate with to muche heate. And if the coulde bee extreme it is tempered with the heate of the mucke or dunge.

Theyr beastes are muche lesse then owres: yet not all without hornes as one hath written. For I haue there sene oxen, kyne, goates, and rammes all with hornes.

Not farre from the cite of Moscha, are certeyne monasteries which a farre of, seeme lyke vnto a cite. They saye that in thys cite is an incredible number of houfes: And that the fyfte yeare before my commynge thither, the prince caused them to bee numbered, and founde them to bee more then one and fortye thousande and fyue hundredth houfes. The cite is very large and wyde: and also very flabby and myrie. By reason wherof it hath many brydges and causeys.

The ayre of the regyon is so holsome, that beyond the sprynges of Tanais, especially towarde the north and a great parte also towarde the Easte, the pestylence hath not byne harde of fence the memorye of man. Yet haue they sumtimes a difeafe in theyr bowells and headdes not much vnylike the pestylence. This difeafe they caule a heate: wherwith fuche as are taken, dye within fewe dayes.

Sum wryte that Iohn the duke of Moscouia and sonne of Basilius, vnder the pretence of religion facked and spoyled, the cite of Nouogardia: and caried with hym from thense to Moscouia three hundredth sleades laden with golde, syluer, and precious stones of the gooddes of the Archebysshoppe, the marchauntes, citifins, and straungiers.

Solowki is an Ilande situate in the north sea. viii. leaques from the continent betwene Dwina and the prouince of Corela. Howe farre it is dystant from Moscouia, can not bee well knowne by reason of manye fennes, marysshes, wooddes, and desolate places lyinge in the way. Albeit, sum say that it is not three hundredth leaques from Moscouia, and two hundredth from Bieloiefero. In thys Ilande is made greate plenty of falte: and it hath in it a monasterie into the which it is not lawfull for any woman or virgyn to enter. There is also great fysshing for hearyng. They say that here the soonne at the sommer Equinoctiall, shyneth continually excepte two houres.

Demetriowe, is a cite with a castel, distante from Moscouia xii. leaques declining from the west somewhat toward the north. By this runneth the ryuer Lachroma that runneth in to the ryuer of Sest. Sest also receaueth the ryuer Dubna whiche vnladeth it selfe in Volga. And by the commoditie of thus many ryuers, many riche marchaundies are browght without great labour or difficultie from the caspian sea by the ryuer Volga to Moscouia and dyuers other prouinces and cities abowte the same.

Bieloiefero, a cite with a castel, is situat at a lake of the same name. For Bieloiefero in the Moscouites toung, signifieth a white lake. The cite standeth not in the lake as sum haue sayd. Yet is it so enuironed with marysshes that it may seeme to bee inexpugnable: In confideration wherof, the princes of Moscouia are accustomed to keepe theyr treasure there. Bieloiefero is from Moscouia, a hundredth leaques, and as muche from Nouogardia the great. The lake it selfe, is. xii. leaques in length and as much in breadth: and hath (as they say) three hundredth ryuers faulyng into it. Th[e] inhabitants of this place, haue a peculyar language, although nowe in maner all speake the Moscouites toung. The longest day here in the sommer Equinoctiall, is sayde to confyste of. xix. [nineteen] houres. A man of greate name and credite toulde me, that at the begynnyng of the sprynge when the trees began nowe to bee greene, he went in poste from Moscouia to Bieloiefero: And passyng ouer the ryuer Volga, founde the region there so couered with Ice and snow, that he was fayne to dispatch the residue of his iorney on sleades. And although the wynter bee longer there, yet doo the frutes waxe ripe and are gathered euen at the same tyme that they are in Moscouia. Within an arrowe shotte of the lake, there is an other lake that bryngeth furth brymstone: which a certen ryuer runnyng owt of the same, caryeth with it in great quantitie flotyng aboue the water lyke a scoomme. Yet through the ignorance of the people, they haue no commoditie therby.

The people that inhabite the regions lyinge farre northe and east from Moscouia, exchange theyr fures for apparel, knyues, needles, spoones, hatchets, and fuche other necessarye wares. For they haue not the vse of golde and syluer.

Lyttle beastes.

The cite of Moscouia or Mosca.

Holsome ayer.

A ryche spoyle.

The Iland of Solowki.

293
Bieloiefero.

The lengthe of the day.

The trade from Moscouia to the Caspian sea.

Bieloiefero or the whyte lakes.

Diuersitie of temperament in smaull dystance.

A lake of brymstone.

Exchange of fures for other ware.

¶ *The description of the regions, people, and ryuers, lying North and Easte from Moscouia: As the way from Moscouia to the ryuer Petzora, and the prouince of Iugaria, or Iuhra: And frome thense to the ryuer Obi. Lykewyse the discription of other countreys and regions, euen vnto Th[e]empire of the greate Cham of Cathay.*

The dominion of the duke of Moscouia.



The dominion of the Prince of Moscouia reacheth farre towarde the Easte and north vnto the places which we wyll nowe descrybe. As concernyng whiche thynge, I translated a booke that was presented vnto me in the Moscouites tounge, and haue heare made a bryefe hearfall of the fame. I wyll fyrst therfore describe the iorney from Moscouia to Petzora, and so to Iugaria and Obi.

Vuolochda.
Werste.
Vstiug.

From Moscouia to the cite of Vuolochda, are numbered fyftie Werstes, one Werst conteynynge almoste the space of an Italyan myle. From Vuolochda to Vstiug towarde the right hande descendinge with the course of the ryuer of Vuolochda and Suchana with whom it ioyneth, are counted fyue hundreth Werstes: where within two Werstes of the towne cauled Strelze and hard by the cite of Vstiug Suchana ioyneth. Iug which runneth from the south: from whose mouth vnto the sprynges of the same, are numbered fyue hundreth Werstes.

Note that wheras here before the autour numbereth but fyftie werstes from Moscouia to Vuolochda, it semeth that the place is corrupted by the Printers mystakyng one worde for an other, as Quinquaginta, which is fyftie, for Quingenta, whiche is fyue hundreth. For the distace is no lesse from Moscouia to Vuolochda, then is from Vuolochda to Vstiug, which is fyue hundreth werstes.

Suchana.
Iug.
Colmogor.
Dwina.
Pietogor.

294

But Suchana and Iug after they ioyne togyther, lose theyr fyrst names and make bothe one ryuer named Dwina, by the whiche the passage to the cite of Colmogor conteyneth fyue hundreth Werstes: from whense in the space of fyxe dayes iorney, Dwina entereth into the north Ocean at. vi. mouthes, And the greateste parte of this iorney consysteth by nauigation. For by lande, from Vuolochda vnto Colmogor, passing ouer the ryuer Vuaga, are a thousande Werstes. Not farre from Colmogor, the ryuer Pienega runnyng from the Easte on the ryght hande for the space of feuen hundreth Werstes fauleth into Dwina. From Dwina by the ryuer Pienega by the space of two hundreth Werstes, they coome to a place cauled Nicolai: from whense within halfe a werst, shypes haue passage into the ryuer Kuluio, which hath his original from a lake of the same name towarde the north, from whose sprynges is. viii. dayes vyage to the mouth of the same where it entereth into the Ocean.

The regions by the North sea.

Pieza.
Piescoia.

Saylyng by the coastes of the ryght hande the sea, they passe by the regions of Stanuwische, Calunczsko, and Apnu. And saylyng about the promontorie or cape of Chorogofski Nofz, Stanuwische, Camenckh, and Tolstickh, they come at the length into the ryuer Mezen, and frome thense in the space of fyxe dayes to a village of the same name, standyng in the mouth of the ryuer Pieza: by the which ageine ascendyng towarde the lefte hande and soomer East, they come to the ryuer Piescoia. From whense saylyng for the space of fyue Werstes, they coome into two lakes in the whiche are seene two wayes: wherof one on the ryght fyde, goeth to the ryuer Rubicho, by the whiche they passe to the ryuer Czircho. Other by an other and shorter way, bryng theyr shypes from the lake directly into Czircho: From whense, except they be hyndered by tempest, they coomme in the space of three weekes to the ryuer and mouth of Czilma, flowyng into the great ryuer Petzora, which in that place is two Werstes in breadthe. Saylyng from hense, they coomme in the space of fyxe dayes to the towne and castell of Pustoofero, neare vnto the which, Petzora entereth into the north Ocean at fyxe mouthes. The inhabitauntes of this place, are men of simple wytte. They receaued the fayth of Chryste, and were baptised in the yeare M. D. xviii.

Rubicho.
Czircho.
Czilma.
Petzora.
Pustoofero.

Vssa.
Cingulus n undi.

From the mouth of Czilma vnto the mouthe of the ryuer Vssa, goyng by Petzora, is one monethes vyage. Vssa hath his sprynges in the mountayne Poyas Semnoi, being on the lefte hande towarde the soomer East, and springeth owte of a greate stone of the same mountayne, cauled Camen Bolchoi. From the sprynges of Vssa to the mouthes of the same, are numbered more then a thousande Werstes. Furthermore Petzora runneth from this south wynter parte. from whense ascendyng from the mouthes of Vssa vnto the mouthes of the ryuer

Stzuchogora, is three weekes vyage. They that described this vyage, sayde that they rested betwene the mouthes of the ryuers of Stzuchogora and Potzscheriema : and lefte theyr vyttayles there whiche they browght with them from Ruffia. Beyond the ryuers of Petzora and Stzuchogora toward the mountayne Camenipois and the sea with the Ilandes there abowte and the castell of Pusloofero, are dyuers and innumerable nations whiche by one common name are cauled Samoged (that is) such as eate them felues. They haue great increase of foules, byrdes, and dyuers kyndes of beastes : as Sables, Marternes, Beuers, Otters, Hermelines, Squyrels : and in the Ocean the beaste cauled Mors : Also Vefs, whyte beares, woolfes, hares, Equiwoduani, great whales, and a fyfthe cauled Semfi, with dyuers other. The people of these nations, come not to Moscouia. For they are wylde, and flye the company and societie of other men.

From the mouthes of Stzuchogora saylynge vp the ryuer vnto Poiassa, Artawifche, Cameni, and Poiassa the greater, is three weekes vyage. Furthermore the ascendynge to the mounte Camen, is three dayes iorney : from the whiche, descendynge, they come to the ryuer Artawifcha, and from thence to the ryuer Sibut, from whence they passe to the castell of Lepin, and from Lepin to the ryuer Soffa. The people that inhabite the region by this ryuer, are cauled Vuogolici. Leauynge Soffa on the ryght hande, they come to the greate ryuer Oby, that spryngeth owt of the lake Kitaisko, the whiche with all the haste they coulde make, they coulde fearfully passe ouer in one day, the ryuer beinge of such breadth that it reacheth fourescore Werstes. The people also that dwell about this ryuer, are cauled Vuogolici and Vgritzchi. From the castell of Obea ascendynge by the ryuer of Oby, vnto the ryuer Irtische into the which Soffa entereth, is three moonethes iorney. In these places are two castles named Ierom and Tumen, kepte by certeyne lordes cauled Knesi Iuhorski. beinge tributaries to the greate duke of Moscouia as they say. Here are dyuers kyndes of beastes and fures.

From the mouth of the ryuer Irtische to the Castell of Grustina, is two monethes iorney : from whence to the lake Kitai by the ryuer Oby (whiche I sayde to haue his sprynges in this lake) is more then three monethes iorney. From this lake come many blacke men, lackynge th[e]use of common spech. They brynge with them dyuers wares, and especially pearles and precious stonnes, whiche they sell to the people cauled Grustintzi and Serponowtzi. These haue theyr name of the castell Serponow, situate in the mountaynes of Lucomorya beyond the ryuer Obi. They say that to the men of Lucomorya, chaunceth a marueylous thyng and incredible. For they affirme, that they dye yearely at the. xxvii. [twenty-feuenth] daye of Nouember, beinge the feast of saynt George amonge the Moscouytes : and that at the nexte sprynge abowte the. xxiiii. [twenty-fourth] daye of Apryll, they reuyue ageyne as doo frogges.

With these also, the people of Grustintzi and Serponowtzi, exercise a newe and straunge kynde of trade. For when the accustomed tyme of theyr dyinge, or rather of sleapyng, aprocheth, they leaue theyr wares in certeyne places apoynted, which the Grustintzi and Serponowtzi carye away leauynge other wares of equall valewe in theyr places : whiche if the deade men at the tyme of theyr reuyun[g]e perceau to bee of vnequall pryce, they requyre theyr owne ageyne : by reason wherof muche stryfe and fighting is betwene them.

From the ryuer of Obi descending toward the left hand, are the people cauled Calami, which came thether from Obiowa and Pogofa. Beneth Obi, abowte Aurea Anus (that is the golden owlde wyre) are the ryuers Soffa, Beres, Vua, and Danadim, al which sprynge owt of the montayne Camen, Bolschega, Potassa, and the rockes ioynynge to the same. All the nations that inhabite from these ryuers to Aurea Anus, are subiecte to the prync of Moscouia.

Aurea Anus cauled in the Moscouites toonge Slati Baba, is an Idole at the mouthes of Obi in the prouince of Obdora, standynge on the furthest banke toward the sea. Alonge by the bankes of Obi and the ryuers neare there about, are here and there many castells and fortresses, all the lordes wherof are subiecte to the prince of Moscouia, as they say. They say also, or rather fable, that the Idole cauled Aurea Anus, is an Image lyke vnto an owlde wyfe hauynge a chyld in her lappe : and that there is nowe seene an other infante which they say to bee her neuie : Also that there are certeyne instrumentes that make a continuall founde lyke the noyse of trumpettes. The which if it so bee, I thinke it to bee by reason of the wynde blowynge continually into the holowe places of those instrumentes.

The ryuer Cossin, fauleth owt of the mountaynes into Lucomoria. In the mouth of thys, is a castell. Whyther from the sprynges of the great ryuer Cossin, is two moonethes vyage. Furthermore from the sprynges of the same ryuer, the ryuer Cassima hath hys original : which runnyng through Lucomoria, fauleth into the great ryuer Tachnin, beyond the which (as is sayde) dwell men of prodigious shape, of whom sum are ouer-growne with heare lyke wylde beastes : other haue heades lyke dogges, and other theyr faces in theyr brestes without neckes, and with longe handes also and withoute feete. There is lykewyse in the ryuer Tachnin, a certeyne fyfthe with headde, eys, nose, mouthe, handes, fiete, and other members vtterly of humane shape, and yet without any voyce, and pleafante to bee eaten as are other fyfthes.

All that I haue hetherto rehearsed, I haue translated out of the sayde iorney whiche was deluyered me in the Moscouites toonge. In the which perhappes sum thynges maye seeme fabulous and in maner incredible, as

Stzuchogora.
Potzscheriema.
Camenipois.

Samoged.
Foules and
beastes.

Wylde people.

Poiassa.
Camen.
Artawischa.
Sibut.
Lepin.
Sossa.
Obi.
Kitaisko.

Vuogolici
295
Irtische.
Ieron.
Tumen.

Grustina.
Kitai.
Blacke men
without speache.
Serpenowe.
Lucomoria.
Men that yearely
dye and reuyue.

A straunge trade
of marchaundies.

Obi.
Calami.
Ryuers.

Aurea Anus.
Obdora.

Cossin.

Cassima.
Tachnin.
People of
monstrous shape.
A fyfthe lyke a
man
Plinie wryteth of
the lyke fyfthe.

of the doomme men and the deade reuyunge, the Aurea Anus also, and the monstrous shapes of men, with the tyffhe of human forme : wherof althowgh I haue made dylygent inquisicion, yet could I knowe nothyng certeyne of any that had seene the same with theyr eys, neuerthelesse to gyue further occasion to other to searche the truth of these thynges, I haue thought good to make mention hereof.

296

Noff in the Moscouites tounge signifieth a nose : and therefore they caule all capes or poyntes of lande that reache into the sea, by the same name.

Mountaynes.

The mountaynes about the ryuer of Petzora, are cauled Semnoi Poyas, or Cingulus mundi : (that is) the gyrdle of the worlde, or of the yearth.

The greate Chan of Cathay.

Kithay, is a lake of whome the greate Chan of CATHAY whom the Moscouians caule Czar Kythaiski, hath hys name. For Chan in the Tartars language signifieth a kyng.

Lucomoria.

The places of Lucomorya nere vnto the fea, are saluage, full of wooddes, and inhabited without any houfes. And albeit that the atour of thys iorney, sayd that many nations of Lucomorya are subiecte to the prynce of Moscouia, yet forasmuch as the kyngdome of Tumen is neare therunto, whose prince is a Tartar and named in theyr tounge Tumenski Czar (that is) a kyng in Tumen, and hath of late doone great damage to the prynce of Moscouia, it is moste lyke that these nations shulde rather bee subiecte vnto hym.

Tumen.

Petzora.
Papin.

Neare vnto the ryuer Petzora, (wherof mention is made in thys iorney) is the cite and castell of Papin or Papinowgorod, whose inhabytauntes are named Papini, and haue a priuate language differyng from the Moscouites. Beyond thys ryuer, are exceedyng hygh mountaynes, reachyng euen vnto the bankes : whose ridgies or toppes by reason of continuall wyndes, are in maner vtterly barrayne without graff or frutes. And although in dyuers places they haue dyuers names, yet are they commonly cauled Cingulus Mundi, that is the gerdle of the worlde, otherwyse cauled Catena Mundi, (that is), the chayne of the worlde. In these mountaynes doo ierfalcons breede, wherof I haue spoken before. There grow also Cedar trees, amonge the which are founde the best and blackest kynde of fables. And only these mountaynes are feene in all the domynions of the prynce of Moscouia, which perhappes are the same that the owlde writers caule Rhipheos or Hyperboreos, so named of the Greeke worde *Hiper*, (that is) vnder : and *Boreas* (that is) the north. For by reason they are couered with continuall snow and froste, they can not without great difficultie bee traauyld : and reache so farre into the north, that they make the vnknowne land of Engroneland. The duke of Moscouia Basilius the soonne of Iohn, sent on a tyme two of hys capitaynes named Simeon Pheodorowicz Kurbski, and Knes Peter Vschatoi, to searche the places beyonde these mountaynes and to subdewe the nations therabowte. Kurbski was yet alyue at my being in Moscouia : and declared vnto me that he spent. xvii. [seuenteen] days in ascendyng the mountayn, and yet coulde not coome to the toppe therof, which in theyr tounge is cauled Stolp (that is) a pyller. Thys mountayne is extended into the Ocean vnto the mouthes of the ryuers of Dwina and Petzora. But nowe hauyng spoken thus muche of the sayde iorney, I wyll returne to the domynions of Moscouia, with other regyons lying eastwarde and southe frome the same towarde the myghty Empyre of CATHAY. But I wyll fyrst speake sumwhat brefely of the prouynce of Rezan and the famous ryuer of Tanais.

Hygh mountaynes, supposed to bee Hyperborei, and Rhiphei.

Engronland.

Stolp.

Cathay.

The frutfull prouynce of Rezan.
Iaroslaw.

Honye.

The prouynce of Rezan situate betwene the ryuers of Occa and Tanais, hath a cite buylded of woodd not farre frome the banke of Occa. There was in it a castell named Iaroslaw, wherof there now remaineth nothyng but tokens of the owld ruine. Not farre from that cite, the ryuer Occa maketh an Ilande named Strub : which was sumtyme a great dukedome, whose prince was subiect to none other. Thys prouynce of Rezan is more frutfull then any other of the prouynces of Moscouia : In so muche that in thys (as they saye) euery grayne of wheate bryngethe furthe two and sumtymes more eares : whose stalkes or strawes growe so thycke that horses can scarcely go through them, or quayles flye owt of them. There is greate plenty of honnye, fysshes, foules, byrdes, and wylde beastes. The frutes also do farre excede the frutes of Moscouia. The people are bould and warlyk men.

¶ Of the famous ryuer of Tanais.



Rome Moscouia vnto the castell of Iaroslaw, and beyonde for the space of almoste. xxiiii. [twenty-four] leaques, runneth the ryuer of Tanais, at a place called Donco, where the marchantes that trade to Asoph, Capha, and Constantynople, freight theyr shyppes : and thys for the moste parte in autumnne beyng a rayney tyme of the yeare. For Tanais here at other tymes of the yeare doth not so abounde with water as to beare shyppes of any burden. Thys famous ryuer of Tanais, dyuydeth Europe from Asia : and hath hys orygyal or springes almost. viii. leaques from the cite of Tulla toward the south inclynyng sumwhat towarde the Easte : and not owt of the Riphean mountaynes as some haue wyrtten : But owte of a great lake

Donco.
Asoph.
Capha.
Constantynople.

297

Tanais diuideth
Europe from Asia.

named Iwanowofero (that is) the lake of Iohn : being in length and breadth abowt. 1500. Werstes in a wood whiche sum caule Okonitzkilies, and other name it Iepiphanowlies And owt of this lake, sprynge the twoo greate ryuers of Schat and Tanais. Schat towarde the Weste receauynge into it the ryuer of Vppa, runneth into the ryuer of Occa betwene the West and the north. But Tanais at the fyrste runneth directly East : and continueth his course betwene the kyngdomes of Cafan and Astrachan within fyxe or seuen leaques of Volga : And from thense bendynge towarde the south, maketh the fennes or marysshes of Meotis. Furthermore, nexte vnto his sprynges, is the cite of Tulla : and vppon the banke of the ryuer almoste three leaques aboute the mouthes of the same, is the cite of Afoph, which was fyrste cauled Tanas. Foure dayes iorney aboute this, is a towne cauled Achas, situate harde by the same ryuer : whiche the Moscouites caule Don. I can not sufficiently prayse this ryuer for the exceedynge abundaunce of good fysshes, and fairenesse of the regions on bothe fydes the bankes, with plentie of holfoome herbes and sweete rootes, besyde dyuers and many frutefull trees growynge in suche comly order as though they had byn set of purpose in gardens or archardes. There is also in maner euery where suche plentie of wyld beasts, that they may easely be slaine with arrowes : In so much that suche as trauayle by those regions, shal stand in neede of none other thyng to mayntayne theyr lyfe but only fyre and salte. In these partes, is no obseruation of myles, but of dayes iorneyes. But as farre as I coulede coniecture, from the fountaynes or sprynges of Tanais vnto the mouthes of the same iorneyng by lande, are almost fourescore leaques. And saylynge from Donco (from whense I sayde that Tanais was fyrste nauigable) in scarsely. xx. [twenty] dayes vyage, they come to the cite of Afoph tributarie to the Turkes : which is (as they say) fyue dayes iorney from the streight of Taurica, otherwyse cauled Precop. In this cite is a famous mart towne vnto the which resort many marchauntes of dyuers nations, and from dyuers partes of the worlde. For, that all nations may the gladlyer haue recourse thither, free lybertie of byng and sellynge is graunted vnto all : and that without the cite euery man may freely vse his owne and accustomed maner of luyng without punysshement.

Of the altares of great Alexander and Iulius Cesar whiche many wryters make mention of in this place, or of theyr ruines, I coulede haue no certeyne knowleage of th[e]inhabitauntes or any other that had ofentymes trauayled these places. Furthermore the fouldyers whiche the prince of Moscouia maynteyneth there yearly to oppresse th[e]incursions of the Tartars, beinge of me demaunded hereof, answered that they neuer sawe or harde of any such thyng. Neuerthelesse, they sayde that aboute the mouthes of Tanais the lesse, foure dayes iorney from Afoph nere vnto a place cauled Scwerski, by the holy mountaynes, they sawe certeyne images of stone and marble. Tanais the lesse, hath his sprynges in the dukedome of Scwerski : whereof it is cauled Donetz Scwerski : and fauleth into Tanais three dayes iorney aboute Afoph. But suche as iorney from Moscouia to Afoph by lande, they, passynge ouer Tanais aboute the owlde and ruinate towne of Donco, doo sumwhat turne from the south to the Easte : In the which place, if a ryght line bee drawn from the mouthes of Tanais to the springes of the same, Moscouia shalbe found to bee in Asia and not in Europe.

¶ *More directly from Moscouia to Cathay.*



The great and large prouince of Permia, is dystante from Moscouia two hundreth and fyftie or (as sum say) three hundreth leaques directly betwene the East and North : And hath a cite of the same name by the ryuer Vischora which runneth. x. leaques beneth Kamam. The iorney by lande can scarsely bee trauayled thither but in wynter by reason of many ryuers, marysshes, and fennes. But in sommer, this iorney is dispatched with more facilitie in boates or smaule shippes by Vuolochda, Vstiug, and the ryuer Vitzechda which runneth into Dwina. xii. leaques from Vstiug. But they that go from Permia to Vstiug, muste sayle vp the ryuer Vischora ageinst the course of the streame : and passing ouer certeyne ryuers, sumtymes also conueyinge theyr boates into other ryuers by lande, they come at the length to Vstiug three hundreth leaques distant from the cite of Permia. There is smaule vse of breade in this prouince. For theyr yearly tribute, they pay to the prynce fures and horses. They haue a priuate language, and letters of theyr owne, whiche one Steuen a bysshop (who confirmed them yet waueryng in the fayth) dyd inuente. For before beinge yet infantes in the fayth of Chryste, they slewe and fleyde an other bysshop that was appoynted to instructe them. This Steuen afterwarde when Demetrius the sonne of Iohn reigned, was taken for a faynte amonge the Ruthens. Of these people there yet remayne many Idolatours here and there in the woods, whom the moonkes and heremites that go thither, doo not cease to conuert from theyr wayne errour. In the wynter they iorney in Artach as they doo in many places of Ruffia. Artach, are certeyne longe patentes of woodde of almost fyxe handfuls in length,

The springes of Tanais.
A great lake.
The ryuer Schat.
Casan.
Astrachan.
Meotis.
Tulla.

Achas.
Frutefull regions about Tanais.

Plentie of wyld beasts.

Fire and salt.

Where Tanais is fyrste nauigable.
Asoph.
The marte of Asoph.
Libertie allureth strangers

The altars of Alexander and Cesar.

The holy mountaynes.
Tanais the lesse.
From Moscouia to Asoph.

Moscovia in Asia and not in Europe.

The prouince of Permia.

Marysshes in sommer.
298
Dwina.
Vstiug.

Tribute.
Furres and horses

Monkes and heremites

Patentes.

Marcus Paulus
wryteth that these
dogges are almost
as byg as Asses ;
and that they vse
syxe to one sleade.
Iugaria.
Hungaria.
Pannonia.
Attila.

The hygher or
superyor
Hungarye, is
cauled Austria.
Polonie.
Buda.

Furres.
Pearles and
precious stones.

Sibier.

Aspreolos, I
thynk to be
marterns: yet
sum think them
to be squerels
Gesnerus wryteth
that the kynge of
the Tartars haue
theyre tentes
couered without
wyth the skynnes
of Lyons: and
within, with the
skynnes of sables
and Ermynes.

299

Czeremisse.

Habitacion
without houses.

Salte.

whiche they make faste to theyr fiete with latches, and therwith performe theyr iorneyes with great celeritie. They vse for this purpose greate dogges in the steade of other beastes, with the which they cary theyr farthels on sleades, as other doo with hartes in other places, as we wyll further declare hereafter. They say that that prouince toward the East confineth with the prouince cauled Tumen, perteynyng to the Tartars.

The situation of the prouince of Iugaria, is apparence by that which we haue sayde before. The Moscouites caule it Iuhra with an aspiration: and caule the people Iuhrici. This is that Iugaria from whence the Hungarians came in tyme paste, possessed Pannonia, and vnder the conduct of Attila, subdued many prouinces of Europe: wherein the Moscouites doo greatly glory, that a nation subiecte to them, inuaded and wasted a great parte of Europe. Georgius Parnus a greeke borne, and a man of reputation with the Prince of Moscouia, wyllynge to ascribe to the ryght of his prince the great dukedome of Lithuania, and the kyngedome of Polonie with certeyne other dominions, toulde me that the Iuharici or Iuhgary, beinge subiectes to the great duke of Moscouia, came furth of theyr owne countrey, and fyrste inhabited the regions about the fennes of Meotis, and then Pannonie which was afterwarde cauled Hungarie, by the ryuer of Danubius: Also that in fine they possessed the region of Morauia so named of the ryuer: and lykewyse Pollonie, so cauled of Polle, which signifieth a playne. Furthermore that Buda was so cauled after the name of the brother of Attila. They say also that the Iuhgari vse the fame tounge that doo the Hungarians. The which whether it be trow or not, I do not knowe. For although I haue made diligent inquisition to knowe the truth hereof, yet coulde I fynde no man of that region with whom my seruauant beinge expert in the Hungarian tounge myght spake. They also pay furres for theyr tributes to the prince of Moscouia. And albeit that pearles and precious stones are brought from thense to Moscouia, yet are they not gathered in theyr Ocean, but in other places: especially about the coast of the Ocean nere vnto the mouthes of Dwina.

The prouince of Sibier, confineth with Permia and Vuiathka: The whiche, whether it haue any castels or cities, I doo not yet certeynly knowe. In this the ryuer Iaick hathe his originall, and fauleth into the Caspian sea. They saye that this region is deserte bycause it lyeth so neare the Tartars: Or that yf it bee in any parte inhabited, the same to be possessed of the Tartar Schichmamai. Th[e] inhabitants haue a peculiar language: and haue theyr chiefe gaynes by the furres of marterns, which in sayrenes and greatnes, excell all the furres of that kynde that are founde in any other prouinces. Yet coulde I haue no great plentie of them in Moscouia at my beinge there.

Note that longe after the wrytynge of this hystorie, at Rycharde Chaunceler his fyrst being in Moscouia, Duke Iohn Vasilivich that nowe raygneth, subdued all the Tartars with theyr regions and prouinces euen vnto the great cite and mart towne of Astrachan and the Caspian sea. At the same tyme also, there was in the dukes court an ambassadour that came from this prouince of Sibier: who declared that his father had hyn sent ambassadour to the great Chan of Cathay. And that the great cite of Cambalu where the great Chan kepeth his courte in winter, was in maner destroyed by Necromancie and magicall artes wherein the Cathaynes are very expert as wryteth Marcus Paulus Venetus. Ther was also at the same tyme th[e] ambassadour of the kynge of Perfia cauled the great Sophie. This ambassadour was appareled all in scarlet, and spake much to the duke in the behalfe of owre men, of whose kyngdome and trade he was not ignorant.

The people cauled Czeremisse, dwell in the wooddes beneth Nouogardia the lower. They haue a peculiar language and are of the secte of Machumet. They were sumtyme subiecte to the kynge of Cafan: but the greater part of them are nowe subiecte to the prince of Moscouia. Many of them at my beinge there, were brought to Moscouia, as suspected of rebellion. This nation doth inhabite a large region without houses from Vuiathka and Vuolochda, to the ryuer of Kama. All the nation awell women as men, are very swyft of foote, and expert archers: wherein they so delite, that theyr bowes are in maner neuer owt of theyr handes: and gyeue theyr children no meate vntyl they hyt the marke they shoote at.

Two leaques distante from Nouogardia the lower, were many houses to the similitude of a cite or towne where they were accustomed to make faste. These a fewe yeares fence beinge burnt of the Tartars, were restored by the commaundement of the prince.

Mordwa, are people inhabytyng by the ryuer of Volga on the fouth banke beneth Nouogardia the lower: And are in al thynges like vnto the Czeremisses but that they haue more houses. And here endeth Th[e] Empire of the Moscouites.

Note here that Matthias of Michou, in his booke of Sarmatia Asiatica, wryteth that the dominion of the duke of Moscouia reacheth from the northweest to the foutheast fyue hundred myles of Germanie, which are more then leaques. For they affirme that a Germane myle is more then three Englyshe myles.

¶ Of the Tartars.



Ye wyl nowe adde hereunto fūmwhat of the people confinyng with the Moscouites towarde the East : of the which the Tartars of Casan are the first. But before wee speake of them particularly, wee wyl fyrst reherse fūmwhat of theyr maners and customes in generall.

The Tartars are diuided into companies which they caul Hordas, of the which the Horda of the Sawolhenfes is the chiefe in fame and multitude. For it is fayde that the other Hordas had theyr offsprynge and original of this. And albeit that euery Horda hath his peculiar name, as the Sawolhenfes, Precropenfes, and Nahays with dyuers other being all Machumetans, yet doo they take it euyll and count it reproch to bee cauled Turkes : but wyl them felues to bee cauled Besfermani, by the which name also the Turkes desyre to bee cauled.

And as the Tartars inhabyte many prouynces reachyng far on euery fyde, euen so in maners and order of lyuynge doo they not agree in all thynges. They are men of meane stature, with broade and fat faces, holowe eyde, with roughe and thyck beardes, and poulde heades. Onely the noble men haue longe heare, and that exceedyng black, which they wreath on both fydes theyr eares. They are stronge of body and floute of mynde : prone to leacherye, and that vnnaturall. They eate the fleashe of horses, camells, and otl.er beastes excepte hogges, from which they absteyne by a lawe. They can so abyde fasting and hunger, that they sumtime forbear meate and sleepe for the space of foure dayes, occupied neuertheleffe aboute theyr necessary affayres. Ageyne when they gette any thyng to deuoure, they ingorge them felues beyond meafure : and with that surfecte in maner recompense theyr former abstynence. And beyng thus oppressed with laboure and meate, they sleepe contynually for the space of three or foure days without doyng any maner of worke or labour : duryng which tyme the Lyuons and Moscouites into whose domynions they are accustomed to make theyr incurfions, assayle them vnwares thus oppressed with meate and sleepe, lynge scatered here and there owt of order withowte watch or warde. Also if when they ryde, they bec molested with hunger and thyrste, they vse to lette theyr horses blud, and with drynkyng the same, satysfye theyr present necessitye, and affyrme theyr horses to bee the better therby. And bicaufe they all wander in vnknownen places, they vse to dyrect theyr iorneyes by th[e]-aspecte of the starres, and especyally of the pole starre, which in theyr tounge they caule Selesnikoll, (that is) an iren nayle. They greatly delyte in mares mylke, and beleue that it maketh men strong and fatte. They eate herbes very much : and especyally such as growe abowt Tanais. Fewe of them vse falte. When theyr kynges dystribute any vytales among them, they are accustomed to gyue one horse or cowe to fortye men. Of the flayne beaste, the bowells and trypes are referued for the chiefe men and captaynes. These they heate at the fyre vntyll they may shake owt the doonge, and then deuoure them gredely. They sucke and lycke, not only theyr fyngers imbrued with fatte, but also theyr knyues and styckes wherwith they scrape the doong from the guttes. The heades of horses are counted delycate dishes with them as are bores heades with vs : and are referued only for the chyefe men. Theyr horses (wherof they haue great aboundaunce) are but fmaule, and with short neckes : but very strong and such as can wel away with labour and hunger. These they fede with the branches and barks or ryndes of trees and the rotes of hearbes and weedes, wherby they accustomen them to hard feedyng, and exerceye them to contynuall laboure : by reason wherof (as say the Moscouytes) theyr horses are swyfter and more durable then any other. These kynde of horses, they caule Pachmat. They haue none other faddells and steroppes then of woodd, except suche as they eyther bye of the Chrystians, or take from them by vyolence. Least theyr horse backes shulde bee hurte with theyr faddells, they vnderlaye them with grasse and leaues of trees. They also passe ouer ryuers on horback. But if when they flye, they feare the pursuyng of theyr enemyes, then castyng away theyr faddells, apparelle, and all other impedymentes, referuyng only theyr armoure and weapons they flye amayne and with greate celeritie.

Theyr women vse the same kynde of apparell that doo the men without any dyfference except that they couer theyr heades with lynnyn vayles, and vse lynnyn hose muche lyke vnto maryners sloppes. When theyr queenes coome abroad, they are accustomed to couer theyr faces. The other multytude of the common forte that lyueth here and ther in the feeldes, haue theyr apparell made of sheepes skynnes, which they chaung[e] not vntyll they bee worne and torne to fytters. They tarye not longe in one place, iudgyng it a great myfery so to doo : In so muche that when they are angrie with theyr chyldren, the greatest curse that they can gyue them, is that they maye remayne perpetually in one place, and drawe the stynshe of theyr owne fylthynesse as doo the Chrystians. When they haue consumed the pasture in one place, they go to an other with theyr droues of cattayle and theyr wyues and chyldren whom they euer cary about with them in Wagons : albeit the Tartars that dwell in cities and townes, vse an other order of lyuynge. If they be inclosed with any dangerous warre,

The Tartars of Casan.

Horda.

Besfermani.

The stature of the Tartars.

They absteyne from hogges fleshe. Abstynence.

Voracitie.

So doo the Turkes

Iorneyng by the pole star.

Mares mylke

Horse fleshe eaten. Clenly.

300

Hors[e] heades, deintie meate The Tartars horses.

Saddells and styrrups of wodde.

The Tartars women.

The Tartars curse.

No iustice amonge
the Tartars.

The Tartars are
theeues and poore.

They reioyce in
spoyllynge

The feeble
Tartars.
A mery tale.

301

Casan.

The kynge of
Casan.
Archers.
Maryners.

The towne
Tartars.

Moscovia inuaded
by the Tartars.

The prince of
Moscovia tributary
to the Tartars.

Duke Basilius
army ageynst the
Tartars.

The kyng of Casan
submitth hym
selfe.

they place theyr wyues, chyl dren, and owld folkes, in the fauest places. There is no iustice amonge them. For if any man stande in neade of any thyng, he may withowt punnysshemente take it awaye from an other. If any complayne to the Iudge of the vyolence and wronge doonne vnto hym, the offender denyeth not the cryme, but sayth that he coulde not lacke that thyng. Then the Iudge is wonte to gyue thys sentence: If thowe also fhalte haue neede of any thyng doo the lyke to other. Sum say they do not steale: But whether they steale or not, lette other iudge. They are surely a theeuyfthe kynd of men and very poore, luyunge only by robbing of other, and stealynge away other mens cattayle, and vyolently also carynge awaye the men them felues whom eyther they felle to the Turkes or proffer them to bee redemed by ranfome, referuyng only the younge wenches. They feldome affaulte cities or castells, but burne and waste townes and vyllages: In so muche that they so pleafe them felues herin, that they thynke they haue so muche the more enlarged their empire, in howe muche they haue wasted and made desolate manye prouinces. And although they bee moste impacient of reste and quyetnesse, yet doo they not kyll or destroye one an other, excepte theyr kynges bee at desfention betweene them felues. If any man bee flaine in any fraye or quarel, and the autours of the myfchefe bee taken, only theyr horffe, harnesse, weapons, and apparell, are taken from them, and they dismissed. So that the murtherer by the losse of a vyle horfe or a bowe, is dyscharged of the Iudge with these woordes: gette the henfe and goo abowte thy busynesse. They haue no vse of golde and tyluer, excepte only a fewe marchauntes: But exeryfye exchaunge of ware for ware. And if it so chaunce that by fellyng of fuch thynges as they haue stolne, they gette any monye of theyr borthers, they bye therwith certeyne apparel and other necessaryes of the Moscouites. The regyons of theyr habytations (the feeble Tartars I meane) are not lymytted with any boundes or borthers. There was on a tyme a certeyne fatte Tartar taken prysoner of the Moscouites: to whom when the prynce sayd, How art thou so fatte thowe dogge, sythe thowe haste not to eate, the Tartar answered, Why shulde not I haue to eate sythe I possesse so large a land from the East to the west, wherby I may bee abundauntely nuryfshed? But thowe mayste rather seeme to lacke, syth thowe inhabytest so smaule a portion of the worlde, and duste daylye fryue for the fame.

Casan, is a kyngedome, also a citie, and a castell of the same name, situate by the ryuer Volga on the further banke, almost threSCORE and tenne leaques beneath Nouogardia the lower. Alonge by the course of Volga towarde the East and South, it is termined with deserte syeldes. Towarde the sommer East, it confineth with the Tartars cauled Schibanfki, and Kofatzki. The kynge of this prouince, is able to make an army of. xxx. [thirty] thousande men, especially foote men, of the which the Czeremisse and Czubafchi are most expert archers. The Czubafchi are also cunningge maryners. The citie of Casan, is threSCORE leaques distant from the principal castel Vuiathka. Furthermore, Casan in the Tartars language, signifieth a brafen potte boylynge. These Tartars are more ciuile then the other. For they dwell in houses, tyll the grownde, and exercise the trade of marchaundies. They were of late subdued by Basilius the greate duke of Moscouia, and had their kynge assigned them at his arbitrimt. But shortly after, they rebelled ageine: and associate with other Tartars, inuaded the region of Moscouia, spoyled and wasted many cities and townes, and ledde away innumerable captiues, euen from the citie Moscouia which they possessed for a tyme, and had vtterly destroyed the same if it had not byn for the valyantnesse of the Almayne gunners which kept the castell with great ordinaunce. They also putte duke Basilius to flyght, and caused him to make a letter of his owne hande to Machmetgirei theyr kynge to acknowledge hym selfe for a perpetuall tributarie to them, wheruppon they dissolued the siege, and gaue the Moscouites free libertie to redeeme their captiues and gooddes, and so departed. But Basilius not longe able to abyde this contumelie and dishonour, after that he had putte to death fuche as by flyng at the fyrst encounterynge were the cause of this ouerthrowe, assembled an armye of a hundreth and fourescore thousande men shortly after in the yeare. 1523. And sent forwarde his army vnder the conducte of his Lieutenante: and therewith an heralde at armes to bydde battayle to Machmetgirei the kynge of Casan, with woordes in this effecte: The last yeare lyke a theeue and robber without bydding of battayle, thou dyddeste pryuilie oppresse me. Wherefore I nowe chalenge the, once ageyne to proue the fortune of warre if thou mystruste not thyne owne poure. To this the kynge answered, that there were manye wayes open for hym to inuade Moscouia: And that the warres haue no lesse respect to the commoditie of tyme and place then of armure or strength: And that he wold take th[e]aduantage therof when and where it shulde seeme best to him and not to other. With which woordes Basilius beinge greatly accensed and burnyng with desyre of reuenge, inuaded the kyngdome of Casan: whose kynge beinge stryken with fuddeyne feare at th[e]approche of so terrible an army, assigned the gouernance of his kyngdome to the younge kynge of Taurica his neuie, whyle he hym selfe went to requyre ayde of the Emperour of the Turkes. But in fine the kynge of Casan submytted hym selfe vpon certeyne conditions of peace whiche the Moscouites dyd the gladlyer excepte for that time because theyr vittayles sayled them to maynteyne so great a multitude. But wheras duke Basilius hym selfe was not present at this last expedition, he greatly suspected Palitzki the Lieutenante of th[e]army to bee corrupted with brybes to proceade no further. In this meane tyme, the kynge of Casan sent ambassadours to Basilius to

intreate of peace : whome I fawe in the dukes courte at my beyng there : but I coulde perceave no hope of peace to bee betwene them. For euen then, Basilius to endamage the Cafans, translated the marte to Nouogardia, which before was accustomed to bee kepte in the Ilande of marchauntes nere vnto the citie of Casan : Commaundynge also vnder peyne of greuous punysshement that none of his subiectes shulde resort to the Ilande of marchauntes : thynkyng that this translation of the marte shulde greatly haue endamaged the Cafans : and that only by takynge away their trade of falte (which they were accustomed to bye of the Moscouites at that marte) they shulde haue byn compelled to submyffion. But the Moscouites them selues felte no lesse inconuenience hereby then dyd the Cafans, by reason of the dearth and scarseneffe that folowed hereof of al such thynges as the Tartars were accustomed to bryng thyther by the ryuer of Volga from the Caspian sea, the kyngedomes of Persia and Armenia, and the marte towne of Astrachan : especially the great number of most excellent fyfhes that are taken in Volga both on the hyther and further fyde of Casan.

But hauynge fayde thus much of the warres betwene the Prince of Moscouia and the Tartars of Casan, we wyll now procede to speake sumwhat of the other Tartars inhabytyng the regions towarde the foutheast and the Caspian sea.

Next beyonde the Tartars of Casan, are the Tartars cauled Nagai or Nogai, which inhabite the regions beyond Volga abowt the Caspian sea at the ryuer Iaick, runnyng owt of the prouince of Sibier. These haue no kynges but dukes. In owre tyme, three bretherne diuydyng the prouinces equally betwene them, possessed those dukedomes. The fyrst of them named Schidack, possesseth the citie of Scharaitzick, beyond the ryuer of Rha or Volga towarde the Easte, with the region confynynge with the ryuer Iaick. The seconde cauled Cossun, enioyeth all the lande that lyethe betwene the ryuers of Kaman Iaick and Volga. The thyrde brother named Schichmamai, possesseth parte of the prouince of Sibier and all the region abowt the same. Schichmamai, is as much to fay by interpretacion, as holy or myghty. And in maner al these regions are full of wooddes, excepte that that lyeth towarde Scharaitz, which confysteth of playnes and fyeldes.

Betwene the ryuers of Volga and Iaick, abowt the Caspian sea, there sumtymes inhabyted the kynges cauled Sawolhenfes. Demetrius Danielis (a man among these barbarians, of singuler fayth and grautie) toulde vs of a maruelous and in maner incredible thyng that is fene among these Tartars. And that his father beinge fente by the prynce of Moscouia to the kyng of Sawolhense, fawe whyle he was in that legacie, a certeyne feede in that Ilande sumwhat lesse and rounder then the feedes of Melones : Of the whiche beinge hydde in the grounde, there groweth a frute or plante very lyke a lambe, of the heyght of fyue spannes : And is therefore cauled in theyr tounge Boranetz, which signifieth a lyttle lamb. For it hath the headde, eyes, eares, and all other partes like vnto a lambe newly eyed : with also a very thynne skynne wherwith dyuers of th[e]inhabitauntes of those regions are accustomed to line theyr cappes and hattes and other tyrements for theyr heades. Many also confirmed in owre pefrence that they had seene these skynnes. He fayde furthermore that that plant (if it may bee cauled a plant) hath bludde, and no fleshe : but hath in the steade of fleshe a certeyne substance like vnto the fleshe of creuyffhes. The hooses also are not of horne as are the lambes, but couered with veare in the same forme. The roote cleaueth to the nauell or mydde of the belly. The plante or fruite lyueth vntyll all the grasse and herbes growynge abowte it beinge eaten, the roote wythereth for lacke of nurysshement. They say that it is very swete to bee eaten, and is therefore greatly defyred and fought for of the woolues and other rauenyng beasts. And albeit I exteme all that is fayde of this plant to be fabulous, yet forasmuch as it hath byn toulde me of credible persons, I haue thought good to make mention hereof.

Of this straunge frute, Mandeuell maketh mention, where in the lxxxiiii. [eighty-fourth] chapiture of his booke he wryteth thus : Nowe shall I fay of sum landes, countreys, and Iles that are beyonde the lande of Cathay. Therefore who so goeth from Cathay to India the hygh and the lowe, he shall go through a kyngedome that men caule Cadiffen, and is a great lande. There groweth a maner of frute as it were gourdes. And when it is ripe, men cut it a funder : and fynd therein a beaft as it were of fleshe, bone, and bludde, as it were a lyttle lambe without wolle. And men eate that beaft and the frute also, which is a great maruayle. Neuerthelesse, I fayde vnto them that I helde that for no maruayle. For I fayde that in my countrey are tres that beare frute that become byrdes flying which are good to bee eaten. And that that fauleth into the water lyueth : And that that fauleth on the earth dyeth. And they had greate maruayle of this. etc.

From the prince of Schidack, proceadyng. xx. [twenty] dayes iorney towarde the East. are the people which the Moscouites caule Iurgenci, whose prince is Barack Soltan, brother to the greate Chan of Cathay. In tenne dayes iorney from Barack Soltan, they coomme to Bebeid Chan. And this is that greate Chan of Cathay.

Names of dignities amonge the Tartars, are these, Chan, signifieth a kyng, Soltan, the foonne of a kyng. Bii, a Duke. Murfa, the foonne of a duke. Olboud, a noble man or counfiler. Olboadulu, the foonne of a noble man. Seid, the hygh preste. Kfi, a priuate person.

The names of offices are these : Vlan, the seconde dignitie to the kyng. For the kynges of the Tartars haue foure principall men whose counfayle they vse in al theyr weyghty affayres. Of these the fyrste is cauled Schirni : the seconde Barni : the thyrde, Gargni : The fourth, Tziptzan. And to haue fayde thus muche of the Tartars, it shall suffice.

The Iland of
marchauntes

The Caspian sea.
Persia.
Armenia.
Astrachan.

302

The Tartars nere
to the Caspian sea.
Nogai.
The possession of
three brytherne.

The kynges cauled
Sawolhenfes.

A maruelous frute
lyke a lambe.

Mandeuell.

Barnacles of the
Orkenys.

Barack Soltan.
Cathay.

Names of dignities
amonge the
Tartars.

Names of offices.

303
Chan Cublai.

Marcus Paulus wryteth that the greate Chan, is cauled Chan Cublai that is, the great kynge of kynges : as the greate turcke wryteth hym selfe in lyke maner, as I fawe in a letter wrytten by hym of late to the cite of Ragufa, in the which he vseth this subscription : Soltan Soliman de felim Cham Signore de Signori in sempiterno. As concernyng Moscouia and Cathay, I was mynded to haue added hereunto dyuers other thynges, but that for certeyne considerations I was persuaded to proceade no further. Vnto whose requeste, herein satisfiyinge rather other then my selfe, wyllyng otherwyse to haue accomplyshed this booke to further perfection, I was content to agree for two causes especially mouyng me : wherof the one is, that as touchyng these trades and vyages, as in maner in all other sciences, there are certeyne secretes not to bee publysshed and made common to all men. The other cause is, that the parteners at whose charge this booke is prynted, although the copy wherof they haue wrought a longe space haue cost them nought doo not neuerthelesse cease dayly to caule vpon me to make an end and proceade no further : affirmyng that the booke wyll bee of to great a pryce and not euery mans money : fearyng rather theyr owne losse and hynderaunce, then carefull to bee beneficial to other, as is nowe in maner the trade of all men, which ordinarie respecte of priuate commoditie hath at this tyme so lyttle moued me, I take god to wytnesse, that for my paynes and traauyles taken herein such as they bee, I may vpon iust occasion thynke my selfe a loofer manye wayes, except such men of good inclination as shall take pleasure and feele sum commoditie in the knowlege of these thynges, shall thynke me woorthy theyr good woorde, wherwith I shal repute my selfe and my traauyles so abundantly satisfiied, that I shall repute other mens gaynes a recompense for my losses, as they may bee in deede, yf men bee not vnthankfull, which only vice of ingratitude hath hyndered the worlde of many benefites.

The navigation by the frofen sea.



My beinge in Moscouia when I was sent thither by kynge Ferdinando my lorde and master, it so chaufed that Georgius Istoma the duke of Moscouia his interpretour, a man of great experience who hadde before lerned the latin tounge in the court of Iohn kynge of Denmarke, was there present at the same tyme. He in the yeare of Chryst. 1496. beinge sente of his prince with master Dauid a scotte borne and then ambassadour for the kynge of Denmarke, (whom also I knewe there at my fyrst legacie) made me a breefe information of all th[e] order of his iorney. The which, forasmuch as it may seeme difficult and laborious aswell for the distaunce as daungerous places, I haue thought good to describe the same as I receaued it at his mouth.

Fyrst he sayde that beinge sent of his prince with the sayd Dauid, they came fyrst to Nouogardia the great. And wher as at that tyme the kyngedome of Suecia reuolted frome the kynge of Denmarke, and also the duke of Moscouia was at discention with the Suetians, by reason wherof they coulde not passe by the most accustomed way for the tumultes of war they attempted theyr iorney by an other way longer but safer. And came fyrst from Nouogardia to the mouthes of the ryuer of Dwina and Potiwlo, by a very difficult and paynefull iorney. For he sayd that this iorney which can not bee to muche detested for suche laboures and traauyles, continueth for the space of three hundreth leaques. In fine, takyng foure smaul shyppes or barkes at the mouthes of Dwina, they sayled by the coaste on the ryght hande of the Ocean, where they fawe certeyne hyghe and rowgh mountaynes : and at the lengthe faylyng. xvi. [sixteen] leaques, and passyng a great goulfe, folowed the coaste on the lefte hande : And leauyng on the ryght hand the large sea which the name of the ryuer Petzora (as haue also the mountaynes adiacent to the same) they came to the people of Finlappia : who, although they dwell here and there in lowe cottages by the sea fyde, and leade in maner a beastly lyfe, yet are they more meeke and tractable then the wylde Lappians. He sayde that these also are tributaries to the prince of Moscouia. Then leauyng the lande of the Lappians, and faylyng fourescore leaques, they came to the region of Nortpoden vnder the dominion of the kynge of Suecia. This the Moscouites caule Kaienska Semla, and the people Kayeni. Departyng from hense, and faylyng alonge by the coaste of a wyndyng and bendyng shore reachyng towarde the ryght hand, they came to a promontorie or cape cauled the Holy nose, beinge a greate stone reachyng farre into the sea to the similitude of a nose : vnder the whiche is feene a caue with a whyrlepoole which swalow[e]th the sea euery fyxe houres : and castyng furth the same ageyne with terryble roryng and violence, caufeth the sayde whyrlepoole. Sum caule this the nauell of the sea : and other name it Charybdis. He affirmeth that the violence of this swalowyng goulfe is such, that it draweth into it, inuolue[th], and swalowe[th] vp shyppes and al other thynges that comme neare it : and that they were neuer in greater dangioure. For the whyrlepoole so suddely and violently drewe vnto it the shyppe or barke wherin they were caryed, that with the helpe of ores and great labour they hardly escaped. When they had thus ouerpassed the holy nose, they came to a certeyne stonye mountayne which they shulde needes compasse abowte. But beinge there stayed with contrary wyndes for the space of certeyne dayes, the pylotte of the shippe spake vnto them in this effecte : This stone (sayth he) that yowe see, is cauled Semes : The which excepte we please with summe gyfte, wee shall not passe by without great daungiour. But the pylot beinge reprovod of Istoma for his wayne superstition, helde his peace. And when they had byn detained ther by tempest for the space of foure days, at the length

Nouogardia.
Suecia vnder the
kyng of
Denmarke.

Dwina.
Potiwlo.

Hygh mountaynes
neare the north
Ocean.

Finlappia.

The wylde
Lappians.
The region of
Nortpoden

The cape cauled
the holy nose.
A whyrlepoole or
swalowing goulfe.

304

Such whyrlepooles,
are cauled vipers

The stone cauled
Semes.
Superstition.

the tempest ceafed and they went forward on theyr vyage with a prosperous wynd. Then the pilotte spake vnto them ageyne, fayinge: You despised my admonicion of pleasynge the Semes, and scorned the fame as vayne and superflitious. But if I had not priuillie in the nyght ascended a rocke and pleased the Semes, wee shulde surely haue had no passage. Beinge demaunded what he offered to the Semes, he sayde that he poured butter myxt with otemele vpon the stone which wee sawe reache furth into the sea. As they fayled further, they came to an other cape named Motka, which was almost enuironed with the sea lyke an Ilande: in whose extreme poynte, is situate the castell of Barthus, which sum caule Wardhus, (that is) a house of defence or fortreffe. For the kynges of Norway haue there a garryson of men to defende theyr marches. He sayde furthermore that that cape reacheth so farre into the sea, that they could scarcely compasse it in eyght dayes. By which taryng leaste they shulde bee hyndered, they caryed on theyr shulders with greate labour, theyr barkes and fardelles ouer a streyght of lande conteynng halfe a leaque in breadth. From hense they sayled to the region of the wyld Lappones, cauled Dikilappones to a place named Dront, beinge. CC. [two hundred] leaques distant from Dwina towarde the North. And thus farre as he fayth, doth the prince of Moscouia exacte tribute. Furthermore leauyng theyr barkes here, they synysshed the residue of theyr iorney on sleades. He further declared that there were hearde of hartes as are with vs of oxen, whiche in the Norwegians tounge are cauled Rhen, beinge sumwhat bygger then owre hartes. These the Lappones vse in this maner. They ioine them to sleades made lyke fysshers botes, as wee put horses to the carte. The man in the sleade, is tyed fast by the feete least he fall owte by the swyfte course of the hartes. In his lefte hande, he holdeth a collar or rayne wherwith he moderateth the course of the hartes: and in the ryght hand, a pyked staffe wherwith he may fusteine the sleade from faulng if it chaunce to decline to much on any part. And he toulde me that by this meanes he trauallyd twentie leaques in one daye, and then dismysed the harte, who by hym selfe returned to his owne master and accustomed stable. This iorney thus synysshed, they came to Berges a cite of Norduegia or Norway, situate directly towarde the northe betwene the mountaynes: and wente from thence to Denmarke on horsebacke. At Dront and Berges, the day is sayde to bee. xxii. [twenty-two] houres longe in the sommer Equinoctiall. Blasius another of the prynce of Moscouia his interpretours, who a fewe yeares before, was sent of his prince into Spayne to Th[e]mperour, declared vnto vs an other and shorter way of his iorney. For he sayde that when he was sent from Moscouia to Iohn the kyng of Denmarke, he came fyrste on foote vnto Rostowe: And takyng shyppe there, came to Pereaflaw: and from Pereaflaw by the ryuer Volga to Castromow: and that frome thence goyng feuen Werstes by lande, he came to a lyttle ryuer: saylunge by the which, when fyrst he came to Vuolochda, then to Suchana, and Dwina, and in fine to the cite of Berges in Norway, ouerpassyng in this vyage all the perelles and laboures that Istoma rehearfed before, he came at the length to Hafnia the chiefe cite of Denmarke, whiche the Germaines caule Koppenhagen. But in theyr returnyng home, they both confesse that they came to Moscouia by Liunia: and that they were a yeare in this vyage: Albeit Georgius Istoma, sayde that halfe the parte of that tyme, he was hyndered by tempestes, and enforced to tary longe in many places by the waye. Yet they both lykewyse constantly affirme that in this iorney eyther of them trauallyd a thousand threecore and ten Werstes (that is) three hundreth and fortie leaques. Furthermore also Demetrius who of late was sent ambassadour from the prynce of Moscouia to the bysshoppe of Rome, (by whose relation also Paulus Iouius wrote his description of Moscouia) confirmed all these thynges to bee trewe. All they being demaunded of me of the congeled or frozen sea, made none other answere but that in places nere vnto that sea, they saw many and great riuers by whose vehemente course and abundaunt flowyng, the seas are dryuen farre from the shore: and that the sayde water of the ryuers is frozen with the sea a good space from the lande, as in Liunia and other partes of Suecia. For although by the vehemencie of the wyndes, the Ice is broken in the sea, yet dooth this chaunce feldome or neuer in ryuers, excepte by sum inundation or flud the Ice gathered togyther bee lyfted vp and broken. For the flakes or piefes of Ice caryed into the sea by force of the ryuers, doo flote aboue the water in maner all the hole yeare, and are ageyne so vehemently frozen togyther, that a man maye there sumtymes see great heapes of the Ice of manye yeares, as dooth appere by such piefes as are dryuen to the shore by the wynde. I haue also byn credibly informed by faythfull men that the sea Baltheum (otherwyse cauled the goulfe of Liunia) is often tymes frozen in many places. They say furthermore, that in that region whiche is inhabtyed of the wyld Lappones, the soonne in the sommer Equinoctiall dooth not faule for the space of. xl. [forty] dayes: yet that that the body therof is so hydden with a darke myste or cloude three houres, that the beames doo not appere: Neuerthelesse to gyue such lyght duryng that tyme, that the darkeness hyndereth not theyr worke. The Moscouites make theyr bofte that these wyld Lappones are tributaries to theyr prynce. Wherat I do not greatly maruayle, forasmuch as they haue none other neare vnto them, that may demaunde tribute of them. Theyr trybute is onely fures and fyssh, hauyng in maner none other thyng greatly commodious. And albeit they lacke breade, salte, and other intyfements of glutteny, and lyue onely with fyssh and wyld beasts, yet are they excedyng prone to lechery. They are such expert archers, that if in theyr huntynge they espye any beasts whose skynnes they desyre to faue vnperysshed, they

Sacrifice to the stone Semes

The cape Motka.

The castell of Wardhus.

The region of the wyld Lappones. Dront.

Iorneyng on sleades.

Howe the hartes drawe sleades.

xx. [twenty] leaques in one day
The cite of Berges in Norway

A shorter iorney.

Rostow.
Pereaflaw.
Castromow.
Vuolochda.
Suchana.
Dwina.
Hafnia.
Koppenhagen
Liunia.
Werste, is almost an Italian myle.

305

Paulus Iouius.

Ryuers faulng into the frozen sea.

Wynde. Ice.

Ice of many yeares.

The sea Baltheum
Where the sun fauleth not in. xl. [forty] days

The wyld Lappones are tributaries to the Moscouites
Fures and fyssh

Experte archers.

Good felowshyp.

Necessary warres.

No vse of money.

Theyr cotages.

Mountaynes
continually
burnyng.

Purgatory.

The ryuer
Petzora.

306

The beaste cauled
Mors.The prouidence
of nature.

The frozen sea.

Engronland or
Groneland

wyll not lyghtly myffe to hytte them in the nofethrylles. When they go furth on huntynge, they are accustomed to leaue at home with theyr wyues fuche marchautes or fraungers as they haue receaued into theyr houfes. So that if at theyr returne, they perceauē theyr wyues through the company of the strangers to be myrier and more iocunde then they were wonte to bee, they gyue the fraungers sum present. But yf they fynd it otherwyse, they thrust them furth of the doores with woordes of reproche. But nowe by the company they haue with fraungers that reforte thyther for gaynes, they begyn to leaue theyr natiue barbaroufnesse. They gladly admitte marchautes, bycause they brynge them apparel of grofe cloth: also hatchettes, needels, spones, knyues, drynkynge cuppes, earthen and brafen pottes, with fuch other necessarie wares: So that they vse now to eate sodden and rosted meate, and doo embrace more ciuile maners. Theyr owne apparel is made of the skynnes of dyuers beastes fowed togyther. And in this apparell they sumtymes comme to Moscouia. Yet fewe of them haue cappes or hosen, which they vse to make of hartes skynnes. They haue not the vse of golde or syluer money: but vse only barterynge of ware for ware. And beinge ignorant of other languages beyde theyr owne, they seeme amonge fraungers to bee in maner domme. Theyr cotages are couered onely with the barkes of trees. They haue no certeyne reflynge habitacion. But when they haue consumed the fyfhe and wyldē beastes in one place, they remoue to an other. Furthermore also the fayde ambassadours of the prince of Moscouia, declared that in the same partes they sawe certeyne hygh mountaynes continually castynge furth flames of fyre as doth the mountayne of Etna in the Ilande of Sicilia: and that euen in Norway, many mountaynes are faulen downe and burnte in maner to asfhes with fuch continuall flames. Which thyngē sum confyderynge, fayne the fyre of Purgatorie to bee there. And as concernynge these mountaynes of Norway, when I was sent ambassadour to Christierne kynge of Denmarke, I was informed the lyke by the gouernours of Norway who chaunced at that tyme to bee present there.

About the mouthes of the ryuer Petzora that are toward the ryght hande from the mouthes of Dwina, are sayd to bee dyuers and great beastes in the Ocean: and amonge other, a certeyne great beast as bygge as an oxe, which th[e] inhabitants caule Mors. This beast hath shorte feete lyke a beuer or an Otter, with a breft sumwhat hygh and brode for the proportion of the residue of his body: and two longe and greate teeth growynge owte of the vpper iawe. These beastes for rest and increafe, doo sumtymes leaue the Ocean, and by great hearde ascende the mountaynes: where before they gyue themfelues to profounde sleepe (wherunto they are naturally inclined) they appoynt one of theyr number as it were a watchman as doo cranes for the securitie of the reste. Whiche if he chaunce to sleepe, or to bee slayne of the hunters, the residue may easely bee taken. But if the watchman gyue warnynge with rorynge (as the māner is) immediately the hole hearde awakened thereby, suddelynly put theyr hynder feete to theyr teeth: And so faulyngē from the mountayne with great celeritie as it were on a sleade, they cast them felues headlong into the Ocean: where also they rest and sleepe for a whyle vppon the heapes of Ise. The hunters pursue these beastes only for theyr teethe: Of the which the Moscouites, Tartars, and especially the Turkes, make haftes for swoordes and dagge[r]s very artificially: And vse these rather for ornamente, then to gyue the greater stroke for the weyght or heauinesse thereof as summe fable. Also amonge the Turkes, Moscouites, and Tartars, these teethe are fouldē by weight, and are cauled the teethe of fyfhes.

The frofen sea reacheth farre and wyde beyonde Dwina to Petzora and vnto the mouthes of the great riuer Obi: beyonde the which they say to bee the region of Engroneland, vnknown and seperate from the trade and conuerfation of owre men, by reason of hygh mountaynes couered and coulde with perpetuall snowe, and the sea no lesse incumbered with contynually Ise whiche hyndereth nauigations and maketh them daungerous, as they fayē.



EXEMPLAR EPISTOLAE SEV
LITERARVM MISSIVARVM
QVAS ILLVSTRISSIMVS PRINCEPS

Edvvardus eius nominis Sextus, Angliæ, Franciæ, et Hiberniæ Rex, misit ad Principes Septemtrionalem ac Orientalem mundi plagam inhabitantes iuxta mare glaciale, nec non Indiam Orientalem. Anno Domini. 1553. Regni sui Anno septimo et vltimo.



Dvvardus sextus, Angliæ, Franciæ, and Hiberniæ Rex. etc. Omnibus, Regibus et Principibus ac Dominis, et cunctis Indicibus terræ, et Ducibus eius quibuscunque est excellens aliqua dignitas in ea

cunctis in locis quæ sunt sub vniuerso cœlo: Pax, tranquillitas, et honor vobis, terris, et regionibus vestris quæ imperio vestro subiacent, cuique vestrum quemadmodum conuenit ei. Propterea quod indidit Deus Opt. Max. hominibus præ cunctis alijs viuentibus cor et desiderium tale, vt appetat quisque cum alijs societatem mire, amare, et vicissim amari, beneficijs afficere, et mutua accipere beneficia studeat, ideo cuique pro
307 facultate sua hoc desiderium in omnibus quidem hominibus beneficijs fouere et conseruare conuenit, in illis autem maxime, qui hoc desiderio adducti, a remotis etiam regionibus ad eos veniunt. Quo enim longius iter, eius rei gratia ingressi sunt, eo ardentius in eis hoc desiderium fuisse declararunt. Infuper etiam ad hoc, nos patrum maiorumque nostrorum exempla inuitant, qui semper humanissime susceperunt et benignissime tractauerunt illos qui tum a locis propinquantum a remotis, eos amice adibant, eorum se protectioni commendantes. Quod si omnibus id præstare æquum est, certe mercatoribus imprimis præstari debet, qui per vniuersum orbem discurrent, mare circumlustrantes et aridam, vt res bonas et vtiles quæ Dei beneficio in

THE COPY OF THE LETTERS
MISSIVE WHICH THE RIGHT
NOBLE PRINCE EDWARDE THE. VI.

sent to the Kynges, Princes, and other potentates inhabytyng the Northeast partes of the worlde toward the myghtye Empire of Cathay, at suche tyme as fyr Hugh Willoby knyght and Rychard Chaunceler with theyr company attempted theyr vyage thyther in the yeare of Chryft. 1553. and the. vii. and laste yeare of his reigne.



Dwarde the fyxte by the grace of God, kyng of Englande, Fraunce, and Ierlande. etc. To all Kynges, Princes, Rulers, Iudges, and gouernours of the earth, and all other hauynge any excellent dignitie on the fame in all places vnder the vniuersall heauen: Peace, tranqui-

litie, and honoure, bee vnto yowe, and your landes and regions which are vnder yowr dominions, and to euery of yowe as is conuenient.

Forasmuche as the greate and almyghty god hath gyuen vnto mankynd aboue al other liuing creatours, such a hart and desyre, that euery man desyreth to ioyne frendeshyppe with other, to loue and bee loued, also to gyue and receaue mutuall benefites, it is therefore the dewtie of all men, accordyng to theyr poure to maintayne and increase this desyre in euery man with well deseruyng to all men, and especially to shewe this good affection to such as beinge moued with this desyre, coome vnto them from farre countreys. For in howe much the longer viage they haue attempted for this intent, so much the more doo they therby declare that this desyre hath byn ardent in them. Furthermore also the]examples of owre fathers and predecessours doo inuite vs hereunto, forasmuch as they haue euer gently and louyngly intreated such as of frendly mynde came to them afwel from countreis nere hand as farre remote, commendynge them selues to theyr protection. And if it bee ryght and equitie to shewe such humanitie toward all men, doubtlesse the same owght chiefly to bee shewed to marchauntes, who wanderynge about the worlde, searche both the lande and sea to cary such good and profitable thinges as are founde in theyr cpuntreys, to remote regions and kyngedomes: and ageyne to bryng from the fame, suche thynges as

regione eorum inueniuntur, ad remotissimas regiones et regna adferant, atque inde viuissim referant quod sua regioni vtile ibi repererint: vt et populi ad quos eunt, non destituantur commodis quæ non profert illis terra eorum, et ipsi sint participes rerum quibus illi abundant. Nam Deus cœli et terræ, humano generi maxime confulens, noluit vt omnia in quauis regione inuenirentur, quo regio ope alterius regionis indigeret, et gens ab alia gente commodum aliquod expectaret, ac ita stabiliretur amicitia inter omnes, singulique omnibus benefacere quærent, Hoc itaque ineundæ ac stabiliendæ amicitiaë desiderio moti viri quidam regni nostri, iter in remotas maritimas regiones instituerunt, vt inter nostros et illos populos viam mercibus inferendis et eferendis aperirent: Nosque rogauerunt vt id illis concederemus. Qui petitioni illorum annuentes, concessimus viro honorabili et forti Hugoni Wilibeo et alijs qui cum eo sunt seruis nostris fidis et charis, vt pro sua voluntate, in regiones eis prius incognitas eant, quæsituri ea quibus nos caremus, et adducant illis ex nostris terris, id quo illi carent. Atque ita illis et nobis commodum inde accedat, sitque amicitia perpetua et fœdus inaisolubile inter illos et nos, dum permittent illi nos accipere de rebus quibus superabundant in regnis suis, et nos concedemus illis ex regnis nostris res, quibus destituuntur. Rogamus itaque vos Reges et Principes et omnes quibus aliqua est potestas in terra, vt viris istis nostris transitum permittatis per regiones vestras. Non enim tangent quicquam ex rebus vestris inuitis vobis. Cogitate quod homines et ipsi sunt. Et si quare caruerint, oramus pro vestra beneficentia, eam vos illis tribuatis, accipientes vicissim ab eis quod poterunt rependere vobis. Ita vos gerite erga eos quemadmodum cuperitis vt nos et subditi nostri nos gereremus erga seruos vestros si quando transferint per regiones nostras. Atque promittimus vobis per Deum omnium quæ cœlo, terra et mari continentur, perque vitam nostram et tranquillitatem regnorum nostrorum, nos pari benignitate seruos vestros accepturos si ad regna nostra aliquando venerint. Atque a nobis et subditis nostris, ac si nati fuissent in regnis nostris, ita benigne tractabuntur vt rependamus vobis benignitatem quam nostris exhibueritis. Postquam vos Reges, Principes, etc. rogauimus vt humanitate et beneficentia omni profequamini seruos nostros nobis charos, oramus omnipotentem Deum nostrum, vt vobis diuturnam vitam largiatur, et pacem quæ nullam habeat finem. Scriptum Londini, quæ ciuitas est regni nostri. Anno. 5515. a creato mundo, mense Iar. xiiii. die mensis, anno septimo regni nostri.

308

they fynde there commodious for theyr own countreys: Bothe, aswell that the people to whom they go, may not bee destitute of such commodities as theyr countreys brynge not furth to them, as that also they may bee partetakers of suche thynges wherof they abounde. For god of heauen and earth, greatly prouydyng for mankynde, wolde not that al thynges shulde bee founde in one region, to th[e]nde that one shuld haue neede of an other, that by this meanes frendshippe myght bee establyshed amonge all men, and euery one seeke to gratifie all. For th[e]stablyshyng and furtherance of which vniuersall amitie, certeyne men of owre realme moued hereunto by the fayde desyre, haue institute and 309 taken vpon theym a vyage by sea into farre countreys to th[e]intent that betwene owre people and theni, a way bee opened to brynge in and cary owt marchaundies, desyryng vs to further theyr enterpryse. Who assentyng to theyr petition, haue licenced the ryght valiante and woorthy syr Hughe Wylloby knyght, and other owre trusty and faithfull seruautes which are with hym according to theyr desyre to go to countreys to them heretofore vnknownen, aswell to seeke suche thynges as we lacke, as also to cary vnto them from owre regions, suche thynges as they lacke. So that hereby not only commoditie may ensewe both to them and to vs, but also an indissoluble and perpetuall league of frendshippe be establyshed betwene vs bothe, wyle they permitte vs to take of theyr thynges suche whereof they haue abundaunce in theyr regions, and we ageine graunt them suche thynges of owrs wherof they are destitute. Wee therefore desyre yow kynges and princes, and all other to whom there is any poure on the earth, to permitte vnto these ovr seruautes, free passage by yowr regions and dominions. For they shall not touche any thyng of yowres vnwylling vnto yow. Consyder yow that they also are men. If therefore they shal stand in neede of any thyng, we desyre yowe of all humanitie, and for the nobilitie whiche is in yowe, to ayde and helpe theym with such thynges as they lacke, receauyng ageyne of them such thynges as they shalbe able to gyue yowe in recompense. Shewe yowre selues so towarde theym, as yowe wolde that wee and ovr subiectes shulde shewe ovr selues toward yowr seruautes, if at any tyme they shall passe by owre regions. Thus doinge, wee promesse yowe by the God of all thynges that are conteyned in heauen, earth, and the sea, and by the lyfe and tranquillite of owre kyngedomes, that we wyl with lyke humanitie accepte yowre seruautes if at any tyme they shal coomme to owre kyngdomes, where they shall as frendly and gently bee interteyned as if they were borne in ovr dominions, that we may hereby recompense the fauour and benignitie which yow haue shewed to ovr men. Thus after we haue desyred yow kynges and princes, etc. With all humanitie and fauour to interteyne ovr welbeloued seruautes, wee pray owre almyghty god to graunt yowe longe lyfe and peace which neuer shall haue ende. Wrytten in London whiche is the chiefe citie of owre kyngedome: In the yeare frome the creation of the worlde. 5515. in the moneth of Iar, the. xiiii. day of the moneth, and seuenth yeare of owre reigne.

¶ *This letter was wrytten also in Greeke and dyuers other languages.*

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

SECTION V.

Other notable things as touching the Indies,

out of the Writings and Maps of

Francisco Lopez de Gómara,

and

Sebastian Cabot.

1552-1555.]

OTHER NOTABLE THYNGES AS TOVCHYNGE THE INDIES:

AND FYRST OF THE FOREKNOWLEAGE THAT THE POET SENECA HAD
of the fyndyng this newe worlde and other regions not then known.

FRANCISCO LOPES.



O speke of thynges that shalbe, longe before they are, is a kynde of diuination if the truth thereof folowe effectually. Neuerthelesse althowgh such thynges as are spoken eyther by coniecture, or by th[e]instincte of nature, or by naturall reason, doo oftentymes take place and succede accordyngely, yet are not such coniectures to bee accounted as certeyne as prophesies reueled by the spirite of god, which wee ought entierly to beleue: but not so the other gathered only by certeine apperences, similitudes, reasons, and demonstrations: althowghe it bee greatly to bee maruailed to confyder howe they hytte the truthe sumtyme: which perhappes they doo accordyng to the prouerbe that fayth: He that speaketh much shall sumtymes flumble on the truth. All this I speake confydyryng the sayyng of the poet Seneca in his tragedie of Médea, where his woordes feeme in all poyntes to agree with the discoueryng of the Indies founde of late by Christofer Colon and the Spanyardes. The woordes of Seneca, are these,

*Venient annis
Sæcula feris, quibus Oceanus
Vincula rerum laxet, et ingens
Pateat tellus, Tiphisque nouos
Detegat orbis,
Nec sit terris ultima Thyle.*

That is to faye: There shall coomme worldes in late yeares, in the whiche the Ocean shall vnlofe the bondes of thynges, and a great lande shall appeare. Also Typhis (that is navigation) shall discouer newe worldes: and Thyle shall not bee the furthest lande.

Diuination.

Coniecture.

Prophesie.

So do the
Egiptians.

The wordes of
Seneca.

Islande was in
owld time cauled
Thyle as summe
thinke.

Of the great Ilande which Plato cauled Atlantica or Atlantide.



He Philosopher Plato wrytethe in his Dialoges of Timeus and Cricia, that in the owld time there was in the sea Atlantike ouer agenst Affrica, an Ilande cauled Atlantide greater then Affrica and Asia: affirmyng that those landes are from thense continent and greate: And that the kynges of that Ilande gouerned a greate parte of Affrica and Europe. But that in a certeyne greate earthequake and tempest of rayne, this Ilande soonke and the people were drowned: Also that there remayned somuch mudde of the drownyng or synkyng of that Ilande, that that sea Atlantike could not bee sayled. Sum take this for a fable: and many for a trewe

310

Plato sayth that
these kynges were
the sonnes of
Neptunus.
An earthquake.

Marcilius Ficinus.
Proclus.

Mexico or new
Spaine.

Hesperides.

Capo Verde

Ophir.

Tharsis.

Gorgonas.

Solinus.

Lands found by the

Carthaginenses.

Aristotell.

Theophrast.

Ionas fledde to
Tharsis.

The nauigations

of Salomon.

Bermeio is the

Arabian sea.

hystorie, as doothe Marcilius Ficinus inducinge Proclus alleagyng certeyne hystories of the Ethiopians wrytten by one Marcellus, who confirmeth the fame to bee trewe. But there is nowe no caufe why wee shulde any longer doubtte or difpute of the Iland Atlantide, forafmuch as the difcoueryng and conquest of the west Indies do plainly declare what Plato hath wrytten of the fayde landes. In Mexico also at this day they caul that water Atl. by the halfe name of Atlant, as by a woorde remaynyng of the name of the Ilande that is not. Wee may lykewyse fay that the Indies are eyther the Ilande and firme lande of Plato or the remanent of the fame: and not the Ilandes of Hesperides or Ophir, or Tharsis, as sum haue thought of late dayes. For the Hesperides, are the Ilandes of Cabo Verde and the Gorgonas from whense Hanon brought apes: Albeit in conferrynge it with Solinus, there is sum doubtte by reason of the nauigation of fortie dayes wherof he speaketh. Aswell maye it bee, that Cuba or Hayti, or any other Ilande of the Indies, shulde bee those which the Carthaginenses founde and forbodde theyr citifens to make any vyages thither or to inhabite the same as Aristotle and Theophraste doo rehearse where they wryte of the marueylous and vnknowne workes of nature. As concernynge Ophir and Tharsis, it is not knowen what or where they bee, althowgh many lerned men as saynt Augustine and other haue seached what citie or lande Tharsis myght bee. Saynt Ierome who was experte in the Hebrew tounge, fayth in many places vppon the prophetes that Tharsis is as much to fay as the sea: and that whereas it is wrytten that Ionas fledde to Tharsis, he wente to the sea by a longe iorney. Furthermore as concernynge the nauigations of Salomon, it is not to bee thought that his nauies sayled to the west Indies, forasmuch as to passe thither, it was requisite for them to sayle Westwarde departynge frome the sea of Bermeio: and not Eastward as they sayled. Ageine, the west Indies haue no vnicornes, elephantes, diamondes, and such other thynges as they brought in the trade of their nauigations.

¶ Of the colour of the Indians.



Ne of the marueylous thynges that god vfeth in the composition of man, is coloure: whiche doubtlesse can not bee consydered withoute great admiration in beholding one to be white and an other blacke, beinge coloures vtterlye contrary. Sum lykewyse to be yelowe whiche is betwene blacke and white: and other of other coloures as it were of dyuers liueres. And as these coloures are to be marueyled at, euen so is it to be considered howe they dyffer one from an other as it were by degrees, forasmuche as sum men are whyte after dyuers fortes of whytenesse: yelowe after dyuers maners of yelowe: and blacke after dyuers fortes of blackenesse: and howe from whyte they go to yelowe by discolourynge to browne and redde: and to blacke by affhe colour, and murrey sumwhat lyghter then blacke: and tawnye lyke vnto the west Indians which are all togyther in general eyther purple, or tawny lyke vnto sodde quynses, or of the colour of chefnuttes or olyues: which colour is to them natural and not by theyr goynge naked as many haue thought: albeit theyr nakednesse haue sumwhat helped therunto. Therefore in lyke maner and with fuche diuersitie as men are commonly whyte in Europe and blacke in Affrike, euen with like varietie are they tawny in these Indies, with dyuers degrees diuersly inclynynge more or lesse to blacke or whyte. No lesse maruayle is it to consyder that men are whyte in Siuile and blacke at the cape of Buena Speranza, and of chefnutte colour at the ryuer of Plata, beinge all in equall degrees frome the Equinoctiall line. Lykewyse that the men of Affryke and Asia that lyue vnder the burnte line (cauled *Zona Torrida*) are blacke: and not they that lyue beneath or on this fyde the same line as in Mexico, Yucatan, Quauhtema, Lian, Nicaragua, Panama, Santo Domingo, Paria, Cape saynt Augustine, Lima, Quito, and other landes of Peru which touch in the same Equinoctiall. For in al the tracte of these coastes certeyne blacke men were found only in Quarequa when Vachus Nunnez of Balboa discovered the sea of Sur. By reason wherof it may seeme that fuche varietie of coloures procedeth of man, and not of the earth: whiche maye well bee althowgh wee bee all borne of Adam and Eue, and knowe not the caufe why god hath so ordeyned it, otherwyse then to consyder that his diuine maiesie hath doonne this as infinite other to declare his omnipotencie and wisdome in such diuersities of coloures as appere not only in the nature of man, but the lyke also in beastes, byrdes, and floures, where dyuers and contrary coloures are seene in one lyttle fether, or the leaues growynge owt of one lyttle stalke. An other thyng is also greatly to bee noted as touchynge these Indians. And this is, that they heare is not curde as is the Moores and Ethiopians that inhabite the same clime: neyther are they balde excepte very feldome, and that but lyttle. All whiche thynges may giue further occasion to phylosophers to search the secretes of nature and complexions of men with the nouelties of the newe worlde.

How colours dyffer
by degrees.

The coloure of the
west Indians.

Dyue[r]s sortes of
whyte and blacke.

311

Difference of
coloure in the
same clyme.

Rio de la Plata.

Peru.

Blacke men in
the west Indies.

From whense
procedeth the
varietie of coloures.

Gods wysedome
and poure is seene
in his workes.

Curld heare and
baldaes.

¶ *Why they were cauled Indians.*



¶ I thinke that the people of the newe world were cauled Indians bycause they are of the colour of the East Indians. And althowghe (as it semeth to me) they dyffer much in colour and fashions, yet is it trewe that of India they were cauled Indians.

India is properlie cauled that great prouince of Asia in the which great Alexander kepte his warres: and was so named of the ryuer Indus: and is diuided into many kyngedomes confynnyng with the same. From this greete India (cauled the East India) came great compaynes of men as wryteth Herodotus: and inhabited that parte of Ethiopia that lyeth betwene the sea Bermeia (otherwyse cauled the redde sea or the goulfe of Arabia) and the ryuer of Nilus: al which regions that great Christian prince Prester Iohn dooth now possesse. The sayde Indians preuayled so much, that they vterly changed the customes and name of that lande, and cauled it India: by reafon wherof, Ethiopia also hath of longe tyme byn cauled India. And hereuppon came it that Aryflotell, Seneca, and certeyne other oulde antours sayd that India was not farre from Spayne. After this also, of later dayes owre West India was so cauled of the sayde India of Prester Iohn where the Portugales had theyr trade. For the pylot of the caruell that was fyrste dryuen by forcyble wynde to an vnknowne lande in the Weste Ocean, cauled the same India bycause the Portugales so cauled such landes as they had lately discouered Eastwarde. Chrystopher Colon also after the sayde pylot, cauled the west landes by the same name. Albeit, sum that take Colonus for an expert Cosmographer, thinke that he so named them of the East India, as to be the furthest and vnknowne ende therof reachynge into the Weste vnder the other hemispherie or halfe globe of the earthe beneathe vs: affirmyng that when he fyrst attempted to discouer the Indies, he went chiefly to seeke the ryche Iland of Cipango, which fauleth on the parte of great China or Cathay as wryteth Marcus Paulus Venetus and other: And that he shulde fooner come thither by folowyng the course of the foonne Westwarde then ageynst the same: Albeit manye thinke that there is no suche Ilande, or at the leaste not yet knowne by that name: wheras also Marcus Paulus obserued no exacte description of the place eyther of this Ilande or of Cathay.

The colour of the East Indians.

East India.

Prester Iohn came out of India to Ethiopie.

Ethiopia cauled India.

India not far from Spayne

Prester Iohn knowne to the Portugales.

At the furthest Easte, begynneth the west.

The Iland of Cipango.

China.

Cathay.

To the East by the west.

Marcus Paulus Venetus.

¶ *The fyrste discouerynge of the Weste Indies.*



Certeyne caruell faylynge in the weste Ocean abowt the coastes of Spayne, had a forcyble and continuall wynde from the East wherby it was dryuen to a land vnknowne and not descrybed in any mappes or cardes of the sea: and was dryuen styl alonge by the coaste of the same for the space of many dayes vntyll it came to a haven: where in a shorte tyme the most parte of the maryners beinge longe before verie weake and feeble by reafon of hunger and traualle, dyed: So that only the pylot with thre or foure other remayned alyue. And not only they that dyed dyd not inioy the Indies which they fyrst discouered to their myffortune, but the

resydue also that lyned had in maner as lyttle fruition of the same: not leauynge or at the least not openly publyshynge any memorie therof, neyther of the place, or what it was cauled, or in what yeare it was founde. Albeit, the faute was not theirs, but rather the malice of other, or the enuie of that which wee caule fortune. I doo not therefore marueyle that the auncient hystories affirme that great thynges proceade and increase of smaule and obscure begynnynge, fyth wee haue seene the same verifed in this fyndyng of the Indies beinge so notable and newe a thyng. Wee neede not bee curious to seeke the name of the pylot fyth death made a shorte ende of his doinges. Sum wyl that he came from Andaluzia, and traded to the Ilands of Canaria and the Ilande of Madera when this large and mortal nauigation chaunced vnto hym. Other say that he was a Biscayne, and traded into Englande and Fraunce. Other also, that he was a Portugale: and that eyther he wente or came from Mina or India: which agreeth well with the name of these newe landes as I haue sayde before. Ageyne, sum there bee that say that he brought the carauel to Portugale: or to the Ilande of Madera, or to sum other of the Ilandes cauled *de los Azores*. Yet doo none of them affirme any thyng, although they all affirme that the pylote dyed in the house of Chrystopher Colon, with whome remayned al such wrytynges and annotacions as he hadde made of his vyage in the sayde carauell, aswell of such thynges as he obserued both by lande and sea, as also of the eleuation of the pole in those landes whiche he had discouered.

A harde begynnynge.

312

Great thynges procedyng of smaule and obscure begynnynge.

The pylote that fyrst founde the Indies.

Mina.

¶ *What maner of man Chrystopher Colon was: and howe he Came fyrst to the knowlege of the Indies.*



Chrystopher Colon was borne in Cugureo, or (as sum fay) in Nerui, a vyllage in the territorie of Genua in Italie. He descended as sum thynke, of the house of the Pelestreles of Placentia in Lumbardie. He beganne of a chylde to bee a maryner: of whose arte they haue great exercife on the ryuer of Genua. He traded many yeares into Suria and other partes of the East. After this, he became a master in makynge cardes for the sea, whereby he had great vantage. He came to Portugale to knowe the reason and description of the south coastes of Affrica and the nauigations of the Portugales, thereby to make his cardes more perfecte to bee folde. He maryed in Portugale as sum fay: or as many fay, in the Ilande of Madera, where he dwelt at fuche tyme as the fayde caruell arryued there, whose pylot fuiornd in his house, and dyed also there, bequethynge to Colon his carde of the description of fuche neue landes as he hadde founde, wherby Colon had the fyrst knowlege of the Indydes. Sum haue thowght that Colon was well lerned in the Latine tounge and the science of Cofmographie: and that he was therby fyrst moued to seeke the landes of the Antipodes and the ryche Ilande of Cipango whereof Marcus Paulus wryteth. Also that he had redde what Plato in his dialoges of Timeus and Cricias, wryteth of the greate Ilande Atlantide, and of a great lande in the West Ocean vndiscovered beinge bygger then Asia and Affrica. Furthermore that he had knowlege what Aristotell and Theophrastus faye in their bookes of maruayles, where they wryte that certeyne marchauntes of Carthage faylyng from the streyghtes of Gibraltar towarde the west and south, founde after many dayes a greate Ilande not inhabited: yet replenysed with al thynges requisite, and hauynge many nauigable ryuers. In deede Colon was not greatly lerned: yet of good vnderstandynge. And when he had knowlege of the fayde neue landes by the information of the dead pylot, made relation thereof to certeyne lerned men with whom he conferred as touchynge the lyke thynges mentioned of owlde autours. He communicated this secreate and conferred chiefly with a fryer, named Iohn Perez of Marchena that dwelt in the monastery of Rabida. So that I verely beleue, that in maner all that he declared, and many thynges more that he leste vnspoken, were wrytten by the fayde Spanyshe pylot that dyed in his house. For I am perswaded, that if Colon by science atteyned to the knowlege of the Indies, he wolde longe before haue communicate this secreate to his owne contrey men the Genueses, that trauallye all the worlde for gaynes, and not haue comme into Spayne for this purpose. But doubtelesse he neuer thought of any fuch thyng before he chaunced to bee acquainted with the fayd pylot who founde those landes by fortune, accordynge to the fayinge of Plinie: *Quod ars docere non potuit, casus inuenit.* That is: That arte coulde not teache, chaunce founde. Albeit, the more Chrystian opinion is, to thinke that god of his finguler prouidence and infinite goodnesse, at the length with eyes of compassion as it were lookynge downe from heauen vpon the fonnes of Adam so longe kepte vnder Sathans captiuitie, intended euen then (for causes to hym only knowen) to rayse those wyndes of mercy whereby that caruell (herein most lyke vnto the shyppe of Noe whereby the remanent of the hole world was faued as by this caruel this neue worlde receaued the fyrst hope of theyr saluation) was dryuen to these landes. But wee wyll nowe declare what great thynges folowed of this smaule begynnynge, and how Colon folowed this matter reueled vnto hym not withowte goddes prouidence.

Thus also began
Rychard
chaunceler.

Colon was not
much lerned.

The Ilande
Atlantide.
The lande
found by the
Carthaginenses.

313

Colon conferred
with lerned men.

Chaunce and arte.
A Christian
opinion.

The caruel
compared to the
ship of Noye.

¶ *What labour and trauallye Colon tooke in attemptyng his fyrst vyage to the Indies.*



After the death of the pilot and mariners of the Spanyshe caruell that discouered the Indies, Chrystopher Colon purposed to feke the fame. But in howe muche more he desyred this, the lesse was his poure to accomplishe his desire. For, besyde that of him selfe he was not able to furnyshe one shyppe, he lacked also the fauour of a kynge vnder whose protection he might so enioy the riches he hoped to fynde, that none other myght take the same from hym or defeate hym therof. And seinge the kynge of Portugale occupied in the conquest of Africa and the nauigations of the East which were then fyrst attempted, the kynge of Castyle lykewyse no lesse busyed in the warres of Granada, he sent to his brother Bartholomewe Colon (who was also priuie to this secreate) to practishe with the kynge of Englande Henry the feuenth beinge very ryche

The kynge of
Portugale.
The kyng of
Castile.

Kynge Henry
the seuenth.

and without warres: promysynge to brynge hym great ryches in short time if he wolde shew him fauour and furnyshe hym with shippes to discouer the newe Indies wherof he had certeyne knowlege. But neyther here beinge able to brynge his sute to passe, he caused the matter to bee moued to the kynge of Portugale Don Alonso the syfte of that name: at whose handes he founde neither fauour nor money, forasmuch as the licenciado Calzadilla the byshop of Viseo, and one maister Rodrigo men of credit in the science of Cosmographie, withstode him and contended that there neither was nor coulde any golde or other ryches bee founde in the west as Colon affirmed. By reason whereof he was very sadde and pensyue: but yet was not discouraged or despaired of the hope of his good aduenture which he afterward found. This done, he tooke shippinge at Lisburne, and came to Palos of Moguer where he communed with Martin Alonso Pinzon an expert pylot, who offered hym selfe vnto hym. After this disclosynge the hole secretes of his mynde to Iohn Perez of Marchena (a fryer of th[e] order of saynt Frances in Rabida, and wel lerned in Cosmographie) and declaryng vnto hym how by folowyng the course of the son by a temperate vyage, rich and great landes myght be founde, the fryer greatly commended his enterpryse, and gaue him counsaile to breake the matter to the duke of Medina Sidonia Don Enrique of Guzman a great lorde and very ryche: And also to Don Luys of Cerda the duke of Medina Celi, who at that tyme had great prouision of shippes well furnysed in his hauen of Santa Maria. But wheras both these dukes tooke the matter for a dreame and as a thyng diuined of an Italian deceauer who (as they thought) had before with lyke pretence deluded the kynges of Englande and Portugale, the fryer gaue hym courage to go to the courte of the Catholyke princes Don Ferdinando and lady Isabell princes of Castile: affirmynge that they wolde bee ioyfull of such newes. And for his better furtherance herin, wrote letters by hym to fryer Ferdinando of Talauera the queenes confessor. Chrystopher Colon therefore, repayred to the court of the Catholyke princes, in the yere. M. CCCC. lxxxvi. [1486 A.D.] and delyuered vnto theyr handes the petition of his request as concerninge the discoueryng of the newe Indies. But they beinge more carefull, and applyng all theyr mynde howe they myght dryue the Moores owt of the kyngdome of Granada, which great enterpryse they had already taken in hande, dyd lyttle or nothyng esteeme the matter. But Colon not thus discouraged, found the meanes to declare his sute to such as had sumtymes priuate communication with the kynge. Yet bicause he was a stranger and went but in simple apparell, nor otherwyse credited then by the letter of a gray fryer, they beleued hym not, neyther gaue eare to his woordes: wherby he was greatly tormented in his imagination. Only Alonso of Quintanilia the kynges chiefe auditour gaue hym meate and drynke at his owne charges, and hard gladly such thynges as he declared of the landes not then founde: defyryng hym in the meane tyme to bee contente with that poore enterteynemente, and not to despayre of his enterpryse: puttyng hym also in good conforte that he shulde at one tyme or other, coome to the speache of the Catholyke princes. And thus shortly after by the meanes of Alonso of Quintanilia, Colon was brought to the prefence and audience of the Cardinall Don Pero Gonzales of Mendoza, archbyshop of Toledo, a man of great reuenues and autoritie with the kynge and queene, who brought hym before them after that he well perceaued and examyned his intent. And by this meanes was his sute harde of the Catholyke princes, who also redde the booke of his memorials which he presented vnto them. And although at the fyrst they tooke it for vayne and false that he promysed, neuerthelesse they put hym in good hope that he shulde bee well dispatched when they had fynyshed the warres of Granada which they had now in hand. With which answere, Colon beganne to reuyue his spirites, with hope to bee better esteemed and more fauourably to bee h[e]ard amonge the gentelmen and noble men of the court, who before tooke hym only for a craftie felowe and deceauer: and was nothyng dismayde or discouraged when so euer he debated the matter with them, althowghe many iudged hym phantasticall, as is the maner of ignorant menne to caule all such as attempte any thyng beyonde theyr reach and the compasse of theyr knowlege: thinkyng the worlde to bee no bigger then the cages wherin they are brought vp and lyue. But to returne to Colon: So hotte and vrgente was the siege of Granada, that they presently graunted hym his demaunde to seeke the newe landes, and to brynge from thense golde, syluer, perles, precious stones, spices, and suche other rych thynges. They gaue hym also the tenth parte of all the reuenues and customes dewe vnto the kynge of al such landes as he shulde discouer, not doynge preiudice in any thyng to the kynge of Portugale. The particulars of this agreement were made in the towne cauled Sancta Fe: and the priuilege of the rewarde, in Granada the. xxx. [thirtieth] daye of Aprell the same yere that the citie was woonne. And wheras the sayde Catholyke princes had not mony presently to dispatch Colon, Luys of S. Angell the kynges secretary of accomptes, lente theym fyxe quantes of marauedes, whiche in a grosse summe make. xvi. [sixteen] thousande ducades. Two thynges are herein chiefly to be noted: wherof the one is, that for so smaule charges they haue increased the reuenues of the crowne of Castyle as much as the Indies are in value. The other is, that endyng the conquest of the Moores who possessed the kyngdome of Granada eyght hundreth yeres, they immediatly beganne the conquest of the Indies, as though the nation of the Spanyardes were euer appoynted to feyght ageynst infidels and enemies of the sayth of Iesu Chryst.

Barnarde knewe
not all thynges.

The duke of
Medina Sidonia.
The duke of
Medina Celi.

314

The conquest
of Granada.

What men knowe
not they count
fantasticall.

Colon his
interteinente.

The archbyshop
of Toledo.
Colon is brought
to the kynges
prefence

The iudgement of
ignorant folkes.

Colon is
dispatched.

Colon his rewarde

One quent is. x
[ten] hundreth
thousande.

By this trauayle of Colonus in fo noble an enterpryse and fo harde successe, dooth the fayinge of Plinie appere to be moft trew, wher in the preface of his natural hystory wrytten to th[e]mprour Vespasian he writeth in this maner. *Res ardua vetustis nouitatem dare: Nouis, au[c]toritatem: absoletis, nitorem; obscuris, lucem: fastiditis, gratiam: dubiis, fidem: omnibus vero naturam, et naturæ sua omnia. Itaque etiam non affectis, voluisse abunde pulchrum atque magnificum est.* That is to fay: It is a dyfficulte thyng to gyue newenes to owlde thynges, autoritie to newe thynges: bewtie to thynges owt of vse: fame to the obscure: faouere to the hatefull: credite to the doubtfull: nature to all, and all to nature. To fuch neuertheleffe as can not attayne to all these, it is greatly commendable and magnificall to haue attempted the fame.

315

In the scu[t]chen of armes gyuen to Colon by Don Ferdinando and queene Elizabeth Catholike princes (fo cauled for theyr warres ageynst the infidels) these verses were wrytten.

*Por Castilla y por Leon,
Nueuo mundo hallo Colon.*

That is: For Castile and for Leon,
The newe worlde founde Colon.

¶ Of newe Spayne cauled Noua Hispania, or Mexico.



Ewe Spayne is that parte of the continent or firme lande that lyeth West and South frome the lande of Floryda. This was subdued to th[e]mperire of Castile by the ryght noble gentleman Ferdinando Cortese the marquesse of the vale of Quaxaca. In this lande are many prouinces conteynng in them in maner innumerable cities, amonge which that is the chiefe which the Indians caule Mexico or Temixitan, consyftyng of more then fye hundreth thousand inhabitautes. It standeth in the myddeft of a lake of falte water as doth Venecce in the sea. The lake conteyneth fortie Persian myles cauled Parafange, euery one consyftyng

of. xxx. [thirty] furlon[g]s, and more as fum fay. In these regions is founde great plentie of golde, fyluer, and precious stonnes, with innumerable other thynges both necessary for the lyfe of man and pleasaunt: as fylke, bombafine cotton, alame, Safferne, Woade, with dyuers other thynges wherwith clothe and fylke is dyed. There is also fuch abundaunce of fuger, that certeyne Spanyfhe shippes are yearely fraighted therewith and brynge the same into Siuile from whense it is caryed in maner to all partes of Chrystendome. Th[e] inhabitautes of Mexico are subtyle people, and vse much craft in theyr bargening. They haue not the vse of golde and fyluer monye: but vse in the steade therof the halfe shelles of almonds, whiche kynde of Barbarous money they caule Cacao or Cacanguate. In maner al kyndes of corne are there very good [and] cheape: especially barley and wheate. They haue great plentie of hartes, wylde bores, Lyons, Leoparδες, and Tygers, which beastes wander in maner in euery place. The region is moste commodious for haukyng and huntynge for the great abundaunce it hath of beastes and foules. But the people exercise all theyr cunnyng in makyng the images of theyr Idolatry, and in paintyng. Theyr woman are valiant: and sumptuous in theyr apparell and other tyrements. For they so rychely frynge and byfet the same with perles, precious stonnes, and golde, that nothyng can be more excellent. They haue a kynde of paper greatly differyng from owrs. In this they expresse theyr mindes by certeyn figures. For they haue not otherwife th[e] use of letters. The nation is desyrous of warre: and dooth not longe keepe the condicions of peace vniolated: But delyteth rather in ciuile and most cruell battayle amonge them felues then to lyue in peace and quietnesse. Suche as in the warres faule by any meanes into the handes of theyr enemies, eyther by submission or otherwyfe, are partely sacricied to the Idoles, and the resydue gyuen to the fouldiers to bee eaten, in lyke maner as wee rewarde dogges and haukes with parte of theyr pray. They haue innumerable Idoles which euery one maketh for his particular god after the phantafie of his own brayne, and gyueth therto diuine honour. Albeit at this day they doo by lytle and lytle leaue of theyr barbarous fiercenesse: and with owre religion embrase better maners. For they nowe professe the fayth of Chryst, and in his name pray vnto God the father.

Vnderstande here that as touchynge these regions cauled new Spayne, yow may reade at large in the booke here before entituled of the landes and Ilandes lately founde. This booke foloweth immediaty after the Decades, although the printer haue also wrytten the thyrde decade* ouer the head of that booke which intreateth principally of the regions nowe cauled newe Spayne. Of the conquest of this Mexico, Francisco Lopez hath written a large booke in the Spanyfhe tounge.

* See p. 187.—E. A.

The citie of Mexico or Temixitan.

Golde and syluer.
Sylke.
Cotton.
Alam.
Woade.
Sugar.

Shelles for money.

Corne.
Beastes.
Haukyng and huntynge.

Paintyng.

Women sumptuously appareled.

A warlike nation.

Captiues sacricied to Idoles.

¶ Of Peru.



The prouince cauled Peru, was also named noua Castilia by them that fyrste founde it. This region is the west parte of America: and is situate in the longitude of. 290. degrees, procedyng from the West to the East. And southwarde begynneth fiue degrees beyonde the Equinoctial line, and is extended very farre into the south. This is taken to bee the rycheft lande in golde, fyluer, perles, precious stoncs, and spyces, that euer was founde yet to this day. For golde is there in such plentie that they make pyfpots therof, and other vessels applyed to fylthy vses. But this is more to bee marueyled at, that in a cite cauled Collao was founde a house all couered with massie plates of golde. In theyr warres also theyr harnesse was of golde and fyluer. Theyr weapons are bowes, arrowes, flynges, dartes, and pikes. Th[e] inhabitants are warlyke people and of great agilitie. They haue cities defended with lawes and armes. The region is exceedyng frutesfull, and yeldeth corne twyse in the yeare. It is so florysshynge with many sayre wooddes, mountaynes, ryuers, and other both pleafaunt and necessary commodities, that it seemeth in maner an earthly Paradyse. It hath dyuers kyndes of beastes, and yet none hurtfull or of rauenyng kynde. There are sheepe of such heyght that they vse them in the sleade of horses. Some write that they are as bygge as the younge foles of camels: and that theyr woolle is very softe and fine. Also that the ewes bryng furth lambes twyse a yeare. The people are wytty and of gentyl behaouure. Cunnyng also in artes, faythful of promes, and of maners not greatly to bee discommended, faue that they are ignorant of Chryst: who neuerthelesse is nowe known vnto them in many places, as our hope is he shalbe dayly more and more if all princes wyll herein putte theyr helpynge handes to the plowe of owre lorde, and fende labourers into his vyneyarde.

¶ Of the great ryuer cauled Rio de la Plata (that is) the ryuer of fyluer.



His ryuer reacheth very farre in length and bredth: and is cauled Vruai in the Indian tounge. Into this fauleth an other ryuer named Parau. The fyrste that sayled into the ryuer of Plata, was Iohn Dias Solis, whom the ryght noble kyng of Spayne Ferdinandus made Admyral of these seas. In the ryuer lyeth an Ilande whiche Iohn Dias named Martinus Gratius bycause a pylot of his so cauled, was buryed there. This Ilande is situate in the myddeft of the ryuer: and is dystant from the mouth of the same abowt fortie leaques. As the sayde Admirall attempted to expugne the Iland, he was suddeynly oppressed and slayne of the Indians that priuile assayled hym. Wherwith neuerthelesse theyr barbarous crueltie was not satisfied vntyll they had torne him in piefes and deuoured hym. But many yeares after, Th[e]mperoures maiestie and kyng of Spayne Charles the fyfte, sente forth Sebastian Cabot (a man of great courage and skylfull in Cosmographie, and of no lesse experience as concernyng the starres and the sea) with commaundement to discouer and subdue the Ilandes of Tharsis, Ophir, Cipango, and Coi Cathay. Receauyng therefore his commissiion and procedyng forwarde on his vyage, he arryued by chaunce at this Ilande: The cause wherof was that the principall vessell was lost by shipwracke, and the men that saued theyr lyues by fwymmyng were receaued into other shyppes. Perceauyng therefore that by reason of this chaunce he could by no meanes performe his vyage attempted, he intended to expugne the sayde Ilande, and theruon to conueygh his vyttayles to land, to prepare his soldiars to th[e] inuasion, to plant colonyes, and to erect fortresses by the ryuers fyde wherby the Spanyardes myght bee defended from the violence of the barbarians. But before he attempted this, he was aduertised that the Ilande was riche in golde and fyluer. Which thyng dyd so encorage him, that without respect of perel he thought best to expugne it by one meanes or other, wherein his bouldenes tooke good effecte as often tymes chaunceth in great affayres. Furthermore as touchyng the ryuer, Sebastian Cabote made relation that he neuer sawe any comparable vnto this in bredth and depth. For whereas it fauleth into the sea, it conteyneth. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques in breadth. From the mouth of the ryuer, Cabot sayled vp the same into the lande for the space of three hundreth and fiftie leaques as he wryteth in his owne carde. That it is of great depth, may hereby bee considered that manye greate ryuers faule into it: so that the chanell can not bee shalowe that conteyneth such abundance of water, and suche plentie of good and great fyshes. For there is in maner no fyssh in the sea, that is not founde in this ryuer. As foone as the Spanyards were set alande, they made a prooffe if the foyle were frutesfull to beare corne. Takyng therefore fiftie graynes of wheate and commyttinge the same to the earth in the moneth of September, they gathered therof

316
Peru is the
rycheft lande
that is knowen.

A house couered
with gold.
Harnes of golde.
A frutful region.

Great sheepe.

The dewtie of
Chrystian princes

Parau.
Iohn Dias Solis.
The Ilande
Martinus Gratius.

The viage of
Sebastian Cabote
to the ryuer of
Plata.

Tharsis.
Ophir.
Cipango.
Cathay.

The ryuer of Plata.

317

Marvelous
fruitfulness.
Mountaynes
conteynyng golde
and syluer.

Great sheepe.

Theyr colour.

Men with
deformed legs.

two thousande and fiftie at December nexte folowyng: wherin fume beinge deceaued and mistakynge the thyng, haue wrytten in the steade of two thousande and fiftie, fyftie thousande and two. The like fertilitie is there of all other grayne and pulse. Furthermore th[e]inhabitautes declared that not farre from that place, ther are great and hygh mountaynes in the which is founde great plentie of golde. And no great distance from the same, to bee other mountaynes no lesse frutefull of fyluer, and many other thynges longe to rehearse. Th[e]inhabitautes are paynefull men, and tyll the grounde diligently, wherin they take great pleasure: and haue therfore great plentie of breade of Maizium. There are sheepe of fuche byggenesse that they compare them to younge camels or asses as fum fay. Theyr woolle is very fine: and nearest vnto the fynesse of fylke. There are also beastes of dyuers kyndes. Amonge men there is this dyfference, that such as lyue in the mountaynes, are whyte, and for the most parte lyke vnto the men of owre regions. But they that dwell about the ryuer (as though they tooke theyr coloure therof) are blackyshe or purple of the coloure of fine Iren or fleele. This also chaunceth to many of them, that theyr fiete and legges are lyke the legs and fiete of the foule cauled the oystreche.

¶ Of the hygher East India cauled India Tercera or Terciera.



IN this India whiche the Portugales caule Tercera, are very great kyngdomes: as the kyngdomes of Bengala, Pegu, Berma, Erancangui, Daufian, Capelam, and the greate kyngdome of Malacha, cauled of the owlde wryters Aurea Cherfonesus: whose chiefe cite is also cauled Malacha, and was in owlde tyme named Tachola. Vnder this kyngdome are infinite Ilandes cauled Maluche, whereof the principall are these: Iaua the greater, Iaua the lesse, Polagua, Mendana, Cubu, Cailon, Huban, Bur, Tenado, Anbon, and Gilolo, with infinite other. On the Southwest parte from Malacha, is the great Ilande of Samotra cauled in owlde tyme Taprobana, in the which are the kyngdomes of Pedir, Biraen, Pazer, Ardagni, and Ham. This Iland and all the other cauled Maluche, bryngge furth great quantitie of cloues, cinamome, nuttemegges, maces, and all other kyndes of spycs excepte pepper, which groweth in the prouince of Calcut and the Ilande of Ceilam. All these fortes of spices are caryed to Malacha to bee sould. But the greatest parte of them is caryed to Cathay and China: and from thense to the north partes of Tartarie. This kyngdome of China, is very great: and was in owlde tyme cauled Sina. Here is founde great plentie of precious stones. The people are very subtile and ryche. They are all appareled eyther in fylke or cloth, or vestures of other woorkemanshippe: and are of good ciuilitie. They do not gladly permitte the Portugales or other straungers to trafike in theyr kyngdome: whose moste famous place vppon the sea fyde, is named Cautan, and the sea Machiam, cauled of the owlde wryters the sea of Sina.

Malacha.

Tachola.

The Ilandes of
Malucha.

The Iland of
Samotra.

Spycs.

Calocut.

Ceilam.

Cathay.

China.

Precious stones.

Sylke.

Cautan.

¶ Of the landes of Laborador and Baccalaos, lyinge west and northwest from Englande, and beinge parte of the firme lande of the West Indies.



Any haue trauallyed to searcho the coast of the lande of Laborador, aswell to th[e]intente to knowe howe farre or whyther it reachethe, as also whether there bee any passage by sea through the same into the sea of Sur and the Ilandes of Maluca which are vnder the Equinoctiall line: thinkynge that the way thyther shulde greatly bee shortened by this vyage. The Spanyardes as to whose ryght the fayde Ilandes of spices perteyne, dyd fyrst seeke to fynde the same by this way. The Portugales also hauynge the trade of spices in theyr handes, dyd trauallye to fynde the same: although hetherto neyther anye such passage is founde or the ende of that lande. In the yere a thousande and fye hundreth, Gasper Cortesreales, made a vyage thyther with two carauelles: but founde not the freyght or passage he sought. At his beinge there, he named the Ilandes that lye in the mouth of the goulfe Quadrado, after his name Cortesreales, lyinge in the L. [fifty] degrees and more: and brought from that lande about three score men for slaues. He greatly maruayled to beholde the hougge quantitie of snowe and Ise. For the sea is there frofen excedyngly. Th[e]inhabitautes are men of good corporature, although tawny lyke the Indies, and laborious. They paynte theyr bodyes, and weare brafeettes and hoopes of fyluer and copper. Theyr apparel is made of the skynnes of marternes and

The way to the
Ilandes of Maluca
by the north sea.

The Spanyardes.

Gasper
Cortesreales.

318

Insule
Cortesreales.

Snowe and Ise.

Furres.

dyuers other beastes, whiche they weare with the heare inwarde in wynter, and owtwarde in foommer. This apparell they gyrde to theyr bodyes with gyrdels made of cotton or the fynewes of fyffhes and beastes. They eate fyfsh more then any other thyng, and especially falmors, although they haue foules and frute. They make theyr houfes of timber wherof they haue great plentie: and in the steade of tyles, couer them with the skynnes of fyffhes and beastes. It is fayde also that there are grifes in this lande: and that the beares and many other beastes and foules are white. To this and the Ilandes about the fame, the Britons are accustomed to reforte: as men of nature agreable vnto them and borne vnder the fame altitude and temperature. The Norways also fayled thither with the pylot cauled Iohn Scoluo: And the Englyfhe men with Sebastian Cabot.

The coaste of the lande of Baccalaos, is a greate tracte: and the greatest altitude therof, is. xlviij. [forty-eight] degrees and a halfe. Sebastian Cabot was the fyrst that browght any knowleage of this lande. For beinge in Englande in the dayes of kyng Henry the feuenth, he furnysshed twoo shippes at his owne charges or (as sum say) at the kynges, whome he perswaded that a passage might bee founde to Cathay by the north seas, and that spices myght bee brought from thense foner by that way, then by the vyage the Portugales vse by the sea of Sur. He went also to knowe what maner of landes those Indies were to inhabite. He had with hym three hundreth men, and directed his course by the tracte of Islande vpon the cape of Laborador at. lviij. [fifty-eight] degrees: affirmynge that in the monethe of Iuly there was such could and heapes of Ice that he durst passe no further: also that the dayes were very longe and in maner without nyght, and the nyghtes very cleare. Certeyne it is, that at the. lx. [sixty] degrees, the longest day is of. xviii. [eighteen] houres. But confydeynge the coulde and the straungenes of the vnknown lande, he turned his course from thense to the West, folowynge the coast of the lande of Baccalaos vnto the. xxxviii. [thirty-eight] degrees, from whense he returned to Englande. To conclude, the Brytons and Danes haue fayled to the Baccalaos: and Iaques Cartier a frenche man was there twyfe with three galeons: as one in the year. xxxiii. [thirty-four] and the other in the. xxxv. [thirty-five] and chose the lande to inhabite frome the. xlv. [forty-fifth] degrees to the. li. [fifty-first] beinge as good a lande as Fraunce, and al thynges therein commune to such as fyrst possesse the fame.

Of these lands, Iacobus Gafaldus wryteth thus: The newe lande of Baccalaos, is a coulde region, whose inhabytauntes are Idolatours and praye to the foonne and moone and dyuers Idoles. They are whyte people and very rustical. For they eate flesshe and fyfsh and all other thynges rawe. Sumtymes also they eate mans flesshe priuilye so that theyr Caciqui haue no knowleage therof. The apparell of both the men and woman, is made of beares skynnes, although they haue fables and marternes, not greatly esteemed bycause they are lyttle. Sum of them go naked in foommer, and weare apparell only in wynter. The Brytons and Frenche men are accustomed to take fyfsh in the coaste of these landes where is founde great plentie of Tunnyes which th[e]inhabitauntes caul Baccalaos wherof the lande was so named. Northwarde from the region of Baccalaos, is the lande of Laborador, all full of mountaynes and great wooddes in whiche are many beares and wyld bores. Th[e]inhabitauntes are Idolatours and warlike people, appareled as are they of Baccalaos. In all this newe lande, is neyther cite or castell: but they lyue in companies lyke hearde of beastes.

¶ *The discouerynge of the lande of Floryda.*



He gouernour of the Ilande of Boriqena Iohn Ponce of Leon beinge discharged of his office and very ryche, furnysshed and sente fourth two caruels to seeke the Ilandes of Boyuca in the which the Indians affirmed to be a fontayne or springe whose water is of vertue to make owld men younge. Whyle he trauayled fyxe monethes with owtrageous desyre amonge many Ilandes to fynde that he sought, and coulde fynde no token of any such fontayne, he entered into Bimini and discouered the lande of Florida in the year. 1512. on Easter day which the Spanyardes caule the floryfshyng day of Pascha, wherby they named that lande Florida. And supposyng that great ryches myght be brought from thense, he returned into Spayne and counaunted with kyng Ferdinando as touchynge the trade: and by the intercession of Nicolas de Quando and Peter Nunez de Gufman, the kyng dyd not onely make hym gouernoure of Bemini and Florida, but also sente furthe with hym three shippes from Siuile toward his second vyage in the year. 1515. He touched in the Ilande of Guacana otherwyfe cauled Guadalupe, and sent to lande certeyne of his men with the landresses of the shippes: whom the Canibales lyinge in ambuffhe, assayed with theyr inuenemed arrowes: and slaying the most parte, caryed away the women. With this euyll begynnyng, Iohn Ponce departed frome hense to Boriqen and from thense to Florida wher he went alande with his fouldyers to espie a place moste commodious to inhabite and plant a colonie. But the Indians commynge furth ageynst hym to defende the enterance,

Fyshe.

Gryfes.
Beares.
The britons.

Sebastian Cabot.

The land of Baccalaos.
The vyage of Cabot in the dayes of kyng Henry the seuenth.

Ise in Iuly.

Bacallaos.
Brytons.
Danes.
Iaques Cartyer.

The people of Bacallaos

Fysshyng for tunnyes.
Laborador.

Iohn Ponce.
Water of great vertue, of this reade in the Decades.

319

Bemmini.

Guacana.
The Canibales.

Boriqena.

The death of
Iohn Ponce.

The land of
Floryda.

Ferdinando de
Soto.

The valient
myndes of the
Spanyardes.
The thyrd
attempte of the
conqueste of
Florida.

Certeine fryers
attempte the
conquest onely
with woordes,
but with enyll
successe.

The fryers are
slayne and eaten.

A new kynde of
disgrading

assayled the Spanyardes fiercely and flewe and wounded many of them. At which conflicte also he hym selfe beinge wounded with an arrowe, dyed shortly after in the Ilande of Cuba: and so endynge his lyfe, consumed a great parte of the rycheffe he had before begotten at faynt Iohannes of Boriquen. This Iohn Ponce had before fayled with Chrystopher Colon to the Ilande of Hispaniola in the yere. 1493. He was a gentel fouldier in the warres of this Ilande, and capitayne of the prouince of Higuel for Nycolas de Ouando that conquested the fame. The region of Floryda is a poynt or cape of lande reachynge into the sea lyke vnto a tounge: beinge a famous and notorious place amonge the Indians by reason of many Spanyardes that haue bin slayne there. But wheras by fame this Floryda was esteemed a ryche lande, many valient and noble men desyred the conquest therof, amonge whom Ferdinando de Soto (who had before byn a capitayne in Peru and greatly inryched by th[e] imprisonment of kyng Atahaliba) attempted a vyage thither with a good bande of men, and spent fyue yere in seekyng of golde mynes, supposynge that this lande hadde byn lyke vnto Peru.

In fine, he dyed there and was the destruction and vndoinge of all that went with hym without inhabityng that lande, in the which the conquestours had hitherto neuer good successe, forasmuche as these Indians are valiant archers and stronge and hardy men. But the valiant myndes of the Spanyardes not discouraged by these myfauentures, after the death of Ferdinando Soto, many woorthy gentelmen desyred this conquest in the yere. 1544. amonge whom was Iulyan Samano, and Peter de Ahumada beinge brotherne and men of sufficient abilitie for such an enterprife. But neyther th[e] emprour beinge then in Germanie, neyther the prince Don Phylippe his sonne who gouerned all the kyngedomes of Castile and Aragonie, neyther yet the counsaile of the Indies wolde in any case agree to the conqueste. Neuerthelesse not vtterly contemnyng the matter which they were partly persuaded myght otherwyse bee brought to passe, they sent thither fryer Luys Cancell of Baluaastro with other fryers of the order of faynt Dominike who offered them selues to conuerte the nations of that lande from theyr gentilitie to the fayth of Chryst and obedience to Th[e]mperoure, onely with woordes. The fryer therfore goinge forwarde on his vyage at the kynges charges in the yere. 1549. went aland with foure other fryers which he tooke with hym and certeyne maryners without harnesse or weapons: vnto whom as he began his preachynge, many of the Indians of the fayd Florida reforted to the sea fyde, where without gyyng audience to his woordes, they caryed hym away with three other of his companyons and dyd eat them, whereby they suffered martyrdome for the fayth of Chryst. The refydue that escaped, made hast to the shyppe and kept them selues for confessours as sum say. Many that fauoure th[e] intente of the fryers, doo nowe confyder that by that meanes the Indians coulde not be brought to owre frendshipp and religion. Neuerthelesse, that if it coulde so haue byn brought to passe, it had byn better. There came of late from that shippe, one that had byn the page of Ferdinando de Soto, who declared that the Indians hanged vp the skynnes with the heades and crownes of the fayd fryers in one of theyr temples.

320

☉ *An opinion that Europa, Africa, and Asia, are Ilandes: and of certeyne nauigations about the same.*



He anciente wryters diuided this owre worlde into Asia, Africa, and Europa, by the ryuer Tanais as Isocrates declareth in his Panegyrico. Afterwarde they diuided Asia and Africa by the turnynges and course of the ryuer Nilus, thowghe the same had byn better by the sea Bermeio (that is) the redde sea, which almoste trauerfeth and passeth through the lande from the Ocean to the sea Mediterraneum which diuideth Europa and Asia. But Berofus the Caldean, sayth that Noe gaue names to Africa, Asia, and Europa: and gaue them to his sonnes, Cham, Sem, and Iafet: also that he fayled by the sea Mediterraneum ten yeres. In

fine we nowe conclude that the three sayde prouinces occupy this mydlande of the worlde. All in generall say that Asia is greater then any of the other, and in maner as bygge as they both. Albeit Herodotus in his Melpomeme, scorneth them that make Europe and Asia equall: affirmyng that Europe in longitude is equal to Asia and Afrike: and that it passeth them in latitude, wherein he speaketh not greatly owt of square. But to speake more of this elfwhere, not perteynyng to the matter wee haue in hande, I say that Homerus one of the most ancient wryters, sayth that the world which is diuided into Asia, Africa, and Europa, is an Ilande as reherfeth Pomponius Mela in his thyrd booke. Strabo in the fyrst boke of his Geographie, sayth that the earth which is inhabited, is an Ilande enuironed with the Ocean. Higinius also, and Solinus, confirme this sentence, Althowghe Solinus doo erre in mistakinge the names of the seas, supposynge that the Caspian sea was parte of the Ocean, beinge rather lyke vnto the sea Mediterraneum so named bycause it is in the mydlande as is the Caspian sea without participacion of the great Ocean. Strabo wryteth that in the tyme of Tolomeus Energetes, one Eudoxus fayled three or foure tymes from Caliz to India: And that the guides of the redde

Noe gaue names
to Africa, Asia,
and Europa.

Asia.

Europe.

The hole earth
is an Ilande.

The Caspian sea.
Caliz is a ryuer.
Nauigations from
the red sea to
East India.

fea (cauled the goulfe of Arabie or Bermeio) presented to the fame kynge Tolomeus, an Indian whome he brought frome thense. Kynge Iuba also prooued this nauigation from Caliz to India as wryteth Solinus. Whereby it appeareth that the nauigation to India by the Ocean was then wel knowen and frequented, although not so much as at this present, the fame beinge neyther then or nowe a thyng of great difficultie or trauallye by the coastes of hotte regions. But to fayle from India to Caliz by the other parte of the north by a clyme and regions of extreme coulde, shulde bee doubtlesse a difficult and daungerous thyng, wherof is no memory amonge the owlde autours sauynge onely of one shypp as Plinie and Mela doo wryte, reherfyng the testimony of Cornelius Nepos who affirmed that the kynge of Sueuia presented to Quintus Metellus Celer Lieutenant of Fraunce, certeyne Indians dryuen by tempest into the fea of Germanie: if the fame were not of the lande of Laborador or Bacallaos, and they deceaued in theyr coloure. For sum fay that lykewyfe in the dayes of the Emperoure Fredericus Barbarossa, certeyne Indians were brought in a Canoa from the citie of Lubec in Germanie. Furthermore pope Eneas Syluius wryteth that the Sarmation fea, is as certeyne as the Scythian, Germanian, or Indian fea. Nowe also there is great knowlege and experience how the nauigations and passage may be attempted by Norwaye and other north regions vnder the fame north, and to folow that coaste to the fouth fea of Sur and keepe that course by the tracte of China. Olanus Gothus the archbyshop of Upsalia and borne in Gothlande, hath wrytten muche of these north regions and nauigations by the north fea. In the tract of this vyage by the north fea, are the Ilandes of Ilande and Gruntlande, although there is doubt whether Gruntlande be an Ilande or parte of the firme lande. It is xl. [forty] leaques, from Lapponia, and sumwhat more frome Finmarchia a lande of Scandinauia in Europe. The people of Gruntland are stronge men and of coomly stature. They fayle with smaul shippes or barkes couered clofe aboue with lether or beastes hydes for feare of the coulde and fysshes. Gruntlande as sum fay, is fyftie leaques from the north parte of the firme lande of the West Indies by the lande of Laborador. But it is not yet knowen whether this land be continent or adherent with Gruntlande, or if there bee any streyght of fea betwene them. If all bee one firme lande adioynynge by any parte, then the two great partes of the world feeme to ioyn together about the north pole or vnder it, or beneth it, forasmuch as it is not past fortie or fiftie leaques from Finmarche to Gruntland: wherby it may appere that although there be any such straight diuidynge them, yet are they neyghbours and not farre in funder. Furthermore from the land of Laborador by th[e] accompt of the pilottes, is abowte foure hundreth leaques to Faial, one of the Ilandes of Azores, otherwyfe cauled the Ilandes of Soria lyinge in the West Ocean ouer ageynst Spayne. Also by their accompte the lande of Laborador is abowte fise hundreth leaques from Irland, and fixe hundreth from Spayne.

The vyage to India by the north seas.

The bystorie of Cornelius Nepos.

Note this.

Indians in Lubec

The Sarmatian sea.

Ilande.
Guntlande.
Lapponia.
Finmarchia.
Gruntlande.

The distance from Gruntlande to the lande of Laborador.

321

[Narrowness] of the straight if it be.

The Ilandes of Soria, or Azores. From laborador to Irland.

That the Spanyardes haue sayled to the Antipodes (that is) suche as go fiere to fiere ageynst vs, and inhabite the inferiour hemispherie or halfe globe of the earthe, contrarie to th[e] opinion of the owlde writers.



AL the ancient philofophers of the gentiles do deny that there may be any passage from owre hemisphere or halfe compasse of the earth to the Antipodes by reason of the burnt line (cauled *Zona Torrida*) and the Ocean fea lyinge in the mydde way, wherby this vyage shulde be hyndered and impossible, as Macrobius wryteth at large in his commentaries vpon the dreame of Scipio. Of the Chrystyan phylofophers, Clemente wryteth that it is not possible for any man to passe the Ocean; and other wryters of later tyme, feeme to confirme the fame. In deede I verely beleue that this way was neuer knowen to them, aswell for that euer presuppofynge the thyng to bee impossible they neuer attempted it, as also that the Indians (whom we caule Antipodes) haue no shippes sufficient for so longe and difficulte a nauigation to bryng them knowlege herof, as haue the Spaniardes to passe the Ocean vnto them: In so much that at this present this vyage is by dayly experience so well knowen vnto the Spanyardes and Portugales, that they can in maner go thither blynd-fielde, contrarie to th[e] opinion of those phylofophers. I wyll here omytte to speake of many shippes that haue sayled ordynaryly frome Spayne to India, and speake onely of the shypp Victoria which compassed about the hole globe of the worlde and touched in the landes of two or three Antipodes, and in fine returned to Spayne by a contrary way, wherby is declared the ignorance of the sage antiquitie. In this nauigation, they founde many fecreates, amonge the which this is strange and woorthy memorie, that al such deade Christians as were cast into the fea, lay on their backes and turned their faces vpwarde: but the gentyles lay all groouely

Macrobius.
Clement.

The Indians are Antipodes.

The shypp Victoria.

A straunge thinge.

Shadowes
toward the south.

The sonne rysynge
on the ryght hande.

The vyage of
Magellanus.

Antipodes.
Guinea.
The north starre.
The needle and
compasse.

322

Septentriones, are
the vii. starres,
that are sene by
Charles wayne or
the great beare.
Argo of Iason.

Vlysses.
Iohn Sebastian.

on theyr bellyes. They also perceaued the soonne and moone to keepe a contrary course from that they doo here, and euer to cast the shadowes of all thynges toward the south: whiche thyng also was knowen to sum of the owlde wryters. For this is manifeste that the sonne ryseth on the ryght hande to theym that lyue in the thyrtye degrees on th[e] other syde the Equinoctiall: so that lookynge toward the sonne, they turne theyr faces to the north: wherby it appeareth to bee trew that they affirme. They consumed three yeares lackynge. xiiii. [fourteen] dayes in goynge and comynge, and loste a daye in theyr accompte, whereby they dyd eate fleshe on frydayes, and celebrated the feaste of Easter on Mundayes: so that they ouerleaped a day (not faylynge in the calender) and kept no iust rekenynge of the bifextile. The cause wherof whyle some haue searched by phylosophie, they haue erred more then the maryners. They sayed. x. [ten] thousande leaques and. xiiii. [fourteen] myles by theyr accompte, albeit they shulde haue gonne lesse, if theyr way hadde line ryght forth. But as they were enforced partely of necessitie, and partely to fynde that they fowght, they made many wyndynges and turnynges. They trauerfed the Equinoctiall line syxe tymes without burnynge, contrary to th[e] opinion of the owlde autours. They remayned syue monethes in the Iland of Tidore, whose inhabitants are Antipodes to theym of Guinea, wherby it is apparente that wee maye communicate with them. And although they lost the fyght of the northe starre, yet dyd they euer directe theyr course therby. For beinge in the. xl. [forty] degrees of the south, they sawe the needle of the compasse stande as directly toward the north as it dooth in the sea Mediterraneum: although sum say that it loofeth his force sumwhat. About the poynt of the Southe or pole Antartike, they sawe a lyttle whyte cloude and foure starres lyke vnto a crosse with three other ioynynge therunto, which refemble owre Septentrion, and are iudged to bee the signes or tokens of the south exltre of heauen. Great was the nauigation of the flete of Salamon, but greater was this of Th[e]mproours maiestie Don Charles kynge of Spayne. The Argos of Iason whiche the antiquite placed amonge the starres, sayed but a lyttle way and a shorte vyage in comparason of the shippe Victoria whiche owght woorthely to bee kepte in the Arsenall of Siuile in perpetuall memory of so famous an enterpryse. The daungours, paynes, trauayles and laboures of Vlysses were nothyng in respecte of fuche as Iohn Sebastian susteyned: whereby in the scu[t]chion of his armes in the stead of a monstros or inuincible beaft, he woorthely gaue the worlde with this circumscription: PRIMVS CIRCVMDEDISTI ME. (that is) Thou art the fyrst that hath compassed me about.

As touchynge the needle of the compasse, I haue redde in the Portugales nauigations that faylynge as farre south as Cap. de Bona Speranza, the poynt of the needle styll respected the northe as it dyd on this syde the Equinoctiall, sayynge that it sumwhat trembled and declyned a lyttle, wherby the force seemed sumwhat to be diminished, so that they were fayne to helpe it with the lode stone.

¶ Who fyrst founde the needle of the compasse, and the vse therof.



Peakyng much of nauigations. it myght seme a thyng vndecent to omyt to say sumwhat of the needle of the compasse: without the which as all nauigations are but blynde and wanderyng coniectures, euen so shulde the Indies neuer haue bynne founde but by helpe of the same, forasmuche as the shippes shulde haue byn lost in the Ocean, were it not that theyr courses were directed by the needle and compasse, which owght therefore to be compted the chiefe partes of the shyppe and principall instrumentes of faylynge. The fyrst that founde the needle and the vse therof (as Blondus and Mapheus Girardus doo wryte) was one Flaius of Malpha a cite in the kyngdome of Naples, of whome the Neopolitans glory to this day: and that by good reason, forasmuch as a citisen and neyghbours chylde of theirs, was the fyrst fynder of so commodious and profytable a thyng, to the secrete wherof so many excellent wyttes as were before hym coude not attayne, although they hadde both iren and the lode stone (cauled *Magnes*) whiche are the materials of the needle. Next vnto Flaius, the chiefe commendation is dew to the Spanyardes and Portugales by whose daylye experience, the fame is brought to further perfection, and the vse therof better knowen: although hytherto no man knoweth the cause why the iren touched with the lode stone, turneth euer toward the north starre, as playnely appeareth in euery common dyall. In maner all wryters attribute this to a secrete and hyd propertie, sum of the north, and other of the mixture or naturall temperature of elementes that is betwene iren and the fayde stone. If bee the propertie of the north or north starre, then (as the pylots make theyr rekenynge) neyther shulde the needle make anye change or dyffer in northeystinge, (as in faylynge northeaste without the Ilande of Tercera beinge one of the Ilandes of Azores or Soria and two hundreth leaques from Spayne toward the West East-west) neyther yet shulde it lose his office (as sayth Olanus) in passynge from the Ilande of Magnete, that is, the Iland of the lode stone, which is vnder or neare abowte the northe pole. But howe so euer it bee, or what so euer bee the cause, trewth it is that the nedle turneth euer to the north although wee sayle about the south.

The chiefest partes
of the shyppe.

Magnes.

The Spanyardes
and Portugales.
Why the needle
turneth to the
north.

The Iland of
Tercera.

The Iland of
Magnete.

We owght therefore to vnderstande that the lode stone (whiche wee falsely caule the adamant) hath heade, fiete, and also armes as sum fay. The iren that is rubbed with the heade, neuer ceafeth to turne dyrectly towarde the north, as is to see in the dyals that are made to the foonne. The rubbyng of the fiete ferueth for the south: as doo lykewyfe the other partes, for other quarters and poyntes of heauen.

Note the quarters of the lode stone.

Note here that yf a piece of this stone, of the byggenesse of an egge or a walnutte, or more or lesse, bee broken into manye smaule pieces as bygge as dyce or lesse, yet euery of thofe smaule piefes, hath headde, foote, and armes, as is sayde here before.

¶ *The Situacion and byggenes of the earth.*

323



It may to fume seeme a vaine thyng to seke the situacion and byggenes of the earth, although it bee easy to knowe, forasmuche as it is situate in the myddeste of the worlde as the center of the fame, beinge enuironed and as it were borne vp of the sea which compasseth it about. Mela fayth that the pyllers that susteyne it, are Easte, West, North, and South: which sayyng Dauyd confirmeth in the C. vi. [106th] psalme. These foure are the most notable pyllers or sustentacions that the earth hath in heauen, accordyng to the motions wherof, all vyages are ruled on the earthe, frome whense they haue theyr originall, as engendered of the dyuers qualities of vapoures and exhalations rayfed by the sonne and otherwyfe. Eratosthenes put none other sustentacions then the north and south poles, and parteth the earth by the course of the foonne: which particion Marcus Varro dooth greatly commende as agreeable to reason. The poles are firme and immouable as an exeltre about the which the heauen moueth and is therby susteyned. They furthermore declare vnto vs vnder what parte of heauen wee bee, howe farre, and which way wee go, with also the largenes of heauen and commensuration of the earth. As for exemple: the streyght of Gibraltar, (accomptyng from Spayne) is from the north, or to speake more playnely from the poynte of the earthe that is or may be directly vnder the north pole, about. liiii. [fifty-four] degrees which make. ix. hundreth and. lxxx. [980] leaques according to the common computacion of the Cosmographers and Astronomers: And is from the Equinoctiall line. xxxvi. [thirty-six] degrees: which added to the other. liiii. [fifty-four] make. [1x]xxx. [ninety] degrees, beinge the hole distance from the north poynte to the Equinoctiall line diuylng the earthe by the myddeste, and the quarter or fourthe parte of the hole circumference of the earth: the whiche how great it is in compasse and how many leaques or myles it conteyneth, is easy to perceauie accomptyng euery degree. lx. [sixty] myles. But that yowe may the better perceauie what degrees are, I haue thought good to speake sumwhat more hereof.

The sea.
The wyndes

The poles.

The measuryng the circumference of the earth

¶ *What degrees are.*



In the owlde tyme theyr maner was to measure the earth and the woorld by furlonges, pases, and fiete, as is to reade in Plinie, Strabo, and other wryters. But after that Ptolome founde degrees a hundreth and fiftie yeares after the death of Chryst, that maner of accompte was receaued as the best. Ptolomie diuided all the hole body and face of the land and fea into three hundreth and sixtie degrees of length or longitude: and other as many degrees of bredth or latitude: so that the hole globe of the baule beinge rounde, conteyneth as much in latitude as longitude. He assigned lykewyfe to euery degree three score myles, whiche make. xvii. [seuenteen] Spanysshe leaques and a halfe: In such sorte that the globe or baule of the earth measured directly by any of the foure partes of the fame, conteyneth in circuite fyxe thousand and two hundreth leaques. This computacion and measuryng, is so certeyne, that as it is approued of all men and founde trewe by experience, so much the more is it to bee commended and had in admiration for that th[e] inuention hereof was iudged so dyfficult by Iob and the preacher, that no man had founde the measure of limites of the same. They name those degrees of longitude, that they accompte from foonne to foonne by the Equinoctiall line which reacheth from the East to the Weste by the myddle of the globe or baule of the earth. These can not well be obserued, forasmuch as in this tract of heauen, there is no fyxt or permanent signe whereunto the pylots maye directe theyr eyes or instrumentes. For the foonne, althowghe it be a moste clare signe, yet doothe it dayely change the place of ryfyng and faulyng, and keepethe not the same course the day folowyng as the Astronomers affirme. And althowgh there is no number of them that in trauiaylyng strange landes and seas haue spent theyr gooddes and almoste theyr wyttes to fynde the degrees of longitude without error as are founde the degrees of latitude and heygth, yet is there none that hytherto hath any trewe knowleage therof. The degrees of latitude or altitude, are they that are accompted from the north pointe to the south, the commensuration or measuring

Ptolome founde degrees.

Longitude and Latitude.

A degree.

Degrees of Longitude.
The degrees of Longitude are not knowen.

The degrees of latitude.

324

The north starre.

The circuite of
the earth.The inferior
hemispherie.Hyperborci.
Hypernocii.

wherby, is most certeine by reason that the north starre is perman[nt] and remayneth styll in one place, or at least moueth about the pole which is theyr firme and stedfast signe wherby they accompte theyr degrees and directe theyr vyages. By the degrees therefore accompted by these most certeine signes, is vnfailably measured the hole circumference of the lande and sea, diuidyng the same into soure equall partes in this maner. From the north poynte to the Equinoctiall, are. lxxx. [ninety] degrees: and from the Equinoctiall to the south poynt, other. lxxx. [ninety.] Ageyne on the contrary side, from the south poynt to the Equinoctiall, are other. lxxx. [ninety] degrees: and from the Equinoctiall ageyne to the north poynte, are as many. This may we coniecture by good reason aswell of th[e]inferioure hemispherie wherof a great parte is knowen vnto vs by the nauigations of such as haue passed the streyghets of Magellanus and the cape of Bona Speranza, althowgh we haue noo such cleare and manifest relation as we ought to haue of the lande vnder the southe pole beinge the other exltree of the worlde whose syght we lacke. For (as Herodotus sayth) yf there bee any lande of the Hyperboreans (that is fuche as are vnder the north) ther is also of the hypernotios, that is such as are vnder the south: which perhaps are they that lyue in the lande of the streyghets of Magellanus as nere vnto the other pole. But what these landes are, or of what greatnes we can haue no certeyne knowlege vntyl sum man shal haue compassed about the lands vnder the south pole as did Iohn Sebastian the circumference of the Equinoctiall line.

These last annotacions of the Indies, haue I translated owt of the bookes of Franciscus Lopes, wrytten in the Spanysshe tounge to Th[e]emperours maiestie: and partly also owt of the carde made by Sebastian Cabot.

¶ A demonstration of the roundenesse of the Earth.



Any ignorant men thynke that the earthe is not rounde onely by iudgemente of the eye which is deceaued in manye thynges not only of the workes of nature, but also of fuche as are doonne by the flight and arte of man. For they say: Howe can it bee rounde forasmuche as thowgh a man trauayle neuer so farre eyther by land or sea, he seemeth euer to passe as it were by a ryght line without any such circuite or compassynge, ascendynge or discendynge, as perteyneth to all the partes of a rounde forme. The which obiection, as it is grofe and simple, procedyng of the narownesse of the vnderstandyng of such as can not conceaue the large circumference of the lande and sea, euen so may it be answered with this simple demonstration. In a ryng that serueth for the fynger of a mans hande, the space of halfe an ynche or lyttle more, is halfe a cyrcle. But in a ryng or cyrcle of bygger circumference, as in the hoope of a tubbe, halfe an ynche appeareth in maner a ryght line, althowghe it bee not so in deede, forasmuch as it is not possible for any parte of a circle to consist of a ryght line, neyther any parte of a line to confyst of a cyrcle, sith the partes must needes bee conformable to the hole, confystynge of such vniforme partes as are in mathematical. But not to wander to farre in these subtylties, the greater that yow can imagen the circle to bee, so shall a greater parte therof seeme a ryght line or playne forme: As for exemple, imaginyng a circle whose diameter (that is measure from syde to syde) confysteth of a myle: in this circle a pole length or more, may seeme a ryght line, as yowe may otherwyse multiply of the like infinitely: wherby it shal appere that the large circumference of the earth well confydered, a much greater parte of the circle therof then the eye of man conceaueth, may seeme to bee a ryght line, and he contynually to walke vppon a playne forme forasmuch as euery part of a circle is lyke vnto other as I haue sayde. This may suffice for a simple and briefe demonstration and induction for fuche as are desyrous to seeke furth to knowe the truth herof.

The eye is
deceaued.

A ryng.

A circle.

¶ *What credit ought to bee gyuen to wryters as touchynge the woorkes of nature.*



He moſte auncient wryter Diodorus, Siculus, in the fourth booke of his Bibliotheca, wryteth in this maner. If any man for the maruelous ſtraungenes and noueltie of ſuche thynges as are deſcrybed in owre bookes, wyl not perhappes gyue credyt to owre hyltorie, let hym with ryght iudgement conſider the difference that is betwene the ayer of the Scythians and the Troglodytes compared to owres, and he ſhall the eaſelyer perceauē the woorkes of nature and approue owre wrytynges. For owre ayer dyffereth ſo much from theirs, that it myght ſeeme incredible if experience were not more certeyne then doubtfull reaſon. In ſume regions

the coulde is ſo extreme that greate ryuers are ſo froſen, that laden cartes and armies of men paſſe ouer the immouable iſe. Wine alſo and other moiſt thynges are ſo conieled that they may bee cutte with knyues. But this is more marueylous, that th[e]xtreeme partes of ſuche apparell as menne weare, are ſo bytten with coulde that they faule of. Mens eyes are alſo dymmed: the fyre gyueth not his natural bryghtneſſe: and braſen veſſelles and images are broken. Sumtime by reaſon of thicke cloudes, thunders and lyghtnynges are neyther ſeene or harde in ſuch regions. Many other thynges more marueylous then theſe hath nature wrought, which may ſeeme incredible to the ignorant: but eaſy to ſuch as haue experience. In the furtheſt partes of Egypt and Trogloditica, the heate of the ſonne is ſo extreme abowt noone, that noo man can ſe hym that ſtandeth by hym, by reaſon of the thicke ayer cauſed by the vapoures and exhalations rayſed by the heate. None can go without ſhoos but haue theyr fiete ſuddeynly blyſtered and exulcerate. Such as are a thyrſt, dye immediatly except they haue drynke at hande, the heate ſo faſte conſumeth the moyſture of theyr bodyes. Meate put in braſen veſſelles, is fodde in ſhort ſpace by the heate of the ſonne without other fyre. Yet they that are borne and brought vp in ſuch regions, had rather wyllyngely fuſteyne theſe incommodities then bee inforced to liue otherwyſe: ſuch a loue of theyr natiue countrey hath nature gyuen to all men: cuſtome of continuance from younge yeares being alſo of force to ouercomme the maliciouſneſſe of the ayer. Neuertheleſſe, theſe places of ſuch contrary natures wherby ſuche ſtrange effectes are cauſed, are not farre in funder or diuided by any great diſtance. For, from the maryſhes of Meotis or Meotides where certeyne Scythians dwell in extreme coulde, many haue fayled with ſhyps of burden to Rodes in the ſpace of ten dayes: and from theſe to Alexandria in foure dayes. From whence paſſynge through Egypte by the ryuer of Nilus, they haue arryued in Ethiopia in other tenne dayes: So that the nauigation from the couldeſt partes of the worlde to the hotteſt regions, is no more then. xxiiii. [twenty-four] continuall dayes. Where as therefore the varietie of the ayer is ſuch in places of ſo ſmale diſtance, it is no marueyle that the cuſtomes and maners of luyngē of the people of thoſe regions, with the complexions of theyr bodyes and ſuch thynges as are engendered there, do greatly dyffer from owres.

325
The diuersitie of
ayer in dyuers
regions.

Extreme colde.

Extreme heate.

The force of
education.

Extreme heate
and colde in A
ſmale diſtance.

From Scythia
to Ethiopia.



[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

—o—

SECTION VI.

Vannuccio Biringuccio.

Pyrotechnia.

First printed in 1540.]

THE PREFACE TO THE BOOKE OF METALS.



O this booke of the Indies and nauigations I haue thought good to adde the booke of metals, for three causes especially me mouyng: whereof the fyrst is, that it seemeth to me a thyng vndecent to reade so much of golde and syluer, and to knowe lyttle or nothyng of the naturall generation thereof, beinge neuerthelesse thynges not onely most desyred, but also such without the which at this age the lyfe of man can not bee passed ouer without many aduersities, forasmuch as pouertie is hatefull to all men, and vertue no further esteemed then it is supported by ryches, syth nowe that lady that reigned in Saturns dayes, is become the slau to hym that was then her bondeman in that golden worlde, so named, not for the desyre that men had to golde, but for th[e] innocencie of luyng in those dayes, when Mars was of no poure, and men thought it crueltie by breakyng the bones of owre mother the earth, to open a way to the courte of infernal Pluto from thence to get golde and syluer the feedes of al mischiefes and angels of such a god, whom the antiquitie (not without good confydera-

tion) paynted blynde, affirmyng also that of hym golde and syluer haue receaued the propertie to blynde the eyes of men. But syth it is nowe so that we shalbe inforced to seke ayde by that which was sumtymes a myschefe, it resteth to vse the matter as doo cunnynge phisicians that can mynister poyson in proportion with other thynges in such forte qualysyng the malicioufnesse therof, that none shall therby bee intoxicate. Forasmuch therefore as golde and syluer haue obteyned this prerogatiue that they are suche necessarie euyls which the lyfe of man can not lacke without detriment, not only they but other metals also perhappes more necessarie althowgh not so precious, are thynges woorthy to bee better knowen then only by name, syth they are th[e] instrumentes of all artes, the prices of all thynges, the ornamentes of al dignities, and not the least portion of nature, wherby the contemplation of them is no lesse pleasaunte then necessary. But forasmuch as it is not here my intent to intreate much of metals, I wyll speake of the seconde cause: which is, that if in traauylyng strang[e] and vnknown countreys any mans chaunce shalbe to arryue in such regions where he may knowe by th[e] information of th[e] inhabitauntes or otherwyse, that suche regions are frutefull of riche metals, he may not bee without sum iudgement to make further searche for the same. The thyrde cause is, that althowgh this owre realme of Englande be ful of metals not to bee contemned and much rycher then men supposse, yet is there fewe or none in Englande that haue any greate skylle thereof, or any thyng wrytten in our tounge, whereby men maye bee well instructed of the generation and fyndyng of the same: as the lyke ignorance hath byn amonge vs as touchyng Cosmographie and nauigations vntyll I attempted accordinge to the portion of my talent and simple lernyng to open the fyrst dore to the enterance of this knoweledge into owre language, wherin I wolde wyshe that other of greater lernyng wolde take sume paynes to accomplishe and bringe to further perfection that I haue rudely begunne, not as an autour but a translatoure, leaste I bee iniurious to any man in ascrybyng to my selfe the trauayles of other. And wheras as concernyng the knoweledge of metals, I was once mynded to haue translated into Englyshe the hole woorke of Pyrotechnia wherof I synysshed. xxii. [twenty-two] chapitures nowe more then three yeares sence, and leste the copie therof in the handes of one of whome I coulde neuer get it ageyne (omyttyng to speake of other ingratitude) I was therby discouraged to proceade any further in that woorke. Neuerthelesse, syth this hystory of the Indies hath ministred occasion to intreate sumwhat of metals, I haue ageyne translated three of the fyrst chapitures of that booke, which seeme most necessary to bee knowen in this case. And hereof to haue fayde thus much in maner of a preface it may suffice.

326

OF THE GENERATION OF METALLES AND THEIR MYNES WITH THE MANER OF FYNDINGE THE SAME:

WRITTEN IN THE ITALIEN TOVNGE BY *VANNVCCIUS BIRINGVCZIVS*
IN HIS BOOKE CAVLED *PYROTECHNIA*.

To his louynge frende Master Bernardino Moncellese, greeting.



The mineral tree.

The mynes doo
growe.

Marchasites.

Signes of metals.

327

Signes and tokens
of metals.

Hereas I promysed yow to wrytte of the natures of metalles in particular, I am nowe inforced to declare euery thinge in generale, and especially of the places of their generation and their order, with the forme and maner of woorkynge in the same, and the instrumentes therto perteyninge. Yowe shall therefore vnderstande, that mynes of metalles are founde in the mooste partes of the worlde, more or lesse according to the diligence of witti searchers: and shew them felues standinge in the grounde in maner in fuche forte as the veynes of bludde are disparfed in the bodies of lyuing beastes, or like vnto the braunches of trees spredde forth diuers wayes. Wherfor, the diligent searchers of mines, willing by a certeyne similitude declare howe the mynes are placed in the mountaynes, haue figured a greate tree full of branches planted in the myddeste of the bafe of a mountayne, frome the whyche are diriued dyuers and many bouwes and branches, fum greate and fum finaule, muche like vnto veye trees that are in owlde woddes. They will also that in growynge, they euer ingrofe them felues and reache towarde the heauen, conuertynge into theyr nature the mooste disposed and neare matter, vntil the toppes of theyr braunches extend to the highest parte of the mountayne, and there shewe furthe theyr felues with manifeste apperaunce, puttinge furthe in the steade of bouwes and floures, certeyne sumofites of blewe or greene coloure, or marchasites with finaule veynes of ponderous matter, or fuche other compositions of tinctures. And when by this means they shewe them felues vnto us, we may make firme coniecture that fuche mountaynes are minerall, and that accordinge to the demonstrations they shewe more or lesse, they are richer or porer of myne. Therefore the searchers, according to th[e] apperaunces which they fynde, take good courage vnto them: and with hope and securitie of profecte, apply al their possible diligence with witte and expenes to digge or gette owte fuche thynges as the signes and owtewarde apperaunces declare vnto them. And by this maner of fyndinge of mynes, it hath often tymes chaunced that many haue byn exalted to the highest degree of riches. Wheras therfore by this meanes men enter into the mountaynes with the ey[e]s of confideration and right Iudgemente, and see the places where the mineralles are ingendered and comprehende in maner their quantitie, they adapte theyr caues or fosses accordynge therevnto, wheras they shulde otherwyfe wander by chaunce, because no man can by any other meanes knowe where the mines are in the mountaynes, although he were of neuer so good iudgement, and shulde make fearcher for the same neuer so curiously by litle and litle. It shal therfore in this case be necessary to folow the certificat and apperaunces of signes, and to encounter the same as nere as may be, with ey[e]s and eares euer attentie where they maye hope to fynde any tokens of metalles, especially by enquiryng of shepardes and other anciente inhabitants of fuch regions in the which mineralles are engendered. And this I speake the rather for that I am perswaded that at

the first fight of a mountaine, by reason of the greate barrenesse and roughnes therof, and also by reason of the great abundance of waters that are engendered in the same, a right good iudgemente shall not suffice to coomme to certayne knoweledge that metall is containd in such mountaynes, vntill the searchers haue with charges and trauail caufed miners in fundry places to discouer the same. And therefore I also beleue that one man although be bee neuer so stronge, wyttie, and farre castinge, shall not be able in a newe and straunge contreye, to searche by smaule portions not onely all the mountaynes of one or moo prouinces which may bringe furth minerals, but shall with muche difficultie scarcely suffice to searche the fecreates of only one mountayne: In so muche that sum confyderinge the difficultie hereof, are of opinion that in this effecte, it shuld be requysite to worke by the arte of Negromancie, which I thynke to be a fable without further knoweledge. But I wolde that these necromancers shulde tell me why this their arte helpeth theym no further in the woorke after that they haue once founde the myne, if it be trewe that they say. Why (I say) doth it not helpe them furthe as at the begynnyng to fynde the myne, so consequently in the myddeft and the ende to brynge the same to further perfection, as to gette it owte, to brynge it to fusion or meltyng, and to purifie or poure it from droffe, which doubtlesse it shulde haue poure to doo if it may bee beleaued that it can doo the other. But forasmuch as such effectes are so fearefull and terrible, that they owght not or can not be practised of al men, and also perhappes bycause such maner of woorkyng is not knowen, I thinke it not good to be vsed: but thinke rather by good reason that this arte is so much the more to be omytted and contemned, in howe much we are accustomed in the begynnyng of dyggyng of mynes, especially to caule for the grace of god that it may please hym to be presente with his ayde to owre doubtfull and traualous woorke. Lettyng passe therefore this deuilyfsh diuise of such beastly and fearefull men, I exhorte yowe to folowe the practise by the foresayde signes minystred vnto yowe by the benignitie of nature, bothe grounded vpon the foundation of truth and approued by th[e] experience of many practicionars, not confystyng in woordes or promysse of thynges vayne and incomprehensible. With these signes therefore shall yow searche the bankes and sides of the valleys, with the clyffes and ryftes of the stoncs, and the backes, toppes, or ridges of the Montaynes: Also the beddes, chanelles, and courses of ryuers, lookyng diligently amonge their sandes, and the ruines of theyr fosses, amonge the whiche yow shall often tymes espie marchasites or smaule sparkes of mynes, or other dyuers tinctures of metals, whereby yow may be certified that certeyne mynes are in such places, which yowe shall exactly fynd by diligent and curious searchyng the clyffes of theyr ryftes and dry places. After these aduertifementes, take this for a generall signe, that all suche places and mountaynes are mineral, owt of the which many springes and great abundaunce of crude water dooth isshewe, hauyng with theyr clearenes a certeyne minerall taste, and such as at variable seasons of the yeare chaunge theyr qualitie, beinge warme in the spryng tyme and coulde in sommer. And this thyng owght yow to beleue the more when yow shall see the aspecte of such mountaynes to be rough, sharpe, and saluage without earth or trees. Or so that yf there bee a lyttle earth found vpon the same with a smaule veyne of herbes or grasse yowe shall perceaue the grenenes therof to be faynt and in maner wythered and dried. And albeit that sumtymes also, mines are founde in mountaynes hauyng earth and frutefull trees in the toppes therof, yet are they for the most part found in such wherof we haue spoken. Of these other, there maye fewe signes be gyuen, except to go by lyttle and lyttle to seke the bankes of theyr fydes. But amonge all these, the best and most certeyne signe that may be gyuen, is wheras on the superficiall parte of the earth eyther on hyghe or belowe, the myne dooth shewe it selfe apparente to fyght. Sum there are that for a good signe do greatly commende the residences which certeyne waters make wher they haue rested for a time and beinge dried vp of the heate of the sonne, do often tymes shewe in certeyne partes of theyr residencies dyuers tinctures of mynerall substaunce. Summe other are accustomed to take such waters, and in a vessell of earth or glasse or other matter, cause them to boyle and vapoure away vntyll the dregs or residue remayne in the bottome well dried in the likenes of a grosse earth, of the which they make an assaye eyther by the ordinarie tryall of fyer, or after sume other maner as lyketh them best. And by this meanes (although they attayne not to th[e] exacte knoweledge of the truth) yet do they approche to a certeyne knoweledge of the thyng wherby they haue sum intelligence of what sufficiencie and goodnesse the myne is which they seeke, before they be at any great charges in folowyng the same: Proudyng alway that with all diligent aduertisement the places neare vnto the rootes of the confine mountaynes be curiously searched, with also the bankes and fydes of the selfe same mountayne, and all such superficiall partes therof, where any stoncs are founde discouered eyther of theyr owne proper nature or by the course of water: prefuppofyng euer that it is in maner impossible but that yf suche mountaynes containe any mynes, they muste needes shewe furth sum floures, tinctures, or colours of theyr exhalations. Yet yf it shulde so chaunce that they do not this, the goodnes of the mine may be the cause hereof forasmuche as eyther it is not of vaporable nature, or to be of smaule quantitie, or els perhappes bycause the mountayne is greate and the myne very low or so farre with in, that it is not sufficient to put furth any signes of fumofities. The cause also hereof maye bee that sum stonc lyke vnto that cauled *Albafano* (which I thynke to be of that kynde which we caule the greete stonc) or blacke and whyte marble of

Mountaynes in the which metals are engendered.

Ageynst seekyng metals with the rod which they caule *Virgula diuina*.
Negromancie.

The maner of searchyng for mynes.

A generall signe.

Rough and barren mountaynes.

328

The best signe.

The residence of waters.

Marchasites are the tinctures of mynerall exhalations.

Metals in fruitful
mountaynes.

Howe the signes
are to bee
considered.

The assay of the
mines.

329

The richer myne
further within the
mountayne.

Consideracions
how the caue
ought to bee made.

The bodie of the
myne.

Houses of office
for the myners.

Baptisinge and
dedication of the
caue.

The makinge of
the caue.

thycke and resyflynge nature, may be found to lye betwene and so to stoppe the passages, that the sayde fumosities may therby be hyndered to arryue to the vppermoste parte of the earth: by reason wherof, it is possible that suche mountaynes may brynge furth trees and herbes forasmuche as the earth therof dooth reteyne his vertue and may nuryse theyr rootes not beinge incinerate or burnte with hotte and venemous vapours of the mynes: so that the shoures of rayne or fluds with their courses can not cary away the earth as in such places wher the same is found fore dried. And therefore vpon such mountaynes I haue seene great wooddes of cheffnutte trees, beeches also and okes, with well cultured and frutfull fieldes. So that to conclude, by the signes of the rowghnesse or barennesse of the mountayne, is not taken away but that other places may also haue plentie of mines whiche ought to be searched and folowed. But forasmuch as these signes are of the natures of minerals, I wyll speake more determinately of them in the places where I entreate of their proper mynes: Not intendinge here to faye muche of these thynges in generall, but only to induce yow to sum clearnesse of the fyrst lyght. And therefore that yow may gyue the more diligent aduertisement, I faye vnto yowe that all the mynes which yow shall fynde by such signes, by what meanes so euer they shall coome to yowre handes, whether they be found in stoness, earthe, or sande, after that at the fyrste fyght they haue shewed them selues to bee mynes of metals, yow owght to consyder of what ponderositie of weyght they are: The which the greater that it is, so much the more dooth it shewe both the perfection and goodnesse of the substauce, and also the more quantitie of the mine. And thus presuppofyng that by the signes or other meanes yow haue founde the mine, not yet fully perceauyng of what kynde of metall it myght be, to certifie yowe hereof and also of what quantitie it is, or howe it is accompanied or myxt with other, or lykewyse of what puritie it is of it selfe, or of what euyll disposition or malice it is founde to bee, it shall herein be necessary before yow be at any further charges therwith, to proue the same by twoo or three assayes or mo, as I wyll further declare in the particular place of assayes. Beinge therefore certified of the myne, and of what metall it is, and also what quantitie it conteyneth, syndyng it by accompte to bee so profitable as to beare the charges, I exhorte yowe bouldely to gyue the fyrste attempte to faule to mynyng, and with all possible diligence to folowe yowr enterpryse: assuryng yowre selfe, that of what so euer mynerall matter yow shall take assay accordyng to the proportion of that pi[e]ce which yow tooke of the vppermost or owtmost parte of the mine for that purpose, yow shall fynde that to bee muche better and rycher whiche is further within the mountayne. And thus being certified by the assay of what quantitie the thyng is that appered by the signes, and of all other reasonable confyderacions apperteynyng to the worke, yow shall with all celeritie dispose yowr selfe to faule to dyggyng, to th[e]intent that yowe may shortly eyther here enioye the frute of yowre trauell, or els where with better successe proue yowre good fortune. But in th[e]attempte of this enterpryse, yow owght principally to haue respecte to the situation of the place where yowe intende to make the begynnyng of yowr caue or fosse: Takyng good aduertisement that it be commodious for the labourers that shal worke therein: prouydyng aboue all thynges that it haue an easye enteraunce into the mountayne, with lesse charges and in shorter tyme to arryue vnder the signes which yowe haue taken: encounteryng the same as muche as is possible as it were by a ryght line, fyrst with iudgemente and then with workemanfhypp, vntyll yow stryke on the grose masse or bodye of the myne, breakyng in the course of the caue al matters of hard compositions, as quarreys and stoness ouerthwartyng the same: hauyng euer respecte to the owtwarde signes whiche yow folowe, forecastyng in yowre mynde how yowe may directly arryue to the same, euen as the maryners directe their course by their compasse and fyght of the north starre. Also byfyde that place where yow haue determined to make the enteraunce and begynnyng of the caue, yow muste take choyse of an other place, eyther on the front of the mountayne or on the fyde that it may bee neare and commodious to make one or two or mo cotages for the commoditie and necessitie of the workemen. One of these must bee appoynted for their dormitorie where sum may rest and sleepe whyle other worke, and that yow may the more commodiously be present and assystaunte to their doynges, diligently to beholde all thynges and to conforte them in their laboures: also to dispence and bestowe their vyttayles as shall bee nedefull, and to referue the same in safe custodie, with dayly prouision of al thynges apperteynyng. The other must bee as it were a smythes forge wherin theyr worne and broken tooles must bee renewed, and other newe made, to th[e]intent that the worke be not hyndered for lacke of store of necessarie instrumentes. When these thynges are thus fynysshed, with good prouision of vyttayles and a sufficient number of expert myners, then in the name of God and good aduenture, causyng a preste to blesse the mountayne with all the shoppes, and to baptise the caue, dedicatyng it (as the maner is) to the holy Trinitie or to our Lady or to the name of sum other faynt which yowe haue in deuotion, with inuocation to them to prosper yowre attemptes, yow shall with good courage and hope begynne to dygge the caue, with intente to folowe the same withowte ceafyng as farre as yowre abilitie shall reache, or vntyll yowe haue passed ouer the lymettes signified by the signes before named: Takyng euer diligent heade that yowe begyn yowre caue as lowe as yow may at the foote of the mountayne, in such order that yowr myners so continue and folow the same by a ryght line, that they encounter the veyne of the myne by the shortest and safest way that may bee deuifed. For it often times chaunceth, that although

the caue haue byn wel begunne, yet hath it not byn well folowed, for that the myners beinge withdrawn from the ryght courfe by the hope of fuche braunches of mynes as haue appered vnto them in the waye, doo often times decline from theyr attempted courfe, and from the signes which they owght to haue folowed. And byfyde other preceptes, see that yow beare in memory to procure that in dyggyng, yow efchewe as muche as yowe maye, the cuttyng of foite or brykell stones, aswell for that it may bee daungerous for ruine of the caue, as also that it feldome chaunceth that any mynes are founde in fuch stones. But yf yow shal chaunce fo to fynde them that yow can by no meanes auoyde them, I confort yow that where fuche cause of feare sheweth it felfe, both that yow lose not the charges of the caue and for the better safegarde of yowre workemen, it shalbe necessary that yowe vse all possible diligence in well vpholdyng and fortyfyng the caue with arches of waules trauffered with stronge postes of tymbre after the maner of framed beames, fusteyned with grose and stronge pyles made of goode and stronge tymbre of oke or other great trees. And in this maner owght yow to procede in dyggyng yowre myne that yow may with more securitie enioy the frute of yowr trauallye. But in the owlde tyme they that dygged mynes (as is yet to see in the caues lefte of them) folowed an other maner: so that in the steade of begynnyng the caue belowe at the foote of the mountayne (as doo the later myners) they begunne to dygge theyr caue in the vpper or hygheft parte where the daye discouered the myne, dyggyng downwarde after the maner of a pytte or a well, folowyng the fame fumtyme on the one fyde, and fumtyme on the other euen vnto the depth, as the veyne shewed it felfe to theyr syght: whereof I haue thought good to make mention, for that in th[e] opinion of many men, this way dooth seeme much better and of more securitie to fynde that they seeke, then to dygge by the fydes: bycause that by this meanes they haue euer the mine before theyr eyes eyther more or lesse as a line to leade them to the grosse masse. Yet who so consydereth the thyng well, shal vnderstande that the later myners haue better conceaued the reason of this woork, in respecte (as is to see) of many more commodities and securities which insue rather of this maner of woorkyng then of the other: as the difficultie to descende and ascende the caue, and the daungour left it bee stopped vp by many ruines, byfyde the trauallyous labour to draw owt the mine with the rockes and fragmentes of stones: And aboute al thynges, that they shal not bee able to drawe owt the waters whiche are often tymes fo abundaunt that they greatly increafe the charges and trauallyes of the patrones of the mynes by reason of the greate ayde and helpe which shalbe requisite to haue in that case and also for the makyng of wheeles, troughes, pypes, and pumpes, with fuch other instrumentes seruyng for the purpose to drawe owt the waters. And yet with all this, it often tymes chaunceth that although they labour hereat continually, yet shal they be inforced to forsake their profitable and laudable enterpryse. So that to conclude, I faye (as yowe maye well vnder stand) that it is a much better way and of more securitie to begynne the diggyng of the caue rather at the roote or fote of the mountayne and to enter into the same by litle and lytle a flope vpwarde, then to begynne at the toppe or the hygheft backe therof. And this both for the more commodious passyng furthe of the water, and also for the easier trauallye of the labourers. Obseruyng euer diligently the change of the signes whiche appere vnto yow outwardly, vsyng the rudder and compasse as do they that sayle on the sea. For hereby the myners shalbe instructed euer to folowe the right way in the caue vntill by the conductyng of wytte and arte, they bee brought to the place of the grosse masse or bodie of the tree, whyche is the cause, fontayne, and original from whense the fayd tinctures, fumosites, and mineral signes, are deriued and sente furth to the superficiall partes. And as concernyng this purpose, I thincke it good to declare vnto yow howe in the Dukedome of *Austria*, betweene *In[s]pruc* and *Alla* where I contynued manye yeares, I fawe a large vale enuironed with a greate number of mountaynes, by the myddeft wherof a ryuer passed through of greate aboundaunce of water: and in maner in all the montaynes that are there about, is digged great plentie of mine, wherof the moste parte are of copper or leade, althoughe also in maner euery of them is founde to holde sum portion of siluer. Amonge these mountaynes, I fawe one in the whyche th[e] inhabitants of the countrey dwellyng there about allured by the sight of many signes, beganne to digge a caue after the maner wherof we haue spoken: In fo muche that (as it appered vnto me) from the place where they begane the caue, they had digged little lesse then two myles before they fawe any sparke or shadowe of any myne. And beinge arruyed with the caue in maner perpendicularly vnder the signes they folowed, they were encountered with a veyne of the harde stone cauled *Albazano*, of a yarde and a halfe thicke, which they passed through with greate trauallye and longe tyme, and with the helpe of commodious instrumentes of iren hardened to woork in fuche stones. And when they had thus passed through this quarrye of stone, they chaunced vppon a verye great veyne of the myne of copper of fuch forte that when I was there, lookinge betweene the one and the other, I fawe on euery fyde as it were a waule of the hard stone of *Albazano*, and therin a voyde place of fuche largenes from the one fyde to the other that more then two hundred men al at one time, had sufficiente roome to stande labouryng frome the hygheste parte to the lowest, hauyng non other lyght then of candells, and makinge certeyne markes in euery place where they saw the vre or myne shewe it felfe: and thus ceased not to woork continually both day and nyght, course by course, a thyng fuerly maruelous to be holde. Without the mouth of the caue, I fawe great abundaunce of mine partely

Causes of hinderance.

Soft stones.

330
The fortifying of the caue.

Howe the caues were made in olde tyme.

Abundaunc[e] of water in the mynes.

The beste maner of makinge the caue.

The change of the signes.
The rudder and compasse.

Austria.

Mynes of copper and leade holding syluer.

A caue of two myles.

A large caue of the myne of copper holdinge siluer.

331
Candle light

A greate masse
of pure myne.

Abundaunce of
water in the
mynes.

Water is the
nearest principle
of minerales.

A general rule.

Great riches
obtainyd by
searchinge of
mynes.

Magnanimitie
and pacience.

The mountaynes
are the matrices
of riches.

The grace of god
is receaved by
owre endeouore.

Monye begetteth
ryches.

332

Necessarie
adertismentes.

Plentye of woodde.

Cotages and
edifices.
The situation of
the place.

The vse of water.

mixt with the stone of the vre, and partely chofen and feperated. Amonge these pieces, there was one conflynge of a hole masse of pure mine of such biggnes and weyght, that two good horses with a light carre could scarcely drawe it away. This myne was of copper as I haue fayde. But to magnifie it they cauled it fyluer, bycause it helde suche plentie thereof that it furmounted the charges, whereas they had also the copper for aduantage. Yowe shall further vnderstand that in the myddest of the caue, there was a chanel or gutter whyche gathered togyther the waters that fell into it continually on euery fyde from the ruptures or broken places and cliffes. These waters ranne through the chanel with so vehemente a streame, that I fuerly beleue that it might well suffice to dryue any greate mylle. In so muche that in goynge in and comming owt of the caue, I remember that by the contynual faule and sprinkeling of the waters from aboue and beneth, I was as wet as though I had passed through a greate shoure of rayne. Wherat I maruel the lesse when I confyder that water is the fyrst and nearest principle of the whiche the substauce of minerals is engendered. By reason wherof, such men of vnderstandynge as haue searched the natures of these thynges, argue hereby and take it for a generall rule, that all those mountaynes owt of the whiche spryngeth great abundaunce of water, doo also abounde with myne. The which thyng well confyderynge, and weyng the greatnes hereof, I faule into this accompte with my selfe, that if to the patrones of the fayde caue, the charges of the same hadde byn a hynderaunce or greefe, eyther for the length therof, or for despayre that they shuld not haue found that they fought, they wolde surely haue forsaken it. And beinge nowe comme to this harde stone after they had susteyned so great charges byfyde the trauayle both of mynde and body, if they shulde then haue lefte of theyr enterpryse, they shulde not haue come to such ryches whereby they haue obteyned many commodities aowell profitable for them selues as also for their lordes and princes, theyr countrye, theyr kinsfolkes and famelie. Neyther yet shulde they haue byn so wel able to helpe theyr poore neyghbours as they haue doone by the meanes of the valientnesse of theyr constant myndes and perflyng in so good and commendable an enterpryse. Wherfore to conclude, yow that wyl begynne to attempt any such thyng, must be of good courage and much pacience to folowe that yow haue begunne, at the least vntill yow knowe by the signes what the thyng is: hopinge euer that in goynge forwarde, the day folowynge (as it is possible) shal discouer the thyng that yowe seeke and content your desyre: Wherof yow may bee the better assured, if yow well confyder that the mootheres and matrices of most esteemed ryches, and the myntes of al treasures, are the mountaynes: To the whiche (with the helpe of fortune and your ingenious indeouore) yow shall open the way, not only to fynde the myne and arryue to the belly of the mountaynes where suche thynges lye hyd, but shall also bee exalted by ryches to hyghe honoure and dignitie as they of whome we haue made mention before: forasmuch as most beningne and liberall nature, doothe open her lappe and promesse good successe to suche as seeke ryches by such honest meanes. The whiche way surely is muche rather to be folowed, then eyther the warre full of trowbles and miserie, or the carefull trade of marchaundies with wanderynge about the worlde, or suche other fastidious cares perhappes vnlawfull for a good man. And albeit (as fume men vse to speake) the fyndynge of mynes bee an especial grace of God, neuerthelesse, forasmuch as we are borne to laboure, it shalbe necessary that we seeke the same in suche places where they are brought furth by the worke of nature, and by searchynge to fynde them, and beinge founde to dygge for them, and by this meanes to receaue the grace of God with applyng owre owne diligence therto, with helpe of the disposition of fortune and naturall iudgemente. And yet shal not this only suffice without sufficiencie of money able to susteyne the charges and continue the worke: to th[e]nde that if yow can not synysse it with your owne expenses, yow maye supplye the same by the ayde of other, eyther patrones or parteners. But let vs nowe cease to reason any further of these things. Prefupposyng therefore that yow haue already passed the charges, and haue not only founde the myne yow fought, but also haue brought furth to lyght a great quantitie therof, it shal then bee needeful (as a thyng chiefly to be confydered before yow begin to dygge) wel to ponder and examen both the commodities of such thynges as shall occurre, and also of such wherof yow shall haue neede: as tymber and woodde of all fortes, with water and vyttayles: of all the whiche, yow muste haue great plentie: and especially of woodde, whereof yowe muste haue great quantitie, aowell to serue to the proportion of the myne, as also to make coles to the vse of meltyng, fynyng, dryng, garboylng, and such other broylnges, byfyde that which must serue to fortifie the caue and to buyld shoppes and cotages with such other edifices. Diligent consideration must lykewyse be had to the situacion of the place where the buyldynges shalbe erected: as that the plotte therof bee commodious with abundaunce of water hauynge a good faule. Also not onely of plentie of woodde and cole nere vnto the myne, but of such as may serue the turne. And of all other incommodities, yowe muste chiefly auoyde the lacke of water, as a thyng of greatest importaunce and most necessary in this effecte. For by the force and weyght of the course herof, wheelles and dyuers other ingenious instrumentes are adapted with ease to lyfte vppe greate bellowes to make fyers of great poure, to beat with hammers of great weyght, and to turne myghtie and stronge engens, by the force whereof the trauayles of men are so much furthered, that without such helpe, it were in maner impossible to ouercome suche tedious trauayles or to arryue to the ende of the worke, forasmuch as the force of one wheele may lyfte more, and that more safely then the

paynefull labour of a hundreth men. It shal therefore be needefull to haue great conyderation hereof, not only to make these edif[c]es or houfes of office, but also to make them commodious for the purpose, as for the cariage of myne and cole with other necessaries. For if any of these effectes shulde be wantynge, the coste, tyme and trauallye, shulde bee cast away: forasmuch as these thynges doo so much the more relieue the one the other as they are ioyned togyther, and hinder the woorke not a lyttle yf any be separte. But bycause these commodities can not euer be hadde all togyther, yowe owght to wey with yowr selfe which of the twoo ferueth for mo necessarie vses, as eyther to haue the cole or the mine most commodious to the houfes, and accordinge there vnto to place the houfes nere vnto the same if the commoditie of water wyll so permytte. Albeit, if it were possible, it shulde be much better if al these necessarie commodities were ioyned togyther, whereas otherwysse yowe muste contente yowre selfe as occasion serueth.

Nowe therefore to conlude, byfyde that whiche I haue declared vnto yow of the findinge of the myne and the digging thereof with other conyderations, I exhorte yowe further to faule to practyse with sum myne of your owne, that yow may therby take occasion to ryfe to the degree of ryches whyche yow desire. And therefore I aduertise yow that after yow haue founde the mountayne and begun to digge, yow shal euer go forwarde with a boulede mynde and stout corage, woorkyng with witte and Iudgement, forasmuche as in this effecte the one serueth the other in the fleede of ey[e]s to enter where they can not. Gyue no credit to that whiche many ignorante folkes doo say and beleue, affirminge that in digging for metals, they are founde rather by chaunce then by arte. The which although it were trewe, yet owght we to trust more to art and practyse then to chaunce. And when yow are nowe entered into the mountayne, beare well in memory that yow haue presently with yow the tallie or ruler of the caue, wherby yowe may trauerse the veyne of the myne when yow are coomme to it. For if yow shulde folowe it by the course as it lyeth, it is possible that yowe might folowe it a greete way not paste the biggnesse of a mans finger and perhappes lesse: By reason wherof, it might happen that yow shuld lose it and neuer find it ageyne. The like shuld chaunce vnto yow if after that yow haue begun to digge a caue, it shulde repent yow of the charges, and that for the basnes therof yowe shulde forsake it, as many haue doone who bycause they coulde not fynde the mine at the first stroke, despayringe that they shulde neuer fynde it, haue forsaken it as a thyng vnprofitable, thynking that they haue woonne enough in that they were not at further charges with that which they accompt losse and damage: And thus furiously leaue of their enterpryse, not regarding that they may leaue the frute of theyr expenses and traualle to an other that may folowe their begynninges, and perhappes fynde the myne within the distance of a cubet, a spanne, or a finger. We may say therefore that fuche men doo willingly forsake their good fortune as many haue doone. He therefore that hath begune to digge a caue, let hym determine to folowe it, puttinge away th[e] estimation of the basenes therof, and not to feare the streyghtnesse of the way, but rather to applye all his possible diligence without remorse, hopyng thereby no lesse to obteyne honour and ryches, then to auoyde shame and infamie for omyttinge so profitable an enterpryse. And that yow may the more circumspectly behaue yowr selfe in all thynges, besyde the former instructions, I further aduertise yowe to set euer freshe men a woorke by course in such order, that in euery fixte or eyght houres (accordynge to the number of the myners) yow appoynt such to the woorke as haue repofed or taken theyr rest, that yow may by this meanes the sooner come to th[e] ende yow desyre, whereunto (after yowe haue layde so sure a fundation) I exhorte yow to runne without a brydle. And wheras to these effectes it shalbe necessarie to haue many instrumentes adapted for the purpose, I can none otherwysse speake of them then in generall, conydyringe that according to the nature of the place and the myne, it shalbe necessary to vse instrumentes and iren tooles of dyuers formes, as there ought to be difference in such wherwith yow shall dygge in mynes engendered in marble, greete stone, and harde freefe stone, or such other. For the dyggyng of such as are found in deade and tender stones, as Alabaister and marle, it is requisite to haue apte and stronge instrumentes, as great beetels, mattockes and spades of iren, also great and longe crowes of iren to lyfte great burdens: lykewysse greate and smaule picke axes of iren and sum of fleele: furthermore greate maules with handels and without handels, and such other bothe of iren and fine fleele hardened, if the hardenes of stone shall so requyre. But as for such as shall serue to dygge the mynes which are engendered in tender and softe stones, I neede make no mention of them, forasmuch as the tooles of the common forte may suffice, and necessitie shall dayly furthe[r] instructe yow to diuise such as shal serue for yowre purpose. Albeit, for the moste parte, they are beetels, maules, mattockes, pikes, shouels, spades, and such lyke. But as well for the softe stones as for the harde, it shalbe necessarye to haue great plentie of al fortes, to th[e] ende that the myners may lose no tyme, and that the woorke may go the better forwarde to the comfort of the patrones of the mine. Byfyde these before named, it shall also be requisite to haue plentie of greate baskettes, spades, shouels, sledes, and handbarrowes, bothe with wheelles and without wheelles: also sackes made of raw or vntande hydes to carye the fragmentes owt of the caue. It shall furthermore be requisite to haue greate quantitie of vnctuous liquours to maintayne fire: as are the oiles of oliues, of nuttes, of line feede and heme feede: Lykewysse the roots of putrifid trees, or talowe of beastes, or fatte and oyles of fyshes. For without the lyght of fyre, it is not possible for the labourers

Necessarye considerations.

A false opinion

The trauersing of the veyne.

Continuance in the worke.

333

Freshe men.

Instrumentes.

Fyre in the caue.

The conueyance
of eyer.

to worke : Nor yet can any fyre be mayntayned in the caue except it receaue the ayer by fum respiracle or breathynge place by the meanes of a funell or trunke of woodde or fuch other open instrument wherby the ayer maye be conueyed into the caue.

¶ *Of the myne of golde and the qualitie therof in particular.*

The excellencie
of golde.



Orasmuche as golde is a compoude mynerall which of the phylofophers and all men of vnderstandynge, is founde to be of greateft perfection amonge all other myxt minerals, it is iudged by the vniuerfal opinion of fuch men, that for the bewtie and excellent qualitie thereof, it fhulde be of exceffiue verue to helpe and confort men. And therefore amonge all thynges that are in this worlde (excepte lyuyng creatures) it is chiefly esteemed. By reafon wherof, I alfo the more to honour it, wyll fyrft fpeake of this before I entreate of any other metall, and declare in particular the conception with the moft apparent qualities therof.

The originall and
fubftance of
golde.

334

The which although it be a metal moft knowen, defyred alfo and fought for of all kyndes of men, yet are there not many that do care to knowe of what fubftance or natural mixtion it confifteth. But that yow fhulde not be one of them that knowe it onely by name or fuperficiall app[er]eance, I certifie yow that the originall and proper matter therof, is none other then elementall fubftances with equall quantitie and qualitie proportionate the one with the other, moft perfectly purified by the fubtyl worke of nature. For of thefe beinge thus ioyned togyther (and of equall force) is engendered an amiable and moft perfect mixtion by the helpe of fermentacion and decoction of the minerall heate, wherby is caufed fuch a permanent vnion betwene the fayde elementes, that they are in maner infeperable : So that by the vertue of heauenly influence or of tyme, or by th[e] order of nature, is conuerted into this metalline body that we caule golde. The which (as I haue fayd) by his much temperatenes, purenes, and perfect mixtion, is condense and made thicke, in fuch forte that the elementes therof can not be vnbounde or loofed, fo that it remayneth in maner incorruptible : The caufe wherof is, that it eyther conteyneth in it no maner of fuperfluitie, or the fame to be but very lytle. And hereof commeth it, that although it lye many yeares in the earth or in the water, it is not infected with ruft or canker for that neyther of them are able to corrupte it, nor yet the fyre whofe force dooth incinerate or brynge to afhes and refolue in maner all creatures : And yet is the poure hereof fo farre vnable to deftroy or corrupte this metall, that it is thereby the more purified and made better. Lykewyfe the fayde perfecte vnion or mixtion, caufeth it to be a body without fleame, and without vnctuous or fat fuperfluitie : which is the caufe that it euer remayneth in the natiue bryghtnes and fayrenes of coloure, in fo much that when it is rubbed vpon any thyng, it leaueth not behynde it the tincture of any blacke or yelow colour, as doo in maner all other metals : Nor yet hath it any tafte or fauour that may be perceaued to the fence. Furthermore, if it be eaten eyther wyllingly or by chaunce, it is not venomous to the lyfe of man, as are fum of the other metals : but is rather a medicine curyng dyuers difeafes. In fo much that nature hath gyuen vnto it of peculiarity propertie, a vertue and priuilege to confort the weakenes of the harte, and to gyue ioyfulnes and myrth to the fpirites, difpofynge thereby the mynde to magnanimitie and attemptes of great enterpryfes. Which fingular qualities, fum wyfe men affirme that it hath receaued by th[e] influence of the fonne, and that it is therefore of fuch grace and poure to helpe men : efpecially fuch as haue many great bagges and cheftes full therof. To conclude therefore, this metall is a body tractable and bryght, of coloure lyke vnto the foonne : And hath in it inwardly fuch a naturall attractiue or alluryng vertue, that beinge feene, it greatly difpofeth the myndes of men to defyre it and efteeme it as a thyng moft precious : although many there are whiche crye owte ageynft it and accufe it as the roote and fede of moft peftiferous and monftrous couetoufneffe, and the caufe of many other myfcheues. But whether it bee the caufe of more good or euyll, we entende to lette paffe this difputation as a thyng vnprofitable. To proceade therefore as I haue begun I fay (as before) that the woorthynesse which is founde in it, hath caufed me to intreate of it before any other metall. And this the rather for that th[e] order of this prefente worke [fe]meth fo to requyre, that I may the better defcende to the degrees of other metals, to th[e] ende that in thefe owre partes of Italy, yow may haue fum instruction of practife, whiche may redounde from yow to other, whereby the myndes of all men may receaue fum lyght : beinge well affured that newe informations, wilbe the feedes of other newe wittie diuifes in the vnderstandynges of fuche men as with thefe keys fhall open theyr wyttes to arryue to fuche places whyther they can not els coomme or by any meanes approche. And nowe therefore, byfyde that which I haue fayde vnto yowe in generall, I wyl further in particular declare the nature hereof and the generation of the fame, with alfo the fignes whiche it fheweth furth, that I do not omytte any thyng. Laft of all, I wyl fhewe yowe howe it owght to bee poured from fuperfluo

Mineral heate.

The temperature
and purenesse of
golde.
Golde is
incorruptible.

The bewtie of
golde.

Golde is
medicinable.
Golde is
comfortable.

The attractiue
qualitie of golde.

earthynes of the mine, after that I shal haue expressed the maner howe it is founde. But forasmuch as I haue not with mine eyes seene the mountaines which conteyne the mynes of golde, or the places where this thyng is put in practyse, I wyll only shewe yow (hauynge made diligente inquisition for the same) what hathe byn tolde me of credible persons, or what I haue gathered in readyng of dyuers autoures, by whom I am certified for a truth that the greatest plentie of this metall, is founde in *Scythia*, in those prouinces which we commonly caule the East partes, where the soonne extendeth his chiefe force and vigour. Of these places India is thought to be the chiefe, and especially those Ilandes which the ships of Th[e]mperours maiestie and the kynge of Portugale haue founde of late: as the Ilandes about *Peru* and *Paria* with the firme lande of the same which extendeth it selues very farre on both fydes the Equinoctiall. In Europe also, golde is founde in many places: as in *Astesia*, and in many places in Boheme. Also in Hungarie, in Rhene, and in Apsa. Plinie fayth that it is lykewyse founde in *Austria* and in Portugale: and that the Romans had from thense yearely. xxiiii. [twenty-four] pounds weyght. And thus speakeynge of this precious metall, I beleue certeynly, that it is and may be engendered in all fuche places wher the influence of the heuens dispotheth the elementall causes to bryng furth an apte substance for this purpose. But nowe intendynge more particularly to speake of the places of the conception hereof, yowe shall vnderstande that it is engendered in dyuers kyndes of stonnes in great and rowgh mountaynes, and fuche as are vtterly bare of earth, trees, grasse, or herbes. And amonge all the stonnes of this myne, that is best which is of a blewe or asurine coloure lyke vnto a saphire, and is commonly cauled *Lapis Lazuli*. But it is not bryght and harde as is the saphire. It is also founde in orpemente cauled *Auripigmentum*: but more often in the mynes of other metals. It is lykewyse founde in many prouinces in the sandes of ryuers. That which is founde in the mountaines lyeth in order of veynes betwene quarry and quarry ioyned with the sayde Azurine stone and myxte therwith. They saye that this myne is so much the better in howe much it is the heuyer and of hyghe colour, shewyng in it many sparkes of gold. They say furthermore that it is engendered in an other stone lyke vnto false marble: but it is of a deade colour. And also in an other whose colour is yelowe with certeyne redde spots within it. They affirme lykewyse that it is founde in certeine blacke stonnes, whose veynes sprede dyuers wayes much like the courses of ryuers. They further declare that it is founde in a certeyne bituminous earth, of coloure lyke vnto cley and very heauy, hauynge in it a great fauour of brymstone: And that the golde which is founde in this, is very good, and in maner all togyther fyne, yet very harde to bee gotten owte, bycause it confysteth of so smaule sparkes lyke vnto inuisible atomes of such lytelnesse that they can hardly bee perceaued with the eye. And herein may yow not do as in *Lapis Lazuli*, or other stonnes, or as the maner is to do with that which is found in the sandes of ryuers: the which the more it is wasshed, the more it fauleth to the bottome: and in meltyng with the mother of his earthines, doth incorporat it selfe therwith in a bricke substance. But in fine, with much pacience and by one meanes or an other, or by the helpe of quickesyluer, it is drawn owte. Ageyne (as I haue sayde before) it is found in the sandes of dyuers ryuers, as in Spayne in the ryuer *Tago*: in *Tracia*, in *Ebro*: In *Asia*, in *Patolo* and *Ganges*. In Hungarie and Boheme, it is founde in *Lafesia* in dyuers ryuers: And in Italie, in the sandes of *Tesino*, *Adda*, and *Po*. But not euery where in the beddes of theyr chanelles, but in certeyne particular places where in certeyne cloddes the sande is discouered in the tyme of the ouerflowynge of the ryuers when the water leaueth behynde it a fine sande wherwith the sayde golde is myxte in the forme of certeyne smaule scales, and shynynge graynes. Then in the sommer seasion, with pacience and ingenious practyse, the searchers to poure it from the grosse earthinesse of the myne, and washe it diligently: preparynge for that effecte, certeyne tables made eyther of the tymber of plane trees, or elme, or whyte nuttes, or such other woodde apte to be fawen, hauing theyr playnes made ful of hackes, and notches, with the helpe of the fawe or such other instrumentes of iren. Vpon these tables standynge fumwhat a slope or declynynge, with a holowe shouel they cast a great quantitie of water myxt with the sayde sande, which they cast so, that the water runne downe directly alonge with the tables. And by this meanes the gold, as a matter most heuy, fauleth to the bottome of the fawne hackes, and there restynge and cleauynge fast, is so diuided from the sande. When therefore they perceane a sufficient quantitie of golde thus remaynynge on the tables, they gather it with diligence and put it in a tray or great shallowe dyshe of wod lyke vnto those which the golde finers vse: And in these they washe it more exactly ageyne and ageyne from al sylth or vnclenlynesse. This doone, they beate or mixte (or amalgame it as they caule it) with Mercurie or quickesyluer, whiche afterward they seperate ageyne from the same eyther by straynyng and pressynge it through a bagge of lether, or by styllynge or euaporatynge the quickesyluer from it in a styllatory of glasse and so fynde they the golde remaynynge in the bottome of the vessell in the lykenes of fine sande, which they bryng into a metalline body by meltyng it with a lyttle borage, or salt petre or blacke sope, and so cast it eyther in the forme of a wedge or a rodde, or otherwyse as lyketh them best. And this is the exacte maner of drawynge golde owte of the sandes of ryuers, which many haue vsed to theyr great commoditie: And that the rather bycause that in folowynge this order of woork in the pourynge and diuynge of golde, it shall not bee requisite as in other maner of practyses, to bee at greate charges by reason of many men which shall be needefull, with manye murals, fornaces, fiers, and dyuers artificers:

Where moste plentie of golde is found.
Cathay.

335

Golde in the Ilande[s] of the weste indies.
Golde in Europe.

The influenc[e] of heauen.

The mountaynes and stonnes in the whiche golde is engendered.

Lapis Lazuli.

Orpemente.

Golde in other metals.

Golde in the sandes of ryuers.

Gold in earth.

Golden duste.

Ryuers in the which gold is founde.

The washing and poureinge of golde.

Howe golde is deuided frome sande.

The Spanyardes make these dishes with handes.

The drawinge out of golde with quicke siluer.

336

From whence golde is deriued into the sandes of ryuers.

That golde is not engendered in the sandes of riuers.

This mater is apparent in the golde founde in the ryuers in the Indies.

The faule of waters from mountaynes.

337

Springs of water in moutaynes.

Vegetable golde growinge owt of the earthe.

Of this, reade *Alexander ab Alexandro. lib. 4. Genialium dierum. Cap. 9.*

Golde founde in A deade mans heade.

wheras in woorkyng after this forte, one man may suffice with one table and one holowe shoouell, with a lyttle quickefyluer and sufficient abundaunce of water. But lettyng passe to speake any further of these thynges: perhappes summe man wolde here demaunde from whence this golde is deriued into the sandes of the fayde ryuers, and whether it be brought thither by the water, or engendered there. As touchyng which question, I haue often tymes deliberated with my selfe not without great marueyle: and especially of that which is founde in the sandes of the ryuers of *Tefino, Adda, and Po*, bicaufe (wheras I haue fayde before that it is brought thither by the course of the water) I can not perceaue from whence it shuld be brought, forasmuch as there is no myne of golde, or of any other metal that is knowen, nere to any of those places. By reason wherof, my iudgemente is in maner confounded, feinge also that it is th[e]oppinion of certeyne wryters, that it is engendered euen where it is founde: The which, if it so be, it is not trewe that it is brought thither by the water. Ageyne, if it be engendered there, it seemeth to me a dyfficult thyng to comprehend whether it be brought furthe there by the vertue of the water or the earth, or the heauen. If furthermore any of these shuld be the cause of the generation hereof, it seemeth agreable to reason that it shulde bee both founde and engendered throughout all the beddes of such riuers, and at al tymes. And if the influence of heauen be the most prepotent cause of this effecte, then it seemeth to me that it shuld woork immediatly, bicaufe it can not otherwyse obserue th[e]order whiche nature vseth in the generation of metals: fyrst brynginge it furth to the open shewe, in the place where aboundeth the continuall-issheue of water, which owght also to be of such force as to remoue the earthy substaunce thereof from place to place, and not to intermixte such great inequalitye of couldenesse and moistnes. And albeit that this composition begunne in this order, shuld not be disseuered or broken by the waters of the ryuers, yet it appeareth to me that the showers of rayne and increase of fluddes, shulde be of sufficient poure to distemper, breake, and vtterly destroy all such compositions as shulde be engendered in such places, forasmuch al thynges are conceaued by rest and quietnesse after the commixtion of the fyrste elementes. And therefore if this golde of the ryuers, bee there engendered where it is founde, I wolde it were declared vnto me why it is engendered only in these places and not in other: and why in lyke maner, fyluer, copper, leade, or any other metals are not also engendered there as well as golde, beinge matters of an easyer composition of nature then it is, by reason of the perfecte vntie and concordance with puritie of substaunce and perfecte concoction which is in golde aboue all other metals: whereas also in many places in the territories of Rome, there are founde many sparkes of the mine of iren of blacke colour amonge the sandes of certeyne smaule ryuers: And yet these only in certeyne particular places of the fayde riuers: wherby it appeareth that these also, shulde not bee engendered where they are founde. By all which reasons and apparent effectes, it seemeth most agreable to truth that the golde which is found in such sandes, is rather brought thither by the water, then engendered there. And therefore to declare my mynde more playnely herein, I suppose that this chaunceth only in great ryuers which receaue abundaunce of waters of dyuers springes, fosses, and other ryuers, engendered partly of the meltyng of snowe and partly of great showers of rayne, whiche faulyng in certeyne chanelles from the toppes and fydes of [the]minerall mountaynes, wasshe away parte of the earth of their bankes and the ouerhanginge and holowe rockes which may conteyne the substaunce of golde: Or otherwyse, that in such places, there are ordinarie mines in the hygh mountaynes or other superficiall owt places, perhappes incessable and eyther such whyther men can not come for extreme heate or cold or other hynderaunces, or els such as they haue contemned to searce: And yet the same to bee so consumed by the force of water as we haue fayde, and by the course therof to bee caried into the ryuers. It may also chaunce that suche mynerall earthes bee farre within the mountaynes neare vnto such ryuers: And that in the space of many yeares, the sprynges isshewyng owt of the same, may eyther bee dried vp (whiche thyng hath byn seene) or els turne their course an other way So that it is no maruayle if in such a multitude of yeres, the trewe originall of these thynges bee vnknowne euen vnto them that dwell nere such places. But in fine, howe so euer it bee, trewe it is that golde is founde in the sandes of many riuers: And particularly (as I haue noted) in the forenamed ryuers. And if therefore I haue maruayled at this thyng, I owght worthely to bee excused, forasmuch as where iudgement can not be certified by reason or effectuall app[er]eance, there arise many doubtfull coniectures and newe causes of admiration. But yet do I maruel much more of an other thyng the which I am informed to bee most trewe by the report of many credible persons: That is, that in sum places of Hungarie at certeyne tymes of the yeare, pure golde spryngeth owt of the earthe in the lykenesse of smaule herbes, wrethed and twyned lyke smaule stalkes of hoppes, about the byggenesse of a pack threade, and foure syngers in length or fume a handfull. As concernyng which thyng, Plinie also in the. xxxiii. [thirty-third] boke of his naturall hyflorie, wryteth the lyke to haue chaunced in *Dalmatia* in his tyme. The which (if it bee trewe) suerly the husbande men of these fieldes shall reape heauenly and not earthly frutes, sent them of god from heauen, and brought furth of nature without their trauallye or arte. A grace doubtlesse most especial, fyth that in so great a quantitie of earth graunted to the possession of men, in maner onely this is thought woorthy so hygh a priuileage. But what shall I say of that wherof *Albertus Magnus* wryteth in his booke of minerals, affirmyng that he hath seene golde engendered in a

deade mans heade: And that the same beinge founde by chaunce in dyggyng, and perceaued by the weyght and coloure to conteyne sum minerall substance, was proued by experience to holde a portion of fine golde mixte with smaule sande. And in deede his woordes seeme to found to none other fence but only that this precious metall was engender[e]d there by the great disposition of the place and stronge influence of heauen: The which fuerlie is a thyng hardely to be beleued. Yet confyderyng the th[e] autoritie of so greate a clerke, with the force of the superiour causes and the maruelous poure of nature, I had rather gyue fayth hereto then raffhelly to contemne the iudgement of so greate a clarke. And forasmuche as I haue begun to tell yow of these effectes, I wyll not omitte to shewe yowe of a straunge thyng which chaunced also in a part of Hungarie, where a myne of golde was so found by chaunce and vnought for, that it may neuerthelesse be an aduertisement to other to searche diligently. So it is therefore, that a woman of the contrey beinge accustomed to resorte with her bucke of clothes to wasshe them in a certeyne fosse or dike where ranne a lyttle water, and vsyng to beate and rubbe them vpon a stone which seemed commodious for her purpose, chaunced at the length by her good fortune to espie on the stone, a veyne of golde traueyng or ouertwharunge the same abowte the byggenesse of a grose packe threede, shewyng fayre and bright by reason of her much rubbyng. Wherat marueylyng dayly more and more, at the length opened the matter to her familiars: who conferryng with such as hadde better skylle of the thyng, founde it in fine to bee a veyne of pure golde: And that the quarrie of that stone, traueled the course of the water of the fosse. Remouyng therfore the water, and turning the course thereof an other waye, they beganne to dygge and folow the mine which hath now continued certeyne. C. [hundred] yeares fence it was fyrst found: And hath not only greatly enriched that contrey, But also all Christendome hath had great commoditie by the same. This haue I rehearsed vnto yow the rather that yow shulde not bee negligent in any poynt or omitte any signe or token wherebye yowe may bee certified of greate thynges: not contemnyng the shadowe of any smaule tokens: but aswel to gyue attentue care and eye vnto them, as to feare and foresee all such thynges as may hynder. For (as yow may hereby well perceau) if credit had not fyrst byn gyuen to the woordes of the simple woman, and the thyng afterwarde well folowed, perhappes they shulde neyther nor euer hereafter haue enjoyed the frute of so great a commoditie. Men therefore of good courage folowyng suche ryche signes, dyd nother feare the smaulenesse of the veyne or hardnesse of the stone: presuppouslyng by good reason that golde and syluer can not lightly bee founde in so smaule quantitie, but that the same shal be able to surmounte the charges. And this the more, in howe much the further yowe shall enter into the stone, as chaunceth commonly in all other mynes. Albeit, the practised searchers, saye that the myne of golde is not founde in such great quantitie as are the mines of other metals. Wherin although perhappes they say trewly, yet dooth it not folowe but that golde also maye bee founde in greate quantitie. And fuerly it seemeth to me, that the benignitie of nature hath graunted large quantities thereof to the worlde, and that much hath euer byn and is founde amonge men, confyderyng in how many places it is dayly gathered afwel in mountaynes as in fandes of ryuers, byfyde that whiche is founde accompanied and ioyned with other metals. A further profe hereof may that bee, which is consumed and hydde by the dyuers inuentions of men: As that whiche the paynters bestowe in adournyng theyr woorkes: And goldefmythes both in gyltyng other metals and also in makyng dyuers woorkes of masse golde: byfyde that which the woorker of clothe of golde and arras doo consume: with such as imbrotherers and fylke women spende abowt the vanities of men and womens apparell and tyrementes. Also such as is consumed vpon trappers and furnimentes for horses, with gylted harnessse and such other sumptuousnesse as perteyneth to the warres and magnifical buyldinges of noble mens houses and temples: Byfyde that also whiche the couetousnesse of men hath hydde in stronge waules, and buried in the grounde, inclosed in chayned cofers locked with triple keyes: And that which serueth to the dayly vses of men and wandereth about the worlde through the handes of marchautes. The whiche thynges well confyded, who so thinketh that nature bringeth furth but lyttle golde, shall perceau that there is greate quantitie therof in the worlde, although there bee but fewe that haue so much as may satisfie the thirst of theyr couetousnesse. And to speake particularly of Italie, although there bee no myne of golde known in it, yet by the vertue and diligence of good wyttes, it hath euer and at all ages byn more ryche then many other prouinces: Notwithstandinge it hath often tymes byn spoyled and ouerrunne of dyuers nations, as nowe of late in owre tyme by the cruell handes of the Barbarians which entered into it abowt. xl. [forty] yeares paste. But who knoweth (as hath chaunced in the dayes of owre valient predicesors) whether Godde wyll ageyne gyue vs occasion to chastise them and so to inuade theyr regions that wee maye woonne owre owne ageyne with increase of dowble vsurie. Or if he wyll not permitte this, perhappes he wyll graunte vs to fynde sum ryche myne of golde. For, confyderyng and feyng that this owre region of Italie is replenyshed with as many excellent thynges as in maner heauen can gyue to any habitable place, it is not to bee thought that this benefite of golde shulde bee wantyng, wheras it bryngeth furth such plentie of al other mines except this of golde and tynne. And yet doo I verely beleue that it is not without the mynes of these also, although they be not yet discouered to the knowlege of men: As I am persuaded bothe by the golde that is founde in the sayd ryuers, and also by the dyuers and sundry

A myne of golde
founde by chaunce.

A veyne of golde
in a stone.

No signes to be
omitted.

338

Golde is not
founde in like
quantitie as are
other metals.
Argumentes of
plentye of golde.

Howe diuers
wayes golde is
consumed.

Many haue to
muche, but fewe
haue enough.
Italie wasted by
the barbarians.

Commendacion
of Italie

Golde and tynne

Meane minerals.

The golde of
Italie.

Golde containd
in other metals.

The maner of
pourginge of golde.

339

Lapis lazuli.

Asure.

Howe golde is
drawn frome
Lapis lazuli with
quickefilyuer.

The baine or
test of leade.

The maner of
pourginge golde
with leade.

Whether silyuer
haue A mine by
hit selfe or no.

Georgius Agricola.
A table of mineral
silyuer.

The workes of
nature.

Mixte metales.

meane minerals which are founde in many places and adiudged of the practicionars to bee certeyne cleare tokens of theyr proper and natural agentes. But for that they are not found, felte, or feene, we owght not therby to affirme that they are not. To conlude therefore, I thinke that in owr partes of Italie, pure golde is none other wayes founde (excepte that which is currant amonge the marchauntes) then after twoo fortes, wherof the one is that which is founde in the sandes of ryuers: And the other, that whiche is gotten by the industrious and subtyle art of partyng gold from new silyuer, or from giltung silyuer, or other metals which hold gold, as there are in maner but fewe which hold not sum smaull portion therof, more or lesse according to the mixtion and permanencie of theyr substances, or accordyng to the qualitie and force of the planettes which expresse theyr influence in the generation of them. And in fine, this is the golde that which is founde in owre partes of Italie. Nowe therefore to returne to the matter whereof is owre chiefe intente to intreate, hauynge before spoken sufficiently of the generation and inuention of the myne of golde, I wyll further declare vnto yowe howe it owght to be poured from earthly superfluitie, and especially that whiche is founde lyinge in the forme of veynes, and although I haue not feene the edifi[c]es and engens wherwith the myners are accustomed to get it owt, yet wyll I shewe yow howe by other practises I haue learned to pourge it, that yow may not bee without sum knowlege yf your fortune shalbe so good as to synde any in Italy. When yow haue therefore dygged owt the myne and placed it in order, yow owght to confider in what kynde of stone it is engendered. And if it bee in that which is cauled *Lapis Lazuli*, then muste yow so drawe owte the golde that yowe also faue the stone, bycause perfecte Asure is made therof, and such as the paynters caule *Azurro Oltramario*, that is, Asure of beyonde the fea, which they greatly esteeme and bye it deare. And to do this, it is necessary that yowe fyrst beate it into fine pouder, and then put it in a trey or brode treene dysshe, and wasshe it fayre and cleane with water. This done amalgame, or rubbe it well with quickefilyuer vntyll it haue lycked vppe and drawne al the golde into it and left the stone pure of it selfe. Then strayne the quickefilyuer from the golde through a bagge of lether, or vapour it away in a styllatorie of glasse: And thus shal yowe synde the golde in the bottome of the vessell in maner pure without quickefilyuer, as I haue sayde before. And if yow haue no respecte to faue the stone, it shall suffice to vse the common experience, meltyng it in a furnace in a bayne or teste of leade. But in my opinion, the best maner to brynge it to purenesse, is fyrst to burne the mine with a gentell fyre in an open furnace, and to suffer it to euaporate well if it bee not in such stone as yowe desyre to faue. Then grynde it in a mylle or beate it with pestel'es adapted with a wheele vntyll it be brought to fine pouder. And when yow haue wel wasshed it and so much wasted the superfluous earthynesse therof, then put it in a teste made accordyng to the quantitie of the same, and melt it therin with leade whiche yowe shall consume partely by vapoure and partely with drawyng it owt by the fyde of the teste (as is the maner) vntyll yowe come to the pure golde whiche yowe shall in fine brynge to perfecte purenesse in vterly consumyng the remanent of the leade with vehement fire increased by the helpe of stronge bellows. And this is the vniuersal maner which yow may vse not only in pourgyng the myne of golde, but also the mynes of all other metals.

☞ Of the myne of silyuer and the qualitie therof.



Here are (as I vnderstande) diuers opinions emonge the practicionars of the mynes, whether silyuer haue a proper myne by it selfe or no. The reasons of suche as writte of the natures of mineralles, and th[e] autoritie of the most, persuaide me to assent to the affirmatiue: Not only to see the naturall matter distincte, as is to perceau in the mynes of golde, copper, leade and other metals whiche in theyr mynes are found pure by them selues without mixtion, but also that I vnderstand that there hath bin found likewyse certeyne pieces afwell of this mettall of silyuer, as of gold and copper, brought to his laste synesse by th[e] only worke of nature. And this dooth *Georgius Agricola* a lerned man of Germany confirme in his booke of minerals where he writteth that in Saxonie there was found in a caue a piece of mineral silyuer of such bignes, that the duke the prince and patrone of that place, caused a chayre and square dynyng table after the maner of Almanye to be made therof withowte any further worke of mans hande: Gloryng often tymes that in this thyng he furmounted the greatnesse and magnificence of the Emperoure. But in deede (excepte copper) I haue feene no metall taken owte of the caue pure withowt his vre. Yet doo I beleue it a thyng possible, consyderinge the greate force and poure of nature, th[e] ende of whose woorkyng euer intendeth to bringe all thynges to perfection as farre as it is not otherwyse hyndered. Yet (as I haue sayde) of the moste parte of those mynes whiche I haue feene, none of them haue byn withowt mixture, not only of the earthe of their owne proper myne, but haue byn also myxte with other metals: And especially this of silyuer more then any other, excepte onlye that which was digged in *Schio*, in *Vicentina*. And therefore not withowt sum shadow of apparent reason, haue suche doubttes risin

amonge the practitioners of the mynes. And yet (as I haue sayd) I beleue that siluer may haue and hath his proper mine, forasmuche as euery substance that maye be conuerted into metall, may a swell stande by it selfe pure in his owne kynde, as eyther feperate or mixte with other, as is often times seene in one masse in the whiche diuers metals are conteyned and engendered by nature. And by this meanes it often chaunceth that he that speaketh of the mine of siluer, may with the same brethe and without distinction, speake also of all other metales, forasmuche as there are but fewe mynes which are not mixte with other. But bycause the moste noble and ryche metals haue obteyned the prerogatiue to be esteemed aboute other, therefore the name of the myne is gyuen to them wher they are mixte with other: as the mynes which holde copper, leade, or iren, (as doo the moste parte) yet if they holde also golde or syluer, they are cauled gold mynes or syluer mynes, according vnto that which is founde in them to bee of most value. But to lette passe this matter, yowe shall further vnderstande that when suche mynes are mixte of dyuers metals, they shew furth so much the more diuers and variable fumosities of tinctures and marchasites, as signes where they bee and of what purenesse: forasmuch as euery of them according to theyr natures, exalte theyr colours which they shewe furthe to the eye, sum in the similitude of asurine or blewe stones, sum greene, sum yelow, and sum of vndistinct colours accordyng to the compositions and mixtures of the fyrst matters of metals, which is also the cause that they are founde more or lesse in quantitie. Nowe to speake more particularly of this metall of syluer, the philosphers speculatores of naturall thynges, saye that it is engendered of substance more watery then fyerie, of complexion feminine and flegmatike in comparison to gold: receauynge more of th[e] influence of the moone then of the son, and therefore engendered more in coulde regions nerer vnto the moone, then in hotte regions vnder the foonne: consistyng also of pure elementes, although sumwhat crude and vndygested in respecte of the elementes of golde as may bee plainly perceaued by theyr colours, weyght, and fixation. The practitioners affirme that it is engendered in a stone lyke vnto *Albazano*, and also in an other stone of a ruffet, deade, and darke colour: And is often tymes founde in an other stone lyke vnto *Treuertino* or in *Treuertino* it selfe. The myne hereof, is very ponderous, and hathe in it often tymes certeyne shynynge graynes: The which howe much the lesse they are like to the poynte of a needle so muche is the myne founde to bee the perfecter, bycause this is a token of purenesse and fixation. And when it is founde in a whyte stone, or leade stone, it is so muche the better, bycause it maye be the easyer poured from the stone and earthynesse. When also it is founde lyeing as it were loofe amonge certeyne scales or cloddes of earth, they saye that it is perfecte, although it haue not to the eye suche replendence as other are wonte to haue. They say also that it is engendered in an earth of darke ruffet colour: And that when it is founde in this, it is of great quantitie and perfection, and that there is great plentie therof within the mountayne: This also to be so much the better in howe much more it is shynynge of the coloure of iren or redde. And that yowe may the better comprehend the signes of the myne of the foresayde metall, yowe shall vnderstand that euen together with the myne, eyther where it is fyrst founde, or nere vnto the same, yowe shall see certeyne marchasites of yelow colour lyke vnto golde. The which, the more they holde of suche hyghe colour, so much the more do they shewe adufl or burnt matter and heate, as thynges contrary to the nature of theyr metals. And therefore accordyng to the degrees of suche colours, yow may in maner iudge of what fatnes or leanenesse the myne is lyke to bee. Such marchasites therefore as shewe the best signes of the goodnesse of theyr mynes, owght in coloure to approche to whytenesse as much as may bee, and to consist of smaule graynes, and not in greate quantitie. And this is a generall rule of all marchasites, that howe much the narrower and lesse they are, the more do they shewe the goodnesse of theyr myne. This myne of syluer is also often times founde in a veyne of great quantitie, and yet so leane in qualitie that it wyll not beare the charge of the dyggyng, because it is founde in a harde stone lyke vnto *Albazano*, beinge verie harde to bee dygged or broken. Sum tymes also, it is found in the company of copper or leade: The which lykewyse if it do not furmount the value of the charges, it is not to bee folowed. Otherwhyles also, it fo chaunceth that these thre metals are founde accompanied together in one myne: In whiche case it shalbe necessarie to vse aduertisement of arte. And presuppofynge that yowe desyre to separate the syluer frome the other metall, it is necessarie that yowe increase the leade. But if yow passe not to faue neyther the syluer nor the leade, but only the copper, it shalbe requisite to proceade with longe and great fyers vntyl the weakest matters bee consumed. But this owght to be doone especially in such mines as hold iren. Yet neyther for this or thofe, can there any general rule be gyuen, but that accordyng vnto theyr qualitie and nature, so owght they to be diuided: And this so much the more in that they are often tymes mixte with sum drye earthe, or with a quantitie of antimonie or arsenike, which are matters altogether euaporable and burnt, or of harde substance to bee reduced to fusion or meltyng: In so much that the artificers sumtymes beinge ouercome of them, leaue them as thynges vnprofitable. Wherof there can none other cause often times be gyuen, then theyr owne ignorance by reason of extraordinarie and longe fyers whiche they gyue them. And therefore they worke inordinately in such kynd of mynes, except they accompanie them in the fusion or meltyng with such thynges as may defende them from the fyer. For wheras is suche abun-

340
Diuers metals in one masse.

In the Indies golde founde in greate quantitie, pure and vnmixte.

The coulours of mineral fumosities.

The generacion and qualitie of siluer.

The influences of the moone.

Stones in the which syluer is engendered.

The myne of syluer.

The mountayne.

Marchasites of syluer.

What marchasites are the beste signes.

Syluer myn[e]s in harde stones.

Syluer with copper or leade.

The deuyding of siluer from other metals.

341

Iren.

Metals mixte with Antimonie or Arsenike

Howe metals are preserued in fusion.

Sulphur and
mercury.

Grinding and
wasshinge of
mynes.

The amalgamyng
of mines with
Mercury.

Mines holdyng
the fourth part
of siluer.

Copper holdinge
syluer.

Three vnces vi. of
siluer in euery
hundreth of mine
War betwene
Maximilian
Th[e]mperour
and the Venecians.

The mynes of
Almanye.

The marchasite
mixte with the
myne.

daunce eyther of burnte matter, or of superfluous waterynesse, wherof the one is cauled *Sulphur* or brymstone, and the other Mercurie or quickfyluer not fixed, or arfenike, it is necessarie that the one burne the fyluer, and the other cary it a way, so that of the myne there resteth none other then an earthye substaunce infusible and not able to bee molten. To faue the fayde myne therefore it shalbe requisite to vse discretion with much pacience and conueniente meanes, fyrste after the common maner of woorkyng to euaporate the myne (as we haue fayde) or withowt euaporation to grinde it fmaule: then to wasshe it often, and in fine, if not by great fyers, at the leaste by great baynes or testes of leade to poure it. And to bryng this effect the more easely to passe as much as may be, after that it is grounde yow owght to proue in the fame grindyng or in an other, if it may be amalgamed with Mercurie which is the best maner of profe, if the myne bee of a drye nature: And I knowe that it hath bynne vsed of many to theyr greate profyte: And especially in those forte of mynes which I fayde before to bee dygged in *Vigentina* in *Schio*, beinge very ryche and good. Proue it therefore. For all kyndes of mines do not receaue it. And of this wherof I haue spoken, I haue intelligence that there hath bynne pieces founde holdyng a fourth part of fyluer, and fum more then halfe. And this was founde lyeing in maner in the superficial part of the earth: and fum tymes in pathes and high wayes. It hath also bin founde vnder the rootes of fuche trees as haue byn ouerthrowen by tempeste: and this very perfecte. So that emonge all the mynes whiche I haue seene in the dominions of Venice, as in Carnia and in many other places, I can not saye that I haue seene any better: Although there bee many caues wherof the most parte are of copper holdinge fyluer: and emonge other, that in the mountayne of *Auanzo*, where I in the company of certeyne other gentlemen caused a caue to bee digged. And bycause the hole charge was committed to mee, I wente by occasion twyfe into high Almanye to see the mynes of that countrey, wherby I might haue the better experience to faule to practyse at my returne. In so much that I founde the mine which we had taken in hande to folowe, to bee very good and ryche: holdyng more then three vnces and a halfe of fyluer in euery hundreth of the myne. And doubtlesse we shuld haue obteyned great commoditie hereby if fortune at that tyme had not raysed warre betwene Maximilian Th[e]mperoure and the signorie of Venec: which was the cause that those places of *Frioli* and *Carnia*, coulde not be quietly inhabited: whereby we were enforced to forsake owre enterpryse, and to rafe and destroy th[e] order which we had begunne. And by reason that the warres continued longe, we were constrained to diuide owr company, where I also departed an other way, hauyng euer in mynde to folowe owre attempted enterpryse when better oportunitie shulde serue. In the meane tyme returnyng ageine into hyghe Almanie, I made more diligent searche to knowe the mynes then before: and went to *Sbozzo*, *Plaipe*, *I[n]spruch*, *Alla*, and *Arottinbergh*: frome whense I wente into dyuers places of Italy. So that to conclude, the most and best mynes whiche I haue seene to holde most of fyluer, are those that are founde in *Vicentina* in certeyne stoness of a dark grey, or ruffet colour, as I haue fayde before. And nowe for a generall aduertisement, I wyll not omit to tell yow, that when yow haue attempted to dygge any mynes, and haue founde the marchasite and the myne myxt togyther, yowe shall leaue of yowre woork, bycause it signifieth that the myne is neare to the superficial part of the earth, and that it is of but lyttle quantitie. And thus as touchyng this myne of fyluer, I can say no more sauyng that I haue not yet shewed yowe the maner of poureyng it from earthely grofenes and to bryng it to perfect metall. But bycause I haue determined to speake largely hereof in the proper place of the fusion or meltyng of all metals, I haue thought good to speake no further of this matter at this presente.

THE MANER OF WORKYNGE IN GOLDE
MYNES IN EGIPTTE IN OWLD TYME, AFTER THE
DESCRIPTION OF DIODORVS SICVLVS, WHO WROTTE HIS HISTORIE
cauled Bibliotheca, sumwhat before the dayes of th[e]mperoure
Octavianus Augustus, and before th[e]incarnation of
Christ about. xl. [forty] yeares.

He wryteth therefore in his fourthe booke as foloweth.



WE haue not thought good to premit howe golde is founde, digged, and wrought amonge the Egiptians. In the confines therefore of Egipte where it borthereth with Ethiopia and Arabia, there are certeyne places frutefull of metalles, owt of the whiche, golde is digged with great labour and expenes. For a blacke earthe of minerale nature, hath certeyne vaynes of moste white marble exceedinge bright and shyninge. The surueyours of this woorke, haue assigned them a great company of men to woorke and coyne golde. For the kinges of Egipte are accustomed to appoynte to these paynefull trauailes, all suche as haue byn conuicte for certeyne crimes and condemned by lawes, or taken prisioners in the warres, or suche as haue byn committed to prision through the indignation of princes who by this meanes haue bothe great vantage by theyr labour, and punyssh them sufficiently for theyr offenses. For barbarous and strange fouldiers of diuers languagies, bare rule ouer them and keepe them to theyr worke, in suche sorte that th[e]use of speache beinge taken from theym, they can not bee corrupted by loue or intreatie. They drawe golde owt of the hardest earth decocte with much fyre. The softest stone which is broken with meane labour, is digged with instruments of iren by the trauaile of many thousands of men. The scier which decerneth the veines of the myne, go[er]th before the workemen, appoynting them the places where they shall digge. The marble stone whiche he sheweth them, they breake and cleaue with wedgies of iren by the mere strenght of theyr bodies withoute arte. They make theyr fosse or caue, not right furthe, but as the bright nature of the golden marble leadeth them, beinge otherwyse darke and obscure by reason of theyr fundry turnes and bendinges diuers wayes. The labourers caryinge lyght before theyr for[e]heades, digge great stoncs owt of the myne, whiche they let faule on the ground. From this labour they neuer rest, inforced to contynual woorke with strokes and contumelious wordes. Children of th[e]age of. xii. [twelue] or. xiii. [thirteen] yeares or vppewarde, are diuided into two companyes, whereof the one breake the stoncs into smaule pieces, and the other cary furth that which is broken. They that are past th[e]age of. xxx. [thirty] yeares, receaue the fayd broken stoncs at theyr hands and beate them in vessels of stone with maules of iren, to the quantitie of tares or fytches: which afterward they cast into many milles, whereby the labour of two or three women or owlde men to euery mylle, they are grounde as smaule as meale. The sylthinesse of the bodies of these labourers, is apparent to all men. For not so muche as their priuie members are couered with any thinge: And theyr bodies bysyde so fylthy, that no man can beholde them without compassion of theyr miserie. But no pitie, no reste, no remission is graunted them, whether they bee men or women, younge or owlde, fycke or feeble: But are all with strokes inforced to continuall labour vntyl the poore wretches faynt and often tymes dye for extreme debilitie: In so much that many of them for feare of theyr lyfe to coomme (which they thynke woorse then the present payne) preferre death before lyfe. When they haue thus grounde the stoncs very smaule, they cast that substauce vppon brode tables inclynynge sumwhat steepe or standynge a slope, and cast water thereon, sterynge continually the fayde powder of marble: by the meanes wherof the earth and vre of the myne is washed away, and the golde as the heauier matter remayneth on the tables. When they haue doone thus often tymes, they ouerturne the golde continually with theyr handes and rub it with thynne sponges, owt of the which they presse a soft earth, and thus continewe vntyll the pure metall remayne lyke vnto golden sande. After that this preparation is synysshed, other workemen receaynge it at theyr handes by measure and weyght, cast it into earthen pottes, puttyng thereto a certeyne portion of leade, with branne of barley, and weedes of the sea cauled reites or oufe. These thynges proportioned accordingly, they close the pottes diligently with cley, and so let them stand in a furnesse with fyre for the space of fyue continuall dayes and nyghtes. In which space, al other thynges of contrary mixture beinge consumed, only the golde is found in the vessels, sumwhat dimynysshed of the fyrst weyght. And by this labour and diligence is golde possessed in the furthest parte of Egypt. Wherby, euen nature her selfe teacheth vs howe laborious it is in syndynge, tedious in purfynge, daungerous in keepynge, and in vse constitute betwene pleasure and forowe.

Gold in a black earthe, and white marble

Then damned to the metales as now to the gallies.

The scier of the vayne.

Golden marble.

The woorke of chyl dren.

Mylles.

The misery of the miners

The pouringe of the metall frome the vre.

The melting of golde.
343

Alge.

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

—o—

SECTION VII.

*The first two Voyages out of
England into Guinea.*

1553-1554 A.D.]

THE DESCRIPTION OF THE TWO VIAGES MADE OWT OF ENGLAND INTO GVINEA IN AFFRIKE

AT THE CHARGES OF CERTEYNE MARCHAVNTES ADVENTVRERS

of the citie of London, in the yeare of owre Lorde.

M. D. LIII.



That these vyages to Guinea are placed after the booke of Metals as separate from other vyages, the cause hereof is, that after I had deliuered the sayde booke of metalles to the handes of the printers, I was desyred by certeyne my frendes to make summe mention of these vyages, that sum memorie myght thereof remayne to owr posteritie if eyther iniquitie of tyme consumynge all thinges, or ignoraunce creepynge in by barbarousnesse and contempte of knoweledge, shulde hereafter bury in obliuion so woorthy attemptes, so much the greatlyer to bee esteemed as before neuer enterpryfed by Englysshe men, or at the leaste so frequented as at this present they are and may bee to the greate commoditie of owre marchauntes, if the same be not hyndered by th[e]ambision of such as for the conquestynge of fortie or fyftie myles here and there, and erectynge of certeyne fortresses or rather blockhouses amonge naked people, thinke them selues woorthy to bee lordes of ha'fe the worlde, enuyng that other shulde enioy the commodities which they them selues can not holy possesse. And although such

as haue byn at charges in the discouerynge and conquestynge of such landes, owght by good reason to haue certeyne priuilegies, preeminencies, and tributes for the same, yet (to speake vnder correction) it may seeme sumwhat rigorous and ageynst good reason and conscience, or rather ageynst the charitie that owght to bee amonge Chrysten men, that such as violently inuade the dominions of other, shuld not permit other frendly to vse the trade of marchandies in places neuer or seldome frequented of them, wherby theyr trade is not hindered in such places where they them selues haue at theyr owne election appoynted the martes of theyr trafike. But forasmuche as at this presente it is not my intent to accuse or defend, approue or improue, I wil cease to speake any further hereof, and proceade to the description of the fyrst viage as briefly and faythfully as I was aduertised of the same by th[e]information of such credible persons as made diligent inquisition to knowe the truth hereof as much as shalbe requisite, omyttinge to speake of many particular thynges not greatly necessarie to be knowen: whiche neuerthelesse with also th[e]exact course of the nauigation, shal be more fully declared in the second vyage. And if herein fauoure or frendshyppe shall perhaps cause sum to thinke that sum haue byn sharply touched, let them laye a parte fauoure and frendshippe and gyue place to truth, that honest men may receaue prayse for well doynge, and lewde persons reproche as the iust stipende of theyr euyll desertes, wherby other may bee deterred to do the lyke, and vertuous men encouraged to proceade in honest attemptes.

But that these vyages may bee more playnely vnderstode of al men, I haue thought good for this purpose before I intreate hereof, to make a breefe description of Affrica beinge that greate parte of the worlde, on whose Weste syde begynneth the coast of Guinea at Cabo Verde abowt the. xii. [twelve] degrees in latitude on this syde the Equinoctiall line, and two degrees in longitude from the measuryng line, so runnyng from the north to the south and by east in sum places within v. iiii. and. iii. degrees and a halfe within the Equinoctiall, and so furth in maner directly east and by north for the space of. xxxvi. [thirty-six] degrees or there abowt in longitude from the West to the East, as shall more playnely appere in the descryption of the seconde vyage.

Ambition.

Africa.

The coast of
Guinea.

A BREEFE DESCRIPTION OF AFFRIKE.

Tunes.
Bugia.
Tripoli.
Numidia.

Ilandes of Tunes.
Malta.
The disertes of Libia.

Barbarie.
Mauritania.
The kingdomes of Fes and marrock.
Tremesin.
Oram.
Nassaquiber
Salla.
Azamor.

The Ilandes of Canarie.
Guinea.
Ethiopiens.

Marrocko.
Fes.
Tremesin.
Guinea.

Africa the great.

Affrike the lesse.

Carthage.

Prester Iohn.

Cape de Buona Speranza.
The sea of sande.
Alcair.

From whence the queene of Saba came.
Manicongni.

The earthly Paradyse.
The trees of the sonne and moone.



IN Affrica the lesse are these kyngedomes: The kyngedome of Tunes, and Constantina which is at this day vnder Tunes, and also the region of Bugia, Tripoli, and Ezzab. This part of Affrike is very baren by reason of the greate desertes, as the desertes of Numidia and Barcha. The principall portes of the kyngedome of Tunes are these: Goletta, Bizerta, Portofarnia, Boua, and Stora. The chiefe cities of Tunes, are Constantia and Boua with dyuers other. Vnder this kyngedome are many Ilandes, as Zerbi, Lampadola, Pantalarea, Limofa, Beit, Gamelaro, and Malta where at this presente is the greate mafter of the Rodes. Vnder the southe of this kyngedome, are the great desertes of Libia. Al the nations [of] this Africa the less, are of the secte of Machomet and a rusticall people luyng scattered in vyllages. The beste of this parte of Affrike, is Barbaria lying on the coaste of the sea Mediterraneum.

Mauritania (nowe cauled Barbaria) is diuided in two partes, as Mauritania Tingitania, and Cefariensis. Mauritania Tingitania, is nowe cauled the kyngdome of Fes and the kyngedome of Marrocko. The principall citie of Fes, is cauled Fessa: and the chiefe citie of Marrocko, is named Marrocko. Mauritania Cefariensis is at this day cauled the kyngedome of Tremisen, with also the citie cauled Temisen or Trelensin. This region is full of desertes, and reacheth to the sea Mediterraneum to the citie of Oram with the porte of Massaquiber. The kyngedome of Fes reacheth vnto the Ocean sea from the West to the citie of Argilla: and the porte of the fayde kyngedome is cauled Salla.

The kyngedome of Marrocko is also extended aboue the Ocean sea vnto the citie of Azamor and Azafi whiche are aboue the Ocean sea towarde the West of the fayde kyngdome. In Mauritania Tingitanea (that is to say in the two kyngedomes of Fes and Marrocko) are in the sea, the Ilandes of Canarie cauled in owlde tyme the fortunate Ilandes. Toward the south of this region, is the kyngedome of Guinea, with Senega, Iaiou, Gambra, and manye other regions of the blacke Moores cauled Ethiopians or Negros, all whiche are watered with the ryuer Negro cauled in owlde tyme Niger. In the fayde regions are no cities: but only certeyne lowe cotages made of bouwes of trees plastered with chauke and covered with strawe: In these regions are also very great desertes.

The kyngedome of Marrocko hath vnder it these feuen kyngedomes: Hea, Sus, Guzula, the territorie of Marrocko, Duchala, Hazchora, and Telde. The kyngedome of Fes hath as many: as Feś, Temefne, Azgar, Elabath, Errifi, Garet, and Elcauz. The kyngedome of Tremisen hath these regions: Tremisen, Tenez, and Elgazaet, all which are Machometistes. But all the regions of Guinea are pure Gentyles and Idolatours without profession of any religion or other knowlege of god then by the lawe of nature.

Africa the great, is one of the three partes of the worlde known in owlde tyme and feuered from Asia, on the East by the ryuer Nilus: On the West, from Europe by the pillers of Hercules. The hyther part is nowe cauled Barbarie, and the people Moores. The inner parte is cauled Libia and Ethiopia. Affrike the lesse is in this wyfe bounded: On the west it hath Numidia: On the east Cyrenaica: On the north, the sea cauled Mediterraneum. In this countrye was the noble citie of Carthage.

In the East syde of Affrike beneth the redde sea, dwelleth the greate and myghtye Emperour and Chrystian kyng Prester Iohan, well known to the Portugales in theyr vyages to Calicut. His dominions reache very farre on euery syde: and hath vnder hym many other kynges both Chrystian and hethen that pay hym tribute. This myghty prynce is cauled Dauid Th[e]mperour of Ethiopia. Sum wryte that the kyng of Portugale fendeth hym yearly. viii. [eight] shyppes laden with marchaundies. His kyngedome confineth with the redde sea, and reacheth farre into Affrike towarde Egypte and Barbarie. Southwarde it confineth with the sea towarde the cape de Buona Speranza: and on the other syde with the sea of sande cauled *Mare de Sabione*, a very daungerous sea, lyinge betwene the great citie of Alcaer or Cairo in Egypte and the countrey of Ethiopia: In the whiche way are many vnhabitable desertes continuinge for the space of fyue dayes iorney. And they affirme that if the fayde Chrystian Emperour were not hyndered by those desertes (in the which is great lacke of vittayles and especially of water) he wolde or nowe haue inuaded the kyngedome of Egypte and the citie of Alcayer. The chiefe citie of Ethiope where this great Emperour is resydent, is cauled Amacaiz beinge a fayre citie, whose inhabitauntes are of the coloure of an olyue. There are also many other cities, as the citie of Saa vpon the ryuer of Nilus where Th[e]mperoure is accustomed to remayne in the foommer seafon. There is lykewyse a great citie named Barbaregaf: And Afcon from whence it is fayde that the queene of Saba came to Ierusalem to heare the wysdome of Salomon. This citie is but lyttle, yet very fayre and one of the chiefe cities in Ethiope. In the fayde kyngdome is a prouince cauled Manicongni, whose kyng is a Moore and tributarie to Th[e]mperour of Ethiope. In this prouince are many excedyng hyghe mountaynes vpon the which is fayde to be the earthly Paradyse: And sum say that there are the trees of the foonne and moone whereof the antiquitie maketh mention: yet that none can passe thither by reason of greate desertes of a hundreth dayes iorney. Also beyonde these mountaynes, is the cape of Buona Speranza. And to haue fayde thus much of Affrike it may suffice.

THE FYRST VYAGE TO GVINEA.



N the yeare of owre Lorde. M. D. LIII. the. xii. [twelfth] day of August, sayled from Porchemouth two goodly shyppes, the Primrofe and the Lion, with a pynnesse cauled the moone: beinge all well furnysshed aswell with men of the lustiest forte to the number of feuen score, as also with ordinaunce and vyttayles requisite to such a vyage: Hauynge also two capitaynes, the one a straunger cauled Antoniades Pinteado a Portugale, borne in a towne named the porte of Portugale, a wyfe, discrete, and sober man, who for his cunnynge in faylynge beinge aswell an expert pylot as polytyke capitayne, was sumtyme in greate fauoure with the kynge of Portugale, and to whom the coastes of Brasile and Guinea were comytted to bee kepte from the Frenchemen to whom he was a terroure on the sea in those partes: and was furthermore a gentleman of the kinge his masters house. But as fortune in maner neuer fauoureth but flattereth, neuer promifeth but deceaueth, neuer rayseth but casteth downe ageyne, and as great wealth and fauour hath alwayes companions emulation and enuie,

he was after many aduerfites and quarels made ageynst hym, inforced to come into Englande: where in this golden vyage he was euyll matched with an vnequall coompanion and vnlyke matche of most fundry qualities and conditions with vertues few or none adourned, with vices dyuers and many fowly spotted, knowen of many without profyte, and defyred of fewe or none for his wyckednes: whose smaule acquayntaunce was profitable to all men, and his familiar conuersation an vndoinge, that happye was the man or woman that knewe hym not, he for his gooddes and she for her name. In fine, vnfortunate was the coompany that had owght to doo with hym: in so much that it was no maruayle that so goodly an enterpryse with so noble a furniture of men, shyppes, and ordinaunce of all fortes, with all kynde of vyttayles and that of so great abundaunce, had so smaule successe: which could be none otherwyse wher so foule a spotte dyd blemyshe, ye rather deface the rest. Thus departed these noble shyppes vnder sayle on theyr vyage. But first this capitayne Wyndam, puttyng furth of his shyp at Porchmouth, a kynfeman of one of the headde marchautes, and shewynge herein a muster of the tragical partes he had conceaued in his brayne, and with such smaule begynnings nurysshed so monstrous a byrth, that more happy, yea and blessed was that younge man beinge leste behynde then if he had byn taken with them, as sum doo wysshe he had doonne the lyke by theyrs. Thus sayled they on theyr vyage vntyl they came to the Ilandes of Madera where they toke in certeyne wynes for the store of theyr shyppes, and payde for them as they agreed of the price. At these Ilandes they met with a great galion of the kynge of Portugale full of men and ordinaunce: yet suche as coulde not haue preuayled if it had attempted to withstande or resyft owre shyppes, for the which cause it was fet furth, not only to lette and interrupte these owre shyppes of theyr purposed vyage, but all other that shulde attempte the lyke: Yet chiefly to frustrate owre vyage. For the kyng of Portugale was finisterly informed that owre shyppes were armed to his castel of Mina in these parties, wheras nothing lesse was ment.

After that owr shyppes departed from the Ilandes of Madera forwarde on theyr vyage, began this woorthy capitaine Pinteados forowe as a man tormented with the company of a terrible hydra who hytherto flattered with hym and made hym a fayre countenance and shewe of loue. Then dyd he take vpon hym to commaunde all alone, settynge nowght bothe by capitayne Pinteado with the reste of the marchaunte factours: sumtymes with opprobrious woordes and sumtymes with threatenynge most shamefully abusynge them, takeinge from Pinteado the feruice of the boys and certeyne mariners that were assigned hym by th[e] order and direction of the woorshypfull marchautes, and leauynge hym as a common maryner, which is the greatest despite and greefe that can be to a Portugale or Spanyarde to be diminyshite theyr honoure which they esteeme aboue all rycheffe. Thus saylyng forward on theyr vyage, they came to the Ilandes of Canarie, continuynge theyr course from thense vntyl they arryued at the Ilande of faynt Nicolas where they vyttayled them selues with fresseh meate of the

The Prymrose
The Lyon.
The Moone

Pinteado.

Brasile.
Guinea.

The flattering of
fortune.

The euell
conditions of
Wyndam.

The Ilandes of
Madera.

A galion of
the kinge of
Portugale.

The castel of
Mina.

346
Howe Wyndam
abused Pinteado.

The Ilandes of
Canarie.
The Ilande of
S. Nicolas.

Guinea.

The ryuer of
Sesto.
Graynes.

The thirst of golde.

The castel of
mena.
The quantit[i]e of
golde.

Benin.

Pepper.

Furie admitteth
no counsaie.

The Rossia.

Rottinge heate.

Scorchinge heate.

Benin.

Francisco.
Nicolas Lambert.
The kyng of
Benin his court.

347

Reuerence
toward the kyng.The
communication
betwene the kyng
of Benin and owr
men.

Pepper.

The kynges
gentlenesse
toward owr men.

fleshe of wyld goates whereof is great plentie in that Ilande and in maner of nothyng else. From hence folowynge on theyr course, and tarynge here and there at the deserte Ilandes in the waye, bycause they wolde not coome to tymely to the countrey of Guinea for the heate, and tarynge sumwhat to longe (for what can bee wel mynstred in a common wealthe where inequalitye with tyrannie wyll rule alone) they came at the length to the fyrst lande of the countrey of Guinea where they fell with the great ryuer of Sesto where they myght for theyr marchaundies haue laden theyr shyppes with the graynes of that countrey, which is a very hotte frute, and much lyke vnto a fygge as it groweth on the tree. For as the fygges are full of fmaule feedes, so is the sayde frute ful of graynes which are lose within the codde, hauynge in the myddest thereof a hole on euery fyde. This kynde of spice is much vsed in coulde countreys, and may there be solde for great aduantage for th[e]xchange of other wares. But owr men by the perswasion or rather inforcement of this tragicall capitayne, not regardynge and fettyng lyght by that commoditie in comparason to the fine gold they thirsted, sayled an hundreth leaques further vntyl they came to the golden lande: where not attemptinge to come nere the castell perteynyng to the kyng of Portugale, whiche was within the ryuer of Mina, made sale of theyr ware onely on this fyde and beyonde it for the golde of that countrey to the quantitie of an hundreth and fiftie poundes weyght, there beinge in case that they myght haue dispatched al theyr ware for golde, if the vntame brayne of Wyndam had or could haue gyuen eare to the counsaile and experience of Pinteado. For when that Wyndam not satisfied with the golde whiche he had (and more myght haue had if he had taryed abowt the Mina) commaundyng the sayde Pinteado (for so he toke vpon hym) to leade the shyppes to Benin beinge vnder the Equinoctial line and a hundreth and fiftie leaques beyonde the Mina where he loked to haue theyr shyppes laden with pepper: And beinge counsailed of the sayde Pinteado consyderynge the late tyme of the yere for that tyme to go no further but to make sale of theyr wares such as they had for golde wherby they myght haue byn great gayners. But Wyndam not affentyng hereunto, fell into a fuddeyne rage, reuilyng the sayde Pinteado, caulynge hym Iewe with other opprobrious woordes, sayinge. This horsen Iewe hath promysed to bryng vs to such places as are not, or as he can not bring vs vnto. But if he doo not, I wyl cut of his eares and naile them to the mast. Pinteado gaue the forsayde counsaile to goo no further for the safeguard of the men and theyr lyues, which they shulde put in daungiore if they came to late for the rossia which is theyr wynter, not for coulde but for smotherynge heate with clofe and cloudy ayer and storminge wether of suche putryfyng qualitie that it rotted the cotes of theyr backes: Or els for coomyng to soonne for the scorchyng heate of the sonne which caused them to lynger in the way. But of force and not of wyll, browght he the shyppes before the ryuer of Benin: where rydng at an anker, sente theyr pinnesse vp into the ryuer fiftie or threcore leaques, from whense certeyne of the marchauntes with capitayne Pinteado, Francisco a Portugale, Nicolas Lambert gentleman, and other marchauntes were conducted to the courte where the kyng remayned. x. [ten] leaques from the ryuer fyde: whyther when they came, they were browght with a greate company to the prefence of the kyng who beinge a blacke moore (althoughe not so blacke as the rest) sat in a great houghe haule longe and wyde, the walles made of earthe withowte wyndowes, the roofof thynne boordes open in fundry places lyke vnto louers to lette in the ayer.

And here to speke of the great reuerence they gyue to their kyng, beinge such that if wee wolde gyue as much to owr fauouir Chryst, we shuld remoue from owr heades many plages which wee dayly deserue for owre contempte and impietie.

So it is therfore, that when his noble men are in his prefence, they neuer looke hym in the face, but fyt courynge, as wee vpon owre knees so they vpon theyr buttockes with theyr elbowes vpon theyr knees and theyr handes beefore theyr faces, not lookynge vppe vntyll the kyng commaunde them. And when they are coomyng toward the kyng as farre as they do see hym, do they shewe such reuerence fytting on the grounde with theyr faces couered as before. Lykewife when they depart from hym they turne not theyr backes toward hym, but go creepynge backwarde with lyke reuerence.

And nowe to speake sumwhat of the communication that was betwene the kyng and owre men, yowe shall fyrst vnderstande that he hym selfe coulde speake the Portugale tounge which he had lerned of a chylde. Therefore after that he had commaunded owre men to stande vp, and demaunded of them the cause of theyr coomyng into that countrey, they answered by Pinteado that they were marchauntes trauallyng into those parties for the commodities of his countrey for exchange of wares which they had browght from theyr countreys, beinge such as shulde bee no lesse commodious for him and his people. The kyng then hauynge of owlde lyeing in a certeyne store houghe thirtie or fortie kyntals of pepper (euery kyntall beinge an hundreth weyght) wyllynge them to looke vpon the same, and ageyne to bryng hym a fyght of suche marchaundies as they had browght with them. And ther vpon sent with the capitayne and the marchauntes certeyne of his men to conducte them to the waters fyde, with other to bryng the ware from the pinnesse to the courte. Who when they were returned and the wares feene, the kyng grewe to this ende with the marchauntes, to proude in thirtie dayes the ladyng of all theyr shyppes with pepper. And in case theyr marchaundies wolde not extende to the value of so muche pepper, he promysed to credite them to theyr nexte returne: and ther vpon sente the countrey rounde abowt

to gather pepper, caufynge the fame to be browght to the courte : So that within the fpace of. xxx. [thirty] days they had gathered foure fcore toonne of pepper.

In the meane feafon owre men partly hauynge no rule of them felues, but eatyng without meafure of the frutes of the countrey, and drynkyng the wyne of the palme trees that droppeth in the nyght from the cutte branches of the fame, and in fuch extreeme heate runnyng continually into the water, not vfed before to fuch fuddeyne and vehement alterations (then the which nothyng is more daungerous) were therby browght into fwellynges and agues. In fo much that the later tyme of the yeare commyng on, caufed them to dye fumptymes. iii. [three] and fumptymes. iiii. [four] or. v. [five] in a day. Then Wyndam perceauyng the tyme of the. xxx. [thirty] dayes to be expyred, and his men dying fo fast, fente to the courte in poſte to capitayne Pinteado and the reſt to come away and to tary no longer. But Pinteado with the reſt, wrote backe to hym ageyne, certifyng hym of the greate quantitie of pepper they had alre dy gathered and loked dayly for much more : Defyryng furthermore to remember the great prayſe and name they ſhulde wyne if they came home profperouſly, and what ſhame of the contrary. With which anſwere Wyndam not fatiffied, and many of theyr men dyinge dayly, wyllled and commaunded them ageine eyther to coomme away furthwith, or els thretened to leaue them behynde. When Pinteado harde this anſwere, thynkyng to perfuade hym with reaſon, tooke his way from the court towarde the ſhyppes beinge conducted thither with men by the kynges commaundement.

In the meane feafon Windam all rageinge, brake vppe Pinteados Caben, broke open his cheſtes, ſpoyled fuche prouifyon of coulde ſtilled waters and fuckettes as he hade prouided for his health, and lefte hym nothyng neyther of his instrumentes to fayle by, nor yet of his apparell. And in the meane tyme faulinge fycke hym ſelfe, dyed alſo. Whoſe death Pinteado couming aborde, lamented as muche as if he had byn the dereſt frend he had in the worlde. But certeyne of the maryners and other officers dyd ſpette in his face, ſum caulynge hym Iewe, faying that he had browght them thether to kylle them : And ſum drawyng theyr ſwordes at hym makynge A ſhewe to ſley hym. Then he perceauyng that they wolde nedes away, defyred them to tary that he might fetch the reſte of the marchauntes that were lefte at the court. But they wolde not graunte his requett. Then defyred he them to gyue hym the ſhippe boate with as muche of an owlde fayle as myght ferue for the fame, promiſyng them therewith to bringe Nicolas Lamberte and the reſt into England : But all was in vayne. Then wrotte he a letter to the courte to the marchauntes informyng them of all the matter, and promyſyng them if god wolde lende hym life to returne with al haſt[e] to fetch them. And thus was Pinteado kepte a bordeſhippe ageynſte his wyll, thruſt amonge the boyes of the ſhippe, not vfed like a man, nor yet like an honeſt boy : But glad to find fauoure at the cokes hande. Then departed they, leauing one of theyr ſhippes behynde them, whiche they ſoonke for lake of men to cary her. After this within fixe or ſeuē days ſaylinge, dyed alſo Pinteado for very penſueneſſe and thought that ſtrooke hym to the harte : A man worthy to ferue any prince and moſt vilely vfed. And of ſeuē ſcore men came home to Plymmuowth ſcarfely fortye, and of them many dyed. And that no man ſhulde ſuſpecte theſe wordes which I haue ſayd in commendation of Pinteado, to be ſpoken vpon fauour otherwyſe then truth, I haue thought good to adde herevnto the coppie of the letters which the kyng of Portugale and the infant his brother wrote vnto hym to reconcyle hym at fuche tyme as vpon the kynges his maſters diſpleaſure (and not for any other crime or offence as may appere by the fayde letters) he was onely for pouertie inforced to coomme into Englande where he fyrſt perfuaded owre marchauntes to attempte the fayde vyages to Guinea. But as the kyng of Portugale to late repented hym that he had ſo punyſhed Pinteado vpon malicious informations of ſuch as eniued the mans good fortune, euen ſo may it hereby appere, that in ſum caſes, euen Lyons them ſelues, may eyther bee hyndered by the contempt or ayded by the helpe of the pore myſe accordyng vnto the fable of Eſope.

¶ *The coppie of Antonianes Pinteado his letters patentes wherby the kyng of Portugale made hym knyght of his houſe after all his troubles and imprifonment, which by wronge information made to the kyng, he had ſuſteyned of longe tyme, beinge at the laſte deli[u]ered, his cauſe knowen and maniſeſted to the kyng by a grey fryer the kynges confeſſoure.*



The kyng do gyue yow to vnderſtande lorde Francis Deſſeſſeſſe one of my counſayle and ouerfeer of my houſe, that in conſideration of the good ſeruice which Antonie Anes Pinteado, the ſonne of Iohn Anes, dwellyng in the towne cauled the porte, hath doone vnto me, my wyll and pleaſure is, to make hym knyght of my houſe, alowyng to hym in penſion ſeuē hundredth reys monethly, and euery daye one alcayr of barley as longe as he kepeth a horſe, and to bee payde accordyng to the ordinaunce of my houſe. Proudyng alwayes that he ſhal receaue but one mariage gyfte : And this alſo in ſuch condition that the tyme which is excepted in owre

The diſorder and death of owre men.

The furie of Wyndam.

The death of Wyndam.

Pinteado eniul vſed of the maryners.

348

The death of Pinteado.

Seuen hundredth reys are. x. s. [ten ſhillings]. Alcayr, is halfe a buſhel.

ordinaunce forbyddyng fuch men to mary for gettinge fuch chyldren as myght succeade them in this allowance, which is fyxe yeares after the makinge of this patente, shalbe fyrste expired before he do mary. I therfore commaunde yowe to cause this to bee entered in the booke cauled the Matricula of owre housholde vnder the tytyle of knyghtes. And when it is so entered, let the clerke of the Matricula for the certentie therof, wryte on the backe syde of this Aluala or patente, the number of the leafe wherein this owre graunt is entered. Which doone, let hym returne this wrytynge vnto the fayd Antonie Anes Pinteado for his warrant.

I Diego Henriques haue wrytten this in Almarin the xxii. [twenty-second] day of September, in the year of owre lorde. 1551. And this beneuolence the kynge gaue vnto Antonie Anes Pinteado the. xxv. [twenty-fifth] day of Iuly this present yeare.

Rey. ° °
 ° °

349

¶ *The secretaries declaration wrytten vnder the kynges graunt.*



Owre maiestie hath vouchsafed in respect and confyderation of the good seruice of Antonie Anes Pinteado dwellynge in the porte, and foonne of Iohn Anes to make hym knyght of yowre houe with ordinarie allowance of feuen hundreth reys pension byt he moneth and one Alcayr of barley by the day as longe as he keepeth a horse: And to bee payde accordyng to the ordinaunce of yowr houe with condition that he shall haue but one mariage gyfte: And that not within the space of. vi. [six] yeares after the makinge of these letters patentes.

The secretaries note. Entered in the booke of the Matricula. Fol. 683.

Francisco de Siquera.

¶ *The coppie of the letter of Don Lewes th[e] infant and brother to the kyng of Portugale: sent into Englande to Antonianes Pinteado.*



Antonie Anes Pinteado, I the infant brother to the kyng, haue me hartely commended vnto yow. Peter Gonfalues is gone to seeke yow, desyryng to brynge yowe home ageyne into yowr cuntry. And for that purpose, hath with hym a safe conduct for yow, graunted by the kyng, that thereby yowe may freely and withoutt all feare come home. And although the wether be foule and stormy, yet fayle not to come. For in the tyme that his maiestie hath gyuen yow, yow maye doo many thynges to yowre contentacion and gratifying the kyng, wherof I wolde bee ryght gladde: and to brynge the same to passe wyll doo all that lyeth in me for yowre profyte. But forasmuch as Peter Gonfalues wyll make further declaration hereof vnto yow, I fay no more at this present. Wrytten in Luxburne the. viii. [eighth] day of December. Anno. M. D. LII.

¶ *The Infant don Lew[e]s.*



These forsayd wrytynge I fawe vnder se[a]le in the houe of my frende Nicolas Lyese with whom Pinteado left them at his vnfortunate departynge to Guinea. But notwithstanding all these frendly letters and sayre promyses, Pinteado durste not attempte to go home, neyther to keepe company with the Portugales his cuntry men withoutt the presence of other, forasmuch as he had secrete admonition that they intended to sleigh hym, if tyme and place myght haue serued theyr wycked intent.



☞ THE SECONDE VYAGE TO GVINEA.



S in the fyrst vyage I haue declared rather the order of the hystory then the course of the nauigation, whereof at that tyme I coulde haue no perfecte information, so in the discription of this seconde vyage my chiefe intent hath byn to shew the course of the same accordynge to the obseruation and ordinarie custome of the maryners, and as I receaued it at the handes of an experte pylot beinge one of the chiefe in this viage, who also with his owne handes wrote a brieue declaration of the same as he founde and tryed all thynges not by coniecture, but by the arte of faylynge and instrumentes perteynyng to the mariners facultie. Not therfore assuminge to my selfe the commendations dewe to other, neyther fo boulde as in anye parte to change or otherwise dispose the order of this vyage so wel obserued by arte and experience, I haue thought good to fet furth the same in such forte and phrase of speache as is commonly vsed amonge them, and as I receaued it of the said pylot as I haue sayde. Take it therfore as foloweth.

In the yere of owre lorde. M. D. LIIII. the. xi. [eleuenth] day of October, wee departed the ryuer of Temmes with three goodly shyppes, th[e]one cauled the Trinitie, a shyppe of the burden of seuen score toonne: Th[e]other cauled the Barthelmewe a shyppe of the burden of. lxxx. [ninety tons]. The thyrde was the Iohn Euangelist a shyppe of seuen score toonne. With the sayde shyppes and two pynneses (wherof the one was drowned in the coast of Englande) we went forward on owr vyage, and steyde at Douer. xiiii. [fourteen] dayes. We steyde also at Rye three or foure dayes. More ouer last of all we touched at Dartmouth.

The fyrst day of Nouember at. ix. [nine] of the clocke at nyght departynge from the coaste of Englande, we sette of the stert bearynge southwest all that nyght in the sea, and the nexte day all day, and the next nyght after vntyll the thyrde daye of the fayde mooneth about noone, makyng eowr way good, dyd runne. 60. leaques.

Item from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the thyrde daye tyll. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. iiii. [fourth] day of the fayde mooneth, makyng eowr way good southeast, dyd runne euery three houres two leaques, which amounteth to. xvi. [sixteen] leaques the hole.

Item from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. iiii. [fourth] day to. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. v. [fifth] day, runnyng southwest in the sea, dydde runne. xii. [twelve] leaques.

Item runnyng from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. v. [fifth] day vntyll. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. vi. [sixth] day runnyng southeast, dyd runne. xviii. [eighteen] leaques.

And so from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. vi. [sixth] daye vntyll. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. vii. [seventh] day, runnyng southsouthwest, dyd runne euery houre. ii. [two] leaques which amount to. xlvi. [forty-eight] leaques the hole.

Item from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. vii. [seventh] day tyll. iii. [three] of the clocke the. viii. [eighth] day, southsouthwest, runnyng in the sea, dyd runne. xxx. [thirty] leaques.

Item from three of the clocke the. viii. [eighth] day, vntyll. iii. of the clocke the. ix. [ninth] day, runnyng southsouthwest, dyd runne. xxx. [thirty] leaques.

Item from. iii. [three] of the clocke the. ix. [ninth] day tyll. iii. [three] of the clocke the. x. [tenth] day, dyd southsoutheast in runnyng in the sea the sum of. xxiiii. [twenty-four] leaques.

Also from. iii. [three] of the clocke the. x. [tenth] day vntyl. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. xi. [eleventh] day,

dyd run southsouthwest the sum of. xii. [twelve] leaques, and from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke tyll. vi. [six] of the fayde day, dyd run. vi. [six] leaques.

Runnyng south and by west in the sea from. vi. [six] of the clocke the. xi. [eleuenth] day tyll. vi. [six] of the clocke the. xii. [twelfth] day, dyd run. xxxvi. [thirty-six] leaques.

From. vi. [six] of the clocke at after none the. xii. [twelfth] daye tyll. vi. [six] of the clocke the. xiii. [thirteenth] day at after none, dyd runne. xiii. [thirteen] leaques.

Item from. vi. [six] of the clocke the. xiii. [thirteenth] day, tyl. vi. [six] of the clocke the. xiiii. [fourteenth] day at after none that we were becalmed that wee coulde lye southwest with a fayle. And the. xv. [fifteenth] daye in the mornynge, the wynde came to the East and easte northeast. The. xvii. [seventeenth] day in the mornynge, we had fyght of the Ile of Madera which doth ryfe to hym that commeth in the north northeast parte vpryght lande in the west part of it, and very hyghe: and to the south southeaste a lowe longe lande and a longe poynt with a faddle through the myddeste of it, standeth in the xxxii. [thirty-two] degrees: and in the weste parte, many springes of water runnyng downe from the mountayne, and many whyte fyeldes lyke vnto corne fieldes, and sum whyte houfes to the southeast parte of it: and the toppe of the mountayne sheweth very ragged if yow may se it, and in the northeast parte there is a byght or bay as though it were a harborowe. Also in the fayde part, there is a rocke a lytle distance from the shore: and ouer the fayde byght, yow shall se a great gappe in the mountayne.

The. xix. [nineteenth] day at. xii. [twelve] of the clocke, we had fyght of the Ile of Palmes and Teneriffa and the Canaries. The Ile of Palme ryfeth rounde and lyeth southeaste and northweste, and the northwest parte is lowest. In the fouth, is a rounde hyll ouer the hedde lande, and an other rounde hyll about that in the lande.

There is betwene the southeast parte of the Ile of Madera and the northwest parte of the Ile of Palme. lvii. [fifty-seven] leaques. This Ile of Palme lyeth in the. xxix. [twenty-nine] degrees. And owre course from Madera to the Ile of Palme was fouth and fouth and by west, so that we had fyght of Teneriffa and of the Canaries. The southeast parte of the Ile of Palme, and the north northeast of Teneriffa, lyeth southeast and northweste. And betwene them is. xx. [twenty] leaques. Teneriffa and the greate Canarie cauled Gran Canaria, and the west part of Fortisventura standeth in. xxvii. [twenty-seven] degrees and a halfe. Gomera is a fayre Ilande and very ragged and lyeth west southwest of Teneriffa. And who so euer wyll come betwene them twoo Ilandes, must come fouth and by east, and in the fouth parte of Gomera, is a towne and a good rode in the fayde parte of the Ilande: and it standeth in. xxvii. [twenty-seven] degrees and three terces. Teneriffa is a hyghe lande and a greate hyghe picke lyke a fuger lofe. And vpon the fayde picke is snowe throughowt all the hole yeare. And by reason of that picke, it maye bee knowen aboute all other Ilandes, and there we were becalmed the. xx [twentieth] day of Nouember from. vi. [six] of the clocke in the mornynge vntyll foure of the clocke at after none.

¶ Betwene Gomera and Capo de las Barbas.



The. xxii. [twenty-second] day of Nouember vnder the Tropike of Cancer, the soonne goeth downe west and by fouth.

Vpon the coast of Barberie. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques by north cape blanke at. iii. [three] leaques of the mayne, there is. xv. [fifteen] fadome and good shelly grounde and sande amonge, and no fremes, and two smaule Ilandes standyng in the. xxii. [twenty-two] degrees and a terce.

From Gomera to cape de las Barbas is a hundreth leaques and owr course was fouth and by east. The fayde cape standeth in. xxii. [twenty-two] and a halfe: and all that coast is flatte. xvi. [sixteen] or. xvii. [seventeen] fadome deepe, vii. [seven] or. viii. [eight] leaques of frome the ryuer de Oro to cape de las Barbas, there vse many Spanyades and Portugales to trade for fysshynge duryng the mooneth of Nouember: and all that coast is verrye lowe landes. Also wee went from cape de las Barbas southsouthwest and southwest and by fouth: tyll we brought owre felues in. xx. [twenty] degrees and a halfe, rekenyng owr felues vii. [seven] leaques of: and that was the least sholes of cape Blanke.

Then we went fouth vntyll we brought owre felues in. xiii. [thirteen] degrees, rekenyng owre felues. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques of. And in. xv. [fifteen] degrees, we dyde reere the crossiers: and we myght haue rered them sooner if we had loked for them. They are not ryghte a crosse in the moonethe of Nouember by reason the nyghtes are shorte there. Neuerthelesse we had the fyght of them the. xxix. [twenty-ninth] day of the fayde mooneth at nyght.

The fyrst of December owte. xiii. [thirteen] degrees, we sette owre course fouth and by East vntyll the fourth daye of December at. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the same day. Then we were in. ix. [nine] degrees and a terce, rekenyng owr felues. xxx. [thirty] leaques of the sholes of the ryuer cauled Rio Grande beinge west southweste of them: The which sholes be. xxx. [thirty] leaques longe.

The Ile of Madera.

The Ile of palmes.
Teneriffa.
The Canaries.

Frome madera to
the Ile of Palmes.

Grancanaria.
Fortes Ventura.
The Iland of
Gomera.

351

Teneriffa.
Snoue.

The coast of
Barbarie.
Cape blanke.

The ryuer of
de Oro.

The crossiers or
crosse starres.

Rio Grande

The fourth of December, we beganne to fette ovr courfe foutheaft, we beinge in. vi. [fix] degrees and a halfe. The ninth day of December we fet ovr courfe east foutheaft.

The. xiii. [fourteent] day of the fayde mooneth, we fette owre courfe east, we beinge in. v. [five] degrees and a halfe, rekenynge owre felues. xxxvi. [thirty-fix] leaques from the coaft of Guinea.

The. xix. [nineteenth] day of the fayde mooneth, we fette owre courfe east and by north, rekenynge ovr felues. xvii. [seventeen] leaques diftant from cape Menfurado, the fayde cape beinge east northeast of vs, and the ryuer of Sefto beinge east.

The. xxi. [twenty-firft] day of the fayde mooneth we fel with cape Me[n]furado to the foutheaft about two leaques of. This cape may be eafely knowen, by reafon the ryfyng of it is lyke a porpofe hedde. Also towarde the foutheaft there are three trees, wherof the eaftermoft tree is the hyghest, and the myddlemoft is lyke a heye flacke, and the fouthermoft lyke vnto a iebet: and vppon the mayne, are foure or fyue hygh hylles ryfyng one after another lyke round hoommockes or hyllockes. And the foutheaft of the three trees, is thre trees lyke a brandierwyfe: and all the coafte alonge is whyte fande. The fayde cape standeth within a lyttle in. vi. [fix] degrees.

The. xxii. [twenty-fecond] of December, we came to the ryuer of Sefto, and remayned there vntyll the. xxix. [twenty-ninth] day of the fayde moneth Here we thought it beft to fende before vs the pynneffe to the ryuer of Dulce cauled Rio Dulce, that they myght haue the begynnyng of the market before the commynge of the Iohn.

At the ryuer of Sefto, we had a toonne of graynes. This ryuer standeth in. vi. [six] degrees lackynge a terce. From the ryuer of Sefto to Rio Dulce, is. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques. Rio Dulce flandeth in. v. [five] degrees and a halfe. The ryuer of Sefto is eafy to bee knowen by reafon there is a ledge of rockes on the foutheaft parte of the rode. And at the enterynge into the hauen, are fyue or fyxe trees that beare no leaues. This is a good harborowe: but very narrowe at the enteraunce into the ryuer. There is also a rocke in the hauen mouth right as yow enter. And all that coaft betwene cape de Monte and cape de las Palmas, lyeth foutheaft and by east, northwest and by wefte, beinge three leaques of the shore. And yow shall haue in fum places rockes two leaques of: and that betwene the ryuer of Sefto and cape de las Palmas.

Betwene the ryuer of Sefto and the riuer Dulce, is. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques. And the hygh lande that is betwene them bothe, is cauled Cakeado, beinge. viii. [eight] leaques from the ryuer of Sefto. And to the foutheaftwarde of hym, is a place cauled Shawgro and an other cauled Shyawe or Shauo, where yow may get freffhe water. Of this Shyawe, lyeth a ledge of rockes: and to the Southeaftwarde, lyeth a hed lande cauled Croke. Betwene Cakeado and Croke, is. ix. [nine] or. x. [ten] leaques. To the Southeaftwarde of, is a harborowe cauled faynte Vincent. Ryght ouer ageynft faynt Vincent, is a rocke vnder the water, two leaques and a halfe of the shore. To the foutheaftwarde of that rocke, yow shall fee an Ilande about three or foure leaques of. This Ilande is not pafte a leaque of the shore. To the east foutheaft of the Ilande, is a rocke that lyeth about the water: and by that rocke goeth in the ryuer of Dulce, which yow shall knowe by the fayde ryuer and rocke. The northwest fyde of the hauen, is flat fande: and the foutheaft fyde therof, is lyke an Ilande and a bare plotte without any trees, and fo is it not in any other place.

In the rode, yow shall ryde in. xiii. [thirteen] or. xiiii. [fourteen] fadomes, good owes and fande, beinge the markes of the rode to bring the Ilande and the northwest lande togyther. And here wee ankered the laft of December.

The thyrde day of January, we came from the ryuer of Dulce.

Note that cape de las Palmas is a fayre high land. But fumme lowe places therof by the water fyde, looke like redde cliffes with white strakes like wayes a cable length a piece. And this is to the East parte of the cape. This cape is the fouthermoft lande in all the coaft of Guinea: And flandeth in foure degrees and a terce.

The coaft from cape de las Palmas to cape Trepoyntes or de tres Puntas, is fayre and cleare without rocke or other daungour.

xxv. [twenty-five] leaques from cape de las Palmas, the lande is higher then in any place vntyll we came to cape Trepoyntes. And about. x. [ten] leaques before yow comme to cape Trepoyntes, the lande ryfeth fyll hygher and hygher vntyll yow come to cape Trepoyntes. Also before yowe coomme to the fayde cape after other fiue leaques to the northwest parte of it, there is certeyne broken grounde with twoo greate rockes: and within them in the byght of a bay, is a caftel cauled Arra, perteyning to the kyng of Portugale. Yow shall knowe it by the fayde rockes that lye of it: For there is none fuch from cape de las Palmas to cape Trepoyntes. This coafte lyeth east and by north, west and by fouth. From cape de las Palmas to the fayde caftell, is foure fcore and. xv. [fifteen] leaques. And the coafte lyeth from the fayde caftell to the Westermoft poynte of the Trepoyntes, foutheaft and by fouth, northwest and by north. Also the Westermoft poyntes of the Trepoyntes, is a lowe lande lyinge halfe a myle owt in the fea: and vppon the innermoft necke to the landwarde, is a tuft of trees, and there we arriued the. xi. [eleventh] day of January.

The. xii [twelfth] day of January, we came to a towne cauled Samma or Samua, beinge. viii. [eight] leaques

Cape Menfurado.
The riuer of Sefto.

The riuer of Sefto.
Rio Dulce.

Cape de Monte.
Cape de las
Palmas.

352
The lande of
Cakeado.
Shauo.
Croke.
Saint Vincents
harbourou.

The riuer Dulce.

Cape de las
Palmas.

The coast of
Guinea.
Cape de
tres puntas.

The caftell of
Arra.

The towne of
Samma.

The pledg[e] was
sir Iohn Yorke
his nieve.

Cape Corea.
The castel of mina
pertenynge to
the kyng of
Portugale.

Perecowe.
Perecowe graode.
Monte Rodondo.

353

The currants

Frome mina
homewarde.

Rio de los Potos.
Iverye.

Cape de las
Palmas.

Currantes.

The Ile de Flore.

The Ile of Corvo.

Where they lost
the sight of the
northe starre.
Howe the
compasse dooth
varie.

The prymprose.

from cape Trepoyntes toward east northeaft. Betwene cape Trepoyntes and the towne of Samua, is a great ledge of rockes a great way owt in the sea. Wee continued foure dayes at that towne: and the capitayne therof wolde needes have a pledge a shore. But when they receaued the pledge, they kepte hym styl and wolde traffike no more, but shot of their ordinaunce at vs. They haue two or three pieces of ordinaunce and no more.

The. xvi. [sixteenth] day of the fayde mooneth, we made rekenynge to come to a place cauled cape Corea where capitayne Don Iohn dwelleth, whose men interteyned vs frendly. This cape Corea is foure leaques eastwarde of the castell of Mina, otherwyse cauled *La Mina*, or *Castello de Mina*, where we arriued the. xviii. [eighteenth] day of the mooneth. Here we made sale of al ovr cloth sauynge two or three packes.

The. xxvi. [twenty-sixth] day of the same mooneth, we weyd anker and departed from thense to the Trinitie which was. vii. [seuen] leaques eastwarde of vs where she folde her wares. Then they of the Trinitie wylled vs to go eastwarde of that. viii. [eight] or. ix. [nine] leaques to fel part of their wares in a place caled Perecow, and an other named Perecowe grande, beinge the eastermost place of both these, which yow shal knowe by a great rounde hyl nere vnto it named Monte Rodondo lynge westwarde from it. And by the water fyde are many hyghe palme trees. From hense dyd we fet furth homewarde the. xiii. [thirteenth] day of February and plyed vppe alongest tyll we came within. vii. [seuen] or. viii. [eight] leaques to cape Trepoyntes. Abowt. viii. [eight] of the clocke the. xv. [fifteenth] day at after noone, we dyd cast abowt to seawarde. And beware of the currantes, for they wyll deceaue yow fore.

Who so euer shall coomme from the coast of Mina homewarde, let hym be fuer to make his way good west vntyll he reken hym selfe as farre as cape de las Palmas where the currant fetteth alwayes to the eastwarde. And within. xx. [twenty] leaques eastwarde of cape de las Palmas, is a ryuer cauled Rio de los Potos where yow may haue freshe water and balasse enowgh, and plentie of Iucry or Elephantes teethe. This ryuer standeth in foure degrees and almost two terces.

And when yow reken yowre selfe as farre shotte as cape de las Palmas, beinge in a degree or a degree and a halfe, yow may go west or west and by north vntyll yowe comme in three degrees: and then yowe maye go weste northwest, and northwest and by west vntyll yow comme in fiue degrees and then northwest. And in the. vi. [six] degrees, wee mette northerly wyndes and greate rooslynge of tydes. And as wee coulde iudge, the currantes went to the north northwest. Furthermore betwene cape de Monte and cape Verde, go great currantes which deceaue many men.

The. xxii. [twenty-second] daye of Apryll, wee were in. viii. [eight] degrees and two terces: and so we ranne to the northwest, hauynge the wynde at northeaft and eastnortheaft, and sumtymes at easte vntyll we were at. xviii. [eighteen] degrees and a terce, which was on May day. And so from. xviii. [eighteen] and two terces, we hadde the wynde at east and east northeaft, and sumtymes at east southeaft: and then wee reckoned the Ilandes of cape Verde easte southeaft of vs, wee iudgyng owre selues to be. xlvi. [forty-eight] leaques of. And in. xx. [twenty] and. xxi. [twenty-one] degrees, wee had the wynde more easterly to the fouthwarde then before. And so we ran to the northwest and northnorthwest, and sumetymes north and by west and north vntyll we came into. xxxi. [thirty-one] degrees, where we reckoned owre selues a hundreth and foure score leaques fouthwest and by fouth of the Ilande de Flore or de los Flores. And there we met with the wynde at fouthsoutheaft, and fet owre course northeaft.

In. xxxiii. [thirty-three] degrees, we had the wynde at the fouth and southwest: and then we fet ovr course north northeaft, and so we ranne to. xl. [forty] degrees: and then we fet our course northeaft the wynde beinge at the fouthwest and hauynge the Ile de Flore east of vs, and. xvii. [seventeen] leaques of.

In. xli. [forty-one] degrees, we met with the wynd at northeaft, and so we ranne northnorthwestwarde. Then we met with the wynde at the west northwest and at the west within. vi. [six] leaques runnyng toward the northwest: And then wee cast abowt and ley northeaft vntyll we came in. xlii. [forty-two] degrees, where we fette ovr course east northeaft, iudgyng the Ile of Coruo fouth and by west of vs and. xxxvi. [thirty-six] leaques distant from vs.

A remembraunce that the. xxi. [twenty-first] day of Maye, we communed with Iohn Rafe, and he thought it best to go northeaste, and iudged hym selfe. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques eastwarde to the Ile de Flore, and in. xxxix. [thirty-nine] degrees and a halfe.

Note that in the fourth day of September [December?] vnder nine degrees, we lost the fyght of the north starre.

Note also, that in the. xlv. [forty-five] degrees the compasse is varied. viii. [eight] degrees to the west.

Item, in. xl. [forty] degrees, the compasse dyd vary. xv. [fifteen] degrees in the hole.

Item, in. xxx. [thirty] degrees and a halfe, the compasse is varied. v. [fiue] degrees to the west.

Be it also in memorie, that two or three dayes before we came to cape Trepoyntes, the pynnesse went alongest the shore thinkynge to fell sum of ovr wares. And so we came to anker three or foure leaques west and by fouth of the cape Trepoyntes where we lefte the Trinitie.

Then owre pynnesse came a boorde with all ovr men. The pynnesse also tooke in more wares. They toulde me more ouer that they wolde go to a place where the Primrose was and had receaued much golde at

the fyrste vyage to these parties. And tolde me furthermore that it was a good place. But I fearynge a brigantine that was then vpon the coast, dydde wey and folowe theym, and lefte the Trinitie abowte foure leaques of from vs. And there we rode ageynste that towne foure dayes: so that Martine by his owne defyre and assente of sum of the commissioners that were in the pinnesse, wente a shore to the towne. And there John Beryn went to trafike from vs beinge three myles of trafekynge at an other towne. The towne is cauled Samma or Samua. For Samma and Sammaterra, are the names of the two fyrste townes where wee did trafficke for gold, to the northeast of cape Trepoynts:

Hetherto continueth the course of the vyage as it was described by the fayde pilot. Nowe therefore to speake sumwhat of the contrey and people, and of fuche thynges as are brought from thenfe.

They brought from thenfe at the last vyage, foure hundreth pounce weyght and odde of golde of xxii. [twenty-two] carrattes and one grayne in finenesse. Also xxxvi. [thirty-six] buttes of graynes: and abowt two hundreth and fiftie elephantes teethe of all quantities. Of these, I sawe and measured sum of ix. [nine] spans in length as they were croked. Sum of them were as bygge as a mans thygh above the knee: and weyed abowte foure score and ten pounce weyght a piece. They say that sum one hath byn seene of a hundreth and xxv. [twenty-five] pounce weyght. Other there were which they caule the teethe of calves of one or two or three yeares, wherof sum were a foote and a halfe, summe two foote, and sum three or more accordynge to th[e]age of the beaste. These great teethe or tuskes, growe in the vpper iaw downwarde, and not in the nether iawe vwarde, wherein the paynters and arras woorkers are deceaued. At this laste vyage was brought from Guinea the headde of an elephante of such huge byggenesse, that only the bones or crauwe therof besyde the nether iawe and greate tuskes, wayed abowte two hundreth weyght, and was as muche as I coule well lyfte from the grounde. In so muche that confiderynge also herewith the weyght of ii. [two] such great teethe, the nether iawes with the lesse teethe, the tounge, the greate hangynge eares, the bygge and longe snowte or troonke, with all the flesshe, braynes, and skynne, with all other partes belongynge to the hole headde, in my iudgemente it coule wey lyttle lesse then fyue hundreth weyght. This headde dyuers haue seene in the house of the woorthy marchant syr Andrewe Iudde, where also I sawe it, and behelde it not onely with my bodely eyes, but much more with the eyes of my mynde and spirite confydered by the woorkes, the cunnynge and wysdome of the woorker master: without which confyderation, the syght of such straunge and wonderfull thynges may rather seeme curiosities then profitable contemplations.

The elephante (which sum caule an oliphant) is the biggest of all foure footed beastes. His forelegges are longer then his hynder. He hath ankles in the lower parte of his hynder legges, and fyue toes on his fiere vndiuided. His snowte or troonke is so longe and in such forme that it is to hym in the steede of a hande. For he neyther eateth nor drinketh but by bryngynge his troonke to his mouth. Therwith he helpeth vp his master or keeper: therwith he ouerthroweth trees. Byfyde his two greate tuskes, he hath on euery syde of his mouth foure teethe wherwith he eateth and gryndeth his meate. Eyther of these teethe, are almost a span in length as they growe alonge in the iawe: and are abowte two inches in height and almost as much in thicenesse. The tuskes of the male are greater then of the female. His tounge is verye lyttle, and so farre in his mouth that it can not bee seene. Of all beastes they are moste gentyll and tractable. For by many fundry ways they are taught and do vnderstand: In so much that they learne to do due honour to a king, and are of quicke sence and sharpenes of wyt. When the male hath once seafoned the female, he neuer after toucheth her. The male Elephante lyueth two hundreth yeares, or at the lease one hundreth and twentie. The female almost as longe: but the floure of theyr age, is but lx. [sixty] yeares as sum wryte. They can not suffer wynter or coule. They loue ryuers and wyll often go into them vp to the snowte wherwith they blowe and snuffe, and play in the water: but swymme they canne not for the weyght of theyr bodyes. Plinie and Soline wryte that they vse none adulterie. If they happen to meete with a manne in wyldernesse beinge owt of the way, gentyly they wyl go before hym and brynge hym into the playne waye. Ioyned in battayle, they haue no smaule respecte vnto them that be wounded. For they brynge them that are hurt or very into the middle of the army to be defended. They are made tame by drynkynge the iuse of barley. They haue continuall warre ageynst dragons which defyre theyr bludde bycause it is very coule. And therefore the dragon linge awayte as the Elephante passeth by, wyndeth his tayle (beinge of excedynge length) abowt the hynder legges of the elephante: and so fleying hym, thrusteth his heade into his tronke and exhausteth his breth, or els byteth hym in the eare wherunto he can not reach with his tronke. And when the elephante waxeth faynt, he fauleth downe on the serpente beinge nowe full of bludde: and with the poysse of his body breaketh hym: so that his owne bludde with the bludde of the elephante, runneth owt of hym menged togyther: whiche beinge coulede, is congeled into that substance which the apothecaries caule *Sanguis Draconis*, (that is) dragons blud, other-

The towne of Samma.
354
Golde.

Golde foure hundreth weyght Graynes.
Iuery.
Elephantes teethe.

The head of an Elephante.

The contemplations of gods woorkes

The description and properties of the Elephante.

Debate betwene the Elephante and the dragon.

355

Sanguis Draconis.

Cinnabaris.

wyfe cauled *Cinnabaris*, although there be an other kynde of *Cinnabaris*, commonly cauled cinoper or vermilion which the paynters vse in certeyne coloures.

Thre kyndes of elephantes.

They are also of three kyndes, as of the maryshes, the playnes, and the mountaynes, no lesse differynge in condicions. Philostratus wryteth, that as much as the elephant of Lybia in byggenesse passeth the horfe of Nyfea, so much doth the elephantes of India excede them of Lybia. For of the elephantes of India, sum haue byn seene of the heyght of. ix. [nine] cubites. The other do so greatly feare these that they dare not abyde the fyght of them. Of the Indian elephantes, only the males haue tuskes. But of them of Ethiopia and Lybia, both kyndes are tusked. They are of dyuers heyghtes, as of. xii. [twelue] xiii. [thirteen] and. xiiii. [fourteen] dodrantes, euery dodrant beinge a measure of. ix. [nine] ynches. Sum wryte that an elephant is bygger then three wylde oxen or buffes. They of India are blacke or of the colour of a moufe. But they of Ethiopie or Guinea, are browne. The hyde or skynne of them all, is very harde and withowte heare or brytels. Theyr eares are two dodrantes brode, and theyr eyes very lyttle. Owr men sawe one drynkyng at a ryuer in Guinea as they fayled into the lande.

Workes of Iuery.

Of other properties and conditions of the elephant, as of theyr maruelous docilitie, of theyr feight and vse in the warres, of theyr generation and chastitie, when they were fyrste seene in the theatres and tryumphes of the Romans, howe they are taken and tamed, and when they cast theyr tuskes, with th[e]use of the same in medicine, who so desyreth to know, let hym rede Plinie in the. viii. [eighth] booke of his natural hystorie. He also wryteth in his. xii. [twelfth] booke, that in owlde tyme they made many goodly woorkes of Iuery or elephantes teeth: as tables, tressels, postes of houfes, rayles, lattesses for wyndowes, Images of theyr goddes, and dyuers other thynges of Iuery both coloured and vncoloured and intermyxte with fundry kyndes of precious wooddes, as at this day are made certeyne chayres, lutes, and virginalles.

They had fuch plentie therof in owlde tyme, that (as farre as I remember) Iosephus wryteth that one of the gates of Hierusalem was cauled *Porta Eburnea*, (that is) the Iuery gate. The whytenesse thereof was so muche esteemed that it was thought to represent the naturall fayrenesse of mans skynne: In so much that fuch as went about to fet furth (or rather corrupte) naturall bewtie with colours and payntynges, were reproued by this prouerbe: *Ebur atramento candefacere*. That is: To make Iuery whyte with ynke. The poettes also describynge the fayre neckes of bewtiful virgins, caule them *Eburnea colla*: That is: Iuery neckes.

The people of Africa.

And to haue fayde thus much of elephantes and Iuery, it may suffice. Nowe therfore to speke sumwhat of the people and their maners and maner of luyunge, with also an other briefe description of Africa.

It is to vnderstande that the people whiche nowe inhabite the regions of the coast of Guinea and the mydde partes of Affrica, as Lybia the inner, and Nubia with dyuers other great and large regions about the same, were in oulde tyme cauled Ethiopes and Nigrite, which we nowe caule Moores, Moorens, or Negros, a people of beastly luyunge, without a god, lawe, religion, or common welth, and so scorched and vexed with the heate of the foonne, that in many places they curse it when it ryfeth. Of the regions and people about the inner Libia (cauled *Libia Interior*) Gemma Phrysius wryteth thus.

Libia Interior.

Lybia Interior, is very large and defolate, in the whiche are many horrible wylderneffes and mountaynes replenished with dyuers kyndes of wylde and monstrous beastes and serpentes. Fyrst from Mauritania or Barberie toward the south is Getulia, a rowgh and saluage region whose inhabitantes are wylde and wanderynge people. After these folowe the people cauled Melanogetuli and Pharufi whiche wander in the wylderneffe caryinge with them greate gourdes of water. The Ethiopians cauled Nigrite, occupie a great parte of Aphrica, and are extended to the West Ocean. Southwarde also they reache to the ryuer Nigritis whose nature agreeth with the ryuer of Nilus forasmuch as it is increased and dimynished at the same tyme, and bryngeth furth the like beastes as the Crocodile. By reason wherof, I thinke this to be the same ryuer which the Portugales caule Senega. For this ryuer is also of the same nature. It is furthermore maruelous and very strange that is fayde of this ryuer. And this is, that on the one syde therof, th[e] inhabitants are of hyghe stature and blacke: and on the other side of browne or tawny colour and lowe stature, which thynges also owre men confirme to be trewe.

Getulia.

Ethiopes.
Nigrite.
The ryuer Nigritis
or Senega.

356

A strange thynges.

Garamantes.

People of Lybia.

Prester Iohn.

Regnum Orguene.
Gambra.

There are also other people of Lybia cauled Garamantes, whose women are common. For they contracte no matrimonie, neyther haue respect to chastitie. After these are the nations of the people cauled Pyrei, Sathiodaphnite, Odrangi, Mimaces, Lynxamate, Dolopes, Agangine, Leuce Ethiopes, Xilicei Ethiopes, Calcei Ethiopes, and Nubi. These haue the same situation in Ptolomie that they nowe giue to the kyngdome of Nubia. Here are certeyne Christians vnder the dominion of the greate Emperoure of Ethiopie cauled Prester Iohn. From these toward the west, is a great nation of people cauled Aphricerones: whose region (as farre as maye bee gathered by coniecture) is the same that is nowe cauled Regnum Orguene, confinyng vpon the east partes of Guinea. From henfe westwarde and sumwhat toward the north, are the kyngedomes of Gambra and Budomel not farre from the ryuer of Senega. And from henfe toward the inlande regions and alonge by the sea coast,

are the regions of Ginoia or Guinea which wee commonly caule Gynne. On the west side of these regions towards the Ocean, is the cape or poynt cauled *Cabouerde* or *Caput viride* (that is) the greene cape, to the whiche the Portugales fyrst directe theyr course when they sayle to America or the lande of Brasile. Then departyng frome henfe, they turne to the ryght hande towards the quarter of the wynde cauled Garbino which is betwene the west and the south. But to speake sumwhat more of Ethiopia. Although there are many nations of people so named, yet is Ethiopia chiefly diuided into two partes: wherof the one is cauled Ethiopia vnder Egypte, a great and ryche region. To this pertaineth the Ilande of Meroe, imbraced rounde abowte with the streames of the ryuer Nilus. In this Ilande women reygnd in oulde tyme. Iosephus wryteth that it was sumtyme cauled Sabea: and that the queene of Saba came from thense to Hierusalem to heare the wysedome of Salomon. From henfe towards the East, reigneth the sayde Chrstian Emperoure Prester Iohn whom sum caule Papa Iohannes, and other say that he is cauled Pean Iuan (that is) greate Iohn, whose empyre reacheth farre beyonde Nilus, and is extended to the coastes of the redde sea and Indian sea. The myddle of the region is almost in the. 66. degrees of longitude, and. xii. [twelue] degrees of latitude. Abowte this region inhabite the people cauled Clodii, Rifophagi, Babilonii, Axiunite, Mofyli, and Molybe. After these is the region cauled Trogloditica, whose inhabitauntes dwell in caues and dennes. For these are theyr houses, and the fleshe of serpentes theyr meate, as wryteth Plinie and Diodorus Siculus. They haue no speache, but rather a grynnyng and chatteryng. There are also people without heades cauled Blemines, hauyng theyr eyes and mouth in theyr breste. Lykewyfe Strucophagi and naked Ganphafantes. Satyrs also which haue nothyng of men but only shape. More ouer Oripei great hunters. Mennones also, and the region of Smyrnophora which bryngeth furth myrr. After these is the region of Azania in the whiche manye elephantes are founde. A great parte of the other regions of Afrike that are beyonde the Equinoctiall line, are nowe ascribed to the kingdome of Melinde, whose inhabitauntes are accustomed to traffike with the nations of Arabie, and theyr kynge is ioyned in frendship with the kyng of Portugale, and payeth tribute to Prester Iohn.

The other Ethiope cauled *Ethiopia Interior* (that is) the inner Ethiope, is not yet knowen for the greatnesse therof but only by the sea coastes. Yet is it described in this maner. Fyrste from the Equinoctiall towards the south, is a greate region of Ethiopians which bryngeth furth whyte elephantes, tygers, and the beastes cauled Rhinocerontes. Also a region that bryngeth furth plentie of Cinamome, lying betwene the braunches of Nilus. Also the kingdome of Habech or Habassia, a region of Christien men, lying both on this syde and beyonde Nilus. Here are also the Ethiopians cauled Ichthiophagi (that is) such as lyue only by fishe: and were sumtyme subdued by the warres of great Alexander. Furthermore the Ethiopians cauled Rhapsii, and Anthropophagi that are accustomed to eat mans fleshe, inhabite the regions nere vnto the mountaynes cauled *Montes Lunæ*, (that is) the mountaynes of the moone. Gazatia, is vnder the tropike of Capricorne. After this, foloweth the fronte of affrike, the cape of Buena Speranza or *Caput Bonæ Spei*, (that is) the cape of good hope, by the which they passe that sayle from Spayne to Calicut. But by what names the capes and goulfes are cauled, forasmuche as the same are in euery globe and carde, it were here superfluous to rehearse them.

Sum wryte that Aphrica was so named by the Grecians bycause it is without coule. For the Greeke letter Alpha or, A, signifyeth pryuation, voyde, or without: and phrice, signifyeth coule. For in deede although in the steede of wynter they haue a cloudye and tempestious season, yet is it not coule, but rather smothering hot with also hot shoures of raine and sumwhere suche scorchyng wyndes, that what by one meanes and other they seeme at certeyne tymes to liue as it were in fornaces, and in maner already halfe way in Purgatorie or hel. Gemma Phrisius writeth that in certeyne partes of Aphrica, (as in Atlas the greater) the ayer in the night season is seene shynyng with many straunge fyres and flames ryfinge in maner as high as the moone: And that in the element are sumtime harde as it were the founde of pipes, trumpettes, and droommes. Whiche noyses may perhappes be caused by the vehemente and fundry motions of such fyery exhalations in the ayer, as we se the lyke in many experiences wrought by fyre, ayer, and wynd. The holownesse also and diuers reflexions and breaking of the cloudes may be greate causes hereof, byfyde the vehement cold of the myddle region of the ayer wherby the sayd fyery exhalations ascending thether are suddenly stryken backe with greate force. For euen common and dayly experience teacheth vs by the whyffinge of a burninge forge what noyse fyre maketh in the ayer, and much more where it striueth when it is inclosed with ayer as apereth in gonns, and as the lyke is sene in only ayer inclosed, as in orgen pipes and such other instrumentes that go by wynde. For wynde as say the philosophers is none other then ayer vehemently moued, as we see in a payer of belowes and suche other.

Sum of owre men of good credit that were in this last vyage to Guinea, affirme earnestly that in the nyght season they felt a sensible heate to coomme from the beames of the moone. The which thyng although it be straunge and insensible to vs that inhabite coule regions, yet doothe it stande with good reason that it may so be, forasmuch as the nature of the starres and planets (as wryteth Plinie) consysteth of fyre, and containeth in it a spire of lyfe, whiche can not be without heate.

And that the moone gyueth heate vpon the earth, the prophete Dauid seemeth to confirme in his. Cxx.

Guinea or Ginoia.
 Cap. Verde.
 The Portugales nauigations to Brasile.
 Ethiopia.
 The Ilande of Meroe.
 The queene of Saba.
 Prester Iohn emperour of Ethiopia.
 People of the east syde of Africa.
 Ophiophagi.
 People without heades.
 Myrr.
 Azania.
 Regnum Melinde.
 Ethiopia Interior.
 Whyte elephantes
 Habassia.
 Ichthiophagi
 Anthropophagi.
 Montes Luna.
 Gazatia.
 357
Cap. Bonæ Spei.
 Aphrica without coule.
 The winter of Africa.
 Flames of fire and noyse in the ayer.
 The myddell region of the ayer is coule.
 The strife of elementes.
 Wynde.
 The heate of the moone.
 The nature of the stars.

[120th] Pfalme, where fpeakyng of fuch men as are defended from euyls by goddes protection, he fayth thus: *Per diem sol non exuret te, nec luna per noctem.* That is to fay. In the day the foonne shall not burne the nor the moone by nyght.

They fay furthermore that in certeyne places of the fea, they fawe certeyne fremes of water which they caule fputes faulynge owt of the ayer into the fea: And that fum of these are as bygge as the greate pyllers of churches: In fo mache that sumtymes they faule into shyppes and put them in greate daungour of drownynge. Sum phantafie that these shulde bee the cat[a]racts of heauen whiche were all opened at Noes fludde. But I thynke them rather to be fuche fluxions and eruptions as Aristotle in his boke de Mundo, faith to chaunfe in the fea. For fpeakyng of fuche thynges as are feene often tymes in the fea, he wryteth thus: Often tymes also euen in the fea are feene euaporations of fyre, and fuche eruptions and breakyng furth of fprynges, that the mouthes of ryuers are opened, whyrlepooles, and fluxions are caufed of fuch other vehement motions not only in the middest of the fea, but also in creekes and freyghtes. At certeyne tymes also, a great quantitie of water is fuddeynly lyfted vp and caryed abowt with the moone. etc. By which woordes of Aryftotle it dooth appere that fuch waters maye bee lyfted vp in one place at one tyme, and fuddeynly faule downe in an other place at an other tyme. And hereunto perhappes perteyneth it that Rycharde Chaunceler toulde me that he harde Sebastian Cabot reporte, that (as farre as I remember) eyther abowt the coastes of Brafile or Rio de Plata, his shyppes or pinnes was fuddeynly lyfted from the fea and caft vpon the lande I wotte not howe farre. The which thyng and fuche other lyke woonderfull and ftraunge woorkes of nature whyle I confyder and caule to remembraunce the narownes of mans vnderftandyng and knowleage in comparyfon of her mighty poure, I can but ceafe to maruayle and confesse with Plinie that nothyng is to her impossible, the leaste parte of whose poure is not yet knowen to men.

Many thynges more owre men fawe and confydered in this vyage worthy to bee noted, wherof I haue thought good to put fum in memory that the reader maye afwell take pleasure in the varietie of thynges as knowleage of the hystorye.

Amonge other thynges therefore touchyng the maners and nature of the people, this may feeme ftraunge that theyr princes and noble men vse to pounfe and rafe theyr skynnes with prety knottes in diuers formes as it were branched damafke, thynkyng that to be a decent ornament. And albeit they go in maner all naked, yet are many of them and especially their women in maner laden with collars, braslettes, hoopess, and chaynes eyther of golde, copper, or Iuery. I my felfe haue one of theyr brasettes of Iuery wayinge twoo pounde and vi. [fix] ounces of Troye weyght, whiche make. xxxviii. [thirty-eight] ounces. This, one of theyr women dyd weare vpon her arme. It is made of one hole piece of the byggest parte of the toothe turned and fumiwhat carued, with a hole in the myddest wherin they put theyr handes to weare it on theyr arme. Sum haue of every arme one and as many on theyr legges, wherewith fum of theym are fo galded that although they are in maner made lame therby, yet wyl they by no meanes leaue them of. Sum weare also on theyr legges great shackles of bryght copper which they thynke to bee no leffe cumly. They weare also collars, braslets, garlandes and gyrdels of certeyne blewe stones lyke beades. Lykewyfe fum of theyr women weare on theyr bare armes certeyne forefleeues made of the plates of beaten golde. On theyr fyngers also they weare rynges made of golden wyres with a knotte or wrethe lyke vnto that whiche chyldeyn make in a ryng of a ruffhe. Amonge other thinges of golde that owr men bowght of them for exchanging of theyr wares, were certeyne dogges chaynes and collers.

They are very ware people in theyr bargenyng, and wyl not lofe one sparke of golde of any value. They vse weyghtes and meafures, and are very circumspecte in occupyng the fame. They that shall haue to do with them must vse them gentelly? for they wyl not trafike or bryng in any wares if they be euyll vfed. At the fyrft viage that owr men had into these parties, it fo chaunfed that at theyr departure from the fyrste place where they dyd trafike, one of them eyther stole a muske catte or tooke her a way by force, not mystruftyng that that shulde haue hyndered theyr bargenyng in an other place whyther they intended to go. But for al the haft they could make with full fayles, the fame of theyr myfufage fo preuented them that the people of that place also offended therby, wold bring in no wares: In fo mache that they were inforced eyther to restore the catte or pay for her at theyr price before they could trafike there.

Their houfes are made of foure postes or trees, and couered with bouwes.

Their common feedyng is of rootes and fuch fyffhes as they take, wherof they haue great plentie. There are also fuch flyyng fyffhes as are feene in the fea of the Weste Indies. Owre men falted of theyr fyffhes hopyng to prouyde store therof. But they wolde take no falte: And muste therefore be eaten furthwith as fum fay. Howe be it, other affirme that if they be falted immediatly after they be taken, they wyl last vncorrupted. x. [ten] or. xii. [twelue] dayes. But this is more ftraunge, that parte of fuch fleshe as they caryed with them owte of Englande and putrified there, became sweete ageyne at theyr returne to the clim of temperate regions.

Spoutes of water
fauling out of
the ayer.

Cataracts of
heauen.

Vehement motio^{is}
of the sea.

A ftraunge
thyng.

The poure of
nature.

358

They rase their
skinnes.

Fine iewells

A braslet.

Shackelles.

Ringes.

Dogs chains of
golde.

A muske cat.

Their houfes

Their feding

Fleing fishes

A ftraunge thyng

They vse also a straunge makyng of breade in this maner. They grynde betwene two fiones with theyr handes as much corne as they thynke maye suffice theyr famelie. And when they haue thus brought it to floure, they put thereto a certeyne quantitie of water and make therof very thin dowgh which they stycke vppon sum post of theyr houfes, where it is baked by the heate of the sonne: So that when the master of the house or any of his famely wyll eate thereof, they take it downe and eate it.

They haue very fayre wheate, the ere whereof is twoo handfulles in length and as bygge as a great bulruffhe, and almost foure ynches abowt where it is byggest. The steme or strawe, semeth to be almost as bygge as the lyttle synger of a mans hande, or lyttle leffe. The graynes of this wheate are as bygge as our peafon: rounde also, and verye whyte and sumwhat shynynge lyke perles that haue lost theyr colour. Almost all the substauce of them turneth into floure, and maketh lyttle branne or none. I toulde in one ere twoo hundreth and three score graynes. The ere is inclosed in thre blades longer then it selfe, and of two inches brode a piece. And by this frutefulnesse the foonne seemeth partly to recompence such greefes and molestations as they otherwyfe receaue by the feruent heate thereof. It is doubtlesse a woorthy contemplation to consider the contrary effectes of the foonne: or rather the contrary paffions of suche thynges as receaue th[e] influence of his beames eyther to theyr hurte or benefite.

Theyr drynke is eyther water or the iuse that droppeth from the cut braunches of the barren date trees cauled Palmites. For eyther they hange greate gourdes at the fayde branches euery euenynge and let them so hange all nyght, or els they set them on the ground vnder the trees that the droppes may faule therin. They say that this kynde of drynke is in tast much lyke vnto whey, but sumwhat sweeter and more pleasaunt. They cutte the branches euery euenynge bycause they are fered vp in the day by the heate of the foonne. They haue also great beanes as bygge as chestenuttes, and verye harde with a shell in the stede of a huske.

Many thynges more myght be fayd of the maners of the people and of the woonders and monstrosus thynges that are engendered in Afrike. But it shall suffice to haue fayde thus muche of such thynges as owre men partely sawe and partely browght with them.

And wheras before speakyng of the frute of graynes, I descrybed the same to haue holes by the fyde (as in dede it is as it is browght hether) yet was I afterwarde informed that those holes were made to put strynges or twygges throughe the frute therby to hange them vp to drye at the sonne. They growe not paste a foote and a halfe or twoo foote frome the grownde: and are as red as bludde when they are gathered. The graynes them selues, are cauled of the phyficians, Grana Paradyfi.

At theyr comminge home, the keles of theyr shyppes were maruelously ouergrownen with certen shels of. ii. [two] ynches length and more as thicke as they coulde stande, and of such byggenes that a man may put his thom in the mouthes of them. They certeynly affirme that in these there groweth a certeyne slymy substauce which at the length slypping owt of the shel and fauling in the sea, becometh those foules which we cal barnacles. The lyke shelles haue byn seene in shyppes returning from Islande. But these shelles were not past halfe an inch in length. Of the other that came from Guinea, I sawe the Prymrose lyinge in the docke, and in maner couered with the fayd shelles, which in my iudgemente shulde greatly hynder her saylynge. Theyr shyppes were also in many places eaten with the woormes cauled Bromas or Biffas whereof mention is made in the Decades. These creepe betwene the planks whiche they eate through in many places.

Amonge other thynges that chaunced to them in this vyage, this is woorthy to be noted, that whereas they sayled thether in feuen weekes, they coulde returne in no lesse space then. xx. [twenty] weekes. The cause wherof they say to be this: That abowt the coast of Cabo Verde, the wynde is euer at the East by reason whereof they were inforced to sayle farre owte of theyr course into the mayne Ocean to fynde the wynde at the west to bryng them home. There dyed of owre men at this last vyage abowt. xxiiii. [twenty-four] whereof many dyed at theyr returne into the clime of the coulde regions, as betwene the Ilandes of Soria and Englande. They browght with them certeyne blacke slaues, wherof sum were taule and stronge men, and coulde well agree with our meates and drynkes. The coulde and moyft ayer dooth sumwhat offende them. Yet doubtlesse men that are borne in hotte regions may better abyde coulde, then men that are borne in coulde regions may abyde heate, forasmuch as vehement heate resolueth the radical moisture of mens bodies, as could constreyneth and preferueth the same.

This is also to bee confydered as a secrete woork of nature, that throughout all Afryke vnder the Equinoctiall line and neare abowt the same on bothe fydes, the regions are extreme hotte and the people very blacke. Whereas contraryly such regions of the West Indies as are vnder the same line, are very temperate and the people neyther blacke nor with curlede and short wolle on theyr heades as haue they of Afryke, but of the

Their bread.

Their wheate.

359

The soonne.

Their drinke.

Graynes.

Shelles that cleaue to shyppes.

Barnacles.

Bromas.

A secrete.

The death of our men.

Could may be better abiden then heate.

The West Indies.

coloure of an olyue with longe and blacke heare on theyr heades: the caufe of which varietie is declared in dyuers places in the Decades.

360 It is also woorthy to bee noted that summe of them that were at this vyage toulde me. That is, that they ouertooke the course of the foonne, so that they had it north from them at noone the. xiiii. [fourteenth] day of Marche.

And to haue fayde thus much of these vyages it may suffice. For (as I haue fayd before) Wheras the parteners at whose charges this booke is prynted, wolde longe fence haue me proceded no further, I had not thought to haue wrytten any thynge of these vyages but that the liberalitie of master Toy encoraged me to attempt the fame. Whiche I speake not to the reproche of other in whome I thynke there lacked no good wyll, but that they thought the booke wolde be to chargeable.

THE MANER OF FYNDYNGE THE LONGITVDE OF
REGIONS BY DYVERS WAYES AFTER THE DESCRIPTION OF
GEMMA PHRYSIUS.



Erceauynge what contention is and longe hath byn not only amonge the pylottes that by trauaylynge the sea haue obserued the starres, but also amonge sum men that are skylfull in mathematicall sciense, wherof many affirme that the longitude (that is to meane, the course from the East to the Weste) can not be perfectly knowen, I haue thowght good for the better satiffying of such as desire to haue sum knowlege hereof, to interprete such demonstracions as I haue redde of the declarynge of the same in Gemma Phrysius, who as touchynge this matter hath added th[e]inventions of other, a more certeyne way of his own diuise wherby (as he sayth) he can fynde the longitude of regions although he were dryuen owt of the way a thousande myles into places vnto hym vtterlye vnknownen and of vnknownen distaunce. He wryteth therfore as foloweth.

When yow haue founde the place of the mone, yow ought to confyder the houre when she occupied that place. Then eyther by the Ephimerides or by the tables of Alphonfus yowe owght to knowe in what houre the moone entereth into the same signe of the Zodiake in an other region or towne whose longitude is well knowen. Then reducyng the houres to. xxiiii. [twenty-four] the lesse number of houres is to be deducted out of the greater number. Then the remanent of the houres and mynutes is to be brought to degrees in this maner. Multiplie the hours by. xv. [fifteen] and diuide the minutes of the houres by foure: so shall appere the degrees of the Equinoctiall conteyned betwene two meridians. And if after this diuision there remaine any minutes, multiplie them also by. xv. [fifteen] and therby shalbe knowen the minutes of degrees. Adde this difference of longitude founde to the longitude of the region knowen if the houres of that place bee more in number: or take awaye from the same longitude if they be lesse: So shall yowe in fine gather the longitude of the place vnknownen from the Ilandes of Canarie. But the same is more easely and redely found geometrically by the globes by this meanes. Set directly vnder the meridian, the place whose longitude is knowen in the globe. Then directe the poynte or style that moueth about the pole, to the houre in the whiche the moone occupyeth the place assigned in that region. Then turne the globe vntyll the style that sheweth the houre, be coomme to the houre in the whiche yowe sowght the vnknownen place of the moone. And so shall the degrees of the Equinoctiall distaunte or diuydede from the moueable meridian, declare the longitude of the region which yow seeke. Neuerthelesse, the more certeyne way wherby the differences of longitudes may bee founde, is by sum one thyng that in one moment appeareth in all regions, as by the eclipfes of the moone. For the dyuers houres beinge knowen in the whiche the sayd eclipfes chaunce in dyuers regions, the longitude maye thus afwell be knowen by geometrie and arithmetike, as it is founde by the rule here before. But forasmuch as this doth neyther appere at al tymes nor to all men, and the other way is sumwhat difficult, neyther at al tymes redy by reafon of the coniunctions of the mone and furthermore also sumtymes vncerteyne and varyng sumwhat from the truth for the dyuers

By the mone.

The Ilandes of Canarie.
Howe to fynd the longitude by the globe

The Eclipfes of the moone.

aspectes and latitudes of the mone, it so chaunceth hereby that wee haue eyther no longitudes or the same very vncerteine of many regions, and especially of those which the Spanyardes haue of late discouered. For no certentie doubtlesse can be knownen by such commenfurations as are made in the wanderynge turnynges and wyndynges of such vyages, as Ptolome affirmeth in the first booke of his Cosmographie. I wyll therfore adde herevnto sum thyng of myne owne inuention whereby by an easy way and at all tymes the longitudes of regions may bee founde in all vyages and nauigations.

361

¶ *A newe maner of fyndynge the Longitudes of regions.*

Little clockes



See that in these owre dayes certeyne lyttle clockes are very artificially made the whiche for theyr smaule quantitie are not comberous to be caryed abowt in all vyages. These often tymes moue continually for the space. of. xxiiii [twenty-four] houres: and may with helpe continewe theyr mouynge in maner perpetually. By the helpe therfore of these the longitude may bee founde after this maner. Before wee enter into any vyage, wee muste fyrste foresee that the sayde clocke exactly obserue the houres of the place from whense we departe: And ageyne that in the way it neuer cease. Accomplyshynge therefore. xv. [fifteen] or. xx.

[twenty] myles of the vyage, if wee desyre to knowe howe much in longitude we are dystant frome the place of owre departure, we must tary vntyll the poynt or stytle of the clocke do exactly come to the poynt of

sum houre: and at the same moment by our Astrolabie or globe, owght wee to seeke the houre of the place where we bee: The which yf it agree in minute with the houres

which the Horoscopium or ascendent dooth shewe, then is it certeyne that wee are yet vnder the same Meridian or the same Longi-

tude: and that owre course hath byn towarde the south or north. But if it dyffer one hour or

any mynute, then are the same to bee reduced to de-

grees or minutes as we haue tought in the chapiture here before.

And so shall the longitude bee founde. And by this arte can

I fynde the longitude of regions althowgh I were a thousand myles owt of my attempted course

and in an vnknown distance, but

the latitude must fyrste bee perfectly knownen.

By the Astrolabie
and globe.
Horoscopus or
the Ascendent.

The latitude.

F I N I S .

¶ *A bryefe reherſal of the contentes of the bookes of the fyrſt Decade, and ſo folowynge of all the other Decades. Folio. i. [p. 65.]*



IN the fyrſt booke is declared howe Chriſtophorus Colonuſ otherwyſe cauled Columbus, perſuaded Fernando and Elizabeth, prynces of Spayne, to foorth his attempte in ſearching newe and vnknowne landes in the Weſt Ocean. Alſo of the. vii. Ilandes of Canarie, by whom they were founde and conquered.

Howe Colonuſ founde the Ilandes of Hiſpaniola, and Cuba: And of the fierce people cauled Canibales or Caribes, which are accuſtomed to eate mans fleſhe.

Of the rootes cauled Ages, Iucca, and the grayne Maizium, wherof the people of the Ilandes make theyr breade.

Of the golde found in the fandes of ryuers, and of the ferpentes which are without hurte. Alſo of turtle doues, duckes, and popyngiayes.

Of Matlix, and Aloe, with dyuers frutes and trees vnknowne to vs: and of the fruteſulnes of the Iland of Hiſpaniola which the Spanyardes caule Spagnuola.

Of the ſeconde vyage of Colonuſ into theſe regions, and howe he was furnyſhed with. xvii. ſhyppes and a thouſande and two hundreth ſouldyers, with all kynde of artilliarie, artificers, and grayne to fowe. And of the tree frome the which water droppeth continually into a trenche made by mans hande.

¶ *The contentes of the ſecond booke. Fol. 4. [p. 68.]*

¶ Howe Colonuſ departynge from the Ilandes of Canarie, fayled. viii. hundreth and. xx. leaques in. xxi. dayes, and came to Dominica an Ilande of the Canibales: And of the fragrant fauour of ſpices which proceeded from the Ilandes.

Of the Ilandes of Galanta or Galana and Guadalupea, and of the trees which beare that kynde of cotton whiche the Italians caule Bombafine, and the Spanyardes Algodon.

Of dyuers kyndes of popyngiayes: And of the Iland of Matinino or Madinino, being inhabited only with women: Alſo of dyuers other fruteſull Ilandes: And of a conflicte which the Spanyardes had with the Canibales.

Of certeyne Ilandes in the which are ſeene the mynes of metals and precious ſtones: and of the fruteſull and peopulous Ilande cauled Buri-chena or Boriquen. or *Infula S. Iohannis*.

Howe all the Admirals men whiche at his fyrſt vyage he leſte in Hiſpaniola, were ſlayne in his abſence by the rebellion of Guaccanarillus, kyng of the Region of Xamana: and of the free kynde of lyfe which they leade that haue not the vſe of money.

Of the. vii. maydens which ſwamme. iii. myles in the ſea: And of the maner of gatheryng of gold in the fandes of ryuers.

¶ *The Contentes of the thyrde booke. Fol. 10. [p. 73.]*

¶ A particular deſcription of the Ilande of Hiſpaniola, whiche Colonuſ thynketh to be Ophir, from whence kyng Salomon had his great ryches of golde.

Of the maruelous fruteſulnes of Hiſpaniola, and of the fuger canes growynge there.

Of the golden regions of Cipanga or Cibaua, and of the ryuers in whoſe fandes is founde great plentie of golde.

Of certeyne graines of gold of exceadyng great quantitie.

Of wylde vines of pleaſaunt taſte, and of graſſe which in foure dayes groweth as hygh as wheate.

Of the Ilande of Iohanna or Cuba, beinge the ende of the Eaſt and the Weſt: And of the fruteſull and peopulous Ilande of Iamaica.

Howe the Admirall thought that he had fayled abowte the loweſt hemiſpherie or halfe circle of the earth, and of a ſecreate of Aſtronomie touchynge the ſame matter.

Howe the Admirall gaue names to. vii. hundreth Ilandes, and paſſed by three thouſande vn timered.

Of certeyne ferpentes lyke vnto Crocodiles of. viii. foote longe, whoſe fleſhe is delicate to be eaten: and of certeyne trees which beare gourdes.

Of the ryuer whoſe water is very hotte: and of the huntyng ſyſhe which taketh other ſyſhes.

Of great abun dance of Tortoyſes as bygge as targets, and of a fruteſull mountayne well inhabited.

Of dogges of deformed ſhape and dum: And of whyte and thicke water.

Of wooddes of date trees and pynepaple trees, and of certeyne people appareled like white friers.

Of certeyne trees whiche beare ſpices, and of cranes of exceadyng bignes.

Of ſtocke doues of more pleaſaunte taſte then partridges.

An oration of a barbarous gouernoure as touchinge the immortallitie of the fowle: Alſo of the rewarde of vertue and punyſhment of vice.

A ſimilitude of the golden worlde, and of prouiſion withowte care.

Howe the admirall fell ſicke by reaſon of to much watchynge: And of a ſedition which roſe among the Spaniardes in the Ilande of Hiſpaniola.

¶ *The Contentes of the fourth booke. Fol. 18. [p. 79.]*

Howe the Kynges of the Ilande of Hiſpaniola, were by the Spaniardes myſbehauoure prouoked to Rebellion: And howe the admirall ſent for them.

Howe kinge Caunaboa the Lorde of the houſe of golde, that is, of the mountaynes of Cibaua, contpired the Admirals death, and howe he with his familie were taken priſoners.

Of a greate famine that chanced in the Iland of Hiſpaniola: and howe the Admiral builded certeyne fortrefſes.

Of a piece of rude golde waighinge. xx. vn ces: and of the myne of the riche metall cauled Electrum.

Of the mountayne in the whyche is founde greate plentie of Amber and orpemente: And of the wooddes of braſile trees.

Howe the inhabitants are put to theyre tribute: And howe the nature of the Region diſpoſethe the maners of the people.

Howe the brother of kinge Caunaboa came ageynſte the Admiral with an army of ſue thouſand naked men: and howe he was taken and his army put to flyght.

Of the fruteſull vale Magona, in the fandes of whoſe ryuers is founde great plentie of golde: and of certeyne whirlewyndes and tempeſtes.

Howe the Admirall ſente foorth his brother Bartholomeus Colonuſ with an army of men to ſearch the gold mines and of the ſoffes which he found to haue him digged in old tyme

¶ *The Contentes of the v. booke.* Fol. 22. [p. 82.]

Howe the Lieuetenaunt builded a fortresse in the golde mynes: And prepared instruments for the pouring and fynyng of the golde.

Howe certeyne shyppes laden with vyttayles, came frome Spayne: And howe the Lieuetenaunt sent the kynges which rebelled, with three hundred captiues into Spayne.

Howe the Liefetenaunte remoued his habytacion: And buylded a fortresse which he cauled faynt Dominicks towre Also howe he passed ouer the ryuer Naiba, and entered into the wooddes of brasye trees.

Howe the great kyng Beuchius Anacauchoa, frendly enterteined the Lieuetenaunt, and browght hym to his pallayce, where the kynges wyues and concubines receaued him honorably with pompes and triumphes.

Of the fortresses which were erected in Hispaniola: And howe the Lieuetenaunt exacted tribute of the kynges whiche rebelled ageyne.

Howe the Lienetenaunt fette vpon the kynges vnwares in the nyght seafon, and tooke. xiiii. of them prysoners.

Howe kyng Guarionexius, capitayne of the conspiracie was pardoned, and howe he persuaded the people to obedience.

Howe kyng Beuchius Anacauchoa, sente messengers to the Lieuetenaunt to repayre to his pallayce where he founde xxxii. kinges redy with their tributes: And howe the queene Anacona entyfed hym to eate of the serpentes fleshe.

Howe the serpentes fleshe is prepared to be eaten: And how delicate meate theyr egges are yf they be foddren.

Howe queene Anacona, fyfter to kyng Beuchius Anacauchoa, enterteined the Liefetenaunt, and gaue hym muche honfholde stufte and many vessels of Hebene woodde artificially wrought and carued.

Howe kyng Anacauchoa and the queene his fyfter went aboarde the Liefetenaunt his shyppe, and howe greatly they were amafed to beholde the furniture therof.

Howe Roldanus Xeminus a Spaniarde, rebelled in the Lieuetenaunts absence: by whose mysdemeanour also kyng Guarionexius was prouoked to a newe conspiracie, and with hym Maiobanexius the kyng of the mountaynes.

¶ *The contentes of the fyfte booke.* Foli. 28. [p. 87.]

¶ The thyrd vyage of Colonus, and howe he diuerted from his accustomed rafe by the Ilandes of Canarie to the Ilande of Madera for feare of certayne frenche pirates and rouers.

Of the. xiii. Ilandes which in olde tyme were cauled Hesperides, and are nowe cauled the Ilandes of Caput Viride or Cabouerde. Also of the Tortoyfes of the Ilande of Bonauista, wherwith the leaper is healed.

Howe the Admirall founde contagious ayre and extreme heate nere the Equinoctial where the north pole was eleuate onely syue degrees: And how faylyng from thence westward, he founde the starres placed in other order, and the sea ryfyng as it were the backe of a mountayne.

Howe the Admirall faylyng westwarde, and neuer passyng owte of the clyme or paraleles of Ethiope, founde a temperate Region and people of goodly corporature: And what difference is betwene the natures of Regions beyng vnder one paralele and one eleuation of the pole.

Of the Ilandes of Puta and Margarita: and of the swift course or faule of the Ocean from the East to the weste.

Of the goulfes cauled Os Draconis: And of the conflicte betwene the freshe water and the falte.

Of a sea of freshe water: And a mountayne inhabited onely with monkeys and marmasettes.

Of the fayre, riche, and large region of Paria: And howe frendly th[e] inhabitants entreated the Admirall and his men. Also of pleasaunte wyne made of dyuerse fruites: And of greate abundaunce of perles and golde.

Of the regions of Cumana, Manacapana, and Curiana, beyng regions of the large prouynce of Paria: And of the sea of herbes or weedes.

A certeyn fecreate as touchyng the pole starre and the eleuation of the fame: Also of the roundnesse of the earthe.

Of the mountaynes of Paria in the toppes wherof Colonus earnestly affirmeth the earthly Paradife to be situate: And whether Paria be part of the firme land or continent of India.

¶ *The contentes of the vii. booke.* Fol. 33. [p. 90.]

¶ Howe Roldanus Xeminus with his confetherates, accused the Admirall to the kyng: And howe he poured hym selfe and accused them

Howe kyng Guarionexius rebelled ageyne: And with him kyng Maiobanexius: Also howe they with other kinges came ageynst the Lienetenaunte with an armye of. viii. thousande naked and paynted Ciguauians. Also twoo rare exemples of frendshyppe and faythfulness in barbarous princes.

Howe Colonus the Admirall and the Lieuetenaunte hys brother, were sent bounde into Spayne: And newe officers appoynted in theyr places.

The contentes of the viii. booke. Fol. 37. [p. 94.]

¶ The nauigation of *Petrus Alphonsus* frome Spayne to Paria, where in the region of Curiana, he had in shorte space. xv. vnces of pearles and greate plenty of vytailes for haukes bellees, pynnes, lokinge glaffes, and fuche other tryfles.

Of certeyn coniectures wherby Paria is thought to bee parte of the firme lande: And of the golden region of *Cauchieta*, where in the moneth of Nouember the ayre is temperate and not coude.

Howe Alphonsus had a conflicte with the Canibals: and howe they are accustomed to inuade other contreys.

Of greate abundaunce of falte in the region of Haraia: and howe the dead bodyes of theyr prynces are dried, referued, and relygiously honoured.

Howe Alphonsus at his returne to Spayne frome Curiana, brought with hym threescore and. xvi. pounce weight of pearles which he bought for owre tryfells amountinge only to the value of fise shillyngs.

The contentes of the ix. booke. Fol. 40. [p. 96.]

¶ The Nauigation of Vincentius Pinzonus and Aries Pinzonus, and howe they sayled beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne, loste the syght of the northe starre, and founde the starres in other order.

Howe Vincentius passyng the equinoctiall towarde the fouth pole, founde fierce and warlike people of great stature: And of the sea of freshe water.

Howe Vincentius directing his course towarde the north weste from the equinoctiall, recovered the syght of the northe pole, and by the regions of Mariatamball, Camomorus, and Pericora, came to the fayre and ryche prouince of Paria, and to the regyons of Os Draconis, Cumana, Manacapana, Curiana. &c.

A coniecture that Paria (wherby is ment that mayne land now cauled America) shulde be parte of the fyrme lande or continent of India, beyonde the ryuer of Ganges and no ilande: And of the exceedyng great riner Maragnonus replenished with Ilandes.

Of Boriostomea and Spirostomea, the mouthes of the famous ryuer of Danubius, cauled in olde tyme Ister: And of the commodities of the regions and Ilandes about Paria. Also of the woodes of brasye trees.

Of many trutfull Ilandes wasted and leste desolate by refon of the Caniballes crueltie: And of the trees of Cassia Fistula. Also of other trees of exceedyng bygnesse.

The description of a certayne monstrous beaste, And how Vincentius loste two of his shyppes by tempestes.

Howe Vincentius at his returne to Spayne, brought with hym cinamome, gynger, and certayne precious stonnes cauled Topafes. And of the nauigations of certayne other inhabitantes of the towne of Palos.

Of the precious medicine cauled Anime Album. And of the diuerse superstitious of the inhabitautes of Hispaniola. Also of their Idolatry, and howe they honour the ymages of deuylles, whiche they caule Zemes.

¶ *The Contentes of the x. booke.* Fol. 48. [p. 103.]

Of great plentie of golde, perles, and frankenfence found in the regions of Paria. And of innumerable beastes in shape dyfferynge from owres.

Howe the Spaniardes profered them felues to conquere the newe founde landes, beyng in largeness thryse as great as Europe beyde the southe landes parteynyng to the Portugales. And howe the nature of the place altereth the formes and qualities of thynges.

Of the Ilande of Cuba, and of the golde mynes of the Iland of Sancti

Iohannis, otherwise cauled Burichena, or Buchena. Also of the ryche golde mynes of Hispaniola, and of the order of workyng in the same.

Of the two chiefe golde mynes of Hispaniola. And of a pece of golde weyng thre thousande thre hundred and tenne pounce weyght.

Howe the golde is syned and distrybuted: And howe that only in the meltynge shops of the two golden mynes of Hispaniola, is molten yearlye above thre hundred thousande pounce weyght of golde.

Howe th[e]nterpryfes of the Spanyardes are not inferior to th[e]actes of Saturnus or Hercules: And howe the Admyrall discovered the lande ouer ageynst the west corner of Cuba and the Ilande of Guanassa.

¶ *The Contentes of the bookes of the seconde Decade.*

¶ *The contentes of the fyrst booke.* Fol. 51. [p. 106.]

¶ Howe after the death of Colonus the Admirall, the kyng gaue free lycence to all suche as wolde attempte any vyages: And of the nauigations of Diego Nicuefa, and Alphonus Fogeda

Of the Ilande Codego and the region of Caramairi: And of certeyne sweete apples whiche turne into woormes when they are eaten, whose trees are also contagious.

Howe Alfonso Fogeda, the Lieutenaut of Vraba, encounteryng with the barbarians had the ouerthrowe. And howe in this conflict, fyftie of his men were slayne with Iohannes de la Coffa theyr capytayne.

Howe Fogeda, and Nicuefa the Lieutenante of Beragua, reuenged the death of theyr companyons: And howe Fogeda came to the Ilande Fortis and the region of Caribana where he was repulled from the golde mynes by the fiercenesse of the barbarians vsyng arrowes infected with poyson.

Howe Fogeda was wounded in the thygh with a venemous arrowe, and his men almost consumed with famyn.

Howe a brigantine was drowned with the stroke of a fyssh: And of the nauigation of Ancifus from Hispaniola to Vraba.

Of the Lamentable shypwrecke of Ancifus: And of the date trees and wyld bores which he founde.

Of the frutes or apples of the trees cauled Ceders of Libane which beare owld frutes and newe all the yeare.

Howe onely three of the Canibales with theyr bowes and inuenemed arrowes aslayed Ancifus with a hundred of his men: In which conflict they wounded and slewe many. Also of theyr swyftnesse of foote.

Of the great ryuer of Dariena: And how Ancifus encountered with fyue hundred of th[e] inhabitants of the goulfe of Vraba and put them to flyght. Also howe he founde greate plentie of wrought golde and houfholde stuffe in a thicket of reedes.

¶ *The contentes of the seconde booke.* Fol. 58. [p. 111.]

¶ Howe Nicuefa loste his felowes in the darke nyght and went past the mouth of the ryuer Beragua which he fought: And howe the capitaynes of the other shyppes consulted how to synde hym. Also of the ryuer Lagartos in the which great Lyfartes are founde much lyke vnto the Crocodiles of Nilus.

Howe the capitaynes forooke theyr shyppes that the fouldyers myght bee without hope of departure: And of the miserable phaunce of Petrus de Vmbria and his felowes.

By what chaunce Nicuefa was founde, and of the calamities which he and his company susteyned. Also of the region of Gracia Dei or Cerabaro, and of the ryuer of Sancti Matthei,

Howe Nicuefa caused them to remoue theyr habitacion from Beragua to poynte Marmor where he bylded a fortresse. And howe his men by warre and famyn, were consumed from feuen hundred and odde, to scarcely one hundred.

Howe one Vafchus Nunnez vsurped th[e]authoritie of the Lieutenante shyppe of Vraba in th[e]absence of Fogeda: And of the nauigation of Rodericus Colmenaris from Hispaniola to Vraba.

Of the ryuer Gaira descendencyng from the toppe of a hygh mountayne covered with snowe: And howe Rodericus Colmenaris in a conflict ageynst the barbarians, loste. xlviij. of his men by reason of theyr inuenemed arrowes.

Of the force of the poyson wherewith the barbarians infecte theyr arrowes, and a remedie for the same. Also howe Colmenaris by gunneshot and kyndelyng syers on the hyge toppes of the rockes, came to the Spanyardes leste defolate in Dariena.

¶ *The contentes of the thyrde booke.* Fol. 61. [p. 114.]

¶ Howe Nicuefa was fought forth to acquiete the contentions of Vraba: And howe he was ageyne reiected.

Howe Vafchus Nunnez inuaded, tooke prysoners, and spoyled the kynges bortheryng about the region of Vraba: And howe Ancifus Lieutenaut for Fogeda was cast in pryson, and afterwarde set at libertie.

Howe Ancifus tooke his vyage from Vraba to Spayne to accuse Vafchus: who also at the same tyme sent Valdiuia aswell to speake in his defence, as also to certifie the kyng of theyr doynge.

Howe kyng Careta conspired with the Spanyardes ageynst kyng Poncha whom they put to flyght and spoyled his vyllage.

Howe kyng Comogrus frendely enterteyned the Spanyardes and brought them to his pallaice where he shewed them the dryed Carcafes of his auncestours referued and sumptuously apparelled: And howe the kynges elder sonne gaue Vafchus and Colmenaris foure thousand vneces of wrought gold and fiftie slaues. Also a wyttie oration which he made to the Spanyardes, wherein he certified them of a countrey exceedyng ryche in golde, &c.

¶ *The contentes of the fourth booke.* Fol. 66. [p. 118.]

¶ Of horryble thunder and lyghtnyng in the mooneth of Nouember, and of grayne which waxeth ripe thryse a yeare. Also howe digestion is strengthened by owtwarde coule.

Howe Valdiuia is sent ageyne into Hispaniola to moue the gouernour and counfayle there to sende into Spayne to the kyng for a supplie of a thousand fouldyers to make way to the golden mountaynes: And howe

he caryed with hym the kynges portion, (that is) the fyfte parte of golde and other thynges.

Howe Vafchus inuaded the kynges inhabytynge the regions about the goulfe of Vraba, and howe he put kyng Dabaiba to flyght, in whose vyllage he founde wrought golde amountynge to the weyght of feuen thoufande Castellans.

Of battes as bygge as turtle dooues which fumtyme byte men in the nyght in their sleepe, whose bytynge is also venomous : but is healed with water of the fea or by cauterization as are also the woundes of venomous arrowes.

Of the Ilande of Cannafiftula, and a towne of fyue hundreth houfes, whose kyng Abenamachei was taken and his arme cutte of in the fyght.

Of trees of exceadyng bygnesse and heyght : And howe kyng Abibciba had his pallaice in the toppe of a tree frome the which he was inforced to defende and entreate of peace.

¶ *The contentes of the fyfth booke.* Fol. 69. [*p.* 120.]

¶ Howe kyng Abraiba slewe a capitayne of the Spanyards and caufed the kynges to rebell. Also howe they were put to flyght and many of theyr men slayne.

Of fyue kynges which attempted a newe conspiracie with a hundreth great Canoas and fyue thousand men : And howe theyr intent was bewrayed by a woman, and preuented. Also howe Rodericus Colmenaris sacked the vyllage of Tichiri and honge the kyng therof with foure of his chief rulers, and commaunded them to be shotte through with arrowes.

¶ *The contentes of the fyxte booke.* Fol. 72. [*p.* 122.]

¶ Howe Vafchus with his confetherates, sente Iohannes Quicedus and Colmenaris from Dariena to Hifpaniola and from thense to Spayne to the kyng for a thousand men to passe ouer the mountaynes to the golden regions : And what miseris they fusteyned in that vyage. Also of the death of Val[di]nia, Zamudius, and Fogeda.

Of the prosperous vyage of Ancifus. And howe godde wrought miracles by the simple fayth of a mariner. Also how god respecteth th[e]infancie of fayth for zeles fake : And howe one religion turned into another, holdeth styll many thynges of the fyrste.

Howe many of the barbarians were baptifed by reason of the miracles : And howe they rewarded the prestes by whome they were baptifed.

Howe Ancifus shortly after his arryual in Spayne, reforted to the courte and made his complaynt to the kinge of th[e]infolencie of Vafchus, wher-uppon the kyng gaue sentence ageynst hym : And howe apte the barbarous nations are to embrace the Christian fayth.

¶ *The contentes of the seuenth booke.* Fol. 79. [*p.* 126.]

¶ Howe Quicedus and Colmenaris the procuratours of Dariena were honorably enterteined at the courte and brought to the kynges prefence : And howe theyr complexion was chaunged by alteration of the ayer.

Howe Petrus Arias a noble man, was elected gouernour and Lienetenaunt of Dariena : And howe other of the court laboured for the same office. Also howe the byfshop of Burges spake to the kyng in his behalfe.

Howe Petrus Arias had a thousande and two hundreth souldyers appoynted hym at the kynges charges : And of the kynges custome house in the cite of Ciuile, cauled the house of the contractes of India.

Howe a great number of Spanyardes profered themselues to go at theyr owne charges : And of a restraint made that no straunger myght passe without the kynges licence. Also howe the autour reproueth Aloisius Cadamustus a wryter of the Portugales vyages.

Howe Petrus Arias shortly after his departure frome Ciuile, lost two of his shyppes and was dryuen backe ageyne by tempest : And howe beinge newly furnysshed, hee passed the Ocean with more prosperous wyndes.

The thyrd vyage of Vincentius Pinzonus, and howe he came to the

regions of Paria where encounterynge with th[e]inhabitauntes he put them fyrst to flyght : but after fanlyng to entreatie of peace, they gaue hym greate plentie of golde and abundaunce of mafculine frankenfence with dyuers other princely presentes.

Of the greate multitude of poppingayes which are in the region of Paria, and howe th[e]inhabitours are apparelled. Also of the fyue kynges that made a league of frendshyppe with Vincentius.

Howe Vincentius sayled Eastwarde by the tracte of the regions of Paria vntyll he came to the poynte [*Cap. S. Augulini*] of that longe lande which the autour supposeth to be the greate Ilande Atlantike wherof the owlde wryters make mention.

¶ *The contentes of the. viii. booke.* Fol. 80. [*p.* 129.]

¶ A contention betwene the Castilians and Portugales as concernynge the diuision of the newe founde landes : And howe the controuersie was fynnysshed by the byfshop of Rome.

Howe Don Chrystopher the gouernoure of the Ilande of Sancti Iohannis, was slayne by the Canibales and the byfshop put to flyght. Also of the other byfshops of the Ilandes.

Howe the Canibales of the Iland of Sancta Crux, slew and eate a kyng with certeyne of his men beinge frendes to the Chryistians and made faggottes of theyr bones : And howe querelyng with owre men, they put them to silence.

¶ *The contentes of the. ix. booke.* Fol. 81. [*p.* 130.]

¶ Of the maruelous frutefulness of the regions of Beragua, Vraba, and Dariena : And of the dyuers kyndes of trees and frutes. Also of the pleasaunt taste of wyynes fleshe beinge fedde with the frutes of Mirobalane trees.

Of Lions and Tygers and other wylde beastes : And of a beaste of strange forme.

Of the ryuers of the goulfe of Vraba, as the ryuer of Dariena and Rio Grandis : And howe the great serpentes cauled Crocodiles, are founde in other ryuers byfyde Nilus in Egypte. Also howe th[e]autour of this booke was sent Ambassadour to the Soldane of Alcayr in Egipte.

Of the Portugales nauigations, and of the ryuer Senega founde by them to bee a chanel of Nilus. Also of the multitude of byrdes and foules beinge in the maryfshes of Dariena.

A phylosophicall discourse of th[e]originall and generation of sprynges and ryuers : And of the breadth of the lande diuidyng the north and south Ocean.

Of the great ryuer Maragnonus and of the earthly Paradyse : And howe sprynges are engendered by conuercion of ayer into water.

Of the often faule of rayne vnder the Equinoctiall line, and of the pores of the sea opened by the South wyndes.

Of the great ryuers of Tanais, Ganges, Danubius, and Eridanus, famous to the owlde wryters : And howe certeyne ryuers runnyng through the caues of the earthe, breake furth into sprynges asfarr of.

¶ *The contentes of the. x. booke.* Fol. 86. [*p.* 134.]

¶ Howe the newe founde landes discovered by the Spanyardes in the West Ocean, are eyght tymes bygger then Italie besyde that which the Portugales possesse : And of the cardes of the sea drawn by Colonus and Americus Vesputius.

The order of meafuryng the lande : And howe a league conteyneth foure myles by sea and but three by lande.

The Nauigation of Iobannes Dias, and of the fundrye eleuations of the pole starre.

Of the Ilande of Boinca or Agnaneo, and of the springe whose water beinge dronke, causeth owld men to loke yonge.

Howe Nicuefa and his souldiers were so oppressed with famin, that they were dryuen to eate mangie dogges, toades, and deade men : And howe a brothe made of a dogges skinn, was foulded for many pieces of golde.

¶ *The contentes of the booke of the thyrde Decade.*

¶ *The contentes of the fyrst booke.* Fol. 88. [*p.* 137.]

¶ Of the desperate aduerture and good fortune of Vafchus : And how with a hundreth fourscore and ten men, he brought that to passe for the which Petrus Arias was fente with a thousande and two hundreth freshe souldyers.

Howe iren serueth for more necessary vses then gold, and howe superfluities hynder libertie.

Howe Vafchus in one conflicte, slewe fyxe hundreth barbaryans with theyr kynges : And howe he founde the house of kyng Quarequa infected with vnnatural lechery, commaundyng that the kyng and fortie fuche as he kepte for that purpose, shulde be gyuen for a pray to his dogges whiche he vsed to ferue in the warres ageynst these naked people.

Of a region of blacke Moores : And howe Vafchus came to the toppes of the mountaynes, where geuyng thanks to god, he behelde the newe fourth Ocean neuer before sene nor known to men of owre worlde.

Howe Vafchus put kyng Chiapes to flyght, and after made a league of frendeshyppe with hym : And howe the king gaue hym. iiii. hundreth poundes weyght of wrought golde.

Howe kyng Coquera was putte to flyght, who also beinge receaued to frendeshyppe, gaue Vafchus fyxe hundreth and fiftie poundes weyght of wrought golde.

Of the goulfe cauled Sinus. S. Michaelis beinge full of inhabited Ilandes : And of the manly corage and godly zeale of Vafchus. Also of the rysyng and faulng of the fourth sea.

Howe kyng Tumaccus beinge dryuen to flyght and afterwarde reconciled, gaue Vafchus. vi. hundreth and. xiiii. pefos of golde, and two hundreth and fortie of the greatest and fayrest pearles : And howe the kyng cauled his men to fythe for pearles.

Of the Ilande cauled Margarita Diues : And of the abudaunce of fayre and great pearles founde therin.

Of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall line : And of the Portugales nauigations to the Antipodes inhabytyng the fyue and fiftie degree of the fourth pole. Also a declaration of Antipodes, and of the starres about the fourth pole.

¶ *The contentes of the seconde booke.* Fol. 95. [*p.* 142.]

¶ Of the maner of fyshyng for pearles and of the three kyndes therof. Also dyuers other questions concernyng perles.

Of the multitude of the shell fyshes wherin perles are engendered and founde in maner in all places in the fourth sea : And of abudaunce of golde founde almoste in euery houle. Also howe the treasurie of nature is in those coastes : And of the golde mynes of Dariena.

Howe kyng Teaocha gaue Vafchus. xx. poundes weight of wrought golde and two hundreth perles. Also of desertes full of wylde beastes, and howe Vafchus was troubled with greete heate in the moneth of Nouember.

Howe a dogge Tyger was taken, and his whelpes tyed in cheynes and torne in pieces : Also howe Vafchus gaue. iiii. kynges to his dogges to be deuoured.

Of the vse of dogges in theyr warres, and of the fierceneffe of the Canibales.

Howe kyng Bononiana fauoured the Chrystians and gaue Vafchus. xx. pounce weyght of wrought golde. Also his oration to Vafchus.

A similitude prouyng greete plentie of golde in the regions of the fourth sea, and of the traauayles which owlde souldyers are able to susteyne.

¶ *The contentes of the thyrde booke.* Fol. 99. [*p.* 146.]

¶ Howe kyng Buchibuea submytted hym selfe to Vafchus, and sent hym certeyne vesselles of golde. Also howe kyng Chiorifus fente hym. xxx. dyffshes of pure golde.

Howe iren serueth for more necessary vses then gold. Also an exemple of the lyfe of owr fyrste parentes.

Howe kyng Pocchorrofa submytted hym selfe, and gaue Vafchus. xv. pounce weyght of wrought golde. Also howe Tumanama the great kyng of the golden regions towarde the fourth sea, is taken prifoner. Lykewyfe howe he gaue Vafchus. xxx. pounce weyght of pure and wrought golde, and his noble men. lx. poundes weyght of golde.

Of the cause of vehement wyndes nere vnto the Equinoctiall line, and of the coloure of the earth of the golden mines.

Of the large and frutefull playne of Zauana, and of the ryuer Comogrus. Also howe kyng Comogrus baptifed by the name of Charles, gaue Vafchus. xx. pounce weyght of wrought golde.

Of the good fortune of Vafchus, and howe he was turned from Goliath to Elifeus, and from Anteus to Hercules : And with what facilitie the Spanyardes shall hereafter obteyne greete plentie of golde and pearles.

Of the Spanyardes conquestes, and fierceneffe of the Canibales. Also an exhortacion to Chrystian princes to fette forwarde Chrystes religion.

¶ *The contentes of the fourth booke.* Fol. 104. [*p.* 150.]

¶ The fourth vyage of Colonus the Admirall frome Spayne to Hiipaniola, and to the other Ilandes and coastes of the firme lande : Also of the florysshynge Ilande Guanassa.

Of feuen kyndes of date trees, wylde vynes, and Myrobalanes : Also of byrdes and foules.

Of people of goodly stature which vse to paynt theyr bodyes : And of the fwyfte course of the sea from the east to the west. Also of freshe water in the sea.

Of the large regions of Paria, Os Draconis, and Quiriquetana : And of greete Tortoyfes and reedes. Also of the foure frutefull Ilandes cauled Quatuor Tempora, and. xii. Ilandes cauled Limonares.

Of sweete fauours and holsome ayer : And of the region Quicuri, and the hauen Cariai or Myrobalanus : Also of certeyne ciuyle people.

Of trees groynge in the sea after a straunge forte, and of a straunge kynde of Moonkeys which inuade men and feight with wylde bores.

Of the greete goulfe of Cerabaro replenished with many frutefull Ilandes, and of the people which weare cheynes of golde made of ouches wrought to the similitude of dyuers wylde beastes and foules.

Of fyue vyllages whose inhabitauntes gyue them felues onely to gather-ynge of golde, and are paynted, vsynge to weare garlandes of Lyons and Tygers clawes. Also of feuen ryuers in all the which is founde greate plentie of golde: And where the plentie of golde ceafeth.

Of certeyne people which paynt theyr bodyes, and couer theyr priue members with shelles, hauynge also plates of golde hangynge at theyr noses.

Of certeyne woormes which beinge engendered in the seas nere about the Equinoctiall, eate boles in shippes: And how the Admirals shippes were destroyed by them.

Howe the kynge of Beragua enterteyned the Lieuutenant and of the great plentie of gold in the ryuer of Duraba and in al the regions there aboute: Also in rootes of trees and stones and in maner in all the ryuers.

Howe the Lieuテナナunt and his company wold haue erected a colonie beyde the ryuer of Beragua, and was repulsd by th[e]inhabitauntes.

Howe the Admirall fel into the handes of the barbarians of the Ilande of Iamaica where he lyued miserably the space of tenne moonethes: And by what chaunce he was saued and came to the Ilande of Hispaniola.

Of holfome regions, temperate ayer, and continual spring al the hole yeare: Also of certeyne people which honour golde religiously duryng their golden harvest.

Of the mountaynes of Beragua beinge fiftie myles in heyght and hygher then the cloudes: Also the discription of other mountaynes and regions there about, comparynge the same to Italy.

Colonus his opinion as touchynge the supposed continente, and ioynynge of the north and south Ocean. Also of the breadth of the fayde continente or firme lande.

Of the regions of Vraba and Beragua and the great ryuer Maragnon and of the ryuer of Dabaiba or Sancti Iohannis Also of certeyne maryffhes and desolate wayes, and of dragons and Crocodiles engendered in the same.

Of xx. golden ryuers about Dariena and of certeyne precious stones, especially a diamunde of marueilous byggenesse bought in the prouince of Paria.

Of the heroidal factes of the Spaniards and howe they contemne effeminate pleasures. Also a similitude prouynge greate plentie of golde and precious stones.

¶ *The contentes of the fyfth booke.* Fol. 113. [p. 156.]

¶ The nauigation of Petrus Arias from Spayne to Hispaniola and Dariena, and of the Ilandes of Canarie. Also of the Ilandes of Madanino, Guadalupea, and Galanta.

Of the sea of herbes and mountaynes couered with snow: Also of the swyfte course of the sea towarde the west.

Of the ryuer Gaira, the region Caramairi, and the porte Carthago and Sancta Martha: Also of Americus Vesputius and his expert cunnynge in the knowledge of the carde, compasse and quadrant.

Howe the Canibales assayled Petrus Arias with his hole nauie, and shot of theyr venomous arrowes euen in the sea. Also of theyr houses and housholde stuffe.

Howe Gonzalus Ouiedus founde a saphire bygger then a goose egge: Also emerodes, calcidonies, iaspers, and amber of the mountaynes.

Of woddes of braile trees, plentie of golde, and marchasites of metals founde in the regions of Caramairi, Gaira, and Saturma. Also of a straunge kynde of marchaundies exercised amonge the people of Zunu.

That the region of Caramairi is lyke to an earthly Paradise: And of the frutefull mountaynes, and pleasaunte gardeynes of the same.

Of many goodly countreys made desolate by the fiercenes of the Canibales, and of dyuers kyndes of breade made of rootes. Also of the maner of plantynge the roote of Iucca, whose iuice is deadly poyson in the Ilandes, and without hurte in the continent or firme lande.

Of certeyne golden ryuers, hartes, wyld bores, foules, gossampine, whyte marble, and holfome ayer. Also of the greate ryuer Maragnon descendedynge from the mountaines couered with snowe, cauled Serra Neuata.

Howe Petrus Arias wafted certeyne Ilandes of the Canibales: And howe by the swyfte course of the sea, his shippes were caried in one nyght fortie leagues beyond th[e] estimation of the beste pylottes.

¶ *The contentes of the syxte booke.* Fol. 118. [p. 161.]

¶ Of fundry opinions why the sea runneth with so swyft a course from the Easte to the west: and of the greate goulfe of the north parte of the firme lande.

The vyage of Sebastian Cabote from Englande to the frozen sea, and howe being repulsd with Ice in the moonethe of Iuly, he fayled farre westwarde.

Of people apperled with beastes skynnes: And howe beares take fyffhes in the sea and eate them.

Howe Sebastian Cabote after that he had discovered the lande of Baccalaos or Baccallearum, was cauled out of Englande into Spayne, where he was made one of th[e] assistance of the counsaile of th[e] Jaffayres of India, and of his second viage.

Of the Ilande Fortis: And howe a great foule as bygge as a florke lyghted in the gouernours shippe. Also howe he arryued at Dariena with the kynges nauie.

Howe Vaschus receaued the newe gouernour: And of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctial.

Howe Petrus Arias the newe gouernour distributed his army to conuere the south regions ryche in golde, and to erecte newe colonies in the same.

Of the ryche golde mynes of Dabaiba, and of th[e] expedition ageynst the kynge of that region.

Of the Violent course of the sea from the east to the west: And of the difficulte saylynge ageynst the same.

Of the pestiferous and vnuholfe ayer of Sancta Maria Antigua in Dariena: and howe the Spaniards were of necessitie inforced to plant theyr fyrst colonie and habitation there.

The cause of the varietie of regions lyinge all vnder one degree or parallel, and by what meanes the fonne beames are cause of feruent heate.

Of toades and flees engendered of droppes of water, and of a house fet on fyre with lyghtnyng.

Of a dogge deuoured of a Crocodile [*Tanquam canis e Nilo*], and of the venemus bytynge of great battes. Also of Lions and Tygers and other wyld beastes.

Howe in these regions all foure footed beastes growe to a bygger quantitie then they whiche were of the fyrste broode. Also of certeyne trees of whose plances if ships be made, they are safe frome the woormes cauled Broma or Byffas.

Of a tre whose wod is present poyson yf it be only borne about: And of an herbe that is a preferuatiue ageynst the same.

Of the ryche Ilandes of the south sea, and of certeyne expeditions ageynst the Canibales.

¶ *The contentes of the vii. booke.* Fol. 124. [p. 165.]

¶ The particular description of the Ilande of Hispaniola, and of the ryche Ilande cauled Margaritea Diues lyinge in the South sea. Also of the greate abudaunce of bigge pearles founde in the same.

Howe the autoure compareth Hispaniola to the earthely Paradyse: And howe it farre excelleth Italy in fertilitie and temperate ayre.

Of the fyrst inhabitours of Hispaniola and of the Ilandes of Canarie.

Howe the inhabitauntes of Hispaniola in theyr songes and rhymes had certeyne prophesies that appereled men shulde coome to theyr contrey and bryng them into feruitude: And of theyr familiaritie with spirites. Also howe those spirites haue no more appered to them sence they were baptised.

Of theyr expertence in swimmyng: And of theyr delicate serpentes, byrdes, foules, and poppingais.

Of the forme and situation of Hispaniola nere the Equinoctiall: And howe coulde is in fūm place thereof accidentall and not by the situation of the region.

Of oxen and wyne of exceedinge bygnesse: And of eares of wheate as bygge as a mans arme in the braun. Also howe the fwyne are fedde with myrobalanes. &c.

Of plenty of golde, brasyfe, mastix, goffampyne, Electrum &c.: And of th[e]incommodities of intemperate regions.

Of dyuers languages in the Ilande: And howe the prouynces are devided into regions.

Howe Andreas Moralis sayled into a daungerous and darke caue within the rocke of a mountayne: And of hole ryuers deuoured of such caues. Also of the conflycte of the waters.

Of a standyng pole in the tope of an hygh mountayne: And howe ferne and bramble buffhes growe only in coulde regions.

¶ *The contentes of the. viii. booke.* Fol. 130. [p. 170.]

¶ Of a greate lake or standyng poole of fowre and salte water, and of the sea fyshes in the fame in the myddelnde of the Ilande. Also of deuouryng fyshes cauled Tiburoni.

Of the ryuers fauling into the lakes, and of. CC. [200] springes in the space of a furlonge.

A meruelous hystory of a kyng stryken dumme and lame by a miracle: And of the Indian language.

Howe fuche as are drowned in the lake, are neuer caste vp ageyne: And of the Ilande Guarizacca in the myddeste of the standyng lake. Also of a lake of freshe water, and an other of salte and freshe water.

Of a large playne of two hundred myles in length: And an other of a hundrede and twentie.

Of the meruelous fyfhe or monster of the sea, cauled Manati or Matum, fedde with mans hande: and howe she caryeth men ouer the lake.

Of the mountaynes, vales, hylles, playnes, and ryuers of Hispaniola: And howe golde is founde in all mountaines and golde and fyfhes in all ryuers.

Of salte bayes, and howe the ryuers haue theyr increafe from the caues of the mountaynes. Also howe there is no hurtefalle beaste in the Ilande.

Of the pleasures of Hispaniola: And of the region of Cotohi well inhabited and situate in a playne in the toppes of mountaynes reachyng to the cloudes.

Of moderate coulde in the mountaynes, and of ferne of merueylous bygnesse.

Howe pure and masse golde is founde in the region of Cotoy or Cotohy: And that the veyne of golde is a luyng tree. Also of the rootes, branches, and floures of the fame, and howe certeyne caues are susteyned with pyllers of golde.

What golde is broughte yearely from Hispaniola into Spayne: And of the salte of the mountaynes, beinge as hard as stoncs and cleare as crystal. Also sprynges of salte, fresh and fower water.

Of certeyne wylde men luyng in caues and dennes without any certeyne language: And of theyr merueylous swiftnesse a foote.

Of pytche of the rocke and two kyndes of trees: And of the leafe of a tree vsed in the steede of paper. Also howe th[e]inhabitantes thinke that the Christians can make those leaues speake and disclofe all secretes.

Of a stronge coloure made of the iufe of a certeyn apple: And of the herbe whose fmoke is poyfon.

The contentes of the. ix. booke. Fol. 136. [p. 175.]

Of the kyndes of frutes wherwith th[e]inhabitautes of Hispaniola luyed fyrst, and howe they came to the knowlege of Iucca. Also howe Ceres fyrst found wheate and barley in Egypte.

Why theyr kynges are cauled by dyuers names, and by what names they salute the kynges chyldren when they are borne.

Howe they make theyr testaments, and howe certeyne of the kynges wyues and concubines are buryed with them.

Of the variable motions of the elementes in Hispaniola: And where it rayneth but ltytle, and where much.

Of the colonies and vyllages that the Spanyardes haue buylded in Hispaniola: and of the other Ilands about the fame

Of a spryng which runnyng vnder the sea from Hispaniola, breaketh furth in the Iland of Arethufa: Also of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctial, and of the ryche golde mynes of the Ilande of Cuba.

Of the gumme cauled *Animæ Album*: And of the Canibale[s]. Also whereby it was thought that there were Ilandes of women.

Of hony founde in trees and rockes: And of the generation of greate Tortoyfes and of theyr egges.

¶ *The contentes of the. x. booke.* Fol. 140. [p. 178.]

¶ Of the expedition ageynste the kyng of the Ilande Dites in the fourth sea: And howe after foure conflictes, submyttinge hym selfe, he gaue our men a hundred and ten pounce weyght of greate pearles. Also howe he agreed to pay yearely a hundred pounce weyght of pearles for a tribute.

Howe axes and hatchettes are more esteemed then golde, or perles: And of greate plentie of hartes and cunnys. Also howe the kyng of Dites and his famelic were baptised.

Of perles of great pryce: And howe Paule the byshop of Rome bowght a perle for four and fortie thousand ducades.

Dyuers opinions of the generation of perles: And of a hundred pearles founde in one shel fyfhe. Also of the byrth of pearles.

Of the regions of the Easte syde of the goulfe of Vraba: And of the originall of the Canibales.

Of certeyne circumcised people which haue the knowledge of letters and vfe bookes: And what chanced of the capitaynes which Petrus Arias sente furth dyuers wayes. Also howe Iohn Solygus was slayne of the Canibales, and of theyr fiercenesse.

Howe Iohn Pontius was repulded of the Canibales, and of the lewde behaour of Iohn Aiora.

Of the variable fortune of Gonfalus Badaicius: And howe after he hadde gathered greate ryches of golde, he had the ouerthrowe, and was spoyled of all. Of the golden region of Coiba Dites: And howe theyr flaucs are marked in the face.

Of the Ilandes of the fourth sea: And of the regions frome whense the Portugales fetch their spices.

Of a straunge kynde of fowlyng: and of the trees that beare gourdes.

Of the later opinions as touchyng the swyfte course of the Ocean towards the weste: and of the continente or firme lande. Also of the vyage from the newe landes to Spayne.

Of the golde mynes of Dariena: and the maner of gatheryng of golde in the fame: Also of the dropie of couetousnes which is not fatified with ryches.

¶ *For the contentes of the booke of the Ilands lately founde reade the margente notes of the same.*

¶ T H [E] I N T E R P R E T O V R S E X C V S E .

I haue not in wrytynge byn very curious
To auoyde the scornes of Rhinoceros nose,
Or the fylled iudgement of fenere Aristarchus
Not fearynge thereby any thyng to lose,
But haue thought it sufficient to be open and playne
Not lookynge for other commoditie or gayne.

I am not eloquent I knowe it ryght well.
If I be not barbarous I desyre no more,
I haue not for enery woorde asked counfell
Of eloquent Eliot or fyr Thomas Moore.
Take it therfore as I haue intended,
The fautes with fauour may foone be amendcd.

The poet Homere for all his eloquence,
Lacked not Zoilus to be his fo[e] :
Wherefore I conclude this for a trewe sentence.
That no man lacketh suo bargello :
For as no beaste lyueth without woorme or flye,
So no man lacketh his priuie enemye.

Rumpatur Zoilus.

¶ *Fautes escaped in the pryntyng.* F. the leafe. L. the line. B. the backe fyde of the leafe.

[These corrections have all been embodied in the Text.]

¶ Imprinted at London in Paules Church-
yarde at the signe of the Byble
by Rycharde Jug.

[In other copies.]

yarde at the signe of the Bell by
Roberte Coy.

Anno. Domini. M. D. LV.

Index

of

Personal names, and names of places, chiefly outside Europe.

∴ The Contents Pages at vii.-x., 12, 45, and 391-398 have not been indexed.

- Abarien island, 255
 Abdua river, 315
 Ahenamachie, King, 119, 120, 121
 Abibeiba, King, 120, 121
 Abila mounatynes, 236
 Abraham, 51, 52
 Abraiba, 120, 121
 Abrayme Prouince, 226
 Aburema river, 135, 152
 Acatan, 34
 Acateba, 153
 Achaia, 176
 Achas town, 325
 Achenides, 135, 154
 Achilles, 5
 Achor, Vale of, 50
 Acla village, 231
 Acuna, The Licentate, 272
 Adam, 229, 338, 340
 Adams, Clement, xxxviii., 289
 Adda river, 363, 364
 Aden, 13, 24, 267, 269
 Aden, King of, 13
 Adialbenicus, Emperor, 176
 Adipson, 285
 Adriane, Pope, 309
 Adriatique sea, 133, 155, 318
 Aeneas Silivius, 8, 41, 50, 347
 Africa, xix., xxi., xxix., 9, 13, 35, 52, 56, 126, 129, 139, 236, 245, 248, 250, 261, 262, 273, 285, 295, 298, 337, 338, 340, 346, 373, 384, 385, 387.
 Africa, Gulf of, 270, 374
 Afrijken, xxxi.
 Agathyrsi, 91
 Agermannia, Dukedome of, 305
 Agisimba, Region of, 41
 Agnaneo island, 135
 Agnes, Vincentius, 105, 128, 129
 Agricola, Georgius, xli., xlv., 7, 366
 Agrippa, Cornelius, xlv.
 Agus, Antipater, 319
 Ahumada, Peter de, 346
 Aiagutin river, 153
 Ajora, Gonsalus, 181
 Ajora, Johannes, 162, 181
 Alaminio Antonie, 187, 188
 Alaminus, 192, 193, 194, 195
 Alba Russia, 291
 Albertus, Magnus, 7, 9, 10, 41, 364
 Alcalá, 63
 Alcantara, 165
 Alcaraz, Antonie of, 272
 Alcayr [*Cairo*], City of, 13, 14, 63, 131, 153, 172, 186, 267, 285, 307, 315, 374
 Alcazausa, Simon of, 272
 Alday, James, xix., xx.
 Alexander, xxix., xxxiii., xlv., 5, 32, 50, 74, 129, 176, 201, 241, 248, 273, 274, 285, 310, 315, 325, 339, 385
 Alexandria, City of, 110, 153, 217, 267, 283, 351
 Alexandryne, Patriarch of, xxx.
 Alfonsus de Ponte, 157
 Alla, 359, 368
 Allago, xxviii.
 Allen, Richard, xiii.
 Almanzor, 271, 272
 Almayne [*Germany*], Emperour of xxx.
 Almaynes, 56, 97, 116, 292, 320, 328
 Alonso, 341
 Alonso, Don, 273, 341
 Alonsus, Petrus, 36
 Alpha, Poynt, 75, 76
 Alpheus river, 134, 176
 Alphonsus, 40, 389
 Alphonsus, Petrus, 94, 96
 Alvarado, Peter, 187
 Alverado, Spatense, 192
 Amacaiz, City of, 374
 Amaiauna, Cave of, 99
 Amaltheum sea, 289
 Amaquei, Region of, 169
 Amari, Lake of, 284
 Amaxobii, 301
 Ambalao island, 260
 Ambon island, 260
 America, xi., xiii., xviii., xxi., xxiii., xxv., xxvi., xxviii., xxx., xxxii., xxxiv., xl., 3, 8, 32, 35, 43, 61, 205, 243, 281, 335, 343, 353, 371, 385
 Americus, xxi.
 Amerigo Vespucci, xxv., 37, 38, 39, 127, 134, 157, 275, 277, 279
 Anacaona, Queen, 85, 176
 Anacaucha, Beuchius, 83, 84, 85, 86, 176
 Anata, King, 182, 183
 Anbon island, 344
 Ancisus, 108, 109, 110, 113, 114, 115, 116, 118, 119, 123, 124, 125, 126, 137
 Ancyra, 311
 Andalusia, xiii., 130, 220, 225, 339
 Andalusia, Noua, 130
 Andreas, Moralis, 134
 Andrew, Lawrence, xxvi.
 Andronicus, xlviii.
 Anes, John, 377, 378
 Angleria, 43, 63, 65, 185, 207, 246, 299
 Anghiera, xxxvii.
 Annez, Vincentius, 125, 128, 129, 130
 Anniuci, Region of, 169
 Antei, 285
 Anteus, 149
 Anthiochyen, xxxi.
 Anthiocus, 8
 Anthropophagi, 23, 29, 41, 65, 385
 Antiglia island, 38
 Antilia island, 66
 Antiqua, Island of, 177
 Antonie, Master, 288
 Antony di Mendoza, 287
 Annunctus, 191
 Apianus, 10
 Apollo, 10, 102, 172, 295, 298
 Apnu, Region of, 322
 Apsa, 363
 Aprutium, Bishop of, 309
 Aquanil, Province of, 187
 Aquillaris, Hieronimus, 192, 193
 Arabia, xxviii., xxxi., 8, 9, 13, 14, 20, 56, 129, 153, 156, 161, 180, 235, 284, 285, 286, 309, 385
 Arabia, Gulf of, 284, 286, 339, 347
 Arabia, Sea of, 309
 Arabo, 168
 Aragon, King of, xxx. 51
 Aragonie, Cardinal of, 64, 73, 79, 82, 87, 90, 94, 96, 103, 133
 Aramana, Region of, 168
 Arambec, xiv.
 Arbolantius, 141
 Archimedes, xlvii., xlviii.
 Arcimboldus, 127
 Ardagni, Kingdom of, 314
 Arethusa, 134, 176
 Arenalis, 88
 Arcuado, 232
 Argilla, City of, 374
 Ariane, 245
 Arias, Helizabeta Boadilla, 127
 Arias, Petrus, 61, 126, 127, 135, 137, 142, 156, 157, 158, 162, 165, 178, 179, 181, 198, 199, 214
 Arimathia, Joseph of, 56
 Arion, 171
 Aristarchus, 398
 Aristocleon, 41
 Aristotle, xliii., xlv., 9, 10, 67, 142, 179, 278, 293, 313, 333, 339, 340, 386
 Arkey, Laurence, xii.
 Armenes, xxx.
 Armeneten, xxxi.
 Armenia, xxvii., xxviii., xxx., xxxii., xxxiv., 176, 311, 314, 329
 Armenicus, Emperour, 176
 Armennyten, xxxi.
 Arnold, R., xxv., xxvi.
 Arnheim, xxv.
 Arrotinbergh, 368
 Arra, Castle, 381
 Arsina, xxix.
 Arsinoe, City of, 284, 285
 Artawischa river, 323
 Artawische, 323
 Artemisia, 49, 128
 Arucetto island, 260
 Arzina Ford, xxxix.
 Asasi, xx.
 Ascanius, 63, 64
 Ascanius Sphorcias [*i.e.*, Sforza], 65, 68, 103, 127
 Ascham, Roger, xl.
 Ascon City, 374
 Asia, the less, 7
 Asoph, 324, 325
 Asopus, 142
 Asseuedo, Antonie de, 272
 Assyrien, xxxi.
 Astesia, 363
 Astrachan, 308, 314, 325, 326, 329
 Astur, Oetenses, 135
 Asturia, 54, 116
 Asyen, xxx.
 Atahaliba, King, 345
 Atamea village, 152
 Ath, xliii.
 Atiei, Regioa of, 169

- Atlantike island, 129, 337, 338, 340
Atlas mountains, 129
Atlas, the greater, 385
Attabeira, 99
Attibuni, Region of, 169
Attibunicus river, 73, 168, 171
Atilla, 326
Auanzo mountains, 368
Augusta, City of, 286
Augustinus de Ceratta, 54
Augustus, Emperour, 8, 283, 306, 369
Aula Alphons[o], 187, 192
Auis, 273
Auleta, King, 283
Aurea Anus, 323, 324
Aurea Chersonesus, 32, 40, 75, 247, 313, 344
Ausonia, 167
Austria, Archduke of, 289
Auxandria, xxviii.
Auxerre, xlv.
Ay Ay islands, 69, 130
Ayqueroa, Region of, 169
Azamor, City of, 374
Azania, Region of, 385
Azafi, 374
Azeuedo, 274
Azgar, 374
Azion Gaber, 7
Azores, Islands of, 203, 204, 219, 339, 347, 348
Azotus, 57
Azoum river, 314
Azum village, 176
Azzuci, Region of, 169
- Babbareo lake, 170
Babel, Tower of, xxxii.
Babell, 290
Babilon, 14, 56, 57, 63, 172, 187, 241, 266, 284, 285, 297, 307, 315
Babilon, Soltane of, 153, 172
Babilonii, The, 385
Babilonyon, xxxii.
Bacanor, 265
Baccallaos, Land of, xix., 55, 161, 162, 195, 242, 287, 288, 299, 344, 345, 347
Bacchian island, 259, 260
Baccia, 126
Bachau sea, 291
Bacon, Lord, xxii.
Bacon, Roger, xlv., xlvii., xlviii.
Bactria, 308
Badaiocius, Gasper, 165
Badaiocius, Gonzalus, 181, 182, 183
Badaioz, 272, 273
Badajos, xliii.
Bafrida, 291
Baguanimaho, Region of, 168
Bahaboni, 166
Bahuan river, 172
Baian, 171
Baia Natiuitatis, 129
Bainoa, 168, 169, 170, 172, 173, 176
Baiohaigua, Region of, 169
Bajassetes, Ottomanus, 6, 311
Balassia, Region of, 264
Balboa, Vaschus, 149, 162, 178, 338
Baleares islands, 301
Ballard, William, xliii.
Balthcum sea, 299, 312, 331
Baluaastro, 346
Banda island, 22
Bandan, xxix., 260, 269
Banderana, xxix.
Bangalla, King, 21
Bangella, City of, 21
Baptiste, Elisius, 85, 99
Baptiste, Master, xliiii.
- Barack, Soltan, 329
Barbai island, 256
Barbaregaf, City of, 374
Barbarossa, Emperour, 347
Barbata island, 177
Barbary, xix., xx, xxviii., xxxviii., 237, 374, 380, 384
Barbessa, Adoardo, 258
Barcha, 374
Barnarde of Mesa, 130
Barramedabas, 87
Barrientos, 272
Barthema [*i.e.*, *Varthema*], Ludivico, xlviii.
Bartholomeus Colonus, 31, 82, 134, 153, 154, 340
Barthus castle, 331
Barutti, xii.
Basilides, 41
Basilius, 289, 308, 309, 311, 314, 316, 317, 319, 321, 324, 328, 329
Basilius, Andreas, 316
Basilius, Demetrius, 316
Basilius, George, 316
Basilius, John, 316, 319
Basilius, Magnus, 290, 291
Basilius, Symeon, 316
Basing, xxxix.
Baskird, 293
Basle, xxxvii.
Bastard, Count L. de, xlv.
Bastarne, 311
Bastimento island, 235
Bath, Earl of, xix.
Bauruco, Region of, 169
Bazantium, Emperours of, 314
Beata port, 107, 113, 177, 213
Beaton, Cardinal, xxxviii.
Bebeid, Chan, 329
Beda island, 35
Beit island, 374
Belchia, 309
Belozeria, 309
Benaia island, 260
Beneu island, 260
Bengala, Province of, 261, 264, 267, 268, 344
Benin, 270, 376
Beragua, Region of, 107, 108, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 128, 130, 132, 134, 135, 136, 149, 150, 151, 153, 154, 155, 163, 165, 211, 214, 218, 219, 233, 234
Berenice, City of, 284
Beres river, 323
Berges, City of, 331
Beringocius, Vannucius, xlv.
Berma, 344
Bermeio, Sea of, 338, 339, 346, 347
Bermuda island, 233
Berosus, xlviii., 346
Beryn, John, 383
Beselchel, 49
Besermani, The, 327
Besson, xlvii.
Betanchor, 65, 166
Betis river, 127, 157
Beuchius Anacauchoa, King, 83, 84, 85, 86, 176
Beyrout, xii.
Bezerra, Franciscus, 165, 181, 183
Bian, Sancti, Johannis gulf, 194
Biddle, Mr, xv.
Bieloiefero, 321
Bimini, 345
Binthaitel, 100
Bion, 41
Biraen, 344
Biringuccio Vannuccio, xxxvii., 353, 356
Biron, Master, xviii.
- Biscaine, 274
Bisinagar, City of, 15
Bisingghe, 277
Bithynia, 290, 311
Bitsagitsch, xxviii.
Bizantium, 307
Bizantium, Emperour of, 314
Bizerta port, 374
Blasius, 331
Blemines, The, 385
Blesconia, City of, 289
Blondus, 348
Boadilla, Governour of, 105, 127
Boadilla, Helisabetha, 127
Bodenham, Roger, xviii.
Boheme, King of, xxx., 312
Bohol island, 256, 258
Boilus, 79
Boiuca island, 135
Boium, gatti river, 109, 132
Bolgaria, 309
Bolshega mountains, 323
Bombassa, xxviii.
Bonaventura, 105
Bonauista island, 87, 272
Bonanum, City of, 84
Boneface, 56
Bonham, W., xxxvii.
Bononiam, King, 145
Bononie, Aristotles of, 313
Bononie, Galeatius Butrigarius of, 106, 127, 283, 285
Boriostomea river, 98
Boriuena island, 45, 345, 346
Boristhene river, 289, 309, 311, 312, 314, 316, 319
Bornei islands, 22, 23
Bosphorus, The, 59
Boua port, 374
Boubige, xlv.
Bourne, Mr H. R. Fox, xvi.
Bowyer, Sir William, xliii.
Boyuca island, 345
Braalin island, 260
Brabant, xliii.
Brasil, xv., xvi., xvii., 250, 251, 253, 273, 285, 288, 375, 385, 386
Brewer, Rev. J. S., M.A., xliii.
Bridger, Mr C., xlviii.
Brocardus, xlv.
Brooke, John, xviii.
Bryaces, 49
Buchebeua, King, 146
Buchema island, 30
Buda, 326
Budia island, 260
Budomel, 384
Buen Abrigo Point, 273
Buena Vista, 272
Bugia, Region of, 374
Buiaici, Region of, 169
Bullen, 9
Buona Speranza, 261, 262, 338, 374, 385
Bur island, 344
Burges, Bishop of, 126, 127, 134
Burgonie, Duke of, 208
Burichena island, 45, 70, 104, 130, 159, 173, 176
Burleigh, Lord, xxxvii.
Burnei island, 258
Burney island, 272
Borough, Stephen, xxxviii.
Buru island, 260
Buthuan island, 255, 259
Buthuan, King, 255
Butler, John, xlv.
Butricarius Galeatius, 106, 127, 283, 285
Buts, Sir William, xvii., xix.
- Butts, Thomas, xviii., xix.
Byzantium, xi.
- Cabedus, Johannes, 130, 157
Cabot, Loaisa, 274
Cabot, Sebastian, xliii., xv., xix., xxxviii., xxxix, xl., xlv., xlvii., 6, 55, 61, 161, 162, 195, 272, 274, 283, 288, 289, 299, 335, 343, 345, 348, 350, 386
Cabouerde [*i.e.*, *Cape-Verde*], 74, 87, 97, 129, 134, 272, 273, 385
Cacacubana, Region of, 169
Cacaus, City of, 24
Cacedus, John, 198
Caccicus, 72, 89, 128, 223
Caccicus Caunaboa, 72, 79, 80, 81, 85
Cacique Chimán, 225
Cadamustus, Aloisius, 127, 270, 280
Cades, 86
Cadissen, 329
Cadona, Duke of, 173
Caghaian island, 258
Cahaymi, Region of, 169
Cahini island, 168
Cahonas island, 166, 172
Caiabi, Province of, 168, 172, 173, 176
Caiacoa, Province of, 168, 173
Caigum mountain, 171
Caigui, City of, 26, 171
Caihabo, Province of, 168, 169, 170
Cailon island, 344
Caiouana, Valley of, 170
Cairo, 374
Cairus, 307
Caizcimu, Province of, 168, 169, 170, 173
Cakeado, 381
Calaghan island, 255, 256, 259
Calantan, 260
Calauera, Barnardino de, 108
Cales, 86, 87, 93, 94, 97, 181
Calése island, 286
Calicium, 38
Calicut, 7, 8, 13, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 24, 32, 39, 256, 261, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 344, 374, 385
Calicut, King of, 14, 17, 18, 19, 21
Calidonia, 143, 177
Caliz, 346, 347
Callienten, xxix.
Calligula, 59
Calpe mountains, 236
Cals, 68, 73
Caluacam, Region of, 188, 189
Calunezcho, Region of, 322
Calzadilla, 341
Camaie, Region of, 169
Cambaia, 8, 13, 14, 20, 261, 267, 269
Cambaia, King of, 40
Cambalu [*i.e.*, *Pekin*], City of, 24, 25, 287, 307, 326
Cambie, 259
Camemorius, Region of, 183
Camen mountains, 323
Camen Bolschoi mountains, 322, 323
Camenckh, 322
Cameni, 323
Cameniponos mountains, 323
Camigna, Don Christopher of, 130
Camomorius, Region of, 98, 132
Camoteia island, 166
Campaa, Region of, 260
Campbell, Dr M. F. A. G., xxv., xxvi.
Campechium, Province of, 187, 188

- Campegius, Cardinal, 310
 Campion, Gasper, xvii., xviii.
 Camul, Province of, 27
 Canabocoa, Region of, 169, 172
 Canada, 287
 Canary islands, xiii., xxviii., 28, 30, 32, 36, 38, 40, 41, 65, 66, 68, 87, 97, 150, 157, 166, 177, 181, 199, 210, 245, 250, 277, 339, 374, 375, 380, 389
 Cananor, xxviii.
 Cananor, King of, 15
 Cancell, Luys, 346
 Canchietans, The, 95
 Canchietes, Region of, 36, 95
 Cane, 271
 Canghu island, 256
 Canglu, City of, 24
 Canibals, Islands of the, 30, 66, 68, 78, 160, 162, 177, 180
 Cannafistula island, 119
 Cano, 272
 Canonor, Kingdom of, 14, 15, 20, 261, 268
 Canthan, City of, 260
 Cape Blanke, 380
 Cape Bona Speranza, 129, 279, 285, 286, 348, 350
 Cape Breton, xiv., xviii.
 Cape Cattigara, 253
 Cape Corea, 382
 Cape de Bas, xiv.
 Cape de Buona Speranza, 374
 Cape de Monte, 381
 Cape de las Palmas, 381, 382
 Cape de tres Puntas, 381
 Cape de Sper, xiv.
 Cape Trepointes, 381, 382, 383
 Cape of Good Hope, 129, 385
 Capelan, City of, 21, 344
 Capha, 324
 Caphi island, 260
 Capira, Region of, 234
 Capling, William, xii.
 Capo Desiderato, 252
 Capo Verde Islands, 32, 35, 36, 65, 74, 87, 129, 203, 204, 250, 261, 262, 272, 273, 274, 277, 280, 338, 373, 382, 385, 387
 Capronus, 86, 91, 92
 Capucar, 265
 Caput Bonæ Sperantiae, 129, 385
 Caput Sancti Augustini, 129, 134, 181, 183
 Caput Veride islands, 32, 35, 36, 74, 87, 129, 385
 Caracaracoles, 100
 Caramairi, Region of, 106, 107, 109, 134, 144, 157, 158, 159, 160, 162
 Caramatexius, King, 171
 Carandra, Gulf of, 285
 Caraqueira island, 177
 Carcham, Province of, 26
 Cardano, Girolamo, xxxviii., 158, 161, 207, 217, 250, 294, 307
 Carenas, 191
 Careta, 108, 115, 116, 117, 121, 137, 164, 182
 Caria, King of, 49, 128
 Caria, Queen of, 49, 128
 Cariai, Region of, 151, 152, 156
 Caribana, 107, 119, 180, 183
 Caribdis, 304
 Caribes islands, 68
 Carles, Captain, xlvi.
 Carnica, 314, 368
 Caromoram, 25
 Carter, Master, xviii.
 Carthage, 176, 340, 374
 Carthage, Hannibal of, 139
 Carthagena, 134, 157, 160, 214, 215, 226
 Carthaginis Portus, 106
 Carthago, 106, 107, 108, 109, 113, 134, 157, 162, 165
 Cartier, Jaques, 287, 345
 Carucueria, 69, 157, 159
 Casa Francisus, xlvi.
 Casan, King of, 326, 328
 Caspia, 8, 169, 170, 173
 Caspian sea, 170, 287, 291, 308, 309, 311, 314, 321, 326, 329, 346
 Cassam, City of, 291, 311, 314, 319, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329
 Cassima river, 323
 Cassius mountain, 285
 Castaglione, Baltassar, 9
 Castaneda, 272
 Castella, Aurea, 130
 Castella de Mina, 382
 Castella Vetus, 68
 Castile, King of, xxx., 37, 201, 203, 340
 Castile, Queen of, 201
 Castile, Isabel of, 273, 274, 341
 Castile, Ferdinando of, 51, 52, 65, 73, 127, 131, 201, 208, 209, 211, 229, 236, 273, 341, 342, 343, 345
 Castlen, Edward, xli.
 Castor, 250
 Castoreum sea, 303
 Castromow, 331
 Catalonia, 173
 Catarapa, 237
 Catena Mundi mountains, 286, 324
 Cathay [*i.e.*, *China*], xiii., xxxviii., xxxix., xl., xli., 8, 22, 24, 25, 26, 59, 98, 261, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 308, 310, 312, 313, 321, 322, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 333, 339, 344, 345, 363
 Cathay Cham [*i.e.*, *Khav*], of, xxi., 21, 24, 25, 26, 27, 60, 286, 287, 289, 322, 324, 326, 329, 330
 Cathay, Emperour of, 25, 60
 Catighan island, 256
 Catherine, Queen, 51, 71, 274
 Catherine, Saint, 84
 Cato, 122
 Cattigara, 262
 Cattigara, Cape, 253
 Caucasus mountains, 18
 Cauchiata, 95, 98
 Caunaboa, Cacicus, 72, 79, 80, 81, 85
 Cannana, 99
 Caunoa, Region of, 169
 Cauta, 99
 Cautan, City of, 344
 Caya river, 272, 273, 274
 Caya bridge, 273, 274
 Cayrus [*i.e.*, *Cairo*], City of, 14, 186
 Cazacubuna mountains, 172
 Cazibaxagua, 99
 Cecil, Sir W., xxii., xxxviii., xliii.
 Ceden, xxx.
 Ceilam island, 344
 Celaruri island, 260
 Celer, Quintus Metellus, 347
 Cemaccus, King, 110, 119, 121, 122, 198
 Cemobal, 196
 Cenalo island, 255.
 Cenegales, 155
 Central America, xi.
 Centurione, Paulo, 287, 308, 309, 310
 Cerabaro, Region of, 112, 135, 152, 154, 155, 156, 163, 182
 Ceratta [*i.e.*, *Zaratte*] Augustinus de, 54
 Cerda, 341
 Ceres, 175
 Cernigonia, 309
 Cesar, 59, 305
 Cesariensis, 374
 Chabot, C., xlv.
 Chacouam island, 260
 Chagre river, 234, 235
 Cham, 346
 Chamailaba, Prince, 129
 Chan Cublai, 330
 Charles V., xiii., xlv.
 Charles, King, 63
 Charles IX., xlv., xlvii.
 Charybdis, 163, 330
 Chaucer, xxxvii.
 Chaunceler, Richard, xvii., xxxviii., xxxix., xl., 59, 285, 289, 326, 333, 386
 Chedsey, Dr, xxxix.
 Cheke, Sir John, xliii., xlv.
 Cheregatus, Francis, 191, 309
 Chethai lake, 287
 Cheru, King, 182
 Chiacones, King, 128
 Chiapes, King, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 145, 178
 Chiauaccha, Prince, 129
 Chiman, Cacique, 225
 China, 20, 260, 261, 267, 269, 272, 339, 344, 347
 China, Gulf of, 260
 Chionsus, King, 146
 Chionia mountain, 319
 Chirara, 152
 Chipit island, 258
 Chitaza, 152
 Chorogoski Nosz, 322
 Christostomus, 290, 291
 Christiernus, 304, 309
 Christophori Sancti, 105
 Ciamba, 130, 150
 Cibana, Region of, 73, 74, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 105, 168, 171, 172
 Cicero, Marcus Tullus, xlv., 49, 132, 283, 284
 Ciclopes, 154
 Cicylian, King, xxx.
 Ciguaios, 86, 91
 Ciguana, 91
 Cilapulapu, Prince, 285
 Cilicia, 7, 8
 Cimbrica Chersonesus, 311, 314
 Cimbulon, King, 258
 Cinchital, 27
 Cingaporla, 260
 Cingulus Mundi mountain, 324
 Ciniana, Region of, 36
 Cipanga, Region of, 73, 80, 81, 82, 167, 253, 339, 340, 343
 Citrachan, 308, 314
 Ciuola, 287
 Claudius, 54
 Clement VI., Pope, 308, 309, 347
 Cleodii, The, 385
 Cleopatra, 141, 142, 166, 283, 315
 Cleopatrida, City of, 284
 Clesma river, 314
 Cloelia, 71
 Cochin, King of, xxix.
 Cochinus, 183
 Cockeram, Martin, xvii.
 Codego island, 106, 215
 Coi Cathay island, 343
 Coiba Dites, 182
 Coiba, Gulf of, 108, 115, 116, 164, 182
 Coiba, King of, 108, 115, 116, 117, 121, 137, 164, 182
 Colchis, Reg'on of, 51, 135, 262, 310
 Cole, Master, xix.
 Colen, xxix.
 Coligny, Admiral, xlv.
 Collao, City of, 343
 Collocutea, Region of, 183
 Colluacana island, 189, 191, 195, 196
 Colmenaris, Rodericus, 113, 114, 115, 116, 119, 120, 122, 123, 126, 157, 183
 Colmogora, Region of, 291, 293, 312
 Colmogor, City of, 286, 322.
 Colmum, City of, 290
 Colonia, 291
 Colonia Agrippina, City of, 289
 Colum, xxix
 Columbus (or Colonus), Bartholomeus, 31, 82, 134, 153, 154, 340
 Columbus (or Colonus), Christophorus, 28, 29, 35, 38, 41, 65, 66, 67, 69, 79, 80, 87, 94, 96, 98, 99, 103, 105, 106, 108, 111, 112, 113, 115, 118, 127, 128, 129, 132, 134, 135, 150, 151, 153, 154, 155, 157, 163, 177, 184, 191, 192, 202, 209, 236, 272, 288, 337, 339, 340, 341, 342, 346
 Columbus (or Colonus), Diegus, 115, 118, 122, 127, 177, 184, 240
 Columbus (or Colonus), Fernando, 272
 Columna, 313
 Commendator, King, 123, 124, 125
 Comi, 187
 Comogra, 116, 162, 179
 Comogrus, King, 116, 117, 118, 120, 122, 137, 146, 147, 148, 162
 Commodus, Emperour, 284
 Comoiaxa, 172
 Compostele, 100
 Conception, Tower of, 80, 82, 84, 86, 92, 93, 105, 130
 Condé, Prince de, xlv., xlv.
 Condiuia, 310
 Conigangui, 26
 Connulaha, City of, 260
 Constantina, 374
 Constantine, 290, 316
 Constantinople, Bishop of, xxxi.
 Constantinople, Emperour of, 316
 Constantinople, Patriarch of, xxx., 290, 291
 Conte Rimondo, 270
 Cooper, xxxvii.
 Coperdalia, 305
 Copto, 284
 Coquera, King, 140
 Corala, 271
 Corales, 180
 Corduba, 162, 181, 186, 192
 Corea, 382
 Corelia, 292, 321
 Corichotum, 102
 Corimucol, 20
 Corinthus, City of, 80, 100
 Coro island, 215
 Coronado, 287
 Coronati, 238
 Cortes, xiii., xl., xlv., xlvi., 274
 Cortesreales, Gasper, 344
 Cortesreales islands, 344
 Cortesius Fernando, 191, 192, 195, 198, 238, 342
 Corsali, Andreas de, 275, 279
 Corus, 382

- Corytho, 166
 Cossa, Johannes De la, 126, 134, 156
 Cossa, 107
 Cossin river, 323
 Cossium, 329
 Cotam, 26
 Cotochus, King, 146.
 Cotohi, 172, 173
 Cotoy, 169
 Cozumella island, 40, 187, 188, 189, 191, 192, 193
 Cozumelaus, King, 188
 Cracouia, 314
 Crayford, 7
 Creta, 166, 172, 316
 Cretenses, xlvi., 172
 Cresus, 42, 146
 Croke, 381
 Crystente, xxxiv.
 Cuadalchiber, 210.
 Cuba island, 6, 31, 40, 66, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 79, 90, 104, 105, 123, 125, 128, 130, 150, 154, 161, 163, 167, 173, 176, 177, 184, 186, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 195, 198, 210, 231, 233, 239, 241, 262, 299, 338, 344, 346
 Cuba, Governour of, 191
 Cubagua island, 213, 214
 Cubana, 169
 Cubigar river, 153
 Cuchibachoa, Region of, 98, 108, 113, 128, 134
 Cuella de Segovia, xv.
 Cueua, 219, 237
 Cuguibacoa, 165
 Cugureo, 340
 Cuhabo, 168, 169
 Cuiriza, 146
 Culchas, 141
 Culata point, 119, 121, 122
 Cumana, 89, 94, 96, 98, 128, 156, 165, 213, 214
 Cupoton King, 187
 Curiana, 89, 94, 95, 96, 98, 128
 Cursius Quintus, 241
 Curtana, 36, 95
 Cuti river, 226
 Cuzibet island, 23
 Cybaho, 169
 Cyrenaia, 374
 Cyrrha, 100
 Czar Kythaiski, 324
 Czilha river, 322
 Czircho river, 322
 Cziremissa, 293

 Dabaiba, King, 119, 121, 122, 163
 Dabaiba river, 132, 155, 183, 199
 Dabiague, 169
 Dacicus, 176
 Dahabon, 169
 Dahabonici, Region of, 169
 Dahatio, 168
 Daiguog mountains, 173
 Daiguani mountains, 171
 Dalekarle river, 305
 Dalion, 41
 Dalmacyen King, xxx.
 Dalmatia, 290, 364
 Damascus, 56, 311
 Damian, 310
 Damianus a Goes, 51, 58
 Damiata, City of, 284
 Danadim river, 323
 Danowe river, 131
 Danaus, xlvi.
 Daneo port, 284
 Dardanus, 166
 Dariena, 114, 115, 116, 118, 119, 121, 123, 125, 126, 130, 131, 134, 135, 136, 137, 143, 145, 148, 149, 156, 157, 158, 162, 163, 164, 165, 178, 179, 180, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 192, 198, 199, 207, 218, 220, 226, 236, 238, 262
 Darien river, 110, 132, 191
 Darius, King, 59, 284
 Darnasser, 20
 Dartmouth, 379
 Daubeny, Oliver, xviii.
 Daud, xvii., 51, 349, 385
 Daud, Master, 330
 Dausian, 344
 Davis, xlv.
 Decan, 264
 Dechan, 14
 Dedalus, 55
 Deersforth, Cornelius, xxxviii.
 De las Perlas island, 54
 De la Sal island, 272
 De la Flore island, 382
 Delagartos river, 132
 Delapiente, Franciscus, 183
 Dell mountains, 268
 De los Azores, 203, 204, 339
 Delphis, 296, 298
 Demahus river, 168
 Demetriowe, City of, 321
 Demetrius, 59, 292, 308, 309, 310, 311, 313, 325, 329, 331
 Demogorgon, xlv., 161
 Denham, Henry, xiii
 Denmark, King of, xxx., 299, 304, 308, 309, 319, 331, 332
 Deptford, xxxviii.
 Desborch, John of, xxv., xxvi.
 Desiderata island, 177, 210
 Desideratus, Portus, 188.
 Destam island, 192
 Desseosa, Francis, 377
 Deza, 130
 Diaquo, Region of, 169
 Diaz, Johannas, 105, 135, 165
 Didacus, 75, 77, 78, 79
 Dido, 166
 Diego, Henriques, 378
 Diego, Nicuesa, 106, 107, 108, 109, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 126, 128, 135, 137, 145, 150, 151, 153, 156
 Dieguan sea, 266
 Diegus Marques, 157
 Diegus Mendez, 154
 Diegus Ordassus, 192
 Diegus Valasquen, 186
 Dikilappones, Region of, 331
 Diodorus, xlvi., 351
 Diodorus Siculus, 55, 369
 Dites, 165, 178, 183
 Dium, City of, 13
 Doesborch or Doesburg, xxv.
 Doesburgh, Jan Van, xxv., xxvi.
 Dolateranus, 10
 Dominica island, 30, 68, 70, 105, 130, 150, 157, 163, 174, 210
 Dominikes, Tower, Seynt, 82, 84
 Domitian, 284
 Don Alonso, 341
 Don Eurique, 341
 Don, John Captain, 382
 Don, John, of Austria, xii.
 Don Lewes, 378
 Don Luys, 341
 Don Pascual de Gayangos, xiv.
 Don Philippe, 346
 Donco, 324, 325
 Donetz Swerski, 325
 Doria, Juanette, xvii.
 Doria, Pedro, xvii.
 Dorpe, Roeland van der, xxv., xxvi.
 Douer, 379
 Dragonis, Os, 88, 95, 96, 98, 108
 Dranus river, 318
 Drauer, Master, xviii.
 Dromon, Achillis, 310
 Dront, 331
 Dryades, 83, 101
 Duas Arbores, 176
 Dubna River, 321
 Duchala, 374
 Dudley, John, xxxix.
 Duna River, 312
 Dunenburg, 312
 Duraba, 135, 153
 Duran, Thomas, 272
 Durriba, 153
 Dyonisius, King, xlv.

 East India, xii., 8, 9, 32, 79, 103, 133, 234, 235, 247, 262, 279, 283, 285, 339, 344
 East Indian Sea, 8
 Easte Sea, 8, 9, 24, 161
 Ebro river, 363
 Ebetere, 153
 Eccampi island, 186
 Edel river, 292, 314
 Eden, Alban, xlvi.
 Eden, Richard, xii., xiii., xiv., xv., xx., xxii., xxxvii., xxxviii., xxxix., xl., xli., xlii., xliii., xlv., xlv., xlv., xlvii., xlviii., 1, 3, 6, 7, 13, 43, 49, 270
 Edward VI., xii., xix., xxxviii., 1, 333
 Egypt, xi., xxx., xlvi., 8, 41, 51, 75, 110, 131, 132, 141, 153, 155, 172, 175, 193, 217, 283, 284, 293, 296, 307, 308, 315, 351, 369, 374
 Egypt, King of, 284
 Egypt, Pyramides of, 49
 Egypt, Soltane of, 311, 369
 Egyptian sea, 199
 Elabath, 374
 Elbes, 272
 Elcauz, 374
 Elder, John, xxxix.
 Elgazaet, Region of, 374
 Elias, xlvii.
 Elide, City of, 176
 Eliot, 398
 Eliot, Hugh, xvi., xxi.
 Eliot, Master, xiv.
 Elis, City of, 134
 Elizabeth, Queen, xii., xvii., xl., xlv., xlv., xlv., 65, 201, 209, 288, 342
 Elzaba, 8
 Emanuel, King, xxiii., xxvi., xxvii., 37, 39, 40
 Embigar, 153
 Eneas, 135, 166
 England, King of, xxx., xxxvi.
 Engronlande, Region of, 312, 324, 332
 Eningia, 298, 306
 Ephesyn, xxxi.
 Epileguanita, 102
 Erancanqui, 344
 Erasmus, 57, 58
 Eratosthenes, 41, 349
 Eridanus, 133
 Errifi, 374
 Erythra, King, xlvi.
 Esaras, 49
 Eson, Colehis of, 135
 Esope, 377
 Esquegua, 23C, 234
 Estremadura, 274
 Ethiopia, xxx., 8, 13, 14, 39, 41, 51, 88, 132, 139, 169, 175, 248, 250, 284, 339, 351, 369, 374, 384, 385
 Ethiopia, King of, 374
 Euangelista island, 77
 Eude island, 260
 Eudoxus, 286, 346
 Eue, 229, 338
 Energetes, Tomoleus, 346
 Eugenius, Pope, 290
 Euphrates river, 41, 51, 308
 Eurique, Don, 341
 Euripus sea, 304
 Eusebius, xlvi.
 Euxinus sea, 155, 292, 298, 310, 314
 Exer, 266
 Ezzab, 374

 Faber, Jacobus, 246
 Faber, John, 289
 Facies, Combusta King, 135
 Faial island, 347
 Faro, Strait of, 208
 Fartatio, xlv.
 Faubourg, xlv.
 Feminie the Great, xxxiii.
 Ferdinando Cortese, 238, 342
 Ferdinando de Soto, 346
 Ferdinandina islands, 186, 187, 190, 191, 195
 Fernando de Vega, 96
 Fernandes Franciscus, 186, 187, 192
 Fernandes, Gonzalus, 50, 158, 160, 184, 185, 207, 208, 241
 Fernelius, Johannes, xlvi.
 Ferraria, xlv.
 Ferrea island, 65, 66, 68, 157, 181
 Ferrières, Francois de, xlv.
 Ferrières, Jean de, xlv.
 Ferrum island, 41
 Fes, 374
 Fessa, City of, 374
 Feti, 180
 Ficinus, Marcilius, xlii., 338
 Fin, Jean de la, xlv.
 Finland, 229, 306, 312, 319
 Finlappia, 330
 Finmarchia, 8, 347
 Fiorauanti, Leonardo, xlvi.
 Fladimer, City of, 289
 Flauius, 348
 Flaunders, Earl of, 208
 Fletcher, John, xix.
 Florida, 32, 55, 191, 288, 342, 345, 346
 Floures [*i.e.*, Flores] island, 214
 Flumen Amazonum, 160
 Flumen, S. Johannis, 155
 Fogeda, Alphonsus, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 113, 114, 115, 123, 126, 128, 134, 145, 165, 180, 183
 Fonseca, Johannes, 126
 Forrest, George, xvii.
 Fortis island, 107, 108, 109, 134, 162
 Fortisuentura, xx., 65, 157, 380
 Fortunate islands, 28, 37, 40, 166, 374
 Forum Julii, 318
 Foxe, John, xxxix.
 Fracta laucea island, 41
 France, King of, xxx., xxxii., xxxvi.
 France, Lieutenant of, 347
 Francis, St., 130
 Francisco, 376
 Francisco de Siquera, 378
 Francisco, Lopez de Gomara, xxxviii, 271, 337
 Frederike, King, 73, 102, 103
 Fretum Herculeum sea, 161
 Fretum trium fratrum, 9
 Frisland, 303
 Friole, 368
 Frobisher, Sir Martin, xiii.

- Fronowo, 312
 Fryer, Ferdinando, 341
 Fugui, 26
 Fulnia, 122
 Furatado, Captain, 121
 Futeraca, 180
- Gades islands, 28, 30, 34, 65, 68, 73, 75, 94, 97, 150, 181, 316
 Gaira river, 113, 132, 157, 158, 159
 Galana island, 68, 157
 Galanta island, 68, 157, 177, 210
 Galeatius, Butrigarius, 106, 127, 285
 Galian island, 260
 Galitia, 10, 96, 311
 Gamba, 280, 374, 384
 Gamelaro island, 374
 Ganges river, 9, 32, 75, 98, 133, 155, 363
 Gangeticus, Gulf of, 39
 Ganphasantes, 385
 Garcia Nunnio, 272
 Gardiner, Bishop, xl., xlv.
 Garet, 374
 Garsia de Padilla, 130
 Gasper, Cortesreales, 344
 Gastaldus, Jacobus, 291, 345
 Gates, Sir T., xxxix.
 Gaza, 57
 Gazatia, 385
 Gedion, 51
 Gelders, Land of, xxvi.
 Geminus, Thomas, xxxvii., xxxviii., xl.
 Gemma Phrysius, 55, 384, 385, 389
 Geneen, xxviii.
 Genna, City of, 28, 65, 155, 206, 310, 340
 Genoa, xvii., xxx.
 Georgians, xxx., xxxi.
 Germanicus, Emperour, 176
 Gerfjard, Sir William, xix., xl., xli.
 Gesnerus, 326
 Getulia, 384
 Giauna island, 23, 260, 269, 286
 Giauntes island, 38
 Gibeth island, 34
 Gibilterra, 233, 236, 262
 Gilolo island, 259, 272, 344
 Gilona island, 34
 Gintera island, 41
 Gines Navarro, xv.
 Gioghi island, 260
 Giouan Dulsaraz, 250
 Girardus Maphens, 348
 Giunti, L. A., xiv.
 Goa, City of, 40, 261
 Godfrey, John, xvii.
 Golden Castile, 211, 214, 218, 219, 233, 236
 Golelta, Port, 374
 Goliath, xlvii., 149
 Gomer, Francisco Lopez de, xxxvii., xxxix., 271, 335, 337, 342, 350
 Gomer island, xliii., 65, 66, 157, 210, 380
 Gomes, Steuen, 242, 272
 Gonsalues, Peter, 378
 Gonson, Richard, xvii.
 Gonson, William, xvii.
 Gonzales, Don Pero, 341
 Gonzalo Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdes, xiv., xv., 158, 205, 241, 242
 Gonzalus Badaocius, 181, 182, 183
 Gorecius, Leonhardus, xxxix.
 Gorgodes, Meducias island, 97
 Gorgonas island, 338
 Gorualanus, 72
 Gothia, 298, 306
 Gothicus, Emperour, 176
 Gothland, 9, 286, 295, 299, 306, 347
- Gothland, Bishop of, 302
 Gothus Olanus, 347
 Graesse, xliii.
 Grafton, xii.
 Grafton, Richard, xliii.
 Granada, 36, 52, 63, 67, 73, 103, 110, 133, 191, 201, 202, 273, 274, 340, 341
 Gran Canaria islands [*the Canaries*], 41, 65, 157, 210, 380
 Grandis river, 131, 132, 199
 Gratia Dei, 112, 182
 Gray, Richard, xvii.
 Great John, 385
 Great Khan, xv.
 Great Sophie, 326
 Grecia, 54, 56, 155, 262, 296, 302, 319
 Greenland, 299
 Gregorie, 112
 Gregorye I., 56
 Gresham, John, xliii.
 Gresham, William, xii.
 Gretzium, 318
 Grisalva, John, 187, 188, 189, 190, 192, 194
 Gronland, 299, 300, 303
 Grosapha, King of, 40
 Groneland, 8
 Gronzwyk, xxxii.
 Grubes, Master, xiv.
 Grustina, Castle of, 323
 Grustintzi, 323
 Grutland, 245, 300, 317
 Guacana island, 345
 Guacarapita, 99
 Guacca lake, 170
 Guacciarima, 168, 169, 173, 176
 Guaccanarillus, King, 66, 70, 71, 72, 168
 Guadalupe island, 68, 69, 157, 159, 177, 181, 210, 345
 Guadalqueuir river, 127, 157, 210, 220, 238, 250
 Guadiana river, 273
 Guahabba, 169
 Guahague, Region of, 169
 Guaiagua, Region of, 168
 Guamaonocon, 99
 Guamaretus, King, 102
 Guanabba island, 85
 Guanahaimi island, 75
 Guanahattabenechina, 176
 Guanama, Region of, 168
 Guanapan island, 190
 Guanassa island, 105, 150, 163
 Guangan island, 190
 Guaniba, Region of, 170
 Guaninicabo river, 170
 Guannabo, Region of, 170
 Guariagua, Region of, 173
 Guaricco, Region of, 169
 Guarionexius, King, 79, 80, 82, 84, 86, 87, 91, 92, 93, 102, 168, 171
 Guarionexius, Vale of, 171
 Guarizacca island, 170
 Guaturo, 216, 226
 Guaturo, King, 226
 Guanrabo, Lake, 171
 Guinea, xii., xvi., xix., xxviii., xxxix. xl., 250, 270, 273, 297, 348, 371, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388
 Guise, Duke of, xliiii., xlv.
 Gunson, William, xii.
 Guserath, 266
 Gutschyn, King of, xxix.
 Guzerat, Gulf of, 17
 Guzman, Enrique of, 341
- Guzman, Peter Nunez de, 345
 Guzula, 374
- Habacoa, 169
 Habacucke, 57
 Habissia, Region of, 385
 Habech, Region of, 385
 Hafnia, City of, 331
 Haguiegabon sea, 170
 Haiba river, 168
 Haina, 223
 Haitho, 24, 60
 Haiti island, 166, 167, 168, 338
 Hakluyt, Richard, xii., xliii., xlv., xvi., xvii., xviii., xlix., xx., xxxviii., xl., xlviii.
 Halicarnassea, 128
 Halle, R., xii., xliii.
 Ham, Kingdom of, 344
 Hamadriades, 74, 101
 Hamburg, 300
 Hannibal, 139
 Hanon, 338
 Haraia, Region of, 96
 Hardie, Master, xviii.
 Harsol, City of, 300
 Hathathiei, 171
 Hawkins, Sir John, xvi., xvii., xlviii.
 Hawkins, William, xvi., xvii.
 Hayhay island, 159
 Hazchora, 374
 Hazlitt, W. C., xxvi.
 Hazon, Region of, 168
 Hazua mountains, 169, 176
 Hea, Kingdom of, 374
 Heben, 284
 Hebreues, Captain of the, 316
 Helga mountain, 300
 Helisabeth, 73, 127, 129, 167
 Helisabeth a Boadilla, 127
 Helisens, 149
 Hellespontus sea, xlviii., 59, 155
 Hely, John, xii.
 Henrique, Don, 273
 Henriques, Diego, 378
 Henry, King, 127, 162, 340, 345
 Henry IV., xxxix.
 Henry V., xxxix.
 Henry VII., xxi., 288
 Henry VIII., xii., xliii., xlv., xvi., xvii., xviii., xix., xx., xxi., xxxvii., xlv., 6
 Henry, King of France, xlvii.
 Herbert, W., xxxvii., xxxix.
 Hercinia, 313
 Hercules, 50, 105, 138, 149, 156, 236, 285
 Hercules Pillars, 86, 135, 236, 316, 374
 Hercyua, 310
 Herodotus, 248, 339, 346, 350
 Heroum, City of, 284
 Hesiod, xxxviii., xli.
 Hesperides islands, 32, 74, 87, 97, 167, 338
 Heua river, 319
 Hibusson island, 255
 Hiebra, 135, 153, 154
 Hieron, King, xlvii.
 Hieronimus Aquillar, 192, 193
 Hieronimus Cardanus, 307
 Hieronimus Fracastor, 285
 Hiernsalem, 7, 8, 49, 51, 56, 57, 82, 100, 384, 385
 Hierusalem, King of, 82, 208
 Hierusalem, Temple of, xlvii.
 Higinius, 346
 Higuei, 168
 Higerat, Gulf of, 17
 Hiircania Sylua, 292
- Hircanian sea, 169, 170, 287, 291, 308, 310, 314
 Hispania island, 6, 28, 29, 30, 31, 35, 36, 40
 Hispaniola island, xv., 6, 35, 40, 45, 54, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 73, 74, 75, 78, 79, 80, 82, 84, 85, 87, 89, 90, 96, 98, 99, 100, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 113, 114, 115, 116, 118, 119, 122, 123, 125, 126, 127, 128, 130, 131, 135, 137, 138, 140, 144, 145, 149, 150, 153, 154, 159, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 172, 173, 176, 177, 178, 184, 186, 191, 192, 193, 199, 209, 210, 215, 219, 228, 230, 233, 235, 238, 239, 241, 262, 299, 346
 Hojedus, 72, 79, 81
 Holstrocke, William, xvii.
 Holtrop, Mr, xxv.
 Holy Nose, 330
 Homer, 5, 41, 316, 398
 Honorocco, 169
 Honrace, 58
 Hore, Master, xviii.
 Hossuen island, 304
 Hozauna, 168, 170
 Huban island, 344
 Hungary, King of, 208, 312
 Huhabo, 168, 169, 172
 Huinaghan island, 255
 Huitsarch, 299
 Humos point, 273
 Humphrey, Laurence, xl.
 Hyperborean sea, 288
 Hyperhoreos mountains, xli., 293, 313, 314, 324
 Hyperbories, 142, 155, 350
 Hyram, 49
- Iberia, 53, 54
 Iethiophagi, 301, 385
 Ida mountains, 172
 Iguam, 171
 Iguanama, 173
 Ilirium, 306
 Ilmer Lake, 319
 Inacus, Jopez Mendocius, 103
 India, xxi., xxix., xxx., xxxi., 9, 10, 13, 14, 15, 16, 18, 19, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 32, 40, 50, 52, 65, 67, 75, 79, 90, 98, 103, 120, 127, 155, 180, 198, 203, 204, 209, 216, 219, 227, 233, 239, 261, 263, 264, 266, 269, 272, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 308, 309, 313, 329, 339, 346, 347, 363, 384
 India, Governour of, 274
 India *major*, xxi., xxviii., xxxi., xxxii., 261
 India *minor*, xxi.
 Indian sea, 9, 39, 308, 347, 385
 Indies, 52, 53, 54, 162, 213, 220, 221, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 232, 235, 238, 246, 271, 272, 273, 274, 337, 338, 340, 341, 345, 348, 350, 355
 Indus river, 13, 308, 309
 Infortunate islands, 28, 33, 37, 41, 253
 Innocentius, Pope, xxxi.
 Inspruck, 359, 368
 Insula crusis, 30, 69
 Insula, S. Johannis, 70
 Insulæ Latronum, 254
 Insulæ verides, 39
 Insulas Sancti Barnardi, 162
 Inuagana island, 34
 Ionicum sea, 191
 Ionium, 163
 Ipsicratea, 128

- Irtische river, 323
 Irus, 42
 Isabella, City of, 74, 79, 80, 82, 84, 85, 86
 Isabella island, 73, 167
 Isabella, Lady, 341
 Isaias, 52, 56, 57
 Ismael the Sophi, 311
 Isocrates, 346
 Isodorus, Bishop, 290
 Isopes, 53
 Israell, 51, 52, 56
 Israell, King of, xxxiv.
 Isseria, 309
 Ister river, 98, 131
 Istoma Georgius, 330, 331
 Ity island, 38
- Jaccha, 168
 Jacchi, Region of, 169
 Jache river, 168
 Jachem river, 73
 Jaciga river, 168
 Jacob, xxx.
 Jacobi, Sancti, 97
 Jacobus Gastaldus, 345
 Jafet, 346
 Jagohaihucho, Region of, 167
 Jaia, 100, 163
 Jaick river, 326, 329
 Jainagua, Lake, 170
 Jaios, Region of, 374
 Jamaica island, 31, 75, 78, 150, 154, 177, 193, 210, 241
 Jamaizi, Region of, 169
 James, St., Island of, 97
 James, St., Tower of, 84
 James the elder, 10
 Jamgoma, Region of, 260
 Janua, 155
 Janus, 155
 Japhet, 155
 Jaques Cartier, 345
 Jaroslavia, 309
 Jaroslaw, Castle of, 324
 Jason, 51, 262
 Jausa river, 313
 Java island, 23, 269, 344
 Jaxartes river, 311
 Jean de Ferrieres, xliv.
 Jemptia, 305
 Jenkenson, Anthony, xviii.
 Jenkynson, Master, xliii.
 Jenuen, xxx.
 Jericho, Priests of, xvii.
 Jerom, Castle of, 323
 Jerusalem, xxi., xxxi., 7, 8, 49, 51, 56-7, 82, 100, 166, 374, 384-5
 Jerusalem, Patriarche of, xxxv.
 Job, 11, 349
 Joga, 14
 Johan, Duke, 289, 293
 Johanna island, 28, 29, 66, 70, 74, 75, 104, 241
 Johannes, Cursius, 106
 Johannes, Diaz, 105
 John, King, 65, 129, 273, 274
 John, Lake of, 325
 John of Desborough, xxv., xxxvi.
 John, Pope, xxiii., xxvi., xxvii., xxx., xxxii., xxxvi.
 John, Queen, 273
 John the Evangelist, 10
 Jonas, xxv., 338
 Joppa, 181
 Joseph of Arimathea, 56
 Josephus, xlvi., 8, 384, 385
 Josuah, 316
 Jouanaboina, 100
 Joubert, Françoise, xlv.
 Jovius, Paulus, 292, 331
- Joy, Master, xviii.
 Juan, 182
 Juanaga, Region of, 334
 Juba, King, 347
 Jucatan island [i.e., the peninsula of Yucatan], 40, 186, 188, 189, 191, 192, 193, 238
 Juda, Princes of, 56
 Judde, Sir Andrew, 383
 Judea, 7, 18, 57
 Jug river, 286, 312, 322
 Juga river, 293, 312
 Jugaria, 322, 326
 Jugge, John, xlvi.
 Jugge, Richard, xxxix., xlvi., 398
 Jugoria, 309
 Juharici, 326
 Juhgary, The, 326
 Juhra, 293, 322, 326
 Julius, Pope, 309
 Julyan Samano, 346
 Junna river, 73, 168, 172
 Jura, 116
 Jureche, 152
 Jurham, 292
 Jwanowosero, Lake of, 325
- Kaienska Semla, Region of, 330
 Kama, Region of, 326
 Kaman river, 325, 329
 Katharine, Queen, 65
 Kele river, xxxvii.
 Kerry, John, xix.
 Khan, Great, xv.
 Kingsley, Rev. Canon, xvi.
 Kitai, Lake, 323
 Kitaisko, Lake, 323
 Kithay, Lake, 324
 Kohl, Mr J. G., xv.
 Kuliuo river, 322
 Kurbski, Simeon Pheodorowice, 324
 Kyui, 20
- La Desseada island, 210
 La Ferté, xlv.
 La Mina, 382
 La Spagnuola, 210
 Labrador, xiii., xv., 287, 344, 345, 347
 Lachroma river, 321
 Lacossa, Johannes de, 107
 Lactantius, 10, 11, 142
 Lacus, Albus, 291
 Lacus, Cronicus, 289
 Ladoga, Lake, 319
 Lagartos river, 111
 Lagoma island, 260
 Laletania, 173
 Lamas, 155
 Lambert, Francis, xviii., xix.
 Lambert, Nicolas, 376, 377
 Lamer, xlv.
 Lampaloda island, 374
 Lancelotus island, 65, 157
 Lancerota, xx.
 Landinus, 279
 Landman, Dau'd, xix.
 Langanas, 304
 Lantchidol sea, 261
 Laon, xlv.
 Lapponia, Region of, 8, 291, 299, 301, 302, 305, 347
 Lares, 176
 Lasiesia, 363
 Laterane, 309
 Latium, 66, 166, 167
 Lathyro King, 286
 Laurence, xlvi., xlvi.
 Lazaro, Archipelago di San, 254
 Lazarus, King, 187, 188
 Lech, King of the Polons, 318
- Ledisma, Johannes, 144
 Ledyl river, 291
 Legion, 201
 Legion, King of, 203
 Leigh, Doctor, xvi.
 Lemures, 85
 Leo, Bishop of Rome, 64, 106, 137, 287, 308, 309
 Leochares, 49
 Leon, 342
 Leon, John Ponce of, 345, 346
 Leonhardus Gorecius, xxxix.
 Lepanto, xii.
 Lepin Castle, 323
 Lesbos, 69
 Levante, The, xii., xiii., xvii., xviii., xix., 233
 Leviathan sea, 50
 Lewes, Don, 378
 Libane, 110
 Liberus, Sigismundus, 298, 312, 318
 Libia, 8, 54, 56, 70, 81, 166, 177, 374, 384
 Libicum, 163
 Libra, xlii.
 Ligurian sea, 297
 Lima, 338
 Limonares island, 151
 Limoso island, 374
 Lincoln, Bishop of, xl., xlv.
 Lisbon, City of, 16, 39, 267, 277, 279, 341
 Lithuania, Duke of, 318
 Lituania, Realm of, 286, 291, 292, 311, 314, 318, 326
 Liue, 132
 Liunia, 287, 291, 306, 308, 311, 312, 319, 331
 Lock, Sir William, xiii.
 Locke, Michael, xix.
 Lodge, Thomas, xl.
 Lodovike, 73, 79, 82, 90, 94, 96, 103, 133
 Longon, 260
 Lop, City of, 26
 Lopes, Diego, 272, 273
 Lopez Francisco, 288, 335, 342, 350
 Lordo, 287
 Losoth island, 304
 Louat river, 319
 Lozon island, 260
 Lucane, 310
 Lucomorya mountains, 323, 324
 Ludovico Bartheta [i.e., Vartheta], xlvi.
 Luft, Hans, xxv.
 Lugo, Alphonsus, 66
 Luigo, 252
 Lumatola island, 260
 Lumbardie, 306, 340
 Lupus Sosa, 199
 Lushburne [i.e., Lisbon], xxvii., xxviii., xxix., 277, 309
 Luther, xxvi.
 Luttrell, Sir John, xix.
 Luxanus, 74
 Luys of S. Angell, 341
 Luys, Cancell, 346
 Luys, Don, 341
 Luzzi, 271
 Lybien, xxxi.
 Lyese Nicolas, 378
 Lyuon sea, 314
- Maccazia, Region of, 169
 Macchian island, 259, 260
 Macedonia, xxxiii., 14
 Machiam sea, 344
 Machinnech, King, 100
- Machmetgirei, King, 328
 Machochael, 99
 Macorix, Region of, 168
 Macrobius, 41, 298, 347
 Madagascar, 7, 23, 285, 286
 Madanino, 69, 157
 Madera islands, 35, 40, 41, 87, 260, 270, 339, 340, 375, 380
 Magellanus Ferdinando [i.e., Fernand de Magelhaens], 9, 32, 33, 34, 35, 243, 249, 250, 252, 258, 272, 274
 Magellanus, Straits of, 8, 33, 35, 161, 183, 252, 285, 350
 Magna Canaria, 157
 Magna fors island, 41
 Magnete island, 348
 Magnus, Albertus, 7, 9, 10, 41, 364
 Magona, 81
 Magua, Region of, 169
 Maguacochios, 167
 Maguana, Region of, 169, 171, 172, 176
 Mahaitin mountain, 169
 Mahumet, 14, 23, 25, 27, 40, 57, 326, 374
 Maia, Region of, 150, 163
 Maiaguariti, Region of, 169
 Maïam, 187
 Maiobanexius, King, 86, 91, 92, 93
 Maiolica, 270
 Malabar, 263, 266, 267, 268, 269
 Malacca, 21, 32, 34, 40, 75, 247, 255, 256, 260, 261, 267, 269, 271, 274, 313, 344
 Malea, 155, 304
 Maligny, Seigneur de, xlv.
 Mallua island, 260
 Malpha, Flavius of, 348
 Manbrone, xxx.
 Manabaho, Region of, 169
 Manabaxao, Region of, 169
 Manacapana, Region of, 89, 94, 96, 98, 128
 Manache, Sibill, xx.
 Manati, Lake, 171
 Mandeuell, 329
 Mangalar, 265
 Mangdando, City of, 259
 Mangi, 25, 26
 Manicauxius, King, 82
 Manicheus, 10
 Manicongo, 270, 374
 Manilus, Marcus, xlv.
 Mans, xlv.
 Mansus, Alfonsus, 130
 Manuel, Petro, 272
 Maragnonum river, 98, 132, 134, 155, 160
 Marburg, xxv.
 Marchautes island, 329
 Marchena, 340, 341
 Marcilius Ficinus, 338
 Marco da Niza, 287
 Marcus Antonius, 315
 Marcus, Emperour, 284
 Marcus Paulus, 55, 286
 Marcus Paulus Venetus, 25, 27, 326, 339, 339, 340
 Mare island, 35, 259, 260
 Mare Congelatum, 8
 Mare de Sabione, 374
 Mare del Sur [i.e., the Pacific Ocean], 54, 211, 214, 223, 225, 230, 233, 234, 235, 252, 262, 338, 344, 345, 347
 Mare Pacificum, 252, 253
 Margarita island, 54, 88, 96, 141, 165, 178, 214, 233

- Margarita, Peter, 79
 Mariatambal, Region of, 98, 132
 Marien, Region of, 169, 172
 Mary, Virgin, xxvi., 69, 124, 192, 198
 Marmarica, 8
 Marmor, 112, 114, 135
 Marobu, 100
 Marocco, xix., xx.
 Marques, Diegus, 157
 Marris, 122
 Marrocko, 374
 Marrok, 161
 Martabani, 268
 Martine, 383
 Martinus Gratias island, 343
 Martire, Pietro, or Martyr, Peter, xiii., xxxvii., 43, 61, 63, 64, 65, 102, 186, 207, 241, 246, 299
 Mary, Queen, xii., xxxviii., xxxix., xlv., 1.
 Mary of Nemegeu, xvi.
 Massana island, 34
 Massaquiber port, 374
 Mathan island, 258
 Mathien island, 35
 Mathinino island, 100
 Matinino island, 30, 69, 157, 166, 210
 Matritis, 123, 184
 Matthkur, 303
 Mauicarao, 169
 Maurevert, xlv.
 Mauritania, 8, 374, 384
 Mauritania Cesariensis, 374
 Mauntania Tingitania, 374
 Mausolus, King, 49, 128
 Maximilian, Emperour, 290, 308, 309, 312, 368
 Mecca, 166, 267
 Medecis, Catherine de, xlv.
 Media, 314
 Medina Celi, Duke of, 341
 Medina Sidonia, Duke of, 250, 341
 Medina de Campo, xxxix., 232
 Medon, xxxi.
 Meersch, P. C. van der, xxv.
 Megha, xxviii.
 Mela, Pomponius, 346, 347
 Melaqua, City of, xxix., 21
 Melcha island, 39
 Melchoir, 71, 72
 Meler, Lake, 305
 Melinda, xxviii., 132, 385
 Melo, Frances de, 273
 Meluza, 20
 Memi, City of, 241
 Memphis, City of, 307, 315
 Mendala, 344
 Mendez, Diegus, 154
 Mendocius, Inacus Jopez, 103
 Mendoza, Anthony di, 287
 Mendoza, Cardinall Pero Gonzales of, 341
 Mendoza, Luigo of, 252
 Mendoza, Mentia of, 214
 Mennones, 385
 Mense, 56
 Mensurado, Cape, 381
 Meotis, 155, 292, 298, 306, 311, 314, 325, 326, 351
 Mercado, Lodouicus, 165, 182
 Mercedis, Saynte Mary of, 77
 Mericke, William, xli.
 Meroc island, 8, 385
 Merocæ, 41
 Mesa, Barnarde of, 130
 Messana island, xvii., 256
 Messana, King of, 256, 257, 258
 Mesopotania, 297
 Meta Incognita, xiii.
 Metellus Celer, 9
 Methymna Campi, City of, 68, 70, 72, 80
 Methyna, Duke of, 96
 Mexico, Viceroy of, 287
 Mexico, City of, xliii., 55, 61, 287, 288, 338, 342
 Mezen river, 322
 Mezentium, 66
 Michael Passamonte, 213
 Midnall, Thomas, xiii.
 Mien, 24, 261
 Milan, City of, 63, 67, 103, 131, 141
 Milenoës, 65
 Mina, 339, 375, 382
 Mina, Castle of, 382
 Mina river, 376
 Minera, xlviii.
 Minos, xlviii.
 Mioformo, City of, 284
 Miobalanus, Region of, 151
 Mitaini, 167
 Mithridates, 128, 129
 Moguer, 341
 Mogunce, Bishop of, 56
 Molucca islands, 8, 9, 20, 32, 33, 34, 35, 54, 183, 234, 235, 247, 249, 256, 258, 259, 260, 271, 272, 273, 274, 286, 287, 344
 Molybe, 385
 Momsabith, xxviii.
 Moncellese, Master Bernardino, 356
 Monoch island, 22
 Mons Crucis, 300
 Mons Farratus island, 30
 Mons Serratus island, 69, 177
 Monte Rodondo, 382
 Montegio Francis, 187, 190, 191, 192, 195
 Montes Luna, 41, 132, 217, 385
 Montes Niuales, 157, 160
 Monyuue, 240
 Moore, Sir Thomas, 398
 Morales, Andreas, 134, 156, 165, 167, 169, 184, 185
 Morales, Gasper, 178, 179, 214
 Morantes, Christophorus, 186
 Morauia, Region of, 326
 Morea, The, 316
 Moren, xxxi.
 Morgan, Sylvanus, xlv.
 Morley, Professor H., xxxviii.
 Moronites; xxx., xxxi.
 Morrorabes, xxx., xxxi.
 Mos, Lake, 304
 Moscow, 187, 286, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 308, 312, 313, 314, 317, 321
 Moscovia, xxxix., 285, 286, 287, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 298, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332
 Moscovia, Andreas of, 316
 Moscovia, George of, 316
 Moscovia, Helena of, 289
 Moscovia, John of, 289, 316, 319, 321, 324, 325, 326
 Moscovia, Sophia of, 326
 Moscovia, Simeon of, 316
 Moscovia, Demetrius Ambassadors of, 292, 308, 309, 310, 311, 313, 316, 325, 329, 331
 Moscovia, Dukes of, 283, 286, 287, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 314, 318, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332
 Moscovites, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 306, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 315, 316, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 331, 332
 Moses, xxi., xlvii., 11, 49, 50, 51, 57, 110
 Mosyli, The, 385
 Motka, Cape, 331
 Mouy, Count de, xlv.
 Moxica, Michael of, 65
 Moxus river, 313, 314
 Mozambique, 261
 Muera, 318
 Müller, Mr Frederick, xxv., xxvi.
 Multoxuman, King, 195
 Mumu, 112
 Münster, Sebastian, 3, 13, 42, 249, 291, 293
 Murcia, 176
 Muscostrom sea, 304
 Muthil island, 34
 Mutir island, 259, 260
 Mysians, xlviii., 318
 Naeldwyck, Jan van, xxvi.
 Nagai, 329
 Nagaria, xxix.
 Naiba, 83
 Naiba river, 73, 83, 168, 172
 Nansao, Earl of, 214
 Naples, King of, xxx.
 Narmaria, xxix.
 Narsinga, 14, 15, 20, 263, 264, 265
 Narsinga, King of, 14, 40, 264
 Nativitatis, Baia, 129
 Nauaryen, King of, xxx., xlviii.
 Nauchin, City of, 260
 Navarre, King of, xxx., xlviii.
 Nebrissa, 135, 165
 Neglina river, 313
 Negro river, 374
 Nehemiah, 56
 Neibaymao, Region of, 169
 Neibaymas mountain, 169
 Nemea, 143
 Nemroth, 53, 290
 Neper river, 314
 Nepos, Cornelius, 9, 286, 347
 Neptunus, xlviii., 55, 163, 165, 176
 Nereides, 74, 101, 127, 165, 176
 Nero, 41
 Nerui, 340
 Nestorius, xxx., 27
 New Andalusia, 130
 New Fraunce, 287, 288
 New India, 3, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41
 New Spayne, 236, 238, 241, 287, 342
 New World, 68, 127, 137, 156, 174, 245, 247, 272, 273, 337, 338, 339, 342
 Newfoundland, xliii., xiv., xv., xviii. xxi.
 Nicaragua, 338
 Nicene, 290
 Nicolai, 322
 Nicuesa, Diego, 106, 107, 108, 109, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 126, 128, 135, 137, 145, 150, 151, 153, 156
 Nidrosia, 299, 303
 Nidrosia, Archbishop of, 299
 Nignus, 94, 126
 Nigritis, 132, 384
 Nile river, 8, 41, 110, 111, 131, 132, 153, 155, 169, 175, 193, 199, 217, 283, 284, 285, 293, 309, 311, 312, 339, 346, 351, 374, 384, 385
 Nimaca, 169
 Nizaus, 169
 Noah, xlviii., 51, 155, 340, 346, 386
 Noceumor island, 260
 Nogais, 311, 329
 Nomen Dei, 113, 234, 235
 Norduegia, 331
 Noricum, 314
 Northumberland, Duke of, xxxviii., xxxix., 5
 Nortpoden, 330
 Norumbega, xiv.
 Norway, Governours of, 332
 Norway, King of, 331
 Norwegia, King of, xxx.
 Nova Castilia, 343
 Nova Hispania, 55, 213, 238, 241, 287, 342
 Novogradia [i.e., *Novgorod*], City of, 289, 290, 291, 309, 312, 313, 314, 318, 319, 321, 326, 328, 329, 330
 Nova Scotia, xv.
 Nubia, 384
 Nuceria, Paulus Jouius, Bishop of, 308, 312, 331
 Numidia, 374
 Nunnez, Alphonsus, 123
 Nunnez de Gusman, Peter, 345
 Nycolas, Saynt, 75, 78
 Nysa, 100
 Nysea, 384
 O [*i.e.*, *Omega*] point, 75, 76
 Obdoria, 287, 310, 323
 Ohea, Castle of, 323
 Obi river, xli., 287, 322, 323, 332
 Obiowa, 323.
 Occoa river, 170, 292
 Ocha river, 292, 308, 313, 314, 319, 324, 325
 Ochelaga, 287
 Ocho Lupus, 186
 Ochia, 260
 Odoardo Barbessa, 258
 Ogni Sancti Marigalante island, 210
 Olanus, Gothus, 300, 347, 348
 Olanus, Lupus, 111, 112
 Olha, 319
 Olmutium, 314
 Oloan, 188, 191
 Ooliab, 49
 Oone, 305
 Ophir, 7, 51, 66, 73, 82, 338, 343
 Oplandia, 305
 Oram, City of, 374
 Ordassus, Diegus, 192
 Orpei, The, 385
 Ormuz island, 13, 20, 261, 266
 Oro river, 380
 Orsa, 316
 Orynten, xxx., xxxi.
 Os *Dragonis*, Straits of, 88, 95, 96, 98, 108, 128, 132, 134, 151, 178, 180
 Ostrich, Henry, xix.
 Ostrobothnia, 305, 306
 Osep, Gregorevitch Napea, xl.
 Otho, 9
 Otifer, 289, 290
 Otogeria, City of, 291
 Otogue island, 233
 Otto Brumfelsius, xliii.
 Ottomanus, Bajasetes, 60, 311
 Otoseria, City of, 314.
 Otwer, City of, 314
 Oquandus, King, 190
 Oquandus, Nicolaus, 165
 Ouetenses, Astur, 135
 Oquiedus, Gonzalus Fernandus, 50, 158, 160, 184, 185, 207, 208, 241, Oxford, Earl of, xxxvii.

- Oxus river, 308
Ozama, 240
- Pacra, King, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147
Padilla, Garsia de, 130
Padus, 133
Pahan, 260
Paleacate, 263
Paleologus, Sophia, 316
Paleologus, Thomas, 316
Palitzki, Lieuetenaunte, 328
Palma island, 41, 66, 157, 177, 380
Palmaria, Region of, 189
Palmas, Cape de las, 381, 382
Palmer, Sir T., xxxix.
Palos, 96, 97, 99, 341
Pan, 166
Panama, City of, 214, 223, 233, 234, 235, 338
Panchi, City of, 26
Panes, 101
Pannonie, 133, 155, 290, 306, 310, 314
Panonome, King, 182
Pantalarea island, 374
Panuco, 241
Papa, Johannes, 385
Papin, City of, 324
Papiuogorod, City of, 324
Paracelsus, xlv.
Paraua river, 343
Paria, 36, 38, 89, 90, 94, 95, 96, 98, 99, 103, 105, 113, 128, 129, 130, 132, 135, 151, 156, 165, 178, 180, 181, 184, 338, 363
Paria, Gulf of, 130
Paricora, 98, 132
Pariza, 183
Paropenanus mountain, 308
Parthenopea, Queen, 103
Parthia, 284
Parthicus, Emperour, 176
Paruaim, 7
Paruus, Georgius, 326
Passamonto, Mychel, 213, 240
Patani, 260
Patagoni, 252
Patalo river, 363
Paulloghon island, 258
Paul, 51, 58
Paulus, 179, 309
Paulus, Jovius, 60, 287, 308, 312
Pazer, 344
Pean, John, 385
Pecerra, Region of, 315
Pedernales mountains, 219
Pedir, 344
Pedrarias da Villa, 229
Pedro Doria, xvii.
Pegu, 20, 21, 261, 263, 264, 344
Peim, 26
Pellegrine de Maricourt, xliii.
Peloponoso, 134, 316, 319
Pelusio river, 284, 285
Pelusius, 285
Penguin island, xviii.
Peralfonso de Melo, 272
Peraria, F., 65
Percaslavia, City of, 291, 331
Perecow, 382
Perez, John, 340, 341
Perillus, 49
Periquete, King, 182
Perm, 293
Permia, 286, 309, 325, 326
Permska, 293
Persia, xxviii., 15, 26, 267, 309, 314
Persia, Gulf of, 82, 308
Persia, King of, 284, 311, 319, 326
Persides, 75
- Pert, Sir Thomas, xliii., 6
Peru, xliii., xxxix., 6, 54, 130, 285, 338, 343, 346, 363
Pescora River, 286
Peter, 125
Petit, F., xxxviii.
Petrus Alphonsus, 94, 96
Petrus Arias, 126, 127, 142, 214, 229
Pettislego, xl.
Petzora River, 322, 323, 324, 330, 332
Phaeton, 73
Pharis River, 262, 310
Phenicen, xxxi.
Phidias, 74
Philadelphus, King, 284, 285
Philip, King, xvii., xxxviii., xxxix., xlv., 52.
Philistines, xlvii., 51
Philo, xlv.
Philostratus, 384
Phoenicia, xi.
Phrysius, Gemma, 384
Phylippe the Apostle, 57
Pichet, John, xvii.
Piedmont, xlv.
Pienea, 312, 322
Piescoya River, 322
Pieza River, 322
Pigafetta, Antonio, 243, 246, 247, 249, 255, 258
Pignonem, 153
Pinnigt, 300
Pinsteado, Antoniades, 375, 376, 377
Pinsteado, Antonle Anes, 378
Pinsteado, John Anes, 377, 378
Pintiguanus, Chlaconus, 129
Pinzon, Martin Alonso, 341
Pinzonus, Aries, 96, 98
Pinzonus, Vincentius Annez, 36, 96, 98, 105, 126, 128, 129, 130
Pircho, City of, 305
Pisa, John Rodriguez of, 272
Pius Secundus, 8, 9, 41
Pizarro, Francisco, xliii., 108, 110
Placentia, 340
Plata river, 338, 343
Plato, xl., xlii., xliiii., xlv., 10, 337, 338, 340
Plaiper, 368
Plescouia, 291, 309, 312, 314
Pliny, xliiii., xlviii., 8, 9, 10, 14, 16, 18, 41, 53, 67, 75, 120, 133, 142, 152, 175, 179, 208, 221, 225, 227, 231, 236, 245, 248, 278, 284, 285, 286, 289, 292, 294, 297, 298, 306, 310, 315, 340, 342, 347, 349, 363, 364, 383, 384, 385, 386
Plummer, Thomas, xvii.
Pluto, xlv., 149, 355
Po river, 133, 314, 363, 364
Pocchorrosa, King, 147, 148, 162, 163, 178
Pocchorrosa, Region of, 162, 163
Pogosa, 323
Poiassa river, 323
Polagua island, 344
Polen, King of, xxx., 318
Politianus, Angelus, xlv., xlvii., xlviii.
Polo island, 256
Polomus Chiacomus, 129
Polonie, 314, 318, 326
Polonie, King, 286, 290, 318, 319
Polonie, Russus of, 318
Polonie, Sigismunde of, 309, 319
Polotzko, 312
Polybius, 41
Ponponius Mela, 346, 347, 349
Ponce, John, 165, 181, 345, 346
- Poncha, King, 115, 116, 121, 137, 138, 139, 140, 149, 178
Poncus Johannes, 165, 181, 345, 346
Ponet, John, xxxvii.
Ponte, Alfonsus de, 157
Pontike sea, 131, 262, 296
Pontus, 297, 308, 318
Porcena, 71
Porne, King of, 34
Porne island, 22, 34, 258
Porte Joppa, 181
Portofarnia, 374
Porto Rigo, xv.
Portuacererius Alsons, 191, 192, 195
Portugal, Alonzo of, 273, 341
Portugal, Emanuel of, 16, 37, 39, 40
Portugal, Henrique of, 273
Portugal, Johan of, 129, 271, 273, 274
Portugal, Lewes of, 378
Portugal, Kings of, xvi., xxiii., xxv., xxvi., xxvii., xxix., xxx., 13, 40, 41, 54, 74, 129, 256, 261, 267, 270, 271, 273, 274, 340, 341, 363, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 381, 382, 385
Portus Bellus, 112, 135, 153, 177
Portus Cathaginis, 106
Portus Desideratus, 188
Portus Platea, 176
Portus Regalis, 71, 105, 176
Potanchamus, King, 189, 194
Potassa, 323
Potiwo, 330
Pothorst, 300
Potto, Chiaconus, 129
Potzcherlema river, 323
Powell, William, xxxix., 43
Poyas Semnoi mountains, 322, 323
Poynings, Sir Adrian, xlv.
Pozon island, 256
Praga, City of, 291
Prato, Albertus de, xiv.
Preciosus, Johannis, 51
Precop, 325
Prestor, John, xxi., xxxii., xxxiii., xxxv., 51, 339, 374, 384, 385
Proclus, 338
Prometheus, 57
Propertius, 285
Prussia, Master of, 308, 319
Psammiticus, King, 284
Ptolomeus, 8, 41, 210, 236, 262, 284, 285, 289, 308, 313, 349, 384, 390
Pulaoan island, 258
Pulisachnites river, 25
Purchas, Samuel, xli., xlv.
Puren, 152
Pustoofero, 322, 323
Putra, 88
Pyconye river, xxxiii.
Pyne, H., xv.
Pynson, Richard, xxv.
Pyrinei mountain, 53
Pythagoras, xlvii., 215
Pythis, 49
- Quadrado Gulf, 344
Quando, Nicolas de, 345, 346
Quareba, 153
Quarequa, King, 138, 178
Quarequa, Region of, 138, 139, 338
Quatour Tempora island, 151
Quauhlema, 338
Quaxaca, 342
Quenquinasu, City of, 24, 25
Queraquiera island, 69, 157, 159
Quicedus, John, 123, 126
- Quicuri Region of, 151
Quinsai, 26, 55, 307
Quiola, xxviii.
Quintanilla, 341
Quintilian, xlviii.
Quiriquetana, 150, 151
Quitilla island, 190
Quito, 338
Quizqueia island, 166, 167
- Rabida, 340, 341
Ragusa, City of, 330
Raja, Calauar, King, 258
Raja, Capitayne, 120
Raja Colambu, King, 255
Raja Humabuon, King, 257
Raja Santoa, King, 260
Raja Siagu, Prince, 255
Raja Siripada, King, 258
Raja Sultan Manzor, 259
Ramonus, 99
Ramusio, J. B., xiv., xv., xxxviii
Rase, John, 382
Rastall, John, xx.
Rastall, Master, xviii., xix.
Rastall Sarieant, xviii.
Ratcliff, xxxviii.
Ravenna, 314
Redzauia, 309
Red sea, xxix., xlviii., 7, 13, 51, 143, 180, 284, 285, 339, 346, 374, 385
Regio Baccalarum, 32, 55
Regnum Orguene, 384
Resan, City of, 290
Reyre, Region of, 168
Rezan, 324
Rezense, 292, 309
Rha river, 291, 292, 313, 329
Rhapsii, 385
Rhene river, 56, 314, 363
Rhodes, xii.
Ribera, Doctor, 272
Richard I., King, xxvi.
Richard II., King, xxxix.
Rico Porto, xv.
Ridley, Master, xviii.
Riga river, 287, 308, 312, 314
Rio Dulce river, 381
Rio Grande river, 380
Rio de Chicora river, xv.
Rio de los Perdidos river, 151, 156
Rio de la Plata river, xxxix., 54, 288, 338, 343, 386
Rio de los Potos river, 382
Riphea, 155
Riphoc mountains, 293, 324
Risophagi, The, 385
Riuo Nigro, 120, 121
Rium Nigrum, 191
Rivero Diego, 272
Robbyn Hood, 53
Rocumdulfe, Earl of, xlvii.
Rodanum, 314
Rodericus Colmenaris, 113, 114, 115, 116, 119, 120, 122, 123
Rodes, 351
Rodes, Grand Master of the, 374
Rodrigo, 341
Rodriguez, John, 272
Rogers, John, xxxix.
Roldanus, Ximenu, 86, 87, 90
Rome, Adrian, Pope of, 309
Rome, Pope Alexander VI. of, 37, 74, 129, 201, 273, 274, 315
Rome, Pope Clement VII., 308, 309, 347
Rome, Cloelia of, 71
Rome, Consul of, xlv.
Rome, Emperour of, xxxii.
Rome, Gregory, Bishop of, 56

- Rome, Julius of, 309
 Rome, Leo X. of, 64, 106, 109, 111, 113, 114, 123, 125, 126, 127, 130, 131, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 145, 149, 150, 154, 156, 157, 159, 162, 163, 164, 166, 167, 170, 172, 174, 175, 178, 181, 184, 185, 287, 308, 309
 Rome, Paul III. of, 51, 58, 179
 Rome, Pius II. of, 8, 9, 41
 Rosciua, City of, 290, 291, 309
 Rosolanos, 289
 Rostowe, 331
 Rotunda, Sancta Maria, 69
 Rubicho river, 322
 Ruiz, Bartholome, 272
 Ruiz, Peter, 272, 274
 Rumanie, James, xvii.
 Russia, Basilius of, 289, 290, 308, 309, 311, 314, 316, 317, 319, 321, 324, 328, 329
 Russia, Emperour of, 290
 Russus, Town of, 318
 Rut, John, xiv., xv., xvi.
 Ruthens; Constantine, Captain of the, 316
 Ruthens, Czar of the, 319
 Saba, 8, 385
 Saba, Queen of, 8, 374, 385
 Sabea, 129, 385
 Sachion, City of, 27
 Sacrificios; Sacrifice, Island of, 189, 192
 Safale, xxviii., 36
 St Ambrose, 10, 315
 St Andrew, 290, 319
 St Angell, Luys of, 341
 St Antonie islands, 272, 273
 St Aubin, Sieurde, xlv.
 St Augustine, 10, 142, 165, 218, 238, 315, 318, 338
 St Augustine, Cape of, 129, 155, 165, 181, 183, 218, 250, 273, 338
 St Benedict, 306
 St Bernardi islands, 161
 St Catharine, Castle of, 84
 St Christopher, Gold mine of, 105
 St Christoval, Island of, 210
 St Clare [*electrical fire on masts*], 251
 St Cosmus, 310
 St Cruz islands, 30, 130, 159, 188
 St Cyrillus, 315
 St Domingo, xv., 45, 82, 84, 130, 154, 168, 169, 170, 176, 209, 210, 213, 240, 338, 346
 St Dunstan's parish, xlviii.
 St Francis, 130, 176, 198, 240, 341
 St George, xxxi., 39, 323
 St Germain, Town of, xlv.
 St Germain, Bay of, xv.
 St Gregory, 315
 St Helen [*electrical fire on masts*], 251
 St Hericus, 305
 St James, xxviii., 10, 186
 St James island, xxviii., 97, 186, 261, 262
 St James, Castle of, 36, 84
 St Jerome, 195, 338
 St John, Gulf of, 194
 St John, Port, 192
 St John's island, xv., 45, 104, 130, 155, 159, 173, 176, 210, 213, 241
 St John's harbour, xiii., xiv., xv., 192
 St John of Jerusalem, Knights of, xii.
 St Julian, Port, 252
 St Lazaro, Archipelago di, 254
 St Lazarus, 187
 St Laurence [*i.e.*, *Madagascar*], Island of, 285
 St Leger, xlv.
 St Luca, or Lucar. de Barrameda, 157, 210, 262
 St Lucas Guild at Antwerp, xxv.
 St Maria Antigua, Island of, 30, 69, 110, 134, 163, 198, 207, 218, 226, 229, 236, 238
 St Maria Rotund, Island of, 30, 69
 St Maria de Gratia, Island of, 238
 St Marina, 190
 St Martha, 156, 157
 St Martinus, Island of, 30, 69
 St Marye of Mercedis, 77, 240
 St Matthei, Region of, 112, 132, 135
 St Michael's Gulf, 54, 140, 162, 165, 182, 183, 214
 St Nicolas [*electrical fire on masts*], 250
 St Nicolas island, 375, 376
 St Nicolas, Port of, 75, 78
 St Paul, 7, 11, 55, 56, 204, 293
 St Peter, 130, 203, 204, 250, 290
 St Romayne, Tower of, 226
 St Sergius, 291
 St Sophia, 314
 St Steven, 148
 St Thomas, xxix, xxx., xxxiv.-vi., 74, 79, 80, 250
 St Thomas, Island of, 250, 270
 St Thomas Tower, 31, 74, 79, 80
 St Vincent, Cape, 250
 St Vincent, Harbour of, 381
 Salaye, Dr Sancho de, 272
 Saleno, Monsieup de, xlvii.
 Salla, Port, 374
 Salsburg, Cardinal of, 24, 247, 248
 Salvaterra, 176
 Samano, Julyan, 346
 Samarcandia, 311
 Samson, xlvii.
 Samma, Town of, 381, 383
 Sammaterra, Town of, 383
 Samogeds, The, 323
 Samotor, 20
 Samotra [*i.e.*, *Sumatra*], 7, 21, 22, 32, 344
 Samua, Town of, 381, 383
 Sananton island, 272
 Sancta Cruce, xiii., xx., 30, 40, 130, 188
 Sancta Fee, 341
 Sanders, Blaise, xli.
 Sanguenai, 287
 San Juan island, xv.
 Saragossa, xxxviii.-ix., 247
 Sardinia, 56
 Sardonica, 284
 Sardus, 163
 Sarmatia, 170, 284, 291, 295, 298, 308, 311, 314, 326, 347
 Sarmatians, 155, 301, 310
 Saturna, Region of, 157, 158, 160, 163
 Saunders, Laurence, xxxix.
 Sava, City of, 374
 Savoy, The Master of the, xliii.
 Sawolhenses, The, 327, 329
 Saxogrammaticus, 300
 Saxony, Duke of, 366
 Sbozzo, 368
 Scandia, 298
 Scandinavia, 298, 347
 Scarene, Bishop of, 310
 Scharutzick, City of, 329
 Scharaitz, 329
 Schat river, 325
 Schavo, 381
 Schichmamai, 329
 Schidack, 329
 Schio, 366, 368
 Schondania, Region of, 298
 Schondenmarchia, Region, 298
 Sclavonia, 290, 306
 Sclavons, 290, 306, 315, 318, 319
 Scolus, John, 345
 Scombria Islands, 106, 107
 Scordia, Region of, 29j, 298, 299, 302, 305, 313
 Scopa, 51
 Scoria, King, 183
 Scutum Cateba island, 135
 Scerski, 325
 Scythia, 155, 289, 291, 292, 297, 306, 310, 312, 313, 316, 347, 363
 Sea, Admiral of the great Ocean, 29, 35, 67, 79, 94
 Sebastian, John, 271, 272
 Segovia, 126, 127
 Seina, Capreansis de, 137
 Selani Island, 34
 Seleucus Nicanor, 8, 61
 Selle, xiv.
 Selymus, Prince, 311
 Sem, 346
 Semnoi Poyas mountains, 324
 Seneca, 48, 67, 337, 339
 Senega river, 280
 Senegal river, 132, 374, 384
 Sequeryra, Diego Lopez of, 272, 273
 Serrannus, Johannes, 34, 157, 160
 Serena, 274
 Seres, 67
 Serponowtzi, 323
 Serra Nevata mountains, 108, 160
 Serranus, Johannes, 34, 157, 160, 258
 Serrationa [*Sierra Leone*], 39, 250
 Sesostris, 284
 Sesostris, King, 284
 Sesponow castle, 323
 Sest river, 321
 Sestau island, 192
 Sesto river, xvi., 376, 381
 Setebos, 252
 Sette Citta, Kingdom, 287
 Seville, xiv., xvi., xl., 50, 62, 210, 246, 250, 262, 288, 338, 342, 345, 348
 Sforza Ascanius, 65, 68, 103, 127
 Shava, 381
 Shawgro, 381
 Shyawe, 381
 Sian, Zacabedera King of, 260
 Sianfu, City of, 26
 Sibier, Prouince of, 326, 329
 Sibut river, 323
 Sibylla Erythyrea, 135
 Siccensis, Nicolaus, 309
 Sico island, 260
 Siech, Ismael, 266
 Sigismundus Liberius, 298, 312, 318
 Siguera, Francisco de, 378
 Siloli island, 34
 Silver of Rever, 288, 343
 Silvius Pandonus, 133
 Simonides, 41
 Sina, Kindgom of, 32, 313, 344
 Sinum Perditorum, Point, 155
 Sinus Arabicus, 13
 Sinus Finnonicus, 306
 Sinus Magnus, 248
 Sinus Persicus, 20, 32, 41, 82
 Smith, Sir T., xxxvii., xlii., xlv.
 Smolense, 290, 291
 Smyrnophora, 385
 Soborovius, George, 316
 Sofa, Lupus, 199
 Solinus Julius, 16, 56, 338, 346, 347, 383
 Solo island, 34
 Solowki island, 321
 Solysius, Johannes, 181
 Sorachi village, 180
 Soria islands, 347, 348, 387
 Sossa river, 323
 Soto, Ferdinando de, 346
 Spachefur, Thomas, xiii.
 Spaengian, 39
 Spagnuola island, 199, 210
 Spain, Emperor Charles V., 32, 47, 63, 208-14, 216, 223, 225, 226, 229, 233-6, 238, 240, 246-8, 255, 257, 259, 271-4, 278, 287, 343, 345, 350, 363
 Spain, Emperor Phillip, 54, 59, 346
 Spartaria, 176
 Spatense Alverado, 192
 Sperantia castle, 84
 Spirostomea, 98
 Spice islands, 235, 247, 271, 273, 274, 286, 344
 Spinosa, Gasper, 183
 Stanmoische, Region of, 322
 Steven, Bysshop, 293, 325
 Stoidium, 143
 Stora, 374
 Strabo, 10, 56, 283, 284, 285, 289, 296, 308, 346, 349
 Strava, 308
 Strelze, 322
 Strub island, 324
 Strucophagi, 385
 Stzuchogora river, 323
 Suthoch, King of, 34
 Succana river, 286, 312, 322, 331
 Suchana river, 322
 Suchur, Province, 27
 Suetia, 299, 301, 304-6, 311, 312, 319, 330, 331
 Suevia, King of, 9, 286, 301, 306, 308, 347
 Suez, 13, 284, 285
 Sulacho island, 260
 Sumatra, 7, 12, 20, 21, 22, 32, 261, 267, 272-4, 344
 Sumatra, Kings of, 22
 Sumbit island, 253
 Sumideros, 155
 Sura river, 314
 Surcium river, 314
 Sus, 374
 Sussex, Earl of, xxxix.
 Sustali, 290
 Sutton, Edward, 42
 Taboga island, 233
 Tabor, King, 182
 Tacarequi Margarita island, 56, 233
 Tachola, 344
 Tachola, City of, 344
 Tachnin ryver, 323
 Tadinu, City of, 24
 Taghima island, 259
 Taia, Region of, 150
 Tainsu, Kingdom of, 25
 Taismer, John, xliii.-vi.
 Talvera, Ferdinand of, 341
 Tamburlane, 311
 Tanagora, xxix.
 Tanais, 133, 155, 291-3, 297, 306, 310, 311, 314, 319, 321, 324, 325, 327, 346
 Tangut, Region of, 12, 26, 27
 Tapia, Francisco de, xv.
 Tapobana [*Ceylon*], 12, 21, 22, 32, 41, 143, 180, 261, 286, 344
 Taquenazabo, Region of, 169,

- Taracuru, King, 182
 Tararequi, 214, 233
 Tarchontan, King, 66
 Tarenate island, 259, 260
 Tarnasserie, 12, 20, 21, 22
 Tartary, 12, 24, 26, 39, 286, 287, 289, 290, 292, 306, 344, 387
 Tartary, Machmetgirei, King of, 328
 Taurisium, City of, 311, 314
 Tartars, 286, 287, 289, 290-2, 301, 310-14, 316, 319, 320, 324-9, 332
 Tauria, Johannes de, 157
 Tauria, Simon de, 272
 Taxmarus, King, 193
 Teaocha, King, 143, 146
 Telde, 374
 Temesne, 374
 Tenado island, 344
 Tendilla, Count of, 103
 Teneriffe islands, 41, 66, 157, 250, 280
 Tenerissa, xiii., 41, 380
 Tenectum island, 260
 Tenez, 374
 Tenixetian, City of, 57, 287, 342
 Temulos, 273
 Tequinas, 215
 Terasequi island, 214
 Terceira, 344, 348
 Terra Baccalearum, 242, 287
 Terra Britonum, 287, 288
 Terra de Laborador, 287
 Terra Viridis, 299
 Terra Florida, 32, 55, 57
 Terra de Papagalli, 253
 Tesino river, 363, 364
 Tharant island, 35
 Themiscuthlu, 311
 Theodori island, 35
 Theodosia, Colony of, 311
 Theophrastus, 8, 338, 340
 Thomas, J., xix.
 Thorne, iv., xiii., xiv., xxi.
 Thorne, R., xvi.
 Thoms, Mr, xxvi.
 Thyle, Land of, 300, 337
 Tialleslund sea, 304
 Tiba, King, 149, 151
 Tichin village, 122
 Ticobon island, 256
 Tidore islands, 259, 260, 262, 272-4, 348
 Tierra frome, xv.
 Tighe, xlv.
 Timor island, 260, 261, 269
 Tingin, City of, 24
 Tirecotus river, 172
 Thusi village, 107
 Tison, Thomas, xiii.
 Todos Sanctos islands, 177
 Tolstickh, 322
 Toro, 273
 Totonogo, King, 182
 Totilas, King, 313
 Toy, R., xii., xxxvii., xxxix., 388, 398
 Transylvanus, Maximilian, 247, 249, 262
 Trelensin, City of, 374
 Tremisen, 374
 Trepojentes Cape, 381-3
- Tripoli, 374
 Trolhetta river, 304, 306
 Trutham village, 304
 Tucke, Master, xviii.
 Tuckfield, Master, xviii.
 Tulla, City of, 324
 Tumaccus, King of, 140-2, 178
 Tumaccus, Region of, 140
 Tumanama, King of, 117, 147, 148, 162, 163
 Tumanama, Region of, 162, 163
 Tumen, Castle of, 323, 324, 326
 Tumenski, King of Tumen, 324
 Tumum, King, 66
 Turni, King, 119
 Turufy village, 183
 Tuver, City of, 314
 Tyrma, 166
- Udall, Nicholas, xxxviii.
 Udoria, 310
 Uhabo, 170, 173
 Ulna, 292
 Ulysses, 135, 348
 Umbria, Petrus de, 111, 112
 Unefride, 56
 Ungerien, King of, xxx.
 United States, xv.
 Uppa river, 325
 Upsala, Archbishop of, 300, 347
 Upsoliensis, 295
 Uraba, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 113, 114, 118, 119, 123, 128, 130, 131, 132, 134, 143, 150, 155, 162, 163, 180, 192, 198, 199, 218, 229
 Uracha, 230, 234
 Urse, M. de, xlv.
 Uschatio, Peter Knes, 324
 Ussa river, 322
 Usting, City of, 286, 312, 322, 325
 Ustiuga, Town of, 293, 312
 Ustyug, 312
 Uttersen, Mr, xxvi.
- Vadianus, 56
 Vagoniona, 99, 100
 Vagus river, 318
 Valdés, Gonzalo Fernandez de Oviedo, xxxvii.
 Valdiuia, 115, 116, 118, 119, 122, 123, 192, 193
 Valentia, 199
 Vallacum, 314
 Valladoletto, xiv., 125, 127, 133, 274
 Valleius, 165, 181, 183
 Vannuccio, Biringuccio, xxxvii., xlv.
 353, 356
 Varro, Marcus, 349
 Vascho Nunnez de Balboa, 61, 113, 114, 115, 119, 120, 121, 122, 125, 131, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 155, 156, 162, 165, 178, 198, 199, 338
 Vasilivich, John Duke of, 326
 Vasques, Captain Francesco, 287
 Vassy, xliii.
 Vastral, 304
 Vaticanne, The, 100, 309
 Vecchiadoro, 287
 Vega, Fernando de, 96
 Velasquen, Diegus, 186, 187, 190, 195
- Valasquen, John, 192
 Vendôme, Francois de, xlv.
 Venetus, Marcus Paulus, 25, 27, 326, 330, 339, 340
 Vera, Petrus de, 65
 Verazzano, xv.
 Vere, Edward, xxxvii.
 Vesalius, A., xxxvii.
 Vespasian, Emperour, 208, 342
 Vespucci, Amerigo, xxv., 37, 38, 39, 127, 134, 157, 158, 275, 277
 Vespucius, Johannes, 127, 157
 Veicha, 309
 Viatra, City of, 291
 Vibba, 153
 Vicenza, 247
 Victoria, Town of, 194
 Vidame de Chartres, xlv., xlv., xlv.
 xviii.
 Vigenina, 368
 Vilna, City of, 314
 Villanoua, 176
 Villa Ricca, 196
 Villegas, Peter Ruiz of, 272, 274
 Vincentina river, 366, 388
 Vincentius, 36, 96, 98, 105, 126, 128, 129, 130
 Vincentius, Agnes, 105, 128, 129
 Vincentius, Annez, 126, 128, 129, 130
 Vincenza, City of, 246
 Virgil, 11, 50, 91, 135, 279, 298
 Visba, City of, 306
 Vischora river, 325
 Visco, Bishop of, 341
 Vitry, xlv.
 Vitzechda river, 325
 Volaterane, 289, 290
 Volga river, 291, 292, 293, 308, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 321, 325, 326, 328, 329, 331
 Volham river, 293
 Volochda river, 286
 Volodemaria, City of, 291, 309, 314
 Volotchia, 309
 Volut, City of, 290
 Vrida river, 135, 153
 Vua river, 323
 Vuaga river, 322
 Vuarectzkoai sea, 319
 Vuarectzkoai Morie sea, 312
 Vuiathka, 326, 328
 Vuilna, 312
 Vuinlandia, 319
 Vuitepsko, 312
 Vuolochda, 312, 322, 325, 326, 331
 Vuoloon river, 319
 Vuolodimaria, 319
 Vuolok, Lake, 319
- Wade, Armigil, xviii.
 Wade, William, xviii.
 Waranger ford, 299
 Wardhus, Castle of, 299, 302, 303, 304, 305, 331
 Wardeo, 299
 Wardoehus, 299
 Warwick, Earl of, xxxviii.
 Watson, Thomas, xl., xlv.
 Weyszarch mountain, 300
 Whalley, Richard, xlv.
- Whally, Thomas, xlv.
 Whitcome, Roger, xii.
 White Russia, 301, 302, 311
 Wickes, Master, xviii.
 Willes, Richard, xii., xlviii.
 Williamson, John, xvii.
 Willoughby, Sir Hugh, xxxviii., xxxix., 59, 333, 334
 Winchester, Bishop of, xxxvii., xl., xlv.
 Winer, Sir W., xlv., xlviii.
 Wolsey, Cardinal, xiv.
 Wright, Master, xviii.
 Wroth, Sir Thomas, xix.
 Wyndam, Captain, xix., xxxviii., 375, 376, 377
 Wynterton Ness, xli.
- Xaccoei river, 170
 Xagua, Region of, 168
 Xaguaguara, Region of, 153
 Xamana, Region of, 70, 169, 170
 Xaragua, Region of, 83, 84, 85, 86, 169, 176
 Xericium, City of, 65
 Xerses, 59
 Ximenus Roldanus, 86, 87, 90
 Xuarez, Petrus, 130
- Yaguana, Region of, 169
 Yaguino, Region of, 176
 Yamiroa river, 176
 Ymizui Hibahaino mountain, 169
 Yorke, Sir John, xix., 382
 Yucatan, 61, 338
 Yucatos, 238
- Zacabedera, 260
 Zagatheï, 311
 Zahondaderos, 155
 Zamal island, 254, 260.
 Zamara island, 32
 Zamatra, 274
 Zamotra island, 273
 Zamudius, 115, 116, 122, 126
 Zanzibar island, 23
 Zanzibar, King of, 23
 Zarate, Augustin de, xxxix.
 Zasia, xx.
 Zauana, Region of, 148, 169, 173, 176, 212
 Zaylon island, 20
 Zebedus, 10
 Zeilam island, 264, 265, 266, 267
 Zeilon island, 256
 Zelande island, 214
 Zenete, Marquesse of, 214
 Zenu, Region of, 158
 Zerbi island, 374
 Zerema, 180
 Ziglerus, 294, 295, 299
 Zobroba river, 135
 Zobroba, 153
 Zohoran river, 153
 Zolo island, 259
 Zolot island, 260
 Zorobua island, 260
 Zubut island, 256, 257, 258, 272
 Zubut, King of, 256, 257
 Zula, Prince, 258
 Zulan island, 254

$\frac{3}{643}$
Ip

Cat 6

10

America





